

6522

ΠΝΕΥΜΑΤΟΛΟΓΙΑ:
Πίσις OR, A *Pulley*
DISCOURSE
Concerning the
HOLY SPIRIT.

WHEREIN
An Account is given of his Name, Nature,
Personality, Dispensation, Opera-
tions, and Effects.

His whole Work in the Old and New Creation is
Explained; The Doctrine concerning it Vindi-
cated from Oppositions and Reproaches.

THE
Nature also and Necessity of Gospel-Holiness; the
Difference between Grace and Morality, or a Spi-
ritual Life unto God in Evangelical Obedience and
a Course of Moral Vertues, are Stated and De-
clared.

By JOHN OWEN, D.D.

John 5. 39. *Search the Scriptures, &c.*

Ἐν τῇ θείῳ γραφῶν θεολογῶμεν, καὶ θέλωσιν οἱ ἐχθροὶ, ἢ μὴ. Chrysostom.

L O N D O N,
Printed by J. Darby, for Nathaniel Ponder, at the Peacock in Chancery-
Lane near Fleetstreet, MDCLXXIV.

231.3

3582

To the Readers.



N account in general of the Nature and Design of the ensuing Discourse, with the Reasons why it is made publick at this time, being given in the first Chapter of the Treatise it self, I shall not long detain the Readers here at the entrance of it. But some few things it is necessary they should be acquainted withal, and that both as to the Matter contained in it, and as to the manner of its handling. The Subject Matter of the whole, as the Title and almost every Page of the Book declare, is the Holy Spirit of God and his Operations. And two things there are which either of them are sufficient to render any Subject either difficult on the one hand, or unpleasant on the other, to be treated of in this way; both which we have herein to conflict withal. For where the Matter it self is abstruse and mysterious, the handling of it cannot be without its Difficulties; and where it is fallen by any means what-ever under publick contempt and scorn, there is an abatement of satisfaction in the Consideration and Defence of it. Now all the Concernments of the Holy Spirit are an eminent part of the Mystery, or deep Things of God. For as the knowledg of them doth wholly depend on, and is regulated by Divine Revelation, so are they in their own Nature Divine and Heavenly, distant and remote from all things that the Heart of Man in the meer Exercise of its own Reason or Understanding can rise up unto. But yet on the other hand there is nothing in the World that is more generally despised as foolish and contemptible, than the things that are spoken of and ascribed unto the Spirit of God. He needs no furtherance in the forfeiture of his Reputation with many, as a Person Fanatical, estranged from the conduct of Reason, and all generous Principles of Conversation, who dares avow an Interest in his Work, or take upon him the Defence thereof. Wherefore these things must be a little spoken unto, if only to manifest whence Relief may be had against the Discouragements wherewith they are attended.

For the first thing proposed, it must be granted that the things here treated of, are in themselves mysterious and abstruse. But yet the way whereby we may endeavour an acquaintance with them, according to the measure of the Gift of Christ unto every one, is made plain in the Scriptures of Truth. If this Way be neglected or despised, all other wayes of attempting the same end, be they never so vigorous or promising, will prove ineffectual. What belongs unto it, as to the inward frame and disposition of Mind in them who search after Understanding in these things, what unto the outward use of Means, what unto the performance of Spiritual Duties, what unto conformity in the whole Soul unto each discovery of Truth that is attained, is not my present Work to declare, nor shall I divert thereunto. If God give

To the Readers.

an opportunity to treat concerning the Work of the Holy Spirit enabling us to understand the Scriptures or the mind of God in them, the whole of this way will be at large declared.

At present it may suffice to observe, that God who in himself is the eternal Original Spring and Fountain of all Truth, is also the only Sovereign Cause and Author of its Revelation unto us. And whereas that Truth which Originally is one in him is of various sorts and kinds, according to the Variety of the things which it respects in its Communication unto us, the ways and means of that communication are suited unto the distinct Nature of each Truth in particular. So the Truth of things natural is made known from God by the Exercise of Reason, or the due Application of the understanding that is in Man unto their Investigation. For the things of a Man knoweth the Spirit of a Man that is in him. Neither ordinarily is there any thing more required unto that Degree or Certainty of knowledge in things of that Nature whereof our Minds are capable, but the diligent Application of the faculties of our Souls in the due Use of proper means unto the Attainment thereof. Yet is there a secret Work of the Spirit of God herein, even in the Communication of Skill and Ability in things Natural, as also in things Civil, Moral, Political and Artificial, as in our ensuing Discourse is fully manifested. But whereas these things belong unto the Work of the Old Creation and the Preservation thereof, or the Rule and Government of Mankind in this World meerly as rational Creatures, there is no use of Means, no Communication of Aids spiritual or supernatural absolutely necessary to be exercised or granted about them. Wherefore Knowledge and Wisdom in things of this Nature are distributed promiscuously among all sorts of Persons according to the Foundation of their Natural Abilities, and a superstruction thereon in their diligent Exercise, without any peculiar Application to God for especial Grace or Assistance, reserving still a Liberty unto the Sovereignty of Divine Providence in the disposal of all Men and their Concerns.

But as to things supernatural, the Knowledge and Truth of them, the Teachings of God are of another Nature; and in like manner a peculiar Application of our selves unto him for Instruction is required of us. In these things also there are Degrees according as they approach on the one hand unto the Infinite Abyſſe of the Divine Essence and Existence, as the eternal Generation and Incarnation of the Son, the Procession and Mission of the Holy Spirit; or on the other unto those Divine Effects which are produced in our Souls whereof we have Experience. According unto these Degrees as the Divine Condescension is exerted in their Revelation, so ought our Attention in the Exercise of Faith, Humility and Prayer, to be increased in our Enquiries into them. For although all that Diligence in the Use of outward Means, necessary to the Attainment of the Knowledge of any other Useful Truth, be indispensibly required in the pursuit of an Acquaintance with these things also; yet if moreover there be not an Addition of Spiritual Ways and Means suited in their own Nature, and appointed of God unto the receiving of Supernatural Light, and the Understanding of the Deep Things of God, our labour about them will in a great measure be but fruitless and unprofitable. For although the Letter of the Scripture, and the sense of the Propositions are equally exposed to the Reason of all mankind; yet the real spiritual Knowledge of the Things themselves, is not communicated unto any but by the especial Operation of the Holy Spirit; nor is any considerable Degree of Insight into the Doctrine of the Mysteries of them attainable but by a due waiting on him, who alone giveth the Spirit
of

To the Readers.

of Wisdom and Revelation in the Knowledge of them. For the things of God knoweth no Man but the Spirit of God, and they to whom by him they are revealed. *Neither can the Scriptures be interpreted aright but by the Aid of that Spirit by which they were indited, as Hierom affirms, and as I shall afterwards fully prove. But in the use of the means mentioned we need not despond, but that seeing these things themselves are revealed that we may know God in a due manner, and live unto him as we ought, we may attain such a measure of Spiritual Understanding in them as is useful unto our own and others Edification. They may I say do so who are not slothful in hearing or learning, but by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both Good and Evil.*

Wherefore the Subject of the ensuing Discourses being intirely things of this Nature in their several Degrees of Access unto God or our selves, I shall give no account of any particular Endeavours in my Enquiries into them, but leave the Judgment thereof unto the Evidence of the Effects produced thereby. Only whereas I know not any who ever went before me in this Design of representing the whole Oeconomy of the Holy Spirit, with all his Adjuncts, Operations and Effects, whereof this is the first Part (the Attempt of Crellius in this kind being only to corrupt the Truth in some few Instances) as the Difficulty of my work was encreased thereby, so it may plead my Excuse, if any thing be found not to answer so regular a Projection, or just a Method as the nature of the Subject requireth, and as was aimed at.

In the first Part of the whole Work which concerneth the Name, Divine Nature, Personality and Mission of the Holy Spirit, I do but declare and defend the faith of the Catholick Church against the Socinians; with what Advantage, with what contribution of Light or Evidence, strength or order unto what hath been pleaded before by others, is left unto the Learned Readers to judge and determine. And in what concerns the Adjuncts and Properties of his Mission and Operation, some may, and I hope do judge themselves not unbecomming unto me for administering an occasion unto them of deeper and better Thoughts about them.

The second Part of our Endeavour concerneth the Work of the Holy Spirit in the Old Creation, both in its Production, Preservation and Rule. And whereas I had not therein the Advantage of any one Ancient or Modern Author to beat out the Paths of Truth before me, I have confined my self to express Testimonies of Scripture with such Expositions of them as sufficiently evidence their own Truth, though also they want not such a suffrage from others as may give them the Reputation of some Authority.

The like may be said of what succeeds in the next Place concerning his Work under the New Testament preparatory for the new Creation, in the Communication of all sorts of Gifts Ordinary and Extraordinary, all kind of Skill and Ability in things Spiritual, Natural, Moral, Artificial and Political, with the Instances whereby those Operations of his are confirmed. All these things, many wherefore are handled by others separately and apart, are here proposed in their Order with respect unto their proper End and Design.

For what concerns his Work on the Head of the New Creation, or the Humane Nature in the Person of our Lord Jesus Christ, I have been careful to keep severely unto the Bounds of Sobriety, and not to indulge unto any curious or unwarrantable speculations. I have therefore therein not only diligently attended unto the Doctrine of the Scripture, our only infallible Rule and Guide,

To the Readers.

but also expressly considered what was taught and believed in the Ancient Church in this Matter, from which I know that I have not departed.

More I shall not add as to the first Difficulty wherewith an Endeavour of this kind is attended, arising from the Nature of the Subject treated of. The other concerning the Contempt that is cast by many on all these things, must yet be further spoken unto.

In all the Dispensations of God towards his People under the Old Testament, there was nothing of Good communicated unto them, nothing of Worth or Excellency wrought in them or by them, but it is expressly assigned unto the Holy Spirit as the Author and Cause of it. But yet of all the Promises given unto them concerning a better and more glorious State of the Church to be afterwards introduced, next unto that of the coming of the Son of God in the Flesh, those are the most eminent which concern an Enlargement and more full Communication of the Spirit, beyond what they were or could in their imperfect state be made Partakers of. Accordingly we find in the New Testament, that what-ever concerns the Conversion of the Elect, the Edification of the Church, the Sanctification and Consolation of Believers; the performance of those Duties of Obedience which we owe unto God, with our Conduct in all the wayes thereof, is in general and particular Instances so appropriated unto him, as that it is withal declared, that nothing of it in any kind can be enjoyed or performed without his especial Operation, Aid and Assistance. So careful was God fully to instruct and to secure the faith of the Church in this matter, according as he knew its eternal Concernments to lye therein. Yet notwithstanding all the evidence given hereunto, the Church of God in most Ages hath been exercised with Oppositions, either to his Person or his Work, or the manner of it, contrary unto what is promised and declared concerning them in the Word of Truth; nor doth it yet cease so to be. Yea, though the Contradictions of some in former Ages have been fierce and clamorous, yet all that hath fallen out of that kind, hath been exceeding short of what is come to pass in the dayes wherein we live. For not to mention the Socinians who have gathered into one Head, or rather ulcerous impostume, all the virulent Oppositions made unto his Deity or Grace by the Photinians, Macedonians, and Pelagians of old; there are others who professing no Enmity unto his Divine Person, yea, admitting and owning the Doctrine of the Church concerning it, are yet ready on all occasions to despise and reproach that whole Work for which he was promised under the Old Testament, and which is expressly assigned unto him in the New. Hence is it grown amongst many a Matter of Reproach and Scorn for any one to make mention of his Grace, or to profess an interest in that Work of his as his, without which no Man shall see God, if the Scripture be a faithful Testimony. And some have taken pains to prove, That sundry things which are expressly assigned unto him in the Gospel as Effects of his Power and Grace, are only filthy Enthusiasms, or at least weak Imaginations of Distempered Minds. Neither is there any end of Calumnious Imputations on them by whom his Work is avowed, and his Grace professed. Yea, the deportment of many herein is such, as that if it were not known how effectual the Efforts of Profaneness are upon the corrupted Minds of Men, it would rather seem ridiculous and be despised, than to deserve any serious notice. For let any avow or plead for the known Work of the Spirit of God, and it is immediately apprehended a sufficient Ground to charge them with leaving the Rule of
the

To the Readers,

the Word to attend unto Revelations and Inspirations, as also to forgo all thoughts of the necessity of the Duties of Obedience ; whereas no other Work of his is pleaded for, but that only without which no Man can either attend unto the Rule of the Scripture as he ought, or perform any one Duty of Obedience unto God in a due manner. And there are none of this Conspiracy so weak or unlearned, but are able to scoff at the mention of him, and to cast the very naming of him on others as a Reproach. Yea, it is well if some begin not to deal in like manner with the Person of Christ himself. For Error and Profaneness if once countenanced, are at all times fruitful and progressive, and will be so whilst Darkness and Corruption abiding on the Minds of Men, the great Adversary is able by his subtle malice to make impressions on them. But in these things not a few do please themselves, despise others, and would count themselves injured if their Christianity should be called in question. But what value is there in that Name or Title, where the whole Mystery of the Gospel is excluded out of our Religion? Take away the Dispensation of the Spirit, and his effectual Operations in all the Enter-course that is between God and Man; be ashamed to avow or profess the Work attributed unto him in the Gospel, and Christianity is plucked up by the Roots. Yea, this practical contempt of the Work of the Holy Spirit, being grown the only plausible Defiance of Religion, is so also to be the most pernicious, beyond all notional Mistakes and Errors about the same things, being constantly accompanied with profaneness, and commonly issuing in Atheism.

The sense I intend is fully expressed in the ensuing complaint of a Learned Person published many years ago ; In seculo hodie tam perverso prorsus immeriti vivimus miseri, in quo Spiritus Sanctus omnino ferme pro ludibrio habetur : imo in quo etiam sunt qui non tantum corde toto eum repudient ut factis negent, sed quoque adeo blasphemi in eum exurgant ut penitus eundem ex orbe expulsum aut exulatum cupiant, quum illi nullam in operationibus suis relinquant efficaciam ; ac propriis vanorum habituum suorum viribus, ac rationis profanae libertati carnalitatique suae omnem ascribant sapientiam, & fortitudinem in rebus agendis. Unde tanta malignitas externae proterviae apud mortales cernitur. Ideoque perniciēs nostra nos jam ante fores expectat, &c. Herein lies the Rise and Spring of that stated Apostacy from the Power of Evangelical Truth, wherein the World takes its liberty to immerge it self in all licentiousness of Life and Conversation, the end whereof many cannot but expect with Dread and Terror.

To obviate these Evils in any measure, to vindicate the Truth and Reality of Divine Spiritual Operations in the Church, to avow what is believed and taught by them concerning the Holy Spirit and his Work, who are most charged and reflected on for their Profession thereof, and thereby to evince the Iniquity of those Calumnies, under the darkness and shades whereof some seek to countenance themselves in their profane scoffing at his whole Dispensation ; to manifest in all Instances, that what is ascribed unto him is not onely consistent with Religion, but also that without which Religion cannot consist, nor the Power of it be preserved, is the principal Design of the ensuing Discourses.

Now whereas the Effectual Operation of the Blessed Spirit in the Regeneration or Conversion of Sinners, is of all other parts of his Work most violently opposed, and hath of late been virulently traduced, I have the more largely insisted thereon. And because it can neither be well understood, nor

To the Readers.

duly explained without the Consideration of the State of Lapsed or Corrupted Nature, I have taken in that also at large, as judging it necessary so to do. For whereas the knowledge of it lies at the bottom of all our Obedience unto God by Christ, it hath alwayes been the Design of some, and yet continueth so to be, either wholly to deny it, or to extenuate it unto the depression and almost annihilation of the Grace of the Gospel, whereby alone our Nature can be repaired. Designing therefore to treat expressly of the Reparation of our Nature by Grace, it was on all accounts necessary that we should treat of its Depravation by Sin also.

Moreover what is Discoursed on these things, is suited unto the Edification of them that do believe, and directed unto their furtherance in true Spiritual Obedience and Holiness, or the Obedience of Faith. Hence it may be some will judg that our Discourses on these Subjects are drawn out into a greater length than was needful or convenient, by that continual intermixture of Practical Applications which runs along in them all. But if they shall be pleased to consider, that my Design was not to handle these things in a way of Controversie, but declaring and confirming the Truth concerning them, to accommodate the Doctrines treated of unto Practice; and that I dare not treat of things of this Nature in any other way, but such as may promote the Edification of the generality of Believers, they will either be of my mind, or it may be without much difficulty admit of my Excuse. However if these things are neglected or despised by some, yea, be they never so many, there are yet others who will judg their principal Concernment to lie in such Discourses as may direct and encourage them in the Holy Practice of their Duty. And whereas the Way, Manner, and Method of the Holy Spirit in his Operations, as to this Work of translating Sinners from Death unto Life, from a State of Nature unto that of Grace, have been variously handled by some, and severely reflected on with scorn by others, I have endeavoured so to declare and assert what the Scripture manifestly teacheth concerning them, confirming it with the Testimonies of some of the Ancient Writers of the Church, as I no way doubt but it is suited unto the Experience of them who have in their own Souls been made Partakers of that Blessed Work of the Holy Ghost. And whilst in the substance of what is delivered, I have the plain Testimonies of the Scripture, the Suffrage of the Ancient Church, and the Experience of them who do sincerely believe to rest upon, I shall not be greatly moved with the Censures and Opposition of those who are otherwise minded.

I shall add no more on this Head, but that whereas the only Inconvenience wherewith our Doctrine is pressed, is the pretended difficulty in reconciling the Nature and Necessity of our Duty, with the Efficacy of the Grace of the Spirit; I have been so far from waving the Consideration of it, as that I have embraced every Opportunity to examine it in all particular Instances, whercin it may be urged with most appearance of Probability. And it is I hope at length made to appear, that not only the necessity of our Duty is consistent with the Efficacy of God's Grace; but also that as on the one hand we can perform no Duty to God as we ought without its Aid and Assistance, nor have any encouragement to attempt a course of Obedience without a just Expectation thereof; so on the other, that the Work of Grace it self is no way effectual but in our compliance with it in a way of Duty; only with the leave of some Persons, or whether they will or no, we give the preheminnence in all unto Grace and not unto our selves. The Command of God is the Measure and Rule of our Industry and Diligence in a way of Duty; And why
any

To the Readers.

any one should be discouraged from the Exercise of that Industry which God requires of him, by the Consideration of the Aid and Assistance which he hath promised unto him, I cannot understand. The Work of Obedience is difficult and of the highest Importance, so that if any one can be negligent therein, because God will help and assist him, it is because he hates it, he likes it not. Let others do what they please, I shall endeavour to comply with the Apostle's Advice upon the Enforcement which he gives unto it; Work out your own Salvation with Fear and Trembling; for it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his own good Pleasure.

These things, with sundry of the like Nature, falling unavoidably under Consideration have drawn out these Discourses unto a length much beyond my first Design; which is also the occasion why I have forbore the present adding unto them, those other Parts of the Work of the Holy Spirit, in Prayer or Supplication, in Illumination with respect unto the Belief of the Scripture, and right understanding of the Mind of God in them, in the Communication of Gifts unto the Church, and the Consolation of Believers, which must now wait for another Opportunity, if God in his Goodness and Patience shall be pleased to grant it unto us.

Another Part of the Work of the Holy Spirit consisteth in our Sanctification, whereon our Evangelical Obedience or Holiness doth depend. How much all his Operations herein also are by some despised, what Endeavours there have been to debase the Nature of Gospel-Obedience, yea, to cast it out of the Hearts and Lives of Christians, and to substitute an Heathenish Honesty at best in the room thereof, is not unknown to any, who think it their Duty to inquire into these things. Hence I thought it not unnecessary, on the occasion of treating concerning the Work of the Holy Spirit in our Sanctification, to make a diligent and full enquiry into the true Nature of Evangelical-Holiness, and that Spiritual Life unto God which all Believers are Created unto in Christ Jesus. And herein following the Conduct of the Scriptures from first to last, the Difference that is between them and that Exercise of Moral Virtue which some plead for in their stead, did so evidently manifest it self, as that it needed no great Endeavour to represent it unto any impartial Judgment. Only in the handling of these things, I thought meet to pursue my former Method and Design, and principally to respect the reducing of the Doctrines insisted on unto the Practice and Improvement of Holiness, which also hath occasioned the lengthning of these Discourses. I doubt not but all these things will be by some despised; they are so in themselves, and their Declaration by me will not recommend them unto a better Acceptation. But let them please themselves whilst they see good in their own Imaginations, whilst the Scripture is admitted to be an Infallible Declaration of the Will of God and the Nature of Spiritual Things, and there are Christians remaining in the World who endeavour to live to God and to come to the enjoyment of him by Jesus Christ, there will not want sufficient Testimony against that putid Figment of Moral Vertue being all our Gospel-Holiness, or that the Reparation of our Natures and Life unto God do consist therein alone.

In the last Place succeeds a Discourse concerning the necessity of Holiness and Obedience; some regard I confess I had therein, though not much, unto the ridiculous clamours of malevolent and ignorant Persons, charging those who plead for the Efficacy of the Grace of God, and the Imputation of

To the Readers.

the Righteousness of Christ, as though thereby they took away the necessity of an Holy Life. For who would much trouble himself about an Accusation which is laden with as many Convictions of its Forgery, as there are Persons who sincerely believe those Doctrines; and which Common Light gives Testimony against in the Conversations of them by whom they are received, and by whom they are despised? It was the Importance of the Thing it self made peculiarly seasonable by the manifold Temptations of the dayes wherein we live, which occasioned that Addition unto what was delivered about the Nature of Evangelical Holiness; seeing, if we know these things, happy are we if we do them. But yet the Principal Arguments and Demonstrations of that Necessity being drawn from those Doctrines of the Gospel which some traduce as casting no good Aspect thereon, the Calumnies mentioned are therein also obviated. And thus far have we proceeded in the Declaration and Vindication of the despised Work of the Spirit of God under the New Testament, referring the remaining Instances above-mentioned unto another occasion.

The Oppositions unto all that we believe and maintain herein are of two sorts. First; Such as consist in Particular Exceptions against, and Objections unto each particular Work of the Spirit, whether in the Communication of Gifts, or the Operation of Grace. Secondly; Such as consist in Reflections cast on the whole Work ascribed unto him in general. Those of the first sort, will all of them fall under Consideration in their proper Places, where we treat of those especial Actings of the Spirit whereunto they are opposed. The other sort, at least the principal of them wherewith some make the greatest noise in the World, may be here briefly spoken unto.

*The first and chief Pretence of this Nature is, That all those who plead for the Effectual Operations of the Holy Spirit, in the Illumination of the Minds of Men, the Reparation of their Natures, the Sanctification of their Persons, and their Endowment with Spiritual Gifts, are therein and thereby Enemies to Reason, and impugn the Use of it in Religion, or at least allow it not that Place and Exercise therein which is its due. Hence some of those who are otherwise minded, affirm that it is cast on them as a Reproach that they are Rational Divines; although so far as I can discern, if it be so, it is as Hierom was beaten by an Angel for being a Ciceronian (in the judgment of some) very undeservedly. But the grounds whereon this Charge should be made good, have not as yet been made to appear; neither hath it been evinced that any thing is ascribed by us unto the Efficacy of God's Grace, in the least derogatory unto Reason, its Use, or any Duty of Man depending thereon. I suppose we are agreed herein, That the Reason of Man in the State wherein we are, is not sufficient of it self to find out or frame a Religion whereby we may please God and be accepted with him. Or if we are not agreed herein, yet I shall not admit it as a part of our present Controversie, wherein we suppose a Religion proceeding from, and resolved into Supernatural Revelation. Neither is it, that I know of, as yet pleaded by any, that Reason is able to comprehend all the things in their Nature and Being, or to search them out unto Perfection, which are revealed unto us; for we do not directly deal with them by whom the Principal Mysteries of the Gospel are rejected, because they cannot comprehend them, under a pretence, that what is above Reason is against it. And it may be it will be granted moreover, that Natural Reason cannot enable the Mind of a Man unto a
saving*

To the Readers.

saving Perception of *Spiritual Things* as revealed, without the especial Aid of the Spirit of God in Illumination. If this be denied by any, as we acknowledge our dissent from them, so we know that we do no Injury to Reason thereby, and will rather suffer under the Imputation of so doing, than by renouncing of the Scripture to turn Infidels, that we may be esteemed Rational. But we cannot conceive how Reason should be prejudiced by the Advancement of the Rational Faculties of our Souls, with respect unto their Exercise towards their proper Objects; which is all we assign unto the Work of the Holy Spirit in this Matter. And there are none in the World more free to grant than we are, that unto us our Reason is the only Judge of the Sense and Truth of Propositions drawn from the Scripture or proposed therein, and do wish that all Men might be left peaceable under that determination, where we know they must abide whether they will or no.

But the enquiry in this Matter, is what Reasonableness appears in the Mysteries of our Religion when revealed unto our Reason, and what ability we have to receive, believe and obey them as such. The latter part of this Enquiry is so fully spoken unto in the ensuing Discourses, as that I shall not here again insist upon it; the former may in a few words be spoken unto. It cannot be, it is not that I know of denied by any, that Christian Religion is highly Reasonable. For it is the Effect of the Infinite Reason, Understanding and Wisdom of God. But the Question is not, What it is in it self, but what it is with relation unto our Reason, or how it appears thereunto. And there is no doubt but every Thing in Christian Religion appears highly reasonable unto Reason enlightned, or the Mind of Man affected with that Work of Grace in its Renovation, which is so expressly ascribed unto the Holy Spirit in the Scripture. For as there is a suitableness between an Enlightned Mind and Spiritual Mysteries as revealed; so seeing them in their proper Light, it finds by experience their Necessity, Use, Goodness and Benefit, with respect unto our Chiefest Good and Supream End. It remains therefore only, that we enquire how reasonable the Mysteries of Christian Religion are unto the Minds of Men as corrupted; for that they are so by the entrance of sin, as we believe, so we have proved in the ensuing Treatise. And it is in vain to dispute with any about the Reasonableness of Evangelical Faith and Obedience, until the State and Condition of our Reason be agreed. Wherefore to speak plainly in the Case, as we do acknowledge that Reason in its corrupted State is all that any Man hath in that State, whereby to understand and judge of the Sense and Truth of Doctrines revealed in the Scripture, and in the use of such Aids and Means as it is capable to improve, is more and better unto him than any Judge or Interpreter that should impose a Sense upon him not suited thereunto; so as to the Spiritual Things themselves of the Gospel in their own Nature, it is Enmity against them, and they are Foolishness unto it. If therefore it be a Crime, if it be to the impeachment and disadvantage of Reason, to affirm that our Minds stand in need of the Renovation of the Holy Ghost to enable them to understand Spiritual Things in a Spiritual Manner, we do acknowledge our selves guilty thereof. But otherwise, That by asserting the Efficacious Operations of the Spirit of God, and the necessity of them unto the discharge of every Spiritual Duty towards God in an acceptable manner, we do deny that Use and Exercise of our own Reason in things Religious and Spiritual, whereof in any state it is capable, and whereunto of God it is appointed, is unduly charged on us, as will afterwards be fully manifested.

To the Readers.

But it is moreover pretended, that by the Operations we ascribe unto the Holy Spirit, we expose Man to be deceived by Satanical Delusions, open a door to Enthusiasms, directing them to the guidance of unaccountable Impulses and Revelations, so making way unto all Folly and Villany. By what means this Charge can be fixed on them who professedly avow that nothing is Good, nothing Duty unto us, nothing acceptable unto God, but what is warranted by the Scripture directed unto thereby and suited thereunto, which is the alone perfect Rule of all that God requires of us in the way of Obedience, but only ungrounded Clamours, hath not yet been attempted to be made manifest. For all things of this Nature are not only condemned by them, but all things which they teach concerning the Holy Spirit of God, are the principal Wayes and Means to secure us from the danger of them. It is true, there have been of old, and happily do still continue among some, Satanical Delusions, Diabolical Suggestions, and foul Enthusiasms, which have been pretended to proceed from the Spirit of God, and to be of a Divine Original. For so it is plainly affirmed in the Scripture, both under the Old Testament and the New, Directions being therein added for their Discovery and Disprovement. But if we must therefore reject the true and real Operations of the Spirit of God, the Principal Preservative against our being deceived by them, we may as well reject the owning of God himself, because the Devil hath imposed himself on Mankind as the Object of their Worship. Wherefore as to Enthusiasms of any kind, which might possibly give countenance unto any Diabolical Suggestions, we are so far from affirming any Operations of the Holy Ghost to consist in them, or in any thing like unto them, that we allow no pretence of them to be consistent therewithal. And we have a sure Rule to try all these things by, which as we are bound in all such Cases precisely to attend unto, so hath God promised the Assistance of his Spirit that they be not deceived, unto them who do it in sincerity. What some Men intend by Impulses I know not. If it be especial Aids, Assistances and Inclinations unto Duties, acknowledged to be such, and the Duties of Persons so assisted and inclined, and that peculiarly incumbent on them in their present Circumstances, it requires no small Caution that under an invidious Name we reject not those supplies of Grace which are promised unto us, and which we are bound to pray for. But if irrational Impressions, or violent Inclinations unto Things or Actions which are not acknowledged Duties in themselves, evidenced by the Word of Truth, and so unto the Persons so affected in their present Condition and Circumstances, are thus expressed; as we utterly abandon them, so no pretence is given unto them from any thing which we believe concerning the Holy Spirit and his Operations. For the whole Work which we assign unto him, is nothing but that whereby we are enabled to perform that Obedience unto God which is required in the Scripture, in the way and manner wherein it is required. And it is probably more out of Enmity unto him than us, where the contrary is pretended. The same may be said concerning Revelations. They are of two sorts, Objective and Subjective. Those of the former sort, whether they contain Doctrines contrary unto that of the Scripture or additional thereunto, or seemingly confirmatory thereof, they are all universally to be rejected, the former being absolutely false, the latter useless. Neither have any of the Operations of the Spirit pleaded for the least respect unto them. For he having finished the whole Work of External Revelation, and closed it in the Scripture, his whole internal Spiritual Work is suited and commensurate thereunto. By

Subjective

To the Readers.

Subjective Revelations nothing is intended but that Work of Spiritual Illumination, whereby we are enabled to discern and understand the Mind of God in the Scripture, which the Apostle prays for in the behalf of all Believers, (Ephes. 1. 17, 18, 19.) and whose Nature God assisting shall be fully explained hereafter. So little pretence therefore there is for this Charge on them by whom the Efficacious Operations of the Spirit of God are asserted, as that without them we have no absolute security that we shall be preserved from being imposed on by them, or some of them.

But it may be it will be said at last, that our whole Labour in declaring the Work of the Spirit of God in us and towards us, as well as what we have now briefly spoken in the Vindication of it from these or the like Imputations, is altogether vain, seeing all we do or say herein is nothing but canting with unintelligible Expressions. So some affirm indeed, before they have produced their Charter wherein they are constituted the sole Judges of what Words, what Expressions, what way of Teaching is proper in things of this Nature. But by any thing that yet appears, they seem to be as unmeet for the Exercise of that Dictatorship herein which they pretend unto, as any sort of Men that ever undertook the Declaration of Things Sacred and Spiritual. Wherefore unless they come with better Authority than as yet they can pretend unto, and give a better Example of their own Way and Manner of teaching such Things than as yet they have done, we shall continue to make Scripture Phraseology our Rule and Patern in the Declaration of Spiritual Things, and endeavour an Accommodation of all our Expressions thereunto, whether to them intelligible or not; and that for Reasons so easie to be conceived, as that they need not here be pleaded.

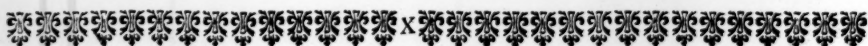


An Advertisement unto the Readers.

BEing absent from the Press a good part of the time wherein this Treatise was Printed, and being sometimes disabled by Sickness from attending unto a perusal of the Sheets, I find that sundry Errors and Mistakes have fallen out in some Copies of this Impression. But whereas for the most part they are Literal Faults, or in Pointing, not so corrupting the Sense but that an understanding Reader may easily discern what is intended, I do not judge it necessary scrupulously to collect or represent them. Some few may be taken notice of in a way of Instance.

Page 239. line 28. read נשמר. P. 348. l. 46. r. *Affatus*. P. 350. l. 50. for *weakned*, r. *awaked*. P. 365. l. 6. for *publick* r. *puirid*. Ibid. l. 15. for *fruitless* r. *frontless*, &c. P. 495. l. 17. r. ἐμὸς ἐσαυπησάμην. P. 510. l. 21. r. קרושים. l. 22. קרוש. l. 34. r. ולוה לבני אדם. P. 535. for *exclusively* r. *extensively*. P. 549. l. 8. for *deceit* r. *defect*. P. 559. l. 28. for *Cisterne* r. *Systeme*.

And sundry other such Mistakes I have observed, which need not to be mentioned in particular, as not likely to give the least trouble unto an intelligent Reader; The most of these also which I have here taken notice of, are Corrected in some Copies; fundry of them in the most.



BOOK



BOOK I.

General Principles Concerning the HOLY SPIRIT AND HIS WORK.

CHAP. I.

(1.) 1 Cor. 12. 1. *opened. Πνευματικά, Spiritual Gifts. Their Grant unto, Use, and Abuse in that Church. (2.) Jesus, how called Anathema; impiety of the Jews. How called Lord. The Foundation of Church-Order and Worship. (3.) In what sense we are enabled by the Spirit to call Jesus Lord. (4.) The Holy Spirit the Author of all Gifts; why called God, and the Lord. (5.) General Distribution of Spiritual Gifts. (6.) Proper End of their Communication. (7.) Nine sorts of Gifts; Abuse of them in the Church. Their tendency unto Peace and Order. (8.) General Design of the ensuing Discourse concerning the Spirit and his Dispensation. (9.) Importance of the Doctrine concerning the Spirit of God, and his Operations. Reasons hereof. (10.) Promise of the Spirit to supply the Absence of Christ, as to his Humane Nature. Concernment thereof. (11.) Work of the Spirit in the Ministration of the Gospel. (12, 13.) All saving Good communicated unto us; and wrought in us by Him. (14.) Sin against the Holy Ghost irremissible. (15.) False pretences unto the Spirit dangerous. (16.) Pretences unto the Spirit of Prophecy under the Old Testament. (17.) Two sorts of false Prophets; the first. (18.) The second sort. (19.) Pretenders under the New Testament. (20, 21.) The*

Rule for the Tryal of such Pretenders, 1 John 4. 1, 2, 3. (22.) Rules to this purpose under the Old and New Testament compared. (23.) A false Spirit set up against the Spirit of God, examined. (24.) False and noxious Opinions concerning the Spirit, and how to be obviated. (25.) Reproaches of the Spirit and his Work. (26.) Further declared. (27.) Principles and Occasions of the Apostasie of Churches under the Law and Gospel. (28.) Dispensation of the Spirit not confined to the first Ages of the Church. (29, 30, 31.) The great necessity of a diligent enquiry into the things taught, concerning the Spirit of God and his Work.

SECT. I.

1 Cor. XII.



† Πνευματικά, τὰ σιμε-
ια καλῶν, ὅ-
τι ταῦτα ἐρ-
γα τῆ πνεύ-
ματος μόν-
ον, ὅθεν ἀν-
θρώπινος ἐ-
πεισεύρεσθαι
ἔστιν ἐν
τῷ τῷ τοιαῦ-
τα δυνάμει
τῶν ἐν.

Chrysost. in
Loc. So al-
so Ambros.
and Theo-
phylact. in
Loc.

THE Apostle Paul, in the 12th Chapter of his first Epistle to the Corinthians, directs their Exercise of Spiritual Gifts; concerning which, amongst other Things and Emergencies, they had made enquiry of him. This, the first words where-with he prefaceth his whole Discourse, declare, *vers. 1. Now concerning Spiritual Gifts; ὁ ἐν τῷ πνευματικῷ; that is, χειρισμάτων, as his ensuing Declaration doth evince. † And the imaginati-* on of some concerning *Spiritual Persons* to be here intended, contrary to the sense of all the Ancients, is inconsistent with the Context. For as it was about *Spiritual Gifts* and their Exercise that the Church had consulted with him; so the whole series of his ensuing Discourse is directive therein. And therefore in the close of it, contracting the Design of the whole, he doth it in that advice, *ζητεῖτε τὰ χειρισματα τὰ πνευματικὰ, ὡς ἡμεῖς ὑμᾶς ἐκρίναμεν, ὡς ἐστὶν ἐν τῷ πνευματικῷ of vers. 1. are the τὰ χειρισματα of vers. 31. as it is exprest, chap. 14. 1. ζητεῖτε δὲ τὰ πνευματικὰ; that is, χειρισματα, desire Spiritual Gifts; whose Nature and Use you are now instructed in, as at first was proposed. Of these that Church had received an abundant measure, especially of those that were Extraordinary, and tended to the Conviction of Unbelievers. For the Lord having much people in that City, whom he intended to call to the Faith, Acts 18. 9, 10. not onely encouraged our Apostle against all fears and dangers to begin and carry on the Work of Preaching there, wherein he continued an year and six months, vers. 11. but also furnished the first Converts with such eminent, and some of them such miraculous Gifts, as might be a prevalent means to the Conversion of many others. For he will never be wanting to provide Instruments and suitable means for the effectual attaining of any End that he aimeth at. In the Use, Exercise and Management of these Spiritual Gifts, that Church or fundry of the Principal Members of it, had fallen into manifold dis-*

* χειρισματα δὲ εἶχον οἱ μὲν ἐλατ-
τονα οἱ δὲ πλεον. καὶ τὸ τοιοῦτον χεί-
μα ὅτι αὐτοῖς ἐγένετο; ὅτι παρὰ τὴν
κειρὴν φύσιν, ἀλλὰ παρὰ ἀγνωμοσύνην
ἐκλήφοντο. Ὅτι γὰρ τὰ μέγιστα
ἐχούτες ἐπὶ τοιοῦτοι κατὰ τὰ ἐλάττω
κεκμημένοι. οὗτοι γὰρ οὐκ ἔτι ἔλαττω
ἐκ τῶν τῶν μέγιστον ἔχοντων ἐφθόρου.
Chrysost. in Loc.

orders; and abused them unto the matter of *Emulation* and *Ambition*, whereon other Evils did ensue; * as the best of God's Gifts may be abused by the Lusts of Men, and the purest Water may be tainted by the Earthen Vessels whereinto it is poured. Upon the information of some, who loving Truth, Peace, and Order, were troubled at these Miscarriages, chap. 1. 11. and in Answer unto a Letter of the whole

Church

Church written unto him about these and other Occurrences, Chap. 7. 1. he gives them Counsel and Advice for the rectifying of these Abuses. And first, to prepare them aright with *humility* and *thankfulness* become ** Spiritualia* ing them who were intrusted with such excellent Priviledges as they had *illis traditu-* abused, and without which they could not receive the Instruction which *rum, exem-* he intended them, he mindeth them of their former State and Condi- *plum prioris* tion before their Calling and Conversion to Christ, *vers. 2.* You know *conversatio-* that you were Gentiles, carried away with dumb Idols, even as you were *nis memorat;* led; *ὡς ἂν ἡγεῖσθε ἀπαγεμενοί;* Hurried with violent Impressions from the *ut simula-* Devil, into the service of Idols. This he mentions not to reproach *orum fue-* them, but to let them know what *frame* of Mind, and what *fruit* of *runt forma-* Life might be justly expected from them, who had received such an al- *coletes ido-* teration in their Condition. ** Particularly* as he elsewhere tells them, *la, & duce-* *If they had not made themselves to differ from others;* if they had *nothing* *bantur duce* but what they had received, they should not boast nor exalt themselves *voluntate* *it a & colen-* above others, as though they had not received, *chap. 4. v. 7.* For it is *tes deum sint* a vain thing for a man to boast in himself of what he hath *freely received* *forma legis* of another, and never deserved so to receive it; as it is with all who *dominica.* have received either Gifts or Grace from God. *Ambros. in loc.*

This *Alteration* of their State and Condition he farther declares unto them by the Effects, and Author of it, *vers. 3.* *Wherefore I give you to* SECT. 2. *understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God, calleth Jesus accur-* sed; and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost. The great Difference which was then in the World, was concerning *Jes-* *us* who was preached unto them all. Unbelievers, who were still carried with an *impetus* of Mind and Affections after dumb Idols, being led and acted therein by the Spirit of the Devil, blasphemed, and said *Jes-* *us was Anathema,* or one accursed. They looked on him as a Person to be detested and abominated as the common *odium* of their Gods and Men. Hence on the mention of him, they used to say, *Jesus Anathema,* he is, or let him be accursed, detested, destroyed. (And in this Blasphemy do the Jews continue to this day, hiding their cursed Sentiments under a corrupt pronunciation of his Name. For instead of *ישו*, they write and call him *יש*, the initial Letters of *יִמְח שְׁמו וְזִכְרוֹ*; that is, *Let his Name and Memory be blotted out;* the same with *Jesus Anathema.* And this Blasphemy of pronouncing Jesus accursed, was that wherewith the first Persecutors of the Church tryed the Faith of Christians, as *Pliny* in his Epistle to *Trajan*, and *Justin Martyr*, with other *Apologists* agree. And as the Apostle sayes, Those who did thus, *did not so by the Spirit of God;* so he intends that they did it by the *acting and instigation of the Devil*, the unclean Spirit, which ruled in those Children of Disobedience. And this was the Condition of these *Corinthians* themselves to whom he wrote, whilst they also were carried away after dumb Idols. On the other side, those that believed called *Jesus Lord*, or professed that he was the Lord, and thereby avowed their Faith in him and Obedience unto him. Principally they owned him to be *Jehovah*, the Lord, over all God blessed for ever. For the Name *יהוה* is every where in the New-Testament expressed by *κύριος*, here used. He who thus professeth *Jesus* to be the Lord, in the first place acknowledgeth him to be the true God. And then they professed him therewithal, to be *their Lord*, fesseth

the Lord of their Souls and Consciences, unto whom they owed all Subjection, and performed all Obedience, as *Thomas* did in his great Confession, *My Lord, and my God*, John 20. 28. Now as he had before intimated that those who disowned him and called him *accursed*, did speak by the instinct and instigation of the *Devil* by whom they were acted; So he lets them know, on the other hand, that no man can thus own and confess *Jesus to be the Lord*, but by the *Holy Ghost*. But it may be said that some acted by the unclean Spirit confessed Christ to be the Lord. So did the Man in the Synagogue, who cryed out, *I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God*, Mark 1. 23, 24. And *vers. 24.* He suffered not the Devils to speak, because they knew him. And the *Damsel* possessed with a Spirit of Divination, cryed after the Apostle, saying, *These Men are the Servants of the most high God*, Acts 16. 17. So also did the Man who abode in the Tombs, possessed with an unclean Spirit, who cryed out unto him, *What have I to do with thee Jesus, thou Son of the most high God*, Mark 5. 7. And other Testimonies to the like purpose among the Heathen, and from their Oracles, might be produced. *Ans.* (1.) Our Apostle speaks of such a saying of *Jesus to be Lord*, as is accompanied with Faith in him, and subjection of Soul unto him, which is from the Holy Ghost alone. Thus none acted by the unclean Spirit can call him Lord. (2.) These Acknowledgments were either (1.) wrested from the Devil, and were no small part of his punishment and torment; or, (2.) were designed by him with an intention to prejudice the Glory of Christ, by his Testimony, who was a Lyar from the Beginning. And

*Malus bonum cum simulat, tunc est pessimus.**

* Τὶ εἰς, ἡ δὲ δαίμων ὀνομαζομένη
θεὸν; ἢ οἱ δαίμονες ἐλέγον οὐδὲν
μέν σε τίς ἐστι ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ θεοῦ; ἢ Παῦλος
ἐλέγον εἶπαι οἱ ἀνθρώποι ὅτι εἶπαι τοῦ θεοῦ
τὸ ὑψίστου ἐῖπον; ἀλλὰ μαριζόμενοι,
ἀλλὰ ἀναγκαζόμενοι; ἐκόντες ἢ καὶ μὴ
μαριζόμενοι, ἔδαμα. Chrysost. in loc.

These things therefore can have here no place. Hereby then the Apostle informs them wherein the Foundation of all *Church-Relation*, Order, and Worship did consist. For whereas they had all respect unto the *Lordship of Christ*, and their acknowledgment thereof, this was not from themselves, but was a pure Effect of

the Operation of the *Holy Ghost* in them, and towards them. And any thing of the like kind, which doth not proceed from the same Cause and Fountain, is of no Use to the Glory of God, nor of any advantage unto the Souls of Men.

SECT. 3.

Crel. de Sp.
S.

Prolegom. P.
29, 30, 31.

Some think, that this saying of *Jesus to be the Lord*, is to be restrained unto the manner of speaking afterwards insisted on. For the Apostle in the following verses treateth of those *Extraordinary Gifts*, which many in that Church were then endowed withall. None can, saith he, say *Jesus is the Lord*, in an extraordinary manner, with divers tongues, and in Prophecy, but by the Holy Ghost. Without his especial Assistance, none can eminently and miraculously declare him so to be. And if this be so, it is likely that those before intended, who said *Jesus was accursed*, were some Persons pretending to be acted, or really acted by an extraordinary Spirit, which the Apostle declares not to be the Spirit of God. And so Chrysostome interprets those words of them who were visibly and violently

Chap. I. *the Holy Spirit and his Work.*

8

lently acted by the Devil. Many such Instruments of his Malice did *Satan* stir up in those dayes, to preserve, if it were possible, his tottering Kingdom from Ruine. But there is no necessity thus to *restrain the words*, or to affix this sense unto them. Yea, it seems to me to be inconsistent with the Design of the Apostle, and Scope of the Place. For intending to instruct the *Corinthians*, as was said, in the Nature, Use, and Exercise of *Spiritual Gifts*, he first lays down the Spring and Fountain of all *Saving Profession* of the Gospel, which those Gifts were designed to the furtherance and improvement of. Hereupon having minded them of their *Heathen State and Condition* before, he lets them know by what means they were brought into the Profession of the Gospel, and owning of Jesus to be the Lord, in opposition unto the *dumb Idols* whom they had served. And this was by the Author of those Gifts, unto whose consideration he was now addressing himself. The great Change wrought in them as to their *Religion and Profession*, was by the *Holy Ghost*. For *no Man can say that Jesus is the Lord*, which is the Sum and Substance of our Christian Profession, *but by him*; though some think he hath little or no concern at all in this matter. But to say *Christ is the Lord*, includes two things; First, *Faith* in him as Lord and Saviour. So was he declared and preached by the Angels; *Luke 2. 11. A Saviour which is Christ the Lord*. And this word *Lord*, includes as the Dignity of his Person, so his Investiture with those *Offices* which for our Good *this Lord* did exercise and discharge. Secondly, The *profession* of that Faith; which two, where they are *sincere*, do always accompany each other; *Rom. 10. 10*. For as the *saying of Jesus to be Anathema*, did comprise an open Disclaimure and Abrenunciation of him; so the calling of him *Lord*, expresseth the Profession of our Faith in him, and Subjection unto him. And both these are here intended to be sincere and saving. For that Faith and Profession are intended, whereby the Church is *built upon the Rock*; the same with that of *Peter, Thou art Christ the Son of the Living God*, *Matth. 16. 16*. And that these are the Works of the Holy Ghost, which none of themselves are sufficient for, shall God assisting be afterwards abundantly declared.

Having thus stated the Original and Foundation of the Church, in its Faith, Profession, Order and Worship, he farther acquaints them, that the *same Spirit* is likewise the Author of all those Gifts, whereby it was to be *built up* and established, and whereby the Profession of it might be enlarged; *V. 4. Now there are diversities of Gifts, but the same Spirit*. These are the things which he intendeth to discourse upon, wherein he enlargeth himself in the whole ensuing Chapter. Now because the Particulars here insisted on by him in the beginning of his Discourse, will all of them occur unto us and be called over again in their *proper places*, I shall only point unto the Heads of the Discourse, in the *verses* preceeding the Eleventh, which we principally aim at.

SECT. 4.

Treating therefore, *περὶ τῶν πνευματικῶν*, of these *Spiritual Things or Gifts* in the Church, he first declares their *Author*, from whom they come, and by whom they are wrought and bestowed. Him he calls the *Spirit*, *v. 4*. the *Lord*, *v. 5*. *God*, *v. 6*. And to denote the *Oneness* of their Author, notwithstanding the diversity of the things themselves, he calls him the *same Spirit*, the *same Lord*, the *same God*. The words

the Lord of their Souls and Consciences, unto whom they owed all Subjection, and performed all Obedience, as *Thomas* did in his great Confession, *My Lord, and my God*, John 20. 28. Now as he had before intimated that those who disowned him and called him *accursed*, did speak by the instinct and instigation of the *Devil* by whom they were acted; So he lets them know, on the other hand, that no man can thus own and confess *Jesus to be the Lord*, but by the *Holy Ghost*. But it may be said that some acted by the unclean Spirit confessed Christ to be the Lord. So did the Man in the Synagogue, who cryed out, *I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God*, Mark 1. 23, 24. And *vers. 24.* He suffered not the Devils to speak, because they knew him. And the *Damsel* possessed with a Spirit of Divination, cryed after the Apostle, *These Men are the Servants of the most high God*, Acts 16. 17. So also did the Man who abode in the Tombs, possessed with an unclean Spirit, who cryed out unto him, *What have I to do with thee Jesus, thou Son of the most high God*, Mark 5. 7. And other Testimonies to the like purpose among the Heathen, and from their Oracles, might be produced. *Ans.* (1.) Our Apostle speaks of such a saying of *Jesus to be Lord*, as is accompanied with Faith in him, and subjection of Soul unto him, which is from the Holy Ghost alone. Thus none acted by the unclean Spirit can call him Lord. (2.) These Acknowledgments were either (1.) wrested from the Devil, and were no small part of his punishment and torment; or, (2.) were designed by him with an intention to prejudice the Glory of Christ, by his Testimony, who was a Liar from the Beginning. And

*Malus bonum cum simulat, tunc est pessimus.**

* Τὶ εἶναι, ὡς εἰς δαίμων ὀνομαζέται ὁ θεὸς; ὅτι οἱ δαίμονες ἐλέγον διδάμεν σε τίς ἐστὶ ὁ ἦς τὸ θεὸς; ὅτι παύλα ἐλέγον εἶπαι οἱ ἄνθρωποι δὲ οἱ τὸ θεὸς τὸ ὑψίστον εἶπον; ἀλλὰ ματαζόμενοι, ἀλλὰ ἀναγκαζόμενοι; ἐπότες ἢ καὶ μὴ ματαζόμενοι, ὡς εἰς. Chrysost. in loc.

These things therefore can have here no place. Hereby then the Apostle informs them wherein the Foundation of all *Church-Relation*, Order, and Worship did consist. For whereas they had all respect unto the *Lordship of Christ*, and their acknowledgment thereof, this was not from themselves, but was a pure Effect of

the Operation of the *Holy Ghost* in them, and towards them. And any thing of the like kind, which doth not proceed from the same Cause and Fountain, is of no Use to the Glory of God, nor of any advantage unto the Souls of Men.

SECT. 3.

Crel. de Sp.
S.
Prolegom. p.
29, 30, 31.

Some think, that this saying of *Jesus to be the Lord*, is to be restrained unto the manner of speaking afterwards insisted on. For the Apostle in the following verses treateth of those *Extraordinary Gifts*, which many in that Church were then endowed withall. None can, saith he, say *Jesus is the Lord*, in an extraordinary manner, with divers tongues, and in Prophecy, but by the Holy Ghost. Without his especial Assistance, none can eminently and miraculously declare him so to be. And if this be so, it is likely that those beforeintended, who said *Jesus was accursed*, were some Persons pretending to be acted, or really acted by an extraordinary Spirit, which the Apostle declares not to be the Spirit of God. And so Chrysostome interprets those words of them who were visibly and violently

Chap. I. *the Holy Spirit and his Work.*

8

lently acted by the Devil. Many such Instruments of his Malice did Satan stir up in those dayes, to preserve, if it were possible, his tottering Kingdom from Ruine. But there is no necessity thus to *restrain the words*, or to affix this sense unto them. Yea, it seems to me to be inconsistent with the Design of the Apostle, and Scope of the Place. For intending to instruct the *Corinthians*, as was said, in the Nature, Use, and Exercise of *Spiritual Gifts*, he first lays down the Spring and Fountain of all *Saving Profession* of the Gospel, which those Gifts were designed to the furtherance and improvement of. Hereupon having minded them of their *Heathen State and Condition* before, he lets them know by what means they were brought into the Profession of the Gospel, and owning of Jesus to be the Lord, in opposition unto the *dumb Idols* whom they had served. And this was by the Author of those Gifts, unto whose consideration he was now addressing himself. The great Change wrought in them as to their *Religion and Profession*, was by the *Holy Ghost*. For *no Man can say that Jesus is the Lord*, which is the Sum and Substance of our Christian Profession, *but by him*; though some think he hath little or no concern at all in this matter. But to say *Christ is the Lord*, includes two things; First, *Faith* in him as Lord and Saviour. So was he declared and preached by the Angels; *Luke 2. 11. A Saviour which is Christ the Lord*. And this word *Lord*, includes as the Dignity of his Person, so his Investiture with those *Offices* which for our Good *this Lord* did exercise and discharge. Secondly, The *profession* of that Faith; which two, where they are *sincere*, do always accompany each other; *Rom. 10. 10*. For as the *saying of Jesus to be Anathema*, did comprise an open Disclaimure and Abrenunciation of him; so the calling of him *Lord*, expresseth the Profession of our Faith in him, and Subjection unto him. And both these are here intended to be sincere and saving. For that Faith and Profession are intended, whereby the Church is *built upon the Rock*; the same with that of *Peter, Thou art Christ the Son of the Living God*, *Matth. 16. 16*. And that these are the Works of the Holy Ghost, which none of themselves are sufficient for, shall God assisting be afterwards abundantly declared.

Having thus stated the Original and Foundation of the Church, in its Faith, Profession, Order and Worship, he farther acquaints them, that the *same Spirit* is likewise the Author of all those Gifts, whereby it was to be *built up* and established, and whereby the Profession of it might be enlarged; *V. 4. Now there are diversities of Gifts, but the same Spirit*. These are the things which he intendeth to discourse upon, wherein he enlargeth himself in the whole ensuing Chapter. Now because the Particulars here insisted on by him in the beginning of his Discourse, will all of them occur unto us and be called over again in their *proper places*, I shall only point unto the Heads of the Discourse, in the *verses* preceeding the Eleventh, which we principally aim at.

SECT. 4.

Treating therefore, *περὶ τῶν πνευματικῶν*, of these *Spiritual Things or Gifts* in the Church, he first declares their *Author*, from whom they come, and by whom they are wrought and bestowed. Him he calls the *Spirit*, *v. 4.* the *Lord*, *v. 5.* *God*, *v. 6.* And to denote the *Oneness* of their Author, notwithstanding the diversity of the things themselves, he calls him the *same Spirit*, the *same Lord*, the *same God*. The words

may be understood two wayes; First, That the whole *Trinity*, and each Person distinctly should be intended in them. For consider the immediate *Operator* of these Gifts, and it is the *Spirit*, or the Holy Ghost, *vers. 4.* Consider them as to their *Procurement*, and immediate *Authoritative Collation*; and so they are from Christ, the *Son*, the *Lord*, *vers. 5.* But as to their first Original and Fountain, they are from God, even the Father, *vers. 6.* And all these are *one* and the same. But rather the Spirit alone is intended, and hath this three-fold denomination given unto him; For as he is particularly denoted by the Name of the *Spirit*, which he useth that we may know whom it is that eminently he intendeth, so he calls him both *Lord*, and *God*, as to manifest his *Sovereign Authority* in all his Works and Administrations; so to ingenerate a due Reverence in their Hearts towards him with whom they had to do in this Matter. And no more is intended in these *three Verses*, but what is summed up *vers. 11.* *But all these worketh that one and the self same Spirit, dividing to every Man severally as he will.*

SECT. 5. Secondly; With respect unto their general Nature, The Apostle distributes them into *Gifts*, *χαρίσματα*, *v. 4.* *Administrations*, *διακονίαι*, *v. 5.* *Operations*, *ἐνεργήματα*, *v. 6.* which *Division*, with the Reasons of it, will in our Progress be farther cleared.

SECT. 6. Thirdly; He declares the general *End* of the Spirit of God in the Communication of them, and the Use of them in the Church, *vers. 7.* *But the manifestation of the Spirit is given unto every Man to profit withal*; *φανέρωσις τῆς πνεύματος*; *Syr.* גלינת רוחו, the *Revelation of the Spirit*; that is, the Gifts whereby, and in whose Exercise he manifests and reveals his own Presence, Power, and effectual Operation. And the Spirit of God hath no other aim in granting these his *enlightning Gifts*, wherein he manifests his care of the Church, and declares the things of the Gospel unto any Man, but that they should be used to the *Profit*, *Advantage*, and *Edification* of others. They are not bestowed on Men, to make their secular Gain or Advantage by them, in Riches, Honour, or Reputation, for which Ends *Simon the Magician* would have purchased them with his Money, *Acts 8. 19.* No nor yet meerly for the good and benefit of the Souls of them that do receive them, but for the *Edification* of the Church, and the furtherance of Faith and Profession in others. *πρὸς τὸ συμφέρον*; *ad id quod expedit, prodest*; For that which is expedient, useful, profitable, namely to the Church, *1 Cor. 6. 12. Chap. 10. 23. 2 Cor. 8. 10.* Thus was the Foundation of the first Churches of the Gospel laid by the *Holy Ghost*, and thus was the Work of their building unto perfection, carried on by him. How far *present Churches* do, or ought to stand on the same bottom, how far they are carried on upon the same Principles, is worth our Enquiry, and will in its proper Place fall under our Consideration.

SECT. 7. Fourthly; The Apostle distributes the Spiritual Gifts then bestowed on the Church, or some Members of it, into *nine Particular Heads* or Instances. As (1.) *Wisdom*. (2.) *Knowledge*, *v. 8.* or the *Word of Wisdom*, and the *Word of Knowledge*. (3.) *Faith*. (4.) *Healing*, *vers. 9.* (5.) *Working of Miracles*. (6.) *Prophecy*. (7.) *Discerning of Spirits*. (8.)

Chap. I. *the Holy Spirit and his Work.*

7

(8.) *Kinds of Tongues.* (9) *Interpretation of Tongues,* v. 10. And all these were extraordinary Gifts, in the manner of the Communication and Exercise, which related unto the then *present state* of the Church. What is yet continued *anologous* unto them, or holding proportion with them, must be farther enquired into; when also their especial Nature will be unfolded. * But now if there be that great *Diversity of Gifts* in the Church, if so much *Difference* in their *Administrations*, how can it possibly be prevented but that *Differences* and *Divisions* will arise amongst them on whom they are bestowed, and those amongst whom they are exercised? It is true, this may so fall out and sometimes doth so, and *de facto* it did so in this *Church of Corinth*.

* Ex hoc capite & proximo licet conjicere quæ fuerint dotes illius veteris Ecclesiæ Christianæ, priusquam tot ceremoniis, opibus, imperiis, copiis, bellis aliisque id genus esset onerata. Nunc fere tot præclara munia ad unam potestatem redacta sunt: h. e. Christi titulo palliatam Tyrannidem. Quid enim aliud est potestas nisi ad sit animus Apostolicus? Erasim. Annot. ad v. 4.

One Admired one Gift, a second another of a different kind, and so the third. Accordingly among those who had received them, one *boasted* of this or that Particular Gift and Ability, and would be continually in its exercise to the exclusion and contempt of others, bestowed no less for the *edification* of the Church than his own. And so far were they transported with *vain-Glory*, and a desire of *self-Advancement*, as that they preferred the use of those Gifts in the Church, which tended principally to beget *Astonishment* and *Admiration* in them which heard or beheld them, before those which were peculiarly useful unto the Edification of the Church it self; which Evil in particular the Apostle rebukes at large *Chap. 14.* By this means the Church came to be *divided* in it self, and almost to be broken in Pieces. *Chap. 1. v. 11, 12.* So foolish oftentimes are the minds of Men; so liable to be imposed upon; so common is it for their Lusts seduced and principled by the crafts of Satan, to *turn Judgment into Wormwood*, and to abuse the most useful Effects of Divine Grace and Bounty. To prevent all these Evils for the future, and to manifest how perfect an *harmony* there is in all these divers Gifts and different Administrations, at what an Agreement they are among themselves in their Tendency unto the same Ends of the Union and Edification of the Church, from what Fountain of Wisdom they do proceed, and with what Care they ought to be used and improved; the Apostle declares unto them both the *Author* of them, and the *Rule* he proceedeth by in their Dispensation; v. 11. *All these,* saith he, * *worketh that one and self-same Spirit, dividing to every Man severally as he will.*

* Απογεμεται μεν οὖν οἱ νομοματας, ενεργει δ' αυτες ος.

Basil. Homil. 15. de fide.

I shall not at present further open or insist upon these Words. Frequent recourse must be had unto them in our Progress, wherein they will be fully explicated as to what concerns the *Person* of the Spirit, his *Will*, and his *Operations* which are all asserted in them. For my Purpose is, through the Permission and Assistance of God, to treat from hence of the *Name, Nature, Existence,* and *whole Work* of the Holy Spirit, with the Grace of God through Jesus Christ in the Communication of him unto the Sons of Men. A Work in it self too great and difficult for me to undertake, and beyond my *Ability* to manage unto the Glory of God, or the Edification of the Souls of them that do believe. For *who is sufficient for these things?* But yet I dare not utterly faint in it, nor under it, whilst I look unto him whose *Work* it is, who *giveth Wisdom to them that lack*

SECT. 8.

lack it, and upbraideth them not, Jam. 1. 5. Our Eys therefore are unto him alone, who both supplieth seed to the Sower, and when he hath done blesteth it with an encrease. The present Necessity, Importance, and Usefulness of this work, are the Things which alone have engaged me into the undertaking of it. These therefore I shall briefly represent in some general Considerations, before I insist on the Things themselves whose especial Explanation is designed.

SECT. 9.

First then we may consider, That the Doctrine of the Spirit of God his Work and Grace, is the *second great Head* or Principle of those Gospel-Truths wherein the Glory of God, and the Good of the Souls of Men are most eminently concerned. And such also it is, that without it, without the *Knowledge* of it in its *Truth*, and the *Improvement* of it in its *Power*, the other will be useless unto those Ends. For when God designed the Great and Glorious Work of recovering Fallen Man, and the saving of sinners to the *Praise of the Glory of his Grace*, he appointed in his Infinite Wisdom *two great Means* thereof. The one was the *giving of his Son for them*, and the other was the *giving of his Spirit unto them*. And hereby was way made for the Manifestation of the Glory of the whole *Blessed Trinity*, which is the utmost end of all the Works of God. Hereby, were the *Love, Grace, and Wisdom* of the Father in the Design and Projection of the whole; the *Love, Grace, and Condescension* of the Son in the Execution Purchase and Procurement of Grace and Salvation for sinners, with the *Love, Grace, and Power* of the Holy Spirit in the effectual Application of all unto the Souls of Men, made gloriously conspicuous. Hence from the first Entrance of sin, there were *two general Heads of the Promises of God* unto Men, concerning the means of their Recovery and Salvation. The One was that concerning the *sending of his Son* to be Incarnate to take our Nature upon him, and to suffer for us therein; the Other concerning the *giving of his Spirit*, to make the Effects and Fruits of the Incarnation, Obedience, and Suffering of his Son, effectual in us and towards us. To these Heads may all the Promises of God be reduced. Now because the *Former* was to be the Foundation of the *Latter*, that was first to be laid down and most insisted on untill it was actually accomplished. Hence the Great Promise of the *Old Testament*, the Principal Object of the Faith, Hope, and Expectation of Believers, was *that concerning the Coming of the Son of God in the Flesh*, and the Work which he was to perform. Yet was this also, as we shall see in our Progress, accompanied with a great intermixture of Promises concerning the *Holy Spirit*, to render his coming and work effectual unto us. But when once that first work was fully accomplished, when the Son of God was come, and had destroyed the Works of the Devil, the Principal remaining Promise of the New Testament, the Spring of all the rest, concerneth the *sending of the Holy Spirit* unto the Accomplishment of his Part of that great Work which God had designed. Hence the Holy Ghost, the Doctrine concerning his Person, his Work, his Grace, is the most peculiar and principal Subject of the Scriptures of the New Testament, and a most eminent *immediate Object* of the Faith of them that do believe. And this must be further cleared, seeing we have to deal with some who will scarce allow him to be of *any Consideration* in these matters at all. But I shall be brief
in

in these previous Testimonies hereunto, because the whole ensuing discourse is designed to the Demonstration of the Truth of this Assertion.

First, It is of great Moment and sufficient of it self to maintain the Cause as *proposed*; that when our Lord Jesus Christ was to leave the world, He promised to send his *Holy Spirit* unto his Disciples to supply his Absence. Of what use the Presence of Christ was unto his Disciples we may in some measure conceive; they knew full well whose *Hearts were filled with sorrow* upon the mention of his Leaving of them, *John. 16. 5. 6.* Designing to relieve them in this great Distress, which drew out the highest Expressions of Love, Tenderness, Compassion and Care towards them, he doth it principally by this Promise; which he assures them shall be to their greater Advantage than any they could receive by the continuance of his *bodily Presence* amongst them. And to secure them hereof as also to inform them of its great importance, he repeats it frequently unto them, and inculcates it upon them. Consider somewhat of what he sayes to this Purpose in his last Discourse with them; *John 14. 16, 17, 18. I will pray the Father and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; even the Spirit of Truth whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not neither knoweth him; but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you and shall be in you. I will not leave you comfortless, I will come unto you; that is in and by this Holy Spirit. And v. 25, 26, 27. These things I have spoken unto you being present with you; but the Comforter who is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my Name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all Things to your remembrance whatever I have said unto you. Peace I leave with you, &c. And Chap. 15. 25. But when the Comforter is come whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of Truth which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me. And Chap. 16. v. 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15. Now I go my way to him that sent me, and none of you asketh me, whither goest thou. But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart. Nevertheless I tell you the Truth, is is expedient for you that I depart I will send him unto You. And when he is come he will reprove the World of Sin, and of Righteousness, and of Judgment. Of Sin because they believe not on me. Of Righteousness because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more; of Judgment because the Prince of this World is judged. I have yet many things to say unto you, but you cannot bear them now. Howbeit when he the Spirit of Truth is come, he will guide you into all Truth; for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak, and he shall shew you things to come. He shall Glorifie me for he shall receive of mine, and he shall shew it unto You. All things that the Father hath are mine; therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shew it unto You. * This was the great Legacy which our Lord Jesus Christ departing out of this World bequeathed unto his sorrowful Disciples. This he promiseth un-*

* Spiritus Sanctus ad hoc missus a Christo, ad hoc postulatus de Patre ut esset Doctor Veritatis, Christi Vicarius, Tertul. advers. Hæret. c. 28.

Quoniam Dominus minus in cælos esset abiturus, Paracletum Discipulis necessario dabat, ne illos quodammodo pupillos, quod minime decebat, relinqueret; & sine Advocato & quodam Tutore desereret. Hic est enim qui ipsorum animos mentesque firmavit, qui in ipsis illuminator rerum Divinarum fuit; quo confirmati, pro Nomine Domini nec Carceres nec Vincula

cula timuerunt: quin imo ipsas seculi potestates & tormenta calcaverunt, armati jam felicit per ipsum atque firmati, habentes in se dona quæ hic idem Spiritus Ecclesiæ Christi sponsa, quasi quædam ornamenta distribuit & dirigit, Novatian. de Trinitat.

Totum ex Spiritu Sancti constat ducatu, quod devii diriguntur, quod impii convertuntur, quod debiles confirmantur. Spiritus rectus, Spiritus Sanctus, Spiritus Principalis regit, componit, consummat & perficit, Nostras inhabitat mentes &c. corda quæ possidet, nec errare patitur, nec corrumpi, nec vinci quos docuerit, quos possederit, quos gladio potentissimæ veritatis accinxerit, Cyprian. de Spirit. Sanct.

to them as a sufficient relief against all their Troubles, and a faithful Guide in all their ways. And because of the Importance of it unto them he frequently *repeats* it, and enlargeth upon the benefits that they should receive thereby ; giving them a particular account why it would be more advantageous unto them than his own *bodily Presence*. And therefore after his Resurrection he minds them again of this Promise, commanding them to act nothing towards the *building of the Church*, until it was accomplished towards them, *Acts* 1. 4, 5, 8. They would have been again embracing his humane Nature and rejoycing in it. But as he said unto *Mary*, *touch me not*, *John* 20. 17. to wean her from any carnal consideration of him ; so he instructs them all now to look after and trust unto the Promise of the Holy Ghost. Hence is that of our Apostle ; *though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we him no more* ; *2 Cor.* 5. 16. For although it was a great Priviledg to have known Christ in this World after the flesh, yet it was much greater to enjoy him in the Dispensation of the Spirit. And this was spoken by the Apostle as the Ancients judge, to rebuke the boasting of some about their seeing the Lord in the Flesh, who were thereon called *θεωροῦντες*, whom he directs unto a more excellent knowledge of him. It is in vain pretended that it was the *Apostles* only, and it may be some of the *Primitive Christians* who were concerned in this Promise. For although the Holy Ghost was bestowed on them in a *peculiar manner*, and for especial

* *Præsentia spiritali cum eis erat ubique futurus post Ascensionem suam, & cum tota Ecclesia sua in hoc mundo usque in consummationem seculi : — Neque enim de solis Apostolis potest intelligi, sicut dedisti ei potestatem omnis carnis, ut omne quod dedisti ei det eis vitam æternam ; sed ubique de omnibus quibus in eum credentibus vita æterna datur.* August. *Tractat.* 106. in *Evangel.* Johan.

Munus hoc quod in Christo est, in consummationem seculi nobiscum ; hoc expectationis nostræ solatium, hoc in donorum operationibus futura spei pignus est ; hoc Moralium lumen, hic splendor animarum est. Hilar. *lib.* 2. de *Trinitat.*

Ends, yet the *Promise in general* belongs unto all Believers unto the End of the World. * For as to what concerns his Gracious Operations, whatever the Lord Christ prayed for for them, and so promised unto them, (as the Spirit was procured for them on his Prayer, *Joh.* 17. 16, 17.) he prayed not for it, for them alone, but for them also which should believe on him through their word ; *Joh.* 17. 20. And his Promise is, to be with his always even unto the End of the World, *Math.* 28. 20. As also that *wherever two or three are gathered together in his Name, there he would be in the midst of them*, *Math.* 18. 20 ; which he is no otherwise but by his Spirit : For as for his Humane Nature, the *Heavens must receive him until the times of the Restitution of all things*, *Acts* 3. 21.

And this one Consideration, is sufficient to evince the importance of the Doctrine, and things which concern the Holy Spirit. For is it possible that any *Christian* should be so supinely negligent and careless, so unconcerned in the Things whereon his Present Comforts and future Happiness do absolutely depend, as not to think it his Duty to inquire with the greatest Care and Diligence, into what our Lord *Jesus Christ* hath left unto us to supply his Absence, and at length to bring us unto himself : He by whom these things are despised, hath neither *Part* nor *Lot* in Christ himself. For *if any Man hath not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his*, *Rom.* 8. 9.

SECT. II. Secondly ; The great work of the Holy Ghost in the Dispensation and

* *Mini-*

* *Ministration of the Gospel* unto all the Ends of it, is another evidence unto the same Purpose. Hence the Gospel it self is called the *Ministration of the Spirit*, in opposition to that of the Law, which is called the *Ministration of the Letter and of Condemnation*, 2 Cor. 3. 8. *Διακονία τῆς πνεύματος*, the *Ministry of the Spirit*, is either that Ministry which the Spirit makes effectual; or that Ministry whereby the Spirit in his Gifts and Graces is communicated unto Men. And this is that which gives unto the Ministry of the Gospel both its *Glory* and its *Efficacy*. Take away the *Spirit* from the *Gospel* and you render it a *dead Letter*, and leave the *New-Testament* of no more use unto *Christians* than the *Old-Testament* is of unto the *Jews*. It is therefore a mischievous imagination proceeding from Ignorance Blindness and Unbelief, that there is no more in the Gospel, but what is conteyned under any other *Doctrine* or Declaration of Truth, that it is nothing but a *Book* for men to exercise their *Reason* in and upon, and to improve the things of it by the same Faculty. For this is to separate the *Spirit* or the Dispensation of the *Spirit* from it, which is in Truth to destroy it. And therewith is the *Covenant* of God rejected, which is, that *his Word and Spirit shall go together*, Isa. 59. v. 20. 21. We shall therefore, God assisting manifest in our Progress, that the *whole Ministry of the Gospel*, the whole Use and Efficacy of it, do depend on that *Ministration of the Spirit* wherewith according to the Promise of God it is accompanied. If therefore we have any concernment in, or have ever received any benefit by the Gospel or the *Ministration* of it, we have a signal Duty lying before us in the matter in hand.

Hic est qui Prophetas in Ecclesia constituit, magistros erudit, linguas dirigit, virtutes & sanctitates facit, opera mirabilia gerit, discretionem Spirituum porrigit, gubernationes contribuit, consilia suggerit, quaeque alia sunt Charismatum dona componit & digerit; & ideo Ecclesiam Domino undique & in omnibus consummatam & perfectam facit. Tertul.

Thirdly; There is not any Spiritual or *Saving-Good* from first to last SECT. 12. communicated unto us, or that we are from and by the Grace of God made Partakers of, but it is revealed to us and *bestowed on* us by the Holy Ghost. He who hath not an immediate and *especial Work* of the Spirit of God upon him and towards him, did never receive any *especial Love* Grace or Mercy from God. For how should he so do? Whatever God works in us and upon us he doth it by his Spirit. He therefore who hath no *Work of the Spirit* of God upon his heart, did never receive either Mercy or Grace from God. For God giveth them not but by his Spirit. A *disclamure* therefore of any Work of the Spirit of God in us or upon us, is a disclamure of all Interest in his Grace and Mercy. And they may do well to consider it, with whom the *Work of the Spirit of God* is a Reproach. When they can tell us of any other way whereby a Man may be made Partaker of *Mercy and Grace*, we will attend unto it; in the mean time we shall prove from the Scripture this to be the way of God.

Fourthly: There is not any thing done in us or by us that is *Holy* SECT. 13. and *Acceptable* unto God, but it is an Effect of the Holy Spirit, it is of his operation in us and by us. *Without him we can do nothing*. For without Christ we cannot, Joh. 15. 5. And by him alone is the Grace

* Hic est qui operatur ex aquis, secundam Nativitatem, semen quoddam divini generis, & consecrator celestis Nativitatis; Pignus promissæ hereditatis & quasi chi-rographum quoddam æternæ salutis; qui nos Dei faciat Templum & nos efficiat domum, qui interpellat divinas aures pro nobis gemitibus inloquacibus, advocatio-nis officia, & defensionis exhibens munera, inhabitator corporibus nostris ductus, & Sanctitatis effector; Hic est, qui inex-plebiles cupiditates coercet &c. Novat de Trinitat.

of Christ communicated unto us; and wrought in us. * By him we are *Regenerated*, by him we are *Sanctified*, by him are we *Cleansed*, by him are we *Assisted* in and unto every Good Work. Particular instances to this Purpose will be afterwards insisted on, and proved. And it is our unquestionable concernment to enquire into the Cause and Spring of all that is Good in us, wherein also we shall have a true discovery of the Spring and Cause of all that is Evil, without a competent knowledge of both which we can do nothing as we ought.

SECT. 14. Fifthly; God lets us know that the only peculiarly remediless Sin and way of sinning under the Gospel, is to *sin in an especial manner against the Holy Ghost*. And this of it self is sufficient to convince us how needful it is for us to be well instructed in what concerns him. For there is somewhat that doth so, which is accompanied with irrecoverable and eternal Ruine. And so is nothing else in the World. So Mark 3. 28, 29. *All sins shall be forgiven unto the Sons of Men, and blasphemies wherewithsoever they shall blaspheme; but he that shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost, hath never forgiveness. Or, He that speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this World, nor in the World to come.* Matth. 12. 32. There remains nothing for him who doth despite to the Spirit of Grace, but a certain fearful looking-for of Judgment and fiery Indignation that shall devour the Adversaries, Heb. 10. 27, 29. This is that *sin unto death* whose remission is not to be prayed for, 1 Joh. 5. 16. For He having taken upon him to make effectual unto us the great Remedy provided in the blood of Christ for the Pardon of our Sins, if He in the Prosecution of that Work be despised, blasphemed, despitefully used, there neither is Relief, nor can there be Pardon for that Sin. For whence in that Case should they arise or Spring? As God hath not another Son to offer another sacrifice for Sin, so that he by whom his Sacrifice is despised can have none remaining for him; no more hath he another Spirit to make that Sacrifice effectual unto us, if the Holy Ghost in his work be despised and rejected. This therefore is a tender Place.

* Omnibus quidem quæ divina sunt cum Reverentia & vehementi cura oportet intendere, maxime autem his quæ de Spiritu Sancti divinitate dicuntur, præsertim cum Blasphemia in eum sine venia sit; ita ut blasphemantis pena vendatur non solum in omni præsens seculum, sed etiam in futurum. Ait quippe Salvator, Blasphemanti in Spiritum Sanctum non esse remissionem, neque in isto seculo neque in futuro: unde magis ac magis intendere oportet quæ Scripturarum de eo sit relatio, ne in aliquem, saltem per ignorantiam, Blasphemie error obrepat. Dy-dym. de Spir. Sanct. lib. 1. Interpret. Hieron.

* We cannot use too much Holy Diligence in our Enquiries after what God hath revealed in his Word concerning his Spirit and his Work; seeing there may be so fatal a miscarriage in an opposition unto him, as the Nature of Man is incapable of in any other Instance.

And these Considerations belong unto the first Head of Reasons of the Importance, Use, and Necessity of the Doctrine proposed to be enquired into. They are enough to manifest what is the Concernment of all Believers herein. For on the Account of these things the Scripture plainly declares, as we observed before, *that he who hath not the Spirit of Christ is none of his*; their

Portion is not in him, they shall have no benefit by his Mediation. Men may

may please themselves with a Profession of being *Christians* and owning the *Gospel*, whilst they dispise the Spirit of God both name and thing. Their Condition we shall examine and judge by the Scripture before we come to the End of this Discourse. And for the *Scripture* it self, whoever reads the Books of the *New Testament*, besides the great and precious Promises that are given concerning him in the *Old*, will find and conclude, unless he be prepossessed with Prejudice, that the whole of what is declared in those *Writings*, turns on this only hinge. Remove from them the consideration of the Spirit of God and his Work, and it will be hard to find out what they aim at or tend unto.

Secondly ; The great *Deceit* and *Abuse* that hath been in all Ages of the Church under the Pretence of the *Name and Work of the Spirit*, make the through-consideration of what we are taught concerning them, exceeding necessary. Had not these things been *Excellent in themselves* and so acknowledged by all Christians, they would never have been by so many falsely pretended unto. Men do not seek to adorn themselves with Rags, or to *boast* of what on its own account is under just contempt. And according to the worth of things so are they liable to *abuse*. And the more *excellent* any thing is the more *vile* and pernicious is an *undue Pretence* unto it. Such have been the *false Pretences* of some in all Ages unto the *Spirit of God* and his work, whose *real Excellencies* in themselves, have made those pretences abominable and unspeakably dangerous. For the *better* the things are which are counterfeited, the *worse* always are the Ends they are employed unto. In the whole World there is nothing so vile as that which *pretendeth to be God*, and is not ; nor is any other thing capable of so pernicious an abuse. Some Instances hereof I shall give both out of the Old Testament and the New.

The most signal Gift of the Spirit of God for the Use of the Church under the *Old Testament*, was that of *Prophecy*. This therefore was deservedly in Honour and Reputation ; as having a great impression of the *Authority of God upon it*, and in it of his *Neeriness* unto Man. Besides ; those in whom it was had justly the *Conduct* of the Minds and Consciences of others given up unto them. For they spake in the *Name of God*, and had his warrant for what they proposed, which is the highest security of Obedience. And these things caused many to *pretend unto this Gift*, who were indeed never *inspired* by the Holy Spirit, but were rather on the contrary acted by a Spirit of *Lying* and uncleanness. For it is very probable, that when Men falsely and in meer pretence took upon them to be *Prophets divinely inspired*, without any antecedent *Diabolical Enthusiasm*, that the *Devil* made use of them to compass his own Designs. Being given up by the righteous Judgment of God unto all Delusions, for *belying his Spirit* and holy Inspirations, they were quickly possessed with a *Spirit of Lying* and unclean Divination. So the false Prophets of *Ahab*, who encouraged him to go up unto *Ramoth Gilead*, foretelling his prosperous success, *1 Kings 22. 6.* seemed only to have complied deceitfully with the Inclinations of their Master, and to have out-acted his other Courtiers in *Flattery*, by gilding it with a pretence of *Prophecy*. But when *Micaiah* came to lay open the Mystery of their Iniquity, it appeared that a *Lying Spirit* by the permission of God had possessed their Minds, and gave them Impressions, which being Supernatural, they were deceived

as well as they did deceive, *v. 21, 22, 23*. This they were justly *given up unto*, pretending falsely unto the Inspiration of that Holy Spirit, which they had not received. And no otherwise hath it fallen out with some in our Days, whom we have seen visibly acted by an *extraordinary Power*; unduely pretending unto *Supernatural Agitations* from God, they were really acted by the Devil, a thing they neither desired nor looked after; but being surprized by it were pleased with it for a while; as it was with sundry of the *Quakers* at their first appearance.

SECT. 17. Now these false Prophets of old were of two sorts, both mentioned Deut. 18. 20. First, such as professedly *served other Gods*, directing all their *Prophetick actings* unto the Promotion of their Worship. Such were the Prophets of *Baal*, in whose *name* expressly they prophesied, and whose Assistance they invoked. *They called on the name of Baal, saying, O Baal hear us*, 1 Kings 18, 26, 27, 28. Many of these were slain by *Elijah*, and the whole Race of them afterwards extirpated by *Jehu*, 2 Kings 25, 26, 27, 28. This put an End to his *Diety*, for it is said, *he destroyed Baal out of Israel*; false Gods having no *Existence* but in the deceived Minds of their Worshipers. It may be asked why these are called *Prophets*? and so in general of all the false Prophets mentioned in the Scripture. Was it because they *meerly pretended* and counterfeited a Spirit of Prophecie, or had they really any such? I Answer, that I no way doubt, but that they were of both sorts. These Prophets of *Baal* were such as worshipped the *Sun*, after the manner of the *Tyrians*. Herein they had invented many Hellish *Mysteries*, Ceremonies, and Sacrifices; these they taught the People, by whom they were hired. Being thus engaged in the Service of the Devil, he actually possessed their minds as a *Spirit of Divination*, and enabled them to declare things unknown unto other Men. They in the mean time really finding themselves acted by a *Power superior to them*, took and owned that to be the Power of their God; and thereby became immediate Worshipers of the *Devil*. This our Apostle declares 1 Cor. 10. 20. Whatever those who left the true God aimed at to worship, the *Devil* interposed himself between that and them as the Object of their Adoration. Hereby he became the *God of this World*, 2 Cor. 4. 4. Him whom in all their Idols they worshipped and adored. With a spirit of Divination from him were many of the false Prophets acted, which they thought to be the Spirit of their God. For they found themselves acted by a superior Power, which they could neither excuse nor resist. * Others of them were meer Pretenders and Counterfeits, that deceived the foolish Multitude with vain false Predictions. Of these more will be spoken afterwards.

* Επειδὴν
ᾧ τελεταῖς
τοῖς καὶ μαγ-
χαναῖς κα-
τέδωκε δαίμονας
οἱ εἰς ἄνθρωπον,
καὶ ἐνεγκύν
τῷ δαίμονι
τὴν ὁρμὴν ἐν ἡδυνάτῳ
ἀλλ' ἐμελλε διασω-
θῆναι, καὶ
ἀπολλύμενοι
τοῖς μαγχαναῖς
τοῖς φησὶ

λύονται λοιπὸν ἀνάπαυ βροτῶν θεὸν ἐν ἐπιχαρῇ. Chrylost. in 1 Cor. 12.

SECT. 18. Secondly; Others there were, who spake in the *Name*, and as they falsely professed, *by the Inspiration* of the Spirit of the Holy God. With this sort of Men *Jeremiah* had great Contests. For in that *Apostatizing* Age of the Church, they had got such an Interest and Reputation among the

the Rulers and People, as not only to confront his *Prophecies* with contrary Predictions, *Chap. 28. 2, 3, 4.* but also to traduce him as a *false Prophet*, and to urge his Punishment according to the Law, *Chap. 29. v. 25, 26, 27.* And with the like confidence did *Zedekiah* the Son of *Chenaanah* carry it towards *Micaiah*, *1 Kings 22. 26.* for he scornfully asks him, *Which way went the Spirit of the Lord from me to speak unto thee*; That is, whereas assuredly he speaketh in me, how came he to inspire thee with a contrary Revelation? *Ezekiel* at the same time with *Jeremiah*, was exercised and perplexed with them, *Chap. 13, & 14.* For this sort of Persons, namely *false Pretenders unto Divine extraordinary Revelations*, did of old usually abound in times of Danger and approaching Desolations. The Devil stirred them up to fill men with vain hopes, to keep them in Sin and Security that Destruction might seize upon them at unawares. And whoever takes the same course in the time of deserved threatned *impendent Judgments*, though they use not the same means, yet they also do the Work of the Devil. For whatever encourageth men to be secure in their sins, is a false Divination, *Jer. 5. 30, 31.* And this sort of Men is characterized by the Prophet *Jeremiah*, *Chap. 23. from vers. 9. to 33.* where any one may read their Sin and Judgment. And yet this false pretending unto the Spirit of Prophecie, was very far from casting any contempt on the real Gift of the Holy Ghost therein; nay it gave it the greater Glory and Lustre. God never more honoured his true Prophets, than when there were most false Ones. Neither shall ever any false Pretence to the Spirit of Grace render him less dear unto those that are Partakers of him, or his Gifts of less use unto the Church.

It was thus also under the *New Testament* at the first preaching of the GOSPEL. The Doctrine of it at first was declared from the *immediate Revelation* of the Spirit, preached by the Assistance of the Spirit, made effectual by his Work and Power, was accompanied in many by outward miraculous Works and Effects of the Spirit, whence the whole of what peculiarly belonged unto it in opposition to the Law was called the *Ministration of the Spirit*. These things being owned and acknowledged by all, those who had any false Opinions or Dotages of their own to broach, or any other deceit to put upon Christians, could think of no more expedite means for the compassing of their ends, than by pretending to *immediate Revelations* of the Spirit. For without some kind of *credibility* given them from hence, they knew that their fond Imaginations would not be taken into the least consideration. Hence the Apostle *Peter* having treated concerning the Revelation of God by his Spirit in Prophecie under the Old Testament and the New, *2 Epist. chap. 1. v. 17, 18, 19, 20, 21.* adds as an Inference from that Discourse, a comparison between the false Prophets that were under the Old Testament, and the false Teachers under the New; *Chap. 2. 1. But there were false Prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false Teachers among you.* And the Reason of it is, because that as they pretended to the Spirit of the Lord in their prophecies, saying, *Thus saith the Lord*, when he sent them not; so these ascribed all their abominable Heresies to the Inspiration of the Spirit, by whom they were not assisted.

Hence

SECT. 20. Hence is that blessed Caution and Rule given us by the Apostle *John*, who lived to see much mischief done in the Church by this Pretence; *1 Epist. chap. 4. v. 1, 2. Beloved, beieve not every Spirit, but try the Spirits whether they are of God, because many false prophets are gone out into the World. Hereby know we the Spirit of God; every Spirit that confesseth that Jesus is come in the flesh, is of God; and every Spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is not of God.* A two-fold Direction doth the Apostle here give unto all Believers. The first by the way of Caution, that they would not believe every Spirit; that is, not receive or give credit to every Doctrine that was proposed unto them as of immediate Revelation and Inspiration of the Spirit. He intends the same with the Apostle *Paul*, *Ephes. 4. 14. who would not have us carried about with every wind of Doctrine, like Vessels at Sea without Anchor or Helms, by the sleight of Men, and cunning craftinesse whereby they lie in wait to deceive.* For the craft and sleights intended, are such as men use when they cast a mist as it were before the eyes of others whom they intend to cheat and defraud. So dealt false Teachers with their Disciples by their Pretences of immediate Revelations. His next Direction informs us how we may observe this Caution unto our Advantage, and this is by trying the Spirits themselves. This is the duty of all Believers on any such Pretences. They are to try these Spirits, and examine whether they are of God or no. For the observation of this Rule, and discharge of this Duty, the Church of *Ephesus* is commended by our Lord Jesus Christ; *Rev. 2. 2. Thou hast tryed them, which say they are Apostles and are not, and hast found them Lyers.* For those who said they were Apostles, pretended therewithal to Apostolical Authority and Infallibility, on the account of the immediate Inspirations which they received by the Holy Ghost. In trying them, they tryed the Spirits that came unto them. And by this Warrant may we try the Spirit of the Church of *Rome*, which in like manner pretends unto Apostolical Authority and Infallibility.

SECT. 21. Unto these two Directions, the Apostle subjoyns the Reason of the present watchfulness required unto the discharge of this Duty. For, saith he, many false Prophets are gone out into the World. It is false Teachers, as *Peter* calls them, bringing in damnable Heresies, concerning whom he speaks. And he calleth them false Prophets, partly in an Allusion unto the false Prophets under the Old Testament, with whom they are ranked and compared by *Peter*; and partly because as they fathered their Predictions on Divine Revelation, so these falsely ascribed their Doctrines unto immediate Divine Inspiration. And on this account also he calleth them Spirits; Try the Spirits. For as they pretended unto the Spirit of God, so indeed for the most part they were acted by a Spirit of Error, Lying, and Delusion, that is the Devil himself. And therefore I no way doubt but that mostly those who made use of this Plea, that they had their Doctrines which they taught by immediate Inspiration, did also effect other extraordinary Operations or undiscoverable Appearances of them, as lying Miracles, by the Power of that Spirit whereby they were acted, as *Matth. 24. 24.* Hence the Apostle doth not direct us to try their pretensions unto Inspiration, by putting them on

on other extraordinary Works for their confirmation ; for these also they made a shew and appearance of, and that in such a manner as that they were not to be detected by the generality of Christians, but he gives unto all a *blessed stable Rule* which will never fail them in this case who diligently attend unto it. And this is to try them by the *Doctrine* that they teach, *vers. 2, 3.* Let their Doctrine be examined by the Scriptures and if it be found consonant thereunto, it may be received without danger unto the Hearers, whatever corrupt Affections the Teachers may be influenced by. But if it be not consonant thereunto, if it keep not up an *harmony* in the Analogue of Faith, whatever Inspiration or Revelation be pleaded in its Justification it is to be rejected, as they also are by whom it is declared. This Rule the Apostle Paul confirms by the highest Instance imaginable ; Gal. 1. 8. *If we, or an Angel from Heaven preach any other Gospel unto you, then that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.* And the Apostle shews that for our advantage in this tryal we are to make of Spirits, it is good to have a clear conviction of, and a constant adherence unto some *fundamental Principles*, especially such as we have reason to think will be the most cunningly attacked by Seducers. Thus because in those dayes the principal design of Satan was to broach strange false Imaginations about the Person and Mediation of Christ, endeavouring thereby to overthrow both the one and the other ; the Apostle adviseth Believers to try the Spirits by this one Fundamental Principle of Truth, namely, that *Jesus Christ is come in the flesh* ; which contains a confession both of his Person and Mediation. This therefore Believers were to demand of all new Teachers and Pretenders unto *Spiritual Revelations* in the first place ; do you confess that *Jesus Christ is come in the flesh* ; and if they immediately made not this confession, they never stood to consider their other Pretences but turned from them not bidding them *God-speed*, 2 Joh. 7. 10, 11. And I could easily manifest how many pernicious Heresies were obviated in those days by this short *Confession of Faith*. For some of late (as Grotius following Socinus and Schickingius) interpreting this coming of Christ in the flesh, of his outward mean Estate and Condition, and not in the Pomp and Glory of an Earthly King, do openly corrupt the Text. His coming in the flesh, is the same with the *Words being made flesh*, John 1. 14. or, *God being manifest in the flesh*, 1 Tim. 3. 16. That is, the Son of God being made partaker of flesh and blood, Heb. 2. 14. or taking on him the Seed of Abraham, *vers. 14.* That is, his being made of a Woman, Gal. 4. 4. or his being made of the Seed of David according to the flesh, Rom. 1. 3. His being of the Fathers as to the flesh, Rom. 9. 5. And this was directly opposed unto those Heresies which were then risen, whose Broachers contended that Jesus Christ was but a Phantasm an Appearance, a manifestation of Divine Love and Power, denying that the Son of God was really incarnate, as the Antients generally testifie. And well had it been for many in our dayes had they attended unto such Rules as this. But through a neglect of it, accompanied with an ungrounded boldness and curiosity, they have hearkned in other things to *deceiving Spirits*, and have been engaged beyond a recovery, before they have considered that by their *cogging deceits* they have been cheated of all the principal Articles of their Faith ; by which, if at first they had steadily tryed and examined them, they might have been preserved from their Snarcs.

SECT. 22. The *Jews* say well, that there was a double *tryal* of *Prophets* under the Old Testament; the one by their *Doctrines*, the other by their *Predictions*. That by their *Doctrines*, namely, whether they seduced Men from the Worship of the true God unto Idolatry, belonged unto *all individual Persons* of the Church. Direction for this is given *Deut. 13. 2, 3.* *If the Prophet giveth a Sign or a Wonder, and it come to pass, (effect any thing by a seeming presence of an extraordinary Power) and say, Let us go serve other Gods, thou shalt not hearken unto him.* Let his Signs and Wonders be what they would the People were to *try them* by what they taught. The Judgment upon Predictions was left unto the *Sanhedrim*; for which Directions are given *Deut. 18. 20, 21, 22.* And by vertue hereof they falsely and cruelly endeavoured to take away the Life of *Jeremiah*, because he foretold the Ruine of them and their City, *Chap. 26. v. 11.* In the first place, though his Sign, Wonder, or Prediction came to pass, yet the Doctrine he sought to confirm by it being false, he was to be rejected. In the latter, the fulfilling of his Sign acquitted him, because he taught with it nothing in point of Doctrine that was false. The first kind of tryal of the Spirits of Prophets is the Duty of *all Believers* under the Gospel. And those who would deprive them of this Liberty would make Bruits of them instead of Christians; unless to believe a Man knows not *what*, and to obey he knows not *why*, be the Properties of Christians, see *Rom. 12. 2. Ephes. 5. 8, 9, 10, 11. Phil. 1. 10. 1 Thess. 5. 21.* The other, so far as was needful to preserve the Church in Truth and Peace, was provided for in those *Primitive Times*, whilst there was a real communication of extraordinary Gifts of the Spirit, (and so more occasion given to the false Pretence of them, and more danger in being deceived by them) by a peculiar Gift of *discerning them* bestowed on some amongst them, *1 Cor. 12. 10.* *Discerning of Spirits* is reckoned among the Gifts of the Spirit. So had the Lord graciously provided for his Churches, that some among them should be enabled in an extraordinary manner, to *discern* and *judg* of them who pretended unto extraordinary actings of the Spirit. And upon the ceasing of Extraordinary Gifts really given from God, the Gift also of *discerning Spirits* ceased, and we are left unto the *Word alone* for the tryal of any that shall pretend unto them. Now this kind of Pretence was so common in those dayes, that the Apostle Paul writing to the *Thessalonians*, to caution them that they suffered not themselves to be deceived in their Expectation and Computations about the Time of the coming of Christ, in the first place warns them not to be moved in it *by Spirit*, *2 Thess. 2. 2.* That is, Persons pretending unto Spiritual Revelations. Something also of this nature hath continued and broken out in succeeding Ages, and that in Instances abominable and dreadful. And the more eminent in any Season are the real *Effusions of the Holy Spirit* upon the Ministers of the Gospel, and Disciples of Christ, the more Diligence and Watchfulness against these *Delusions* are necessary. For on such opportunities it is, when the Use and Reputation of Spiritual Gifts is eminent, that *Satan* doth lay hold to intrude under the colour of them his own deceitful Suggestions. In the dark Times of the *Papacy* all Stories are full of *Satanical Delusions* in Phantastical Apparitions, Horrors, *Spectrums*, and the like Effects of Darknes. It was seldom or never that any falsely pretended

pretended to the Gifts and Graces of the Holy Spirit; For these things were then of little use or request in the World. But when God was pleased to renew really a fresh communication of *Spiritual Gifts and Graces* unto Men in and upon the Reformation, the old Dreads and Terrors, *nightly Appearances* tending unto Deeds of Darknes vanished, and every where by Satans Instigation arose *false Pretenders* to the Spirit of God; in which way of delusion he will still be more active and industrious, as God shall increase the Gifts and Graces of his Spirit in his Churches; though as yet in these latter Ages he hath not attained what he was arrived unto in the Primitive Times of the Gospel. A full and clear Declaration from the Scripture of the Nature of the *Holy Spirit* and his Operations, may through the blessing of God be of use to fortifie the Minds of *Professors* against *Satanical Delusions* counterfeiting his Actings and Inspirations. For Directions unto this purpose are given us by the *Holy Apostle*, who lived to see great havock made in the Churches by deluding Spirits. Knowledge of the Truth, trying of Spirits that go abroad by the Doctrines of the Scriptures, Dependence on the Holy Spirit for his Teachings according to the Word, are the Things which to this purpose he commends unto us.

Thirdly; There is in the Dayes wherein we live, an *Anti-Spirit* set up and advanced against the Spirit of God in his Being and all his Operations, in his whole Work and Use towards the Church of God. For this *new Spirit* takes upon him whatever is promised to be effected by the good Spirit of God. This is that which some Men call the *Light within them*, though indeed it be nothing but a dark Product of Satan upon their own Imaginations; or at best the Natural Light of Conscience, which some of the Heathens also called a Spirit. † But hereunto do they trust as that which doth all for them, leaving no room for the *Pro- Lucili: sacer*
mise of the Spirit of God, nor any thing for him to do. This teacheth inter nos spi-
them, instructs them, enlightens them; to this they attend as the Sama- ritans sedes,
ritans to Simon Magus, and as they say, yield Obedience unto it. And bonorum ma-
from hence with the Fruits of it do they expect Acceptation with God, lorumque no-
Justification and Blessedness hereafter. And one of these two things these strorum ob-
deluded Souls must fix upon; namely, that this *Light* whereof they servator &
speak, is either the *Holy Spirit of God* or it is not. If they say it is the custos; prout
Spirit, it will be easie to demonstrate how by their so saying they utter a nobis tra-
ly destroy the very *Nature and Being of the Holy Ghost*, as will evidently ctatus est, ita
appear in our Explication of them. And if they say that it is not the ipse nos tra-
Holy Spirit of God which they intend thereby, it will be no less mani- ctat. Senec.
fest that they utterly exclude him on the other side from his whole Work Epist. 41.
and substitute another, yea an *Enemy* in his room. For another God is a false God, another Christ is a false Christ, and another Spirit is a false Spirit, the Spirit of Antichrist. Now because this is a growing Evil amongst us many being led away and seduced, our Duty unto Jesus Christ, and Compassion for the Souls of Men, do require that our utmost endeavour in the wayes of Christ's Appointment, should be used to obviate this Evil which eateth as doth a *Canker*; which also is propagated by prophane and vain bablings encreasing still unto more ungodliness. Some I confesse do unduly rage against the Persons of those who have imbibed these *Imaginations*, falling upon them with violence and fury,

fury, as they do also on others; The Lord lay it not unto their charge. Yet this hinders not but that by those *Weapons of our Warfare which are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds, casting down such like Imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth it self against the Knowledge of God, and bringing into Captivity every thought unto the Obedience of Christ,* We ought to attempt the destruction of their Errors, and the breaking of the Snares of Satan by whom they are taken captive alive at his pleasure. The course indeed of opposing *Errors and false Spirits* by Praying, Preaching, Writing, is despised by them in whose furious and haughty minds, *Urc, Seca, Occide; Burn, Cut, and Kill,* are alone of any signification; that think, *Arise Peter kill and eat,* to be a Precept of more Use and Advantage unto them than all the Commands of Jesus Christ besides. But the way proposed unto us by the Lord Jesus Christ himself, walked in by his Holy Apostles and all the Ancient Holy Learned Writers of the Church, is that which in these Matters we must and shall attend unto. And that course which is particularly suited to obviate the Evil mentioned, is to give a full plain evident Declaration from the Scripture of the *Nature and Operations* of the Holy Spirit of God. Hence will it be undeniably manifest what a stranger this *pretended Light* is unto the true Spirit of Christ; how far it is from being of any real Use to the Souls of Men; yea how it is set up in opposition unto *Him* and his *Work*, by whom, and by which alone we become accepted with God, and are brought unto the enjoyment of him.

SECT. 24. Fourthly; There are moreover many hurtful and noxious *Opinions* concerning the Holy Ghost gone abroad in the World, and entertained by many to the Subversion of the Faith which they have professed. * Such are those whereby

* Quoniam quidam temeritate potius quam recta via etiam in superna eriguntur, & hæc de Spiritu Sancto faciunt, quæ neque in Scripturis lecta, nec a quocquam Ecclesiasticorum Veterum usurpata sunt, compulsi sumus celeberrime Exhortationi fratrum cedere, quæque sit nostra de eo opinio etiam Scripturarum Testimoniis comprobare; ut imperitia tanti dogmatis, hi qui contraria opponunt decipiant eos qui sine discussione solliciti in adversariorum sententiam statim petra-buntur. Didym. de Sp. S. Lib. 1.

his *Deity and Personality* are denied. About these there have been many contests in the World; some endeavouring with Diligence and subtilty to promote the perverse *Opinions* mentioned; others contending according to their Duty for the *Faith once delivered unto the Saints*. But these Disputations are for the most Part so managed, that although the Truth be in some of them *strenuously vindicated*, yet the minds of Believers generally are but little edified by them. For the most are unacquainted with the

ways and Terms of arguing, which are suited to convince or *stop the mouths of gain-sayers*, rather than to direct the Faith of others. Besides, our Knowledge of things is more by their operations and proper Effects, than from their own Nature and formal Reason. Especially is it so in Divine Things, and particularly with respect unto God himself. In his own Glorious *Being*, he dwelleth in Light whereunto no Creature can approach. In the Revelation that he hath made of himself by the *Effects of his Will* in his Word and Works are we to seek after him. By them are the otherwise *invisible things of God* made known, his Attributes declared; and we come to a better Acquaintance with him, than any we can attain by our most diligent speculations about his Nature it self immediately. So is it with the *Holy Ghost* and his *Personality*. He is in the

Script-

* Scripture proposed unto us to be known by his *Properties* and Works, Adjuncts and Operations; by our Duty towards him, and our Offences against him. The due consideration of these things, is that which will lead us into that assured knowledge of his *Being* and *Subsistence*, which is necessary for the guidance of our Faith and Obedience, which is the end of

all these Enquiries, Col. 2. 2. Wherefore although I shall by the way explain confirm and vindicate the *Testimonies* that are given in the Scripture, or some of them, unto his *Deity* and *Personality*; yet the principal means that I shall insist on for the establishing of our Faith in him, is the due and just Exposition and Declaration of the Administrations and Operations that are ascribed unto him in the Scriptures; which also will give great Light into the whole Mystery and *Oeconomy* of God in the work of our salvation by Jesus Christ.

* *Appellatio Spiritus Sancti, & ea quæ monstratur ex ipsa appellatione substantia, penitus ab his ignoratur, qui extra sacram Scripturam philosophantur; solummodo enim in nostratibus literis & notio ejus & Vocabulum referitur tam in Nobis quam in Veteribus, Didym. de Spiritu Sancto lib. 1.*

Fifthly; The Principal Cause and Occasion of our present Undertaking, is the open and horrible *opposition* that is made unto the Spirit of God and his Work in the World. There is no concernment of his that is not by many derided, exploded, and blasphemed. The very name of the *Spirit* is grown to be a reproach; nor do some think they can more despihtfully expose any to scorn, than by ascribing to them a *Concern in the Spirit of God*. This indeed is a thing which I have often wondred at, and do continue still so to doe. For whereas in the Gospel every thing that is *Good, Holy, Praise worthy* in any Man, is expressly assigned to the *Spirit* as the immediate Efficient Cause and Operator of it, and whereas the Condition of Men without him, not made Partakers of Him, is described to be *reprobate* or rejected of God, and forreign unto any Interest in Christ; yet many pretending unto the Belief and Profession of the Gospel, are so far from owning or desiring a Participation of this *Spirit* in their own Persons, as that they deride and contemn them who dare plead or avow any concern in him or his Works. Only I must grant that herein they have had some that have gone before them, namely the old scoffing Heathens. For so doth *Lucian* in his *Philopatriæ*, speak in imitation of a Christian by way of scorn, λέγε, πρεσβυτέρη πνεύματος δύναμιν τῷ λόγῳ λαβών *Speak out now, receiving Power or Ability of speaking from the Spirit, or by the Spirit*. Certainly an attendance to the old Caution, *Si non caste tamen Caste*, had been needful for some in this Matter. Could they not bring their own hearts unto a due Reverence of the *Spirit of God*, and an endeavour after a Participation of his Fruits and Effects, yet the things that are spoken concerning him and his Work in the whole *New Testament*, and also in Places almost innumerable in the *Old*, might have put a check to their publick Contemptuous Reproaches and scornful Mockings, whilst they own those writings to be of God. But such was his Entertainment in the World upon his first Effusion; *Acts 2. 13*. Many Pretences I know will be pleaded to give Countenance unto this Abomination. For First, They will say, it is not the *Spirit of God* himself and his works, but the *Pretence* of others unto him and them, which they so reproach and scorn. I fear this *Plea* or Excuse, will prove too short and narrow, to make a Covering unto their Profaneness. It is dangerous

gerous venturing with Rudeness and *Petulancy* upon holy things, and then framing of Excuses. But in Reproaches of the Lord Christ and his Spirit, Men will not want their Pretences, *Joh. 10. 32*. And the things of the *Spirit of God* which they thus Reproach & scorn in any, are either such as are *truly* and really ascribed unto him and wrought by him in the Disciples of *Jesus Christ*; or they are not: If they are such as indeed are *no Effects* of the Spirit of Grace, such as he is not promised for, nor attested to work in them that do believe, as *vain Enthusiasmes, extatical Raptures*, and Revelations, certainly it more became Christians, Men professing or at least pretending a Reverence unto God, his Spirit, and his Word, to manifest and convince those of whom they treat, that such things are not *Fruits of the Spirit*, but Imaginations of their own; then to deride them under the name of the *Spirit* or his *Gifts & Operations*. Do Men consider with whom and what they make bold in these things? But if they be things that are *real Effects* of the Spirit of Christ in them that believe, or such as are undeniably assigned unto him in the *Scripture*, which they despise; what remains to give countenance unto this daring Prophaneness? Yea, but they say, Secondly, It is not the real true *Operations* of the Spirit themselves, but the false *Pretensions* of others unto them which they traduce and expose. But will this warrant the Course which it is manifest they steer in Matter and Manner? The same Persons pretend to *believe in Christ and the Gospel*, and to be made Partakers of the Benefits of his Mediation. And yet if they have not the *Spirit of Christ*, they have no saving Interest in these things; for if *any Man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his*. If it be then onely their *false pretending* unto the *Spirit of God* and his Works which these Persons so revile and scorn, why do they not deal with them in like manner with respect unto *Christ* and the Profession of the Gospel? Why do they not say unto them, *you believe in Christ, you believe in the Gospel*; and thereon expose them to Derision? So plainly dealt the Jews with our Lord Jesus Christ. *Psal. 22. 7, 8. Math. 21. 39, 43*. It is therefore the things themselves, and not the *Pretences pretended*, that are the Objects of this contempt and Reproach. Besides; suppose those whom at present on other Occasions they hate or despise, are not Partakers of the *Spirit of God*, but are really strangers unto the things which *hypocritically* they profess? Will they grant and allow that any other *Christians* in the World do so really partake of him, as to be *led, guided, directed*, by him, to be *quickned, sanctified, purified* by him, to be *enabled* unto Communion with God, and all duties of Holy Obedience by him, with those other Effects and Operations for which he is promised by Jesus Christ unto his Disciples? If they will grant these things to be really effected and accomplished in *Any*, let them not be offended with them who desire that they should be so in themselves, and declare themselves to that purpose, and Men would have more Charity for them under their *petulant scoffing*, than otherwise they are able to exercise. It will Thirdly, Yet be pleaded, that they grant as fully as any the *Being* of the Holy Ghost, the *Promise* of him and his real Operations, only they differ from others as to the sense and Exposition of those *Phrases* and Expressions that are used concerning these things in the *Scripture* which those others *abuse* in an unintelligible manner, as making them *proper* which indeed are *Metaphorical*. But is this the way which they like and choose to express their

their Notions and Apprehensions? Namely openly to revile and scorne the very *Naming* and asserting the work of the Spirit of God, in the words which himself hath taught? A Boldness this is which as whereof the former Ages have not given us a President, so we hope the future will not afford an Instance of any to follow the Example. For their sense and Apprehension of these things they shall afterward be examined, so far as they have *dared* to discover them. In the mean time we know that the *Socinians* acknowledge a *Trinity*, the *Sacrifice* of Christ, the Expiation of sin made thereby; and yet we have some differences with them about these things. And so we have with these Men about the *Spirit of God* and his Dispensation under the Gospel; though like them, they would grant the things spoken of them to be true, as *Metaphorically* to be interpreted. But of these things we must treat more fully hereafter.

I say, it is so come to pass amongst many who profess they believe the *Gospel to be true*, that the *Name* or *Naming* of the *Spirit of God* is become a Reproach. So also is his whole work. And the *Promise* of him made by Jesus Christ unto his Church, is rendred useles and frustrated. It was the main, and upon the matter the only supportment which he left unto it in his *Bodily Absence*, the only means of rendring the work of his Mediation effectual in them and among them. For without him, all others, as the Word, Ministry, and Ordinances of Worship, are Lifeless and Useles. God is not Glorified by them, nor the Souls of Men advantaged. But it is now uncertain with some of *what Use* he is unto the Church, yea as far as I can discern whether he be of *any* or no. Some have not trembled to say and contend, that some things as plainly ascribed unto him in the Scripture, as words can make an assignation of any thing, are the *cause* of all the *Troubles and Confusions* in the World. Let them have the Word or Tradition outwardly revealing the Will of God, and what it is that he would have them do, (as the *Jews* have both to this day) these being made use of by their *own Reason*, and improved by their natural Abilites, they make up the whole of Man, all that is required to render the Persons or Duties of any accepted with God. Of *what use* then is the Spirit of God in these things? Of none at all it may be, nor the Doctrine concerning him, but only to fill the World with a *buzz* and *noise*, and to trouble the minds of Men with *unintelligible Notions*. Had not these things been spoken, they should not have been repeated, for Death lyeth at the Door in them. So then Men may pray without him, and *preach* without him, and *turn* to God without him, and *perform* all their Duties without him well enough. For if any one shall plead the necessity of his *Assistance* for the due performance of these things, and ascribe unto him all that is good and well done in them, he shall hardly escape from being notably derided. Yet all this while we would be esteemed *Christians*. * And what do such Persons think of the Prayers of the Antient Church and Christians unto him for the working

* *Adesto Sancte Spiritus, & paraclesin tuam expectantibus illabere Calicis, Sanctifica templum corporis nostri & consecra in habitaculum tuum; Desiderantes te*

animas tua presentia letifica, dignam te habitatore domum compone; adorna thalamum tuum, & quietis tue reclinatorium, circumda varietatibus Virtutum; sterne pavimenta pigmentis; niteat mansio tua carbunculis flammeis, & Gemmarum splendoribus; & omnium Chrismatum intrinsecus spirent Odoramenta; assatim balsami liquor fragrantia sua cubiculum suum imbuat; & abigens inde quicquid tabidum est, quicquid corruptele seminarium; stabile & perpetuum hoc facias gaudium nostrum, & creationis tue renovationem in decore immarcescibili solidet in eternum. Cyprian. de Sp. Sa.

of all Good in them, and their Ascriptions of every good thing unto him? And wherein have we any advantage of the *Jews*, or wherein consists the preeminence of the Gospel? They have the *Word of God*, that part of it which was committed unto their Church, and which in its kind is sufficient to direct their Faith and Obedience; For so is the *sure Word of Prophecie* if diligently attended unto, 2 *Pet.* 1. 19. And if Traditions be of any use, they can outvie all the World. Neither doth this sort of Men want their *Wits*, and the Exercise of them. Those who Converse with them in the things of this World, do not use to say they are all *Fools*. And for their Diligence in the Consideration of the letter of the Scripture, and inquiring into it according to the best of their Understanding, none will Question it, but those unto whom they and their Concernments are unknown. And yet after all this, they are *Jews* still. If we have the *New Testament*, no otherwise then they have the Old, have only the letter of it to *Philosophize upon* according to the best of our Reasons and Understandings without any Dispensation of the *Spirit of God* accompanying it to give us a *Saving Light* into the Mystery of it, and to make it effectual unto our Souls; I shall not fear to say, but that as they call *themselves Jews and are not*, but are the *Synagogue of Sathan*, *Revel.* 2. 9. So we who pretend our selves to be *Christians*, as to all the saving Ends of the Gospel, shall not be found in a better Condition.

And yet it were to be wished that even here bounds might be fixed unto the *fierceness of some Mens Spirits*. But they will not suffer themselves to be so confined. In many Places they are transported with *Rage*, and *Fury*, so as to stir up Persecution against such as are really anointed with the Spirit of Christ, and that for no other Reason but because they are so. *Gal.* 4. 29. Other things indeed are pretended by them, but but all the World may see that they are not of such importance as to give Countenance unto their wrath. This is the *Latent cause* which stirs it up, and is oftentimes openly expressed.

SECT. 17. These things at present are charged only as the Miscarriages of *Private Persons*. When they are received in Churches, they are the Cause of, and an Entrance into a *Fatal Defection* and Apostasy. From the Foundation of the World the Principal Revelation that God made of himself, was in the *Oneness* of his Nature, and his *Monarchy* over all. And herein the *Person of the Father* was immediately represented with his Power and Authority. For he is the Fountain and Original of the Deity, the other Persons as to their Subsistence being of him. Only he did withal give out Promises concerning the peculiar *Exhibition of the Son in the Flesh* in an appointed season, as also of the *Holy Spirit* to be given by him in an especial manner. Hereby were their *Persons* to be signally glorified in this World; it being the Will of God that all *Men should honour the Son, as they honoured the Father*; and the Holy Spirit in like manner. In this state of things, the only Apostacy of the Church could be *Polutheisme* and *Idolatry*. Accordingly so it came to pass. The *Church of Israel* was continually prone to these Abominations; so that scarcely a Generation passed, or very few, wherein the *Body of the People* did not more or less defile themselves with them. To wean and recover them from this Sin was the Principal End of the Preaching of those *Prophets* which God from time to time sent unto them, 2 *Kings* 17. 13. And this also was

was the Cause of all the *Calamities* which befel them, and of all the *Judgments* which God inflicted on them, as is testified in all the *Historical Books* of the Old Testament, and confirmed by Instances innumerable. To put an End hereunto God at length brought a *total Desolation* upon the whole Church, and caused the People to be carried into Captivity out of their own Land. And hereby it was so far effected that upon their *Return* what-ever other sins they fell into, yet they kept themselves from *Idols and Idolatry*, *Ezek. 16. 62, 63.* Chap. 23. *vers. 27, 48.* And the Reason hereof was, because the time was now drawing nigh wherein they were to be tryed with another *Dispensation* of God. The Son of God was to be sent unto them in the Flesh. To receive and obey him was now to be the principal *Instance* and Trial of their Faith and Obedience. They were no longer to be tried merely by their Faith whether they would own *only the God of Israel*, in opposition unto all false Gods and Idols; for that Ground God had now absolutely won upon them; But now all is to turn on this *Hinge*, whether they would receive *the Son of God* coming in the Flesh according to the Promise; Here the Generallity of that Church and People fell by their *Unbelief*, apostatized from God, and became thereby neither Church nor People *Joh. 8. 24.* They being rejected, the *Son of God* calls and gathers another Church, founding it on his own Person with Faith and the Profession of it therein. *Mat. 16. v. 18, 19.* In this new Church therefore this Foundation is fixed and this Ground made Good, That *Jesus Christ the Son of God* is to be owned and honoured as we honour the Father. *1 Cor. 3. 11.* And herein all that are duly called Christians do agree; as the Church of *Israel* did in one God after their return from the Captivity of *Babylon*; But now the Lord Jesus Christ being ascended unto his Father, hath committed his whole Affairs in the Church and in the World unto the *Holy Spirit*. *Joh. 16. 7, 8, 9, 10, 11.* And it is on this Design of God, that the *Person of the Spirit* may be singularly exalted in the Church, unto whom they were so in the dark before that some none of the worst of them professed they had not so much as heard whether there were *any Holy Ghost or no*, *Acts 19. 2.* that is, at least as unto the peculiar Dispensation of him then introduced in the Church. Wherefore the Duty of the Church now immediately respects the *Spirit of God*, who acts towards it in the *Name of the Father and of the Son*. And with respect unto him it is, that the Church in its present state is *capable of an Apostasy* from God; And whatever is found of this Nature amongst any here it hath its Beginning. For the sin of despising his Person and rejecting his work now, is of the same Nature with *Idolatry* of Old, and the *Jews* Rejection of the *Person of the Son*. And whereas there was a Relief provided against these Sins, because there was a new Dispensation of the Grace of God to ensue in the *Evangelical work* of the Holy Ghost; if Men sin against him and his operations containing the Perfection and Complement of God's Revelation of himself unto them, their Condition is deplorable.

It may be some will say and plead, that whatever is spoken of the *Holy Ghost*, his *Graces, Gifts, and Operations*, did entirely belong unto the first Times of the Gospel wherein they were manifested by *visible and wonderful Effects*. To those times they were confined, and consequently that we have no other Interest or concern in them but as in a *recorded Testimony* given of old unto the Truth of the Gospel. This is to indeed

SECT. 28.

as unto his Extraordinary and miraculous operations. But to confine his whole Work thereunto, is plainly to deny the Truth of the Promises of Christ, and to *overthrow his Church*. For we shall make it undeniably evident that none can *believe in Jesus Christ* or yield Obedience unto him, or Worship God in him, but *by the Holy Ghost*. And therefore if the whole Dispensation of him and his Communications unto the Souls of Men do cease, so doth *all Faith in Christ*, and Christianity also.

SECT. 29. On these and the like Considerations it is that I have thought it *necessary* for my self, and unto the Church of God, that the Scripture should be diligently searched in and concerning this great matter. For none can deny but that the Glory of God, the Honour of the Gospel, the Faith and Obedience of the Church, with the Everlasting Welfare of our own Souls, are deeply concerned herein.

SECT. 30. The Apostle *Peter* treating about the Great things of the Gospel taught by himself and the Rest of the Apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ, tells those to whom he wrote, that in what was so preached unto them, *they had not followed cunningly devised Fables*, 2 *Pet.* 1. 16. For so were the *Power and Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ* then reported to be in the World. What was preached concerning them, was looked on as *cunningly devised* and artificially framed fables to inveigle and allure the People. This the Apostle gives his Testimony against, and withal appeals unto the *Divine Assurance* which they had of the Holy Truths delivered unto them. *v.* 17, 18, 19, 20. In like manner our Lord Jesus Christ himself having preached the *Doctrine of Regeneration* unto *Nicodemus*, he calls it into Question as a thing *incredible*, or *unintelligible*, *Joh.* 3. 4. For whose Instruction and the Rebuke of his Ignorance he lets him know that he spake nothing but what he brought with him *from Heaven*, from the Eternal Fountain of Goodness and Truth, *v.* 11, 12, 13. It is fallen out not much otherwise in this Matter.

SECT. 31. The Doctrine concerning the *Spirit of God*, and his Work on the Souls of Men, hath been preached in the World. What he doth in *convincing* Men of Sin, what in Working *Godly Sorrow* and *Humiliation* in them, what is the exceeding Greatness of his Power which he puts forth in the *Regeneration* and *Sanctification* of the Souls of Men, What are the *supplies* of Grace which he bestowes on them that do believe, what *Assistance* he gives unto them as the *Spirit of Grace and Supplications*, hath been preached, taught, and pressed on the minds of them that attend unto the Dispensation of the Word of the Gospel. Answerable hereunto Men have been urged to *try*, search, examine them-selves, as to what of this Work of the Holy Ghost they have found, observed, or had *experience* to have been effectually accomplished in or upon their own Souls. And hereon they have been taught, that the Great Concernments of their *Peace*, *Comfort*, and *Assurance*, of their Communion among themselves as the Saints of God, with many other Ends of their Holy Conversation, do depend. Nay it is and hath been constantly taught them that if there be not an *effectual Work* of the Holy Ghost upon their hearts, that they *cannot enter into the Kingdom of God*. Now these things and whatever is spoken in the Explication of them, are by some called in Question if not utterly rejected. Yea some look on them as *cunningly devised Fables*; Things that some not *long since* invented, and others have propagated for their

their Advantage. Others say, that what is delivered concerning them is hardly if at all to be understood by Rational Men, being only empty Speculations about things wherein Christian Religion is little or not at all concerned. Whereas therefore many, very many, have received these things as *Sacred Truths*, and are perswaded that they have found them realized in their own Souls, so that into their Experience of the work of the Holy Spirit of God in them and upon them according as it is declared in the *Word*, all their *Consolation* and Peace with God is for the most part resolved, as that which gives them the best Evidence of their *Interest* in him who is their Peace; and whereas for the Present they do believe that unless these things are so in and with them, they have no Foundation to build an *Hope of Eternal Life* upon; it cannot but be of indispensable necessity unto them to examine and *Search the Scripture diligently* whether these things be so or no. For if there be no such *Work of the Spirit of God* upon the Hearts of Men and that indispensibly necessary to their Salvation; if there are no such Assistances and supplies of Grace *needful unto every Good Duty* as wherein they have been instructed; then in the whole course of their Profession they have only been seduced by *cunningly devised Fables*, their deceived hearts have fed upon ashes, and they are yet in their Sins. It is then of no less consideration and Importance than the *eternal welfare* of their Souls immediately concerned therein can render it, that they diligently trye, examine and search into these things, by the safe and infallible Touchstone and Rule of the *Word*, whereon they may, must, and ought to venture their Eternal Condition. I know indeed that most *Believers* are so far satisfied in the Truth of these things and their own Experience of them, that they will not be moved in the least by the Oppositions which are made unto them, and the scorn that is cast upon them. For he that believeth on the Son of God hath the witness in himself. 1 Joh. 5. 10. But yet as Luke wrote his Gospel to Theophilus that he might know the certainty of those things wherein he had been instructed, Luke 1. 4. that is, to confirm him in the Truth by an Addition of new *Degrees of Assurance* unto him; so it is our Duty to be so far excited by the *Glamorous Oppositions* that are made unto the Truths which we Profess, and in whose being such we are as much concerned as our Souls are worth, to compare them diligently with the Scripture that we may be the more fully confirmed and established in them. And upon the Examination of the whole matter, I shall leave them to their option as *Elijah* did of Old; if *Jehovah* be God, serve him, and if *Baal* be God let him be worshipped. If the things which the Generality of Professors do believe and acknowledg concerning the *Spirit of God* and his Work on their Hearts, his Gifts and Graces in the Church with the manner of their Communication, be for the substance of them wherein they all generally agree according to the Scripture, taught and revealed therein on the same terms as by them received; then may they abide in the *Holy Profession of them*, and rejoyce in the Consolations they have received by them. But if these things with those other which in the Application of them to the Souls of Men are directly and necessarily deduced, and to be deduced from them, are all but *vain and useles Imaginations*, it is high time the Minds of Men were disburthened of them.



The Name and Titles of the HOLY SPIRIT.

C H A P. I I.

- (1.) *Of the Name of the Holy Spirit.* (2.) *Various Uses of the words רוח and πνεῦμα. רוח for the Wind or any thing invisible with a sensible Agitation.* (3.) *Amos 4. 14. Mistakes of the Antients rectified by Hierom.* (5.) *רוח metaphorically for vanity.* (6.) *Metonymically for the part or quarter of any thing.* (7.) *For our Vital Breath. The Rational Soul. The Affections. Angels good and bad.* (8.) *Ambiguity from the Use of the Word how to be removed. Rules concerning the Holy Spirit. The Name Spirit how peculiar and appropriate unto him. Why he is called the Holy Spirit. Whence called the Good Spirit. The Spirit of God. The Spirit of the Son, Acts 2. 33. 1 Pet. 1. 10, 11. explained. 1 John 4. 3. vindicated.*

SECT. I.

BEfore we engage into the consideration of the *Things themselves* concerning which we are to treat, it will be necessary to speak something unto the *Name* whereby the Third Person in the Trinity is commonly known, and peculiarly called in the Scripture. This is the *Spirit*, or the *Holy Spirit*, or the *Holy Ghost* as we usually speak. And this I shall do that we be not deceived with the *Homonymy* of the Word, nor be at a loss in the intention of those places of Scripture where it is used unto other Purposes. For it is so that the Name of the *Second Person*, ὁ λόγος, the *Word*, and of the *Third*, τὸ πνεῦμα, the *Spirit*, are often applied to signify other things; I mean, those words are so. And some make their Advantages of the *ambiguous* use of them. But the Scripture is able of it self to manifest its own Intention and Meaning unto humble and diligent enquirers into it.

SECT. 2.

It is then acknowledged that the use of the words רוח and πνεῦμα in the Old Testament and New is very various; yet are they the words whereby alone the Holy Spirit of God is denoted. Their peculiar signification therefore in particular places is to be collected and determined from the Subject Matter treated of in them, and other especial Circumstances of them. This was first attempted by the most Learned *Didymus of Alexandria*, whose Words therefore I have set down at large, and shall cast his Observations into a more perspicuous Method, with such Additions

Additions as are needful for the further clearing of the whole Matter.

* In general, רוּחַ and πνεῦμα signifie a Wind or Spirit, that is, any thing which moves and is not seen. So the Air in a violent agitation, is called רוּחַ, Gen. 8. 1. וַיַּעַבְדוּ אֱלֹהִים רוּחַ עַל הָאָרֶץ. And God made a Wind or Spirit, that is, a strong and mighty Wind to pass over the Earth for the driving and removal of the Waters. So πνεῦμα is used John 3. 8. τὸ πνεῦμα ὅπου θέλει πνέει; The Wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, nor whether it goeth; which is a proper description of this first signification of the Word. It is an agitation of the Air which is unseen. So Psal. 1. 4. And in this sense sometimes it signifies a violent and strong Wind; that is, רוּחַ, 1 Kings 19. 11. And sometimes a cool and soft Wind, or a light easie agitation of the Air, such as often ariseth in the Evenings of the Spring or Summer; So Gen. 3. 8. God walked in the Garden, בְּרוּחַ הַיּוֹם, in the cool of the Day; that is, when the Evening-

* Quia vero Spiritus Vocatur multa significat, enumerandum est breviter quibus rebus nomen ejus apponitur: Vocatur Spiritus & Ventus, sicut in Ezechiele; Tertiam partem disperges in Spiritum;

hoc est in Ventum. Quod si voles secundum historiam scribere quod scriptum est: in spiritu violento ceteros naves Tharcis, non aliud ibi spiritus quam ventus accipitur: Nee non Solomon inter multa hoc quoque munus a Deo accepit ut sciret violentias spirituum; non aliud in hoc se accepisse demonstrans, quam scire rapidos ventorum flatus, & quibus causis earum natura subsistat. Vocatur & anima spiritus ut in Jacobi Epistola. Quomodo corpus tuum sine spiritu mortuum est; manifestissime enim spiritus hic nihil aliud nisi anima nuncupatur. Juxta quam intelligentiam Stephanus animam suam Spiritum vocans; Domine inquit Jesu suscipe Spiritum meum. Illud quoque quod in Ecclesiastice dicitur, quis scit an spiritus hominis ascendat sursum, & spiritus fumentis descendat deorsum. Considerandum ultimo num & pecudum animæ spiritus appellentur. Dicitur etiam excepta anima, & excepto spiritu sancto, spiritus alius quis esse in homine de quo Paulus scribit; Quis enim scit hominum ea que sunt hominis, nisi spiritus hominis qui in eo est? Sed & in alio loco idem Apostolus a nostro spiritu spiritum Dei secernens ait, ipse spiritus testimonium perhibet spiritui nostro; hoc significans, quod spiritus Dei, id est, spiritus sanctus testimonium spiritui nostro præbeat, quem nunc diximus esse spiritum hominis. Ad Thessalonicenses quoque, integer, inquit, spiritus vester & anima & corpus.

Appellatur quoque supernæ rationabilesque virtutes, quæ solet Scriptura Angelos & Fortitudines nominare, vocabulo spiritus; ut ibi, qui facis Angelos tuos Spiritus; & alibi, nomine omnes sunt administratores spiritus? Rationales quoque alia creatura & de bono in malum sponte profluentes, spiritus passim, & spiritus appellantur immundi; sicut ibi, cum autem spiritus immundus exierit ab homine, & in consequentibus; assumit septem alios spiritus nequiores se. Spiritus quoque Demones in Evangelio appellantur: sed hoc notandum, nunquam simpliciter spiritum sed cum aliquo additamento spiritum significari contrarium, ut spiritus immundus, & spiritus Demonis; hi vero qui sancti sunt spiritus absque ullo additamento spiritus simpliciter appellantur. Sciendum quoque quod nomen spiritus & voluntatem hominis & animi sententiam sonet. Volens quippe Apostolus non solum corpore sed & mente sanctum esse, id est, non tantum corpore, sed & motu cordis interno, ait, ut sitis sancti corpore & spiritu, voluntatem spiritu & corpore opera significans. Considera alium hoc ipsum in Esaia sonet quod scriptum est; & scient qui spiritu errant, intellectum. — Et super omnia vocabulum spiritus, altiore & mysticum in scripturis sanctis significat intellectum; ut ibi litera occidit, spiritus autem vivificat. — Hec juxta possibilitatem nostri ingenii, quot res spiritus significet, attingimus. — Nonnunquam autem spiritus & Dominus noster Iesus Christus, id est, Dei Filius appellatur. Dominus autem spiritus est ut ante diximus; ubi etiam illud adjunximus, spiritus Deus est, non juxta nominis communionem, sed juxta nature substantieque consortium. — Porro adhuc necessario devoluti sumus, ut quia frequenter Appellatio Spiritus, in scripturis est respersa Divinis, non labamur in nomine sed unumquodque secundum locorum varietates & intelligentias accipiamus. Omnia itaque studio ac diligentia vocabulum Spiritus, ubi & quomodo appellatum sit contemplantes, sophismata eorum & fraudulentæ Decipulas conteramus, qui spiritum sanctum asserunt creaturam. Legentes enim in Propheta ego confirmavi tonitruum, & creavi spiritum; ignorantia multiplicis in hac parte Sermonis putaverunt Spiritum Sanctum ex hoc vocabulo demonstrari; cum in presentiarum Spiritus nomen ventum sonet. Ergo ut prælocuti sumus, quomodo unumquodque dictum sit, consideremus ne forte per ignorantiam in barathrum decidamus erroris. Didym. de Sp. Sancti. lib. 3.

Air began to breath gently and moderate the heat of the Day. So in the Poet ;

Solis ad occasum cum frigidus aera Vesper temperat. Virgil. Georg. 3.

At the going down of the Sun when the cold Evening tempers the Heat of the Air. And some think this to be the sense of that place ; Psa. 104. v. 4. *Who maketh his Angels רוחות Spiritus ;* Swift, agile, powerful as mighty Winds. But the Reader may consult our Exposition on Heb. 1. 7.

SECT. 3.

This is one signification of the word רוח, or, this is *one thing* denoted by it in the Scripture. So among many other places expressly ; Amos 4. 13. for so, וברא הרים ורוח, *He that formeth the Mountains, and createth the Spirit*, that is, *the Wind*. The LXX render this place, *ὁ ἐκτίθει τὴν Θύνην καὶ τὸν Πνεῦμα*, *who establisbeth the Thunder, and createth the Spirit* ; though some Copies read *τὰ ὄρη*, *the Mountains*. And the next words in the Text, ומוניר לאדם מה שיחו, *and declareth unto Man what is his Thought* ; they render *ὁ ἀποκαλύπτει τοῖς ἀνθρώποις τὰ κρυφὰ αὐτοῦ*, *and declareth unto men his Christ*, or his Anointed, or his Messiah. For they took מה שיחו for משיחו, by inadvertency, and not for want of Points or Vowels as some imagine, seeing the Mistake consists in the casting out of a Letter it self. And thence the old Latin Translation renders the words, *Firmans Tonitruum, & creans Spiritum, & annuncians in homines Christum suum*. Which Hierom rectified into, *formans Montes, & creans Ventum, & annuntians Homini eloquium suum* ; discovering in his Comment the Mistake of the LXX. But it is certain that from the Ambiguity of the word רוח in this place, with the corrupt Translations making mention of Christ in the next words, some who of old denied the *Deity of the Holy Spirit*, mightily insisted on it to prove him a *Creature*, as may be seen in *Didymus, Ambrose, Hierom, Hilarius*, and the Ancients generally. But the Context determines the signification of the Word beyond all just Exceptions. It is the Power of God in making and disposing of things here below, whether dreadful for their *Greatness* and Height, as the *Mountains* ; or Mighty and *Effectual* in their operations, as the *Wind* ; or *Secret* in their Conceptions, as the *Thoughts of men* ; or stable in their Continuance, as the *Night and Day, the Evening and Morning*, without the least respect to Christ or the Spirit, that it treateth of.

SECT. 4.

And I cannot but observe from hence, the great necessity there is of searching the *Original Text* in the Interpretation of the Scriptures ; as it might be evidenced by a Thousand other Instances. But one we may take from two Great and Learned Men who were Contemporaries in the *Latin Church*, in their thoughts on this place ; The one is *Ambrose*, who interpreting these words in his second Book *de Spiritu Sancto, cap. 1.* being deceived by the corrupt Translation mentioned, *annuncians in homines Christum suum*, is forced to give a very strained Exposition of that which in Truth is not in the Text, and to relieve himself also with another Corruption in the same place, where *forming the Mountains*, is rendered by *establisbing the Thunder* ; and yet when he hath done all, can scarce free himself of the Objection about the *creation of the Spirit*, which he

he designs to answer. His words are, *Siquis propheticum dictum, ideo derivandum putet ad interpretationem Spiritus sancti; quia habet, annuncians in homines Christum suum is ad Incarnationis Dominica Myſteria dictum facilius derivabit. Nam si te movet quia Spiritum dixit, & hoc non putas derivandum ad Myſteria assumptionis humana; persequere scripturas & invenies optime congruere de Christo, de quo bene convenit estimari, quia firmavit tonitrua adventu suo; vim videlicet & sonum celestium scripturarum; quarum velut quodam tonitru mentes nostræ redduntur attonite; & timere discimus, & reverentiam celestibus deferamus oraculis. Denique, in Evangelio fratres Domini Filii tonitru dicebantur. Et cum vox Patris facta esset dicentis ad Filium, & honorificavi te, & iterum honorificabo, Judæi dicebant tonitruum factum esse illi. And hereon, with some Observations to the same purpose, he adds; Ergo tonitrua ad sermones Domini retulit quorum in omnem terram exivit sonus; Spiritum autem hoc loco, animam quam suscepit rationabilem & perfectam intelligimus.*

The substance of his Discourse is, that treating of Christ (who indeed is neither mentioned nor intended in the Text) he speaks of confirming the Thunder, (which no where here appears) by which the sound of the Scriptures and preaching of the Word is intended; the Spirit that was created being the humane Soul of Jesus Christ. Nor was he alone in this Interpretation. Didym. Lib. 2. de Spiritu sancto; Athanas. ad Serapion. Basil. Lib. 4. contra Eunom. amongst the Grecians, are in like manner intangled with this Corruption of the Text; as was also Concil. Sardicen. in Socrat. lib. 2. cap. 20. The other Person intended is Hieron, who consulting the Original, as he was well able to do, first translated the words, *Quia ecce formans Montes & creans Ventum, & annuncians Homini eloquium suum,* declares the Mistake of the LXX, and the occasion of it: *Pro Montibus qui Hebraice dicuntur הרים, solis LXX ὄρη, id est, tonitruum verterunt. Cur autem illi Spiritum & nos dixerimus Ventum, qui Hebraice רוח vocatur, causa manifesta est. Quodque sequitur annuncians homini eloquium suum, LXX transtulerent ἀπαγγέλλων ἐς ἀνθρώπους ἡ ψὴς αὐτοῦ, Verbi similitudine, & ambiguitate decepti.* So he shews that it is not משיח in the Text, but מהשיח; that is, saith he, juxta Aquilam ὁμιλῶν αὐτοῦ; Symmachum τὸ φάνημα αὐτοῦ, juxta Theodoionem ἡ λόγος αὐτοῦ; juxta quintam Editionem τὴν ἀδδλεσχαὶν αὐτοῦ.

And as שוח, whence the word is, signifying both to meditate and to speak, so the word it self intends a conceived thought to be spoken afterwards. And that ἡ here is reciprocal not relative. And to this purpose is his ensuing Exposition; *Qui confirmat Montes, ad cujus vocem celorum cardines et terra fundamenta quatuntur. Ipse qui creat Spiritum, quem in hoc loco non Spiritum sanctum, ut Hæretici suspicantur, sed Ventum intelligimus, sive Spiritum hominis, annuncians homini eloquium ejus; qui cogitationum secreta cognoscit.* Hieron. in loc.

Secondly; Because the Wind on the account of its unaccountable variation, inconstancy and changes, is esteemed vain, not to be observed or trusted unto; whence the Wise-man tells us, that he which observeth the Wind shall not sow, Ecclef. 11. 4. the word is used metaphorically to signify vanity, Ecclef. 5. 16. What profit hath a man that he hath laboured לרוח for the Wind. So Mic. 2. 11. If a Man walk רוח ושקר with the Wind and falsehood; that is, in vanity; pretending to a Spirit of Prophe-

SECT. 5.

cy, and *fallhood*, vainly, foolishly, falsely boasting. So *Job* 15. 2. Should a Wise-man utter רעה רעה *knowledge of Wind*? vain words with a pretence of knowledge of Wisdom. As he calls them רברי רוח *words of Wind*, Chap. 16. 3. So also *Jer.* 5. 13. And the Prophets shall become לרוח *Wind*; or, be vain, foolish, uncertain, and false in their Predictions. But πνεύμα is not used thus *metaphorically* in the New-Testament.

SECT. 6.

Thirdly; By a *Metonymy* also it signifies any *Part* or *Quarter*, as we say, of the World from whence the *Wind* blowes; as also a part of any thing divided into *four sides* or *quarters*. So *Jer.* 52. 23. There were *ninety and six Pomegranats* רוחה towards a *Wind*, that is, on the *one side* of the *Chapiter* that was above the Pillars in the Temple. *Ezek.* 5. 12. I will scatter a third part רוח לכל to all the *Winds*, or all *Parts* of the *Earth*. Hence the *four Quarters* of a thing lying to the *four Parts* of the World, are called its *four Winds*, ארבע רוחות. *Chro.* 9. 24. whence are the τέσσαρες ἀνεμοί, the *four Winds* in the New-Testament, *Matth.* 24. 31. This is the use of the word in general with respect unto things *natural* and *inanimate*; and every place where it is so used gives it determinate sense.

SECT. 7.

Again; These words are used for any thing that cannot be seen or touched, be it in it self *Material* and *Corporeal*, or absolutely *Spiritual* and *Immaterial*; So the *Vital Breath* which we and other Living Creatures *Breath* is called. Every thing wherein was נשמה רוח חיים the *Breath of the Spirit of Life*, *Gen.* 1. 22. that *Vital Breath* which our Lives are maintained by in *Respiration*. So *Psal.* 135. 17. *Job* 19. 17. which is a thing *Material* or *Corporeal*. But most frequently it denotes things purely *Spiritual* and *Immaterial*. As in *finite Substances* it signifies the *Rational Soul* of Man, *Psal.* 31. 5. Into thy hands I commend, רוחי, that is my *Soul*; they are the words whereby our Saviour committed his departing Soul into the hands of his Father; *Luk.* 23. 46. רוחי. So *Psal.* 146. 4. רוחו, his *Breath*, say we, goeth forth; he returneth to his *Earth*. It is his *Soul* and its departure from the Body that is intended. This is רוח בני אדם that *Spirit of the Sons of Men* that goeth upwards, when the Spirit of a Beast goeth downwards to the *Earth*, or turneth to *Corruption*, *Eccles.* 3. 21. see *Chap.* 8. 8. and *Chap.* 12. 7. Hence, fourthly, by a *Metonymy* also, it is taken for the *Affections* of the Mind or Soul of Man; and that whether they be Good or Evil, *Gen.* 45. 27. The *Spirit of Jacob* revived. He began to take heart, and be of good Courage, *Ezek.* 13. 3. The Prophets that walk אחר רוחם, after their *Spirit*; that is their own Desires and Inclinations, when indeed they had no Vision but spake what they had a mind unto. *Numb.* 14. 24. *Caleb* is said to have another *Spirit* than the murmuring People; another Mind, Will, Purpose, or Resolution. It is taken for *Prudence*, *Josh.* 5. 1. *Anger*, or the *Irrascible Faculty*, *Eccles.* 7. 10. *Fury*, *Zech.* 6. 8. He will cut off the *Spirit of Princes*; that is, their *Pride*, *Insolency*, and *Contempt* of others. πνεύμα in the New Testament frequently intends the *Intellectual Part* of the Mind or Soul, and that as it is *Active*, or in *Action*, *Luke* 11. 47. *Rom.* 1. 9. *1 Thess.* 5. 23. And oft-times it is taken for the *Mind* in all its Inclinations, in its whole habitual Bent and Design. Angels also are called *Spirits*. Good Angels,

gels, *Psal.* 104. 4. And it may be an Angel is intended, *1 Kings* 18. 12. And evil *Angels, or Devils*, *1 Kings* 22. 21, 22. For that *Spirit* who appeared before the Lord and offered himself to be a *lying Spirit* in the Mouths of *Ahab's* Prophets, was no other but he who appeared before God, *Job* 1. who is called *Satan*. These in the New Testament are called unclean Spirits, *Matth.* 10. 1. And the Observation of the Ancients, that *Satan* is not called a Spirit absolutely, but with an Addition or Mark of Distinction holds only in the New Testament. * And because *Evil Spirits* are wont to torment the Minds and Bodies of Men, therefore *evil Thoughts*, disorders of Mind, wicked Purposes disquieting and vexing the Soul, arising from or much furthered by *Melancholy* Distempers, are called, *it may be*, sometimes an Evil Spirit. The Case of *Saul* shall be afterwards considered.

* *Discant (homines) Scripturæ Sanctæ consuetudinem; nunquam Spiritum per- versum absolute, sed cum additamento aliquo Spiritum nuncupari; sicut ibi, Spiritum fornicationis seducti sunt. Et in Evangelio, cum autem Spiritus immundus exierit de homine, & cetera his similia. Hieronym. Comment. in Habak. Cap. 2.*

In such variety are these words used and applyed in the Scripture, be-
cause of some very *general Notions* wherein the things intended do agree. For the most part there is no great difficulty in discovering the especial meaning of them, or what it is they signifie in the several places where they occur. Their Design and Circumstances as to the Subject Matter treated of, determine the signification. And notwithstanding the *ambiguous Use* of these words in the Old and New Testament, there are two things clear and evident unto our purpose. First, That there is in the Holy Scriptures a full distinct Revelation or Declaration of *the Spirit*, or the *Spirit of God* † as one *singular*, and every way distinct from every thing else that is occasionally or constantly signified or denoted by that Word *Spirit*. And this not only a multitude of particular places gives testimony unto, but also the whole *course of the Scripture* supposeth, as that without an acknowledgment whereof, nothing else contained in it can be understood or is of any *use* at all. For we shall find this Doctrine to be the very Life and Soul which quickens the whole from first to last. Take away the Work and powerful Efficacy of the Holy Spirit from the *administration* of it, and it will prove but a *dead Letter*, of no saving advantage to the Souls of Men; and take away the *Doctrine* concerning him from the *writing* of it, and the whole will be unintelligible and useles. Secondly, That what-ever is affirmed of this *Holy Spirit*, the Spirit of God, it all relates either to his *Person* or his *Operations*. And these Operations of his being various, are sometimes by a *Metonymy* called *Spirit*, whereof afterwards. I shall not therefore need to prove that there is an *Holy Spirit* distinct from all other *Spirits* whatever, and from every thing else that on several Occasions is signified by that Name. For this is acknowledged by all that acknowledg the Scriptures; yea, it is so by *Jews* and *Mahometans*, as well as all sorts of *Christians*. And indeed all those false apprehensions concerning him which have at this day any countenance given unto them, may be referred unto two Heads. (1.) That of the *Modern Jews*, who affirm the Holy Ghost to be the in-

SECT. 8.

† *Qui Spiritum negant, & Deum Patrem negant & Filium; quoniam idem est Spiritus Dei, qui Spiritus Christi est. Unum autem esse Spiritum nemo dubitaverit; nisi de uno Deo plerique dubitaverunt. Ambros. de Sp. Sancti. lib. 1. cap. 3.*

fluent Power of God; which conceit is entertained and diligently promoted by the Socinians. (2.) That of the *Mahumetans*, who make him an *eminent Angel*, and sometimes say it is *Gabriel*, which being translated from the *Macedonians* of old, hath found some Defenders and Promoters in our dayes.

SECT. 9. This then being the *Name* of him concerning whom we treat, some things concerning it and the use of it, as peculiarly applyed unto him are to be premised. * For sometimes he is called the *Spirit* absolutely, sometimes the *Holy Spirit*, or as we speak, the *Holy Ghost*; sometimes the *Spirit of God*, the *Good Spirit* of God, the *Spirit of Truth* and *Holiness*; sometimes the *Spirit of Christ*, or of the Son. The first absolutely used, denotes his *Person*; the Additions, express his *Properties* and *Relation* unto the other Persons.

* Ονομα αὐτοῦ πνεῦμα ἁγίου, πνεῦμα ἀληθείας, πνεῦμα τῷ Θεῷ, πνεῦμα κυρίου, πνεῦμα τῷ Πατρὶ, πνεῦμα χειρὸς; καὶ ἔτι καλεῖται αὐτοῦ ἡ γογγύς. Μαλλον ἢ αὐτοῦ αὐτοῦ πνεῦμα Θεοῦ, καὶ πνεῦμα τὸ ἐκ τῷ Θεῷ. Chrysost. de Adorand. Sp.

Grell. Prolegom.

† Sanctificationis bonitatisque vocabulum. & ad Patrem & ad Filium, & ad Spiritum Sanctum aequè refertur; sicut ipsa quoque appellatio Spiritus. Nam & Pater Spiritus dicitur ut ibi, Spiritus est Deus; Spiritus est Deus & Filius Spiritus, Dominus inquit Spiritus ejus: Spiritus autem Sanctus semper Spiritus Sancti appellatione censetur; non quod ex consortio tantum. Nominis cum Patre ponatur & Filio; sed quod una Natura unum possideat & nomen. Didym. de Sp. Sancti. lib. 3.

* Multa sunt Testimonia, quibus hoc evidenter ostenditur, & Patris & Filii ipsum esse Spiritum, quia in Trinitate dicitur Spiritus Sanctus. Nec ob aliud ex istimo ipsum proprie vocari Spiritum, cum etiam si de singulis interrogemur, non possumus non Patrem & Filium Spiritum dicere; quoniam Spiritus est Deus, id est non Corpus est Deus sed Spiritus; hoc proprie vocari oportuit eum, qui non est unus eorum, sed, in quo communitas apparet amborum. August. Tractat. 99. in Johan.

Agility and Invisibilty

he is compared in his *Operations*, but unto the *Breath*

Chap. i. *the Holy Spirit and his Work.*

35

Breath of man. For as the *vital breath* of a man hath a continual *Emanation* from him, and yet is never *separated* utterly from his Person or forsaketh him; so doth the *Spirit of the Father* and the Son proceed from them by a *continual Divine Emanation*, still abiding one with them. For all these *Allusions* are weak and imperfect wherein *substantial* things are compared with *Accidental*, *Infinite* things with *Finite*, and those that are *Eternal* with those that are *Temporary*. Hence their disagreement is infinitely more than their Agreement; yet such Allusions doth our weakness need instruction from and by. Thus he is called רוח פי, Psal. 33. 6. *The Spirit or Breath of the Mouth of the Lord*; or of his *Nostrils*; as Psal. 18. 15. wherein there is an eminent Allusion unto the *Breath of a Man*. Of the manner of this proceeding and emanation of the Spirit from the Father and the Son so far as it is revealed, and as we are capable of an useful Apprehension of it, I have treated elsewhere. And from hence, or the Subsistence of the *Holy Spirit* in an eternal Emanation from the Father and Son as the *Breath of God*, did our Saviour signify his Communication of his Gifts unto his Disciples by *breathing* on them, John 20. 22. *ἐμφύσησεν*. And because in our first Creation it is said of *Adam*, that God יסח באפי נטמרו רייתו, *breathed into his Nostrils the Breath of Life*, Gen. 2. 7. He hath the same Appellation with respect unto God, Psal. 18. 15. Thus is he called the Spirit. And because as we observed before the Word πνεῦμα is variously used, *Didymus de Spiritu Sancto*, lib. 3. supposeth that the prefixing of the Article το doth distinguish the signification, and confine it to the *Holy Ghost* in the New Testament. Oft-times no doubt it doth so, but not alwayes as is manifest from Job. 8. 3. where τὸ is joyned with πνεῦμα, and yet only signifies the *Wind*. But the Subject treated of and what is affirmed of him, will sufficiently determine the signification of the Word, where he is called absolutely THE SPIRIT.

Again; He is called by way of Eminency the *Holy Spirit*, or the SECT. 9. *Holy Ghost*. * This is the most usual Appellation of him in the New * Ἁγίου Testamēt. And it is derived from the Old, Psal. 51. 11. רוח קדש, παρὰ θεοῦ The Spirit of thy Holiness, or thy Holy Spirit. Isa. 63. 10, 11. רוח קדש, κατὰ θεοῦ The Spirit of his Holiness, or his Holy Spirit. Hence are רוח הקדש, πλὴν τῶν ἁγίων and רוח הקדש, The Holy Spirit, and the Spirit of Holiness in common use among the Jews. In the New Testament He is τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον, πνεῦμα ἁγίου, ἡν δὲ λέγει, ὅτι ἐν ἡμῖν, That Holy Spirit. And we must enquire the special Reasons of this Adjunct. Some suppose it is only from his peculiar Work of sanctifying us, ἵνα ὁ ἅγιος ἡμεῖς γένηται, or making us Holy. For this Effect of Sanctification is his peculiar πνεῦμα ἅγιον. Work and that of what sort soever it be; whether it consist in a separation from things Profane and Common unto Holy Uses and Services; or whether it be the real Infusion and Operation of Holiness in Men, it is from him in an especial manner. And this also manifesteth him to be God, for it is God alone who sanctifieth his People. Levit. 20. 8. I am Jehovah who sanctifieth you. And God in that Work ascribes unto himself the Title of Holy in an especial manner, and as such would have us to consider him. Levit. 21. 8. I the Lord which sanctifieth you am Holy. And this may be one Reason of the frequent use of this Property with reference unto the Spirit.

SECT. 10.

* λέγεται
τοῖνυν πνεύ-
μα ἁγίον.
αὐτὰ γὰρ ἐ-
στὶν ἡ κωδὶ-
κὴ πρῶτη
περὶ τῆς
ἡ ἐμφαντι-
κατέργει
χρῶσα τῷ
διανοοῦν, ἡ
περὶ τῆς
τῷ ἁγίῳ
πνεύματι
τῷ φῶσιν.
Chrysost. ub.
Sup.

But this is not the *whole Reason* of this Name and Appellation. For where he is first so mentioned he is called the *Spirit of Gods Holiness*, *Psal. 51. 11. Isa. 63. 10, 11.* And in the New Testament absolutely the *Spirit of Holiness*, *Rom. 1. 4.* And this respects his *Nature* in the first Place, and not merely his Operations. * As God then absolutely is called *Holy*, the *Holy One*, and the *Holy One of Israel*, being therein described by that Glorious Property of his Nature whereby he is *Glorious in Holiness*; *Exod. 15. 11.* And whereby he is distinguished from all false Gods; *who is like unto thee O Jehovah, among the Gods, who is like unto thee; Glorious in Holiness*; So is the Spirit called *Holy* to denote the *Holiness* of his Nature. And on this Account is the Opposition made between him and the *Unholy*, or *unclean Spirit*. *Mark. 3. 29, 30.* He that shall blaspheme against the Holy Spirit, hath never forgiveness. Because they said he hath an *unclean Spirit*. And herein first his *Personality* is asserted; for the *Unclean Spirit* is a Person. And if the Spirit of God were only a *Quality* or *Accident* as some fancy and dream, there could no comparative opposition be made between him and this *unclean Spirit*, that is the Devil. So also are they opposed with respect unto their *Natures*. His Nature is *Holy*, whereas that of the *unclean Spirit* is *Evil* and perverse. This is the Foundation of his being called *Holy*; even the eternal *Glorious Holiness* of his Nature. And on this account he is so stiled also with respect unto all his Operations. For it is not only with regard unto the particular Work of *Regeneration* and *Sanctification*, or making of us *Holy*, but unto all his Works and Operations that he is so termed. For he being the immediate Operator of all Divine Works that outwardly are of God, and they being in themselves all *Holy* be they of what kind soever, He is called the *Holy Spirit*. Yea he is so called to attest and witness that all his Works, all the Works of God, are *Holy*, although they may be great and terrible, and such as to Corrupt Reason may have an other Appearance; in all which we are to acquiesce in this, that the *Holy One in the midst of us will do no iniquity*, *Zeph. 3. 5.* The Spirit of God then is thus frequently and almost constantly called *Holy*; to attest that all the Works of God whereof he is the immediate Operator are *Holy*. For it is the Work of the Spirit to *harden* and blind obstinate sinners, as well as to *Sanctify* the Elect. And his acting in the One is no less *Holy* than in the other, although *Holiness* be not the Effect of it in the Objects. So when he came to declare his dreadful Work of the final hardning and Rejection of the *Jews*, one of the most tremendous Effects of Divine Providence, a Work which for the strangeness of it Men would in no wise believe, though it were declared unto them, *Acts 13. 41.* he was signally proclaimed *Holy* by the *Seraphims* that attended his Throne, *Isa. 6. 3, 10, 11, 12. Joh. 12. 40. Acts 28. 26.*

SECT. 11.

There are indeed some Actions on Men and in the World, that are wrought by God's permission and in his righteous Judgment, by *Evil Spirits*; whose Persons and actions are placed in Opposition to the Spirit of God. So *Sam. 16. 14, 15.* The Spirit of the Lord departed from Saul, and an Evil Spirit from the Lord troubled him. And Saul's servants said unto him, behold now an Evil Spirit from God troubleth thee. So also *v. 23.* The Evil Spirit from God was upon Saul. So *chap. 18. 10. Chap. 19. 9.*

This

Chap.2. the Holy Spirit and his Work.

37

This Spirit is called, רוח אלהים רעה, *an evil Spirit of God*, Chap. 16. 15. and absolutely רוח אלהים, a *Spirit of God*, v. 33. where we have supplied *Evil* in the Translation. But these Expressions are to be regulated and explained by v. 24. where he is called רוח רעה מן יהוה, *an Evil Spirit from the Lord*, that is appointed and commissioned by him, for the punishing and terrifying of *Saul*. For as the Spirit of the Lord departed from him by with-drawing his Assistance and Influential operations, whereby he had wrought in him those Gifts and Abilities of mind which fitted him unto the discharge of his *Kingly Office*, upon the first impressions whereof he was turned into *another man* from what he was in his Private Condition, 1 Sam. 10.6,9. So the Evil Spirit came upon him to excite out of his own adust *Melancholy*, discontents, fears, a sense of Guilt, as also to impress *terrifying thoughts* and Apprehensions on his Imagination. For so it is said an Evil Spirit from the Lord בעתה, 1 Sam. 16. 14. *terrified him*, frightened him with dreadful Agitations of Mind. And that we may touch a little on this by the way; The Foundation of this Trouble and distress of *Saul* lay in himself. For as I do grant that he was sometimes under an immediate Agitation of Body and Mind from the powerful Impressions of the Devil upon him, for under suit; neque loco neque mortali cuiquam aut tempore satis credere; civis hostisque iuxta Plato; *Annal. lib. 6. Neque frustra praeantissimus humanae sapientiae firmare solitus est, si recludantur Tyrannorum mentes posse aspicere laniatus & circumspicere omnia & omni strepitu pavescere, atque alio loco saepe contra decus regium requiescere, interdum somno excitus amplis animis tumultum facere; ita formidine quasi vecordia agitari.* Bell. Jugur.

And yet this Work in it self is of the same kind with what God sometimes employs *holy Angels* about, because it is the Execution of his Righteous Judgments. So it was a *watcher* and an *Holy One* that in such a Case smote *Nebuchadnezzar* with a sudden madness and frenzy, Dan. 4. 13, 14.

To return, as he is called the Holy, so he is the *Good Spirit of God*. SECT. 12. Psal. 143. v. 10. רוחך טבה תנחני. *Thy Spirit is Good, lead me into the Land of Uprightness.* So Ours. Rather, *Thy Good Spirit shall lead Me.* Or as *Junius*; *Spiritu tuo bono deduc me; lead me by thy Good Spirit.* The Chaldee here adds קורשך; The Good Spirit of thy Holiness; or thy Holy Good Spirit. *Didymus Lib. 2. de Spirit. Sanc.* says that some Copies here read רוח טוב, a Remembrance whereof is in the M.S. of Tecla and not elsewhere. So *Nehem. 9. 10.* Thou gavest them רוח הטובה, that *Good Spirit* of thine to instruct them. And he is called so principally from his Nature which is essentially Good; as there is *none* Good but

but One that is God, *Matth. 19. 17.* as also from his Operations which are all Good as they are Holy; and unto them that believe are full of goodness in their Effects. *Crel. Prolegom. p. 7.* distinguisheth between this Good Spirit and the Holy Spirit, or the Holy Ghost. For this Good Spirit he would confine unto the Old Testament, making it the Author or Cause of those Gifts of Wisdom, Courage, Prudence, and Government that were granted unto many of the People of old. So it is said of Bezaiel, That he was filled with the Spirit of God, in Wisdom and Understanding, and in Knowledge, *Exod. 31. 3.* So *Chap. 35. 31.* That is, saith he, with this Good Spirit of God. So also it is pretended in all those Places where the Spirit of God is said to come on Men to enable them unto some great and extraordinary Work; as *Judg. 3. 10.* But this is plainly to contradict the Apostle, who tells us, that there are indeed various Operations, but one Spirit; and that the one and self same Spirit worketh all these things as he pleaseth.

* *Nemo suspicetur alium Spiritum Sanctum fuisse in Sanctis, nimirum ante adventum Domini, & alium in Apostolis caterisque Discipulis, & quasi nomina in differentibus esse substantiis; possumus quidem testimonia de Divinis Literis exhibere, quia idem Spiritus & in Apostolis & in Prophetis fuerit. Paulus in Epistola quam ad Hebræos scribit, de Psalmorum Volumine Testimonium proferens, a Spiritu Sancto id dictum esse commemorat. Dider. de Spirit. Sanct. lib. 1.*

* And if from every different or distinct Effect of the Spirit of God, we must multiply Spirits, and assign every one of them to a distinct Spirit, no Man will know what to make of the Spirit of God at last. Probably we shall have so many feigned Spirits, as to lose the only true One. As to this particular Instance, David prays that God would lead him by his Good Spirit, *Psal. 143. 10.* Now certainly this was no other but that Holy Spirit which he prays in another place that the Lord would not take from him, *Psal. 51. 11.* Take not thy Holy Spirit from me,

which is confessed to be the Holy Ghost. This he also mentions *2 Sam. 23. 2.* The Spirit of the Lord spake by me, and his Word was in my Tongue. And what Spirit this was Peter declares, *1 Epist. Chap. 1. v. 21.* The Holy Men of God spake in old time as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. So vain is this pretence.

SECT. 13. Again; He is commonly called the Spirit of God, and the Spirit of the Lord; So in the first mention of Him, *Gen. 1. 2.* רוח אלהים, The Spirit of God, moved on the Face of the Waters. And I doubt not but that the Name אלהים Elohim, which includes a plurality in the same Nature is used in the Creation and the whole Description of it, to intimate the Distinction of the Divine Persons; For presently upon it the Name Jehovah is mentioned also, *Chap. 2. 4.* but so as Elohim is joyned with it. But that Name is not used in the account given us of the Work of Creation, because it hath respect onely unto the Unity of the Essence of God. Now the Spirit is called the Spirit of God, originally and principally as the Son is called the Son of God. For the Name of God in those Enunciations is taken personally for the Father; that is God the Father, the Father of Christ and our Father, *John 20. 17.* And he is thus termed ὑποστατικός, upon the account of the Order and Nature of Personal Subsistence and Distinction in the Holy Trinity. The Person of the Father being Fons & Origo Trinitatis, the Son is from him by eternal Generation, and is therefore his Son, the Son of God, whose denomination as the Father is originally from hence, even the Eternal Generation

Generation of the Son. So is the *Person* of the Holy Spirit from him by eternal Procession or Emanation. Hence is that Relation of his to God even the Father, whence he is called the *Spirit of God*. And he is not only called πνεῦμα τοῦ Θεοῦ, the Spirit of God, but πνεῦμα τοῦ Πατρὸς τοῦ Θεοῦ, the Spirit that is of God, which proceedeth from him as a Distinct Person. This therefore arising from and consisting in his proceeding from him, he is called *Metaphorically* the *Breath of his Mouth*, as proceeding from him by an eternal Spiration. On this Foundation and Supposition, he is also called, Secondly, The Spirit of God διὰ τὴν ἐκκλήσιν, to difference him from all other Spirits whatever; as, thirdly, also because he is promised, given, and sent of God, for the accomplishment of his whole Will and Pleasure towards us. The Instances hereof will be afterwards considered. But these Appellations of him have their Foundation in his eternal Relation unto the Father before-mentioned.

* ἵνα μὴ ποτε ἀκούσῃτε ἡμεῖς πνεῦμα Θεοῦ, νομιζομένῃ ὅτι οὐκ ἐστὶν λέγειν πνεῦμα Θεοῦ, ἐπὶ τῇ γὰρ γροφῇ τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἄγιον, καὶ παρὰ τὴν ταύτην Θεῶς, τὸ εἶναι Θεῶς. Ἀλλοὶ δὲ τὸ πνεῦμα Θεοῦ, καὶ ἄλλο τὸ εἶναι Θεῶς. Θεὸς μὲν ὁ Θεὸς καὶ γὰρ ὡς περὶ αὐτὰς πεποιμένους. Ἐν Θεῷ ὁ ἕκτος λέγεται, ἐκ μὲν οὖν Θεοῦ ὁ ἕκτος Θεός. Chrysost. περὶ τοῦ ἁγίου πνεύματος.

On the same account Originally he is also called the *Spirit of the Son*. SECT. 14. God hath sent forth the *Spirit of the Son* into your Hearts, Gal. 4. 6. And the *Spirit of Christ*: What time the *Spirit of Christ* that was in them did signifye, 1 Pet. 1. 11. So Rom. 8. 9. But ye are not in the *Flesh* but in the *Spirit*, if so be that the *Spirit of God* dwell in you. Now if any Man have not the *Spirit of Christ* he is none of his. The Spirit therefore of God, and the Spirit of Christ, are one and the same. For that Hypothetical Proposition, If any Man have not the *Spirit of Christ* he is none of his, is an Inference taken from the words foregoing; if so be that the *Spirit of God* dwell in you. And this Spirit of Christ, v. 11. is said to be the *Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead*. Look then in what sense he is said to be the *Spirit of God*, that is of the Father, in the same he is said to be the *Spirit of the Son*. And this is because he proceedeth from the Son also. And for no other Reason can he be so called, at least not without the original and formal Reason of that Appellation. Secondly, I confess he is called the *Spirit of Christ*, because promised by him, sent by him, and that to make effectual and accomplish his Work towards the Church. But this he could not be unless he had antecedently been the *Spirit of the Son* by his proceeding from him also. For the order of the Dispensation of the Divine Persons towards us, arising from the Order of their own Subsistence in the same Divine Essence. And if the Spirit did proceed only from the Person of the Father, he could not be promised, sent, or given by the Son. Consider therefore the *Humane Nature* of Christ in it self and abstractedly, and the Spirit cannot be said to be the Spirit of Christ. For it was united and endowed with Gifts and Graces by him as we shall shew. And if from hence he may be said to be the *Spirit of Christ* without respect unto his proceeding from him as the Son of God, then he may be also said to be the

* ἵνα περὶ πνεῦμα Θεοῦ οὐκ οὐκ ἐν ὑμῖν. Ἰδε πνεῦμα Θεοῦ. Ἰδε τὴν πνεῦμα Χριστοῦ. ὅτι ἐκεῖ καὶ μὴ ἐκείνῃ ἐπείν, ἐκ τῆς πνεύματος Θεοῦ ἐκ τῆς αὐτῆς. Ἐπεὶ πνεῦμα καὶ Χριστός. Ἐπεὶ οὖν πνεῦμα, καὶ ἐκ τῆς πνεύματος Χριστοῦ ἐκ τῆς αὐτῆς. Ἐπεὶ οὖν πνεῦμα καὶ Χριστός. Ἐπεὶ οὖν πνεῦμα καὶ Χριστός. Ἐπεὶ οὖν πνεῦμα καὶ Χριστός. Ἐπεὶ οὖν πνεῦμα καὶ Χριστός. Chrysost. de Sp. Sancto.

the Spirit of every Believer who hath received the *Unction*, or are anointed with his Gifts and Graces. For although Believers are so as to Measure and Degree unspeakably beneath what Christ was, who received *not the Spirit by Measure*; yet as he is the Head, and they are the Members of the same Mystical Body, their *Unction by the Spirit* is of the same kind. But now the Spirit of God may not be said to be the Spirit of this or that Man who hath received of his Gifts and Graces. *David* prays, *Take not thy Holy Spirit from me*; not *my Holy Spirit*. And he is distinguished from our Spirits even as they are sanctified by him. *Rom. 8. 16. The Spirit himself beareth witness with our Spirit*. No more than can he be said to be the Spirit of Christ merely upon the account of his Communications unto him, although in a degree above all others inconceivably excellent. For with respect hereunto he is still called the Spirit of God or the Father who sent him, and anointed the Humane Nature of Christ with him.

SECT. 15. It will be said, perhaps, that he is called the Spirit of Christ, because he is promised given and poured out by him. So *Peter* speaks *Acts 2. 33. Having received of the Father the Promise of the Holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this which ye now see and hear*. But in this regard, namely as given by Christ the Mediator he is expressly called the Spirit of the Father; he was given as the Promise of the Father; for so he is introduced speaking, *v. 17. it shall come to pass in the last Days, saith God, I will pour out of my Spirit on all flesh*. And so our Saviour tells his Disciples, that he would pray the Father and he should give them another Comforter, even the Spirit of Truth, *Joh. 14. 16, 17*. Nor is he otherwise the Spirit of Christ originally and formally, but as he is the Spirit of God, that is as Christ is God also. On this supposition, I grant as before, that he may consequently be called the Spirit of Christ, because promised and sent by him, because doing his Work, and Communicating his Grace Image and likeness to the Elect.

SECT. 16. And this is yet more plain; *1 Pet. 1. 10, 11. Of which Salvation the Prophets have enquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the Grace that should come unto you; searching what, or what manner of Time, the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify*. And this Spirit is said absolutely to be the Holy Ghost; *2 Epist. Chap. 1. 21*. So then the Spirit that was in the Prophets of old in all Ages since the World began, before the Incarnation of the Son of God is called the Spirit of Christ, that is of him who is so. Now this could not be, because he was anointed by that Spirit, or because he gave it afterwards to his Disciples; for his Humane Nature did not exist in the Time of their Prophecy. Those indeed who receive him after the *Unction of the Humane Nature of Christ*, may be said in some sense to receive the Spirit of Christ because they are made Partakers of the same Spirit with him, to the same Ends and Purposes according to their measure. But this cannot be so with respect unto them who lived and Prophefied by him and died long before his Incarnation. Wherefore it is pleaded by those who oppose both the Deity of Christ and the Spirit, which are undeniably here attested unto, that the Spirit here, whereby they cannot deny the Holy Ghost to be intended is called the Spirit of Christ, because the Prophets of old who spake by him did

did principally prophesy concerning Christ, and his Grace, and delivered great Mysteries concerning them. So Christ is made in this Place the *Object* of the Spirits Teaching, and not the *Author* of his sending. So *Crell. Prolegom.* p. 13. 14. But why then is he not called the *Spirit of God* also on this Reason; because the Prophets that speak by him, treated wholly of *God*, the things and the Will of *God*? This they will not say, for they acknowledg him to be the *Vertue and Power of God* inherent in him and proceeding from him. But then whereas *God* even the Father is a *Person*, and *Christ* is a *Person*, and the Spirit is said to be the *Spirit of God*, and the *Spirit of Christ*, whence doth it appear that the same Expression must have different Interpretations; and that the Spirit, is called the *Spirit of God* because he is so and proceedeth from him: but the Spirit of Christ because he is not so, but only treateth of him? The answer is ready; namely because the Father is *God*, but *Christ* is not, and therefore could not give the Spirit when he was not. This is an easie Answer; namely to deny a *Fundamental Truth*, and to set up that denial in an Opposition unto a clear Testimony given unto it. But the Truth is, this pretended sense leaves no sense at all in the Words. For if the Spirit which was in the Prophets be called the *Spirit of Christ*, only because he did before-hand declare the things of Christ, that is his *suffering and the Glory that did ensue*, and that be the sole Reason of that Denomination, then the sense or importance of the Words is this, *searching what or what manner of Time the Spirit which did signifie when it testified before hand the sufferings of Christ which was in them did signifie when he testified before hand the sufferings of Christ*. For according to this Interpretation, the Spirit of Christ is nothing but the Spirit as testifying before-hand of him, and thence alone is he so called; the Absurdity whereof is apparent unto all.

But countenance is indeavoured unto this wresting of the Scripture from
 1 Joh. 4. 3. Every Spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God; and this is that of Antichrist whereof you have heard that it should come, and even now already is it in the World. For say some the Spirit of Antichrist is said to be in the World, when Antichrist was not as yet come. But the Spirit here intended, is not called the *Spirit of Antichrist*, because it declared and foretold the things of *Antichrist* before his coming; On which account alone they allow the Spirit of God in the Prophets of Old to be called the Spirit of Christ. They have therefore no countenance from this Place which failes them in the Principal thing they would prove by it. Again supposing those Words, *whereof you have heard that it should come and is now in the World*, are to be interpreted of the Spirit mentioned and not of *Antichrist* himself, yet no more can be intended, but that the false Teachers and Seducers which were then in the World acted with the same Spirit, as *Antichrist* should do at his coming. And so there is no Conformity between these Expressions. Besides the *Spirit of Antichrist* was then in the World, as was *Antichrist* himself; so far as his Spirit was in the world, so far was he so also; For *Antichrist* and his Spirit cannot be separated. Both he and it were then in the World, in their forerunners who opposed the Truth of the Gospel about the Incarnation of the Son of God and his sufferings. And indeed the *Spirit of Antichrist* in this Place, is no more but his *Doctrines*; *Antichristian*
 G Doctrine,

Doctrin which is to be tryed and rejected. Neither is any singular Person intended by *Antichrist*, but a *Mysterious Opposition* unto Christ and the Gospel, signally Headed by a *series* of men in the latter days. He therefore and his Spirit began to be together in the World in the *Apostles Days*, when the *Mystery of Iniquity began to work*, 2 *Thessal.* 2. 7. There is therefore no countenance to be taken from these words, unto the perverting and wresting of that other expression concerning the Spirit of Christ in the Prophets of old. This therefore is the *formal Reason* of this Apellation. The Holy Spirit is called the *Spirit of the Son*, and the Spirit of Christ, upon the Account of his Proceſſion or *Emanation* from his Person also. Without respect hereunto he could not be called properly the Spirit of Christ; but on that supposition he may be, he is so *denominated*, from that various Relation & Respect that he hath unto him in his Work and Operations. Thus is the Spirit called in the Scripture, these are the *Names* whereby the Essence and *Subsistence* of the Third Person in the Holy Trinity are declared. How he is called on the Account of his *Offices* and *Operations* will be manifested in our Progress.

Divine

Divine Nature and Personality of the HOLY SPIRIT Proved and Vindicated.

C H A P. III.

- (1.) *Ends of our consideration of the Dispensation of the Spirit.* (2.) *Principles premised thereunto.* (3.) *The Nature of God the Foundation of all Religion.* (4.) *Divine Revelation gives the Rule and Measure of Religious Worship.* (5.) *God hath revealed himself as Three in One.* (6.) *Distinct Actions and Operations ascribed unto these Distinct Persons.* (7.) *Therefore the Holy Spirit a Divine Distinct Person.* (8.) *Double Opposition to the Holy Spirit.* (9.) *By some his Personality granted, and his Deity denied.* (10.) *His Personality denied by the Socinians.* (11.) *Proved against them.* (12.) *The open vanity of their Pretences, Matth. 28. 19. pleaded.* (13, 14, 15.) *Appearances of the Spirit under the shape of a Dove.* (16.) *Explained and improved.* (17.) *His appearance as Fire opened.* (18.) *His Personal Subsistence proved.* (19.) *Personal Properties assigned unto him. Understanding. Argument from hence pleaded and vindicated.* (20.) *A Will; Joh. 33. Jam. 3. 4. cleared.* (21.) *Exceptions removed.* (22.) *Power.* (23, 24, &c.) *Other Personal Ascriptions to him, with Testimonies of them, vindicated and explained.*

WE shall now proceed to the *Matter* it self designed unto **SECT. I.** Consideration; namely, the *Dispensation of the Spirit of God* unto the Church. And I shall endeavour to fix what I have to offer upon its proper *Principles*, and from them to educe the whole Doctrine concerning it. And this must be so done, as to manifest the Interest of our *Faith, Obedience, and Holy Worship*, in the whole and each Part of it. For these are the immediate Ends of all Divine Revelations; according to that Holy *Maxime* of our Blessed Saviour; *if you know these things, happy are ye if you doe them.* To this End the Ensuing Principles are to be observed.

1. *The Nature and Being of God is the Foundation of all true Religion* **SECT. 2.** *and holy Religious Worship in the World.* The great End for which we were made, for which we were brought forth by the Power of God into this World, is to *Worship him* and to give glory unto him. For he made all things for himself or his own Glory (*Prov. 16. 4.*) to be rendered unto him according to the Abilities and Capacities that he hath furnished them

them withal, *Revel. 4. 11.* And that which makes this Worship indispensibly necessary unto us, and from whence it is *Holy or Religious*, is the *Nature and Being* of God himself. There are indeed many *Parts or Acts* of Religious Worship which immediately respect, (as their Reason and Motive) what God is unto us, or what he hath done and doth for us. But the Principal and Adequate Reason of all *Divine Worship* and that which makes it such, is what God is in himself. Because he is, that is, an *Infinately Glorious, Good, Wise, Holy, Powerful, Righteous, self-subsisting, self-sufficient, All-sufficient Being*, the *Fountain, Cause and Author of Life and Being* to all things, and of all that is Good in every kind, the *First Cause, last End*, and absolutely *Sovereign Lord of all, the Rest and All-satisfactory Reward* of all other Beings, therefore is he by us to be adored, and Worshipped with Divine and Religious Worship. Hence are we in our Hearts, Minds and Souls, to *Admire, Adore, and Love* Him, his *Praises* are we to celebrate; *Him to Trust* and fear, and so to resign our selves and all our concernments unto his *Will* and Disposal; to regard him with all the Acts of our Minds and Persons, answerably to the Holy Properties and Excellencies of his Nature. This it is to glorify him as God. For seeing of him, and through him, and to him are all things, to him must be *Glory* for ever, *Rom. 11. 36.* Believing that God thus is, and that he is a *Rewarder of them that seek him*, is the Ground of all *Coming unto God* in his Worship, *Heb. 11. 6.* And herein lies the sin of Men, that the *invisible things of God being Manifest unto them, even his Eternal Power and Godhead*, yet they do not Glorify him as God, *Rom. 1. 21.* This is to Honour, Worship, Fear God for himself, that is, on the Account of what he is himself. Where the *Divine Nature* is, there is the true, proper, formal Object of Religious worship, and where that is not, it is Idolatry to ascribe it to or exercise it towards any. And this God instructs us in, in all those Places where he Proclaims his *Name* and describes his *Eternal Excellencies*, and that either absolutely or in Comparison with other things. All is that we may know him to be such a one, as is to be Worshipped and Glorified for himself, or his own sake.

SECT. 3. Secondly; *The Revelation that God is pleased to make of himself unto us, gives the Rule and measure of all Religious Worship and Obedience.* His Being absolutely considered as comprehending in it all infinitely Divine Perfections, is the *formal Reason* of our Worship; but this Worship is to be directed, guided, regulated, by the *Revelation* he makes of that Being, and of those Excellencies unto us. This is the End of *Divine Revelation*; namely to direct us in paying that Homage which is due unto the Divine Nature. I speak not now only of *Positive Institutions* which are the free Effects of the Will of God depending originally and solely on Revelation, and which therefore have been various and actually changed. But this is that which I intend. Look what way soever God manifesteth his Being and Properties unto us, by his Works or his Word, our Worship consisteth in a *due Application* of our Souls unto him according to that Manifestation of himself.

SECT. 4. Thirdly; *God hath revealed or manifested himself as Three in One.* And therefore as such is to be worshipped and glorified by us; that is, as three distinct

distinct Persons, subsisting in the same infinitely Holy One individed Essence. This Principle might be, and had not that labour been obviated, ought to have been here at large confirmed, it being that which the whole ensuing Discourse doth presuppose and lean upon. And in truth I fear that the failing of some Mens Profession begins with their Relinquishment of this *Foundation*. It is now evident unto all, that here hath been the fatal miscarriage of those poor deluded Souls amongst us whom they call *Quakers*. And it is altogether in vain to deal with them about other Particulars, whilst they are carried away with *Infidelity* from this Foundation. Convince any of them of the *Doctrine of the Trinity*, and all the rest of their Imaginations vanish into Smoak: And I wish it were so with them only. There are others and those not a few, who either reject the Doctrine of it as *false*, or despise it as *unintelligible*, or neglect it as *useless* or of no great Importance. I know this *Uleer* lies hid in the minds of many, and cannot but expect when it will break out and cover the whole Body with its Defilements whereof they are Members. But these things are left to the care of Jesus Christ. The Reason why I shall not in this place insist professedly on the Confirmation and Vindication of this Fundamental Truth, is because I have done it elsewhere, as having more than once publicly cast my Mite into this Sanctuary of the Lord; for which and the like services wherein I stand indebted unto the Gospel, I have met with that Reward which I did alwayes expect. For the present I shall only say, that on this Supposition that God hath revealed himself as *Three in One*; He is in all our Worship of him so to be considered. And therefore in our Initiation into the Profession and Practice of the Worship of God according to the Gospel, we are in our Baptism engaged to it, *In the Name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost*, Mat. 28. 19. This is the Foundation of our doing all the things that Christ commands us, v. 20. Unto this Service we are solemnly dedicated, namely of God, as *Father, Son, and Holy Spirit*; as they are each of them equally participant of the same Divine Nature.

Fourthly; *These Persons are so distinct in their peculiar Subsistence*, SECT. 5. *that distinct Actings and Operations are ascribed unto them.* And these Actings are of two sorts; (1.) *Ad intra*, which are those internal Acts in one Person whereof another Person is the Object. And these Acts *ad invicem*, or *intra*, are natural and necessary inseparable from the Being and Existence of God. So the Father knows the Son, and loveth him, and the Son seeth, knoweth, and loveth the Father. In these mutual Actings, one Person is the Object of the Knowledge and Love of the other. John 3. 35. *The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand*, Chap. 5. 20. *The Father loveth the Son*, Matth. 11. 27. *No Man knoweth the Son but the Father, neither knoweth any Man the Father save the Son*. John 6. 46. *None hath seen the Father save he which is of God he hath seen the Father*. This mutual Knowledge and Love of Father and Son is expressed at large, Prov. 8. 22. which place I have opened and vindicated elsewhere. And they are Absolute, Infinite, Natural and Necessary unto the Being and Blessedness of God. So the Spirit is the mutual Love of the Father and the Son, knowing them as he is known, and searching the deep things of God. And in these mutual internal eternal Actings of themselves, consists much of the

the infinite Blessedness of the Holy God. Again, (2.) there are distinct Actings of the several Persons *ad extra*, which are voluntary or effects of Will and Choice, and not natural or necessary. And these are of two sorts. (1.) Such as respect *one another*. For there are *external Acts* of one Person towards another; but then the Person that is the Object of these actings is not considered *absolutely as a Divine Person*, but with respect unto some peculiar Dispensation and Condescension. So the Father gives, sends, commands the Son, as he had condescended to take our Nature upon him, and to be the Mediator between God and Man. So the Father and the Son do send the Spirit, as he condescends in an especial manner to the Office of being the Sanctifier and Comforter of the Church. Now these are free and voluntary Acts, depending upon the Sovereign Will Counsel & Pleasure of God, and might not have been without the least diminution of his Eternal Blessedness. (2.) There are

especial Acts *ad extra* towards the Creatures.

* In hac Divini Magisterii Schola, Pater est qui docet & instruit; Filius qui arcana Dei nobis revelat & aperit; Spiritus Sanctus qui nos replet & imbuat. A Patre potentiam, a Filio sapientiam, a Spiritu Sancto accipimus innocentiam; Pater eligit, Filius diligit, Spiritus Sanctus conjungit & vivit. Cyprian. de Baptismo Christi.

* This the whole Scripture testifieth unto, so that it is altogether needless to confirm it with particular Instances. None who have learned the first Principles of the Doctrine of Christ, but can tell you what works are ascribed peculiarly to the Father, what to the Son, and what to the Holy Ghost. Besides this will be manifested afterwards in all the distinct Actings of the Spirit, which is sufficient for our purpose.

SECT. 6. Fifthly; Hence it follows unavoidably, that this Spirit of whom we speak, is in himself a distinct, living, powerful, intelligent divine Person; for none other can be the Author of those internal and external Divine Acts and Operations which are ascribed unto him. But here I must stay a little, and firm that Foundation which we build upon. For we are in the Investigation of those things which that one and self-same Spirit distributeth according to his own Will. And it is indispensibly necessary unto our present Design, that we enquire *who*, and what that one and self-same Spirit is; seeing on him and his Will all these things do depend. And we do know likewise, that if men prevail in the Opposition they make unto his Person, it is to no great purpose to concern our selves in his Operations. For the Foundation of any Fabrick being taken away, the Superstructure will be of no use nor abide.

SECT. 7. The Opposition that is made in the World against the Spirit of God Doctrinally, may be reduced unto two Heads. For some there are who grant his Personality, or that he is a distinct self-subsisting Person; but they deny his Deity, deny him to be a participant of the Divine Nature, or will not allow him to be God. A Created Finite Spirit they say he is, but the chiefest of all Spirits that were created, and the Head of all the Good Angels. Such a Spirit they say there is, and that he is called the Spirit of God, or the Holy Ghost, upon the account of the Work wherein he is employed. This way went the Macedonian Hereticks of old, and they are now followed by the Mahumetans; and some of late among our selves have attempted to revive the same Frenzy. But we shall not need to trouble our selves about this Notion. The folly of it is

is so evident, that it is almost by all utterly deserted. For such things are affirmed of the Holy Ghost in the Scripture, as that to assert his *Personality* and deny his *Deity*, is the utmost madness that any one can fall into in Spiritual things. Wherefore the *Socinians*, the present great Enemies of the Doctrine of the *Holy Trinity*, and who would be thought to go soberly about the work of destroying the Church of God, do utterly reject this Plea and Pretence. But that which they advance in the room of it is of no less pernicious Nature and Consequence. For granting the things assigned to him to be the Effects of *Divine Power*, they deny his *Personality*; and assert that what is called by the Name of the Spirit of God, or the Holy Spirit, is nothing but a *Quality* in the Divine Nature, or the Power that God puts forth for such and such purposes, which yet is no new invention of theirs.

* I do not design here professedly to contend with them about all the Concernments of this Difference; for there is nothing of importance in all their Pretences or Exceptions, but it will in one place or other occur unto consideration in our Progress; I shall only at present confirm the *Divine Personality* of the Holy Ghost with one Argument; which I will not say is such as no Man can return the shew of an Answer unto; For what is it that the Serpentine

Wits of Men will not pretend an Answer unto, or an Exception against, if their *Lusts* and *Prejudices* require them so to do? But I will boldly say, it is such as that the *Gates of Hell* shall never prevail against it in the Hearts of true Believers, the strengthening of whose Faith is all that in it I do aim at. And if it doth not unto all unprejudiced Persons evince the Truth and Reality of the *Divine Personality* of the Holy Ghost, it must certainly convince all Men, that nothing which is taught or delivered in the Scripture can possibly be understood.

One Consideration which hath in part been before proposed I shall SECT. 8. premise, to free the Subject of our Argument from Ambiguity. And

this is that this Word or Name *Spirit* is used sometimes to denote the *Spirit of God* * himself, and sometimes his Gifts and Graces, the Effects of his Operations on the Souls of Men. And this our Adversaries in this Cause are forced to confess, and thereon in all their Writings distinguish between the *Holy Spirit* and his Effects. This alone being supposed, I say it is impossible to prove the *Father* to be a Person, or the *Son* to be so, both which are acknowledged any other way, than we may and do prove the Holy Ghost to be so. For he to whom all personal Properties, Attributes, Adjuncts, Acts and Operations are ascribed, and unto whom they do belong, and to whom nothing is or can be truly and properly ascribed, but what may and doth belong unto a Person, he is a Person, and him are we taught to believe so to be. So know we the *Father* to be a Person, as also the

* Hec autem omnia operatur unus atque idem Spiritus, dividens singulis prout vult; unde discentes operatricem & ut ita dicam distributricem naturam Spiritus Sancti; non abducamus ab his qui dicunt, operationem & non substantiam Dei esse Spiritum Sanctum, Et ex aliis quoque plurimis locis subsistens natura demonstratur Spiritus Sancti. Didym. de Spirit. Sancti. lib. 2.

* Ἐπειδὴ περὶ τὸ δυνάμενον τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον δεῖ καλεῖται καὶ τὸ δυνάμενον ὁμοῦς τῷ χεῖρσματι. Chrysost.

Nec existimare debemus Spiritum Sanctum secundum substantias esse divisum quia multitudo bonorum dicatur---impasibilis enim & indivisibilis atque immutabilis est, sed juxta differentes efficientias & intellectus multis bonorum vocabulis nuncupatur; quia participes suos, non juxta unam eandemque virtutem communionem sui donet. Quippe cum ad utilitatem uniuscujusque aptus sit. Didym. lib. 1.

Son.

48 *Divine Nature and Personality of the* Book 1.

Son. For our Knowledge of things is more by their Properties and Operations, than by their Essential Forms. Especially is this so with respect to the *Nature* Being and Existence of God, which are in themselves absolutely Incomprehensible. Now I shall not confirm the *Assumption* of this Argument with reference unto the Holy Ghost from this or that *particular Testimony*, nor from the Assignment of any single Personal Property unto him, but from the constant Uniform Tenor of the Scripture in ascribing all these *Properties* unto him. And we may add hereunto, that things are so ordered in the Wisdom of God, that there is *no Personal Property* that may be found in an Infinite Divine Nature, but it is in One place or other ascribed unto him.

SECT. 9.

There is no Exception can be laid against the force of this Argument, but only that *some things* on the One hand are ascribed unto the *Spirit* which belong not unto a Person, nor can be spoken of him who is so; and on the other, that sundry things that properly belong to Persons are in the Scripture *figuratively* ascribed unto such things as are not so. Thus as to the first head of this Exception, the Holy Spirit is said to be poured out, to be shed abroad, to be an *Unction*, or the like, of all which Expressions we shall treat afterwards. What then shall we say, that he is *not a Person*, but only the *Power of God*? Will this render those Expressions concerning him proper? How can the Vertue of God or the Power of God be said to be *poured out*, to be *shed abroad* & the like? Wherefore both they and we acknowledge that these Expressions are *figurative*, as many things are so expressed of God in the Scripture and that frequently; and what is the meaning of them under their *figurative* Colours we shall afterwards declare. This therefore doth not in the least impeach our Argument, unless this Assertion were true generally; that whatever is spoken of *figuratively* in the Scripture is no Person; which would leave no *One* in Heaven or Earth. On the other side it is confessed that there are things peculiar unto rational Subsistents or *Persons*, which are ascribed sometimes unto those that are not so. Many things of this Nature, as to *hope*, to *believe*, to *bear*, are ascribed unto *Charity*; 1 Cor. 13. But every one presently apprehends that this Expression is *figurative*; the Abstract being put for the *Concrete*, by a *Metalepsis*; and Charity is said to do that, which a Man endued with that Grace will doe. So the Scripture is said to *see*, to *foresee*, to *speak*, and to *judge*, which are Personal Actings; but who doth not see and grant that a *Metonymy*, is and must be allowed in such assignments; that being ascribed unto the *Effect*, the Scripture, which is proper to the Cause, the *Spirit* of God speaking in it. So the Heavens and the Earth are said to *hear*, and the Fields with the Trees of the Forest to *sing and clap their hands*, by a *Prosopopeia*. Now concerning these things there is no danger of Mistake. The Light of Reason and their own Nature therein, do give us a sufficient understanding of them. And such *figurative Expressions* as are used concerning them, are common in all Good Authors. Besides the Scripture it self in other Places innumerable doth so teach and declare what they are, as that its plain and direct *proper* Assertions do sufficiently expound its own *figurative Enunciations*. For these and such like Ascriptions are only *occasional*, the direct description of the Things themselves is given us in other Places. But now with respect unto the *Spirit of God* all things are otherwise. The constant

stant uniform Expressions concerning him, are such as declare him to be a *Person* endowed with all Personal Propertys, no Description being any-where given of him inconsistent with their proper Application to him.

If a Sober, Wise, and Honest Man, should come and tell you, that in such a *Countrey* where he hath been, there is One who is the *Governour* of it that doth well discharge his Office, that he heareth Causes, discerneth Right, distributes Justice, relieves the Poor, comforts them that are in distress; supposing you gave him that Credit which *Honesty*, Wisdom and Sobriety do deserve, would you not believe that he intended a Righteous, Wise, Diligent, Intelligent *Person*, discharging the Office of a Governour? What else could any Man living imagine? But now suppose that another *unknown Person*, or so far as he is known justly suspected of deceit and forgery, should come unto you and tell you, that all which the other informed you and acquainted you withal was indeed true; but that the words which he spake have quite another Intention. For it was not a *Man* or any *Person* that he intended, but it was the *Sun* or the *Wind* that he meant by all which he spake of him. For whereas the *Sun* by his benign Influences doth make a *Countrey* fruitful and temperate, suited to the Relief and Comfort of all that dwell therein, and disposeth the Minds of the Inhabitants unto mutual *Kindness* and *Benignity*; he described these things *figuratively* unto you, under the notion of a Righteous Governour and his Actions, although he never gave you the least intimation of any such Intention. Must you not now believe that either the *First Person* whom you know to be a Wise Sober and Honest Man, was a Notorious *trifler*, and designed your Ruine if you were to Order any of your occasions according to his Reports; or that your *latter Informer* whom you have just reason to suspect of falsehood and deceit in other things, hath endeavoured to abuse both him and you; to render his Veracity suspected, and to spoyle all your Designs grounded thereon. One of these you must certainly conclude upon. And it is no otherwise in this Case. The *Scripture* informes us, that the *Holy Ghost* Rules in and over the Church of God, appointing *Overseers* of it under him, that he discerns and judgeth all things, that he comforteth them that are faint, strengthens them that are weak, is *grieved* with them and provoked by them who sin, and that in all these and in other things of the like Nature innumerable, he worketh, ordereth and disposeth all according to the *Counsel of his Own Will*. Hereupon it directeth us, so to order our *Conversation* towards God, that we do not *grieve him* nor displease him, telling us thereon, what great things he will doe for us, on which we lay the stress of our Obedience and Salvation. Can any Man possibly that gives Credit to the Testimony thus proposed in the *Scripture*, conceive any otherwise of this Spirit, but as of an Holy, Wise, Intelligent, Person. Now whilst we are under the Power of these Apprehensions, there come unto us some Men, *Socinians* or *Quakers*, whom we have just cause on many other Accounts to suspect at least of deceit and falsehood; and they confidently tell us that what the *Scripture* speaks concerning the *Holy Spirit* is indeed true; but that in and by all the Expressions which it useth concerning him, it intendeth *no such Person* as it seems to do, but an *Accident*, a *Quality*, an *Effect*, or Influence of the Power of

50 *Divine Nature and Personality of the Book I.*

God, which *figuratively* doth all the things mentioned; namely, that hath a *Will* figuratively, and *Understanding* figuratively, *discerneth* and *judgeth* figuratively, is *sinned* against figuratively, and so of all that is said of Him. Can any Man that is not forsaken of all Natural Reason as well as Spiritual Light, chuse now but determine that either the *Scripture* designed to draw him into *Errors* and *Mistakes* about the Principal Concernments of his Soul, and so to ruine him Eternally; or that these Persons who would impose such a sense upon it, are indeed *Corrupt Seducers* that seek to overthrow his Faith and Comforts? Such will they at last appear to be: I shall now proceed to confirm the Argument proposed.

SECT. II. *1.* All things necessary to this purpose are comprized in the solemn Form of our *Initiation* into Covenant with God: *Mat. 28. 19.* Our Lord Jesus Christ commands his Apostles to *Disciple all Nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and the Son, and the Holy Ghost.* This is the Foundation we lay of all our Obedience and Profession which are to be regulated by this *initial* Engagement. Now no Man will or doth deny but that the Father and the Son are *distinct* Persons. Some indeed there are who deny the Son to be God; but none are so mad as to deny him to be a Person, though they would have him only to be a Man. All grant him, whether God and Man, or only Man, to be a *distinct Person* from the Father. Now what confusion must this needs introduce, to add to them and to joyn equally with them as to all the concerns of our Faith and Obedience, the *Holy Ghost*, if he be not a Divine Person even as they? If as some fancy he be a Person indeed, but not one that is Divine but a Creature, then here is openly the same Honour assigned unto him who is no more, as unto God himself. This elsewhere the *Scripture* declares to be *Idolatry* to be detested, *Gal. 1. 8. Rom. 1. 25.* And if he be not a Person but a *Vertue* and *Quality* in God, and Emanation of Power from him, concerning which our Adversaries *τερολογῶσι*, speak things portentous and unintelligible, what sense can any Man apprehend in the Words?

SECT. 12. Besides; whatever is ascribed unto the other Persons either with respect unto themselves or our Duty towards them, is *equally ascribed* unto the Holy Ghost. For whatsoever is intended by the *Name* of the Father and the Son, he is equally with them concerned therein. It is not the Name *Father*, and the name *Son*, but the *Name of God*, that is of them both, that is intended. It is a Name common to them all, and distinctly applyed unto them all; but they have not in this sense *distinct* or divers *Names*. And by the Name of God, either his *Being* or his *Authority* is signified; for other intention of it none have been able to invent. Take the Name here in either sense, and it is sufficient as to what we intend. For if it be used in the first way, then the *Being* of the Spirit must be acknowledged to be the same with that of the Father. If in the *latter* he hath the same *Divine Authority* with him. He who hath the Nature and Authority of God is God, is a Divine Person.

SECT. 13. Our Argument then from hence, is not meerly from his being *joyned* with the Father and the Son; for so as to some Ends and Purposes any Creatures

Chap.3. *Holy Spirit Proved and Vindicated.*

51

Creatures may be joyned with them. This our Adversaries prove from *Acts* 20. 32. *Ephes.* 6. 10. *Phil.* 3. 10. 2 *Thess.* 1. 9. and might do it from other places innumerable, although the *first* of these will not confirm what it is produced to give countenance unto; *Schlichting. de Trinitat. ad. Meisner.* p. 605. But it is from the *manner* and *end* of his being *conjoynd* with the Father and the Son, wherein *their Name*, that is, their Divine Nature and Authority are ascribed unto him, that we argue.

Again we are said to be baptized, εἰς τὸ ὄνομα, *into his Name.* And SECT. 14. no sense can be affixed unto these words, but what doth unavoidably include his *Personality*. For two things they may and do intend, nor any thing else but what may be reduced unto them. First, Our *Religious owning* the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, in all our Divine Worship, Faith, and Obedience. Now as we own and avow the *One*, so we do the *Other*; for we are alike *baptized* into their Name, * equally submitting to their Authority, and equally taking the Profession of their Name upon us. If then we avow and own the Father as a Distinct Person, so we do the Holy Ghost. Again by being *baptized* into the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, we are *sacredly initiated* and consecrated or dedicated unto the Service and Worship of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost. This we take upon us in our *Baptism*. Herein lies the Foundation of all our Faith and Profession, with that engagement of our selves unto God which constitutes our Christianity. This is the Pledg of our *entrance* into Covenant with God, and of our giving up our selves unto him in the solemn Bond of Religion. Herein to conceive that any *one* who is not God as the Father is, who is not a Person as he is also and the Son likewise, is joyned with them *for the ends* and in the *manner* mentioned, without the least note of Difference as to *Deity* or *Personality*, is a strange fondness, destructive of all Religion, and leading the minds of men towards *Polytheism*. And as we ingage into all *Religious Obedience* unto the Father and Son herein, to believe in them, trust, fear, honour and serve them, so we do the same with respect unto the Holy Ghost; which how we can do, if he be not as they are, no Man can understand.

* Baptizate Gentes in Nomine Patris & Filii & Spiritus Sancti. In Nomine dixit, non in Nominibus. Non ergo aliud nomen Patris, aliud nomen Filii, aliud nomen Spiritus Sancti, quam unus Deus. Ambros. de Sp. Sanct. lib. 1. cap. 4.

We do not then in this *Case* from hence merely plead our being *bap-* SECT. 15. *tized* into the *Holy Ghost*, as some pretend. Nor indeed are we said so to be. Men may figuratively be said to be *baptized* into a *Doctrine*, when their Baptism is a Pledg and Token of their Profession of it. So the Disciples whom the Apostle *Paul* met withal at *Ephesus*, *Acts* 19. 3. are said to be baptized εἰς τὸ Ἰωάννην βάπτισμα, *into the baptism of John*; that is, the *Doctrine* of Repentance for the forgiveness of sins whereof his Baptism was a Pledg. So also the *Israelites* are said to be baptized εἰς μαωτον, *into Moses*, 1 *Cor.* 10. 2. because he led and conducted them through the Sea, when they were *Sprinkled* with the Waves of it as a token of their Initiation into the Rites and Ceremonies which he was to deliver unto them. But we are said to be baptized *into his Name*, which is the same with that of the Father and Son. And certainly this Proposal of God as *Father*,

52 Divine Nature and Personality of the Book. I.

Son, and Holy Ghost, to be the Object of all our Faith and Worship, and our ingagement hereunto required as the Foundation of all our present Religion and future Hopes, being made unto us, and that under one and the same Name; if the Doctrine of a *Trinity* of Persons subsisting in the same *individed Essence* be not taught and declared in these words, we may justly despair of ever having any Divine Mystery manifested unto us.

SECT. 15. 2. His Appearance in, and under a *visible sign* argues his *Personal Existence*. This is related *Math. 3. 16. Luke 3. 22. John 1. 32. Luke* speaks first in general that he descended, ἐν εἰς σωματικῶν in a *Bodily shape*; or Appearance. And they all agree that it was the shape of a *Dove* under which he appeared. The words in *Matthew* are, εἶδε τὸ πνεῦμα τοῦ Θεοῦ κατὰ βαλὼν ὡς εἰς πτερὰ περιστερῆς ἐρχόμενον ἐπ' αὐτόν. He saw the Spirit of God descending like a Dove, and lighting, (or rather coming,) upon him. He, that is *John* the Baptist, not Christ himself. The Relative αὐτός, refers in this Place to the more remote *Antecedent*. For although he that is Christ himself also saw the descending of the Holy Spirit, yet I suppose this relates unto that *Token* which was to be given of him unto *John*, whereby he should know him, *Joh. 1. 32, 33*. The following words are ambiguous. For that Expression, *like a Dove*, may refer to the manner of his descending, descending, (in a bodily shape) as a Dove descends. Or they may respect the manner of his Appearance; he appeared like a Dove descending. And this sense is determined in the other *Evangelists*, to the bodily shape wherein he descended. He took the form or shape of a Dove, to make a visible Representation of himself by. For a visible Pledg was to be given of the coming of the Holy Ghost on the *Messiah* according to the Promise; and thereby did God direct his great forerunner to the Knowledge of him. Now this was no real Dove. That would not have been a thing so *Miraculous* as this Appearance of the Holy Ghost is represented to be. And the Text will not bear any such Apprehension, though it was entertained by some of the Antients. For it is evident that this shape of a Dove came out of Heaven. He saw the Heavens opened and the Dove descending, that is out of Heaven, which was opened to make way, as it were, for him. Moreover the Expression of the Opening of the Heavens is not used but with respect unto some Appearance or Manifestation of God himself. And so, or (which is the same,) the bowing of the Heavens, is often used; *Psal. 144. 5. Isa. 64. 1. Bow thy Heavens O Lord, and come down. 2 Sam. 22. 10. Ezek. 1. 1. The Heavens were opened and I saw the Visions of God. So Acts 7. 56. God used not this Sign but in some manifestation of himself. And had not this been an Appearance of God, there had been no need of bowing or opening the Heavens for it. And it is plainly said that it was not a Dove, but the shape or representation of a Dove. It was εἰς σωματικῶν, a bodily shape, and that περιστερῆς, of a Dove.*

SECT. 16. As then at the beginning of the old Creation, the Spirit of God, *מרחפת incubabat*, came and fell on the Waters, cherishing the whole, and communicating a *prolifick* and *vivifick Quality* unto it, as a Fowl or Dove in particular gently moves it self upon its Eggs, until with, and by its generative warmth it hath communicated *vital heat* unto them; so

Chap. 3. Holy Spirit Proved and Vindicated.

55

so now at the entrance of the *new Creation*, he comes as a *Dove* upon *Him* who was the immediate Author of it, and virtually composed it in himself, carrying it on by virtue of his Presence with him. And so this is applyed in the *Syriack Ritual* of Baptism composed by *Severinus*, in the account given of the Baptism of Christ, *וְרוּחַ סְלִימָה יָרַד עָלָיו כְּצִוְיָא דְּכִנּוּרָא*. And the spirit of Holiness descended, flying in the likeness of a Dove, and rested upon him, and moved on the Waters. And in the assumption of this form there may be some respect unto the Dove that brought tydings to *Noah* of the ceasing of the Flood of Waters, and of the ending of the Wrath of God, who thereon said that he would *curse the Earth no more*, Gen. 8. 11. For herein also was there a significant Representation of him who visited poor lost mankind in their cursed Condition, and proclaimed Peace unto them that would return to God by him the Great Peacemaker, *Ephes. 2. 14, 15*. And this Work he immediately ingaged into on the resting of this Dove upon him. Besides there is a *natural aptness* in that Creature to represent the Spirit that rested on the Lord Jesus. For the known Nature and Course of a Dove is such, as is meet to mind us of Purity and harmless Innocencie, *Mat. 10. 16*. Hence is that Direction, *Be harmless as Doves*. So also the sharpness of its sight or eyes, as *Cant. 1. 16. Chap. 4. 1*. is fixed on, to represent a *quick* and discerning Understanding, such as was in Christ from the resting of the Spirit upon him, *Isa. 11. 3*.

The *shape* thereof that appeared was that of a *Dove*; but the Substance it self I judge was of a *fiery Nature*, an *athereal Substance* shaped into the form or resemblance of a Dove. It had the *shape* of a Dove, but not the appearance of Feathers, Colours, or the like. This also rendred the appearance the more Visible, Conspicuous, Heavenly and Glorious. And the Holy Ghost is often compared to *Fire*, because he was of old typified or represented thereby. For on the first solemn offering of Sacrifices, there came *fire from the Lord* for the kindling of them. Hence *Theodotion* of old rendred *וַיִּשַׁע יְהוָה*, Gen. 4. 4. the Lord had respect to the Offering of *Abel*; by *ἐνέδωκεν ὁ θεὸς*, God fired the Offering of *Abel*, sent down Fire that kindled his Sacrifice as a Token of his Acceptance. However it is certain that at the first Erection of the Altar in the Wilderness, upon the first Sacrifices, *fire came out from before the Lord* and consumed on the Altar the Burnt-Offering and the Fat; which when all the People saw, they shouted and fell on their Faces, *Levit. 9. 24*. And the Fire kindled hereby was to be perpetuated on the Altar, so that none was ever to be used in Sacrifice but what was *traded* from it. For a neglect of this Intimation of the Mind of God, were *Nadab* and *Abihu* consumed, *Chap. 10. 1*. So was it also upon the Dedication of the Altar in the Temple of *Solomon*. *Fire came down from Heaven* and consumed the Burnt-Offering, *2 Chron. 7. 1*. and a fire thence kindled, was alwayes kept burning on the Altar. And in like manner God bare Testimony to the Ministry of *Elijah*, *1 King. 18. 38, 39*. God by all these signified, that no Sacrifices were accepted with him, where Faith was not kindled in the Heart of the Offerer by the Holy Ghost, represented by the Fire that kindled the Sacrifices on the Altar. And in Answer hereunto is our Lord Jesus Christ said to offer himself

through the eternal Spirit, Heb. 9. 14. It was therefore most probably a fiery Appearance that was made. And in the next bodily shape which he assumed, it is expressly said that it was fiery, Acts 2. 3. *There appeared unto them cloven Tongues like as of Fire*; which was the Visible Token of the coming of the Holy Ghost upon them. And he chose then that figure of Tongues, to denote the Assistance, which by the miraculous Gift of speaking with divers Tongues, together with that Wisdom and Utterance, which he furnished them withal for the Publication of the Gospel. And thus also the Lord Christ is said to baptize with the Holy Ghost and with Fire, Matth. 3. 11. Not two things are intended, but the latter words and with Fire are added *ἑξ ἑωυτῶν*, and the expression is *ἐν δα δυν*; with the Holy Ghost, who is a Spiritual, Divine, Eternal Fire. So God absolutely is said to be a consuming Fire, Heb. 12. 29. Deut. 4. 24. And as in these words, *He shall Baptize with the Holy Ghost and with Fire*, there is a Prospect unto what came to pass afterwards; when the Apostles received the Holy Ghost with a visible Pledg of fiery Tongues; So there seems to be a Retrospect by way of Allusion unto what is recorded, Isa. 6. 6, 7. For a living or fiery Coal from the Altar, where the Fire represented the Holy Ghost or his Work and Grace, having touched the Lips of his Prophet, his sin was taken away both as to the guilt and filth of it. And this is the Work of the Holy Ghost; who not onely sanctifieth us, but by ingenerating Faith in us, and the application of the Promise unto us, is the Cause and Means of our Justification also, 1 Cor. 6. 11. Tit. 3. 4, 5, 6, 7. whereby our sins on both accounts are taken away. So also his Efficacy in other places is compared unto Fire and Burning; Isa. 4. 4, 5. *When the Lord shall have washed away the filth of the Daughters of Sion, and shall have purged the Blood of Jerusalem from the midst thereof, by the Spirit of Judgment, and the Spirit of Burning.* He is compared both to Fire and Water, with respect unto the same cleansing vertue in both. So also Mal. 3. 2. Hence as this is expressed by the Holy Ghost and Fire in two Evangelists, Matth. 3. 11. Luke 3. 16. So in the other two there is mention onely of the Holy Ghost, Mark 8. John 1. 33. the same thing being intended. I have added these things, a little to clear the manner of this Divine Appearance, which also belongs unto the Oeconomy of the Spirit.

SECT. 18. Now I say that this Appearance of the Holy Ghost in a bodily shape, wherein he was represented by that which is a Substance and hath a Subsistence of his own, doth manifest that he himself is a Substance and hath a Subsistence of his own. For if he be no such thing, but a meer influential Effect of the Power of God, we are not taught right Apprehensions of him but mere mistakes by this Appearance. For of such an accident there can be no substantial Figure or Resemblance made, but what is monstrous. It is excepted by our Adversaries, (*Grell. de Natur. Spirit. Sanct.*) that a Dove is no Person, because not endued with an Understanding which is essentially required unto the constitution of a Person. And therefore they say no Argument can thence be taken for the Personality of the Holy Ghost. But it is enough that he was represented by a subsisting Substance; which if they will grant him to be, we shall quickly evince that he is endued with a Divine Understanding, and so is completely a Person. And whereas they farther Object, That if the Holy Ghost

Chap. 3. Holy Spirit Proved and Vindicated.

55

Ghost in the Appearance intended to manifest himself to be a *Divine Person*, he would have appeared as a *Man*, who is a *Person*, for so God or an *Angel* in his Name appeared under the *Old Testament*; it is of no more importance than the preceding Exception. The Holy Ghost did manifest himself as it seemed good unto him; and some Reasons for the instructive Use of the shape of a *fiery Dove*, we have before declared. Neither did God of old appear only in an *humane shape*. He did so sometimes in a *burning fiery Bush*, Exod. 3. 2, 4. Sometimes in a *Pillar of Fire*, or a *Cloud*, Exod. 14. 24. Moreover the Appearances of God, as I have elsewhere demonstrated, under the *Old Testament*, were all of them of the *second Person*; and he assumed an *Humane Shape* as a *preludium* unto, and a signification of his future *personal Assumption* of our Nature. No such thing being intended by the Holy Ghost, he might represent himself under what shape he pleased. Yea the Representation of himself under an *humane shape* had been dangerous and unsafe for us. For it would have taken off the Use of those *instructive Appearances* under the *Old Testament*, teaching the *Incarnation* of the *Son of God*; and also that sole Reason of such Appearances being removed, namely that they had all respect unto the *Incarnation of the Second Person*, as they would have been by the like appearance of the *Third*, there would have been danger of giving a *false Idea* of the Deity unto the Minds of Men. For some might from thence have conceived that God had a *bodily shape* like unto us, when none could ever be so fond as to imagine him to be like a *Dove*. And these with the like Testimonies in general are given unto the *Divine Personality* of the Holy Spirit. I shall next consider those *Personal Properties* which are particularly and distinctly ascribed unto him.

First; *Understanding or Wisdom*, which is the first inseparable Property of an Intelligent Subsistence, is so ascribed unto him in the Acts and Effects of it; 1 Cor. 2. 10. *The Spirit searcheth all things, even the deep things of God*. What Spirit it is that is intended is declared expressly, v. 12. *For we have not received τὸ πνεῦμα τῷ νόμῳ the Spirit of the World* are not acted by the Evil Spirit, ἀλλὰ τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἐκ τοῦ θεοῦ, but that Spirit which is of God, a signal Description of the Holy Ghost. So he is called his Spirit ver. 10. God hath revealed these things unto us by his Spirit. Now to search is an Act of Understanding. And the Spirit is said to search, because he knoweth, v. 11. *No man knoweth the things of a Man save the Spirit of a Man*; which is intimate unto all its own Thoughts and Counsels. So the Things of God knoweth no Man but the Spirit of God; and by him are they revealed unto us, for by him we know the things that are freely given us of God, v. 12. These things cannot be spoken of any but a Person endued with Understanding. And he thus searcheth τὰ ἐκ δεῦρος the deep things of God; that is the Mysteries of his Will, Counsel, and Grace; and is therefore a Divine Person that hath an Infinite Understanding. As it is said of God, מִן חֵקֶר לֵבְבוֹתָו, Isa. 40. 28. *There is no End, Measure, or Investigation of his Understanding*, Psal. 147. 5. *There is no number of his Understanding*; it is endless, boundless, infinite. It is excepted (*Schlichting. de Trinitat. p. 605.*) that the Spirit is not here taken for the Spirit himself, nor doth the Apostle express what the Spirit himself doth, but what

SECT. 19.

what by the Assistance of the Holy Ghost men are enabled to do. By that Believers are helped to search into the deep Counsels of God. But as this Exception is directly against the words of the Text, so the context will by no means admit of it. For the Apostle giveth an account how the Wisdom, Counsels, and deep things of God, which the World could not understand, were now preached and declared unto the Church. God, saith he, hath revealed them unto us by the Spirit. But how cometh the Spirit himself the Author of these Revelations to be acquainted with these things? This he hath from his own Nature, whereby he knoweth or searcheth all things, even the deep things of God. It is therefore the Revelation made by the Spirit unto the Apostles and Penmen of the Scripture of the New Testament, who were acted by the Holy Ghost in like manner as were the Holy Men of old, 1 Pet. 1. 21. which the Apostle intendeth, and not the Illumination and Teaching of Believers in the knowledge of the Mysteries by them revealed, whereof the Apostle treateth in these words. But who is this Spirit? The same Apostle tells us, that the Judgments of God are unsearchable, and his wayes past finding out, Rom. 11. 33. And asketh who hath known the mind of the Lord, or who hath been his Counsellor? v. 34. And yet this Spirit is said to search all things, even the deep things of God; such as to all Creatures are absolutely unsearchable and past finding out. This then is the Spirit of God himself, who is God also. For so it is in the Prophet from whence these words are taken. Who hath directed the Spirit of the Lord, or being his Counsellor hath taught him? Isa. 40. 13.

It will not relieve the Adversaries of the Holy Ghost, though it be pleaded by them, that he is compared with and opposed unto the spirit of a Man, v. 11. which they say is no Person. For no Comparisons hold in all Circumstances. The Spirit of a Man is his Rational Soul endued with Understanding and Knowledg. This is an individual intelligent Substance, capable of a subsistence in a separate Condition. Grant the Spirit of God to be so far a Person, and all their Pretences fall to the ground. And whereas it is affirmed by one among our selves, though otherwise asserting the Deity of the Holy Ghost, (Good. p. 175.) that this Expresssion of searching the things of God, cannot be applied directly to the Spirit, but must intend his enabling us to search into them, because to search includes imperfection, and the use of means to come to the knowledg of any thing; it is not of weight in this matter. For such Acts are ascribed unto God with respect unto their Effects. And searching being with us the means of attaining the perfect knowledg of any thing, the perfection of the knowledg of God is expressed thereby. So David prays that God would search him and know his heart, Psal. 139. 23. And he is often said to search the hearts of men, whereby his infinite Wisdom is intimated, whereunto all things are open and naked. So is the Spirit said to search the deep things of God, because of his infinite Understanding, and the perfection of his Knowledg, before which they lie open. And as things are here spoken of the Spirit in reference unto God the Father; so are they spoken of him, in reference unto the Spirit. Rom. 8. 27. He that searcheth the Hearts, knoweth the Mind of the Spirit. Add hereunto that this Spirit is the Author of Wisdom and Understanding in and unto others; and therefore he must have them in himself, and that not virtually or causally onely, but formally also. 1 Cor. 12. 8. Wisdom
and

and Knowledge are reckoned among the Gifts bestowed by him. For those of Faith and Tongues it is enough that they are in him *virtually*. But for Wisdom and Understanding, they cannot be given by any but he that is wise and understandeth what he doth. And hence is he called expressly a *Spirit of Wisdom and Understanding, of Counsel and Knowledge*, Isa. 11. 3. I might confirm this by other Testimonies where other Effects of Understanding are ascribed unto him; as 1 Tim. 4. 1. 1 Pet. 1. 11. 2 Pet. 1. 21. but what hath been spoken is sufficient unto our purpose.

Secondly; A *Will* is ascribed unto him. This is the most eminently distinguishing Character and Property of a Person. Whatever is endued with an *intelligent Will* is a Person. And it cannot by any Fiction with any tolerable congruity be ascribed unto any thing else, unless the Reason of the *Metaphor* be plain and obvious. So when our Saviour sayes of the *Wind* that it bloweth *ὅπως θέλει*, as it willeth or listeth, Joh. 3. 8. the abuse of the Word is evident. All intended is, that the *Wind* as unto us is *ἀνευπρόσβουτος*, and not at all at our disposal; acts not by our Guidance or Direction. And no Man is so foolish as not to apprehend the meaning of it, or once to enquire whether our Saviour doth properly ascribe a *Will* to the Wind or no. So James, Chap. 3. v. 4. The words rendred by us, *turned about with a very small Helm, whithersoever the Governour listeth*, are in the Original, *ὅπως ἂν ἡ ὀρμηὶ τῇ ἐν δυνάμει βέλεται*, in which the act of *Willing* is ascribed to the *ὀρμηὶ*, the *impetus* or *inclination* of the Governour; which yet hath not a *Will*. But the *ἰσχυρὴ* in that place is not the *πρώτη κίνησις* of the *Philosophers*; the *motus primo-primus* or the first Agitation or Inclination of the Mind; but it is the *Will* it self under an earnest Inclination, such as is usual with them who govern Ships by the *Helms* in Storms. Hereunto the Act of *Willing* is properly ascribed, and he in whom it is proved to be a Person. Thus a *Will* acting with Understanding and Choice, as the Principle and Cause of his outward Actions is ascribed unto the Holy Ghost, 1 Cor. 12. 11. *All these things worketh that one and self-same Spirit dividing unto every Man as he will*. He had before asserted that he was the Author and Donor of all the Spiritual Gifts which he had been discoursing about, v. 4, 5, 6. These Gifts he declares to be various, as he manifests in nine Instances, and all variously disposed of by him, v. 8, 9, 10. If now it be enquired what is the Rule of this his distribution of them, he tells us that it is his *own Will*, his Choice and Pleasure. What can be spoken more fully and plainly to describe an *intelligent Person*, acting voluntarily with freedom and by choice I know not.

We may consider what is excepted hereunto. They say (*Schlichting*. SECT. 21. p. 610.) that the Holy Ghost is here introduced as a Person by a *Prosopopeia*; that the distribution of the Gifts mentioned is ascribed unto him by a *Metaphor*; and by the same or another *Metaphor*, he is said to have a *Will* or to act as he will. But is it not evident that if this course of interpreting or rather of perverting Scripture may be allowed; nothing of any certainty will be left unto us therein. It is but saying this or that is a *Metaphor*, and if one will not serve the turn, to bring in two or three one on the neck of another and the work is done, the Sense intended is quite changed and lost. Allow this Liberty or bold Licentiousness,

58 *Divine Nature and Personality of the Book 1.*

ousness, and you may overthrow the Being of God himself and the Mediation of Christ, as to any Testimony given unto them in the Scripture. But the words are plain, *He divideth to every one as he will.* And for the confirmation of his *Deity*, though that be out of question on the supposition of his *Personality*, I shall only add from this place, that he who hath the *sovereign disposal* of all Spiritual Gifts; having only his *own Will* which is infinitely Wise and Holy, for his *Rule*, He is over all *God blessed for ever.*

SECT. 22. Thirdly ; Another Property of a living Person is Power. A Power whereby any one is able to act according to the guidance of his Understanding and the determinations of his Will; declares him to be a Person. It is not the meer ascription of *Power absolutely*, or *ability* unto any thing that I intend. For they may signifie no more but the Efficacy wherewith such things are attended in their proper places, as *Instruments* of the Effects whereunto they are applyed. In this sense *Power* is ascribed to the Word of God, when it is said, *to be able to save our Souls*, Jam. 1. 21. And Acts 20. 32. *The Word of God's Grace* is said to be *able to build us up, and to give us an Inheritance among them that are sanctified*; if that place intend the Word written or preached, wherinto I have made enquiry elsewhere. For these things are clearly interpreted in other places. The Word is said to be *able*, yea to be the *Power of God unto Salvation*, Rom. 1. 16. because God is pleased to *use* it and make it effectual by his Grace unto that End. But where Power, *Divine Power* is absolutely ascribed unto any one, and that declared to be put forth and exercised by the *Understanding*, and according to the *Will* of him to whom it is so ascribed, it doth undeniably prove him to be a *Divine Person*. For when we say the Holy Ghost is so, we intend no more but that he is one who by his *own Divine Understanding*, puts forth his *own Divine Power*. So is it in this Case, Job 32. 4. *The Spirit of God hath made me, and the Breath of the Almighty hath given me Life.* Creation is an *Act* of Divine Power; the highest we are capable to receive any Notion of. And it is also an Effect of the *Wisdom* and *Will* of him that createth, as being a voluntary act and designed unto a certain end. All these therefore are here ascribed to the *Spirit of God*. It is excepted (*Schlicting*. p. 613, 615.) that by the *Spirit of God here mentioned*, no more is intended but our own vital Spirits, whereby we are quickned, called the *Spirit of God* because he gave it. But this is too much confidence; The words are רוח אלהים עשתי ושמתי שרי רוחי. There were two distinct *Divine Operations* in and about the Creation of Man. The first was the *forming* of his *Body* out of the Dust of the Earth; This is expressed by יצר and עשה; He made he formed: and secondly, the infusion of a living or quickning *Soul* into him, called נשמת חיים or the *Breath of Life*. Both these are here distinctly mentioned; the first ascribed to the *Spirit* of God, the other to his *Breath*; that is the same Spirit considered in a peculiar way of operation in the *Infusion* of the rational Soul. Such is the sense of those figurative and *anigmatical* words; *God breathed into Man the Breath of Life*; that is by his Spirit he effected a Principle of Life in him, as we shall see afterwards.

Iſa. 11. 2. As he is called a Spirit of Wisdom and Understanding, ſo is he alſo of *Might or Power*; and although it may be granted that the things there mentioned are rather *Effects* of his Operations than *Ad-juncts* of his Nature; yet he who effecteth Wiſdom and Power in others, muſt firſt have them himſelf. To this purpoſe alſo is that demand, *Micah. 2. 7.* *Is the Spirit of the Lord ſtrained or ſhortned*; that is, in his Power, that he cannot Work and Operate in the Prophets and his Church as in former dayes; And the ſame Prophet, *Chap. 3. verſ. 8.* affirms, That he is *full of Power, and of Judgment, and of Might, by the Spirit of the Lord.* Theſe things were wrought in him by his Power, as the *Apoſtle* ſpeaks to the ſame purpoſe, *Ephes. 3. 16.*

Thoſe by whom this Truth is oppoſed, do lay out all their ſtrength and ſkill in *Exceptions*, I may ſay *Cavils*, againſt ſome of theſe particular Teſtimonies and ſome Expreſſions in them. But as to the whole *Argument* taken from the conſideration of the Deſign and Scope of the Scripture in them all they have nothing to except.

To compleat this *Argument*, I ſhall add the Conſideration of thoſe *Works and Operations* of all ſorts which are aſcribed to the Spirit of God, which we ſhall find to be ſuch as are not capable of an *affignation* unto him with the leaſt congruity of Speech, or deſign of ſpeaking intelligibly, unleſs he be a diſtinct ſingular Subſiſtent, or *Perſon* endued with Divine Power and Understanding. And here what we deſired formerly might be obſerved muſt be again repeated. It is not from a *ſingle Inſtance* of every one of the Works which we ſhall mention that we draw and confirm our *Argument*. For ſome of them ſingly conſidered may perhaps ſometimes be *metaphorically* aſcribed unto other Cauſes, which doth not prove that therefore they are Perſons alſo; which contains the force of *all the Exceptions* of our Adverſaries againſt theſe Teſtimonies. But as ſome of them at leaſt never are nor can be aſſigned unto any but a Divine Perſon; So we take our *Argument* from their joint conſideration, or the uniform conſtant Affignation of them all unto him in the Scriptures, which renders it *irrefragable*. For the things themſelves I ſhall not inſiſt upon them becauſe their particular *Nature* muſt be afterwards unfolded.

Fiſt; He is ſaid to *teach us*, *Luk. 12. 12.* *The Holy Ghoſt ſhall teach you what you ought to ſay*, *John 14. 26.* *The Comforter which is the Holy Ghoſt whom the Father will ſend in my Name, he ſhall teach you all things, and bring all things to remembrance*, *1 John 2. 27.* He is the *Unction which teacheth us all things*; how and whence he is ſo called ſhall be afterwards declared. He is the great Teacher of the Church, unto whom the accompliſhment of that great Promiſe is committed; and they ſhall be all taught of God, *John 6. 45.* It is ſad with the Church of God when Her Teachers are removed into a Corner, and Her Eyes ſee them not. But better loſe all other Teachers and that utterly, than to loſe this great Teacher only. For although he is pleaſed to make uſe of them, He can teach effectually and ſavingly without them where they are removed and taken away; but they cannot teach without him unto the leaſt Spiritual Advantage. And thoſe who pretend to be Teachers of others; and yet

60 *Divine Nature and Personality of the Book.I.*

despise his *teaching Assistance*, will one day find that they undertook a Work which was none of theirs. But as unto our use of this *Affertion* it is excepted, that the *Apostle* affirms, that *Nature also teacheth us*, 1 Cor. 11. 14. *Doth not even Nature it self teach you?* Now Nature is not a Person. This is the way and manner of them with whom we have to do. If any word in a *Testimony* produced by us have been any where used *metaphorically*, though it be never so evident that it is so used in that place, instantly it must have the same *figurative Application* in the *Testimony* excepted against, although they can give no Reason why it should so signifie. And if this course of *excepting* be allowed, there will be nothing left intelligible in the Scripture nor in any other *Author*, nor in common Conversation in the World. For there is scarce any Word or Name of thing but one where or other is or hath been abused or used *Metaphorically*. In particular, *Nature* in this place of the *Apostle* is said to teach us *objectively*, as the Heavens and Earth teach us in what we learn from them. For it is said to teach us what we may learn from the customs and actings of them, who live proceed and act according to the Principles Dictates and Inclinations of it. Every one sees that here is no intimation of an *active teaching* by Instruction or a real Communication of Knowledg; but it is said *figuratively* to do what we do with respect unto it. And not only in several places, but in the same Sentence a word may be used properly with respect unto one thing, and *abusively* with respect unto another. As in that saying of the Poet;

*Disce puer virtutem ex me, verumque laborem;
Fortunam ex aliis.*

For *Virtue* and *Industry* are to be learned properly; but *Fortune*, as they called it, or prosperous Events are not so. These things therefore are very different, and their difference is obvious unto all. But we insist not merely on *this* or *that* particular Instance. Let any Man not absolutely prepossessed with prejudice, read over that Discourse of our Saviour unto his Disciples, wherein he purposely instructs them in the *Nature* and *Work* of the *Spirit of God*, on whom as it were he then devolved the care of them and the Gospel according unto the Promise *John* 14, 15, 16, *Chap.* and he will need no farther Instruction or Confirmation in this Matter. He is there frequently called the *Comforter*, the Name of a Person, and that vested with an *Office*, with respect unto the Work that he would do; and another *Comforter* in answer and conformity unto the Lord Christ who was one *Comforter* and a Person as all grant, *Chap.* 14. 16. If he be not so, the intention of this Expression with these Circumstances, must be to *deceive* us and not instruct us. He tells them moreover that he is *one* whom the *World* neither sees nor knows, but who abideth with and dwelleth in Believers, v. 17. One whom the Father would send, and who would come accordingly; and that to teach them, to lead and guide them, and to bring things to their remembrance, v. 26. A *Comforter* that should come and testifie or bear witness unto him, *Chap.* 15. 26. One that should be sent of Him to reprove the *World* of Sin, Righteousness, and Judgment, *Chap.* 16. 7, 8. and abide with his Disciples to supply his own bodily absence. So is he said to *Speak, Guide, Teach, Hear, to receive* of Christ and to *show* it unto others, v. 13, 14.

Chap. 3. *Holy Spirit Proved and Vindicated.*

81

v. 13, 14. with sundry other things of the same Nature and Importance. And these things are not spoken of him *occasionally* or in *transitu*, but in a direct continued Discourse, designed on purpose by our Lord Jesus Christ, to acquaint his Disciples *who* he was, and *what* he would do for them. And if there were nothing spoken of him in the whole Scripture but what is here declared by our Saviour, all *unprejudiced Men* must and would acknowledg him to be a *Divine Person*. And it is a confidence swelling above all bounds of Modesty, to suppose that because *one* or *other* of these things are or may be *Metaphorically* or *Metaleptically* ascribed unto this or that thing which are not Persons; when the *figurativeness* of such an Ascription is plain and open; that therefore they are all of them in like manner so ascribed unto the Holy Ghost in that Discourse of our Saviour unto his Disciples, wherein he designed the Instruction of them as above declared. Of the same Nature is that which we discoursed before concerning his *searching of all things*, from 1 Cor. 2. 11. which as it proves him to be an *understanding Agent*, so it undeniably denotes a *Personal Action*. Such also are the things mentioned; Rom. 8. 15, 16, 26. He *helpeth our Infirmities*, he *maketh intercession for us*, He himself *beareth witness* with our Spirits; the particular meaning of all which Expressions shall be afterwards enquired into. Here the only refuge of our *Adversaries* is to cry up a *Prosopopæia*, (*Schlicting*. p. 627.) But how do they prove it? Only by saying that these things *belong properly to a Person which the Spirit is not*: Now this is nothing but to set up their own false *Hypothesis* against our Arguments, and not being able to contend with the Premises to deny the *Conclusion*.

There are two other places of this Nature both to the same purpose SECT. 26. sufficient of themselves to confirm our Faith in the Truth pleaded for. And these are *Acts* 13. 2, 4. *As they ministered unto the Lord and fasted, the Holy Ghost said, separate me Barnabas and Saul for the Work whereunto I have called them. So they being sent forth by the Holy Ghost departed.* The other is *Acts* 20. 28. *Take heed therefore unto your selves, and to all the Flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you Overseers.* These places hold a good correspondence; and what is reported in an extraordinary case as matter of Fact in the first, is doctrinally applied unto ordinary Cases in the latter. And two things are remarkable in the first Place. (1.) The Holy Ghost's designation of *Himself* as the Person unto whom and whose Work Barnabas and Saul were to be separated and dedicated. Saith he *ἀποστείλας με*, not, *separate me*, as in our Translation, making the Spirit onely the *Author* of the Command, but *separate unto me*; which proposeth him also as the *Object* of the Duty required, and the Person whose Work was to be attended. *Who* or *what* then is intended by that Pronoun *Me*? Some Person is directed unto and signified thereby. Nor can any Instance be given where it is so much as *figuratively* used, unless it be in a professed *Parable*. That remains therefore to be enquired into, *Who* is intended in that word *Me*? And the words are the words of the Holy Ghost; *The Holy Ghost said separate unto me*; He therefore alone is intended. All the Answer which the Wit and Diligence of our *Adversaries* can invent is, That these words are ascribed unto the Holy Ghost, because the Prophets that were in the Church of Antioch spake therein by his *Instinct* and *Inspiration*. But in this Eva-

sion there is no regard unto the force of our Argument ; for we do not argue meerly from his being said to *speake* but from *what is spoken* by him, *separate unto me*, and do enquire whether the Prophets be intended by that word or no ? If so, which of them ? for they were *many* by whom the Holy Ghost spake the same thing ; and some *one* must be intended in common by them all. And to say that this was *any of the Prophets* is foolish, indeed blasphemous. (2.) The close of the third Verse confirms this application of the Word, *to the Work whereunto I have called them*. This confessedly is the *Holy Ghost*. Now to call Men to the Ministry is a free *Act of Authority* Choice and Wisdom, which are Properties of a Person and none other. Nor is either the Father or the Son in the Scripture introduced more directly clothed with *Personal Properties* than the Holy Ghost is in these places. And the whole is confirmed *vers. 4.* *And they being sent forth by the Holy Ghost, departed.* He called them by furnishing them with *Ability* and *Authority* for their work ; he commanded them to be set apart by the Church, that they might be blessed and owned in their Work ; and he sent them forth by an impression of his Authority on their Minds given them by those former *Acts* of his. And if a Divine Person be not hereby described, I know not how he may so be.

SECT. 27. The other Text speaks unto the same purpose, *Chap. 20. 28.* It is expressly said that the *Holy Ghost* made the *Elders of the Church* the *Overseers of it*. The same *Act of Wisdom and Authority* is here again assigned unto him ; and here is no room left for the Evasion before insisted on. For these words were not spoken in a way of Prophecie, nor in the *Name* of the Holy Ghost, but *concerning him*. And they are *Explicatory* of the other. For he must be meant in those Expressions, *separate unto Me those whom I have called*, by whom they are made *Ministers*. Now this was the Holy Ghost, for he makes the *Overseers* of the Church. And we may do well to take notice, that if he did so then he doth so now ; for they were not Persons *extraordinarily inspired* or called that the *Apostle* intends, but the ordinary Officers of the Church. And if Persons are not called and constituted Officers as at the first in *ordinary Cases*, the Church is not the same as it was. And it is the Concernment of those who take this Work and Office upon them, to consider what there is in their *whole Undertaking* that they can ascribe unto the Holy Ghost. Persons furnished with *no Spiritual Gifts or Abilities*, entering into the Ministry in the pursuit of *Secular Advantages*, will not easily satisfie themselves in this Enquiry, when they shall be *willing*, or be forced at the last to make it.

SECT. 28. There remains yet *one sort of Testimonies* to the same purpose which must briefly be passed through. And they are those where he is spoken of as the *Object* of such *Actings and Actions* of Men as none but a *Person* can be. For let them be applied unto any other *Object* and their Inconsistency will quickly appear. Thus he is said to be *tempted* of them that sin. *You agree together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord*, *Acts 5. 9.* In what sense soever this word is used, whether in that which is indifferent to try, as God is said to *tempt Abraham*, or in that which is *evil*, to *provoke* or *induce to sin*, it never is, it never can be used but with respect unto

unto a Person. How can a *Quality*, an *Accident*, an *Emanation of Power* from God be tempted? None can possibly be so but *he* that hath an *Understanding* to consider what is proposed unto him, and a *Will* to determine upon the Proposals made. So *Satan* tempted our first Parents; so Men are tempted by their own Lusts; so are we said to *tempt* God when we provoke him by our Unbelief, or when we unwarrantably make Experiments of his Power. So did they *tempt the Holy Ghost*, who sinfully ventured on his *Omniscience* as if he would not or could not discover their sin; or on his *Holiness*, that he would patronize their Deceit. In like manner *Ananias* is said to *lie to the Holy Ghost*, vers. 3. And none is capable of *lying* unto any other but such a one as is capable of *hearing* and *receiving* a Testimony. For a *Lie* is a false Testimony given unto that which is spoken or uttered in it. This *He* that is *lied unto*, must be capable of judging and determining upon, which without *Personal Properties* of Will and Understanding none can be. And the Holy Ghost is here so declared to be a Person, as that he is declared to be One that is also Divine. For so the *Apostle Peter* declares in the Exposition of the words, v. 4. *Thou hast not lied unto Men but unto God.* These things are so plain and positive, that the Faith of Believers will not be concerned in the *Sophistical Evasions* of our *Adversaries*. In like manner he is said to be *resisted*, *Acts* 7. 51. which is the moral *Re-acti- on* or Opposition of one Person unto another. So also is he said to be *grieved*, or we are commanded not to *grieve him*, *Ephes.* 4. 30. as they of old were said to have *rebelled and vexed the Holy Spirit of God*, *Isa.* 63. 10. A figurative Expression is allowed in these words. Properly the Spirit of God cannot be *grieved* or *vexed*; for these things include such Imperfections as are incompetent unto the Divine Nature. But as God is said to *repent* and to be *grieved* at his heart, *Gen.* 6. 6. when he would do things correspondent unto those which Men will do, or judge fit to be done on such Provocations; and when he would declare what Effects they would produce in a *Nature* capable of such perturbations; So on the same Reason is the Spirit of God said to be *grieved* and *vexed*. But this can no way be spoken of him, if he be not *one* whose respect unto sin may from the *Analogie* unto humane Persons, be represented by this figurative Expression. To talk of grieving a *Vertue*, or an *actual Emanation of Power*, is to speak that which no Man can understand the Meaning or Intention of. Surely *He* that is thus *tempted resisted and grieved* by Sin and Sinners, is one that can *understand* judge and *determine* concerning them. And these things being elsewhere absolutely spoken concerning God, it declares that he is so, with respect unto whom they are mentioned in particular.

The whole of the Truth contended for is yet more evident in that *SECT. 24.* Discourse of our Saviour, *Matth.* 12. 24. The Pharisees said, *He doth not cast out Devils but by Beelzebub the Prince of Devils*, v. 28. *If I cast out Devils by the Spirit of God, then the Kingdom of God is come unto you*, v. 31, 32. *Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of Sin and Blasphemy shall be forgiven unto Men, but the Blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto Men; And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him; but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him.* To the same purpose see *Luk.* 12. 8;

64 *Divine Nature and Personality of the* Book I.

9, 10. The Spirit is here expressly distinguished from the Son, as one Person from another. They are both spoken of with respect unto the same things in the same manner; and the things mentioned are spoken concerning them *universally* in the same sense. Now if the Holy Ghost were only the *Virtue* and *Power of God* then present with Jesus Christ in all that he did, Christ and that Power could not be distinctly spoken against for they were but one and the same. The *Pharisees* blasphemed, saying, *That he cast out Devils by Beelzebub the Prince of Devils*. A Person they intended, and so expressed him by his *Name Nature and Office*. To which our Saviour replies, that he cast them out by the *Spirit of God*; A Divine Person opposed to him who is *Diabolical*. Hereunto he immediately subjoins his Instruction and Caution, that they should take heed how they blasphemed that Holy Spirit, by assigning his Effects and Works to the Prince of Devils. And *blasphemy* against him directly manifests both what and who He is; especially such a *peculiar blasphemy* as carrieth an aggravation of Guilt along with it, above all that Humane Nature in any other Instance is capable of. It is supposed that *blasphemy* may be against the Person of the *Father*. So was it in him who blasphemed the Name of *Jehovah* and cursed by it, *Levit. 24. 11*. The Son as to his distinct Person may be blasphemed, so it is said here expressly; and thereon it is added that the Holy Ghost also may be *distinctly blasphemed*, or be the immediate Object of that Sin which is declared to be inexpressible. To suppose now that this Holy Ghost is not a *Divine Person*, is for Men to dream whilst they seem to be awake.

SECT. 30. I suppose by all these Testimonies we have fully confirmed what was designed to be proved by them; namely, that the Holy Spirit is *not a Quality* as some speak residing in the Divine Nature; not a meer *Emanation* of Vertue and Power from God; not the acting of the Power of God in and unto our Sanctification, but an *Holy Intelligent Subsistent* or Person. And in our Passage many Instances have been given, whence it is undeniably evident that he is a *Divine Self-sufficient Self-subsisting* Person, together with the Father and the Son equally participant of the Divine Nature. Nor is this distinctly much disputed by them with whom we have to do. For they confess that such things are ascribed unto him as none but God can effect. Wherefore denying him so to be, they lay up all their hopes of *success* in denying him to be a *Person*; But yet because the Subject we are upon doth require it, and it may be useful to the Faith of *some*; I will call over a few Testimonies given expressly unto his Deity also.

SECT. 31. First; He is expressly called *God*; and having the *Name* of God properly and directly given unto him, with respect unto Spiritual Things, or things peculiar unto God, he must have the *Nature* of God also, *Acts 5. 3*. *Ananias* is said to *lie to the Holy Ghost*. This is repeated and interpreted *v. 4*. *Thou hast not lyed unto Men but unto God*. The Declaration of the *Person* intended by the Holy Ghost, is added for the aggravation of the Sin, for he is God. The same *Person*, the same Object of the sin of *Ananias* is expressed in both places; and therefore the Holy Ghost is God. The word for *lying* is the same in both places; *ψευδμας* only it is used in a various construction; *v. 3*. It hath the *Accusative Case* joyned

Chap.3. *Holy Spirit Proved and Vindicated.* 65

joyned unto it; *ἡ ἐξουσία σου οὐκ ἐστὶν πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον*; that thou shouldest deceive, or think to deceive or attempt to deceive the *Holy Ghost*: How? by *lying unto him* in making a Profession in the Church wherein he presides of that which is false. This is explained v. 4. by *ἡ ἐξουσία σου οὐκ ἐστὶν*, thou hast lyed unto God; the Nature of his Sin being principally intended in the first place, and the Object in the latter. Wherefore in the progress of his *Discourse*, the Apostle calls the same sin a *tempting of the Spirit of the Lord*, vers. 9. It was the Spirit of the Lord that he lyed unto when he lyed unto God. These three Expressions the *Holy Ghost*, *God*, the *Spirit of the Lord* do denote the same thing and *Persons*, or there is no coherence in the *Discourse*. It is excepted that what is done against the Spirit is done against God, because he is sent by God. It is true, as he is sent by the Father, what is done against him is morally and as to the Guilt of it done against the Father. And so our Saviour tells us with respect unto what was done against himself. For saith he, *He that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me*. But directly and immediately both Christ and the Spirit were sinned against in their own *Persons*. He is God here provoked. So also He is called *Lord* in a sense appropriate unto God alone; 2 Cor. 3. 17, 18. *Now the Lord is that Spirit*; and we are changed from Glory to Glory, *ἀπὸ δόξης πνεύματος*, by the *Lord the Spirit*, or the Spirit of the Lord; where also Divine Operations are ascribed unto him. What is affirmed to this purpose; 1 Cor. 12. 6, 7, 8. hath been observed in the opening of the beginning of that Chapter at the beginning of our *Discourse*. The same also is drawn by just Consequence from the comparing of Scriptures together, wherein what is spoken of God absolutely in one place is applyed directly and immediately unto the Holy Ghost in another. To instance in one or two particulars. *Levit. 26. 11, 12. I will, saith God, set my Tabernacle amongst you; and I will walk amongst you, and will be your God, and ye shall be my People.* The accomplishment of this Promise the Apostle declares, 2 Cor. 6. 16. *Ye are the Temple of the Living God, as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk amongst them, and I will be their God, and they shall be my People.* How and by whom is this done? 1 Cor. 3. 16, 17. *Know ye not that ye are the Temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? If any Man defile the Temple of God, him will God destroy, for the Temple of God is Holy, which ye are.* If it were then God who of old promised to dwell in his People and to make them his Temple thereby, then is the Holy Spirit God; for he it is, who according to that Promise thus dwelleth in them. So *Deut. 32. 12.* speaking of the People in the Wilderness, he saith, *The Lord alone did lead him*; And yet speaking of the same People at the same time it is said, *That the Spirit of the Lord did lead them, and caused them to rest*, *Isa. 63. 14.* The Spirit of the Lord therefore is *Jehovah*, or *Jehovah* alone did not lead them. That also which is called in the same People their *sinning against God*, and *provoking the most High in the Wilderness*, *Psal. 78. 17, 18.* is termed their *rebelling against*, and *vexing the Holy Spirit*, *Isa. 63. 10, 11.* And many other Instances of an alike Nature have been pleaded and vindicated by others.

Add hereunto in the last place, that Divine Properties are assigned un-

SECT. 32.
to

K

68 *Divine Nature and Personality of the* Book 1.

to him. As *Eternity*; Heb. 9. 14. He is the *Eternal Spirit*. *Immutability*, Psalms. 139. 7. *Whither shall I flee from thy Spirit*. *Omnipaten-
cy*, Micah 2. 8. The Spirit of the Lord is not straitned; compared with
Isa. 40. 28. The Power of the Spirit of God; Rom. 15. 19. *Presci-
ence*, Acts 1. 16. This Scripture must be fulfilled which the *Holy Ghost*
by the Mouth of David spake before concerning Judas. *Omniscience*;
1 Cor. 2. 10, 11. The Spirit searcheth all things, even the deep things
of God. *Sovereign Authority* over the Church, Acts 13. 3. Acts 20.
28. The Divine Works also which are assigned unto him, are usual-
ly and to good purpose pleaded in the vindication of the same Truth.
But these in the progress of our Discourse I shall have occasion dis-
tinctly to consider and inquire into, and therefore shall not in this
place insist upon them. What hath been proposed cleared and con-
firmed may suffice as unto our present purpose; that we may know
who He is, concerning whom, his Works and Grace, we do design to
Treat.

SECT. 33. I have but one thing more to add concerning the *Being* and *Persona-
lity* of the Holy Spirit. And this is that in the *Order of Subsistence* He
is the *Third Person* in the Holy Trinity. So it is expressed in the solemn
Numeration of them, where their *Order* gives great direction unto Go-
spel-Worship and Obedience; Matth. 28. 18. *Baptizing them in the
Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost*. This Or-
der I confess in their Numeration, because of the Equality of the Per-
sons in the same Nature is sometimes varied. So Rev. 1. 4, 5. *Grace
be unto you, and Peace, from him which is, and which was, and which is
to come, and from the seven Spirits which are before his Throne, and from
Jesus Christ*. The Holy Spirit under the name of the *seven Spirits* be-
fore the Throne of God, because of his various and perfect Operations
in and towards the Church, is reckoned up in order before the Son Je-
sus Christ. And so in *Paul's* *epistolical* conclusion unto his Epistles, the
Son is placed before the Father: 2 Cor. 13. 14. *The Grace of the Lord
Jesus Christ, and the Love of God, and the Communion of the Holy Ghost
be with you all*. And some think that the Holy Ghost is mentioned in
the first place: Col. 2. 2. *The acknowledgment of the Mystery of God,
and of the Father, and of Christ*. In this expression of them therefore
we may use our liberty, they being all *one God* over all blessed for ever.
But in their true and natural *Order of Subsistence*, and consequently of
Operation, the *Holy Spirit* is the *Third Person*. For as to his Personal
Subsistence, he *proceedeth from the Father and the Son*, being equally
the Spirit of them both as hath been declared. This constitutes the *na-
tural Order* between the Persons which is unalterable. On this depends
the Order of his Operation; for his working is a consequent of the Or-
der of his Subsistence. Thus the Father is said to *send him*, and so is
the Son also, John 14. 16, 26. Chap. 16. 7. And he is thus said to
be *sent by the Father and the Son*, because he is the Spirit of the Father
and Son, proceeding from both, and is the next cause in the Applicati-
on of the Trinity unto *External Works*. But as he is thus sent, so his
own Will is equally in and unto the Work for which he is sent. As the
Father is said to *send the Son*, and yet it was also his own Love and
Grace

Grace to *come* unto us and to save us. And this ariseth from hence, that in the whole *Oeconomy of the Trinity*, as to the Works that outwardly are of God, especially the Works of Grace, the order of the *Subsistence of the Persons in the same Nature is represented unto us*, and they have the same dependance on each other in their *Operations* as they have in their *Subsistence*. The Father is the Fountain of all, as in Being and Existence so in Operation. The Son is of the Father, begotten of him, and therefore as unto his Work is *sent* by him. But his own Will is *in and unto what he is sent about*. The Holy Spirit *proceedeth from the Father and the Son*, and therefore is *sent and given by them* as to all the Works which he immediately effecteth; but yet his own Will is the direct Principle of all that he doth. He divideth unto every one according to *his own Will*. And thus much may suffice to be spoken about the Being of the Holy Spirit, and the order of his Subsistence in the Blessed Trinity.

K 2

Peculiar



Peculiar Works of the HOLY SPIRIT in the First or Old Creation,

C H A P. IV.

- (1.) Things to be observed in Divine Operations. The Works of God, how ascribed absolutely unto God, and how distinctly to each Person. (2.) The Reason hereof. (3.) Perfecting Acts in Divine Works ascribed unto the Holy Spirit and why. (4, 5.) Peculiar Works of the Spirit with respect unto the Old Creation. (6.) The Parts of the Old Creation. Heaven and its Host. What the Host of Heaven. The Host of the Earth. (7.) The Host of Heaven compleated by the Spirit. (8.) And of the Earth. (9.) His moving on the Old Creation, Psal. 104. 30. (10.) The Creation of Man, the Work of the Spirit therein. (11, 12, 13, 14, 15.) The Work of the Spirit in the preservation of all things when created, Natural and Moral. (16.) Farther Instances thereof, in and out of the Church. (17.) Work of the Spirit of God in the Old Creation why sparingly delivered.

SECT. I.

Intending to treat of the Operations of the Holy Ghost or those which are peculiar unto him, some things must be premised concerning the Operation of the Godhead in general, and the manner thereof. And they are such as are needful to guide us in many Passages of the Scripture, and to direct us aright in the Things in particular which now lie before us. I say then (1.) that all Divine Operations are usually ascribed unto God absolutely. So it is said God made all things, and so of all other Works whether in Nature or in Grace. And the reason hereof is, because the several Persons are *individed* in their Operations, acting all by the *same Will*, the *same Wisdom*, the *same Power*. Every Person therefore is the Author of *every* Work of God, because each Person is God, and the Divine Nature is the same *individed* Principle of all Divine Operations. * And this ariseth from the Unity of the Persons in the same Essence. But as to the *manner of Subsistence* therein, there is Distinction Relation and Order between and among them. And hence there is no Divine Work but is *distinctly* assigned unto each Person

* μία ἀρετή
καὶ ἐκ τούτων,
ἢ τῆς τετρα-
σφῆς ἐνέργει-
ας ἀεικνύ-
ται. Οὐ γὰρ

ὡς παρ' ἐκείνης διάφορα, καὶ διηρημένα τὰ διδόμενα σημαίνει ὁ Ἀπόστολος. 'Αλλ' ὅτι τὰ διδόμενα ἐν τετραδὶ διδοται, καὶ τὰ πάντα ἐξ ἑνὸς Θεοῦ εἰσι. Athanas. Epistol. ad Serapionem.

μίαν ἐνέργειαν ὁρώμεν πατρὸς καὶ υἱοῦ, καὶ ἀγίου πνεύματος. Basil. Homil. 17. in Sanctum Baptisma. Ὡς αἱ αὐταὶ ἐνέργειαι τούτων καὶ εἶσα μία; ἐνέργεια ἡ υἱὸς καὶ πατὸς μία ὡς τὸ ποιῆσμεν ἀνθρώπον. καὶ πολλὰ; ἃ γὰρ ἂν ὁ πατὴρ ποιῇ, ταῦτα καὶ ὁ υἱὸς ὁμοίως ποιῇ. Ἀρετὴ καὶ εἶσα μία πατρὸς καὶ υἱοῦ. Idem advers. Eunom. lib. 4.

Quicquid de Spiritu Sancto diximus hoc similiter de Patre & Filio communiter & indivise volumus intelligi; quia sancta & inseparabilis Trinitas nunquam aliquid extra se sigillatim operari noverit. Ambros. in Symbol. Apost. c. 9.

and

and *eminently* unto one. So is it in the Works of the Old Creation and so in the New, and in all particulars of them. Thus the Creation of the World is distinctly ascribed to the *Father* as his Work, *Acts* 4. 24. And to the *Son* as his, *John* 1. 3. and also to the *Holy Spirit*, *Job* 33. 4. but by the way of *eminence* to the *Father*, and absolutely to *God*, who is *Father* *Son* and *Holy Spirit*.

The Reason therefore why the Works of *God* are thus *distinctly* ascribed unto *each Person*, is because in the *individed Operation* of the Divine Nature, each *Person* doth the same Work in the Order of their Subsistence; not one as the Instrument of the other or meerly employed by the other, but as one *common Principle* of Authority, Wisdom, Love, and Power. How come they then *eminently* to be assigned *one to one Person*, another to another? As unto the *Father* are assigned *Opera Natura*, the Works of Nature or the Old Creation; to the *Son*, *Opera Gratia procurata*, all Divine Operations that belong unto the recovery of Mankind by Grace; and unto the *Spirit*, *Opera Gratia applicata*, the Works of *God* whereby Grace is made effectual unto us. And this is done; (1.) * when any especial Impression is made of the *especial property* of any *Person* on any Work, then is that work assigned peculiarly to that *Person*. So there is of the *Power* and *Authority* of the *Father* on the Old Creation, and of the *Grace* and *Wisdom* of the *Son* on the New. (2.) Where there is a peculiar *condescension* of any *Person* unto a Work wherein the others have no concurrence but by *Approbation* and *Consent*. Such was the *susception* of the *Humane Nature* by the *Son* and all that he did therein. And such was the *Condescension* of the *Holy Ghost* also unto his *Office*, which intitles him peculiarly and by way of *Eminence* unto his own immediate Works.

* Πάντα τὰ θεοτεπὸς λεγόμενα ἔπ' ἡ ὑπερβολῇ τελείῃ καὶ ἐκείνῃ τῇ τελείῃ ὑποστάσει ἐξιδέσται, καὶ ἐναρμόζεται, πλὴν ἅ τὴν προαγωγὴν, τῶν ἡγῶν τὴν ὑποστατικὴν γνώσειν ἐμποδίζονται. Arethas, in Apocal. Commentar. cap. 1.

SECT. 3.

(2.) Whereas the Order of Operation among the Distinct Persons, depends on the Order * of their Subsistence in the Blessed Trinity in every great Work of *God*, the Concluding, Compleating, Perfecting Acts are ascribed unto the *Holy Ghost*. † This we shall find in all the Instances of them that will fall under our consideration. Hence the immediate workings of the *Spirit* are the most *hidden*, *curious*, and *mysterious*, as those which contain the perfecting part of the Works of *God*. Some seem willing to exclude all thoughts or mention of him from the Works of *God*; but indeed without him no part of any Work of *God* is perfect or compleat. ‖ The beginning of Divine Operations is assigned unto

Maxentium, cap. 14.

† Πᾶσα ἐνέργεια ἡ θεοθεν ἔπ' ἡν κτίσιν διήκοντα, καὶ κατὰ τὰς πολυτέρας ἐννοίας ὀνομαζομένην ὡς πατὴρ ἀφορμάται, καὶ διὰ τῆς ὑπὸς προέσει, καὶ ἐν τῷ πνεύματι τὰ ἀγία τελειοῦται. Gregor. Nyssen. ad Ablabium. Ἐν ᾗ τῇ τῶν (ἀγγέλων) κτίσει, ἐννόησον μοι τὴν προκαταρκτικὴν αἰτίαν; τῇ γινόμενῳ τὸν πατέρα, τὴν δημιουργικὴν τὴν υἱόν, τὴν τελειωτικὴν τὸ πνεῦμα. Basilus de Spirit. Sanc. cap. 16.

‖ Καὶ γὰρ διὰ μὲν τὴν παλαιὰς ὡς προκαταρκτικὴν τῇ ὅλῃ ὁπαιτῇ πρώτῳ κηρύσσεται. Κι δευτέρως ὁ υἱὸς ὡς δημιουργικὸν αἶτιον ἐμφανίζεται. Κι τρίτῳ ὡς τελειωτικὸν τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον. Τὰ τελειωτικά γὰρ τέλει φερόντως ἀναφαίνεται, τῇ προκοπῇ καὶ αὐξήσει τῇ πραγμάτων καὶ τῇ χερῶν οἷα εἶπαν ἀναρρήσεως ἔπ' ἡ ἀθλητικοῖς ἰδεῶσι κατὰ τὸ τέλος ἐναρμόζον. Διὰ καὶ τὸ ἀνθρώπων πλάσας ὁ θεὸς πρώτον ἔτα τέλει ἐνεφύσησεν εἰς τὸ πρόσωπον αὐτοῦ πνεῦμα ζωῆς. Jobius apud Photium. lib. 122. cap. 18.

the Father as he is *font & origo Deitatis*, the Fountain of the Deity it self. Of him, and through him, and to him are all things, *Rom. 11.32.* The Subsisting, establishing, and upholding of all things is ascribed unto the Son: *He is before all things, and by him all things consist; Col. 1. 17.* As he made all things with the Father, so he gives them a *consistency*, a permanency in a peculiar manner, as he is the Power and Wisdom of the Father. He upholds all things by the Word of his Power *Heb. 1. 3.* And the finishing and perfecting of all these Works is ascribed to the Holy Spirit; as we shall see. I say not this as though one Person succeeded unto another in their Operation, or as though where one ceased and gave over a Work, the other took it up and carried it on. For every Divine Work and every part of every Divine Work is the *Work of God*, that is, of the *whole Trinity* unseparably and undividedly. But on these Divine Works which outwardly are of God, there is an especial impression of the *order of the Operation* of each Person with respect unto their natural and necessarie Subsistence, as also with regard unto their internal *Characteristical Properties*, whereby we are distinctly taught to know them and adore them. And the due Consideration of this order of things will direct us in the right understanding of the proposals that are made unto our Faith, concerning God in his Works and Word.

SECT. 4. These things being premised, we proceed to consider what are the *peculiar Operations* of the Holy Spirit, as revealed unto us in the Scripture. Now all the Works of God, may be referred unto two Heads. (1.) Those of *Nature*; (2.) Those of *Grace*. Or the Works of the *Old*, and *New Creation*. And we must enquire what are the *especial Operations* of the Holy Spirit, in and about these Works, which shall be distinctly explained.

SECT. 5. The Work of the *Old Creation* had two Parts (1.) That which concerned the *inanimate Part* of it in general, with the Influence it had into the Production of animated or Living but brut Creatures. (2.) The *Rational or Intelligent Part* of it, with the Law of its Obedience unto God, the especial Uses and Ends for which it was made. In both these sorts we shall enquire after and consider the *especial Works* of the Holy Spirit.

SECT. 6. The general Parts of the Creation, are the *Heavens and the Earth*. *Gen. 1. 1. In the Beginning God Created the Heavens and the Earth*; and what belongs unto them is called their *Host*. *Gen. 2. 1. The Heavens and the Earth were finished and all their Host.* The *Host* of Heaven is the Sun, Moon, and Stars, and the Angels themselves. So are they called *1 Kings. 22. 19. I saw the Lord sitting on his Throne וְכָל צְבָא הַשָּׁמַיִם*, and all the *Host of Heaven* standing by him on his right hand and on his left. That is, all the Holy angels; as *Dan. 7. 10. 2 Chron. 18. 18.* And the *Host of God*, *Gen. 32. 1. 2. And Jacob went on his Way, and the Angels of God met him; and when Jacob saw them, he said this is God's Host. מַחֲנֵה* the Word he useth signifieth an *Host encamped*; *ἐστία ρεγνῶ* *Luke. 22. 13. The Heavenly Host* or *Army*. The Sun, Moon and stars are also called the *Host of Heaven*. *Deut. 4. 19. And lest thou shouldest lift up thine Eyes unto Heaven and when thou seest the Sun and the Moon, and the*

Chap. 4: *in the First or Old Creation.*

71

the Stars, even all the Host of Heaven. So Isa. 34. 4. Jerem. 33. 22. This was that *Host of Heaven* which the Jews Idolatrously Worshipped; Jerem. 8. 2. *They shall spread them before the Sun and the Moon and all the Host of Heaven, whom they have Loved, and whom they have served, after whom they have Walked, and whom they have sought, and whom they have Worshipped.* The Expressions are multiplied to shew that they used all ways of ascribing that Divine Honour unto them which was due to God alone, whom only they ought to have *Loved*, to have *Served*, to have *Walked* after, to have *Sought* and *Worshipped*. So Chap. 19. 13. This they called מלכה השמים the *Queen of Heaven*; Jerem. 44. 17. Because of its Beauty and Adornings. The *Host of the Earth* is men and Beasts, with all other Creatures that either grow out of it, or live upon it, and are nourished by it. And these things are called the *Host of Heaven and Earth* upon a double Account. (1.) Because of their Order and beautiful Disposition. An *Host* properly is a Number of Men put into a certain Order, for some certain End or Purpose. And all their strength and Power, all their Terror and Beauty consisteth in, and ariseth from that Order. Without this they are but a confused Multitude. But an *Host* or Army with Banners is beautiful and terrible, Cant. 6. 10. Before things were cast into this Order, the *Universe* was as it were full of Confusion; it had no beauty nor Glory, for the *Earth was void and without form*, Gen. 1. 2. Hence the *Vulgar Latine* in this Place renders the Word by *Ornatus eorum*; all their Beauty and Adorning. For the Creation and Beautiful disposal of these *Hosts* gave them Beauty and Ornament, and thence do the *Greeks* call the World κόσμος; that is, an *Adorned* thing. (2.) Because all Creatures in Heaven and Earth, are God's *Armies* to accomplish his irresistible Will and Pleasure. Hence he often styles himself the *Lord of Hosts*; of both these *Hosts*, that above of the Heavens, the Holy Angels, and the Celestial Bodies; and that of all Creatures beneath in the Earth. For all these he useth and applyeth at his Pleasure to do his will and execute his Judgments. Thus One of those Angels slew an whole *Host of men* in one Night, Isa. 37. 36. And it is said that the *Stars in their Courses fought against Sissera*, Judg. 5. 20. God overruled the Influences of Heaven against them, though it may be *Angels* also are here intended. And among the meanest Creatures of the Earth, he calls *Locusts* and *Caterpillars* when he sends them to destroy a Countrey for sin, his *Host or Army*, Joel. 2. 11. This by the Way.

Now the Forming and perfecting of *this Host of Heaven and Earth*, is that which is assigned peculiarly to the Spirit of God. And hereby the Work of Creation was compleated and finished. First for the Heavens; Job 26. 13. *By his Spirit he hath garnished the Heavens, his hand hath formed the crooked Serpent.* Or rather, His Spirit hath garnished. For רָאָה agrees with רוּחַ, the *Spirit*, and not with הוּא; and the word signifies to *adorn*, to *make fair*, to *render beautiful* to the Eye. Thus the Heavens were *garnished* by the Spirit of God; when by the Creation and disposal of the aspectable *Host* of them, he rendered them so glorious and beautiful as we behold. So the *Targum*; *His Spirit beautified the Face of the Heavens*, or gave them that comely beauty and Order wherein their Face appeareth unto us. Hence the Heavens as adorned with the Moon

SECT. 7.

Moon and the Stars, are said to be the *Work of God's fingers*. Psal. 8. 3. That is, not only those which were powerfully made, but also *Curiously wrought* and adorned by the Spirit of God. For by the *finger* or *fingers* of God, the Spirit of God is in an especial manner intended. Hence those words of our Saviour, *Luk. 11. 20. but if I with the finger of God, do cast out Devils*; Matth. 12. 28. are; *if I cast out Devils by the Spirit of God*. By him were the Heavens as it were *curiously wrought*, adorned, garnished, rendred beautiful and Glorious, to shew forth the Praise of his Power and Wisdom; *Psal. 19. 1*. And by the *Crooked Serpent*, which is added to the garnishing of the Heavens, the *Hebrews* understand the *Galaxie* or Milky way which to the Eye represents the moving or writhing of a *Serpent* in the Water. This then is peculiarly assigned to the Spirit with respect to the *Heavens and their Host*; the compleating finishing Work is ascribed unto him, which we must understand by the Rules before mentioned and not exclusively to the other Persons.

SECT. 8.

And thus was it also in the Earth: God first out of nothing created the Earth which comprized the whole *Inferior Globe*; which afterwards divided itself into Seas and dry Land; as the *Heavens* contain in that Expression of their Creation all that is above and over it. The whole Material Mass of Earth and Water wherewith probably the more *solid and firm substance* was covered and as it were overwhelmed, is intended by that *Earth* which was first Created. For immediately there is mention made of the *Deepes* and the *Waters*, without any intimation of their Production but what is contained in that of the Creation of the Earth. *Gen. 1. 2*. This Mass being thus framed and mixed, the *Spirit of God moved on the Face of the Waters*; not taken distinctly but as containing that radical Humour which was the Material Principle of Life and Being unto all Creatures. רוח אלהים מרחפת על פני המים. The Word *Merachpeth* signifies an easy gentle motion, such as a *Dove* or other *Fowl* useth over its Nest or Young Ones, either to communicate Vital heat unto its Eggs, or to cherish and defend its Young. And this will no way consist with that Exposition which some would give in this place of רוח אלהים *Ruah* they say here signifies the *Wind*, as it doth sometimes; and it is called the *Wind of God*, because it was great and mighty. For this Phrase of Speech is usual in the Sacred Language, to set out the Greatness and Singular Eminency of any thing. So a great trembling, is called a *trembling of God*, 1 *Sam. 14. 15*. the *Cedars of God*, and the like. But: (1.) When was this *Wind* Created? The *Meteors* were not made before the fourth Day with the Firmament the Place of their Residence. And whence or what this *Wind* should be is not to be discovered. (2.) The Word here used signifies such an *easy and gentle Motion* as is in Birds when they move themselves upon their Nests: And it is but three times used in the Scripture. In this Place, and *Deut. 32. 11. Jerem. 23. 9*. In *Deut.* it is expressly applyed unto the *Motion of an Eagle* over her young, for their safety protection and growth. ירחף יפוש כנפיו as an Eagle *fluttereth spreading her Wings over her Young*; and in the other Place, we render it *shake*. All My bones *shake*; that is are in a *trembling Motion*, like the feathers of a fowl over her Nest. No such great and *Violent Wind* therefore as from thence should be called a *Wind of God*, can be intended in

in this Place. But it is the Spirit of God himself and his Work that is expressed.

This therefore was the Work of the Holy Spirit of God in reference unto the *Earth* and the *Host* thereof. The whole matter being Created out of which all Living Creatures were to be educed and of which they were to be made, he takes upon him the Cherishing and Preservation of it, that as it had its *Subsistence* by the Power of the *Word of God*, it might be carried on towards that Form, Order, Beauty and Perfection that it was designed unto. To this purpose he Communicated unto it a Quickening and *prolifick Vertue*, inlaying it with the Seeds of *animal Life* unto all kinds of things. Hence upon the Command of God it brought forth all sorts of Creatures in Abundance, according to the Seeds and Principles of Life which were communicated unto the *Rude inform Chaos*, by the cherishing Motion of the Holy Spirit. Without him all was a *dead-Sea*, a confused deep with Darknes upon it, able to bring forth nothing, nor more prepared to bring forth *any one thing* than another. But by the *Moving of the Spirit of God upon it*, the Principles of all those Kinds, Sorts, and Forms of things which in an unconceivable variety make up its *Host* and Ornament were communicated unto it. And this is a better account of the Original of all things in their several kinds, than any is given by ancient or Modern Philosophers. And hence was the Old Tradition of all things being formed of Water; which the Apostle alludes unto, 2 Pet. 3. 5. The whole is declared by *Cyprian*, whose words I have therefore transcribed at large. * And as at the first Creation so in the Course of Providence, this Work of *Cherishing and Nourishing* the Creatures is assigned in an especial manner unto the Spirit; *Psal. 104. 30. Thou sendest forth thy Spirit they are Created, and thou renewest the Face of the Earth.* The Making or Creation of things here intended, is not the first great Work of the Creation of all but the *daily Production of Creatures* in and according to their Kind, For in the verse foregoing the *Psalmist* treats of the decay of all sorts of Creatures in the World, by a Providential cutting off and finishing of their Lives, v. 29. *Thou hidest thy Face they are troubled; thou takest away their breath they dye and return unto their Dust.* That under this continual decay and dying of all sorts of Creatures, the

SECT. 9.

gruum motum & limitem prefinitum. Hujus sempiterna virtus & Divinitas, cum in propria natura ab inquisitoribus mundi antiquis Philosophis proprie investigari non posset, subtilissimis tamen intuitu sunt conjecturis compositionem Mundi; compositis & distinctis Elementorum Affectibus presenem omnibus animam affuisse, quæ secundum genus & ordinem singulorum vitam præberet & motum, & intransgressibiles figeret metas, & stabilitatem assignaret & usum. Hanc vitam, hunc motum, hanc rerum essentiam, Animam Mundi Philosophi vocaverunt, putantes celestia corpora, Solem dico Lunam & Stellas ipsumque Firmamentum hujus anime virtute moveri & regi, & aquas & terram & aerem hujus semine impregnari. Qui si Spiritum & dominum & creatorem & vivificatorem & nutritorem crederent omnium quæ sub ipso sunt, convenientem haberent ad vitam accessum. Sed abscondita est a sapientibus & prudentibus tanta rei majestas; nec potuit humani fastus Ingenii secretis interesse celestibus, & penetrare ad superessentialis Naturæ altitudinem; & licet intelligerent, quod vere esset Creatrix & Gubernatrix rerum Divinitas, distinguere tamen nullo modo potuerunt quæ esset Deitatis Trinitas, vel quæ unitas vel quæ personarum proprietas. — Hic est Spiritus vitæ cujus vivificus calor animat omnia & fovet & procrebit & fecundat. Hic omnium viventium Anima, ita largitate sua se omnibus abundanter infundit, ut habeant omnia rationabilia & irrationalia secundum genus suum ex eo quod sunt, & quod in suo ordine sue nature competentia agunt; on quod ipse sit substantialis anima singulis, sed in se singulariter manens, de plenitudine sua distributor magnificus proprias efficientias singulis dividit & largitur; & quasi Sol omnia calefaciens subiecta, omnia nutrit, & absque ulla sui diminutione, integritatem suam de inexhausta abundantia quod satis est & sufficit omnibus commodat & impartit. Cyprian. lib. de Spirit. Sancti.

World doth not come to Emptiness and Desolation; the only Reason is, because the *Spirit of God* whose Office and Work it is to uphold and preserve all things continually, produceth by his Power a new *supply of Creatures* in the room of them that fall off like Leaves from the Trees and return to their Dust every day. And whereas the Earth it self, the *common Nurse* of them all, seems in the Revolution of every year to be at an end of its Use and Work, having *Death* brought upon the Face of it, and oft-times entring deep into its Bowels, the Spirit of God by its *influential Concurrence* renews it again, causing every thing afresh to bring forth Fruit according unto its Kind, whereby its *Face* receiveth a new Beauty and Adorning. And this is the Substance of what the Scripture expressly asserts concerning the Work of the Spirit of God towards the *inanimate part* of the Creation. His actings in reference unto *Man*, and that Obedience which he owed to God according to the Law and Covenant of his Creation is nextly to be considered.

SECT. 10.

Man in his Creation falleth under a two-fold Notion. For he may be considered either merely *naturally* as to the essentially constitutive parts of his Being, or *morally* also with reference unto his Principles of Obedience the Law given unto him, and the End proposed as his Reward. And these things are distinctly proposed unto our contemplation in the Scripture. The first is expressed *Gen. 2. 7. And the Lord God formed Man of the Dust of the Ground, and breathed into his Nostrils the Breath of Life, and Man became a Living Soul.* (1.) There is the *Matter* whereof he was formed; (2.) The *Quickning Principle* added thereunto; And (3.) the Effect of their Conjunction and Union. For the Matter he was made of, it is said he was formed *עפר מן הארמה* *dust of the Ground*, or dust gathered together on an heap from and upon the Ground, *אש עפרה חבל*, *Prov. 8. 26.* So is God the great *δημιουργος*, the universal framer of All, represented as an *Artificer*, who first prepares his Matter and then forms it as it seemeth good unto him. And this is mentioned for two ends; First, To set forth the Excellency, Power, and Wisdom of God, who out of such vile contemptible Matter, as an heap of Dust swept as it were together on the Ground, could and did make so excellent curious and glorious a Fabrick as is the Body of Man, or as was the Body of *Adam* before the Fall. Secondly, To mind Man of his *Original*, that he might be kept humble and in a meet dependance on the Wisdom and Bounty of his Creator; for *thence* it was, and not from the *Original Matter* whereof he was made, that he became so excellent. Hereof *Abraham* makes his solemn Acknowledgment before the Lord; *Gen. 18. 27. Behold I have taken upon me to speak unto the Lord which am but Dust and Ashes.* He abaseth himself with the Remembrance of his Original. And this as it were God reproacheth *Adam* withal upon his Sin and Transgression; *Gen. 3. 19. Thou shalt return unto the Ground, for out of it wast thou taken. For Dust thou art; and unto Dust thou shalt return.* He lets him know that he had now by sin lost that Immortality which he was made in a condition to have enjoyed; and that his Body according to his Nature and Constitution, should return again into its first Principles or the Dust of the Earth.

Into this formed Dust, Secondly, God breathed *נשמה חיים*, the *Breath of Life*; *Divine anima particulam*, a vital immortal Spirit. This God

God *breathed* into him as giving him something of himself, somewhat immediately of his own, not made out of any præcreated Matter. This is the Rational Soul or Intelligent Spirit. Thus Man became a *middle Creature* between the Angels above and the sensitive Animals below. His Body was formed as the Beasts from the *Matter* made the *first Day*, and digested into dry Land on the *third Day*. His Soul was an immediate Production of and Emanation from the Divine Power as the Angels were. So when in the Works of the New Creation our Blessed Saviour bestowed the Holy Ghost on his Disciples, he *breathed on them* as a sign that he gave them something of his own. This Coelestial Spirit, this Heavenly Breath was unto Man a quickning Principle. For, *thirdly*, the Effect hereof is that Man became לֵנֶפֶשׁ חַיָּה a *living Soul*. His Body was hereby animated and capable of all Vital Acts. Hence he could move, eat, see, hear, &c. for the natural Effects of this *Breath of Life* are only intended in this Expression. Thus the *first Man Adam* was made a *Living Soul*, 1 Cor. 15. 45. This was the Creation of Man, as unto the essentially constituting Principles of his Nature.

With respect unto his *Moral Condition* and Principle of Obedience unto God, it is expressed Gen. 1. 26, 27. *And God said, Let us make Man in our own Image after our likeness; and let them have dominion; so God created Man in his own Image, in the Image of God created he him.* He made him *upright*, Eccles. 7. 29. perfect in his Condition; every way compleat, fit, disposed, and able to and for the Obedience required of him. Without Weakness, Distemper, Disease, contrariety of Principles Inclinations or Reasonings. An *universal Rectitude* of Nature consisting in Light Power and Order in his Understanding Mind and Affections, was the principal part of this Image of God wherein he was created. And this appears as from the Nature of the thing it self, so from the Description which the Apostle giveth us of the *Renovation of that Image* in us by the Grace of Christ, Ephes. 4. 24. Col. 3. 10. And under both these Considerations we may weigh the especial Operations of the Spirit of God.

First, As to the *Essential Principles* of the Nature of Man, it is not for nothing that God expresseth his Communication of a *Spirit of Life* by his *breathing* into him. God *breathed into his Nostrils the Breath of Life*. The Spirit of God and the Breath of God are the same; onely the one Expression is *proper*, the other *metaphorical*; wherefore this *breathing* is the especial acting of the Spirit of God. The Creation of the Humane Soul, a Vital Immortal Principle and Being, is the immanent Work of the Spirit of God; Job 33. 4. *The Spirit of God hath made me, and the Breath of the Almighty hath given me Life.* Here indeed the Creation and Production of both the essential parts of Humane Nature Body and Soul, are ascribed unto the same Author. For the Spirit of God and the Breath of God are the same; but several Effects being mentioned causeth a repetition of the same Cause under several names. This Spirit of God first made Man, or formed his Body of the Dust, and then gave him that Breath of Life whereby he became a *living Soul*. So then under this first Consideration, the Creation of Man is assigned unto the Holy Spirit; for Man was the Perfection of the Inferior Creation, and

in order unto the Glory of God by him were all other things Created. Here therefore are his *Operations* distinctly declared, to whom the perfecting and compleating of all Divine Works is peculiarly committed.

SECT. 14.

Secondly; We may consider the *moral State* and Condition of Man, with the Furniture of his Mind and Soul in reference unto his Obedience to God and his enjoyment of him. This was the principal part of that *Image of God* wherein he was created. Three things were required to render Man *idoneous* or fit unto that Life to God for which he was made. First, An ability to *discern* the Mind and Will of God, with respect unto all the Duty and Obedience that God required of him; as also so far to know the *Nature and Properties* of God, as to believe him the only proper Object of all Acts and Duties of Religious Obedience, and an all-sufficient Satisfaction and Reward in this World and to Eternity. Secondly, A free uncontrolled untangled *disposition* to every Duty of the Law of his Creation in order unto *living unto God*. Thirdly, An ability of Mind and Will, with a readiness of compliance in his Affections, for a due regular *performance* of all Duties and *abstinence* from all Sin. These things belonged unto the *integrity* of his Nature, with the *uprightness* of the State and Condition wherein he was made. And all these things were the peculiar Effects of the immediate Operation of the Holy Ghost. For although this *Rectitude* of his Nature be distinguishable and separable from the *Faculties* of the Soul of Man; yet in his first Creation they were not actually distinguished from them, nor superadded or infused into them when Created, but were *concreated* with them; that is his Soul was made meet and able to *live to God* as his Sovereign Lord, Chiefest Good, and Last End. And so they were all from the *Holy Ghost* from whom the Soul was as hath been declared. Yea suppose these Abilities to be *superadded* unto Man's Natural Faculties, as Gifts supernatural (which yet is not so) they must be acknowledged in a peculiar manner to be from the Holy Spirit. For in the *Restoration* of these Abilities unto our minds, in our *Renovation* unto the Image of God in the Gospel, it is plainly asserted that the Holy Ghost is the immediate Operator of them. And he doth thereby restore *his own Work*, and not take the Work of another out of his Hand. For in the New Creation the *Father* in the way of *Authority* designs it and brings all things unto an head in Christ, *Ephes. 1. 10.* which retrieved his original peculiar Work; and the *Son* gave unto all things a new *consistency* which belonged unto him from the beginning, *Col. 1. 16.* So also the Holy Spirit renews in us the *Image of God*, the original implantation whereof was his peculiar Work. And thus *Adam* may be said to have had the *Spirit of God* in his Innocency. He had him in these peculiar Effects of his Power and Goodness, and he had him according to the Tenor of that Covenant, whereby it was possible that he should utterly lose him as accordingly it came to pass. He had him not by especial Inhabitation, for the whole World was then the Temple of God. In the Covenant of Grace founded in the *Person* and on the Mediation of Christ it is otherwise. On whomsoever the Spirit of God is bestowed for the *Renovation of the Image of God* in him, he abides with him for ever. But in all Men from first to last, all *Goodness, Righteousness, and Truth*, are the Fruits of the Spirit, *Ephes. 5. 9.*

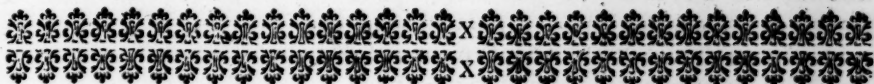
The

The Works of God being thus finished, and the whole frame of Na-
 ture set upon its *Wheels*, it is not deserted by the Spirit of God. For
 as the preservation, continuance, and *acting* of all things in the Uni-
 verse, according to their especial Nature and mutual Application of one
 unto another, are all from the powerful and efficacious *Influences* of Di-
 vine Providence; so there are particular Operations of the *Holy Spirit*
~~and~~ about all things, whether meerly *Natural* and *Animal*, or also *Ra-
 tional* and *Moral*. An Instance in each kind may suffice. For the first,
 (as we have shewed) the Propagation of the succeeding Generations of
 Creatures, and the annual *Renovation of the Face of the Earth* are ascrib-
 ed unto him, *Psal.* 104. 30. For as we would own the due and just
 Powers and Operations of *second Causes*, so we abhor that *Arbeitsm* which
 ascribes unto them an Original and Independent Efficacy and Causality;
 without a previous *acting in, by, and upon them*, of the Power of God.
 And this is here ascribed unto the *Spirit*, whom God sendeth forth unto
 that End and Purpose. As to *rational* and *moral actions*, such as the
 great Affairs of the World do consist in and are disposed of by, he hath
 in them also a peculiar Efficiency. Thus those great Vertues of *Wisdom*,
Courage, and *Fortitude*, which have been used for the producing of great
 Effects in the World, are of his especial Operation. So when God
 stirred up Men to Rule and Govern his People of Old, to fight against
 and to subdue their Enemies, it is said the *Spirit of God came upon them*,
Jud. 3. 10. The *Spirit of the Lord came upon Othniel*, and he judged
Israel and went out to War. The Spirit of God endued him with *Wisdom*
 for Government, and with *courage* and skill in conduct for War. So *Judg.*
 6. 34. And although Instances hereof are given us principally among
 the People of God, yet wherever Men in the World have been raised
 up to do great and wonderful things, whereby God executeth his Judg-
 ments, fulfilleth any of his Promises or his Threatnings; even they also
 have received of the especial *Gifts and Assistances* of the Holy Spirit of
 God. For this Reason is *Cyrus* expressly called *God's Anointed*, *Isa.* 45. 1.
Cyrus had by God's Designation a great and mighty Work to effect. He
 was utterly to ruine and destroy the Great; Antient, *Babylonian* Monar-
 chy. God had a concern herein, as to the avenging of the Quarrel of
 his People, and therein the accomplishment of many Promises and
 Threatnings. The Work it self was great; arduous, and insuperable to
 ordinary humane Abilities. Wherefore God sends his Spirit to fill *Cy-
 rus* with Wisdom, Courage, skill in all Military Affairs, that he might go
 through with the Work whereunto in the Providence of God he was de-
 signed. Hence is he called *God's Anointed*, because the *Unction* of Kings
 of old was an instituted Sign of the Communication of the Gifts of the
 Holy Ghost for Government unto them; see *Isa.* 45. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5. and
 other Instances of the like kind might be given.

Thus when the Church was to have a blessed Restauration of the
 Worship of God after the return of the People from their Captivity;
Zerubbabel is in an especial manner called to begin and carry on this
 Work in the building of the Temple. But the Difficulties he had to
 conflict withal were great, and appeared *insuperable*. The People were
 few and poor, and the Oppositions made unto them and their Work

great and many. Especially what arose from the Power of the *Persian Monarchy* under whose Rule and Oppression they were. For although they had Permission and Encouragement from *Cyrus* for their Work, yet immediately upon his Death they were oppressed again, and their *Work caused to cease*. This Power they could no way conflict withal; yet God tells them that all this Opposition shall be removed and conquered. *Who art thou*, saith he, *O great Mountain? before Zerubbabel thou shalt become a plain*, Zech. 4. 7. All the hindrance that arose from that *great Mountain* of the *Persian Empire* shall be removed out of the way, and the progress of *Zerubbabel* in his Work shall be made smooth plain and easie. But how shall this be effected and brought about? Not by an *Army*, or by *Might*, nor by *Power*, but by *my Spirit* saith the Lord of Hosts, v. 6. You would suppose that it must be done by Armies and open force, which you are altogether insufficient for. But this is not the way I will take in this matter. My *Spirit* shall work in their Hearts, Minds, and Counsels, that contrary to their fears they shall themselves further that work which hitherto they have impeded. And he shall work in the Minds and Counsels of others to oppose them and entangle them where they would hinder it, until they are *destroyed*, and that *great Mountain* be fully removed, as in the Event it came to pass. So that the Providential Alterations that are wrought in the World, are Effects of his Power and Efficacy also.

SECT. 17. And thus have we taken a short view of the Dispensation and Work of the Spirit of God in the *first Creation*. But the Effect hereof being a State of things that quickly passed away, and being of no advantage to the Church after the entrance of sin, what belonged unto it is but *sparingly* delivered in the Scriptures; the true sense of what is so delivered depending much on the *Analogie* of the following Works of God in Man's Renovation and Recovery. But as to the *New Creation* (which falls under our Consideration in the next place, as that alone which is directly intended by us) the *Foundation*, *building up* and *finishing the Church of God* therein, being the things whereon depends the principal manifestation of the Glory of God, and wherein the great Concerns of all the Elect do lie, they are more fully and directly declared in the Scripture. And in reference unto them we shall find a full distinct Declaration of the whole *Dispensation and Work of the Spirit of God*.



Way and Manner of the Divine Dispensation of the HOLY SPIRIT.

C H A P. V.

(1.) Dispensation of the Spirit to be learned from the Scripture only ; general Adjuncts thereof. (2.) The Administration of the Spirit and his own Application of himself to his Work how expressed. (3.) The Spirit how and in what sense given and received. (4.) What is included in the giving of the Spirit. (5.) What in receiving of him. (6, 7.) Priviledg and Advantage in receiving the Spirit. (8.) How God is said to **SEND** the Spirit ; what is included in sending. (9.) How God **MINISTERS** the Spirit. (10.) How God is said to **PUT** his Spirit on us ; What is included in that Expression. (11.) The Spirit how **POURED** out. (12, 13.) What is included and intended herein. (14.) The wayes of the Spirits Application of himself unto his Work. (15.) His proceeding from Father and Son explained. (16.) How he cometh unto us. (17.) His falling on Men. (18.) His resting. (19.) How and in what sense he is said to depart from any Person. (20.) Of the Divisions of the Holy Ghost, Heb. 2. 3. (21.) Exposition of them vindicated.

BEfore we treat of the especial Operations Works and Effects of the Holy Ghost in and on the *New Creation*, the Order of things requires, that we should first speak somewhat of the *General Nature* of God's Dispensation of him, and of his own Applications of himself unto his Actings and Workings in this Matter. For this is the Foundation of all that he doth, and this for our Edification we are instructed in by the *Scriptures*. Unto them in this whole Discourse we must diligently attend ; for we are exercised in such a Subject as wherein we have no Rule nor Guide, nor any thing to give us Assistance but pure *Revelation*. And what I have to offer concerning these things, consists upon the Matter solely in the *Explication* of those places of Scripture wherein they are revealed. We must therefore consider (1.) what we are taught on the part of *God the Father* with respect unto the Holy Spirit and his Work ; and (2.) what relates immediately unto himself.

First ; God's disposal of the Spirit unto his Work, is *five wayes* expressed in the Scripture. For he is said, (1.) to *give* or bestow Him ; (2.) to *send* Him ; (3.) to *administer* him ; (4.) to *pour* him out ; (5.) to

put

SECT. 1.

SECT. 2.

put him on us. And his own Application of Himself unto his Work is likewise five wayes expressed. For he is said (1.) to proceed, (2.) to Come, or come upon; (3.) to fall on Men, (4.) to rest; and (5.) to depart. These things containing the general Manner of his Administration and Dispensation, must be first spoken unto.

SECT. 3.

First; He is said to be GIVEN of God; that is, of God the Father, who is said to GIVE him in an especial manner. Luk. 11. 13. *Your Heavenly Father will give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him.* Joh. 3. 34. *He hath Given his Spirit unto us.* 1 Joh. 3. 24. Joh. 14. 16. *The Father shall Give you another Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost,* v. 26. And in answer unto this Act of God, those on whom he is bestowed are said to Receive him. Joh. 7. 39. *This he spake of the Spirit which they that believe on Him should Receive.* 1 Cor. 2. 12. *We have received the Spirit which is of God.* 2 Cor. 11. 4. *if you have received another Spirit which you had not Received;* Where the Receiving of the Spirit is made a matter Common unto all Believers. So Gal. 3. 2. *Acts.* 8. 15, 19. Joh. 14. 17. *Chap.* 20. 22. For these two, Giving and Receiving are related; the one supposing the other. And this Expression of the Dispensation of the Holy Ghost is irreconcilable unto the Opinion before rejected; Namely that he is nothing but a transient Accident, or an Occasional Emanation of the Power of God. For how, or in what sense can an Act of the Power of God be Given by him, or be Received by us? It can indeed in no sense be either the Object of God's Giving or of our Receiving, especially as this is explained in those other Expressions of the same thing before laid down, and afterwards considered. It must be somewhat that hath a Subistence of its own, that is thus Given and Received. So the Lord Christ is frequently said to be Given of God and Received by us. It is true we may be said in another sense to receive the Grace of God. Which is the Exception of the Socinians unto this Consideration, and the constant practice they use to evade plain Testimonies of the Scripture. For if they can find any Words in them used elsewhere in another sense, they suppose it sufficient to contradict their plain Design and proper meaning in another place. Thus we are exhorted *not to receive the Grace of God in vain,* 2 Cor. 6. 1. I Answer the Grace of God may be considered two Ways. (1.) Objectively for the Revelation or Doctrine of Grace; as Tit. 2. 11, 12. So we are said to Receive it when we believe and profess it, in opposition unto them by whom it is opposed and rejected. And this is the same with our Receiving the Word preached so often mentioned in the Scripture; Acts 2. 41. James 1. 21; which is by Faith to give it Entertainment in our Hearts; which is the meaning of the Word in this Place, 2 Cor. 6. 1. Having taken the Profession of the Doctrine of Grace, that is of the Gospel upon us, we ought to express its Power in Holiness and suitable Obedience, without which it will be of no use or Benefit unto us. And the Grace of God is sometimes (2.) taken Subjectively, for the Grace which God is pleased to Communicate unto us, or gracious Qualities that he Works in our Souls by his Spirit. In this sense also we are sometimes said to receive it; 1 Cor. 4. 7. *Who maketh thee to differ from another, and what hast thou which thou didst not receive;* Where the Apostle speaketh both of the Gifts and Graces of the Spirit. And the Reason hereof is, because in the Communication of internal Grace unto us, we contribute nothing

nothing to the Procurement of it, but are merely capable recipient Subjects. And this Grace is a *Quality* or Spiritual Habit permanent and abiding in the Soul. But in neither of these senses can we be said to *receive the Spirit of God*, nor God to *Give* him, if he be only the Power of God making an Impression on our Minds and Spirits; no more than a Man can be said to *receive the Sun-beams*, which cause Heat in him by their Natural Efficacy, falling on him. Much less can the *Giving* and *Receiving* of the Spirit be so interpreted, considering what is said of his being *sent* and his own *Coming*, with the like Declarations of God's Dispensation of him, whereof afterwards.

Now this *Giving of the Spirit*, as it is the *Act* of Him by whom he is Given, denotes *Authority Freedom* and *Bounty*; and on the Part of them that receive him, *Privilege* and *Advantage*. SECT. 14.

(1.) *Authority*; He that *gives* any thing, hath *Authority* to dispose of it. None can *give* but of his own, and that which in some sense he hath in his Power. Now the Father is said to *give the Spirit*, and that upon our Request; as *Luk. 11. 13.* This I acknowledg wants not some Difficulty in its Explication. For if the Holy Ghost be *God himself*, as hath been declared, how can he be said to be *given by the Father*, as it were, in a way of Authority? But keeping our selves to the sacred Rule of Truth, we may solve this Difficulty without Curiosity or Danger. Wherefore (1.) the *Order of the Subsistence* of the three Persons in the Divine Nature is regarded herein. For the Father as hath been shewed is the *Fountain* and Original of the *Trinity*, the *Son* being of him, and the Spirit of them both. Hence he is to be considered as the *principal Author* and Cause of all those works which are immediately wrought by either of them. For of whom the Son and Spirit have their Essence as to their Personality, from him have they Life and Power of Operation; *Joh. 5. 19, 26.* Therefore when the Holy Spirit *comes* unto any, the Father is said to *Give him*, for he is the Spirit of the Father. And this Authority of the Father doth immediately respect the Work it self, and not the Person Working. But the Person is said to be given for the Works sake. (2.) The *Oeconomy* of the Blessed Trinity in the Work of our Redemption and Salvation is respected in this Order of things. The Fountain hereof lies in the *Love Wisdom Grace* and Counsel of the Father. Whatever is done in the pursuit hereof is originally the Gift of the Father, because it is designed unto no other End but to make his Grace effectual. Hence is he said to *send* and *give* his Son also. And the whole Work of the Holy Ghost, as our Sanctifier Guide Comforter and Advocate, is to make the *Love of the Father* effectual unto us; *Joh. 10. 13, 14.* *As this out of his own Love and Care he hath *Condescended* unto, so the Fountain of it being in the Love and Purpose of the Father, and that also or the making them effectual being their *End*, he is rightly said to be *Given* of him. (3.) In the whole Communication of the Spirit respect is had unto his *Effects*, or the *Ends* for which he is given. What they are shall be afterwards declared. Now the Authority of this Giving respects principally his *Gifts* and *Graces*, which depend on the Authority of the Father.

* ΑΠΟΤΕΜΕ-
ται μὲν τὸ
πνεῦμα τὸ
ἅγιον ὁμο-
νομίᾳς, ἐ-
νεργεῖ δ' αὐ-
τοῦ αὐτοῦ.
Basil. Hom.
15. de fide.

(2.) This Expression denotes *Freedom*. What is given might be withheld. This is the *Gift* of God, (as he is called *Joh. 4. 10.*) not the

M

Pur-

Purchase of our Indeavours, nor the Reward of our Desert. Some men delight to talk of their *Purchasing* Grace and Glory. But the one and the other are to be *bought without Money and without Price*. Even Eternal Life it self the End of all our Obedience, is the *Gift of God through Jesus Christ our Lord*, Rom. 6. 23. The Scripture knows of no earnings that Men can make of themselves but Death. For as *Austin* says, *Quicquid tuum est peccatum est*; and the Wages of Sin is death. To what End or Purpose soever the Spirit is bestowed upon us, whether it be for the *Communication* of Grace, or the *Distribution* of Gifts, or for *Consolation* and Refreshment, it is of the *Meer Gift* of God, from his absolute and Sovereign Freedom.

SECT. 5. Secondly; In Answer hereunto they are said to *Receive* him, on whom as a *Gift* he is bestowed; as in the Testimonies before mentioned. And in *Receiving* two things are implied. (1.) That we contribute nothing thereunto which should take off from the thing Received as a *Gift*. *Receiving* answers *Giving*, and that implies freedom in the Giver. (2.) That it is their Priviledg and *Advantage*. For what a Man *Receives* he doth it for his own Good. First, then we have him *freely* as a Gift of God. For to *Receive* him in general is to be made *Partaker of him*, as unto those Ends for which he is given of God. Be those Ends what they will, in respect of them they are said to *Receive him* who are made *Partakers of him*. Two things may be pleaded to take off the *Freedom of this Gift* and of our Reception, and to cast it on something necessary and required on our part. For (1.) our Saviour tells us, *that the World cannot Receive him, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him*, Joh. 14. 17. Now if the World cannot *Receive* him, there is required an Ability and Preparation in them that do so, that are not in the World; and so the *Gift* and Communication of the Spirit depends on that *Qualification* in us. But all Men are *Naturally* alike the World, and of it. No One Man by *Nature* hath more Ability or strength in Spiritual things than another. For all are *equally* dead in Trespases and Sins, all *equally* Children of Wrath. It must therefore be enquired how some come to have this *Ability* and Power to *Receive* the Spirit of God which others have not. Now this, as I shall fully manifest afterwards, is merely from the Holy Ghost himself and his Grace; respect being had herein only unto the *Order* of his Operations in us, some being *Preparatory* for and dispositive unto other; One being instituted as the means of obtaining another, the whole being the Effect of the *free Gift* of God. For we do *not make our selves to differ from others*, nor have we any thing that we have not *Received*, 1 Cor. 4. 7. Wherefore the Receiving of the Holy Ghost intended in that Expression of our Saviour, with respect whereunto some are *able to receive him* some are not, is not *absolute*, but with respect unto some certain Work and End. And this, as is plain in the Context, is the receiving of him as a *Comforter* and a *Guide* in Spiritual Truth. Hereunto Faith in Christ Jesus, which also is an effect and fruit of the same Spirit, is antecedently required. In this sense therefore *Believers alone* can *receive* him, and are enabled so to do by the Grace which they have received from him in their first Conversion unto God. But (2dly.) it will be said that we are bound to *pray for him* before we receive him; and therefore the bestowing of him depends on a Condition

tion to be by us fulfilled. For the Promise is *that our Heavenly Father will give the Holy Spirit unto them that ask him*, Luke 11. 13. But this doth not prove the bestowing and receiving of him not to be absolutely free. Nay it proves the Contrary. It is *Gratis* and *indebita*, *undeserved Grace*, that is the proper object of Prayer. And God by these encouraging Promises doth not abridge the Liberty of his own Will, nor derogate from the *Freedom* of his Gifts and Grace, but only directs us into the way whereby we may be made Partakers of them, unto his Glory and our own Advantage. And this also belongs unto the Order of the Communication of the Grace of the Spirit unto us. This very *Praying* for the Spirit is a Duty which we cannot perform without his Assistance. For *no man can call Jesus Lord but by the Holy Ghost*, 1 Cor. 12. 3. He helps us as a Spirit of *Grace and Supplication*, to pray for him as a Spirit of *Joy and Consolation*.

(3.) This is such a Gift as in God proceeds from *Bounty*. For God is said to give him unto us *richly*, Tit. 3. 6. This will be spoken unto in the *fourth Way* of his Communication. Onely I say at present, the *greatness* of a Gift, the free Mind of the *Giver*, and want of desert or merit in the Receiver, are that which declare *Bounty* to be the Spring and fountain of it. And all these concur to the height in God's *Giving of the Holy Ghost*. SECT. 6.

Again, on the part of them who receive this *Gift*, Priviledg and Advantage are intimated. They receive a Gift and that from God, and that a great and singular Gift from Divine Bounty. Some indeed *receive him* in a sort as to some Ends and Purposes, without any advantage finally unto their own Souls. So do they who *prophecie and cast out Devils by his Power in the Name of Christ*, and yet continuing workers of Iniquity are rejected at the last day, *Matth. 7. 22, 23*. Thus it is with all who receive his *Gifts* only without his Grace to sanctifie their Persons and their Gifts, and this whether they be ordinary or extraordinary; But this is only by accident. There is no Gift of the Holy Ghost but is good in its own Nature, tending to a good End, and is proper for the Good and Advantage of them by whom it is received. And although the direct end of some of them be not the *Spiritual Good* of them on whom they are bestowed but the Edification of others; *for the manifestation of the Spirit is given unto every man to profit withal*, 1 Cor. 4. 12, 17. yet there is that excellency and worth in them, and that use may be made of them, as to turn greatly to the advantage of them that receive them. For although they are *not Grace*, yet they serve to stir up and give an edge unto Grace, and to draw it out unto Exercise whereby it is strengthened and increased. And they have an influence into Glory; For it is by the Abilities which they give that some are made *wise & effectual Instruments for the turning of many to Righteousness*, who shall shine as the brightness of the Firmament, and as the Stars for ever and ever, *Dan. 12. 3*. But the Unbelief, Ingratitude, and Lusts of Men, can spoil these and any other good things whatever. And these things will afterwards in particular fall under our Consideration. In general, to be made Partaker of the Holy Ghost, is an *inestimable Priviledg and Advantage*, and as such is proposed by our Saviour, *John 14. 17*. SECT. 7.

SECT. 8.

Secondly; God is said to SEND him. Psal. 104. 30. *Thou sendest forth thy Spirit.* John 14. 26. *The Father will send the Holy Ghost in my Name.* This is also spoken of the Son; *I will send unto you the Comforter from the Father,* John 15. 26. John 16. 7. And in the accomplishment of that Promise it is said, *he poured him forth,* Acts 2. 33. Gal. 4. 6. *God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son in your hearts;* and in other places the same Expression is used. Now this upon the matter is the same with the former of *Giving him*, arguing the same Authority, the same Freedom, the same Bounty. Only the word naturally includes in its signification a respect unto a *local Motion*. He which is *sent*, removeth from the place where he was, *from whence* He is sent, unto a place where he was not, *whither* he was sent. Now this cannot properly be spoken of the Holy Ghost. For he being God by Nature, is naturally *omnipresent*, and an Omnipresence is inconsistent with a Local Mutation. So the *Psalmist* expressly, Psal. 139. 7, 8. *Whither shall I go from thy Spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy presence? if I ascend up into Heaven, &c.* There must therefore a *Metaphor* be allowed in this Expression, but such a One as the Scripture by the frequent use of it hath rendered familiar unto us. Thus God is said to *arise out of his place*, to *bow the Heavens and come down*; to *come down and see* what is done in the Earth, Gen. 18. 21. Isa. 64. 1. That these things are not spoken properly of God who is *immense* all men acknowledg. But where God begins to work in any place in any kind, where before he did not do so, he is said to *come* thither; For so must we do, we must come to a place before we can work in it. Thus the *Sending* of the Holy Ghost includeth two things as added unto his being *Given*. (1.) That He was not before in or with that Person, or amongst those Persons for that especial Work and End which he is *sent* for. He may be in them and with them in one respect, and be afterwards said to be *sent* unto them in another: So our Lord Jesus Christ promiseth to *send the Holy Ghost* unto his Disciples as a Comforter, whom they had received before as a Sanctifier. *I will, saith he, send him unto you and you know him, for he dwelleth with you,* John 14. 17. He did so as a Sanctifier before he came unto them as a Comforter. But in every *coming* of His, He is *sent* for one especial Work or another. And this sufficiently manifests that in his Gifts and Graces he is not *common* unto all. A supposition thereof would leave no place for this especial Act of *sending* him, which is done by Choice and Distinction of the Object. Much less is he a *Light* which is alwayes in all Men, and which all Men may be in if they please. For this neither is nor can be absent

in any sense from any one at any time. (2.) It denotes an *especial Work* there or on them, where and on whom, there was none before of that kind. For this cause is he said to be *sent* of the Father. * No *Local Motion* then is intended in this Expression only there is an allusion thereunto. For as a Creature cannot produce any Effects where it is not, until it either be *sent* thither, or go thither of its own accord; So the Holy Ghost produceth not the blessed Effects of his Power and Grace, but in and towards them unto whom he is *given* and *sent* by the

* Etenim si de loco procedit Spiritus & in locum transit, & ipse Pater in loco invenitur & Filius: si de loco exit quem Pater mittit aut Filius, utique de loco transiens Spiritus & progrediens, & Patrem sicut corpus secundum impias interpretationes relinquere videtur & Filium. Hoc secundum eos loquor qui putant quod habet Spiritus descensorium motum; venit non de loco in locum, sed de dispositione constitutionis in salutem Redemptionis. Ambros. de Sp. Sanct. lib. 1. cap. 10.

the Father. How in answer hereunto he is said himself to *come*, shall be afterwards declared. And it is the Person of the Spirit which is said to be thus sent; For this belongs unto that Holy *Dispensation* of the several Persons of the *Trinity* in the Work of our Salvation. And herein the Spirit in all his Operations is considered as *sent* of the Father, for the Reasons before often intimated.

Thirdly; God is said to *MINISTER* the Spirit; Gal. 3. 5. *He that* SECT. 9. *ministreth the Spirit unto you*, ὁ ἐν ἐπιχορηγῶν ὑμῶν τὸ πνεῦμα; He that gives you continual or abundant supplies of the Spirit. χορηγῶ, is to give a sufficiency of any thing; and χορηγία and χορηγία are *dimensum*, a sufficiency of Provision. An addition thereunto is ἐπιχορηγία, whereby the Communication of the Spirit is expressed. Phil. 1. 19. *For I know that this shall turn to my Salvation through your Prayers*, ἐν ἐπιχορηγίᾳ τῷ πνεύματι τῷ Χριστῷ, and the additional supply of the Spirit of Jesus Christ. That Spirit and its Assistance he had before received; but He yet stood in need of a daily further supply. So is the word used constantly for the adding of one thing to another, or one degree of the same thing unto another, 2 Pet. 1. 5. ἐπιχορηγῶντες ἐν τῇ πίσει ὑμῶν ἀρετῇ, add to your Faith Virtue; or in your Faith make an increase of Vertue. When therefore God is thus said to *Minister the Spirit*, it is his continual giving out of *Additional Supplies* of his Grace by his Spirit which is intended. For the Holy Spirit is a *voluntary Agent*, and distributes unto every one as he will. When therefore he is given and sent unto any, his Operations are limited by his own Will and the Will of him that sends him. And therefore do we stand in need of *supplies* of him and from him; which are the principal Subject Matter of our Prayers in this World.

Fourthly; God is said to *PUT* his Spirit in or upon Men; and this SECT. 10. also belongeth unto the manner of his Dispensation; Isa. 42. 1. *Behold my Servant whom I uphold, I have put my Holy Spirit upon him*. The word there indeed is נתתי, I have given my Holy Spirit upon him, but because עליו upon Him is joyned to it, it is by ours rendred by *Put*. As also Ezek. 37. 14. where בכם in you is added; Put my Spirit in you. The same is plainly intended with that Isa. 63. 11. וחסם בקרבם את רוחי קדש, that put his Holy Spirit in the midst of them. Hence נתתי, I have given; or I will give, Isa. 42. 1. is rendred by δώσω, Matth. 12. 18. δώσω τὸ πνεῦμα μου ἐπ' αὐτόν, I will put my Spirit upon him. The Word נתן then used in this sense, doth not denote the granting or Donation of any thing but its *actual bestowing*, as דם doth. And it is the *effectual Acting* of God in this Matter that is intended. He doth not only give and send his Spirit unto them to whom he designs so great a Benefit and Priviledg, but he actually collates and bestows him upon them. * He doth not send Him unto them, and leave it in their Wills and Power whether they will receive Him or no; but he so effectually collates and puts him in them or upon them, as that they shall be actually made Partakers of him. He efficaciously endows their Hearts and Minds with Him for the Work and End which he is designed unto. So Exod. 31. 6.

* Quid igitur Spiritus Sancti operatione Divinius, cum etiam benedictionum suarum presentem Spiritum Deus ipse testetur, dicens, Ponam Spiritum meum super semen inum, & benedictiones meas super Filios tuos, nulla enim potest esse plena benedictio nisi per infusionem Spiritus Sancti. Ambros. de Sp. Sancto. lib. 1. cap. 7.

I have put Wisdom, is as much as I have filled them with Wisdom, v. 2. So then, where God intendeth unto any the Benefit of his Spirit, he will actually and effectually collate Him upon them. He doth not indeed always doe this in the same manner. Sometimes he doth it as it were by a surprisal when those who receive him are neither aware of it nor do desire it. So the Spirit of the Lord as a Spirit of Prophecy, came upon Saul when his Mind was remote and enstranged from any such thoughts. In like manner the Spirit of God came upon Eldad and Medad in the Camp; when the other Elders went forth unto the Tabernacle to receive Him, Numb. 11. 27. And so the Spirit of Prophecy came upon most of the Prophets of Old, without either Expectation or Preparation on their Parts; So Amos giveth an Account of his Call unto his Office, Chap. 7. 14, 15. I was, saith he, no Prophet, neither was I a Prophets Son, but I was an Heardman and a gatherer of Sycomore fruits. And the Lord took me as I followed the Flock, and the Lord said unto me go Prophecy. He was not brought up with any Expectation of receiving this Gift. He had no Preparation for it, but God surprized him with his Call and Gift as he followed the Flock. Such also was the Call of Jeremiah, Chap. 1. 5, 6, 7. So vain is the Discourse of Maimonides on this Subject prescribing various Natural and Moral Preparations for the receiving of this Gift. But these things were extraordinary. Yet I no way doubt but that God doth yet continue to Work Grace in many by such unexpected Surprizal, the manner whereof shall be afterwards inquired into. But sometimes, as to some Gifts and Graces, God doth bestow his Spirit, where there is some Preparation and Cooperation on our Part. But wherever he deligns to put or place him, he doth it effectually.

Fifthly; God is said to POUR him out; and that frequently. Prov.

*Significat
autem effusi-
onis verbum
largam &
divitem mu-
neris abun-
dantiam; i-
taque cum u-
nus quis ali-
cubi aut duo
Spiritus
Sanctum ac-
cipiant non
dicitur ef-
fundam de
Spiritu meo,
sed tunc
quando in u-
niversis gen-
tes munus
Spiritus
Sancti red-
dundaverit.
Dydim. de
Sp. Sanc. lib.
1.

1. 23. *אֲנִי עֵרָה לָכֶם רוּחִי* behold I will pour out my Spirit unto you. *נִבֵּעַ* signifies *ebullire more scaturiginis*, to bubble up as a Fountain. Hence the words are rendered by Theodot *ἀναβλύσας ὑμῶν πνεῦμα μου*; *scaturire faciam*; I will cause my Spirit to Spring out unto you as a Fountain; And it is frequently applied unto speaking, when it signifies *cloqui aut proferre verba more scaturiginis*. See Psal. 72. 2. Psal. 145. 7. And *נִבֵּעַ* also which some take to be the root of *אֲנִי עֵרָה* Prov. 1. 23. hath the same signification. And the Word hath a double lively Metaphor. For the Proceeding of the Spirit from the Father, is compared to the continual rising of the Waters of a Living Spring; and his Communication unto us, to the overflowing of those Waters, yet guided by the Will and Wisdom of God. Isa. 32. 15. Until the Spirit be poured upon us from on High, and the Wilderness be a fruitful field. *עַר יַעֲרָה עָלֵינוּ רוּחַ מִמְּרוֹם* is indeed sometimes to pour out, but more properly and more commonly to uncover, to make bare, to reveal. Until the Spirit be revealed from on High. There shall be such a plentiful Communication of the Spirit, as that He and His Work shall be made open, revealed, and plain. Or the Spirit shall be bared, as God is said to make his Arm bare when he will Work mightily and effectually. Isa. 52. 10. Isa. 44. 3, I will pour my Spirit upon thy Seed, and my Blessing upon thine Offspring. *יִצַק* the Word here is so to pour a thing out, as that it cleaveth unto and abideth on that which it is poured out upon. As the Spirit of God abides with them unto whom he is Communicated. Ezek. 39. 29. I have poured out my Spirit on the House of Israel. *שִׁפְכָתִי* another word; This is properly to pour

pour

pour out, and that in a plentiful manner. The same word that is used in that great Promise, *Joel* 2. 28. which is rendred *Acts* 2. 17. by ἐκχεῖν, *effundam*, I will *pour* out my Spirit; and the same Thing is again expressed by the same word, *Acts* 10. 45. The Gift of the Holy Ghost is *poured* on the Gentiles.

Let us then briefly consider the Importance of this Expression. And SECT. 12.
 one or two things may be observed concerning it in general. As (1.) wherever it is used it hath direct respect unto the *Times of the Gospel*. Either it is a part of the Promises concerning it, or of the Story of its Accomplishment under it. But where-ever it is mentioned, the Time, State, and Grace of the Gospel are intended in it. For the Lord Christ was in *all things to have the preeminence*; *Col.* 1. 18. And therefore although God *gave* his Spirit in some measure before, yet he *poured* him not out until He was first anointed with his Fulness. (2.) There is a *tacit comparison* in it with some other Time and Season, or some other Act of God wherein or whereby God *gave* his Spirit before, but not in the way and manner that he intended now to bestow him. A *larger Measure* of the Spirit to be now given than was before, or is signified by any other Expressions of the same Gift, is intended in this Word.

Three things are therefore comprized in this Expression. (1.) An SECT. 13.
 eminent Act of Divine Bounty. *Pouring forth* is the way whereby Bounty from an all-sufficeing fulness is expressed. As the *Clouds filled with a moist vapour pour down Rain*, *Job* 36. 27. until it *water the Ridges of the Earth abundantly, settling the Furrows thereof, and making it soft with Showers*; as *Psal.* 65. 10. which with the things following in that place, *v.* 11, 12, 13. are spoken *Allegorically* of this pouring out of the Spirit of God from above. Hence God is said to do this *richly*, *Tit.* 3. 6. The *renewing of the Holy Ghost*; ἡ ἐξέχεεν ἐφ' ἡμᾶς πλοῦτως, *which he hath poured on us richly*; that is, on all Believers who are converted unto God. For the Apostle discourseth not of the *extraordinary Gifts* of the Holy Ghost which were then given forth in a plentiful manner, but of that Grace of the Holy Ghost whereby all that believe are regenerated, renewed, and converted unto God. For so were men converted of old by a *rich participation of the Holy Ghost*, and so they must be still whatever some pretend, or die in their sins. And by the same word is the *bounty* of God in other things expressed. The living God *who giveth us richly* all things to enjoy, *1 Tim.* 6. 17. (2.) This *pouring out* hath respect unto the *Gifts and Graces* of the Spirit and not unto his Person. For where he is given he is given absolutely, and as to himself not *more* or less; but his Gifts and Graces may be more plentifully and abundantly given at *one time* than at another, to some Persons than to others. Wherefore this Expression is *metonymical*, that being spoken of the Cause which is proper to the Effect; the Spirit being said to be *poured forth*, because his Graces are so. (3.) Respect is had herein unto some *especial Works* of the Spirit. Such are the *Purifying* or Sanctifying, and the *Comforting* or Refreshing them on whom He is poured. With respect unto the first of these Effects, he is compared both unto Fire and Water. For both Fire and Water have *purifying Qualities* in them, though towards different Objects and working in a different manner.

manner. So by *Fire* are Metals purified and purged from their Dross and Mixtures, and by *Water* are all other unclean and defiled things cleansed and purified. Hence the Lord Jesus Christ in his Work by his Spirit is at once compared unto a *Refiners Fire* and to *Fullers Sope*, Mal. 3. 2, 3. because of the purging purifying Qualities that are in Fire and Water. And the Holy Ghost is expressly called a *Spirit of Burning*, Isa. 4. 4. For by him are the Vessels of the House of God that are of *Gold and Silver* refined and purged, as those that are but of Wood and Stone are consumed. And when it is said of our Lord Jesus that he should *baptize with the Holy Ghost and with Fire*, Luke 3. 16. it is but ἐν δια δύοῖν the same thing doubly expressed, and therefore mention is made *only of the Holy Ghost*, John 1. 33. But the Holy Ghost was in his Dispensation to purify and cleanse them as *Fire* doth Gold and Silver. And on the same account is he compared to *Water*, Ezek. 36. 35. *I will sprinkle clean Water upon you and you shall be clean*; which is expounded v. 26. by a *New Spirit will I put within you*, which God calls his Spirit, Jer. 32. 39. So our Saviour calls him *Rivers of Water*, Joh. 7. 38, 39. see Isa. 44. 3. And it is with regard unto his purifying cleansing and sanctifying our Natures that he is thus called. With respect therefore in an especial manner hereunto is he said to be *poured out*. So our Apostle expressly declares, Tit. 3. 4, 5, 6. Again it respects his *comforting* and *refreshing* them on whom he is *poured*. Hence is he said to be *poured down* from above as Rain that descends on the Earth; Isa. 44. 3. *I will pour Water upon him that is thirsty, and Floods upon the dry ground*; that is, *I will pour my Spirit on thy Seed, and my Blessing upon thy Off-spring*; and they shall spring up as among the Grass, as Willows by the Water-Courses, v. 4. see Chap. 35. 6, 7. He comes upon the dry parched barren ground of the hearts of men, with his refreshing fruitifying Vertue and Blessing, causing them to spring and bring forth Fruits in Holiness and Righteousness to God, Heb. 6. 7. And in respect unto his Communication of his Spirit, is the Lord Christ said to *come down like Rain upon the mown Grass, as Showers that water the Earth*, Psal. 72. 6. The good Lord give us alwayes of these Waters and refreshing Showers.

And these are the wayes in general whereby the Dispensation of the Spirit from God, for what End or Purpose soever it be, is expressed.

SECT. 14. We come nextly to consider what is ascribed unto the Spirit Himself, in a way of *compliance* with these Acts of God whereby he is given and administered. Now these are such Things or Actions as manifest him to be a *Voluntary Agent*; and that not only as to what he acts or doth in men, but also as to the manner of his coming forth from God, and his Application of himself unto his Work. And these we must consider as they are declared unto us in the Scripture.

The first and most general Expression hereof is, that he *proceedeth* from the Father; and being the Spirit of the Son, he *proceedeth* from him also in like manner; John 15. 25. *The Spirit of Truth which proceedeth from the Father*, he shall testify of me. There is a two-fold ἐκπορεύσις or *Procession* of the Holy Ghost. The one is *πνεῦμα ὁμοούσιον*, *Natural*

Natural or Personal. This expresseth his Eternal Relation to the Persons of the Father and the Son. He is of them by an eternal Emanation or *Procession*. * The

manner hereof unto us in this Life is incomprehensible. Therefore it is rejected by some, who will believe no more than they can put their hands into the sides of. And yet are they forced in things under their Eyes, to admit of many things which they cannot perfectly comprehend. But we live by Faith and not by Sight.

† This is enough unto us that we admit nothing in this great Mystery but what is revealed, and nothing is revealed unto us that is inconsistent with the Being and Subsistence of God. For this *Procession* or Emanation includes no Separation or Division in or of the Divine Nature, but only expresseth a distinction in Subsistence by a Property peculiar to the Holy Spirit: But this is not that which at present I intend.

The consideration of it belongeth unto the Doctrine of the Trinity in general and hath been handled elsewhere. Secondly, There is an ἐκπόρευσις or *Procession* of the Spirit, which is οἰκονομικὴ or dispensatory. This is the Egress of the Spirit in his Application of Himself unto his Work. A voluntary Act it is of his Will, and not a necessary Property of his Person. And he is said thus to proceed from the Father, because he goeth forth or proceedeth in the pursuit of the Counsels and Purposes of the Father, and as sent by him to put them into Execution or to make them effectual.

And in like manner he proceedeth from the Son, sent by Him for the Application of his Grace unto the Souls of his Elect, John 15. 16. It is true, this proves his Eternal Relation to the Father, and the Son, as he proceeds from them, or receives his peculiar Personal Subsistence from them; For that is the Ground of this order of Operation. But it is his own Personal voluntary acting that is intended in the Expression. And this is the general Notation of the Original of the Spirits acting in all that he doth. He proceedeth or cometh forth from the Father. Had it been only said that He was given and sent, it could not have been known that there was any thing of his own Will in what he did, whereas he is said to divide unto every one as He will. But in that ἐκπορεύεται, He proceedeth of his own accord unto his Work, his own Will and Condescension is also asserted. And this his proceeding from the Father, is in compliance with his sending of Him to accomplish and make effectual the Purposes of his Will and the Counsels of his Grace.

* Spiritus Sanctus qui a Patre & Filio procedit, nec ipse capit; quia processio ejus continua est, & ab eo qui non capit. Ambros. in Symbol. Apostol. cap. 3.

Spiritus quidem Sanctus nec ingenuus est nec genitus alicubi dicitur; ne si ingenuus diceretur sicut Pater, duo Patres in Sancta Trinitate intelligerentur; aut si genitus diceretur sicut Filius, duo iidem Filii in eadem estimarentur esse Sancta Trinitate: sed tantummodo procedere de Patre & Filio salva fide dicendum est. Qui tamen non de Patre procedit in Filium, & de Filio procedit ad Sanctificandam creaturam, sicut quidam male intelligentes credendum esse putabant, sed simul de utroque procedit. Quia Pater talem genuit Filium, ut quemadmodum de se, ita & de illo quoque procedat Spiritus Sanctus. August. Sermo 38. de Tempore.

† Οὐ γὰρ ἐπέδωκεν πάντα ἀκατάληπτον τὸ θεῖον διὰ τὸ πρὸς πάντας μὴ δόλως ζητεῖν αὐτὸ περὶ αὐτῶν, ἀλλ' ἐν ῥησίν τῶν βίβλων κατακαλίσκειν χεῖρον. Κατὰ δὲ τὸ μέτρον τὸ μεμελεσμένον ἐκείνου παρὰ τὴν κενότητα, ἥ γινώσκων τὴν ἐξέτασιν φιλοπρίως ποιεῖται. Ὅτι μὲν ἀκατάληπτον ἀνεξέως περιεσμένον. Ἐφ' ὅσον ἡ χάρις μὲν διὰ τὴν χάριν, αὐτὴς ἐκείνου συνάπτονται. Justin. Martyr. Expositio Fidei de rebus Confess.

Secondly; To the same purpose He is said to come; John 15. 26. SECT. 16. When the Comforter is come. John 16. 7. If I go not away the Comforter will not come; v. 8. and when he is come. So is he said to come upon Per-

sons. We so express it, 1 *Chron.* 12. 18. The Spirit came upon Amasai, ורוח לבשר. ארז עמי. And the Spirit clothed Amasai; possessed his Mind as a Man's Cloths cleave unto him, *Acts* 19. 6. The Holy Ghost came on them and they prophesied; ελθ. ἐρχομαι to come is as it were the *Terminus ad Quem* of ἐκπορεύομαι, going forth or proceeding. For there is in these Expressions an Allusion unto a *local Motion*, whereof these two words denote the Beginning and the End. The first intendeth his *voluntary Application* of himself to his Work, the other his *progress* in it; such Condescensions doth God make use of in the declaration of his Divine Actings to accommodate them unto our Understandings, and to give us some kind of Apprehension of them. He *proceedeth* from the Father as *given* by him, and *cometh* unto us as *sent* by him. The meaning of both is, that the Holy Ghost by his own Will and Consent worketh in the pursuit of the Will of the Father, there and that where

† Nullus sine Deo, neque ullus non in Deo locus est. In Cælis est, in Inferno est, ultra Mariæ est. Inest interior, excedit exterior. Itaque cum habet atque habetur, neque in aliquo ipse, neque non in omnibus est. Hilar. lib. 1. de Trinitat.

and what he did not work before. † And as there is no *local Motion* to be thought of in these things, so they can in no tolerable sense be reconciled to the Imagination of his being onely the *inherent Virtue* or an actual Emanation and Influence of the Power of God. And hereby is our Faith and Obedience Regulated in our dealing with God about Him. For we may

both pray the Father that he would *give* and *send* Him unto us according to his Promise, and we may *pray* to Him to *come* unto us to sanctifie and comfort us according to the Work and Office that he hath undertaken. This is that which we are taught hereby. For these Revelations of God are for our Instruction in the Obedience of Faith.

SECT. 17. Thirdly; He is said to *fall* on Men; *Acts* 10. 44. While Peter yet spake these words, the Holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the Word. So *Chap.* 11. 4. Where Peter repeating the same Matter, sayes, The Holy Ghost fell on them as on us at the beginning: that is, *Acts* 2. 4. A greatness and suddainness in a surprisal is intended in this Word. As when the Fire fell down from Heaven (which was a Type of him) upon the Altar and Sacrifice of *Elijah* the People that saw it were amazed, and falling on their Faces cryed out, The Lord he is God, 1 *Kings* 18. 38, 39. When Men are no way in expectation of such a Gift, or when they have an Expectation in general but are suddainly surprized as to the particular Season it is thus declared. But where-ever this word is used, some extraordinary Effects evidencing his Presence and Power do immediately ensue, *Acts* 10. 44, 46. And so it was at the beginning of his Effusion under the New Testament, *Acts* 2. 4. & 8. 16.

SECT. 18. Fourthly; Being come, He is said to *Rest* on the Persons to whom he is given and sent; *Isa.* 11. 3. And the Spirit of the Lord shall Rest upon him. This is interpreted abiding and remaining, *John* 1. 32, 33. *Numb.* 11. 25, 26. The Spirit of the Lord rested on the Elders. So the Spirit of *Elijah* rested on *Elisba*, 2 *Kings* 2. 15. 1 *Pet.* 4. 14. The Spirit of God and of Glory resteth on you. Two things are included herein; (1.) Complacency. (2.) Permanency. First, He is well-pleased in his Work wherein he Rests. So where God is said to rest in his Love, he doth

doth it with *Joy and singing*, Zeph. 3. 17. so doth the Spirit rejoice where he rests. Secondly, He *abides* where he Rests. Under this Notion is this acting of the Spirit promised by our Saviour. He *shall abide with you for ever*, John 14. 16. He *came* only on some Men by a sudden surprizal to act in them and by them some peculiar Work and Duty. To this end he only *transiently* affected their Minds with his Power. But where he is said to *rest*, as in the works of Sanctification and Consolation, there he *abides* and continues with Complacency and Delight.

Fifthly; He is said to *depart* from some Persons. So it is said of SECT. 19.
Saul, 1 Sam. 16. 14. *The Spirit of the Lord departed from him.* And David prays that God would not *take his Holy Spirit from him*, Psal. 51. 11. And this is to be understood answerably unto what we have discoursed before about his *coming* and his *being sent*. As he is said to *come* so is he said to *depart*; and as he is said to be *sent* so is he said to be *taken away*. His *departure* from men therefore is his ceasing to work in them and on them as formerly; and as far as this is *penal* he is said to be *taken away*. So he *departed* and was *taken away* from Saul when he no more helped him with that Ability for Kingly Government which before he had by his Assistance. And this *departure* of the Holy Ghost from any is either *total* or *partial* onely. Some on whom he hath been bestowed for the working of sundry *Gifts* for the good of others, with manifold convictions by Light and general Assistance unto the performance of Duties, He *utterly deserts* and gives them up unto themselves and their own hearts lusts. Examples hereof are common in the World. Men who have been made *Partakers* of many *Gifts of the Holy Ghost*, and been in an especial manner *enlightned*, and under the Power of their Convictions carried out unto the Profession of the Gospel and the performance of many Duties of Religion; yet being entangled by *Temptations* and overcome by the power of their lusts, relinquish all their Beginnings and Engagements and turn wholly unto Sin and Folly. From such Persons the Holy Ghost *utterly departs*, all their Gifts dry up and wither; their Light goeth out and they have Darkness in stead of a Vision. The Case of such is deplorable; *for it had been better for them not to have known the way of Righteousness, than after they have known it to turn from the Holy Commandment delivered unto them*, 2 Pet. 2. 21. And some of these add *despight* and contempt of that whole Work of the Spirit of God whereof themselves were made Partakers unto their Apostasie. And the condition of such profligate Sinners is for the most part irrecoverable, Heb. 6. 4, 5, 6. Chap. 10. v. 26, 27, 28, 29, 30. From some He withdraweth and departeth *partially* only, and that mostly but for a season. And this Departure respects the Grace Light and Consolation which he administers unto Believers, as to the *degrees* of them and the Sense of them in their own Souls. On whom He is bestowed to work these things in a saving way, from them he never *utterly* or *totally* departs. This our Blessed Saviour plainly promiseth and asserteth; John 4. 14. *Whosoever drinketh of the Water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the Water that I shall give him shall be in him a Well of Water springing up into Everlasting Life.* That this Well of Living Water is his Sanctifying Spirit himself declares, John 7. 37, 38. He who hath received him,

shall never have a thirst of *total Want* and Indigence any more. Besides He is given unto this end by vertue of the *Covenant of Grace*. And the Promise is expresse therein, that he shall *never depart from them* to whom he is given, *Isa. 59. 21. Jer. 31. 33. Chap. 32. 39, 40. Ezek. 11. 19, 20*, But now as to the *degrees* and sensible Effects of these Operations, He may depart and withdraw from Believers for a Season. Hence they may be left unto many *Spiritual Decays* and much weakeness, the things of Grace that *remain in them* being as it were *ready to die*, *Revel. 3. 2.* and they may apprehend themselves deserted and forsaken of God. So did *Sion*, *Isa. 40. 27. Chap. 49. 15.* For therein doth God *hide himself*, *Isa. 44. 15.* or forsake his *People for a moment*, *Chap. 54. 7.* He *hides himself and his wrath*, *Chap. 57. 17.* These are the things which *David* so often and so bitterly complaineth of, and which with so much earnestness he contendeth and wrestleth with God to be delivered from. These are those *spiritual Desertions* which some of late have laden with reproach contempt and scorn. All the apprehensions and complaints of the People of God about them, they would represent as nothing but the *idle Imaginations of distempered Brains*, or the Effects of some disorder in their *Blood and Animal Spirits*. I could indeed easily allow that Men should despise and laugh at what is declared as the *Experience* of Professors at present. Their prejudice against their Persons will not allow them to entertain any thoughts of them but what are suited unto Folly and Hypocrisie. But at this I acknowledg I stand *amazed*; that whereas these things are so plainly, so fully and frequently declared in the Scriptures, both as to the actings of God and his Holy Spirit in them, and as to the *sense* of those concerned about them; whereas the *whole* of God's dealings, and Believers application of themselves to him in this Matter, are so *graphically* exemplified in sundry of the Holy Saints of old, as *Joh, David, Heman*, and others; and great and plentiful Provision is made in the Scripture for the Direction, Recovery, Healing and Consolation of Souls in such a condition; yet men professing themselves to be *Christians*, and to believe the Word of God at least not to be a Fable, should dare to cast such opprobrious Reproaches on the Wayes and and Works of God. The end of these Attempts can be no other but to decry all *real intercourse* between God and the Souls of Men, leaving only an outside form or shape of Religion, not one jot better than *Atheism*.

Neither is it only what concerns *Spiritual Desertions*, whose Nature, Causes, and Remedies, are professedly and at large handled by all the *Casuistical Divines* even of the *Roman Church*, but the whole Work of the Spirit of God upon the Hearts of Men, with all the Effects produced in them with respect unto Sin and Grace, that some men by their odious and *scurrilous Expressions* endeavour to expose to contempt and scorn; *S.P. p. 339, 340, 341, 342.* Whatever trouble befalls the minds of men upon the account of a *sense of the guilt of Sin*, whatever Darkness and Disconsolation they may undergo through the displeasure of God and his withdrawing of the wonted influences of his Grace Love and Favour towards them, whatever Peace Comfort or Joy they may be made Partakers of by a *sense of the Love of God* shed abroad in their Hearts by the Holy Ghost, it is all ascribed in most *opprobrious Language* unto Melancholy reeks and vapours, whereof a certain and mechanical

mechanical account may be given by them who understand the Anatomy of the Brain. To such an height of Profane Atheism is the daring Pride and Ignorance of some in our dayes arrived.

There remaineth yet one general *Adjunct* of the Dispensation and SECT. 20. Work of the Holy Ghost, which gives a further Description of the manner of it; which I have left unto a single Consideration. This is that which is mentioned Heb. 2. 4. God witnessing unto them with Signs and Wonders, with divers Miracles, *ἐν πνεύματι ἁγίῳ μερισμοῖς*, and Gifts say we of the Holy Ghost. But *μερισμοῖς*, are Distributions or Partitions. And hence advantage is taken by some to argue against his very Being. So *Crellius* contends that the Holy Ghost here is taken passively, or that the Expression *πνεύματι ἁγίῳ* is *Genitivus Materiae*. Wherefore he supposes that it followeth that the Holy Ghost himself may be divided into Parts, so that one may have one Part and Parcel of him, and another may have another Part. How inconsistent this is with the Truth of his Being and Personality is apparent. But yet neither can he give any tolerable account of the Division and Partition of that Power of God which he calls the Holy Ghost, unless he will make the Holy Spirit to be a Quality in us and not in the Divine Nature, as *Justin Martyr* affirms *Plato* to have done, and so to be divided.

* And the Interpretation he useth of the words is wrested perverse and foolish. For the Contexture of them requires that the Holy Ghost be here taken actively as the Author of the Distribution mentioned. He gives out of his Gifts and Powers unto Men in many Parts, not all to One, not all at once; not all in one way, but some to one some to another, some at one time some at another, and that in great variety. The Apostle therefore in this place declares, That the Holy Spirit gave out various Gifts unto the first Preachers of the Gospel for the confirmation of their Doctrine, according to the Promise of our Saviour, *John* 15. 26, 27. Of these he mentions in particular, First, *σημεῖα*, Signs. That is, Miraculous Works wrought to signifie the Presence of God by his Power with them that wrought them; so giving out his Approbation of the Doctrine which they taught. Secondly, *τέρατα*, Prodigies or Wonders, Works beyond the Power of Nature or energie of Natural Causes wrought to fill Men with Wonder and Admiration, manifesting τὸ θεῖον, and surprizing Men with a sense of the Presence of God. Thirdly, *δυνάμεις* mighty Works of several sorts, such as opening of the Eyes of the Blind, raising the Dead and the like. These being mentioned, there is added in general *μερισμοῖς πνεύματι ἁγίῳ*, that is, מתנות הרוח הקדוש Gifts of the Holy Ghost. For these and other like things did the Holy Ghost work and effect to the end mentioned. And these Distributions are from him as the Signs and Wonders were, that

* ταῦτα, οἱμοί, σαφῶς ὡς ἐν τῷ ὧρ τῷ ἁγίῳ πνεύματι μεμαρτυρηὸς Πλάτων, εἰς τὸ ἰσχυρῶς ὀνομαζόμενον μεταφῶν φαίνεται. Οἰμοίως γὰρ ὡς περ οἱ ἱερεῖς προφητεῖαι τὸ ἐν ἡμῖν τὸ αὐτὸ πνεῦμα εἰς ἑπτά πνεύματα μεμελεῖσθαι φαίνεται, ὅτι καὶ αὐτοὶ μίαν καὶ τὴν αὐτὴν ὀνομαζόμενον ἀρετὴν, ταῦτ' αὖτε εἰς τέσσαρας ἀρετὰς μεμελεῖσθαι λέγει. *Justin Martyr. ad Græc. Cohortat.*

Aliter statuit Cyprianus seu quisquis fuit Author lib. de Spirit. Sanct. inter Opera Cypriani. Hic est Spiritus Sanctus quem Magi in Aegypto tertii signi ostensione conviciti, cum sua defecisse præstigia faterentur, Dei digitum appellabant, & antiquis Philosophis ejus intimarunt presentiam defuisse. Et licet de Patre & Filio aliqua sensissent Platonici, Spiritus tamen tumidus & humani appetitor favoris sanctificationem mentis Divina mereri non potuit, & ubi ad profunditatem Sacramentorum deventum est, omnis eorum caligavit subtilitas, nec potuit infidelitas Sanctitudini propinquare. Cyp. de Spirit. Sanct.

is, Effects of his Power; only there is added an intimation how they are all wrought by him, which is by giving them a power for their Operation *variously dividing* them amongst those on whom they were bestowed; and that as it is added, *καὶ τὸ αὐτὸ ἔδωκεν* according unto his own Will. And this place is so directly and fully expounded, 1 Cor. 12. 7, 8, 9, 10, 11. that there is no room of exception left unto the most obstinate. And that place having been opened before in the entrance of this Discourse, I shall not here call it over again. These *μερομοὶ* therefore are his Gifts which as Parts and Parcels of his Work

* τῶν τῷ ἁ-
γίῳ πνεύμα-
τι ἔστι με-
ρὶ διὰ
φορὰ πλείον
ἢ ἑλὰ τῶν
λαμβανόν-
των τῷ ἁγίῳ
πνεύματι
τῷ πνεύματι
τῶν. Origen.
Comment. in
Matthæum.

he giveth out in great variety. * To the same purpose are his Operations described, Isa. 11. 2, 3. *The Spirit of the Lord shall rest upon Him, the Spirit of Wisdom and Understanding, the Spirit of Counsel and of Might, the Spirit of Knowledge and of the Fear of the Lord.* He is first called the Spirit of the Lord to express his Being and Nature; and then he is termed the Spirit of Wisdom and of Counsel, &c. That is He who is the Author of Wisdom and Counsel, and the rest of the Graces mentioned, who *divides* and distributes them according to his own Will. That variety of Gifts and Graces wherewith Believers are endowed and adorned are these *μερομοὶ* or *Distributions* of the Holy Spirit. Hence the principal respect that we have unto him immediately in our Worship of him under the New Testament is, as he is the Author of these various Gifts and Graces. So *John* saluting the Churches of *Asia*, prayeth for Grace for them *from God the Father, and the seven Spirits that are before his Throne*, Rev. 1. 4. That is, the Holy Spirit of God considered in his care of the Church, and his yielding supplies unto it as the Author of that *Perfection of Gifts* and Graces which are and are to be bestowed upon it. So doth the number of *Seven* denote. And therefore whereas our Lord Jesus Christ as the Foundation of his Church was anointed with all the Gifts and Graces of the Spirit in their Perfection, it is said that upon that one Stone should be *seven Eyes*, Zech. 3. 9. all the Gifts of the Seven Spirits of God, or of that Holy Spirit which is the Author of them all.

SECT. 21.

All therefore that is pleaded for the *Division of the Holy Ghost* from this place, is built on the Supposition that we have before rejected; namely, that he is not a Divine Person, but an Arbitrary Emanation of Divine Power; and yet neither so can the *division* of the Holy Ghost pleaded for be with any tolerable sense maintained. *Crellius* sayes indeed that all Divine Inspirations may be considered as *one Whole*, as *many Waters make up one Sea*. In this respect the Holy Ghost is *One*, that is, *one Universal* made up of many *Species*, this is *totum logicum*. And so He may be divided into his *Subordinate Species*. But what Ground or Colour is there for any such Notions in the Scripture? Where is it said that all the Gifts of the Holy Ghost do constitute or make up *one Holy Ghost*? Or the *Holy Ghost* is *one in general*, because many Effects are ascribed unto him? Or that the several Gifts of the Spirit are so many distinct kinds of it? The contrary unto all these is expressly taught; namely, that the One Holy Spirit worketh all these things as he pleaseth, so that they are all of *them* external Acts of his Will and Power. And it is to as little purpose pleaded by the same Author, that he is divided as a *Natural Whole* into its Parts, because there is mention of a Measure

Measure and Portion of him. So God is said not to give him to Jesus Christ by Measure, *John* 3. 34. And to every one of us is given Grace according to the Measure of the Gift of Christ; as though one Measure of him were granted unto One, and another Measure to another. But this Measure is plainly of his Gifts and Graces. These were bestowed on the Lord Christ in all their fulness, without any limitation either as to Kinds or Degrees. They were poured into him according unto the utmost extent and capacity of Humane Nature, and that under an inconceivable advancement by its Union unto the Son of God. Others receive his Gifts and Graces in a limited proportion both as to their Kinds and Degrees. To turn this into a *Division of the Spirit himself* is the greatest madness. And casting aside Prejudices there is no difficulty in the understanding of that saying of God to *Moses*, *Numb.* 11. 17: *I will take of the Spirit that is on thee and put it on the Elders.* For it is evidently of the Gifts of the Spirit enabling Men for Rule and Government that God speaketh and not of the Spirit himself. Without any diminution of that Spirit in him, that is of the Gifts that He had received, God gave unto them, as lighting their Candle by his. And so also the *double Portion* of the Spirit of *Elijah*, which *Elisba* requested for himself, was only a large and peculiar measure of Prophetical Light, above what other Prophets which he left behind him had received; *2 Kin.* 2. 9. He asked *פִּי שְׁנַיִם* *os duorum* or *duplex*; τὸ διπλὸν μέρος, or τὰ διπλά. This Expression is first used *Deut.* 21. 17. where the *double Portion* of the First-Born is intended. So that probably it was such a Portion among the other Prophets, as the *First-Born* had among the Brethren of the same Family, which he desired; and so it came to pass, whence also he had the Rule and Government of them.



B O O K II.

Peculiar Operations
 OF THE
 HOLY SPIRIT
 UNDER THE
 Old Testament
 Preparatory for
 The NEW.

C H A P. I.

- (1.) *The Work of the Spirit of God in the New Creation ; by some despised.*
 (2.) *Works under the Old Testament preparatory to the New Creation.*
 (3, 4.) *Distribution of the Works of the Spirit.* (5.) *The Gift of Prophe-
 sie ; the Nature, Use, and End of it.* (6.) *The beginning of Pro-
 phesie.* (7.) *The Holy Spirit the only Author of it.* (8.) *The Name of a
 Prophet ; its signification, and his Work.* (9.) *Prophefie by Inspiration ;
 whence so called.* (10.) *Prophets how acted by the Holy Ghost.* (11.) *The
 Adjuncts of Prophefie, or distinct wayes of its Communication.* (12.) *Of
 Articulate Voices.* (13.) *Dreams.* (14.) *Visions.* (15.) *Adjuncts of
 Prophefi. Symbolical Actions.* (16.) *Local Mutations.* (17.) *Whether
 unsanctified Persons might have the Gift of Prophefie. The Case of Baa-
 lam.*

Iam. (18.) Answered. (19.) Of writing the Scriptures. (20.) Three things required thereunto. (21.) Of Miracles. (22.) Works of the Spirit of God in the improvement of the Natural Faculties of the Minds of Men in things Political. (23.) In things Moral. (24.) In things Corporeal. (25.) In things Intellectual and Artificial. (26.) In preaching of the Word.

SECT. 1.

HAVING passed through these general things which are of a necessary previous Consideration unto the especial Works of the Holy Ghost, I now proceed unto that which is the principal Subject of our present Design. And this is the Dispensation and Work of the Holy Spirit of God, with respect unto the *New Creation* and the Recovery of Mankind or the Church of God thereby. A Matter this is of the highest Importance unto them that sincerely believe, but most violently and of late virulently opposed by all the *Enemies* of the Grace of God and our Lord Jesus Christ. The Weight and Concernment of the Doctrine hereof, have in part been spoken unto before. I shall at present add no farther Considerations to the same purpose, but leave all that fear the Name of God to make a Judgment of it by what is *revealed* concerning it in the Scriptures, and the *Uses* whereunto it is in them directed. Many we know will not receive these things, but whilst we keep our selves in the handling of them unto that Word whereby one day *both we and they* must either stand or fall; we need not be moved at their Ignorance, or Pride, nor at the Fruits and Effects of them in Reproaches Contempt and scorn. For ἔχει οὗτος ἐνδύναμι οὐμνα.

SECT. 2.

Now the Works of the Spirit in Reference unto the *New-Creation* are of two sorts. First, Such as were *Preparatory* unto it under the *Old Testament*. For I reckon that the State of the *Old-Creation*, as unto our Living unto God, ended with the Entrance of Sin and giving the First Promise. Whatever ensued thereon, in a Way of Grace, was preparatory for and unto the New. 2dly, Such as were *actually wrought* about it under the *New*. Those Acts and Workings of his, which are Common to *both states* of the Church, as is his effectual Dispensation of *sanctifying Grace* towards the Elect of God, I shall handle in Common under the Second Head. Under the First, I shall only reckon up those that were *peculiar* unto that State. To make way hereunto I shall premise two general Positions.

SECT. 3.

1. There is nothing *Excellent* amongst Men, whether it be absolutely *Extraordinary*, and every way above the Production of Natural Principles; or whether it consist in an eminent and peculiar *Improvement* of those Principles and Abilities, but it is ascribed unto the Holy Spirit of God as the immediate *Operator* and Efficient Cause of it. This we shall afterwards confirm by Instances. Of old he was All; now some would have him nothing.

2. Whatever the Holy Spirit wrought in an eminent manner under the *Old Testament*, it had generally and for the most part, if not absolutely and always, a Respect unto our *Lord Jesus Christ* and the Gospel, and so was *preparatory* unto the Compleating of the great Work of the *New-Creation* in and by Him.

And

And these Works of the Holy Spirit, may be referred unto the two sorts mentioned; Namely, (1.) Such as were *Extraordinary* and exceeding the whole compass of the Abilities of Nature however improved and advanced; and (2.) Those which consist in the Improving and *Exaltation* of those Abilities, to answer the Occasions of Life, and Use of the Church. Those of the first sort may be reduced unto three Heads. (1.) *Prophecy*. (2.) *Inditeing of the Scripture*. (3.) *Miracles*. Those of the other sort we shall find. (1.) In things *Political* as skill for Government and Rule amongst Men. (2.) In things *Moral*, as Fortitude and Courage. (3.) In things *Natural* as increase of Bodily strength. (4.) In Gifts *Intellectual*; (1.) for things Sacred, as to preach the Word of God, (2.) In things *Artificial* as in *Bezaliel* and *Aholiab*. The Work of Grace on the Hearts of Men being more fully revealed under the *New-Testament* then before, and of the same Kind and Nature in every state of the Church since the fall, I shall treat of it once for all in its most proper Place.

The First eminent Gift and Work of the Holy Ghost under the Old Testament, and which had the most direct and immediate respect unto Jesus Christ, was that of *Prophecy*. For the Chief and Principal End hereof in the Church was to *foreshew* Him, his Sufferings and the Glory that should ensue; or to appoint such things to be observed in Divine Worship as might be *Types* and Representations of Him. For the Chiefest Priviledg of the Church of *Old* was but to hear *Tidings* of the Things which we enjoy, *Isa.* 33. 17. As *Moses* on the top of *Pisgah* saw the Land of *Canaan*; and in Spirit, the Beauties of Holiness to be erected therein, which was his highest Attainment; So the best of these Saints was to contemplate the *King of Saints* in the Land that was yet very far from them, or Christ in the flesh. And this Prospect which by Faith they obtained was their Chiefest Joy and Glory, *Joh.* 8. 56; yet they all ended their Days as *Moses* did, with respect unto the Type of the Gospel-state, *Deut.* 3. 24, 25. So did they: *Luke* 10. 23, 24. God having provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect, *Heb.* 11. 40. That this was the Principal End of the Gift of Prophecy *Peter* declares; 1 *Epist.* Chap. 1. v. 9, 10, 11, 12. *Receiving the End of your Faith, the Salvation of your Souls; of which Salvation the Prophets have enquired and searched diligently who prophesied of the Grace that should come unto you. Searching what, or what manner of Time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified before hand the sufferings of Christ, and the Glory that should follow, Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the Things, which are now reported unto you.* Some of the Ancients apprehended that some things were spoken obscurely by the Prophets and not to be understood without great search, especially such as concerned the Rejection of the *Jews*, lest they should have been provoked to abolish the Scripture it self. * But the Sum and Substance of the *Prophetical* Work under the Old Testament, with the Light, Design, and Ministry of the *Prophets* themselves, are declared in those Words. The Work was to give *Testimony* unto the Truth of God in the first Promise; concerning the Coming of the Blessing Seed. This was God's Method. First, He gave Himself immediately that Promise which was the

SECT. 5.

* Σημείωσι δ' ὡς τινα μὲν εἰρηται δι' αἰ-
νιγματῶν, τινα δὲ φανεράτερον. τὰ μὲν
ἐν δὲ ἐπιμύθεως ἡγέσθαι τῶν ὅσα πε-
ριτομῆς ἐνεκα πεκαλλυμμένας ἀπο-
δεδοται, διὰ τὰ θεοπρόμυνα κατ'
αὐτῶν σκῆθραπα. δι' ἃ περ εἰκὸς ἦν
ἢ ἀφανίσαι αὐτῶν τὴν γὰρ φῶν, εἰ ὅσα
τῶν προφανῶν τὴν ἐχάτιον αὐτῶν ἀπο-
βολὴν ἐσίμαινεν. Euseb. Demost. E-
vangel. lib. 6. Proem.

Foundation of the Church; *Gen. 3. 15.* Then by Revelation unto the Prophets he confirmed that Promise, after all which the Lord Christ was sent to make them all good unto the Church; *Rom. 15. 8.* Herewithal they received fresh *Revelations* concerning his Person and his Sufferings, with the *Glory* that was to ensue thereon and the Grace which was to come thereby unto the Church. Whilst they were thus employed and acted by the Holy Ghost or the Spirit of Christ, they *diligently endeavoured* to come to an Acquaintance with the Things themselves, in

* Omnes Propheta illa tantummodo sci-
bant quæ illis fuissent a Domino revelata.
Unde & Rex Hieremiam dubio interrogat,
si in ea hora qua cum illo loquebatur apud
eum Sermo Domini haberetur. Sed & E-
liseus dicit, quomodo hæc Dominus abscon-
dit a me, & Elias preter se esse alios qui
Deum colerent ignoravit. Hieron. Com-
ment. in Epist. ad Roman. Cap.2.

their Nature and Efficacy, which were revealed unto them; * yet so as considering that not *Themselves* but some *Succeeding Generations* should enjoy them in their actual Exhibition. And whilst they were intent on these things, they *searched* also, as far as intimation was given thereof by the Spirit, after the *Time* wherein all these things should be accomplished; both when it should be, and what *Manner of time* it should be, or what would be the State and Con-

dition of the People of God in those Days. This was the Principal End of the Gift of *Prophecy*, and this the principal Work and Employment of the *Prophets*. The first Promise was given by God in the *Person of the Son*, as I have proved elsewhere, *Gen. 3. 15.* But the whole Explication Confirmation and Declaration of it, was carried on by the Gift of *Prophecy*.

SECT. 6.

The Communication of this Gift began *betimes* in the World, and continued without any known interruption in the Possession of some one or more in the Church at all times, during its Preparatory or subservient Estate. After the finishing of the *Canon of the Old Testament*, it ceased in the *Judaical Church* until it had a revival in *John the Baptist*, who was therefore Greater than any *Prophet* that went before, because he made the *nearest Approach* unto, and the *clearest Discovery* of the Lord Jesus Christ, the End of all Prophecys. Thus God spake by the mouth of his Holy Prophets, *ἡ ἀρχὴ αἰῶνος*, Luke 1.70. that were from the Beginning of the World. Adam himself had many things revealed unto him; without which he could not have Worshipped God aright in that state and condition whereinto he was come. For although his *Natural Light* was sufficient to direct Him unto all Religious Services required by the Law of Creation; yet was it not so unto all Duties of *that state* whereinto he was brought by the giving of the Promise after the entrance of Sin. So was he guided unto the Observance of such *Ordinances of Worship* as were needful for Him, and accepted with God, as were Sacrifices. The Prophecy of *Enoch* is not only remembred, but called over and recorded; *Jude 14. 15.* And its a matter neither curious nor difficult to demonstrate, that all the *Patriarchs* of Old before the Flood, were guided by a *Prophetical Spirit* in the Imposition of *Names* on those Children who were to succeed them in the sacred Line. Concerning *Abraham* God expressly saith Himself, that he was a *Prophet*, *Gen. 20. 7.* that is, One who used to receive *Divine Revelations*.

Now

Now this Gift of Prophecy was always the immediate Effect of the Operation of the Holy Spirit. So it is both affirmed in general, and in all the Particular Instances of it. In the first way, we have the Illustrious Testimony of the Apostle Peter; 2 Epist. Chap. 1. v. 20, 21. *Knowing this first that no Prophecy of Scripture is of any Private Interpretation, for the Prophecy came not in Old Time by the Will of Man, but Holy Men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.* * This is a Principle among Believers; this they grant and allow in the first Place, as that which they resolve their Faith into; Namely, that the sure word of Prophecy, which they in all Things take heed unto v. 19. was not a fruit of any Mens private conceptions; nor was Subject to the Wills of Men, so as to attain it, or exercise it by their own Ability. But it was given by Inspiration from God; 2 Tim. 3. 16; For the Holy Ghost, by acting, moving, guiding the Minds of Holy Men, enabled them thereunto. This was the sole Fountain and Cause of all true Divine Prophecy that ever was given or granted to the Use of the Church. And in particular the Coming of the Spirit of God upon the Prophets enabling them unto their Work is frequently mentioned. Micah declares in his own Instance how it was with them all, Chap. 3. 8. *But truly I am full of Power by the Spirit of the Lord, and of Judgment, and of Might, to declare unto Jacob his Transgression, and to Israel his Sin.* It was from the Spirit of God alone, that he had all his Ability for the discharge of that Prophetical Office whereunto he was called. And when God would endow Seventy Elders with a Gift of Prophecy; he tells Moses that he would take of the Spirit that was upon him, and give unto them for that Purpose; that is, he would communicate of the same Spirit unto them as was in Him. And where it is said at any time, that God spake by the Prophets, or that the Word of God Came to them, or God spake to them; it is always intended that this was the immediate Work of the Holy Ghost. So says David of Himself; *The Spirit of the Lord spake by Me, or in me; and his word was in my Tongue.* 2 Sam. 23. 2. Hence our Apostle repeating his words ascribes them directly to the Holy Ghost; Heb. 3. 7. *Wherefore, as the Holy Ghost saith, to day if you will hear his voice; and Chap. 4. 7. Saying in David.* So the Words which are ascribed unto the Lord of Hosts, Isa. 6. 9. are asserted to be the Words of the Holy Ghost, Acts 28. 25. He spake to them, or in them by his holy Inspirations; and he spake by them in his effectual infallible guidance of them, to utter, declare, and write what they received from Him; without Mistake or Variation.

* "ΟΙ ὃ τῷ Θεῷ ἀνδραποὶ πνευματοφῶροι πνεύματος ἁγίου, καὶ προφηταὶ γενόμενοι παρ' αὐτοῦ τῷ Θεῷ ἐμπνεύσθητες καὶ σοφισθέντες ἐγένοντο δοκτοὶ, καὶ ὅσοι καὶ δίκαιοι. Theophil. ad Autolycum. lib. 2.

† Prophetæ voces itemq; Virtutes ad fidem Divinitatis edebant. Tertul. Apol. Cap. 18.

Οὐδ' ἀνδρὸς τῷ τοιοῦτον, ἢ σφὺς πνεύματος ἁγίου; ἢ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐν ἑαυτοῖς φάινει τὸ τοιοῦτον πνεῦμα. καὶ ὅτι τὸ μαντικόν, τὸ δὲ ἄλλο τὸ ὅτι μόνον ἐπείν. Plotin. Ennead. 3. lib. 3.

And this Prophecy as to its Exercise is considered two ways. First, SECT. 8. precisely for the Prediction or foretelling things to Come, as the Greek word and the Latine traduced from thence do signify. So Prophecy is a Divine Prediction of future things proceeding from Divine Revelation. But the Hebrew נביא whence are נביא a Prophet, and נביאה Prophecy, is not confined unto any such signification, although Predictions from supernatural Revelation are constantly expressed by it. But in general

the word signifies no more, but to *speak out, interpret* and declare the Minds or Words of another. So God tells *Moses*; that He would *make Him a God unto Pharaoh*; One that should deal with him in the Name, stead and Power of God; and *Aaron his Brother should be his Prophet*; *Exod. 7.1.* that is, one that should *interpret* his meaning and declare his Words unto *Pharaoh*, *Moses* having complained of the Defect of his own Utterance. So Prophets are the *Interpreters*, the Declarers of the Word Will, Mind or Oracles of God unto others. Such an One is described *Job. 33. 23.* Hence those who expounded the Scripture unto the Church under the *New Testament* were called *Prophets*, and their work *Prophecy*; *Rom. 12. 6. 1 Cor. 14. 31, 32.* And under the *Old Testament* those that celebrated the Praises of God with singing in the Temple according to the Institution of *David*, are said therein to *Prophecy*; *1 Chron. 25. 2.* And this Name נביא a *Prophet* was of ancient use; for so God termed *Abraham. Gen. 20. 7.* Afterwards in common use a *Prophet* was called ראה and חזה a *Seer*, because of their Divine Visions; and this was occasioned from those words of God concerning *Moses, Numb. 11. 6.* And this being the Ordinary way of his Revealing himself, namely by Dreams and Visions, Prophets in those Days even from the Death of *Moses* were commonly called *Seers*; which continued in use until the days of *Samuel, 1 Sam. 9. 9.* And איש האלהים a *Man of God*; *1 Sam. 2. 27*; which Name *Paul* gives to the Preachers of the Gospel, *1 Tim. 6. 11. 2 Tim. 3. 17.* And it is not altogether unworthy Observation what *Kimchi* notes, that the Verb נבא is most frequently used in the Passive Conjugation *Niphal*, because it denotes a *receiving* of that from God by way of *Revelation* which is spoken unto others in a way of *Prophecy*. And as it lies before us as an *Extraordinary Gift* of the *Holy Ghost*, it is neither to be confined to the strict Notion of *Prediction* and Foretelling, nor to be extended to every true Declaration of the Mind of God, but only that which is obtained by immediate Revelation.

SECT. 9. This *Peculiar Gift* therefore of the Holy Spirit we may a little distinctly enquire into. And two things concerning it may be considered.

(1.) Its *General Nature*. (2.) The particular ways whereby especial Revelation was granted unto any. First, For its Nature in general it consisted in *Inspiration*. * So the Apostle speaks of the *Prophecies* recorded in the Scripture, *2 Tim. 3. 16.* ΣΟΦΙΣΤΙΚΑ. *Divine Inspiration* was the Original and Cause of it. And the acting of the *Holy Ghost* in communicating his Mind unto the Prophets was called *Inspiration* on a double account. First, in answer unto his Name and Nature. The

* Sed & hoc notandum ex eo quod dixerat; ut videam quid loquatur, in me; Prophetiam Visionem & Eloquium Dei non extrinsecus ad Prophetas fieri, sed intrinsecus & interiori homini respondere. Unde & Zacharias & Angelus inquit, qui loquebatur in me, Hieron. Comment. in Habak. Cap. 2.

Name whereby He is revealed unto us signifieth *Breath*; and He is called the *Breath of God* whereby his Essential Relation to the Father and Son, with his Eternal Natural Emanation from them, is expressed. And therefore when our Saviour gave Him unto his Disciples as a proper *Instructive Emblem* of what he gave he *breathed* upon them, *John 20. 22.* So also in the great Work of the *Infusion* of the Reasonable Soul into the Body of Man, it is said, *God breathed into him the Breath of Life, Gen. 2. 7.* From hence I say it is, namely from the *Nature and Name* of the

Holy

Holy Spirit, that his immediate actings on the Minds of Men in the supernatural Communication of Divine Revelations unto them is called *Inspiration* or *Inbreathing*. And the *Unclean Spirit* counterfeiting his Actings, did *inspire* his Worshipers with a preternatural *Affatus*, by wayes suited unto his own filthy Vileness. Secondly, This Holy Work of the Spirit of God, as it is expressed suitable to his *Name* and *Nature*, so the *Meekness*, *Gentleness*, *Facility* wherewith he works is intended hereby. He did as it were *gently* and *softly breathe* into them the Knowledge and Comprehension of Holy Things. It is an especial and immediate Work wherein he acts suitably unto his *Nature* as a Spirit, the Spirit or Breath of God; and suitably unto his peculiar Personal Properties of *Meekness* Gentleness and Peace. So his Acting is *Inspiration*, whereby he came within the Faculties of the Souls of Men, acting them with a Power that was not their own. It is true when He had thus inspired any with the Mind of God, they had *no Rest* nor could have unless they declared it in its proper Way and Season; Jer. 20. 9. *Then I said I will not make mention of him, nor speak in his Name any more; but his Word was in mine heart as a burning Fire shut up in my Bones, and I was weary with forbearing I could not stay.* But this Disturbance was from a moral sense of their Duty, and not from any violent Agitations of his upon their Natures. And whereas sometimes trouble and consternation of Spirit did befall some of the Prophets in and under the Revelations they received from Him; it was on a double account. First, Of the dreadful Representations of things that were made unto them in Visions. Things of great dread and terror were represented unto their Fancies and Imaginations. Secondly, Of the greatness and dread of the Things themselves revealed, which sometimes were terrible and destructive, Dan. 17. 27. Chap. 7. 15, 28. Hab. 16. Isa. 21. 2, 3, 4. But his Inspirations were gentle and placid.

Secondly, The immediate Effects of this Inspiration were, that those inspired were *moved* or *acted by the Holy Ghost*. Holy Men of God inspired were *moved* or *acted by the Holy Ghost*. Holy Men of God spake *πνεύματι ἁγίῳ φερέμενοι*, 2 Pet. 1. 21. *Moved or Acted by the Holy Ghost*. And two things are intended hereby. First, The Preparation and Elevation of their *Intellectual Faculties*, their Minds and Understandings wherein his Revelations were to be received. He prepared them for to receive the *Impressions* he made upon them, and confirmed their *memories* to retain them. He did not indeed so enlighten and raise their Minds as to give them a *distinct Understanding* and full Comprehension of all the Things themselves that were declared unto them. There was more in their *Inspirations* than they could search into the bottom of. * Hence although the *Prophets* under the Old Testament were made use

Hieron. Proem. Comment. in Isaiam, that the Prophets were not used extatically, but understood the things that were spoken to them; They did not intend that they had by vertue of their Inspiration a full Comprehension of the whole sense of the Revelations made unto them, but onely that they were not in or by Prophecie deprived of the use of their Intellectual Faculties, as it befall Sarranical Enthusiasts. ταῦτα γὰρ ἀληθῶς προφητῶν ἐν ἁγίῳ πνεύματι, ἐρωμένῃν ἔχοντων τὴν διάνοιαν καὶ τὴν διδασκαλίαν καὶ τὴν διαλογίαν, as Epiphanius speaks. Wherefore upon these words of *Austin*, per quosdam scientes, per quosdam nescientes, id quod ex adventu Christi usque nunc & deinceps agitur prænunciaretur esse venturum, de Civitat. Dei, lib. 7. cap. 32. One well adds, *Prophete nec omnes sua vaticinia intelligebant, nec qui intelligebant omnia intelligebant: non enim ex se loquebantur sed ex superiore Dei afflatu; cujus consilia non omnia eis erant manifesta; utebaturque Deus illis non velut consulis futurorum, sed instrumentis quibus homines alloqueretur.*

of to communicate the clearest Revelations and Predictions concerning Jesus Christ, yet in the Knowledge and Understanding of the meaning of them, they were all inferior to *John Baptist*, as he was in this Matter to the meanest Believer, or *least in the Kingdom of Heaven*. Therefore for their own *Illumination* and Edification did they diligently enquire by the ordinary means of Prayer and Meditation, into the meaning of the Spirit of God in those *Prophecies* which themselves received by extraordinary Revelation, *1 Pet. 1. 10, 11*. Nor did *Daniel* who had those express Representations and glorious Visions concerning the Monarchies of the World, and the providential Alterations which should be wrought in them, understand what and how things would be in their Accomplishment. That account he doth give of himself in the close of his Visions, *Chap. 12 8, 9*. But he so raised and prepared their Minds, as that they might be capable to receive and retain those impressions of things which he communicated unto them. So a Man Tunes the Strings of an *Instrument*, that it may in a due manner receive the Impressions of his *Finger* and give out the Sound he intends. He did not speak in them or by them, and leave it unto the Use of their Natural Faculties their Minds or Memories, to understand and remember the things spoken by Him, and so declare them to others. But he himself acted their Faculties, making use of them to express his Words not their own Conceptions. And herein besides other things consists the difference between the Inspirations of the Holy Spirit and those so called of the Devil. The utmost that Satan can do is, to make strong impressions on the Imaginations of Men, or influencing their Faculties by possessing, wresting, distorting the Organs of the Body and Spirits of the Blood. The Holy Spirit is in the Faculties and useth them as his Organs. And this he did secondly with that Light and Evidence of Himself, of his Power, Truth and Holiness, as left them lyable to no *suspicion*, whether their Minds were under his *Conduct* and *Influence* or no. Men are subject to fall so far under the Power of their own *Imaginations*, through the prevalency of a corrupt distempered Fancy, as to suppose them Supernatural Revelations. And *Satan* may and did of old, and perhaps doth so still impose on the minds of some, and communicate unto them such a conception of his Insinuations, as that they shall for a while think them to be from God himself. But in the *Inspirations* of the Holy Spirit, and his actings of the Minds of the Holy Men of old, he gave them *infallible Assurance* that it was himself alone by whom they were acted, *Jer. 23. 28*. If any shall ask by what *tokens* or *Infallible Tokens*, they might know assuredly the *Inspirations of the Holy Spirit*, and be satisfied with such a perswasion as was not liable to mistake, that they were not imposed upon? I must say plainly, That I cannot tell; for these are things whereof we have no Experience. Nor is any thing of this Nature, whatever some falsely and foolishly impute unto them who profess and avow an interest in the ordinary gracious workings of the Holy Ghost, pretended unto. What some *Phrenetical* Persons in their Distempers or under their Delusions have boasted of, no sober or wise Man esteems worthy of any sedate Consideration. But this I say, It was the Design of the Holy Ghost to give those whom He did thus *extraordinarily inspire*, an Assurance sufficient to bear them out in the discharge of their Duty that they were acted by himself alone. For in the

pursuit

pursuit of their Work which they were by Him called unto, they were to
encounter various Dangers, and some of them to lay down their Lives for
 a Testimony unto the Truth of the Message delivered by them. This
 they could not be engaged into without as full an evidence of his acting
 them, as the Nature of Man in such Cases is capable of; The Case of
Abraham fully confirms it. And it is impossible but that in these extra-
 ordinary workings there was such an *impresson of Himself*, his Holiness
 and Authority left on their Minds, as did secure them from all fear of
 Delusion. Even upon the Word as delivered by them unto others, he
 put those *Characters* of Divine Truth, Holiness and Power, as rendred
 it *αξιόμιστον* worthy to be believed, and not to be rejected without the
 highest sin by them unto whom it came. Much more was there such an
 evidence in it unto them who enjoyed its Original Inspiration. Secondly,
 He *acted and guided* them as to the very *Organs* of their Bodies, where-
 by they expressed the Revelation which they had received by Inspiration
 from Him. They spake as they were *acted by the Holy Ghost*. He guided
 their *Tongues* in the Declaration of his Revelations, as the Mind of a
 Man guideth his Hand in writing to express its Conceptions. Hence
David having received Revelations from Him, or being inspired by Him,
 affirms in his Expression of them, That *his Tongue was the Pen of a ready*
Writer, Psal. 45. 2. that is, it was so guided by the Spirit of God to
 express the Conceptions received from Him. And on this account God
 is said to *speak by their Mouths*, as he spake by the *Mouth of the Holy*
Prophets, Luke 1. 70. all of whom had but *one Mouth* on the account
 of their absolute Consent and Agreement in the same Predictions; For
 this is the meaning of *one Voice* or *one Mouth* in a Multitude. The Ho-
 ly Ghost spake by the *Mouth of David*, Acts 1. 16. For whatever they
 received by Revelation they were but the *Pipes* through which the Wa-
 ters of it were conveyed, without the least mixture with any alloy from
 their Frailties or Infirmities. So when *David* had received the Pattern
 of the Temple, and the manner of the whole Worship of God therein
 by the Spirit; 1 Chron. 28. 12. He sayes, * *All this the Lord made me*
understand in writing by his hand upon me, even all the Work of this Pat-
tern; v. 19. The Spirit of God not only revealed it unto him, but so
 guided Him in the *writing of it down*, as that he might understand the
 Mind of God out of what Himself had *written*; or he gave it him so
 plainly and evidently, as if every Particular had been expressed in
 writing by the Finger of God.

* Nec aer vo-
 ce pulsatus
 ad aures co-
 rum perve-
 niebat, sed
 Deus loque-
 batur in ani-
 mo Prophe-
 tarum. Hieron.
 Proem. in lib.
 1. Commen-
 tar. in Isa.

It remaineth that as unto this first extraordinary Work and Gift of
 the Holy Ghost, we consider those especial Wayes and Means which he
 made use of in the Communication of his Mind unto the Prophets, with
 some other accidental Adjuncts of Prophecie. Some following *Maimo-
 nides* in his *More Nebuchim*, have from the several wayes of the Com-
 munication of Divine Revelations, distinguished the *Degrees of Prophe-
 sie* or of the Gifts of it, preferring one above another. This I have
 elsewhere disproved; *Expos. Heb. Chap. 1.* Neither indeed is there ei-
 ther hence or from any other ground the least occasion to feign those *ele-
 ven Degrees* of Prophecie which he thought he had found out; much
 less may the Spirit or Gift of Prophecie be attained by the wayes he
 prescribes,

SECT. II.

* Πνεῦμα ὃ τὸ θεὸς ὡς πᾶσιν μὲν
ἐν ἔστιν. Παρεχ' ὃ πᾶσι τῶν δικαίων πο-
λιτευομένοις καταγομένον, καὶ συμπλε-
κόμενον τῇ ψυχῇ, διὰ παραφρέσεων
ταῖς λοιπαῖς ψυχαῖς τὸ κεκρυμμένον
ἀναγγελλε. Tatian. *Affyr. Contra*
Græcos.

prescribes, and with *Tatianus* seems to give countenance unto. * The distinct outward manners and ways of Revelation mentioned in the Scriptures may be reduced unto three Heads. (1.) *Voices.* (2.) *Dreams.* (3.) *Visions.* And the accidental Adjuncts of it are two; (1.) *Symbolical Actions.* (2.) *Local Mutations.* The Schoolmen after *Aquinas* 22. q. 174. A. 1.

do commonly reduce the means of Revelation unto three Heads. For whereas there are three wayes whereby we come to know any thing. (1.) By our *External Senses.* (2.) By *Impressions on the Phantasie* or *Imagination.* (3.) By *pure Acts of the Understanding*; So God by three wayes revealed his Will unto the Prophets: (1.) By *Objects* of their Senses as by audible *Voices.* (2.) By *Impressions* on the *Imagination* in *Dreams* and *Visions.* (3.) By *Illustration* or enlightning of their *Minds.* But as this last way expresseth *Divine Inspiration*, I cannot acknowledg it as a distinct way of Revelation by it self. For it was that which was absolutely necessary to give an infallible assurance of mind in the other wayes also. And setting that aside, there is none of them but are obnoxious to Delusion.

SECT. 12. First; God sometimes made use of an *Articulate Voice*, speaking out those things which he did intend to declare in words significant of them. So he revealed Himself or his Mind unto *Moses* when he spake to him *face to face* as a Man speaketh unto his Friend, *Exod.* 33. 11. *Numb.* 12. 8. And as far as I can observe the whole Revelation made unto *Moses*, was by outward audible *articulate Voices*, whose Sense was impressed on his Mind by the Holy Spirit. For an *external Voice* without an *inward Elevation* and Disposition of Mind, is not sufficient to give security and assurance of Truth unto him that doth receive it. So God spake to *Elijah*, *1 Kings* 19. 12, 13, 14. as also to *Samuel* and *Jeremiah*, and it may be to all the rest of the Prophets at their first Calling and Entrance into their Ministry. For words formed *miraculously* by God, and conveyed sensibly unto the outward Ears of Men, carry a great Majesty and Authority with them. This was not the usual way of God's revealing his Mind, nor is it signified by that Phrase of Speech, *The Word of the Lord came unto me*; whereby no more is intended but an immediate Revelation by what way or means soever it was granted. Mostly this was by that Secret effectual Impression on their Minds which we have before described. And these *Voices* were either immediately created by God himself as when he spake unto *Moses*, wherein the eminency of the Revelation made unto him principally consisted, or the Ministry of Angels was used in the Formation and Pronunciation of them. But, as we observed before, the *Divine Certainty* of their Minds to whom they were spoken with their Abilities infallibly to declare them unto others, was from an immediate *internal Work* of the Spirit of God upon them. Without this the Prophets might have been imposed on by external audible Voices; nor would they by themselves give their minds an infallible assurance.

Secondly;

Secondly; *Dreams* were made use of under the Old Testament to the same purpose, and unto them also I refer all those *Visions* which they had in their *sleep* though not called *Dreams*. And these in this Case were the immediate Operation of the Holy Ghost as to the Divine and Infal-
Sunt autem multa genera Prophetandi, quorum unum est Somnium quale fuit in Daniele. Hieron. in Hieremiam, cap. 23.
 lible Impressions they conveyed to the Minds of Men. Hence in the Promise of the Plentiful *Pouring out of the Spirit* or Communication of his Gifts, mention is made of *Dreams*, Acts 2. 17. *I will pour out my Spirit upon all flesh, and your Sons and your Daughters shall Prophesie, your young Men shall see Visions, and your old Men shall dream Dreams.* Not that God intended much to make use of this way of *Dreams* and *Nocturnal Visions* under the New Testament; but the intention of the words is to shew, that there should be a plentiful *Effusion* of that Spirit which acted by those various Wayes and Means then under the Old. Only as to some particular Directions God did sometimes continue his Intimations by *Visions in the Rest of the Night*. Such a *Vision* had *Paul*, Acts 16. 10. But of old this was more frequent. So God made a signal Revelation unto *Abraham*, when the *horror of a deep sleep fell upon him*, Gen. 15. 12, 13, 14. And *Daniel* heard the Voice of the words of him that spake unto him, *when he was in a deep Sleep*, Dan. 10. 9. But this *Sleep* of theirs I look not on as Natural, but as that which God sent and cast them into, that therein he might represent the *Image* of things unto their Imaginations. So of old he caused a *deep sleep* to fall on *Adam*, Gen. 2. 21. The Jews distinguish between *Dreams* and those *Visions* in Sleep as they may be distinctly considered; but I cast them together under one Head of Revelation in Sleep. And this way of Revelation was so common, that one who pretended to *Prophecie* would cry out חלמתי חלמתי, *I have dreamed, I have dreamed*, Jer. 23. And by the Devils imitation of God's dealing with his Church, this became a way of *Vaticination* among the Heathen also, *Hom. Ili. 1. ἡ δὲ τ' ὄναρ ἐκ Διὸς ἔστιν; A Dream is from Jupiter.* And when the reprobate Jews were deserted as to all Divine Revelations, they pretended unto a singular skill in the Interpretation of *Dreams*, on the account of their deceit wherein they were sufficiently infamous.

Qualiacumque voles Judæi somnia vendent.

Thirdly; God revealed himself in and by *Visions* or Representations of things to the inward or outward senses of the Prophets. And this way was so frequent, that it bare the Name for a Season of all Prophe-
SECT. 14.
 tical Revelations. For so we observed before that a Prophet of old time was called a *Seer*. And that because in their receiving of their Prophecies they saw *Visions* also. So *Isaiah* terms his whole Glorious Prophecie חזון אשר חזו the *Vision which he saw*, Chap. 1. 1. partly from the especial *Representation* of things that were made unto Him, Chap. 6. 1, 2, 3. and partly it may be from the *Evidence* of the things revealed unto him, which were cleared as fully to his Mind as if he had had an ocular inspection of them. So from the Matter of them, Prophecies began in common to be called the *Burden of the Lord*. For he burdened their Consciences with his Word, and their Persons with its Execution. But when false Prophets began to make frequent use and

to serve themselves of this Expression it was forbidden, *Jer.* 23. 33, 36. And yet we find that there is mention hereof about the same Time it may be by *Habbakuk*, Chap. 1. 1. as also after the return from the Captivity, *Zech.* 9. 1. *Mal.* 1. 1. Either therefore this respected that onely season wherein false Prophets abounded, whom God would thus deprive of their Pretence; or indeed the People by Contempt and Scorn did use that Expression as that which was familiar unto the Prophets in their Denunciation of God's Judgments against them, which God here rebukes them for and threatens to revenge. But none of the Prophets had all their Revelations by *Visions*; nor doth this concern the Communication of the Gift of Prophecy but its Exercise. And their *Visions* are particularly recorded. Such were those of *Isa.* 6. 1, 2. *Jer.* 1. 11, 14, 15. *Ezek.* 1. and the like. Now these

* *Propheta Deum qui corporaliter invisibilis est, non corporaliter sed spiritualiter videt. Nam multa genera Visionis in Scripturis Sanctis inveniuntur. Unum secundum oculos corporis, sicut vidit Abraham tres viros sub Ilce Mambre. Alterum secundum quod imaginamur ea quæ per Corpus sentimus. Nam & pars ipsa nostra cum Divinitus assumitur, multa revelantur non per oculos corporis, aut aures, aliumve sensum carnalem, sed tamen his similia, sicut vidit Petrus discum illum submitti a Cælo cum variis animalibus. Tertium autem genus Visionis est secundum mentis intuitum quo intellecta conspiciuntur veritas & sapientia; sine quo genere illa duo quæ prius posui vel infructuosæ sunt vel in Errorem mittunt. August. contra Adamantum cap. 28.*

Visions were of two sorts. * (1.) *Outward Representations* of things unto the bodily Eyes of the Prophets. (2.) *Inward Representations* unto their Minds. (1.) There were sometimes appearances of Persons or Things made to their outward Senses. And herein God made use of the Ministry of Angels. Thus three Men appeared unto Abraham, *Gen.* 18. 1, 2. one whereof was the Son of God himself, the other two Ministering Angels as hath been proved elsewhere. So was the Burning Bush which Moses saw, *Exod.* 3. 2. The Appearances without similitude of any living thing on Mount Sinai at the giving of the Law, *Exod.* 19. The Man that Joshua saw at the Siege of Jericho, Chap. 5. 13, 14. Such were the *Seething-Pot* and *Almond-Rod* seen by Jeremiah, Chap. 1. 11,

14. as also his Baskets of *Figs*, and many more of the like kind might be instanced in. In these Cases God made Representations of Things unto their outward Senses. (2.) They were made sometimes only to their Minds. So it is said expressly that when Peter saw his Vision of a Sheet knit at the four Corners and let down from Heaven to Earth he was in a Trance, ἐπέπεσεν ἐπ' αὐτὸν ἕντασις, *Acts* 10. 10. An Extasie seized on him, whereby for a season he was deprived of the use of his bodily Senses. And to this Head I refer Daniel's and the Apocalyptical Visions. Especially I do so all those wherein a Representation was made of God himself and his Glorious Throne. Such as that of *Micaiah*, 1 Kings 22. 18. and *Isa.* 6. 1. *Ezek.* 1. 3, 4, 5. It is evident that in all these there was no use of the bodily Senses of the Prophets, but onely their Minds were affected with the Idea's and Representation of Things. But this was so effectual, as that they understood not but that they also made use of their visive Faculty. Hence Peter when he was actually delivered out of Prison, thought a good while that he had only seen a Vision, *Acts* 12. 9. for he knew how powerfully the Mind was wont to be affected by them. Now these *Visions* of both sorts were granted unto the Prophets to confirm their Minds in the Apprehension of the Things communicated unto them for the instruction of others. For hereby they were deeply affected with them, whereunto a clear Idea and Representati-

on of things doth effectually tend. But yet two things were required to render these *Visions* direct and compleat Parts of Divine Revelation. (1.) That the *Minds* of the Prophets were acted guided and raised in a due manner by the Holy Spirit for the receiving of them; this gave them their Assurance that their *Visions* were from God. (2.) His enabling them faithfully to retain, and *infallibly* to declare what was so represented unto them, For instance, *Ezekiel* receiveth a *Vision* by way of Representation unto his Mind of a Glorious Fabrick of a *Temple*, to instruct the Church in the Spiritual Glory and Beauty of Gospel-Worship which was to be introduced, Chap. 44. 4, 5, 6, &c. It seems utterly impossible for the Mind of Man to *conceive* and retain at once all the *Harmonious Structure, Dimensions*, and Laws of the Fabrick represented. This was the peculiar Work of the *Holy Ghost*, namely to implant and preserve the *Idea* presented unto him on his Mind, and to enable him accurately and *infallibly* to declare it. So *David* affirms that the Spirit of God made him to understand the Pattern of the Temple built by *Solomon* in writing by his hand upon him.

Secondly; There were some *Accidental Adjuncts* of Prophecie, which SECT. 15. at some times accompanied it. In the Revelation of the Will of God to the Prophets, they were sometimes enjoined *Symbolical Actions*. So *Isaiah* was commanded to walk naked and bare-foot, Isa. 20. 1, 2, 3. *Jeremiah* to dispose of a *Linnen Girdle*, Chap. 13. 1, 2. *Ezekiel* to lie in the *Siege*, Chap. 4. 1, 2, 3, 4. and to remove the *Stuff of his House*, Chap. 12. 3, 4. *Hosea* to take a Wife of *Whoredoms*, and *Children of Whoredoms*, Hof. 1. 2. I shall be brief in what is frequently spoken unto. Some of these things, as *Isaiah's* going Naked, and *Hosea's* taking a Wife of *Whoredoms*, contain things in them against the Light of Nature and the exprefs Law of God, and of evil example unto others. None of these therefore can be granted to have been *actually done*; only these things were represented unto them in *Visions* to take the deeper impressi- on upon them. And what they saw or did in Vision, they speak *positively* of their so seeing or doing, see *Ezek.* 8. 3, 4. For the other Instances, I know nothing but that the things reported might be really performed and not in *Vision* only. And it is plain that *Ezekiel* was commanded to do the things he did in the sight of the People for their more evident conviction, Chap. 12. 4, 5, 6. and on the sight whereof they made enquiry what those things belonged unto them, Chap. 24. 19.

Secondly; Their Revelations were accompanied with *Local Mutati-* SECT. 16. *ons*, or their being carried and transported from one place unto another; So was it with *Ezekiel*, Chap. 8. 3. & 11. 24. And it is expressly said, that it was in the *Visions* of God. Falling by Divine Dispensation into a *Trance or Extasie*, wherein their outward Senses were suspended their O- peration, their Minds and Understandings were unto their own Appre- hension carried in a Holy Rapture from one place unto another, which was effected only by a Divine and Efficacious *Representation* of the things unto them, which were done in the places from whence they were really absent. And these are some of those *Accidents of Propheti- cal Revelations* which are recorded in the Scripture; and it is possible that some other Instances of the like nature may be observed. And all

these belong to the πολυετία ἡ θείας ἐπιλύσεως, or manifold variety of Divine Revelations mentioned *Heb. 1. 1.*

SECT. 17. But here a doubt of no small Difficulty nor of less Importance presents it self unto us. Namely, whether the Holy Ghost *did ever grant his Holy Inspirations, and the Gift of Prophecie thereby, unto Men wicked and unsanctified.* * For

* *Prophetæ erant Baal, & Prophetæ confusions, & alii offensionum, & quoscunque vitiosos prophetas Scriptura Commemorat.* Hieron. *Comment. in Epist. ad Titum. cap. 1.*

† Ζητήσεις ἡ εἰ πάντες, εἰ τις προφητεύει, ἐκ πνεύματος & ἁγίας προφητεύει; πῶς ἡ ῥητήσεως ἄξιον ἐστίν, εἰ γὰρ δόξιδ' μετὰ τὴν ἐπὶ τῷ οὐρανοῦ ἀμαρτίαν ἐυλαβέμεν & ἀφαιρεθῆναι ἀπὸ αὐτῶ τὸ ἄγιον πνεῦμα φησι. τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἄγιον οὐ μὴ ἀντανέλῃς ἀπὸ ἐμῶ. — ἔτω ἡ ζητήσεως ἄξιον ὅτι τὸ θεῶν τῷ ἁγίῳ πνεύματι & εἰ δύνανται εἶναι καὶ ἐν ἀμαρτωλῶ ἄνθρωποι. Origen. *Commentar. in Johan. Tom. 30.*

Prophetiæ mysterio usi sunt etiam qui exorbitaverant a vera Religione, quia & illis dedit Deus Verbum suum ut mysteria futura pronuntiarent hominibus. Hieron. *Comment. in Job, cap. 33.*

Nam & Prophetare & Dæmonia excludere & virtutes magnas in terris facere sublimis utique & admirabilis res est, non tamen regnum cæleste consequitur quisquis in his omnibus invenitur, nisi recti & justī itineris observatione gradiatur. Cyprian. *de Veritat. Ecclesiæ.*

Enchantments. And yet this Man not onely professeth of himself that he heard the Words of God and saw the Visions of the Almighty, *Numb. 24. 4.* but did actually foretel and prophesie Glorious Things concerning Christ and his Kingdom. Shall we then think that the Holy Spirit of God will immix his own *Holy Inspirations* with the wicked suggestions of the Devil in a South-sayer? Or shall we suppose that the Devil was the Author of those Predictions, whereas God reproacheth false Gods and their Prophets acted by them, that they could not declare the things that should happen, nor shew the things that were to come afterwards? *Isa. 41. 22, 23.* So also it is said of Saul that the Spirit of the Lord departed from him, and an Evil Spirit vexed him; and yet afterwards that the Spirit of God came upon him and he prophesied, *1 Sam. 19. 24.* The Old Prophet at Bethel who lyed unto the Prophet that came from Judah, and that in the Name of the Lord, seducing him unto Sin and Destruction, and probably defiled with the Idolatry and false Worship of *Jereboam*, was yet esteemed a Prophet, and did foretel what came to pass, *1 Kings 13.*

Sundry

Sundry things may be offered for the Solution of this Difficulty. For SECT. 18.

(1.) as to that place of the Apostle *Peter*; (1.) It may not be taken *Universally*, that all who prophesied at any time were *Personally Holy*, but only that for the most part so they were. (2.) He seems to speak particularly of *them only* who were *Pen-men of the Scripture*, and of those Prophecies which remain therein for the Instruction of the Church, concerning whom I no way doubt but that they were all *Sanctified and Holy*. (3.) It may be that he understandeth not *real inherent Holiness*, but only a Separation and Dedication unto God by especial Office, which is a thing of another nature. (2.) The *Gift of Prophecy* is granted not to be in it self and its own Nature a *Sanctifying Grace*, nor is the Inspiration so whereby it is wrought. For whereas it consists in an affecting of the Mind with a *transient irradiation of Light* in hidden things, it neither did nor could of it self produce *Faith, Love, or Holiness* in the Heart. Another Work of the Holy Ghost was necessary hereunto. (3.) There is therefore no Inconsistency in this Matter, that God should grant an *immediate Inspiration* unto some that were not really sanctified. And yet I would not grant this to have been actually done without a just Limitation. For whereas some were *established to be Prophets* unto the Church in the whole course of their Lives after their first Call from God, as *Samuel, Elijah, Elisha, Jeremiah*, and the rest of the Prophets mentioned in the Scripture; in like manner I no way doubt but they were all of them *really sanctified* by the Holy Spirit of God. But others there were who had only some occasional Discoveries of *hidden or future things* made unto them, or fell into some Extasies or Raptures with a Supernatural Agitation of their Minds (as it is twice said of *Saul*) for a short Season. And I see no Reason why we may not grant, yea from Scripture-Testimonies we must grant, that many such Persons may be so acted by the Holy Spirit of God. So was it with wicked *Caiaphas* who is said to Prophecy, *John 11. 51*. And a great Prophecy indeed it was which his words expressed, greater than which there is none in the Scripture. But the Wretch himself knew nothing of the Importance of what was uttered by him. A sudden Impression of the Spirit of God caused him against his Intention to utter a *Sacred Truth*, and that because he was *High Priest* whose words were of great Reputation with the People. * And as *Balaam* was over-ruled to Prophecy and speak good of *Israel*, when he really designed and desired to curse them: So this *Caiaphas* designing the Destruction of Jesus Christ, brought forth those words which expressed the Salvation of the World by his Death. (5.) For the Difficulty about *Balaam* himself who was a *Sorcerer* and the *Devil's Prophet*, I acknowledg it is of Importance. But sundry things may be offered for the removal of it. (1.) Some do contend that *Balaam* was a Prophet of God only. That indeed he gave himself unto *Judicial Astrologie*, and the Conjectures of future Events from Natural Causes. But as to his Prophecies they were all Divine; and the Light of them affecting only the *Speculative Part* of his Mind; had no influence upon his Will, Heart, and Affections which were still corrupt. This *Tostatus*

* Εἰ τις μὴ ἐν προφῆτῃς ᾄδῃ, πάν-
τας προφητεύει; εἰ ὁ τις προφητεύει ὃ
πάντας ᾄδῃ προφῆτῃς. — ἐκ
ὧ τῶν ᾄδῃ καὶ ἀφ' ἀναγκασιμμέ-
νων, προφητεύσαντα ᾄδῃ τὸ σωτήριον,
εἰς ὅτι καὶ μοχθῶσι ψυχὴ ὁππότε χε-
ταί ποτε τὸ προφητεύειν. Origeni
Comment. in Johan. Sect. 30.

pleadeth

pleadeth for. But as it is expressly said, That he sought for Enchantments, Numb. 24. 1. So the whole Description of his Course and End gives him up as a Cursed Sorcerer, and he is expressly called *חֹמֶק*, a Sooth-sayer, Josh. 12. 22. Which word though we have once rendred by Prudent, that is, One who prudently conjectureth at future Events according unto present appearing Causes, Isa. 3. 2. yet it is mostly used for a Diabolical Diviner or Sooth-sayer. And for what he said of himself, That he heard the Voice of God, and saw the Visions of the Most High, it might be only his own boasting to procure veneration to his Diabolical Incantations. But in Reputation we find he was in those dayes in the World, and supposed he was to utter Divine Oracles unto Men. This God in his Providence made use of to give out a Testimony to the Nations concerning the coming of the *Messiah*, the Report whereof was then almost lost amongst Men. In this condition it may be granted, that the Good Spirit of God, without the least Reflection on the Majesty and Purity of his own Holiness did over-rule the Power of the Devil, cast out his Suggestions from the Man's Mind, and gave such an Impression of Sacred Truths in the room of them, as he could not but utter and declare. For that instant he did as it were take the Instrument out of the Hand of Satan, and by his Impression on it caused it to give a sound according to his Mind, which when he had done he left it again unto his Possession.

* Saul invidie stimulo fuscitatus & malo Spiritu saepe arreptus, cum David occidere vellet, & ipse David tunc cum Samuel & ceterorum Prophetarum cuneo Prophetaret, misit Saul nuncios & ipsum interficiendum de medio Prophetarum rapere jubet. Sed & ipse cum inter Prophetas venerat Prophetabat.---

And I know not but that he might do so sometimes with others among the Gentiles who were professedly given up to receive and give out the Oracles of the Devil. So he made the Damsel possessed with a Spirit of Divination and Sooth-saying to acknowledg Paul and his Companions to be Servants of the most High God, and to shew to Men the way of Salvation, Acts 16. 16, 17. And this must be acknowledged by them who suppose that the Sybills gave out Predictions concerning Jesus Christ, seeing the whole strain of their Prophetical Oracles were expressly Diabolical. And no Conspiracy of Men or Devils shall cause him to forego his Sovereignty over them, and the using of them to his own Glory. (6.) The Case of Saul is plain. The Spirit of the Lord who departed from him, was the Spirit of Wisdom, Moderation and Courage to fit him for Rule and Government, that is, the Gifts of the Holy Ghost unto that purpose, which he withdrew from him. And the Evil Spirit that was upon him, proceeded no farther but to the stirring up Vexatious and disquieting Affections of Mind. And notwithstanding this molestation and punishment inflicted on him, the Spirit of God might at a season fall upon him so as to cast him into a Rapture or Extasie wherein his Mind was acted and exercised in an extraordinary manner, and himself transported into Actions that were not at all according unto his own Inclinations. So is this Case well resolved by * Augustine. And for the old Prophet at Bethel,

Quoniam Spiritus Sancti verba non dicentium merito pensantur, sed ipsius voluntate ubicunque voluerit proferuntur. At vero quidam in hoc loco estimant quod Saul non Divino Spiritu sed malo illo quo saepe arripiebatur per totum illum diem Prophetaret. — Sed qualiter hoc sentiri potest cum ita scribitur: & Sanctus est super eum Spiritus Domini & ambulans prophetabat? nisi forte sic in hoc loco accipiat Spiritus Domini quomodo & alio loco Spiritus Domini malus Saul arripiebat. Verumtamen ubicunque sine additamento Spiritus Dei vel Spiritus Domini vel Spiritus Christi in Scripturis Sanctis invenitur, Spiritus Sanctus esse a nullo sano sensu dubitatur. Ubicunque vero cum additamento Spiritus Domini malus dicitur esse, intelligitur Diabolus esse, qui Domini propter ministerium, malus propter vitium dicitur videretur. August. de mirabil. Scripturae, lib. 2. cap. 10.

1 Kings 13. although he appear to have been an *evil Man*, yet he was one whom God made use of to reveal his Mind sometimes to that People; nor is it probable that he was under *Satanical Delusions* like the *Prophets of Baal*; for he is absolutely called a *Prophet*, and the Word of the Lord did really come unto him, v. 20, 21.

The *Writing of the Scripture* was another Effect of the Holy Ghost, SECT. 19: which had its beginning under the Old Testament. I reckon this as a *distinct Gift* from Prophecy in general, or rather a *distinct Species* or kind of Prophecy. For many Prophets there were Divinely Inspired, who yet never wrote any of their *Prophecies*, nor any thing else for the use of the Church. And many *Pen-men of the Scripture*, were *no Prophets* in the strict sense of that Name. And the Apostle tells us that the *ἡ γέγραπται*, the *Scripture* or *Writing* it self was by *Inspiration* from God, 1 Tim. 3. 16. as *David* affirms that he had the Pattern of the Temple from the Spirit of God *in Writing*, because of his guidance of him in putting its Description into Writing, 1 Chron. 28. 19. Now this Ministry was first committed unto *Moses*, who besides the *Five Books of the Law*, probably also wrote the Story of *Job*. Many Prophets there were before Him, but he was the first who committed the Will of God to *Writing*, after God himself who wrote the Law in Tables of Stone; which was the Beginning and Pattern of the Scriptures. The Writers of the *Historical Books* of the Old Testament before the Captivity are unknown. The *Jews* call them *נביאים ראשונים* the first or *former Prophets*. Who they were in particular is not known; but certain it is that they were of the Number of those *Holy Men of God*, who of old Wrote and Spoke as they were moved by the Holy Ghost; Hence are they called *Prophets*. For although they wrote in an *Historical* manner, as did *Moses* also, concerning things past and gone in their Dayes, or it may be presently acted in their own Times, yet they did not Write them either from their own *Memory*, nor from *Tradition*, nor from the *Rolls* or *Records* of Times, (although they might be furnished with and skilled in these things) but by the Inspiration, Guidance and Direction of the Holy Ghost. Hence are they called *Prophets* in such a Latitude as the Word may be used in, to signify any that are *Divinely Inspired*, or receive immediate Revelations from God. And thus was it with all the Pen-men of the Holy Scripture. As their Minds were under that full assurance of *Divine Inspiration* which we before described, so their words which they wrote were under the especial care of the same Spirit, and were of his Suggestion or Inditing.

There were therefore three things concurring in this Work. (1.) The SECT. 20. *Inspiration* of the Minds of these Prophets, with the Knowledge and Apprehension of the things communicated unto them. (2.) The *Suggestion of words* unto them to express what their Minds conceived. (3.) The *guidance of their Hands* in setting down the words suggested, or of their Tongues in uttering them unto those by whom they were committed to Writing, as *Baruch* wrote the Prophecy of *Jeremiah* from his Mouth, Jer. 36. 3. 18. If either of these were wanting, the Scripture could not be absolutely and every way Divine and Infallible. For if the Pen-Men of it were left unto themselves in any thing wherein that Writing

Q

was

was concerned, who can secure us that *nihil Humani*, no Humane Imperfection mixed it self therewithal. I know some think that the *Matter* and *Substance* of things only was communicated unto them; but as for the *words* whereby it was to be expressed, that was left unto themselves and their own Abilities. And this they suppose is evident from that *variety of Stile* which according to their various Capacities, Education and Abilities, is found amongst them. This argues, as they say, that the *wording* of their Revelations was left unto themselves, and was the Product of their *Natural Abilities*. This in general I have spoken unto elsewhere, and manifested what mistakes fundry have run into about the *Stile of the Holy Pen-Men of the Scripture*. Here I shall not take up what hath been argued and evinced in another place. I only say that the *variety* intended ariseth mostly from the *variety* of the Subject Matters treated of; nor is it such as will give any countenance to the prophaneness of this Opinion. For the Holy Ghost in his Work on the Minds of Men doth not put a *force* upon them, nor acts them any otherwise than they are in their own Natures, and with their present Endowments and Qualifications *meet* to be acted and used. He leads and conducts them in such Paths wherein they are *able to walk*. The words therefore which he suggests unto them are such as they are accustomed unto, and he causeth them to make use of such Expressions as were familiar unto themselves. So he that useth *divers Seals* maketh different Impressions, though the guidance of them all be *equal* and the same. And he that toucheth skilfully several *Musical Instruments* variously tuned, maketh several Notes of Musick. We may also grant and do, That they used their own *Abilities of Mind* and Understanding in the choice of Words and Expressions. So the *Preacher* sought to find out *acceptable words*, Eccles. 12. 10. But the Holy Spirit who is more intimate unto the Minds and Skill of Men than they are themselves, did so guide act and operate in them, as that the words they fixed upon were as directly and certainly from him, as if they had been spoken to them by an *audible Voice*. Hence that which was written was upright, even Words of Truth, as in that place. This must be so or they could not speak as they were *moved by the Holy Ghost*, nor could their *Writing* be said to be of *Divine Inspiration*. Hence oft-times in the *Original* great Senses and Significations depend on a single *Letter*, as for instance in the change of the Name of *Abraham*; And our Saviour affirms that every *Apex* and *iota* of the Law, is under the care of God as that which was given by Inspiration from himself, *Matth.* 5. But I have on other occasions treated of these things, and shall not therefore here enlarge upon them.

SECT. 21. The third sort of the immediate *extraordinary Operations* of the Holy Ghost absolutely exceeding the actings and compliance of Humane Faculties are *Miracles* of all sorts, which were frequent under the Old Testament. Such were many things wrought by *Moses* and *Josbua*, *Elijah* and *Elisha* with some others; those by *Moses* exceeding, if the *Jews* fail not in their Computation, all the rest that are recorded in the Scripture. Now these were all the *immediate Effects* of the Divine Power of the Holy Ghost. He is the sole Author of all *real* miraculous Operations. For by *Miracles* we understand such Effects as are *really* beyond and above

above the Power of Natural Causes however applied unto Operation. Now it is said expressly that our Lord Jesus Christ wrought Miracles (for Instance, the casting out of Devils from Persons possessed) by the *Holy Ghost*. And if their *immediate Production* were by him in the Humane Nature of Jesus Christ personally united unto the Son of God; how much more must it be granted that it was *He alone* by whose Power they were wrought in those who had no such Relation unto the Divine Nature. And therefore where they are said to be wrought by the *Hand* or *Finger* of God, it is the *Person of the Holy Spirit* which is precisely intended as we have declared before; And the Persons by whom they were wrought were never the *real Subjects* of the Power whereby they were wrought, as though it should be inherent and residing in them as a *Quality*, *Acts* 2. 12, 16. Only they were infallibly directed by the *Holy Ghost* by Word or Action to presignifie their Operation. So was it with *Josbua* when he commanded the *Sun and Moon to stand still*, *Josh.* 10. 12. There was no Power in *Josbua*, no not extraordinarily communicated to Him, to have such a real influence upon the whole frame of Nature as to effect so great an Alteration therein. Onely he had a *Divine Warranty* to speak that which God himself would effect; whence it is said that therein *God hearkned unto the Voice of a Man*, *v.* 14. It is a vanity of the greatest magnitude in some of the Jews as *Maimonides More Nebuch.* p. 2. cap. 35. *Levi B. Gerson* on the place, and others who deny any fixation of the Sun or Moon, and judg that it is only the speed of *Josbua* in subduing his Enemies before the close of that day which is intended. This they contend for lest *Josbua* should be thought to have wrought a greater Miracle than *Moses*. But as the Prophet *Habakkuk* is expresse to the contrary, *c.* 3. 11. and their own *Sirachides*, *c.* 45. 56. so it is no small prevarication in some Christians to give countenance unto such a putrid Fiction, see *Grot.* in loc. It is so in all other *miraculous* Operations, even where the Parts of the Bodies of Men were made instrumental of the *Miracle* it self, as in the *Gift of Tongues*. They who had that Gift did not so speak from any Skill or Ability residing in them, but they were merely *Organs* of the *Holy Ghost* which he moved at his Pleasure. Now the end of all these *miraculous Operations* was to give reputation to the Persons, and to confirm the *ministry* of them by whom they were wrought. For as at first they were the occasion of *wonder* and astonishment, so upon their consideration they evidenced the respect and regard of God unto *such Persons* and their Work. So when God sent *Moses* to declare his Will in an extraordinary manner unto the People of *Israel*, he commands him to work several Miracles or Signs before them that they might believe that he was sent of God, *Exod.* 4. 8. And such Works were called *Signs*, because they were Tokens and Pledges of the Presence of the Spirit of God with them by whom they were wrought. Nor was this Gift ever bestowed on any Man *alone* or for its own sake, but it was alwayes subordinate unto the Work of Revealing or Declaring the Mind of God. And these are the general Heads of the *extraordinary Operations* of the *Holy Spirit* of God in Works exceeding all Humane or Natural Abilities in their whole kind.

The next sort of the Operations of the *Holy Ghost* under the Old Te- SECT. 22.
 stament whose Explanation was designed, is of those whereby he im-

proved through immediate impressions of his own Power, the *Natural Faculties* and Abilities of the Minds of Men. And these as was intimated have respect to things *Political, Moral, Natural, and Intellectual*, with some of a mixed Nature. First, He had in them respect unto things *Political*, such were his *Gifts* whereby he enabled sundry Persons unto *Rule* and *Civil Government* amongst Men. Government or Supream Rule is of great concernment unto the Glory of God in the World and of the highest usefulness unto Mankind. Without it the whole World would be filled with *violence*, and become a *Stage* for all Wickedness visibly and openly to act it self upon in disorder and confusion. And all Men confesse that unto a due management hereof unto its proper Ends, sundry *peculiar Gifts* and Abilities of Mind are required in them and needful for them who are called thereunto. These are they themselves to endeavour after and sedulously to improve the *Measures* which they have attained of them. And where this is by any neglected, the *World and themselves* will quickly feed on the Fruits of that Negligence. But yet because the utmost of what Men may of this kind obtain by their ordinary endeavours and an ordinary Blessing thereon, is not sufficient for some *especial ends* which God aimed at in and by their Rule and Government; the Holy Ghost did oftentimes give an *especial Improvement* unto their Abilities of Mind by his own immediate and extraordinary Operation. And in some Cases he manifested the Effects of his *Power* herein by some *external visible Signs* of his coming on them in whom he so wrought. So in the first Institution of the *Sanhedrim* or Court of *Seventy Elders*, to bear together with *Moses* the Burden of the People in their Rule and Government; the Lord is said to put his Spirit upon them, and that the Spirit rested on them, Numb. 11. 16, 17. And the Lord said unto *Moses*, Gather unto me *Seventy Men* of the *Elders* of *Israel*, whom thou knowest to be *Elders* of the *People* and *Officers* over them. And I will take of the Spirit that is upon thee and put it upon them, and they shall bear the burden of the *People* with thee, vers. 25. And the Lord took of the Spirit that was on *Moses* and gave it unto the *Seventy Elders*, and the Spirit rested on them. That which these *Elders* were called unto, was a share in the Supream Rule and Government of the *People*, which was before intirely in the hand of *Moses*. This the occasion of their Call declares, vers. 11, 12, 13, 14, 15. and they were *שוטרים* inferior Officers before; such as they had in *Egypt* who influenced the *People* by their Counsel and Arbitration, Exod. 3. 16. Chap. 5. 6. Chap. 24. 1, 9. Now they had a Supream Power in Judgment committed to them, and were thence called *אלהים* or *Gods*. For these were they unto whom the *Word of God* came who were thence called *Gods*, John 10. 34, 35. Psal. 82. 6. and not the *Prophets* who had neither Power nor Rule. And on them the Spirit of God that was in *Moses* rested; that is, wrought the same Abilities for Government in them as he had received. That is, *Wisdom, Righteousness, Diligence, Courage* and the like; that they might judge the *People* wisely, and look to the Execution of the Law impartially. Now when the Spirit of God thus rested on them, it is said they *Prophefied* and ceased not, v. 25, 26. That is, they sang or spake forth the *Praises of God* in such a way and manner as made it evident unto all that they were *extraordinarily acted* by the Holy Ghost. So is that Word used 1 Sam. 10. 10. and elsewhere.

But

But this *Gift* and *Work of Propheſie* was not the eſpecial End for which they were endowed by the Spirit, for they were now called as hath been declared unto *Rule* and *Government*. But becauſe their *Authority* and *Rule* was *new* among the People, God gave that viſible Sign and Pledg of his calling them to their Office, that they might have a *due Veneration* of their Perſons and acquieſce in their Authority. And hence from the Ambiguiry of that word יסרו לא which we render and *ceaſed not*, they *propheſied and ceaſed not*, verſ. 25. which may ſignifie to *add* as well as to *ceae*; many of the Jews affirm that they ſo *propheſied no more* but that day only; they *propheſied then and added not*, that is, to do ſo any more. So when God would erect a *Kingdom* amongſt them, which was a new kind of Government unto them, and deſigned *Saul* to be the Perſon that ſhould Reign, it is ſaid that he *gave him another heart*; 1 Sam. 10. 9. that is, the *Spirit of God* came upon him as it is elſewhere expreſſed to endow him with that Wiſdom and Magnanimity that might make him meet for Kingly Rule. And becauſe he was new called from a *Low Condition* unto *Royal Dignity*; the Communication of the Spirit of God unto him was accompanied with a *Viſible Sign* and *Token*, that the People might acquieſce in his Government who were ready to deſpiſe his Perſon. For he had alſo an extraordinary *Afflatus* of the Spirit expreſſing it ſelf in a *Viſible Rapture*, verſ. 10, 11. And in like manner he dealt with others. For this cauſe alſo he inſtituted the Ceremony of *Anointing* at their Inauguration; for it was a Token of the Communication of the *Gifts of the Holy Ghoſt* unto them; though reſpect were had therein to *Jeſus Chriſt* who was to be *anointed with all his fulneſſ*, of whom they were *Types* unto that People. Now theſe Gifts for Government are *Natural* and *Moral Abilities* of the Minds of Men, ſuch as are Prudence, Righteouſneſs, Courage, Zeal, Clemency and the like. And when the Holy Ghoſt fell upon any Perſons to enable them for *Political Rule* and the Adminiſtration of Civil Power, he did not Communicate Gifts and *Abilities* unto them quite of another kind, but only gave them an extraordinary *improvement* of their own ordinary Abilities. And indeed ſo great is the *Burden* wherewith a juſt and uſeful Government is attended, ſo great and many are the *Temptations* which Power and a Confluence of Earthly Things will invite and draw towards them, that without ſome *eſpecial Aſſiſtance* of the Holy Spirit of God, Men cannot chuſe but either *ſink* under the weight of it, or wretchedly miſcarry in its Exerciſe and Management. This made *Solomon* when God in the beginning of his Reign, gave him his *option* of all earthly deſirable things, to prefer *Wiſdom* and Knowledge for Rule before them all, 2 Chron. 1. 10, 11, 12. And this he received from him who is the *Spirit of Wiſdom and Underſtanding*, Iſa. 11. 3. And if the *Rulers of the Earth* would follow this Example, and be earneſt with God for ſuch ſupplies of his Spirit as might enable them unto an Holy Righteous diſcharge of their Office, it would in many places be better with *them* and *the World*, than it is or can be where is the ſtate of things deſcribed, Hoſ. 7. 3, 4, 5. Now God of old did carry this Diſpenſation out of the *Pale of the Church* for the effecting of ſome eſpecial Ends of his own; and I no way queſtion but that he continueth ſtill ſo to do. Thus he anointed *Cyrus*, and calls him his *Anointed* accordingly,

Isa. 45. 1. For *Cyrus* had a double Work to do for God in both parts whereof he stood in need of his especial Assistance. He was to execute his Judgments and Vengeance on *Babylon*, as also to deliver his People that they might re-edifie the Temple. For both these he stood in need and did receive *especial Aid from the Spirit of God*, though he was in himself but a *ravenous Bird of prey*, *Isa. 46. 11.* For the Gifts of this Holy One in this kind wrought no real Holiness in them on whom they were bestowed; they were only given them for the good and benefit of others, with their own *success* in what they attempted unto that purpose. Yea, and many on whom they are bestowed never consider the *Author* of them, but sacrifice to their own *Nets* and *Drags*, and look on themselves as the Springs of their own Wisdom and Ability. But it is no wonder that all regard unto the *Gifts of the Holy Ghost* in the *Government of the World* is despised, when his whole Work in and towards the *Church* it self is openly derided.

SECT. 23. Secondly; We may add hereunto those especial Endowments with some *Moral Vertues* which he granted unto sundry Persons for the accomplishment of some especial Design. So He came upon *Gideon* and upon *Jephtha* to anoint them unto the Work of delivering the People from their Adversaries in Battel, *Judg. 6. 34. Chap. 11. 29.* It is said before of them both, That they were *Men of Valour*, *Chap. 6. 12. Chap. 11. 1.* This coming therefore of the Spirit of God upon them and *cloathing* of them, was his especial Excitation of their *Courage*, and his fortifying of their Minds against those Dangers they were to conflict withal. And this he did by such an *efficacious impression* of his Power upon them, as that both themselves received thereby a Confirmation of their Call, and others might discern the presence of God with them. Hence it is said that the *Spirit of the Lord* *cloathed* them, they being warmed in themselves, and known to others by his Gifts and Actings of them.

SECT. 24. Thirdly; There are sundry Instances of his *adding unto the Gifts of the Mind*, whereby he qualified Persons for their Duties, even *bodily strength* when that also was needful for the Work whereunto he called them; Such was his Gift unto *Sampson*. His bodily strength was *supernatural*, a meer effect of the Power of the Spirit of God, and therefore when he put it forth in his Calling, it is said that the *Spirit of the Lord* *came mightily upon him*, *Judg. 14. 6. Chap. 15. 14.* or wrought powerfully in him. And he gave him this strength in the way of an *Ordinance*, appointing the *growing of his Hair* to be the Sign and Pledg of it; the Care whereof being violated by him, he lost for a season the Gift it self.

SECT. 25. Fourthly; He also communicated *Gifts intellectual* to be exercised in and about things *Natural* and *Artificial*. So he endowed *Bezaliel* and *Aholiab* with *Wisdom* and *Skill* in all manner of curious Workmanship about all sorts of things for the building and beautifying of the Tabernacle, *Exod. 31. 2, 3.* Whether *Bezaliel* were a Man that had before given himself unto the *Acquisition* of those Arts and Sciences is altogether

ther uncertain. But certain it is that his present Endowments were *extraordinary*. The Spirit of God heightened improved and strengthened the *Natural Faculties* of his Mind, to a Perception and Understanding of all the *curious Works* mentioned in that place, and unto a skill how to contrive and dispose of them into their Order designed by God himself. And therefore although the *skill and wisdom* mentioned differed not in the *kind* of it from that which others attained by industry; yet he received it by an immediate *Afflatus* or Inspiration of the Holy Ghost, as to that *degree* at least, which he was made Partaker of.

Lastly; The Assistance given unto Holy Men for the *Publishing* and SECT. 27.
Preaching of the Word of God to others, as to *Noah* who was a *Preacher of Righteousness*, 2 Pet. 2. 5. for the Conviction of the World and Conversion of the Elect, wherein the Spirit of God *strove with Men*, Gen. 6. 3. and preached unto them that were *Disobedient*, 1 Pet. 3. 19, 20. might here also be considered, but that the Explanation of his whole Work in that Particular will occur unto us in a more proper place.

And thus I have briefly passed through the *Dispensation of the Spirit* SECT. 28.
of God under the Old Testament. Nor have I aimed therein to gather up his whole Work and all his Actings; for then every thing that is *praise-worthy* in the Church must have been enquired into; For all without him is Death and Darkeness and Sin. All Life Light and Power are from him alone. And the instances of things expressly assigned unto him which we have insisted on, are sufficient to manifest that the whole *Being and Welfare* of the Church depended solely on his Will and his Operations. And this will yet be more evident when we have also considered those other Effects and Operations of his, which being *common to both States* of the Church under the Old Testament and the New, are purposely here omitted, because the Nature of them is more fully cleared in the Gospel wherein also their Exemplifications are more illustrious. From him therefore was the *Word of Promise* and the *Gift of Prophecy* whereon the Church was founded and whereby it was built. From him was the *Revelation and Institution* of all the Ordinances of Religious Worship; from him was that *Communication* of Gifts and Gracious Abilities which any Persons received for the Edification, Rule, Protection, and Deliverance of the Church. All these things were wrought by that *one and self-same Spirit*, which divideth to every Man severally as he will. And if this were the state of things under the *Old Testament*, a Judgment may thence be made how it is under the *New*. The principal Advantage of the present State above that which is past next unto the coming of Christ in the Flesh, consists in the *pouring out of the Holy Ghost* upon the Disciples of Christ in a larger manner than formerly. And yet I know not how it is come to pass that some Men think that neither *He* nor his Work are of any great use unto us. And whereas we find every thing that is *good* even under the *Old Testament* assigned unto him as the sole immediate Author of it, it is hard to persuade with many that he continues now to do almost *any good* at all. And what he is allowed to have any hand in, it is sure
to

to be so stated, as that the principal praise of it may redound unto our selves; So diverse, yea so *adverse* are the thoughts of God and Men in these things, where our Thoughts are not captivated unto the Obedience of Faith. But we must shut up this Discourse. It is a common saying among the *Jewish Masters*, That the Gift of the Holy Ghost ceased under the *Second Temple* or after the finishing of it. Their meaning must be, that it did so as to the *Gifts of Ministerial Prophecie*, of *Miracles*, and of *Writing* the Mind of God by Inspiration for the Use of the Church; Otherwise there is no Truth in their Observation. For there were afterwards *especial Revelations* of the Holy Ghost granted unto many as unto *Simeon* and *Anna*, Luke 1. And others constantly received of his Gifts and Graces to enable them unto Obedience, and fit them for their Employments. For without a continuance of these supplies the Church it self must absolutely cease.

General



General Dispensation of the HOLY SPIRIT, with respect unto the New Creation.

C H A P. II.

(1.) *The Work of the Spirit of God in the New Creation proposed to Consideration. The Importance of the Doctrine hereof.* (2.) *The plentiful Effusion of the Spirit the great Promise respecting the Times of the New Testament.* (3.) *Ministry of the Gospel founded in the Promise of the Spirit.* (4.) *How this Promise is made unto all Believers.* (5.) *Injunction to all to pray for the Spirit of God.* (6.) *The solemn Promise of Christ to send his Spirit when he left the World.* (7.) *The ends for which he promised him.* (8.) *The Work of the New Creation the principal means of the Revelation of God and his Glory.* (9.) *How this Revelation is made in particular herein.*

WE are now arrived at that part of our Work which was principally intended in the Whole ; and that because our Faith and Obedience is principally therein concerned. This is the Dispensation and Work of the Holy Ghost with respect to the *Gospel*, or the *New Creation* of all things in and by Jesus Christ. And this if any thing in the Scripture is worthy of our most diligent Enquiry and Meditation ; nor is there any more important *Principle* and Head of that Religion which we do profess. The Doctrine of the *Being* and Unity of the Divine Nature is common to us with the rest of Mankind, and hath been so from the Foundation of the World ; however some like *bruit Beasts* have herein also corrupted themselves. The Doctrine of the *Trinity*, or the Subsistence of three Persons in the one Divine Nature or Being, was known to all who enjoyed *Divine Revelation* even under the Old Testament, though to us it be manifested with more Light and convincing Evidence. The *Incarnation of the Son of God* was promised and expected from the first entrance of Sin, and received its actual Accomplishment in the *fulness of Time*, during the continuance of the *Mosaical Pedagogie*. But this Dispensation of the *Holy Ghost* whereof we now proceed to treat, is so peculiar unto the *New Testament*, that the *Evangelist* speaking of it says, *The Holy Ghost was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified*, Joh. 7. 39. And they who were instructed in the Doctrine of *John the Baptist* only, knew not whether there were any *Holy Ghost*, Acts 19. 2. Both which sayings concerned his *Dispensation* under the New Testament ; for his

SECT. I.

R

Eternal

122 *General Dispensation of the Holy Spirit* Book.2.

eternal *Being and Existence* they were not ignorant of, nor did he then first begin to *be* as we have fully manifested in our foregoing Discourses. To stir us up therefore unto *diligence* in this Enquiry unto what was in general laid down before, I shall add some Considerations evidencing the *Greatness and Necessity* of this Duty, and then proceed to the Matter it self that we have propofed to handle and explain.

SECT. 2.

1. The *plentiful Effusion of the Spirit* is that which was principally prophesied of, and foretold as the great Priviledg and Pre-eminence of the Gospel-Church State; This was that *good Wine* which was kept until the last; This all the Prophets bear witness unto, see *Isa. 35. 7. Chap. 44. 3. Joel. 2. 28. Ezek. 11. 19. Chap. 36. 27.* with other places innumerable. The great Promise of the Old Testament was that concerning the coming of *Christ in the Flesh*. But he was so to come as to put an end unto that whole Church-State, wherein his coming was expected. To prove this was the principal Design of the Apostle in his Epistle to the *Hebrews*. But this *Promise of the Spirit* whose accomplishment was reserved for the Times of the Gospel, was to be the Foundation of *another Church-State* and the means of its Continuance. If therefore we have any interest in the *Gospel it self* or desire to have; if we have either Part or Lot in this Matter, or desire to be made Partakers of the Benefits which attend thereon, which are no less than our Acceptation with God here and our Salvation hereafter; it is our Duty to *Search the Scriptures* and enquire diligently into these things. And let no Man deceive us with vain words, as though the things spoken concerning the *Spirit of God* and his Work towards them that do believe, are *fanatical and unintelligible* by rational Men, for because of this contempt of him the Wrath of God will come on the Children of Disobedience. And if the *World in Wisdom* and their *Reason* know him nor, nor can receive him, yet they who believe do know him, for *he dwelleth with them and shall be in them*, John 14. 17. And the present *practice of the World* in despising and sleighting the Spirit of God and his Work, gives Light and Evidence unto those words of our Saviour, *that the World cannot receive him*. And it cannot do so because it neither *seeth him nor knoweth him*, or hath no Experience of his Work in them or of his Power and Grace. Accordingly doth it, is it come to pass. Wherefore not to avow the Spirit of God in his Work, is to be *ashamed of the Gospel* and of the Promise of Christ, as if it were a thing not to be owned in the World.

SECT. 3.

2. The *Ministry of the Gospel* whereby we are begotten again that we should be a kind of first Fruits of his Creatures unto God, is from his promised Presence with it and Work in it, called the *Ministry of the Spirit*, even of the Spirit that giveth Life, 2 *Cor. 3. 6*. And it is so in opposition to the *ministration of the Law*, wherein yet there were a multitude of Ordinances of Worship and Glorious Ceremonies. And he who knows no more of the *Ministry of the Gospel* but what consists in an attendance unto the *Letter of Institutions*, and the manner of their performance, knows nothing of it. Nor yet is there any *extraordinary Afflatus* or Inspiration now intended or attended unto, as we are slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we pretend. But there is that *presence* of

of the Spirit of God with the Ministry of the Gospel, in his Authority, Assistance, Communication of Gifts and Abilities, Guidance and Direction, as without which it will be useless and unprofitable in and unto all that take the Work thereof upon them. This will be more fully declared afterwards. For ;

3. The Promise and Gift of the Spirit under the Gospel, is not made SECT. 4. nor granted unto any *peculiar sort of Persons* only, but unto all Believers as their Conditions and Occasions do require. They are not therefore the especial Interest of a few but the common concern of all Christians. The *Papists* grant that this Promise is continued; but they would confine it to their *Pope* or their *Councils*, things nowhere mentioned in the Scripture, nor the Object of any one Gospel-Promise whatever. It is all Believers in their Places and Stations, Churches in their Order, and Ministers in their Office, unto whom the Promise of him is made, and towards whom it is accomplished as shall be shown. Others also grant the continuance of this Gift, but understand no more by it but an *ordinary blessing* upon Mens rational endeavours, common and exposed unto all alike. This is no less than to overthrow his whole Work, to take his Sovereignty out of his Hand, and to deprive the Church of all especial Interest in the Promise of Christ concerning him. In this enquiry therefore we look after what at present belongs unto our selves, if so be we are Disciples of Christ and do expect the fulfilling of his Promises. For whatever Men may pretend, unto this day, if *they have not the Spirit of Christ they are none of his*, Rom. 8. 9. For our Lord Jesus Christ hath promised him as a *Comforter* to abide with his Disciples *for ever*, Joh. 14. And by him it is that he is present with them and among them to the end of the World, Mat. 28. 20. Chap. 18. 20. That we speak not as yet of his *sanctifying Work*, whereby we are enabled to believe and are made Partakers of that Holiness without which no Man shall see God. Wherefore without him all Religion is but a *Body* without a *Soul*, a Carcase without an animating Spirit. It is true in the continuation of his Work he ceaseth from putting forth those *extraordinary Effects* of his Power which were needful for the laying the Foundation of the Church in the World. But the whole Work of his Grace according to the Promise of the Covenant, is no less truly and really carried on at this day in and towards all the *Elect of God*, than it was on the day of *Pentecost* and onwards; and so is his communication of Gifts necessary for the edification of the Church, Ephes. 4. 10, 11, 12, 13. The owning therefore and avowing the Work of the Holy Ghost in the Hearts and on the Minds of Men, according to the Tenor of the Covenant of Grace, is the principal part of that *Profession* which at this day all Believers are called unto.

4. We are taught in an especial manner to pray that God would give SECT. 5. his Holy Spirit unto us, that through his *Aid and Assistance* we may live unto God in that Holy Obedience which he requires at our hands, Luk. 11. 9, 10, 11, 12, 13. Our Saviour enjoying an *importunity* in our Supplications, v. 9, 10. and giving us encouragement that we shall succeed in our Requests, v. 11, 12. makes the *Subject Matter* of them to be the Holy Spirit; *Your Heavenly Father shall give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him*, v. 13. Which in the other *Evangelists* is good things, Mat. 7. 11.

because he is the Author of them all in us and to us ; Nor doth God bestow any good thing on us, but by his Spirit. Hence the Promise of bestowing the Spirit is accompanied with a Prescription of Duty unto us that we should *ask* him or pray for him ; which is included in every Promise where his sending, giving, or bestowing is mentioned. He therefore is the *great Subject Matter* of all our Prayers. And that signal Promise of our Blessed Saviour to *send him* as a *Comforter* to abide with us for ever, is a *Directory* for the Prayers of the Church in all Generations. Nor is there any Church in the World fallen under such a total Degeneracy. but that in their *Publick Offices* there are Testimonies of their ancient Faith and Practice in praying for the coming of the Spirit unto them, according to this Promise of Christ. And therefore our Apostle in all his most solemn Prayers for the Churches in his dayes makes this the chief Petition of them, That God would give unto them and increase in them the Gifts and Graces of the Holy Spirit, with the Spirit himself for sundry especial Effects and Operations whereof they stood in need, *Ephes. 1. 17. Chap. 3. 16. Col. 2. 2.* And this is a full conviction of what importance the Consideration of the *Spirit of God* and his *Work* is unto us. We must deal in this Matter with that confidence which the Truth instructs us unto, and therefore say, That he who prayeth not constantly and diligently for the *Spirit of God* that he may be made partaker of him for the Ends for which he is promised, is a *Stranger from Christ* and his Gospel. This we are to attend unto as that whereon our Eternal Happiness doth depend. God knows our State and Condition, and we may better learn our Wants from his *Prescription* of what we ought to pray for, than from our own Sense and Experience. For we are in the *Dark* unto our own Spiritual Concerns, through the Power of our Corruptions and Temptations, and *know not what we should pray for as we ought*, *Rom. 8. 26.* But our Heavenly Father knows perfectly what we stand in need of. And therefore whatever be our present Apprehensions concerning our selves which are to be examined by the Word, our Prayers are to be regulated by what God hath enjoyed us to ask, and what he hath promised for to bestow.

SECT. 6.

5. What was before mentioned may here be called over again and farther improved, yea it is necessary that so it should be. This is the *solemn Promise* of Jesus Christ when he was to leave this World by Death. And whereas he therein made and confirmed his Testament, *Heb. 9. 15, 16, 17,* He *bequeathed his Spirit* as his great Legacy unto his Disciples. And this he gave unto them as the great Pledg of their future Inheritance, *2 Cor. 1. 22.* which they were to live upon in this World. All other good things he hath indeed *bequeathed* unto Believers, as he speaks of Peace with God in particular. *Peace I leave with you, my Peace I give unto you*, *John 14. 27.* But he gives particular Graces and Mercies for particular Ends and Purposes. The Holy Spirit he *bequeaths* to supply his own Absence, *John 16. 17.* that is, for all the Ends of Spiritual and Eternal Life. Let us therefore consider this Gift of the Spirit either *formally*, under this Notion that he was the principal *Legacy* left unto the Church by our dying Saviour, or *materially*, as to the Ends and Purposes for which he is so *bequeathed*, and it will be evident what valuation we ought to have of Him and his Work. How would

Chap.2. *with respect unto the New Creation.* 125

would some rejoice if they could possess any *Relique* of any thing that belonged unto our Saviour in the dayes of his *Flesh*, though of no use or benefit unto them? Yea, how great a part of Men called Christians do boast in some *pretended Parcels* of the Tree whereon he suffered. *Love* abused by Superstition lies at the bottom of this Vanity. For they would embrace any thing left them by their dying Saviour. But he left them no such things, nor did ever bless and Sanctify them unto any holy or *Sacred Ends*. And therefore hath the abuse of them been punished with blindness and Idolatry. But this is openly testified unto in the Gospel then when his Heart was overflowing with *Love* unto his Disciples, and Care for them, when he took an *Holy Prospect* of what would be their Condition, their Work, Duty, and Temptations in the World, and thereon made Provision of all that they could stand in need of; he promiseth to leave and give unto them his Holy Spirit to abide with them for ever, directing us to look unto Him for all our Comforts and Supplies. According therefore unto our valuation and esteem of Him, of our *Satisfaction* and Acquiescency in Him, is our regard to the *Love*, Care and Wisdom of our Blessed Saviour to be measured. And indeed it is only in his *Word* and *Spirit* wherein we can either honour or despise him in this World. In his own Person he is exalted at the Right Hand of God far above all Principalities and Powers; So that nothing of *ours* can immediately reach him or affect him. But it is in our regard to these that he makes a *Trial* of our Faith Love and Obedience. And it is a matter of Lamentation to consider the contempt and *scorn* that on various Pretences is cast upon this Holy Spirit, and the Work whereunto he is sent by God the Father and by Jesus Christ. For there is included therein a contempt of them also. Nor will a pretence of *honouring God in their own way* secure such Persons as shall contract the guilt of this Abomination. For it is an *Idol* and not the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who doth not work effectually in the Elect by the *Holy Ghost* according to the Scriptures. And (2.) if we consider this Promise of the Spirit to be given unto us as to the *Ends* of it; Then,

6. He is promised and given as the *sole Cause and Author of all the Good* that in this * World we are or can be made Partakers of. For (1.) there is no good communicated unto us from God, but it is bestowed on us or wrought in us by the *Holy Ghost*. No Gift, no Grace, no Mercy, no Priviledg, no Consolation, do we receive possess or use, but it is wrought in us, *collated on us*, or manifested unto us by him alone. Nor (2.) is there any good in us towards God, any Faith, Love, Duty, Obedience, but what is effectually wrought in us by *Him*, by him alone. For in us that is in our flesh (and by Nature we are but flesh) there dwelleth no good thing. All these things are from him and by him, as shall God assisting be made to appear by Instances of all sorts in our ensuing Discourse. And these Considerations I thought meet to premise unto our Entrance into that Work which now lyeth before us.

SECT. 7.

*Gratias ago
tibi clemen-
tissime Deus,
quia quod
quaesivi mane
prior ipse do-
nasti. Cypri.
de Baptism.
Christi.

The great Work whereby God designed to glorifie himself ultimately in this World, was that of the *New Creation* or of the Recovery and Restauration of all things by Jesus Christ, *Heb. 1. 1, 2, 3. Ephes. 1. 10.* And as this is in general confessed by all Christians, so I have else-

where insisted on the Demonstration of it. (2.) That which God ordereth and designeth as the principal means for the manifestation of his Glory, must contain the most perfect and absolute *Revelation* and Declaration of Himself, his Nature, his Being, his Existence and Excellencies. For from their discovery and manifestation, with the Duties which as known they require from rational Creatures, doth the *Glory* of God arise and no otherwise. (3.) This therefore was to be done in this great Work, and it was done accordingly. Hence is the Lord Christ in his Work of Mediation said to be the *Image of the Invisible God*, Col. 1. 15. The *brightness of his Glory*, and the *express Image of his Person*, Heb. 1. 3. in whose *Face the Knowledge of the Glory of God shineth forth* unto us, 2 Cor. 4. 6. Because in and by him in his Work of the New Creation all the glorious Properties of the Nature of God are manifested and displayed incomparably above what they were in the Creation of all things in the beginning. I say therefore in the Contrivance, Projection, Production, carrying on, disposal and accomplishment of this great Work, God hath made the most eminent and glorious Discovery of himself unto *Angels* and Men, Ephes. 3. 8, 9, 10. 1 Pet. 1. 10, 11, 12. That we may Know, Love, Trust, Honour and Obey him in all things as God and according to his Will. (4.) In particular in this *New Creation* he hath revealed himself in an especial manner as *Three in One*. There was no one more glorious Mystery brought to Light in and by Jesus Christ than that of the *Holy Trinity*, or the Subsistence of the Three Persons in the Unity of the same Divine Nature. And this was done not so much in *express Propositions* or verbal Testimonies unto that purpose, which yet is done also, as by the Declaration of the *mutual Divine Internal Acts* of the Persons towards one another, and the distinct immediate Divine external Actings of each Person in the Work which they did and do perform. For God revealeth not himself unto us meerly *Doctrinally* and *Dogmatically*, but by the *Declaration* of what he doth for us, in us, towards us, in the accomplishment of the Counsel of his Will; see Ephes. 1. 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12. And this Revelation is made unto us, not that our minds might be possessed with the *Notions* of it, but that we may know aright how to place our *Trust* in Him, how to *Obey* him and Live unto him, how to obtain and exercise Communion with him, until we come to the enjoyment of him.

SECT. 9. We may make *Application* of these things unto, and exemplifie them yet farther in the Work under Consideration. Three things in general are in it proposed unto our Faith. (1.) The *Supream Purpose* Design Contrivance and Disposal of it. (2.) The *Purchasing* and Procuring Cause and Means of the Effects of that Design; with its Accomplishment *in it Self* and with respect unto God. (3.) The *Application* of the Supream Design and actual Accomplishment of it to make it effectual unto us. The first of these is absolutely in the Scripture assigned unto the *Father*, and that *Uniformely* and every where. His Will, His Counsel, His Love, His Grace, His Authority, His Purpose, His Design are constantly proposed as the Foundation of the whole Work, as those which were to be pursued, effected, accomplished; see Isa. 42. 1, 2, 3. Psal. 40. 6, 7, 8. John 3. 16. Isa. 53. 10, 11, 12. Ephes. 1. 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10. and other places innumerable. And on this Account, because the Son undertook

undertook to *effect* what-ever the Father had so *designed* and purposed, there were many Acts of the Will of the Father towards the Son in *sending, giving, appointing* of Him, in preparing him a Body, in Comforting and Supporting Him, in rewarding and giving a People unto Him which belong unto the *Father* on the account of the Authority, Love and Wisdom that were in them, their *actual Operation* belonging particularly unto another Person. And in these things is the *Person of the Father* in the Divine Being proposed unto us to be known and adored. Secondly; The *Son* condescendeth, consenteth, and engageth to do and accomplish in his *own Person*, the whole Work which in the Authority, Counsel and Wisdom of the Father was appointed for him, *Phil. 2. 5, 6, 7, 8.* And in these Divine Operations is the *Person of the Son* revealed unto us to be *honoured even as we honour the Father*. Thirdly, The *Holy Ghost* doth immediately Work and Effect what-ever was to be done in reference unto the *Person of the Son*, or the Sons of Men, for the Perfecting and *Accomplishment* of the *Father's Counsel*, and the *Son's Work*, in an especial Application of both unto their especial Effects and Ends. Hereby is *he made known unto us*, and hereby our Faith concerning him and in him is directed. And thus in this great Work of the New Creation by Jesus Christ doth God cause *all his Glory* to pass before us, that we may both *know him* and worship him in a due manner. And what is the peculiar Work of the *Holy Ghost herein* we shall now declare.

Work



Work of the Holy Spirit with respect unto the Head of the New Creation, the Humane Na- ture of Christ.

CHAP. III.

- (1.) *The especial Works of the Holy Spirit in the New Creation.* (2.) *His Work on the Humane Nature of Christ.* (3.) *How this Work could be considering the Union of the Humane Nature unto and in the Person of the Son of God.* (4.) *Assumption of the Humane Nature into Union the only Act of the Person of the Son towards it.* (5.) *Personal Union the only necessary Consequent of this Assumption.* (6.) *All other Actings of the Person of the Son in and on the Humane Nature voluntary.* (7.) *The Holy Spirit the immediate efficient cause of all Divine Operations.* (8.) *He is the Spirit of the Son or of the Father.* (9.) *How all the Works of the Trinity are individued.* (10.) *The Body of Christ formed in the Womb by the Holy Ghost; but of the Substance of the Blessed Virgin; why this was necessary.* (11.) *Christ not hence the Son of the Holy Ghost according to the Humane Nature.* (12.) *Difference between the Assumption of the Humane Nature by the Son, and the Creation of it by the Holy Ghost.* (13.) *The Conception of Christ how ascribed to the Holy Ghost, and how to the Blessed Virgin. Reasons of the Espousal of the Blessed Virgin to Joseph before the Conception of Christ.* (14.) *The actual Purity and Holiness of the Soul and Body of Christ from his Miraculous Conception.*

SECT. I.

THE Dispensation and Work of the Holy Ghost in this New Creation; respect, first the *Head of the Church*, the Lord Jesus Christ in his Humane Nature, as it was to be and was united unto the Person of the Son of God. Secondly, It concerns the Members of that *Mystical Body* in all that belongs unto them as such. And under these two Heads we shall consider them.

SECT. 2.

First; Therefore we are to enquire what are the Operations of the Holy Ghost in reference unto Jesus Christ the *Head of the Church*. And these were of two sorts. (1.) Such as whereof the *Person of Christ* in his Humane Nature was the immediate Object. (2.) Such as he performs towards *others* on his behalf; that is, with direct respect unto his Person and Office.

SECT. 3.

But yet before we enter upon the first sort of his Works which we shall

shall begin withal, an *Objection* of seeming weight and Difficulty must be removed out of our way; which I shall the rather do, because our answer unto it will make the whole matter treated of the more plain and familiar unto us. It may therefore be, and it is Objected, That whereas the *Humane Nature* of Christ is assigned as the immediate Object of these Operations of the Holy Ghost, and that Nature was immediately, inseparably, and undividedly united unto the Person of the Son of God, there doth not seem to be any need, nor indeed room for any such Operations of the Spirit. For could not the Son of God himself in his *own Person*, perform all things requisite both for the forming, supporting, sanctifying and preserving of his *own Nature*, without the especial Assistance of the Holy Ghost? Nor is it easy to be understood how an *immediate Work* of the Holy Ghost should be interposed in the same Person, between the one Nature and the other. And this seeming Difficulty is vehemently pressed by the *Socinians*, who think to intangle our whole Doctrine of the *Blessed Trinity*, and *Incarnation* of the Son of God thereby. But express Testimonies of Scripture, with the clear and evident *Analogue* of Faith, will carry us easily and safely through this seeming Difficulty. To which End we may Observe; That,

1. The only singular immediate *Act* of the Person of the Son on the Humane Nature, was the *Assumption* of it into Subsistence with Himself. Herein the Father and the Spirit had no Interest nor concurrence, *ἐμὴ καὶ ἐνδοξαὶ καὶ βούλησις*, but by *Approbation and Consent*, as *Damascen* speaks. For the Father did not *assume* the Humane Nature; he was not Incarnate, neither did the Holy Spirit do so. But this was the Peculiar Act, and Work of the Son. See *Joh. 1. 14. Rom. 1. 4. Gal. 4. 4. Phil. 2. 6, 7. Heb. 2. 14. 17*; which Places with many others to the same Purpose, I have elsewhere expounded, and vindicated from the Exceptions of the *Socinians*. SECT. 4.

2. That the only *Necessary Consequent* of this Assumption of the Humane Nature, or the Incarnation of the Son of God, is the *Personal Union of Christ*, or the inseparable Subsistence of the *assumed Nature* in the Person of the Son. This was necessary, and *indissoluble*, so that it was not impeached, nor shaken in the least, by the temporary dissolution of that Nature by the separation of the Soul and Body. For the *Union* of the Soul and Body in Christ did not constitute him a Person, that the Dissolution of them should destroy his Personality. But he was a Person by the *Uniting* of both unto the Son of God. SECT. 5.

3. That all other Actings of God in the *Person of the Son* towards the Humane Nature were *Voluntary*, and did not necessarily ensue on the Union mentioned. For there was no *Transfusion* of the Properties of one Nature into the other, nor real *Physical Communication* of Divine Essential Excellencies unto the Humanity. Those who seem to contend for any such thing, resolve all at last into a *true Affignation by way of Predication* as necessary on the Union mentioned, but contend not for a real *transfusion* of the Properties of one Nature into the other. But these Communications were *Voluntary*. Hence were those temporary Dis- SECT. 6.

S

penations,

sations, when under his great trial the *Humane Nature* complained of its desertion and Dereliction by the Divine, *Matth. 27. 46.* For this forsaking was not as to *Personal Union*, or necessary Subsistence and supportment, but as to *Voluntary Communications* of Light and Consolation. Hence himself declares that the *Humane Nature* was not the Residential Subject of Omniscience. For so he speaks, *Mark. 13. 32. But of that Day and that hour knoweth no Man, no nor the Angels which are in Heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.* For the Exposition given by some of the *Antients*, that the Lord Christ speaks not this absolutely, but only, *that he knew it not to declare it unto them*, is unworthy of him. For no more did the Father so know it, seeing he hath not declared it. But this was the Opinion only of some of them, the more advised were otherwise minded. He * speaks of himself with respect unto his *Humane Nature* only. And thereunto all Communications were *Voluntary*. So after his Ascension God gave him that *Revelation* that he made to the Apostle: *Revel. 1. 1.* The *Humane Nature* therefore, however inconceivably advanced, is not the *Subject* of Infinite Essentially Divine Properties. And the Actings of the Son of God towards it, consequential unto its *Assumption*, and that indissoluble subsistence in its Union which ensued thereon, are *Voluntary*.

* Δι' ἑλόν ἐστιν
ὅτι καὶ τῷ
τῷ παντός
τέλος ὡς
ὡς μὴ λό-
γος γινώσ-
κει; ὡς ὁ
ἀνθρώπος
ἀγνοεῖ. Αὐ-
δρώων γὰρ

ἰδίον τὸ ἀγνοεῖν, καὶ μέλιστα ταῦτα. Ἀλλὰ καὶ τὸ τοῦ φιλανθρωπίας ἰδίον τῷ σωτήρι. Ἐπει-
δὴ γὰρ γέγονεν ἄνθρωπος, καὶ ἐπιχύνετο διὰ τῷ σάρκα τῷ ἀγνοῦσαν ἐπεῖν, καὶ οἶδα. Ἰνα
δ' εἴη ὅτι εἰδώς ὡς θεός, ἀγνοεῖ σαρκικῶς. Athanas. Orat. 4. Ad. Arian.

Ἀγνοεῖ τοίνυν κατὰ τὸ χῆμα τὸ ἀνθρωπότητι, ὁ γινώσκων τὰ πάντα κατὰ τῷ δυνάμει τῷ
θεότητι. Chrysostom. Tom. 7. Serm. 117.

Πλὴν ἴσον, ὅτι οἱ πολλοὶ τῷ πατέρων, χεῖρον ὅ πάντες, φαίνονται λέγοντες αὐτὸν ἀγνοεῖν.
Εἰ γὰρ καὶ πάντα λέγεται ἡμῖν ὁμοῦ, ἀγνοῦμεν ὅ καὶ ἡμεῖς, δέλον ὅτι καὶ αὐτὸς ἡγνῶν. Leontius
Byzantinus, de Seſſis.

SECT. 7.

4. The Holy Ghost as we have proved before, is the *immediate Peculiar Efficient Cause* of all External Divine Operations; for God Worketh by his Spirit; or in him immediately applies the Power and Efficacy of the Divine Excellencies unto their Operation; Whence the same Work is equally the Work of each Person.

SECT. 8.

5. The Holy Spirit is the *Spirit of the Son*; no less than the Spirit of the Father. He proceedeth from the Son, as from the Father. He is the *Spirit of the Son*, *Gal. 4. 6.* And hence is He the immediate Operator of all Divine Acts of the Son himself, even on his own *Humane Nature*. Whatever the Son of God, wrought in, by, or upon the *Humane Nature*, he did it by the Holy Ghost, who is his Spirit as he is the Spirit of the Father.

SECT. 9.

6. To clear the whole matter it must be yet further observed, that the *immediate actings* of the Holy Ghost are not spoken of him *absolutely*, nor ascribed unto him *exclusively*, as unto the other Persons and their Concurrence in them. It is a saying generally admitted, that *Opera Trinitatis ad extra sunt indivisa*. There is no such Division in the external Operations of God, that any one of them should be the Act of one Person without the Concurrence of the others. And the Reason of it is, because the Nature of God which is the Principle of all Divine Operations, is one and

Chap.3. *unto the Head of the New Creation.* 131

and the same individed in them all. Whereas therefore they are the Effects of *Divine Power*, and that Power is essentially the same in each Person, the Works themselves belong equally unto them. As if it were possible that *Three Men* might see by the *same Eye*, the Act of seeing would be but One, and it would be equally the Act of all Three. But the Things we insist on are ascribed *eminently* unto the Holy Ghost on the account of the Order of his Subsistence in the Holy Trinity, as he is the Spirit of the Father and the Son; whence in every Divine Act, the *Authority* of the Father, the *Love* and *Wisdom* of the Son, with the immediate *Efficacy* and *Power* of the Holy Ghost are to be considered. Yea, and there is such a distinction in their Operations, that one *Divine Act* may produce a peculiar *Respect and Relation* unto one Person and not unto another; as the Assumption of the *Humane Nature* did to the Son, for he only was *incarnate*. And such are the especial *Actings* of the Holy Ghost towards the *Head of the Church* our Lord Jesus Christ in this Work of the New Creation, as we shall demonstrate in sundry Instances.

First; The *framing forming and miraculous Conception of the Body of* SECT. 10. *Christ in the * Womb of the Blessed Virgin*, was the peculiar and especial Work of the Holy Ghost. This Work I acknowledg in respect of *Designation* and the *Authoritative Disposal* of things is ascribed unto the Father. For so the Lord Christ speaketh unto him; *A Body hast thou prepared me*, Heb. 10. 6. But this *Preparation* doth not signifie the *actual forming* and *making ready* of that Body, but the *Eternal Designation* of it; It was prepared in the Council and Love of the Father. As to *voluntary Assumption* it is ascribed to the Son himself; Heb. 2. 14. *Forasmuch as the Children were Partakers of Flesh and Blood*, he also himself pertook of the same; he took unto him a Body and Soul, entire Humane Nature, as the Children or all Believers have the same, *Synecdochically* expressed by *Flesh and Blood*; v. 16. *He took on him the Seed of Abraham*. But the immediate *Divine Efficiency* in this Matter was the *Peculiar Work* of the Holy Ghost. Matth. 1. 18. *When his Mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together she was found to be with Child of the Holy Ghost*; v. 20. *That which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost*: Luk. 1. 35. *The Angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon Thee, and the Power of the Highest shall overshadow Thee; therefore also that Holy Thing which shall be born of Thee shall be called the Son of God.* (1.) The Person working is the Holy Ghost. He is the wonderful *Operator* in this Glorious Work; and therein the *Power of the most High* was exerted. For the *Power of the most High* is neither explicatory of the former expression, the Holy Ghost, as though he were only the Power of the most High; nor is it the adjoyning of a *Distinct Agent* or Cause unto him, as though the Holy Ghost and the Power of the most High were different *Agents* in this Matter. Only the manner of his effecting this wonderful Matter concerning which the Blessed Virgin had made that enquiry, v. 34. *How can*

* Maximum in tota creatura Testimonium de Divinitate Spiritus Sancti Corpus Domini est; quod ex Spiritu Sancto esse creditur secundum Evangelistam, Mat. 1. sicut Angelus ad Josephum dicit, quod in ea natus est de Spiritu Sancto est. Athanasius de fid. Vu. & Trin.

Creatrix virtus altissimi, superveniente Spiritu Sancto in virginem Mariam, Christi corpus fabricavit; quo ille usus Templo sine viri natus est semine. Didym. de Sp. Sancto. lib. 2.

this be seeing I know not a Man? is expressed. The Holy Ghost, saith the Angel, acting the *Power of the most High*, or in the Infinite Power of God shall accomplish it. (2.) For his *access* unto his Work; it is expressed by his *coming* upon her. The importance of this Expression and what is signified thereby, hath been declared before. And it is often used to declare his *Actings* with reference unto the Production of *Miraculous Works*. *Acts* 1. 8. *Ye shall receive Power after the Holy Ghost is come upon you.* He will so *come upon you* as to put forth the Power of the most High in you and by you, in Gifts and Operations miraculous. For he is said to *come* with respect unto his *beginning* of any marvelous Operation, where before he did not work to the like purpose. (3.) The Act of the Holy Ghost in this Matter was a *Creating Act*; nor indeed like the first *Creating Act* which produced the Matter and Substance of *all things* out of *nothing*, causing that to be, which was not before, neither in Matter nor Form, nor passive Disposition; but like those subsequent *Acts* of Creation, whereby *out of Matter* before made and prepared, things were made *that* which before they were not, and which of themselves they had no *active Disposition* unto nor concurrence in. So Man was created or *formed of the Dust of the Earth*, and Woman of a *Rib* taken from Man. There was a previous Matter unto their Creation, but such as gave no assistance, nor had any *active Disposition* to the Production of that particular kind of Creature whereinto they were formed by the Creating Power of God. Such was this *Act* of the Holy Ghost in *forming the Body* of our Lord Jesus Christ. For although it was effected by an *Act* of Infinite Creating Power, yet it was formed or made of the *Substance of the Blessed Virgin*. That it should be so was absolutely necessary (1.) For the accomplishment of the *Promises* made unto *Abraham* and *David*, that the *Messiah* should be of their Seed and proceed from their Loyns. (2.) So was it also on the account of the first Original Promise, That the *Seed of the Woman* should break the *Serpents Head*. For the Word was to be *made Flesh*, *John* 1. 14. to be *made of a Woman*, *Gal.* 4. 4. or made of the *Seed of David* according to the *Flesh*, *Rom.* 1. 4. and take upon him the *Seed of Abraham*, *Heb.* 2. 16. (3.) To confirm the Truth hereof is his *Genealogie* according to the *Flesh* given us by two of the *Evangelists*, which were neither to the purpose nor true, if he were not made of the *Substance or Flesh* of the Blessed Virgin. (4.) Besides all our *Cognition* and *Alliance* unto him, whence he was meet to be our Saviour suffering in the *same Nature* wherein we have sinned, do depend hereon, *Heb.* 2. 14. For if he had not been made *like us* in all things sin only excepted, if he had not been Partaker of our Nature, there had been no Foundation for the *imputing* that unto us which he did suffer and wrought, *Rom.* 8. 3. And hence these things are accounted unto us, and cannot be so unto *Angels* whose Nature he did not take upon him, *Heb.* 2. 16. This therefore was the Work of the Holy Ghost in reference unto the *Humane Nature* of Christ in the Womb of his Mother. By his Omnipotent Power he *formed it* of the Substance of the Body of the Holy Virgin, that is as unto his Body. And hence sundry things do ensue.

SECT. II. 1. That the Lord Christ could not on this account, no not with respect unto his Humane Nature only, be said to be the *Son of the Holy Ghost*,

Ghost, although he supplied the Place and Vertue of a *Natural Father* in Generation. For the Relation of *Filiation* dependeth only on and ariseth from a *Perfect Generation*, and not on every Effect of an *Efficient* cause. When one *Fire* is kindled by another, we do not say that it is the Son of that other, unless it be very improperly. Much less when a *Man builds an House*, do we say that it is his Son. There was therefore no other *Relation* between the *Person of the Holy Ghost* and the Humane Nature of Christ, but that of a *Creator and a Creature*. And the Lord Christ is, and is called the *Son of God*, with respect only unto the Father and his *eternal ineffable Generation*, communicating Being and Subsistence unto Him, as the Fountain and Original of the Trinity. *Filiation* therefore is a *Personal Adjunct*, and belongs unto Christ as he was a Divine Person, and not with respect unto his Humane Nature. But that Nature being assumed, *whole Christ* was the Son of God.

(2.) That this Act of the Holy Ghost in *forming of the Body of Christ*, SECT. 12. differs from the Act of the Son in *assuming* the Humane Nature into Personal Union with Himself. For this Act of the Son was not a *Creating Act* producing a Being out of Nothing, or making any thing by the same Power to be what in its own Nature it was not. But it was an *ineffable Act* of Love and Wisdom, taking the *Nature so formed* by the Holy Ghost, so prepared for him, to be his own in the instant of its Formation, and thereby preventing the singular and individual Subsistence of that Nature in and by it self. So then as the *creating Act* of the Holy Ghost in *forming the Body* of our Lord Jesus Christ in the Womb, doth not denominate him to be his *Father*, no not according to the Humane Nature, but he is the *Son of God* upon the account of his Eternal Generation only; So it doth not denote an *Assumption* of that Nature into Union with himself, nor was he incarnate. He made the Humane Nature of Christ Body and Soul, with, in, and unto a Subsistence in the *Second Person* of the Trinity, not his own.

3. It hence also follows that the Conception of Christ in the *Womb*, SECT. 13. being the Effect of a *Creating Act*, was not accomplished *successively* and in process of time but was perfected in an *Instant*. For although the *Creating Acts* of Infinite Power, where the Works effected have distinct Parts, may have a Process or Duration of Time allotted unto them, as the World was *Created in six Dayes*; yet every part of it that was the Object of an especial *Creating Act* was *instantaneously* produced. So was the *forming of the Body of Christ*, with the *infusion of a Rational Soul* to quicken it, though it increased afterwards in the Womb unto the Birth. And as it is probable that this Conception was immediate upon the *Angelical Salutation*, so it was necessary that nothing of the Humane Nature of Christ should exist of it self, antecedently unto its Union with the Son of God. For in the very *instant of its Formation*, and therein, was the *Word made Flesh*, John 1. 14. And the Son of God was made of a *Woman*, Gal. 4. 4. So that the whole Essence of his Nature was created in the same Instant. Thus far the Scriptures go before, and herein it is necessary to assert the forming of the Body and Soul of Christ by the Holy Spirit. The curious enquiries of some of the *School-men* and others, are to be left unto themselves, or rather to be condemned in them. For what was farther in this *Miraculous Operation* of the Holy

* ΕΙ ΤΙΣ ΛΕ-
γει πρῶτον
πεπλάσθαι
τὸ σῶμα τῷ
κνέει ἡ-
μῶν Ἰησοῦ
χρῆς ἐν
τῇ μήτρᾳ
τῆς ἀγίας
παρθένης, καὶ
μετὰ ταῦ-
τα ἐνωθῆναι
αὐτῷ τὸ θε-
ον λόγον, καὶ
τῷ Ἰησοῦ
ὡς προῦπαρ-
έσσαν, ἀνά-
δεμα ἔστω.
Concil. Con-
stantinop. ad
Origenistas.

Ghost, it seems purposely to be hid from us in that Expression, *δυναμὶς ὑψίστη ἐκσυνάσει σοί*, *The Power of the most High shall overshadow thee*. Under the Secret Glorious Covert hereof, we may learn to adore that Holy Work here, which we hope to *rejoyce* in and bless God for unto Eternity. And I suppose also that there is in the Word, an allusion unto the Expression of the Original Acting of the Holy Spirit, towards the newly produced Mass of the Old Creation, whereof we spake before. Then it is said of Him that He was *מרחפּר*, as it were *hovering* and moving over it for the Formation and Production of all things living. For both the Words include in them an allusion unto a Covering like that of a Fowl over its Eggs, communicating by its cognate warmth and heat, a principle of Life unto their *Seminal* Virtue.

SECT. 14. It remaineth only that we consider how the same Work of the *Conception* of Christ, is assigned unto the Holy Ghost, and to the Blessed Virgin. For of Her it is said expressly in Prophecie *העלמה חרה*, *Isa. 7. 14. A Virgin shall Conceive*; the same Word that is used to express the *Conception* of any other Woman, *Gen. 4. 1*. Hence She is termed by the Ancients *θεοτοκος*, and *Dei genetrix*, which last at least I wish had been forborn. Compare it with the Scripture and there will appear an unwarrantable *καινοφανία* in it. So *Luk. 1. 31*. The words of the Angel to Her are, *συνάμην ἐν γαστρὶ καὶ τέξῃ υἱόν*, *Thou shalt Conceive in thy Womb and bring forth a Son*; where Her *Conception* of Him is distinguished from her *bringing* of him forth. And yet in the Ancient Creed commonly called the *Apostles*, and generally received by all Christians as a Summary of Religion, it is said he was *Conceived by the Holy Spirit*, and only *Born of the Virgin Mary*. An. The same Work is assigned to both as Causes of a different kind, unto the Holy Spirit as the *active efficient Cause*, who by his Almighty Power produced the Effect. And the Disputes managed by some of the Ancients about *de Spiritu Sancto*, and *ex Spiritu Sancto*, were altogether needless. For it is his Creating Efficiency that is intended. And his *Conceiving* is ascribed unto the Holy Virgin as the *passive material Cause*; for his Body was formed of her Substance as was before declared. And this *Conception* of Christ was after her *Solemn Espousals* unto *Joseph*, and that for sundry Reasons. For (1.) under the Covering of her Marriage to him she was to receive a Protection of her *Spotless Innocency*. And besides (2.) God provided one that should take care of her and her Child in his Infancy. And hereby (3.) also was our Blessed Saviour freed from the imputation of an *illegitimate Birth*; until by his own *Miraculous Operations* he should give Testimony unto his *Miraculous Conception*, concerning which before his Mother could not have been believed. (4.) That he might have one on whose account his *Genealogie* might be recorded, to manifest the accomplishment of the Promise unto *Abraham & David*. For the Line of a *Genealogie* was not legally continued by the Mother only. Hence *Matthew* gives us his *Genealogie* by *Joseph*, to whom his Mother was legally espoused; And although *Luke* give us the true Natural Line of his Descent by the Progenitors of the Blessed Virgin, yet he nameth her not, only mentioning her *Espousals*, he begins with *Heli* who was her Father, *Chap. 3. 23*. And this is the *first thing* ascribed peculiarly to the Holy Spirit with respect unto the Head of the Church Christ Jesus.

From

From this Miraculous Creation of the *Body of Christ* by the immediate Power of the Holy Ghost, did it become a meet *Habitation* for his Holy Soul, every way ready and complying with all actings of Grace and Vertue. We have not only the Depravation of our Natures in General, but the obliquity of our *particular Constitutions* to conflict withal. Hence it is that one is disposed to *Passion* Wrath and Anger, another to *Vanity* and Lightness, a third to *Sensuality* and fleshly Pleasures, and so others to Sloth and Idleness. And although this Disposition so far as it is the Result of our *especial Constitutions* and *Complexion* is not sin in it self, yet it dwells at the next Door unto it, and as it is excited by the *Moral Pravity* of our Natures, a continual occasion of it. But the Body of Christ being formed pure and exact by the Holy Ghost, there was no Disposition or Tendency in his *Constitution* to the least Deviation from perfect Holiness in any kind. The exquisite *Harmony* of his natural temperature, made *Love* Meekness Gentleness Patience Benignity and Goodness, Natural and *Cognate* unto him, as having an incapacity of such *Motions* as should be subservient unto or compliant with any thing different from them. Hence, 2dly, also; although he took on him those *Infirmities* which belong unto our Humane Nature as such, and are inseparable from it until it be glorified, yet he took none of our particular *Infirmities* which cleave unto our Persons, occasioned either by the *Vice* of our Constitutions or irregularity in the use of our Bodies. Those natural Passions of our Minds which are capable of being the means of *affliction* and trouble, as Grief Sorrow and the like, he took upon him; as also those Infirmities of Nature which are troublesome to the Body, as *Hunger* Thirst Weariness and Pain. Yea, the purity of his Holy Constitution made him *more highly sensible* of these things than any of the Children of Men. But as to our *Bodily Diseases*, and Distempers which personally adhere unto us upon the Disorder and Vice of our Constitutions, he was absolutely free from.

SECT. 14.

THE HUMANITY OF CHRIST BEING FORMED IN THE WOMB BY A CREATING ACT OF THE HOLY GHOST, WAS IN THE FIRST OF ITS CONCEPTION JUSTIFIED AND FILLED WITH GRACE ACCORDING TO THE MEASURE OF ITS RECEPTIVITY. BEING NOT DEPRIVED BY ITS FIRST GENERATION, IT DERIVED NO TAIN OF ORIGINAL SIN OR CORRUPTION. FROM ADAM, THAT BEING THE ONLY WAY AND MEANS OF ITS PROPAGATION. AND NOT IN THE LOINS OF ADAM MORALLY BEFORE THE FALL, THE PROPAGATION OF HIS DEPRAVATION BEING NOT GIVEN UNTIL AFTERWARDS, THE SIN OF ADAM COULD ON NO ACCOUNT BE IMPUTED UNTO HIM. ALL SIN WAS CHARGED ON HIM AS OUR MISTAKE, AND SURETY OF THE COVENANT; BUT ON HIS OWN ACCOUNT HE WAS OBLIGIOUS TO NO CHARGE OF SIN ORIGINAL OR ADAM. HIS NATURE BEFORE AS MIRACULOUSLY CREATED IN THE MANNER DESCRIBED, WAS AS OBLIVIOUS, INNOCENT, PURE, AND FREE FROM SIN, AS WAS ADAM IN THE DAY WHEN HE WAS CREATED. BUT THIS WAS NOT ALL; HE WAS BY THE HOLY GHOST PURIFIED.

SECT. 15.

Work



Work of the HOLY SPIRIT in and on the Humane Nature of Christ.

C H A P. IV.

- (1.) *The actual Sanctification of the Humane Nature of Christ by the Holy Ghost. On what Ground spotless and free from sin. Positively endowed with all Grace.* (2.) *Original Holiness and Sanctification in Christ how carried on by the Spirit. Exercise of Grace in Christ by the rational Faculties of his Soul. Their Improvement.* (3.) *Wisdom and Knowledge how increased objectively in the Humane Nature of Christ.* (4.) *The Anointing of Christ by the Holy Spirit with Power and Gifts.* (5.) *Collated eminently on him at his Baptism. John 3. 34. explained and vindicated.* (6.) *Miraculous Works wrought in Christ by the Holy Ghost.* (7.) *Christ guided, conducted and supported by the Spirit in his whole Work. Mark 1. 11. opened.* (8.) *How the Lord Christ offered himself unto God through the Eternal Spirit.* (9.) *His Sanctification thenceunto.* (10.) *Graces acting eminently therein. Love, Zeal, Submission, Faith and Truth all exercised therein.* (11, 12.) *The Work of the Spirit of God towards Christ whilst he was in the state of the Dead; in his Resurrection and Glorification.* (13.) *The Office of the Spirit to bear Witness unto Christ and its Discharge.* (14.) *The true Way and Means of coming unto the Knowledge of Christ, with the necessity thereof.* (15.) *Danger of Mistakes herein.* (16.) *What it is to Love Christ as we ought.*

SECT. I.

SEcondly; The Humane Nature of Christ being thus formed in the Womb by a *Creating Act* of the Holy Spirit, was in the instant of its Conception *sanctified*, and filled with Grace according to the measure of its Receptivity. Being not begotten by *Natural Generation*, it derived no taint of *Original Sin* or Corruption from *Adam*, that being the only Way and Means of its Propagation. And being not in the Loyns of *Adam* morally before the Fall, the Promise of his Incarnation being not given until afterwards, the Sin of *Adam* could on no account be imputed unto him. All Sin was charged on him as our *Mediator*, and Surety of the Covenant; but on his own account he was obnoxious to no charge of Sin *Original* or *Actual*. His Nature therefore as miraculously created in the manner described, was absolutely *innocent*, *spotless*, and free from sin, as was *Adam* in the day wherein he was Created. But this was not all; It was by the Holy Spirit positively

tively endowed with all Grace. And hereof it was afterwards only capable of farther degrees as to aſual Exerciſe, but not of any new kind of Grace. And this Work of *Sanctification* or the Original Infuſion of all Grace into the Humane Nature of Chriſt, was the immediate Work of the Holy Spirit which was neceſſary unto him. For let the Natural Faculties of the Soul, the Mind Will and Affections be created *pure* innocent undefiled, as they cannot be otherwiſe immediately created of God, yet this is not enough to enable any rational Creature to *live to God*; much leſs was it all that was in Jeſus Chriſt. There is moreover required hereunto *ſupernatural* Endowments of Grace, ſuperadded unto the Natural Faculties of our Souls. If we live unto God there muſt be a principle of *Spiritual Life* in us as well of Life Natural. This was the Image of God in *Adam*, and was wrought in Chriſt by the Holy Spirit. *Iſa. 11. 1, 2, 3.* And there ſhall come forth a Rod out of the Stem of Jeſſe, and a Branch ſhall grow out of his Roots. And the Spirit of the Lord ſhall reſt upon him, the Spirit of Wiſdom and Underſtanding, the Spirit of Counſel and Might, the Spirit of Knowledge and of the Fear of the Lord; and ſhall make him of quick Underſtanding in the Fear of the Lord. It is granted that the following Work of the Spirit in and upon the Lord Chriſt, in the execution of his Office as the *King* and *Head* of the Church, is included in theſe words. But his firſt *Sanctifying Work* in the Womb is principally intended. For thoſe Expreſſions, a *Rod out of the Stem of Jeſſe*, and a *Branch out of his Roots*, with reſpect whereunto the Spirit is ſaid to be communicated unto him, do plainly regard his Incarnation. And the *Soul* of Chriſt from the firſt moment of its Infuſion was a Subject capable of a *Fulneſs of Grace*, as unto its *habitual* Reſidence and Inbeing, though the actual exerciſe of it was ſuſpended for a while until the *Organs* of the Body were fitted for it. This therefore it received by this *firſt Unction* of the Spirit. Hence from his Conception he was *Holy* as well as *harmleſs* and *undefiled*, *Heb. 7. 26.* An *Holy Thing*, *Luke 1. 35.* radically filled with a Perfection of Grace and Wiſdom; Inaſmuch as the Father gave him not the Spirit by *Measure*, *John 3. 34.* See to this purpoſe Our Commentary on *Heb. 1. v. 1. p. 17.* ſee *John 1. 14, 15, 16.*

Thirdly; The Spirit carried on that Work whoſe Foundation it had thus laid. And Two Things are to be here diligently obſerved. (1.) That the Lord Chriſt as Man, did and was to exerciſe all Grace by the Rational Faculties and Powers of his Soul, his Underſtanding Will and Affections. For he acted Grace as a *Man made of a Woman*, made under the Law. His Divine Nature was not unto him in the place of a Soul, nor did immediately operate the things which he performed, as ſome of old vainly imagined. But being a perfect Man his Rational Soul was in him the immediate principle of all his Moral Operations, even as ours are in us. Now in the Improvement and Exerciſe of theſe Faculties and Powers of his Soul, he had and made a Progreſs after the manner of other Men. For he was made like unto us in all things yet without ſin. In their *Encrease*, *Enlargement* and Exerciſe there was required a *Progreſſion* in Grace alſo. And this he had continually by the Holy Ghoſt. *Luke*

* Quomodo proficiebat Sapiencia Dei? doceat te ordo Verborum. Profectus est aetatis, Profectus est Sapiencia, sed humane. Ideo aetatem ante prae-misit, ut secundum homines crederes dictum; aetas enim non Divinitatis sed Corporis est. Ergo si proficiebat aetate hominis proficiebat sapientia hominis. Sapiencia autem sensu proficit, quia a sensu Sapiencia. Ambros. de Incarnat. Dom. Mysterio, Chap. 7.

Nam & Dominus homo accepit communicationem Spiritus Sancti; sicut in Evangeliiis legitur; Jesus ergo repletus Spiritu Sancto, regressus est a Iordane. Haec autem absque ulla calumnia de Dominico homine, qui totus Christus, unus est Jesus Filius Dei, sensu debemus pietatis accipere, non quod alter & alter sit, sed quod de uno atque eodem quasi de altero secundum naturam Dei, & hominis disputatur; Didym. de sp. San. Lib. 3.

2. 40. *The Child grew and waxed strong in Spirit.* The first Clause refers to his Body which grew and increased after the manner of other Men; as v. 52. He *increased in Stature.* The other respects the confirmation of the Faculties of his Mind, he *waxed strong in Spirit.* So v. 47. he is said to *increase in Wisdom as in Stature.* He was πληρῶμεν σοφίας, continually *filling and filled* with new Degrees of Wisdom as to its Exercise, according as the *Rational Faculties* of his Mind were capable thereof; an *increase* in these things accompanied his years, v. 52. And what is here recorded by the *Evangelist*, contains a Description of the Accomplishments of the Prophecy before mentioned, Isa. 11. 1, 2, 3. And this *Growth in Grace* and Wisdom was the peculiar Work of the Holy Spirit. For as the Faculties of his Mind were enlarged by Degrees and strengthened, so the Holy Spirit filled them up with Grace for Actual Obedience.

SECT. 3. 2. The Humane Nature of Christ was capable of having *New Objects* proposed to its Mind and Understanding, whereof before it had a *simple Nescience.* And this is an inseparable adjunct of Humane Nature *as such*, as it is to be weary or hungry, and no *vice* or blameable defect. Some have made a great outcry about the ascribing of *Ignorance* by some *Protestant* Divines unto the Humane Soul of Christ, *Bellarmin. de Anim. Christi.* Take Ignorance for that which is a *moral Defect* in any kind, or an unacquaintedness with that which any one *ought to know*, or is necessary unto him as to the Perfection of his Condition or his Duty, and it is false that ever any of them ascribed it unto him. Take it merely for a *nescience* of some things, and there is no more in it but a denial of *Infinite Omniscience*, nothing inconsistent with the highest Holiness and Purity of Humane Nature. So the Lord Christ says of himself, that he *knew not the Day and Hour of the End of all things*; and our Apostle of him, that he *learned Obedience by the things that he suffered*, Heb. 5. 8. In the representation then of things *anew* to the Humane Nature of Christ, the Wisdom and Knowledge of it was *objectively increased*, and in new Tryals and Temptations he *experimentally* learned the new Exercise of Grace. And this was the constant Work of the Holy Spirit in the Humane Nature of Christ. He dwelt in him in *fullness*, for he received him not by measure. And continually upon all occasions he gave out of his unsearchable Treasures, Grace for Exercise in all Duties and Instances of it. From hence was he *habitually Holy*, and from hence did he exercise *Holiness* entirely and universally in all things.

SECT. 4. Fourthly; The Holy Spirit in a peculiar manner anointed him with all those *extraordinary Powers and Gifts* which were necessary for the

the Exercise and Discharging of his Office on the Earth. * *Isa. 61. 1. The Spirit of the Lord God is upon Me, because the Lord hath anointed me to Preach good Tydings unto the Meek; he hath sent me to bind up the broken-hearted, to proclaim Liberty to the Captives, and the opening of the Prison unto them that are bound.* It is the Prophetical Office of Christ and his discharge thereof in his Ministry on the Earth which is intended. And he applies these words unto himself with respect unto his Preaching of the Gospel, *Luke 4. 18.* For this was that Office which he principally attended unto here in the World, as that whereby he instructed Men in the Nature and Use of his other Offices. For his *Kingly Power* in his Humane Nature on the Earth he exercised but sparingly. Thereunto indeed belonged his sending forth of Apostles and Evangelists to preach with Authority. And towards the End of his Ministry he instituted Ordinances of Gospel-Worship, and appointed the Order of his Church in the Foundation and Building of it up, which were Acts of Kingly Power. Nor did he perform any Act of his *Sacerdotal Office* but only at his Death, when he gave himself for us an Offering and a Sacrifice to God for a *sweet smelling Savour*, *Ephes. 5. 2.* wherein God smelt a Savour of Rest and was appeased towards us. But the whole course of his Life and Ministry was the Discharge of his *Prophetical Office* unto the Jews, *Rom. 15. 8.* Which he was to do according to the great Promise, *Deut. 18. 18, 19.* And on the Acceptance or Refusal of him herein, depended the Life and Death of the Church of Israel, *v. 19. Acts 3. 23. Heb. 1. 1. John 8. 44.* Hereunto was he fitted by this Unction of the Spirit. And here also is a distinction between the Spirit that was upon him, and his being anointed to Preach, which contains the Communication of the Gifts of that Spirit unto him. As it is said, *Chap. 11. 3. The Spirit rested on him as a Spirit of Wisdom* to make him of quick Understanding in the Fear of the Lord. Now this was in a singular manner and in a measure *inexpressible*, whence he is said to be anointed with the *Oyl of Gladness above his Fellows*, or those who were Partakers of the same Spirit with him, *Psal. 45. 7. Heb. 1. 8, 9.* Although I acknowledge that there was in that Expression a peculiar respect unto his Glorious Exaltation which afterwards ensued, as hath been declared on that place. And this Collation of *Extraordinary Gifts* for the discharge of his *Prophetical Office* was at his *Baptism*, *Matth. 3.* They were not bestowed on the Head of the Church, nor are any Gifts of the same Nature in general bestowed on any of his Members, but for *Use, Exercise, and Improvement.* And that they were then collated appears; For,

(1.) Then did he receive the *Visible Pledge* which confirmed him in, *SECT. 5.* and testified unto others his calling of God to the Exercise of his Office. For then the Spirit of God descended like a Dove and rested on him, and lo a voice came from Heaven saying, *This is my Beloved Son in whom I am well pleased*, *Matth. 3. 16, 17.* Hereby was he sealed of God the Father, *John 6. 27,* in that Visible Pledge of his Vocation setting the great Seal of Heaven to his Commission. And this also was to be a Testimony unto others, that they might own him in his Office now he had undertaken to discharge it, *John 1. 33.*

* Εἰ τὸν ἡ σὰρξ ἡ θεοποικὴ, τὸ κυριακὸν πλάσμα, ὁ ξένος ἀνθρώπου, ὁ ἑρμηνεύς, τὸ νέον βλάστημα, τὸ ἀπὸ τοῦ ξένου ὡδίνου ἀνθρώπου, ἔτι λαμβάνει τὸ πνεῦμα ἅγιον, &c. Chrysost. Homil. de Spiritu Sancto.

2. He now entred on his Publick Ministry and wholly gave himself up unto his Work. For before he did only occasionally manifest the Presence of God with him, somewhat to prepare the Minds of Men to attend unto his Ministry; as when he filled them with astonishment at his Discourses with the *Dōktors* in the Temple, *Luke* 2. 46, 47. And although it is probable that he might be acted by the Spirit in and unto many such extraordinary Actions during his Course of a Private Life, yet the fulness of Gifts for his Work he received not until the time of his Baptism, and therefore before that, he gave not himself up wholly unto his publick Ministry.

3. Immediately hereon it is said that *He was full of the Holy Ghost*, *Luke* 4. 1. Before he was said to *max strong in Spirit*, *πληρῆμενος σαφίας*, *Luke* 2. 40. continually filling; but now he is *πλήρης πνεύματος ἁγίου*, full of the Holy Ghost. He was actually possessed of and furnished with all that fulness of Spiritual Gifts which were any way needful for him or useful unto him, or which Humane Nature is capable of receiving. With respect hereunto doth the Evangelist use that Expression, *ὃ ὅτι οὐ μετρεῖ δίδουσι ὁ Θεὸς τὸ πνεῦμα*, *John* 3. 34. For God giveth not the Spirit by measure. That it is the Lord Jesus Christ who is here intended unto whom the Spirit is thus given, is evident from the Context, although it be not express in the Text. He is spoken of, and is the Subject of the whole Discourse, *v.* 31. *He that cometh from Above is above all. He that cometh from Heaven is above all.* None doubts but that this is a Description of the Person of Christ. And in the beginning of this Verse, *He whom God hath sent speaketh the Words of God*; which is the usual Periphrasis of the Lord Christ used at least twenty times in this Gospel. Of him this account is given that he *testifieth what he hath seen and heard*, *v.* 32. and that he *speaketh the Words of God*, *v.* 3, 4. Different events are also marked upon his Testimony, for many refused it, *v.* 32. but some received it who therein set to their Seal that God is true, *vers.* 33. For he that believeth not the Record that he gave of his Son hath made him a liar, *1 John* 5. 1. As a Reason of all this it is added, That God gave not the Spirit unto him by Measure; So that he was fully enabled to speak the Words of God, and those by whom his Testimony was rejected were justly liable to Wrath, *v.* 36. Vain therefore is the attempt of *Grellius de Spirit. Sanct.* followed by *Seltingius* in his Comment on this Place, who would exclude the Lord Christ from being intended in these words. For they would have them signifie no more but only in general, That God is not bound up to Measures in the Dispensation of the Spirit, but gives to one according unto one measure, and to another according to another. But as this gloss overthrows the coherence of the words, disturbing the Context, so it contradicts the Text it self. For God's not giving the Spirit *ὡς μετρεῖται* by Measure, is his giving of him *ἀμετρεως* immeasurably, without known Bounds or Limits, and so the Spirit was given unto the Lord Christ only. For unto every one of us is given Grace according to the Measure of the Gift of Christ, *Ephes.* 4. 7. That is, in what Measure he pleaseth to communicate and distribute it. But the Effects of this giving of the Spirit unto the Lord Christ not by Measure, belonged unto that fulness from whence we receive Grace for Grace, *John* 1. 16. For hereby the Father accomplished his Will, when it pleased him, that in him all fulness should dwell, *Col.* 1. 19. that he

he in all things might have the Pre-eminence. Nor can any Difficulty of weight be cast on this Interpretation from the use of the word in the present Tense, which is by *Grellius* insisted on, *Admō he giveth*. For Christ, they say, had before received the Spirit, for this is spoken of him after his Baptism. If therefore he had been intended, it should rather have been, *he hath given*, or *he hath not given* unto him by Measure. But (1.) this was *immediately on his Baptism*, and therefore the collation of the Fulness of the Spirit might be spoken of as a thing present being but newly past, which is an ordinary kind of Speech on all occasions. Besides (2.) the *collation of the Spirit* is a *continued Act*, in that he was given him to abide with him, to rest upon him, wherein there was a continuance of the Love of God towards, and his care over him in his Work. Hence the Lord Christ saith of himself, or the Prophet in his Person, that the Spirit *sent* him. *Now the Lord God and his Spirit hath sent me*, Isa. 48. 16. The same Work in *sending* of Christ is ascribed unto the Lord God, that is the Father, and to the Spirit, but in a different manner. He was sent by the Father *authoritatively*, and the Furniture he received by the Spirit, of Gifts for his Work and Office, is called *his sending of him*. As the same Work is assigned unto different Persons in the *Trinity* on different accounts.

Fifthly ; It was in an especial manner by the Power of the Holy Spirit, by which he wrought those great and *miraculous Works* whereby his Ministry was attested unto and confirmed. Hence it is said, That God wrought Miracles by him, Acts 2. 22. *Jesus of Nazareth a Man approved of God, by Miracles and Wonders and Signs which God did by him*. For they are all immediate Effects of Divine Power. So when he cast out Devils with a word of command, he affirms that he did it by the *Finger of God*, Luke 11. 20. that is, the Infinite Divine Power of God ; but the Power of God acted in an especial manner by the *Holy Spirit*, as is expressly declared in the other Evangelist, *Matth. 12. 28*. And therefore on the Ascription of his Mighty Works unto *Beelzebub* the Prince of Devils, he lets the *Jews* know that therein they blasphemed the *Holy Spirit* whose Works indeed they were, v. 31, 32. Hence these mighty Works are called *δυνάμεις Powers*, because of the Power of the Spirit of God put forth for their working and effecting, see *Mark 6. 5. Chap. 9. 39. Luke 4. 36. & 5. 17. & 6. 19. & 8. 46. & 9. 1*. And in the Exercise of this Power consisted the Testimony given unto him by the Spirit that he was the Son of God. For this was necessary unto the Conviction of the *Jews* to whom he was sent, *John 10. 37, 38*.

Sixthly ; By him was he *guided, directed, comforted, supported*, in the whole Course of his Ministry, Temptations, Obedience and Sufferings. Some few Instances on this Head may suffice. Presently after his Baptism when he was full of the Holy Ghost, he was led by the Spirit into the Wilderness, *Luke 4. 1*. The Holy Spirit guided him to begin his Contest and Conquest with the Devil. Hereby he made an entrance into his Ministry ; and it teacheth us all what we must look for, if we solemnly engage our selves to follow him in the Work of Preaching the Gospel. The word used in *Mark* to this purpose hath occasioned some doubt, *what Spirit* is intended in those words, τὸ πνεῦμα αὐτοῦ ἐβλάμη ἐς τὴν ἐρημὸν, Chap. 1. 12. *The Spirit driveth him into the Wilderness*. It

is evident that the *same Spirit* and the *same Act* is intended in all the Evangelists here and, *Mat. 4. 1. Luke 4. 1.* But how the Holy Spirit should be said ἐκβάλλειν *to drive him*, is not so easie to be apprehended. But the Word in *Luke* is ἡγετο which denotes a *guiding and rational Conduct*. And this cannot be ascribed unto any other Spirit with respect unto our Lord Jesus but onely the Spirit of God. *Matthew* expresseth the same effect by ἀνέχεν, *Chap. 4. 1.* he was *carried* or carried up, or taken away from the midst of the People. And this was ὑπὸ τοῦ πνεύματος of that Spirit, namely which descended on him, and rested on him immediately before, *Chap. 3. 17.* And the Continuation of the Discourse in *Luke* will not admit that any other Spirit be intended. And Jesus being full of the Holy Spirit, returned from Jordan and was led by the Spirit into the Wilderness; namely, by that Spirit which he was full of. By ἐκβάλλει therefore in *Mark*, no more is intended but the sending of him forth by an high and strong impression of the Holy Spirit on his Mind. Hence the same word is used with respect unto the sending of others by the powerful impression of the Spirit of God on their Hearts, unto the Work of Preaching the Gospel. *Matth. 9. 38. Pray you therefore the Lord of the Harvest*, ὅπως ἐκβάλῃ ἐργάτας εἰς τὴν θερίαν αὐτοῦ. So also, *Luk. 10. 2. that he would thrust forth Labourers into his Harvest*; namely, by furnishing them with the Gifts of his Spirit, and by the Power of his Grace constraining them to their Duty. So did he enter upon his Preparation unto his Work under his Conduct. And it were well if others would endeavour after a conformity unto them within the Rules of their Calling. (2.) By his assistance was he carried triumphantly through the course of his Temptations unto a perfect Conquest of his Adversary, as to the present Conflict wherein he fought to divert him from his Work, which afterwards he endeavoured by all wayes and means to oppose and hinder. (3.) The Temptation being finished he returned again out of the Wilderness to Preach the Gospel in the Power of the Spirit, *Luk. 4. 14.* He returned ἐν τῇ δυνάμει τοῦ πνεύματος, in the Power of the Spirit in *Galilee*, that is powerfully enabled by the Holy Spirit unto the discharge of his Work. And thence in his first Sermon at *Nazareth* he took those Words of the Prophet for his Text; *The Spirit of the Lord is upon Me, because he hath anointed me to Preach the Gospel to the Poor*, *Luke 4. 18.* The issue was, That they all bare him Witness, and wondered at the gracious Words that proceeded out of his Mouth, *v. 22.* And as he thus began his Ministry in the Power of the Spirit, so having received him not by measure, he continually on all occasions put forth his Wisdom, Power, Grace and Knowledge, to the astonishment of all, and the stopping of the Mouths of his Adversaries, shutting them up in their Rage and Unbelief. (4.) By him was he directed strengthened and comforted in his whole Course, in all his Temptations, Troubles and Sufferings from first to last. For we know that there was a confluence of all those upon him in his whole Way and Work, a great part of that whereunto he humbled himself for our sakes consisting in these things. In and under them he stood in need of mighty Supportment and strong Consolation. This God promised unto him and this he expected, *Isa. 50. 7, 8. & 42. 4, 6. & 49. 5, 6, 7, 8.* Now all the voluntary Communications of the Divine Nature unto the Humane, were as we have shewed, by the Holy Spirit.

Seventhly;

Seventhly ; He offered himself up unto God through the *Eternal Spirit*, SECT. 8.
 Heb. 9. 14. I know many Learned Men do judge that by the *Eternal Spirit* in that place, not the *Third Person* is intended, but the Divine Nature of the Son himself. And there is no doubt but that also may properly be called the *Eternal Spirit*. There is also a Reason in the words themselves strongly inclining unto that sense and acceptation of them. For the Apostle doth shew whence it was that the Sacrifice of the Lord Christ had an Efficacy beyond and above the Sacrifices of the Law ; and whence it would certainly produce that great *Effect of purging our Consciences from dead Works*. And this was from the Dignity of his Person on the account of his Divine Nature. It arose I say from the Dignity of his Person, his Deity giving *sustentation* unto his Humane Nature in the Sacrifice of himself. For by reason of the indissoluble Union of both his Natures, his Person became the *Principle* of all his Mediatory Acts, and from thence had they their Dignity and Efficacy. Nor will I oppose this Exposition of the words. But on the other side many *Learned Persons*, both of the Ancient and Modern Divines, do judg that it is the *Person of the Holy Spirit* that is intended.

And because this is a Matter of great Importance, namely how the Lord Christ offered up himself unto God as a Sacrifice by the *Eternal Spirit*, I shall farther explain it though but briefly. Those who look only on the outward part of the Death of Christ can see nothing but suffering in it. The *Jews* took him, and they with the Souldiers both *scourged* and *slew him*, hanging him on the Tree. But the principal Consideration of it, is his own offering himself a Sacrifice unto God as the great High Priest of the Church, to make Atonement and Reconciliation for Sinners, which was *hid* from the World by those outward *Acts of Violence* which were upon him. And this he did by the *Eternal Spirit*, wherein we may take notice of the ensuing Instances.

1. He *Sanctified*, Consecrated or Dedicated himself unto God for to be an Offering or Sacrifice ; John 17. 19. *For their sakes*, that is the Elect, *I sanctifie my self*. The Lord Christ was before this perfectly *sanctified* as to all Inherent Holiness, so that he could not speak of *sanctifying himself* afresh in that sense. Neither was it the Consecration of himself unto his Office of a Priest. For this was the Act of him who called him, *He glorified not himself to be made an High Priest, but he that said unto Him, Thou art my Son*, Heb. 5. 6. He made him a Priest by his Death, after the Power of an Endless Life, Chap. 7. 16, 20, 21. Wherefore he consecrated himself to be a *Sacrifice*, as the Beast to be Sacrificed of old was first devoted unto that purpose. Therefore it is said that he thus Sanctified or Consecrated himself, that we might be Sanctified. Now we are Sanctified by the Offering of the Body of Christ once for all, Heb. 10. 10. This was his first Sacerdotal Act. He dedicated himself to be an Offering to God. And this he did through the Effectual Operation of the *Eternal Spirit* in him.

2. He went voluntarily and of his own accord to the *Garden*, which answered the *Adduction* or bringing of the Beast to be Sacrificed unto the Door of the Tabernacle according to the Law ; for there he did not only give up himself into the hands of those who were to shed his Blood ;
 but

but also actually entred upon the *offering up* of himself unto God in his *Agony*, when he *offered up Prayers and Supplications with strong Crying and Tears*, Heb. 5. 7. which declares not the *Matter* but the *Manner* of his Offering.

3. In all that ensued, all that followed hereon, unto his *giving up the Ghost*, he offered himself to God in and by those *Actings* of the Grace of the Holy Spirit in him, which accompanied him to the last. And these are diligently to be considered, because on them depends the *Efficacy* of the Death of Christ, as to *Atonement* and *Merit*, as they were enhanced and rendred excellent by the Worth and Dignity of his Person. For it is not the Death of Christ meerly as it was *penal* and undergone by the way of *Suffering*, that is the Means of our Deliverance, but the *Obedience* of Christ therein, which consisted in his offering of himself through the Eternal Spirit unto God, that gave efficacy and success unto it. We may therefore enquire what were those *Principal Graces* of the Spirit which he acted in this offering of himself unto God. And they were,

(1.) Love to Man-kind, and Compassion towards Sinners. This the Holy Soul of the Lord Jesus was then in the highest and most inconceivable Exercise of. This therefore is frequently expressed where mention is made of this Offering of Christ; Gal. 2. 20. *Who loved me and gave himself for me*; Rev. 1. 5. *Who loved us and washed us in his own Blood*. And *Compassion* is the first Grace required in an High Priest or Sacrificer, Heb. 5. 2. God being now upon a Design of Love, (for it was in the pursuit of Eternal Love that Christ was sent into the World, John 3. 16. Tit. 3. 4, 5, 6.) This *Love* that was now in its most inconceivable Advancement in the Heart of Christ, was most grateful and acceptable unto him. And this Intenseness of Love did also support the Mind of Christ under all his Sufferings, as *Jacob* through the greatness of his Love unto *Rachel*, made light of the seven years Service that he endured for her, Gen. 29. 20. And so did the Lord Christ *endure the Cross and despise the shame* for the Joy of saving his Elect which was set before him, Heb. 12. 2. And this was *one Grace* of the Eternal Spirit whereby he offered himself unto God.

2. That which principally acted him in the Whole, was his *unspeakable Zeal*, for and *Ardency of Affection unto the Glory of God*. These were the Coals which with a Vehement Flame as it were consumed the Sacrifice. And there were two things that he aimed at with respect unto the Glory of God. (1.) The *manifestation of his Righteousness*, Holiness and Severity against Sin. His Design was to repair the Glory of God, wherein it had seemed to suffer by sin, Psal. 40. 6, 7, 8. and Heb. 10. 5, 6, 7. He came to do that with full desire of Soul, (expressed in those words, *Lo I come*) which Legal Sacrifices could not do, namely to make satisfaction to the Justice of God for sin, to be a *propitiation* to declare his Righteousness, Rom. 3. 25. And this he doth as to the manner of it with inexpressible *Ardency of Zeal* and Affections; v. 8. *I delight to do thy Will, O my God, yea thy Law is in the midst of my Bowels*; he doubles the Expression of the Intenseness of his Mind hercon. And therefore when he was to prepare himself in his last Passcover for his Suffering, he expresseth the highest ingagement of *Heart* and Affections unto it; Luke 22. 15. *With desire have I desired to eat this Passcover with you*

you before I suffer. As with respect unto the same Work he had before exprest it. *I have a Baptism to be Baptized withal, and how am I straitned, or pained, till it be accomplished?* Luke 12. 50. His Zeal to advance the Glory of God in the manifestation of his Righteousness and Holiness, by the offering up himself as a Sin-Offering to make Atonement, gave him no Rest and Ease until he was engaged in it, whence it wrought unto the utmost. (2.) The *Exercise of his Grace and Love.* This he knew was the way to open the Treasures of Grace and Love that they might be poured out on Sinners to the Everlasting Glory of God. For this was the *Design* of God in the whole, *Rom. 3. 24, 25, 26.* This Zeal and Affection unto the Glory of God's Righteousness, Faithfulness and Grace, which was wrought in the *Heart of Christ* by the *Eternal Spirit*, was that wherein principally he offered up himself unto God.

3. *His Holy Submission and Obedience unto the Will of God*, which were now in the height of their Exercise, and Grace advanced unto the utmost in them, was another especial part of this his Offering up himself. That this was wrought in him by the *Holy or Eternal Spirit* was before declared. And it is frequently exprest as that which had an especial Influence into the Efficacy and Merit of his Sacrifice. *Psal. 2. 8. He humbled himself, and became Obedient unto Death, the Death of the Cross.* And when he offered up Prayers and Supplications, *though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things that he suffered, Heb. 5. 8.* That is, he experienced Obedience in Suffering. It is true, that the Lord Christ in the whole course of his Life yeelded *Obedience* unto God, as he was *made of a Woman, made under the Law, Gal. 4. 4.* But now he came to the great Tryal of it, with respect unto the especial command of the Father, *to lay down his Life, and to make his Soul an Offering for sin, Isa. 53. 10.* This was the highest *Act of Obedience* unto God that ever was or ever shall be to all Eternity. And therefore doth God so exprest his satisfaction therein and acceptance of it, *Isa. 53. 11, 12. Phil. 2. 9, 10.* This was wrought in him, this he was wrought unto by the *Holy Spirit*, and therefore by him offered himself unto God.

4. There belongs also hereunto that *Faith and Trust in God*, which with fervent Prayers, Cries & Supplications, he now acted on God and his Promises, both with respect unto himself, and to the Covenant which he was sealing with his Blood. This our Apostle represents as an especial Work of his testified unto in the Old Testament; *Heb. 2. 13. I will put my trust in him.* And this (1.) respected himself, namely that he should be supported, assisted, and carried through the Work he had undertaken unto a blessed Issue. Herein I confess he was *horribly assaulted* until he cryed out, *My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?* *Psal. 22. 1.* But yet after and through all his dreadful Tryal, his Faith and Trust in God were *Victorious*. This he exprest in the Depth and Extremity of his Tryals, *Psal. 22. 9, 10, 11.* and made such an open Profession of it, that his Enemies when they supposed him lost and defeated, reproached him with it, *v. 8. Matth. 27. 43.* To this purpose he declares himself at large, *Isa. 50. 7, 8, 9.* So his *Faith and Trust in God*, as to his own supportment and deliverance, with the accomplishment of all the Promises that were made unto him upon his ingagement into the Work of Mediation, were victorious. (2.) They respected the *Covenant* and all the Benefits that the Church of the Elect was to be made

Partaker of thereby. The *Blood* that he now shed was the *Blood* of the Covenant, and it was shed for his Church ; namely, that the Blessings of the Covenant might be communicated unto them, *Gal. 3. 13, 14.* With respect hereunto did he also exercise *Faith in God*, as appears fully in his Prayer which he made when he entred on his Oblation, *John 17.*

Now concerning these Instances we may observe three Things to our present purpose.

(1.) These and the like gracious Actings of the Soul of Christ, were the Wayes and Means whereby in his Death and Bloodshedding, which was violent and by force inflicted on him as to the outward Instruments, and was penal as to the Sentence of the Law, he *voluntarily* and *freely* offered up himself a Sacrifice unto God for to make Atonement. And these were the things which from the *dignity of his Person* became Efficacious and Victorious. Without these his Death and Bloodshedding had been no *Oblation*.

(2.) These were the things which rendred his Offering of himself, to be a *Sacrifice of a sweet smelling Savour unto God*, *Ephes. 5. 2.* God was so absolutely delighted and pleased with these high and glorious Acts of Grace and Obedience in Jesus Christ, that he *smelt* as it were a Savour of Rest towards Mankind, or those for whom he offered himself ; so that he would be angry with them no more, curse them no more : As it is said of the Type of it in the Sacrifice of *Noah*, *Gen. 8. 20, 21.* God was more pleased with the Obedience of Christ, than he was displeased with the Sin and Disobedience of *Adam*, *Rom. 5. 17, 18, 19.* It was not then the outward suffering of a violent and bloody Death which was inflicted on him, by the most horrible wickedness that ever Humane Nature brake forth into, that God was atoned, *Acts 2. 23.* Nor yet was it meerly his enduring the *Penalty* of the Law, that was the means of our Deliverance. But the *voluntary* giving up of himself to be a Sacrifice in these Holy Acts of Obedience, was that upon which in an especial manner God was reconciled unto us.

All these things being wrought in the Humane Nature by the *Holy Ghost*, who in the time of his Offering acted all his Graces unto the utmost ; He is said thereon to *offer himself unto God through the Eternal Spirit*, by whom as our High Priest he was Consecrated, Spirited, and Acted thereunto.

SECT. 10. Eighthly ; There was a peculiar Work of the Holy Spirit towards the Lord Christ whilst he was in the *State of the Dead*. For here our precedeing Rule must be remembred ; namely, that notwithstanding the Union of the Humane Nature of Christ with the Divine in the Person of the Son, yet the Communications of God unto it, beyond Subsistence, were *voluntary*. Thus in his Death the Union of his Natures in his Person was not in the least impeached ; but yet for his Soul or Spirit he recommends that in an especial manner into the *Hands of God his Father*, *Psal. 31. 5. Luke 23. 46. Father into thy Hands I commend my Spirit ;* for the Father had ingaged himself in an Eternal Covenant, to take care of him, to preserve and protect him even in Death, and to shew him again the *Way and Path of Life*, *Psal. 16. 11.* Notwithstanding then the Union of his Person, his Soul in its separate State was in an especial manner

manner under the care protection and power of the *Father*, preserved in his Love until the Hour came wherein he *shewed him again* the Path of Life. His Holy Body in the *Grave* continued under the especial care of the Spirit of God, and hereby was accomplished that great Promise, *That his Soul should not be left in Hell, nor the Holy One see Corruption*, Psal. 16. 10. *Acts* 2. 31. It is the Body of Christ which is here called *the Holy One*; as it was made an *holy Thing* by the Conception of it in the Womb by the Power of the Holy Ghost. And it is here spoken of in contradistinction unto his Soul, and opposed by *Peter* unto the *Body of David*, which when it died saw Corruption, *Acts* 2. 29. This Pure and Holy Substance was preserved in its Integrity by the overshadowing Power of the Holy Spirit, without any of those Accidents of change which attend the dead Bodies of others. I deny not but there was use made of the Ministry of *Angels* about the dead Body of Christ whilst it was in the Grave; even those which were seen sitting afterwards in the place where he lay, *John* 20. 12. by these was it preserved from all outward Force and Violation; But this also was under the peculiar care of the Spirit of God, who how he worketh by Angels hath been before declared.

Ninthly; There was a peculiar Work of the Holy Spirit in his *Re-SECT. II. surrection*, this being the compleating *Act* in laying the Foundation of the Church whereby Christ entred into his Rest, the great Testimony given unto the finishing of the Work of Redemption, with the satisfaction of God therein, and his acceptation of the Person of the Redeemer. It is on various accounts assigned distinctly to *each Person* in the Trinity. And this not only as all the *external Works* of God are *individed*, each Person being equally concerned in their Operation, but also upon the account of their especial respect unto and interest in the Work of Redemption, in the manner before declared. Unto the Father it is ascribed on the account of his *Authority*, and the declaration therein of Christ's perfect accomplishment of the Work committed unto him; *Acts* 2. 24. *Him hath God raised up, having loosed the Pains of Death, because it was not possible that he should be holden of it*; it is the Father who is spoken of. And he is said, as in other places, to raise Christ from the Dead; but this he doth with respect unto *his loosing the Pains of Death*, λύσας τὰς ἀδυναμίας τῆς θανάτου. These are the חבלי מוות, which with a little alteration of one *Vowel*, signifie the *Sorrows of Death*, or the *Cords of Death*. For חבלי מוות are the *Sorrows of Death*, and חבלי מוות are the *Cords of Death*, see *Psal.* 18. 4. *Psal.* 116. 3. And these *Sorrows* of Death here intended were the *Cords* of it, that is, the Power it had to bind the Lord Christ for a season under it. For the *Pains of Death*, that is the ἀδυναμίας, tormenting *Pains*, ended in his death it self. But the Consequents of them are here reckoned unto them, or the continuance under the Power of Death according unto the Sentence of the Law. These God *loosed* when the Law being fully satisfied the Sentence of it was taken off, and the Lord Christ was acquitted from its whole Charge. This was the Act of God the Father, as the Supream Rector and Judg of all. Hence he is said *to raise him from the Dead*, as the Judg by his Order delivereth an acquitted Prisoner, or one who hath answered the Law. The same Work he also takes unto himself; *John* 10. 17, 18. *I lay down my*
V 2 *Life*

Life that I may take it again, no Man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of my self, I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. For although Men by violence took away his Life, when with wicked hands they crucified and slew him, Acts 2. 23. Chap. 3. 15 ; Yet because they had neither Authority nor Ability so to do without his own consent, he saith, No Man could or did take away his Life, that is, against his Will, by Power over him, as the lives of other Men are taken away ; for this neither Angels nor Men could do. So also although the Father is said to raise him from the Dead by taking off the Sentence of the Law, which he had answered ; yet he himself also took his Life again by an Act of the Love, Care, and Power of his Divine Nature ; his living again being an Act of his Person, although the Humane Nature only died. But the peculiar efficiency in the reuniting of his most Holy Soul and Body was an Effect of the Power of the Holy Spirit ; 1 Pet. 3. 18. He was put to death in the Flesh, but quickned in the Spirit, ζωοποιήθεις τῷ πνεύματι, he was restored to Life by the Spirit ; and this was that Spirit whereby he preached unto them that were disobedient in the dayes of Noah, v. 19, 20. or that Spirit of Christ which was in the Prophets from the Foundation of the World, 1 Pet. 1. 11, 12. by which he preached in Noah unto that disobedient Generation, 2 Pet. 2. 5. whereby the Spirit of God strove for a season with those Inhabitants of the Old World, Gen. 6. 3. that is the Holy Spirit of God. To the same purpose we are instructed by our Apostle ; Rom. 8. 11. But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the Dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the Dead shall also quicken your Mortal Bodies by his Spirit which dwelleth in you. God shall quicken our Mortal Bodies also, by the same Spirit whereby he raised Christ from the Dead. For so the Relation of the one Work to the other, requires the words to be understood. And he asserts again the same expressly, Ephes. 1. 17, 18, 19, 20. he prays that God would give his Holy Spirit unto them, as a Spirit of Wildom and Revelation, v. 17. The Effects thereof in them and upon them are described, v. 18. and this he desires that they may so be made Partakers of, that by the Work of the Spirit of God in themselves renewing and quickning of them, they might have an experience of that exceeding greatness of his Power, which he put forth in the Lord Christ when he raised him from the Dead. And the Evidence or Testimony given unto his being the Son of God, by his Resurrection from the Dead, is said to be according to the Spirit of Holiness, or the Holy Spirit, Rom. 1. 4. He was positively declared to be the Son of God by his Resurrection from the Dead, ἐν δυνάμει, καὶ πνεύματι ἁγίῳ, that is, by the powerful working of the Holy Spirit. This also is the intendment of that Expression, 1 Tim. 3. 16. Justified in the Spirit. God was manifest in the Flesh by his Incarnation and Passion therein, and justified in the Spirit by a Declaration of his acquitment from the Sentence of Death, and all the Evils which he underwent, with the Reproaches wherewith he was contemptuously used, by his Quickning and Resurrection from the Dead, through the mighty and effectual working of the Spirit of God.

SECT. 12. Tenthly ; It was the Holy Spirit that glorified the Humane Nature, and made it every way meet for its Eternal Residence at the Right Hand of God, and a Pattern of the Glorification of the Bodies of them that believe

believe on him. He who first made his Nature *Holy*, now made it *Glorious*. And as we are made conformable unto him in *our Souls* here, his Image being renewed in us by the Spirit, so he is in his Body now glorified by the Effectual Operation of the same Spirit, the *Exemplar* and Pattern of that Glory which in our Mortal Bodies we shall receive by the same Spirit. For *when he appears we shall be like him*, 1 John 3. 2. seeing *he will change our vile Bodies, that they may be fashioned like unto his Glorious Body, according to the working whereby he is able to subdue all things unto himself*, Phil. 3. 21. And these are some of the principal Instances of the Operations of the Holy Spirit on the Humane Nature of the Head of the Church. The whole of them all, I confess, is a Work that we can look but *little* into, only what is plainly revealed we desire to receive and imbrace; considering that if we are his, we are *predestinated to be made conformable* in all things unto him, and that by the powerful and effectual Operation of that Spirit which thus wrought all things in him to the Glory of God. And as it is a matter of unspeakable consolation unto us, to consider what hath been done in and upon our Nature by the Application of the Love and Grace of God through his *Spirit* unto it; so it is of great Advantage, in that it directs our Faith and Supplications in our Endeavours after *Conformity* with him, which is our next End, under the enjoyment of God in Glory. What therefore in these Matters we apprehend we embrace; and for the depth of them they are the Object of our Admiration and Praise.

Secondly; There is yet another Work of the Holy Spirit, not immediately in and upon the Person of the Lord Christ, but *towards him* and on his behalf with respect unto his Work and Office. And it comprizeth the Head and Fountain of the whole Office of the Holy Spirit *towards the Church*. This was his *witness-bearing* unto the Lord Christ; namely, that he was the Son of God, the true *Messiah*, and that the Work which he performed in the World, was committed unto him by God the Father to accomplish. And this same Work he continueth to attend unto, unto this day, and will do so to the consummation of all things. It is known how the Lord Christ was reproached whilst he was in this World, and how *ignominiously* he was sent out of it by Death. Hereon a great contest ensued amongst mankind, wherein Heaven and Hell were deeply engaged. The greatest part of the World, the Princes, Rulers, and Wise Men of it, affirmed that he was an *Impostor*, a Seducer, a Malefactor, justly punished for his Evil Deeds. He on the other side chose *twelve Apostles* to bear Testimony unto the Holiness of his Life, the Truth and Purity of his Doctrine, the Accomplishment of the Prophecies of the Old Testament in his Birth, Life, Work, and Death; and in especial unto his *Resurrection from the Dead*, whereby he was justified and acquitted from all the Reproaches of Hell and the World, and their Calumnies refuted. But what could the Testimony of *twelve poor Men*, though never so honest, prevail against the *confronting Suffrage* of the World? Wherefore this Work of *bearing witness* unto the Lord Christ, was committed unto *him* who is above and over all, who knoweth how, and is able to make his Testimony prevalent; John 15. 26. *But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of Truth which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me.*

Accordingly the Apostles plead his concurring Testimony; Acts 5. 32. *And we are his Witnesses of these things, and so also is the Holy Spirit, whom God hath given to them that obey him.* And how he thus gave his Testimony our Apostle declares, Heb. 2. 4. *God also bearing witness with them, (that is, the Apostles) both with Signs and Wonders, and with divers Miracles and Gifts of the Holy Spirit according to his Will.* The first principal End why God gave the Holy Spirit to work all those miraculous Effects in them that believed in Jesus, was to *bear witness* unto his Person that he was indeed the Son of God, owned and exalted by him. For no Man not utterly forsaken of all Reason and Understanding, not utterly blinded, would once imagine that the *Holy Spirit* of God would work such marvelous Operations in and by them who believed on him, if he designed not to *justify his Person*, Work, and Doctrine thereby. And this in a short time, together with that effectual Power which he put forth in and by the Preaching of the Word, carried not only his Vindication against all the *Machinations* of Satan, and his Instruments throughout the World, but also subdued the generality of Mankind unto Faith in him and Obedience unto him, 1 Cor. 10. 4, 5. And upon this Testimony it is, that there is *real Faith* in him yet maintained in the World. This is that which he promised unto his Disciples whilst he was yet with them in the World, when their hearts were solicitous how they should bear up against their Adversaries upon his absence. *I will, saith he, send the Comforter unto you, and when he is come he will reprove the World of Sin, and of Righteousness, and of Judgment; of sin, because they believe not on me; of Righteousness, because I go to my Father and ye see me no more; of Judgment, because the Prince of this World is Judged,* John 16. 7, 8, 9, 10, 11. The Reason why the World believed not on Christ, was because they believed not that he was sent of God, John 9. 29. By his Testimony the Spirit was to reprove the World of their Infidelity, and to convince them of it by evidencing the Truth of his Mission. For hereon the whole issue of the Controversie between him and the World did depend. Whether he were Righteous or a Deceiver, was to be determined by his being *sent*, or not *sent* of God, and consequently God's Acceptance or Disapprobation of him. That he was so sent, so approved, the Holy Spirit convinced the World by his Testimony, manifesting that he *went to the Father*, and was exalted by him; for it was upon his Ascension and Exaltation that he received and poured out the Promise of the Spirit to this purpose, Acts 2. 33. Moreover whilst he was in the World, there was an *unrighteous Judgment* by the instigation of Satan passed upon him. On this Testimony of the Spirit, that *Judgment* was to be *reversed*, and a contrary Sentence passed on the Author of it, the Prince of this World. For by the Gospel so testified unto, was he Discovered, Convicted, Judged, Condemned, and cast out of that Power and Rule in the World, which by the darkness of the Minds of Men within, and Idolatry without, he had obtained and exercised. And that the Holy Spirit continueth to do the same Work, though not absolutely by the same means unto this very day, shall be afterwards declared.

And by these Considerations may we be led into that Knowledge of, and Acquaintance with our Lord Jesus Christ, which is so necessary, so useful,

useful, and so much recommended unto us in the Scripture. And the *utter neglect* of Learning the Knowledge of Christ, and of the Truth as it is in him, is not more pernicious unto the Souls of Men, than is the learning of it by *undue means*, whereby false and mischievous *Ideas* or Representations of him are infused into the Minds of Men. The *Papists* would learn and teach him by Images, the Work of Mens Hands, and Teachers of Lies. For besides that they are forbidden by God himself to be used unto any such purposes, and therefore cursed with barrenness and useflessness as to any end of Faith or Holiness; they are in themselves suited only to ingenerate *low* and carnal Thoughts in depraved superstitious Minds. For as the Worshippers of such Images know not what is the proper Cause nor the proper Object of that Reverence, and those Affections they find in themselves, when they approach unto them and adore before them; So the Apprehensions which they can have hereby, tend but to the *knowing after the flesh*, which the Apostle looked on as no part of his Duty, 2 Cor. 5. 16. But the Glory of the Humane Nature, as united unto the Person of the Son of God, and engaged in the discharge of his Office of Mediator, consists alone in these eminent, peculiar, ineffable Communications of the Spirit of God unto him, and his powerful Operations in him; This is represented unto us in the Glass of the Gospel, which we beholding by Faith are changed into the same Image by the same Spirit, 2 Cor. 3. 18.

Our Lord Christ himself did foretel us that there would be great en-
 quires after him, and that great Deceits would be immixed therewith-
 al; If, saith he, *they shall say unto you, He is in the Wilderness, go not
 forth, behold he is in the Secret Chambers, believe it not*, Matth. 24. 26.
 It is not a Wilderness, low, persecuted, unglorious and invisible Condi-
 tion, as to outward Profession, that our Saviour here intendeth. For
 himself foretold that his Church should be driven into the *Wilderness*,
 and nourished there, and that for a long season, Rev. 12. 6. And
 where his Church is there is Christ, for his Promise is to be with them
 and among them unto the end of the World, Matth. 28. 20. Nor by
Secret Chambers doth he intend those *private places* of meeting for secu-
 rity, which all his Disciples for some hundreds of years were compelled
 unto and did make use of, after his Apostles who met sometimes in an
upper Room, sometimes in the *Night* for fear of the *Jews*. And such it
 is notorious were all the Meetings of the *Primitive Christians*. But our
 Saviour here foretels the *false wayes* that some would pretend he is
 taught by and found in. For, first, some would say he was *ἐν τῇ ἐρημῳ*
in the Desert or *Wilderness*; and if Men would go forth thither, there
 they would see him and find him. And there is nothing intended here-
 by, but the ancient Superstitious *Monks*, who under a pretence of Reli-
 gion retired themselves into Desarts and Solitary Places. For there
 they pretended great Intercourse with Christ, great Visions and Appear-
 ances of him, being variously deluded and imposed on by Satan and
 their own Imaginations. It is ridiculous on the one hand, and deplora-
 ble on the other, to consider the woful Follies, Delusions, and Super-
 stitions this sort of Men fell into: Yet was in those dayes nothing more
 common, than to say, That *Christ was in the Desert*, conversing with the
Monks

SECT. 15.

Monks and Anchorites. Go not forth unto them, saith our Lord Christ, for in so doing you will be deceived; And again saith he, If they say unto them he is, ἐν τοῖς ταμείοις, in the Secret Chambers, believe it not. There is, or I am much deceived, a deep and mysterious Instruction in these words. *ταμεία*, signifies those *secret places* in an House where *Bread and Wine and Cates* of all sorts are laid up and stored. This is the proper signification and use of the word. What pretence then could there be for any to say that Christ was in such a place? Why, there ensued so great a pretence hereof, and so horrible a superstition thereon, that it was of Divine Wisdom to foresee it, and of Divine Goodness to forewarn us of it. For it is nothing but the *Papish* Figment of *Transubstantiation* that is intended. Christ must be in the *secret Places* where their *Wafer and Wine* was deposited, that is, ἐν τοῖς ταμείοις. Concerning this faith our Saviour, *believe them not.* All Crafts and Frauds and bloody Violences will be used to compel you to believe a Christ in the *Pix* and Repository; but if you would not be seduced, *believe them not.* Such are the false wayes whereby some have pretended to teach Christ, and to learn him, which have led them from him into hurtful Snares and Perdition. The consideration that we have insisted on will guide us, if attended, unto a Spiritual and Saving Knowledg of him, and we are to learn thus to know him.

SECT. 16. First; That we may *love him* with a pure unmixed Love. It is true, it is the Person of Christ as God and Man, that is the Proper and Ultimate Object of our Love towards him. But a clear distinct Consideration of his Natures and their Excellencies is effectual to stir up and draw forth our Love towards him. So the *Spouse* in the *Canticles* rendering a Reason of her intense Affections towards him, sayes, *That he is White and Ruddy, the chiefest of ten thousand;* that is, perfect in the Beauty of the Graces of the Holy Spirit, which rendred him exceeding amiable. So also *Psal. 45. 2.* Would you therefore propose Christ unto your Affections, so as that your Love unto him may be *sincere* and without corruption as it is required to be, *Ephes. 6. 24.* that you may not lavish away the Actings of your Souls upon a *false Object*, and think you love Christ, when you love only the Imaginations of your own Breasts; consider his Humane Nature, as it was rendred beautiful and lovely by the Work of the Spirit of God upon it before described. Do you love him because he was and is so *full of Grace, so full of Holiness,* because in him there was an All-fulness of the Graces of the Spirit of God? Consider aright what hath been delivered concerning him, and if you can and do on the account thereof *delight in him,* and love him, your Love is Genuine and Spiritual. But if your Love be meerly out of an apprehension of his being now Glorious in Heaven, and there able to do you Good or Evil, it differs not much from that of the *Papists*, whose Love is much regulated in its Actings, by the good or bad painting of the Images whereby they represent him. You are often pressed to direct your Love unto the Person of Christ, and it is that which is your principal Duty in this World. But this you cannot do without a distinct Notion and Knowledg of him. There are therefore three things in general that you are to consider to this purpose.

(1.) The

(1.) The *Blessed Union* of his two Natures in the same Person. Herein he is singular, God having taken that especial State on him, which in no other thing or way had any Consideration ; This therefore is to have a specialty in our Divine Love to the Person of Christ.

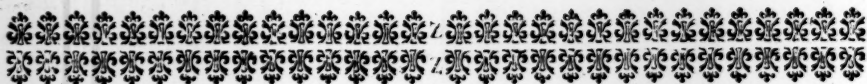
(2.) The *Uncreated Glories* of the Divine Nature, whence our Love hath the same Object with that which we owe unto God absolutely.

(3.) That Perfection and Fulness of Grace which dwelt in his Humane Nature, as communicated unto him by the Holy Spirit whereof we have treated.

If you love the Person of Christ, it must be on these Considerations. Which whilst some have neglected, they have doted on their own Imaginations ; and whilst they have thought themselves even sick of Love for Christ, they have only languished in their own Fancies.

Secondly ; We are to know Christ so, as to labour after *conformity* unto him. And this Conformity consists only in a Participation of those Graces whose fulness dwells in him. We can therefore no other way regularly press after it, but by an Acquaintance with, and due Consideration of the Work of the Spirit of God upon his Humane Nature, which is therefore worthy of our most diligent enquiry into.

And so have we given a brief *delineation* of the Dispensation and Work of the Holy Spirit, in and towards the Person of our Lord Jesus Christ, the *Head* of the Church; his preparation of a *Mystical Body* for him, in his Powerful Gracious Work on the *Elect of God*, doth nextly ensue.



The General Work of the Holy Spirit in the New Creation, with respect unto the Members of that Body whereof Christ is the Head.

CHAP. V.

(1.) *Christ the Head of the New Creation.* (2.) *Things premised in general unto the remaining Work of the Spirit. Things presupposed unto the Work of the Spirit towards the Church, the Love and Grace of Father and Son.* (3.) *The whole Work of the building of the Church committed to the Holy Spirit; Acts 2. 33. opened.* (4.) *The Foundation of the Church in the Promise of the Spirit, and its Building by him alone.* (5.) *Christ present with his Church only by his Spirit, Mat. 28. 19. Acts 1. 9, 10. Acts 3. 21. Mat. 18. 19. 1 Cor. 6. 16. 1 Cor. 3. 16. compared.* (6.) *The Holy Spirit works the Work of Christ; John 16. 13, 14, 15. opened.* (7.) *The Holy Spirit the peculiar Author of all Grace.* (8.) *The Holy Spirit worketh all this according to his own Will. 1. His Will and Pleasure is in all his Works. 2. He works variously as to the Kinds and Degrees of his Operations. How he may be resisted, how not.* (9.) *How the same Work is ascribed unto the Spirit distinctly, and to others with him.* (10.) *The General Heads of his Operations towards the Church.*

SECT. I.

WE have considered the Work of the Spirit of God in his laying the Foundation of the Church of the New Testament; by his Dispensations towards the Head of it, our Lord Jesus Christ. He is the *Foundation Stone* of this Building, with *seven Eyes* engraven on him, or filled with an absolute perfection of all the Gifts and Graces of the Spirit, *Zeck. 3. 9.* which when he is exalted also as *the Head Stone in the Corner*, there are shoutings in Heaven and Earth, crying, *Grace, Grace* unto him, *Zeck. 4. 7.* As upon the laying of the Foundation, and placing of the Corner Stones of the Earth in the Old Creation; the *Morning Stars sang together, and all the Sons of God shouted for Joy, Job 38. 6, 7.* So upon the laying of this Foundation, and placing of this *Corner Stone* in the New Creation, all things sing together and cry, *Grace, Grace* unto it. The same Hand which laid this Foundation, doth also finish the Building. The same Spirit which was given unto him, *not by Measure, Joh. 3. 34.* giveth Grace unto every one of us, *according to the Measure of the Gift of Christ, Ephes. 4. 7.* And this falleth now under our Consideration; namely, the perfecting the Work of the *New Creation* by the effectual

effectual Operation and Distributions of the Spirit of God. And this belongs unto the Establishment of our Faith, that he who *Prepared, Sanctified, and Glorified* the Humane Nature, the Natural Body of Jesus Christ, the Head of the Church, hath undertaken to *Prepare, Sanctify, and Glorify* his Mystical Body, or all the Elect given unto him of the Father. Concerning which before we come to consider particular Instances, some things in general must be premised; which are these that follow.

First; Unto the Work of the Holy Spirit *towards the Church*, some things are *supposed* from whence it proceeds, which it is built upon, and resolved into. It is not an *Original* but a *Perfecting Work*; some things it supposeth, and bringeth *all* things to perfection; And these are,

SECT. 2.

First; The *Love, Grace, Counsel* and *Eternal Purpose* of the Father. (2.) The whole Work of the *Mediation* of Jesus Christ, which things I have handled elsewhere. For it is the *peculiar Work* of the Holy Spirit, to make *those things* of the Father and Son effectual unto the Souls of the Elect, to the Praise of the Glory of the Grace of God. God doth *all things for himself*, and his Supream End is the manifestation of his own Glory. And in the *Old* or *First Creation*, he seems principally or firstly to intend the Demonstration and Exaltation of the Glorious *Essential Properties* of his Nature, his Goodness, Power, Wisdom, and the like: as *Psal. 19. 1, 2, 3, 4. Rom. 1. 19, 20, 21. Acts 14. 15, 16, 17. Acts 17. 24, 25, 26, 27.* leaving only on the Works of his Hands some obscure Impressions of the *distinction of Persons*, subsisting in the Unity of that Being, whose Properties he had displayed and glorified. But in the Work of the *New Creation*, God firstly and principally intends the especial Revelation of *each Person of the whole Trinity* distinctly, in their *peculiar distinct Operations*; all which tend ultimately to the manifestation of the Glory of his Nature also. And herein consists the principal Advantage of the *New Testament* above the *Old*; for although the Work of the *New Creation* was begun and carried on Secretly and Virtually under the *Old Testament*; yet they had not a full discovery of the *Oeconomy* of the Holy Trinity therein, which was not evidently manifest until the whole Work was illustriously brought to Light by the Gospel. Hence although there appear a vigorous acting of Faith, and ardency of Affection in the Approaches of the Saints unto God, under the *Old Testament*; yet as unto a clear access to the Father through the Son by the Spirit, as *Ephes. 2. 18.* wherein the Life and Comfort of our Communion with God doth consist, we hear nothing of it. Herein therefore God plainly declares, that the Foundation of the Whole was laid in the Counsel, Will, and Grace of the Father, *Ephes. 1. 3, 4, 5, 6.* Then that the making way for the accomplishing of that Counsel of his, so that it might be brought forth to the praise of his Glory, is by the Mediation of the Son; God having designed in this Work to bring things so about, that all Men should *honour the Son, even as they honour the Father*, *John 5. 23.* There yet remains the *actual Application* of all to the Souls of Men, that they may be Partakers of the Grace designed in the Counsel of the Father, and prepared in the Mediation of the Son. And herein is the *Holy Spirit* to

156 *The General Work of the Holy Spirit* Book 2.

be manifested and glorified, that He also, together with the Father and the Son, may be Known, Adored, Worshipped, according unto his own Will. This is the Work that he hath undertaken. And hereon upon the solemn *Initiation* of any Person into the Covenant of God, in answer unto this Design and Work, he is *Baptized into the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit*, Matth. 28. 18. And these things have been discoursed of before, though necessarily here called over again.

SECT. 3. Secondly ; From the *Nature and Order* of this Work of God, it is, That after the *Son* was actually exhibited in the *Flesh* according to the Promise, and had fulfilled what he had taken upon him to do in his own Person, the great Promise of carrying on and finishing the whole Work of the Grace of God in our Salvation, concerns the *sending of the Holy*

* Καὶ μάλιστα γὰρ τὸ ἀπολάμβειν τῆς ἀναπαύσεως τῆς ἀγιασμοῦ, καὶ διαμένειν ἐν τῇ ἀναπαύσει, ἢ τῆς παναγίας πνεύματος. ὅτι δυνάμειος τε καὶ συνοχῆς. Jobius apud Photium. lib. 122.

Spirit, to do and perform what he also had undertaken. * Thus when our Lord Jesus Christ was ascended into Heaven, and began conspicuously and gloriously to carry on the building of his Church upon himself the Rock and Foundation of it, it is said, That *being exalted by*

the Right Hand of God, he received of the Father the Promise of the Holy Spirit, Acts 2. 33. which must be a little opened. Before he departed from his Disciples, as hath been mentioned on several occasions, he comforted and cheered their drooping Spirits, with the Promise of *sending him* unto them, which he often repeated and inculcated on their minds, *John* 14. 15, 16. And (2.) when he was actually leaving of them after his Resurrection he gives them order to sit still, and not to ingage in the publick Work of building the Church, whereunto he had designed them, until that *Promise were actually accomplished* towards them, *Acts* 1. 4. *Being assembled together with them, he commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the Promise of the Father ; and* Vers. 8. *Ye shall receive Power after the Holy Spirit is come upon you, and ye shall be Witnesses unto me, both in Jerusalem and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the utmost parts of the Earth.* He would have them look neither for Assistance in their Work, nor success unto it, but from the *promised Spirit* alone ; and lets them know also, that by his Aid they should be enabled to carry their Testimony of him to the uttermost parts of the Earth. And herein lay, and herein doth lie the Foundation of the *Ministry* of the Church, as also its Continuance and Efficacy. The Kingdom of Christ is Spiritual, and in the animating Principles of it, invilible. If we fix our Minds only on outward Order, we lose the Rise and Power of the whole ; it is not an *outward visible Ordination by Men*, though that be necessary by Rule and Precept, but Christ's Communication of that Spirit, the Everlasting Promise whereof he received of the Father, that gives *Being, Life, Usefulness*, and success to the Ministry. Wherefore also (3.) upon his Ascension in the Accomplishment of the great Promises given unto the Church under the *Old Testament*, *Isa.* 44. 3. *Joel* 1. 18. as also of his own *newly given* unto his Disciples, he poured forth his Spirit on them. This the Apostle *Peter* declares in this place ; *Being exalted by the right Hand of God, and having received of the Father the Promise of the Holy Spirit ; he shed forth what they then*

then *saw and heard*, in the Miraculous Operations and Effects of it. And he is said *then to receive the Promise of the Father*, because he then received the *thing promised*. The Promise was not then first given unto him, nor did he then *receive it* for himself; For as the Promise was given long before, so in his own Person he had received the *fulneſſ of the Spirit* from his Incarnation, as hath been declared. But now he had Power given him actually to fulfil and *accompliſh the Promise* in the Collation of the thing promised, and is thence said *to receive the Promise*. So Heb. 11. 13, 39. it is said of all Believers under the Old Testament, That they died in Faith, *having not received the Promise*; that is, the thing promised. was not actually exhibited in their dayes, though they *had the Promise of it*; as it is expreſſly said of Abraham, Chap. 7. 6. The Promise therefore it ſelf was given unto the Lord Chriſt, and actually received by him in the Covenant of the Mediator, when he undertook the great Work of the Reſtauration of all things to the Glory of God. For herein had he the Ingagement of the Father that the Holy Spirit ſhould be *poured out on the Sons of Men*, to make effectual unto their Souls, the whole Work of his Mediation; wherefore he is ſaid now *to receive this Promise*, becauſe on his account, and by him as exalted, it was now ſolemnly accompliſhed, in and towards the Church. In the ſame manner the ſame thing is deſcribed, Pſal. 68. 18. *Thou haſt aſcended on High, thou haſt led Captivity captive, thou haſt received Gifts for Men*; which is rendred, Ephes. 4. 8. *Thou haſt given Gifts unto Men*, for he *received the Promise* at this time, *only to give out the Spirit and his Gifts unto Men*. And if any are ſo fond as to expect Strength and Aſſiſtance in the Work of the Miniſtry without him, or ſuch ſucceſs in their Labours as ſhall find Acceptance with God; they do but deceive their own Souls and others.

Here lay the Foundation of the Chriſtian Church. The Lord Chriſt had called his Apoſtles to the great Work of *building his Church*, and the propagation of his Goſpel in the World. Of themſelves they were plainly and openly *defective* in all Qualifications and Abilities that might contribute any thing thereunto. But whatever is wanting in themſelves, whether Light, Wiſdom, Authority, Knowledge, Utterance, or Courage, he promiſeth to ſupply them withal. And this he would not do, nor did any otherwiſe, but by *ſending the Holy Spirit* unto them, on whoſe preſence and aſſiſtance alone depended the whole ſucceſs of their Miniſtry in the World. It was *through the Holy Ghoſt that he gave Commandments unto them*, Acts 1. 2. Thoſe Commandments concern the whole Work in Preaching the Goſpel and Founding of the Church; and theſe he gives unto them through the actings of Divine Wiſdom in the Humane Nature by the *Holy Ghoſt*. And on their part, without *his Aſſiſtance* he forbids them to attempt any thing, v. 4, 8, 9. In this Promise then the Lord Chriſt *founded the Church* it ſelf, and by it he *buildd* it up; And this is the Hinge whereon the whole weight of it doth turn and depend unto this day. Take it away, ſuppoſe it to ceaſe as unto a continual Accompliſhment, and there will be an abſolute *end of the Church* of Chriſt in this World. No Diſpenſation of the Spirit, no Church. He that would utterly ſeparate the Spirit from the Word, had as good burn his Bible. The bare *Letter of the New Teſtament* will no more in-

SECT. 4.

generate Faith and Obedience in the Souls of Men, no more constitute a Church-State among them who enjoy it, than the *Letter of the Old Testament* doth so at this day among the *Jews*, 2 Cor. 3. 6, 8. But blessed be God who hath knit these things together towards his Elect in the Bond of an Everlasting Covenant, *Isa.* 59. 21. Let Men therefore cast themselves into what order they please, institute what Forms of Government and Religious Worship they think good, let them do it either by an attendance according unto the best of their understandings unto the *Letter of the Scripture*, or else in an Exercise of their own Wills, Wisdom and Invention; if the Work of the Spirit of God be *disowned or disclaimed by them*, if there be not in them and upon them such a Work of his as he is promised by our Lord Jesus Christ, there is no Church-State amongst them; nor as such is it to be owned or esteemed. And on the Ministry and the Church do all ordinary Communications of Grace from God depend.

SECT. 5. Thirdly; It is the Holy Spirit who supplies the *bodily absence* of Christ; and by him doth he accomplish all his Promises to the Church. Hence some of the Ancients call him *Vicarium Christi*, the *Vicar of Christ*, or he who represents his Person, and dischargeth his promised Work; *Operam navat Christo Vicariam*. When our Lord Jesus was leaving the World he gave his Disciples command to *Preach the Gospel*, and to *Disciple the World* into the Faith and Profession thereof, *Matth.* 28. 19. For their encouragement herein, he promiseth his *own presence* with them in their whole Work, where-ever any of them should be called unto it, and that whilst he would have the Gospel preached on the Earth, so saith he, *I am with you alwayes even unto the end of the World, or the Consummation of all things*, v. 20. Immediately after he had thus spoken unto them, *while they beheld he was taken up, and a Cloud received him out of their sight, and they looked steadfastly towards Heaven as he went up*, *Acts* 1. 9, 10. Where now is the Accomplishment of his Promise, that he would be with them unto the end of all things, which was the sole Encouragement he gave them unto their great undertaking? It may be that after this his *triumphant Ascension* into Heaven to take possession of his Kingdom and Glory, he came again unto them, and made his abode with them: *No*, saith *Peter*, *the Heavens must receive him until the time of the restitution of all things*, *Acts* 3. 21. How then is this Promise of his made good, which had such a peculiar respect unto the Ministry and Ministers of the Gospel, that without it none can ever *honestly* or conscientiously engage in the Dispensation of it, or expect the least *success* upon their so doing? Besides he had promised unto the Church it self, That where-ever two or three were gathered together in his Name, that he would be in the midst of them, *Matth.* 18. 19, 20. Hereon do all their Comforts and all their Acceptance with God depend. I say, all these Promises are *perfectly fulfilled* by his *sending of the Holy Spirit*. In and by him he is present with his Disciples in their Ministry and their Assemblies. And when-ever *Christ leaves the World*, the Church must do so too. For it is his Presence alone which puts Men into that condition, or invests them with that Priviledg. For so he saith, *I will dwell in them, and walk in them, and I will be their God, and they shall be my People*, 2 Cor. 6. 16. *Levit.* 26. 12. Their being the *People of God*, so as there-

therewithal to be the *Temple of the Living God*, that is, to be brought into a Sacred Church-State for his Worship, depends on his *dwelling in them*, and walking in them; and this he doth by his *Spirit alone*. For know you not that you are the *Temple of God*, and that the *Spirit of God dwelleth in you*, 1 Cor. 3. 16. He therefore so far represents the Person, and supplies the *bodily absence* of Christ, that on his Presence the Being of the Church, the Success of the Ministry, and the Edification of the whole do absolutely depend. And this if any thing in the whole Gospel deserves our serious Consideration. For (1.) the Lord Jesus hath told us that his *presence* with us by his Spirit is better and *more expedient* for us than the continuance of his Bodily Presence. Now who is there that hath any Affection for Christ, but thinks that the Carnal Presence of the Humane Nature of Christ would be of unspeakable Advantage unto him? And so no doubt it would, had any such thing been designed or appointed in the Wisdom and Love of God. But so it is not; and on the other side we are commanded to look for *more Advantage* and *Benefit* by his Spiritual Presence with us, or his Presence with us by the Holy Ghost. It is therefore certainly incumbent on us, to inquire diligently what Valuation we have hereof, and what Benefit we have hereby. For if we find not that we really receive Grace, Assistance, and Consolation from *this presence of Christ* with us, we have no benefit at all by him, nor from him, for he is now no otherwise for those ends with any but by his Spirit. And this they will one day find, whose Profession is made up of such a sottish Contradiction as to avow an honour for Jesus Christ, and yet blaspheme his Spirit in all his Holy Operations. (2.) The Lord Christ having expressly promised to be present with us to the end of all things, there are great Enquiries *how* that Promise is accomplished. Some say he is present with us *by his Ministers* and Ordinances; but how then is he present with those *Ministers themselves*, unto whom the Promise of his Presence is made in an especial manner? The *Papists* would have him Carnally and Bodily present in the Sacrament. But he himself hath told us, that *the Flesh* in such a sense *profiteth nothing*, John 6. 63. and that it is the *Spirit alone that quickneth*. The *Lutherans* fancy an Omnipresence or *Ubiquity* of his Humane Nature, by virtue of its Personal Union. But this is destructive of that Nature it self; which being made to be every where as such a Nature, is truly *nowhere*. And the most Learned among them are ashamed of this Imagination. The words of *Smidh* on *Ephes. 4. 10.* *ὡς πληρώσεν τὰ πάντα* are worthy consideration. *Per τὰ πάντα aliqui intelligunt totum Mundum, seu totum Universum hoc, exponuntque ut Omnipresencia sua omnibus in Mundo locis adesset, loca omnia implendo: & hi verbum πληρώσειν de Physica & crassa impletione accipiunt; quam tamen talis πληρώσις seu impletio locorum in Mundo omnium quæ vel expansionem corpoream in quantitate continua, vel multiplicationem, imo infinitam multitudinem unius ejusdemque corporis in discreta presupponit, & ex humana speculatione orta est, falso; nostris Ecclesiis asingitur; (wherein yet he confesseth that it is taught) Ne cogitanda quidem sit pio homini; sed potius Omnipresencia Christi Hominis -- uti promissa est, modo nobis ineffabili credi, & multo certius aliunde sciri possit ex ipsius promissione, Matth. 28. 20.* This way, as we say with the Scripture, is by his *Spirit*; the perfect manner of whose Presence and Operation is *ineffable*.

Fourthly;

SECT. 6.

Fourthly; As he represents the *Person*, and supplies the Room and Place of Jesus Christ, so he worketh and effecteth what-ever the Lord Christ hath *taken upon himself* to Work and Effect towards his Disciples. Wherefore as the Work of the Son was not his *own Work*, but rather the *Work of the Father who sent him*, and in whose Name he performed it; so the Work of the Holy Spirit is not his *own Work*, but rather the *Work of the Son*, by whom he is sent, and in whose Name he doth accomplish it. John 16. 13, 14, 15. *Howbeit when the Spirit of Truth is come, he will guide you into all Truth. For he shall not speak of himself, but whatsoever he shall hear, that he shall speak, and he will shew you things to come. He shall glorifie me, for he shall receive of mine and shall shew it unto you. All things that the Father hath are mine; therefore said I that he shall take of mine, and shew it unto you.* He comes to reveal and communicate *Truth and Grace* to the Disciples of Christ. And in his so doing he speaks not of himself; that is, of himself only. He comes not with any absolute *new Dispensation* of Truth or Grace, distinct or different from that which is in and by the Lord Christ, and which they had heard from him. The Holy Spirit being promised unto the Disciples, and all their Work and Duty being suspended on the accomplishment of that Promise, whereas he is God, they might suppose that he would come with some *absolute new Dispensation* of Truth, so that what they had learned and received from Christ should pass away and be of no use unto them. To prevent any such Apprehensions, he lets them know that the Work he had to do, was only to carry on and build on the *Foundation* which was laid in his Person or Doctrine, or the Truth which he had revealed from the Bosom of the Father. And this I take to be the meaning of that Expression. *For he shall not speak of himself*, he shall reveal *no other Truth*, communicate *no other Grace* but what is in from and by my self. This was the Holy Spirit to do, and this he did; and hereby may we *try every Spirit whether it be of God*. That Spirit which revealeth any thing or pretendeth to reveal any Thing, any Doctrine, any Grace, any Truth, that is contrary unto, that is not consonant to, yea that is not the Doctrine, Grace, or Truth of Christ, as now revealed in the Word, that brings any thing new, his own, or of himself, that Spirit is not of God. So it is added, (2.) *Whatsoever he shall hear that shall he speak*. This which he hears, is the whole Counsel of the Father and the Son concerning the Salvation of the Church. And how is he said to *hear it*, which word in its proper signification hath no place in the mutual internal Actings of the Divine Persons of the Holy Trinity. Being the Spirit of the Father and the Son, proceeding from both, he is *equally participant* of their Counsels. So the outward Act of Hearing is mentioned as the *sign* of his Infinite Knowledge of the Eternal Counsels of the Father and Son; He is no *stranger* unto them. And this is a general Rule, That those words which with respect unto us express the *means* of any thing, as applyed unto God, intend no more but the *signs* of it. Hearing is the means whereby we come to know the mind of another who is distinct from us. And when God is said to hearken or hear, it is a *sign* of his knowledg, not the *means* of it. So is the Holy Spirit said to *hear* those things because he knows them. As he is also on the same account said to search the deep things of God. Add hereunto that the Counsel of these things

is originally peculiar to the Father, and unto him it is every where peculiarly ascribed; therefore is the participation of the Spirit therein as a distinct Person called his *bearing*. Hereunto (3.) his great Work is subjoyned. He, *saith Christ, shall glorify me*. This is the Design that he is sent upon; this is the Work that he comes to do, even as it was the Design and Work of Jesus Christ to glorify the Father by whom he was sent. And this are they always to bear in mind, who stand in need of or pray for his Assistance in their Work or Office in the Church of God. He is given unto them that through him they may give and bring Glory to Jesus Christ. And (4.) how the Holy Spirit doth glorify the Lord Christ is also declared. *He shall receive of mine and shew it unto you*; The Communication of Spiritual Things from Christ by the Spirit is here called his *receiving of them*; as the communication of the Spirit from the Father by the Lord Christ to his Disciples, is called the *receiving of the Promise*. The Spirit cannot receive any thing *subjectively* which he had not, as an addition unto him. It is therefore the *Oeconomy* of these things that is here intended. He is not said to *receive them* as though before he had them not. For what can he who is God so receive? only when he begins to give them unto us, because they are peculiarly the things of *Christ*, he is said to receive them. For we can give nothing of anothers but what we receive of him. Good things are given unto us from Christ by the Spirit. For so it is added, *and shall shew them unto you*. He shall make them known unto you; so declare them and manifestly evidence them to you, and in you, that you shall understand and have *experience* of them in your selves; shew them by Revelation, instructing you in them, by communication imparting them to you. And what are these things that he shall so declare? They are τὰ ἐμὰ, *my things*, saith our Saviour. The things of *Christ* may be referred unto two Heads, His Truth and His Grace, *John* 1. 17. The first he shews by Revelation, the latter by Effectual Communication. His Truth he shewed unto them by Revelation, as we have declared him to be the Immediate Author of all Divine Revelations. This he did unto the Apostles by his Inspirations, enabling them infallibly to receive understand and declare, the whole Counsel of God in Christ. For so according unto the Promise, *He led them into all Truth*. And his *Grace* he shewed unto them in his pouring out both of his Sanctifying Graces and Extraordinary Gifts upon them in an abundant measure. And so he still continues to shew the Truth and Grace of *Christ* unto all Believers, though not in the same manner as unto the former, nor unto the same Degree as unto the latter. For he shews unto us the *Truth* of *Christ*, or the *Truth that came by Jesus Christ*, by the Word as Written and Preached, instructing us in it, and enlightning our Minds Spiritually and Savingly to understand the Mind of God therein. And of his *Grace* he imparts unto us in our Sanctification, Consolation, and Communication of Spiritual Gifts, according unto the measure of the Gift of *Christ* unto every one of us, as the present use of the *Church* doth require, which things must be afterwards declared. And the Reason of the Assertion is added in the last place. *All things that the Father hath are mine; therefore said I, that he shall take of mine and shall shew it unto you*. Two things may be observed in these words. 1. The Extent of the *Things of Christ*, which are to be shewed unto Believers by the Spirit; and they are *all the things*

162 *The General Work of the Holy Spirit Book 2.*

that the Father hath. They are mine, saith our Saviour; And these *All things* may be taken either *absolutely* and personally, or with a restriction unto Office. (1.) All things that the Father hath *absolutely*, were the Son's also. For receiving his *Personality* from the Father, by the communication of the whole entire Divine Nature, all the *things* of the Father must needs be his. Thus as the Father hath *Life* in himself, so he hath *given unto the Son to have Life in himself*, John 5. 26. and the like may be said of all other Essential Properties of the God-head. But these seem not to be the *All Things* here intended. They are not the *All things* of the *Divine Nature* which he had by Eternal Generation; but the *All Things* of Spiritual Grace and Power which he had by voluntary Donation; Matth. 11. 27. Joh. 3. 35. *The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand.* That is, all the Effects of the Love, Grace, and Will of the Father, what-ever he had purposed in himself from Eternity, and what-ever his Infinite Power and Goodness would produce in the pursuit thereof, was *all* given and committed unto Jesus Christ; so *All things* that the Father hath were his.

2. That these things may be rightly understood and apprehended, we must consider a *two-fold Operation* of God as *Three in One*. The first hereof is absolute in all Divine Works what-ever; the other respects the *Oeconomy* of the Operations of God in our Salvation. In those of the first sort, both the Working and the Work, do in common and undividedly belong unto and proceed from each Person. And the Reason hereof is, because they are all Effects of the Essential Properties of the same Divine Nature; which is in them all, or rather which is the one Nature of them all. But yet as they have *one Nature*, so there is an Order of *subsistence* in that Nature, and the distinct Persons Work in the Order of their Subsistence; John 5. 19, 20. *Verily I say unto you, the Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do; for whatsoever things he doth, those also doth the Son likewise.* The Father doth not first work in order of *Time*, and then the Son *seeing* of it work another Work like unto it. But the Son doth the *same Work* that the Father doth. This is absolutely necessary, because of their Union in Nature. But yet in the Order of their Subsistence, the *Person of the Father* is the Original of all Divine Works, in the principle and beginning of them, and that in order of Nature, *antecedently* unto the Operation of the Son. Hence he is said *to see* what the Father doth; which according unto our former Rule in the Exposition of such Expressions, when ascribed unto the Divine Nature, is the *sign* and *evidence*, and not the *means* of his Knowledge. He sees what the Father doth, as he is his Eternal Wisdom. The like must be said of the Holy Spirit, with respect both unto the Father and Son. And this *Order of Operation* in the Holy Trinity is not voluntary, but *natural* and *necessary* from the one Essence and distinct Subsistences thereof. Secondly; There are those Operations, which with respect unto our Salvation, the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, do graciously condescend unto, which are those treated of in this place. Now though the designing of this Work was absolutely *voluntary*, yet upon a supposition thereof, the order of its Accomplishment was made *necessary* from the Order of the Subsistence of the distinct Persons in the Deity; and that is here declared. Thus (1.) the things to be declared unto us, and bestowed on us, are originally the *Father's Things*. He is the
peculiar

peculiar Fountain of them all. His Love, His Grace, His Wisdom, His Goodness, His Counsel, His Will, is their Supreme Cause and Spring. Hence are they said to be the *things that the Father hath*. (2.) They are made the *Things of the Son*, that is, they are given and granted in and unto his disposal, on the account of his Mediation; for thereby they were to be prepared for us, and given out unto us, to the Glory of God. Answerable hereunto as the Lord Christ is Mediator, all the things of Grace are originally the Fathers, and then given unto him. (3.) They are *actually communicated* unto us by the Holy Spirit, *Therefore said I, he shall take of mine and shew unto you*. He doth not communicate them unto us immediately from the Father. We do not so receive any Grace from God that is the Father; nor do we so make any return of Praise or Obedience unto God. We have nothing to do with the Person of the Father *immediately*. It is *by the Son* alone by whom we have an Access unto him, and by the Son alone that he gives out of his Grace and Bounty unto us. *He that hath not the Son hath not the Father*. With him as the great Treasurer of Heavenly Things, are all Grace and Mercy entrusted. The Holy Spirit therefore *shews them unto us*, works them in us, bestows them on us, as they are the *Fruits of the Mediation* of Christ, and not merely as Effects of the Divine Love and Bounty of the Father; and this is required from the Order of Subistence before mentioned. Thus the Holy Spirit supplies the *bodily Absence* of Jesus Christ, and Effects what he hath to do and accomplish towards his in the World; so that what-ever is done by him, it is the same as if it were wrought immediately by the Lord Christ himself in his own Person; whereby all his Holy Promises are fully accomplished towards them that believe.

And this instructs us in the Way and Manner of that *Communion* SECT. 6. which we have with God by the Gospel. For herein the Life, Power, and Freedom of our Evangelical State doth consist, and an acquaintance herewith gives us our Translation *out of Darknes into the marvelous Light of God*. (1.) The Person of the *Father* in his Wisdom, Will, and Love, is the Original of all Grace and Glory. But nothing hereof is communicated immediately unto us from him. It is the *Son* whom he loves and hath given all things into his hand. He hath *made way* for the Communication of these things unto us unto the Glory of God. And he doth it immediately by the *Spirit*, as hath been declared. Hereby are all our Returns unto God to be regulated. The Father who is the *Original* of all Grace and Glory, is ultimately intended by us in our Faith, Thankfulness, and Obedience; yet not so, but that the Son and Spirit are considered as one God with him. But we cannot address our selves with any of them *immediately* unto him. There is *no going to the Father*, saith Christ, *but by me*, John 14. 6. *Through him we believe in God*, 1 Pet. 1. 21. But yet neither can we do so, unless we are enabled thereunto by the *Spirit*, the Author in us, of Faith, Prayer, Praise, Obedience, and what-ever our Souls tend unto God by. As the *descending* of God towards us in Love and Grace, issues or ends in the Work of the Spirit in us and on us; so all our *ascending* towards him begins therein. And as the first Instance of the proceeding of Grace and Love towards us from the Father, is in and by the Son; so the first *step* that we take towards

God, even the Father, is in and by the Son. And these things ought to be explicitly attended unto by us, if we intend our Faith, and Love, and Duties of Obedience should be *Evangelical*. Take an Instance of the *Prayers* of Wicked Men under their Convictions, or their Fears, Troubles and Dangers; and the Prayers of Believers. The former is meerly, *Vox Naturæ Clamantis ad Dominum Naturæ*; an out-cry that distressed Nature makes to the God of it, and as such alone it considers him. But the other is, *Vox Spiritus Adoptionis clamantis per Christum, Abba Pater*; It is the Voice of the Spirit of Adoption addressing it self in the Hearts of Believers unto God as a Father. And a due attendance unto this Order of things, gives Life and Spirit unto all that we have to do with God. Wo to Professors of the Gospel who shall be seduced, to believe that all they have to do with God, consists in their attendance unto *Moral Vertue*. It is fit for them so to do, who being weary of Christianity, have a mind to turn *Pagans*. But our *Fellowship* is in the way described, *with the Father and his Son Christ Jesus*. It is therefore of the highest importance unto us, to enquire into, and secure unto our selves the *promised workings* of the Holy Spirit. For by them alone are the Love of the Father, and the Fruits of the Mediation of the Son communicated unto us, without which we have no interest in them. And by them alone are we enabled to make any acceptable Returns of Obedience unto God. It is sottish Ignorance and Infidelity to suppose that under the Gospel there is no *communication* between God and us, but what is on his part in Laws, Commands, and Promises; and on ours by Obedience performed in our own Strength, and upon our Convictions unto them. To exclude hence the real *internal Operations* of the Holy Ghost, is to destroy the Gospel. And as we shall see farther afterwards, this is the true Ground and Reason why there is a *sin against* the Holy Spirit, that is irremissible; for he coming unto us to make Application of the Love of the Father, and Grace of the Son unto our Souls; in the contempt of him, there is a contempt of the whole actings of God towards us, in a way of Grace, for which there can be no Remedy.

SECT. 7. Fifthly; Whereas the Holy Spirit is the *Spirit of Grace*, and the immediate Efficient Cause of all Grace, and Gracious Effects in Men; where-ever there is mention made of *them*, or any fruits of them, it is to be looked on as a *part of his Work*, though he be not expressly named, or it be not particularly attributed unto him. I know not well, or do not well understand what some Men begin to talk about *Moral Vertue*; Some thing they seem to aim at, (if they would once leave the old *Pelagian* ambiguous Expressions, and learn to speak clearly and *intelligibly*) that is in their own Power, and so consequently of all other Men. At least it is so with an *ordinary blessing* upon their own endeavours, which things we must afterwards enquire into. But for Grace, I think all Men will grant, that as to our participation of it, it is of the Holy Spirit, and of him alone. Now Grace is taken two wayes in the Scripture; (1.) For the *gracious free Love* and Favour of God towards us: And (2.) for *gracious free effectual Operations* in us, and upon us. In both senses the Holy Spirit is the Author of it, as unto us. In the first as to its Manifestation and Application; in the latter, as to the Operation it self. For although he be not the principal Cause, nor procurer of

of Grace in the first sense, which is the free Act of the Father ; yet the Knowledge, Sense, Comfort, and all the Fruits of it are by him alone communicated unto us, as we shall see afterwards. And the *latter* is his proper and peculiar Work. This therefore must be taken for granted, that where-ever any gracious actings of God in or towards Men are mentioned, it is the *Holy Spirit* who is peculiarly and principally intended.

Sixthly ; It must be duly considered, with reference unto the whole SECT. 8.
Work of the Holy Spirit, that in what-ever he doth, he Acts, Works, and Distributes *according to his own Will*. This our Apostle expressly affirmeth. And sundry things of great moment do depend hereon in our walking before God. As ;

1. That the *Will and Pleasure of the Holy Spirit* is in all the Goodness, Grace, Love, and Power, that he either communicates unto us, or worketh in us. He is not as a *meer Instrument* or Servant disposing of the things wherein he hath no Concern, or over which he hath no Power. But in all things he worketh towards us according to *his own Will*. We are therefore in what we receive from him, and by him, no less to acknowledge his *Love*, Kindness, and Sovereign Grace, than we do to those of the Father, and the Son.

2. That he doth not work as a natural Agent, *ad ultimum virium*, to the utmost of his Power, as though in all he did, he came and did what he could. He moderates all his Operations by his *Will and Wisdom*. And therefore whereas some are said to *resist the Holy Spirit*, Acts 7. 51. and so to frustrate his Work towards them, it is not because they can do so absolutely, but only they can do so as to *some way*, kind, or degree, of his Operations. Men may *resist* some sort or kind of means that he useth, as to some certain end and purpose ; but they cannot resist him as to his purpose and the end he aims at. For he is God, and *who hath resisted his Will* ? Rom. 9. 19. Wherefore in any Work of his, two things are to be considered ; (1.) What the means he maketh use of tend unto in their own Nature ; And (2.) what he intends by it ; The first may be resisted and frustrated, but the latter cannot be so. Sometimes in and by that word which in its own Nature tends to the Conversion of Sinners, he intendeth by it only their hardning, Isa. 6. 9, 10. John 12. 40, 41. Acts 18. 26. Rom. 11. 8. And he can, when he pleaseth, exert that Power and Efficacy in working, as shall take away all Resistance. Sometimes he will only take order for the Preaching and Dispensation of the Word unto Men ; for this also is his Work, Acts 13. 2. Herein Men may *resist* his Work, and reject his Counsel concerning themselves. But when he will put forth his Power in and by the Word, to the *creating of a new heart* in Men, and the *opening of the Eyes* of them that are blind, he doth therein so take away the Principle of Resistance, that he is not, that he cannot be resisted.

3. Hence also it follows that his Works may be of *various kinds*, and SECT. 9.
that those which are of the *same kind* may yet be carried on unequally as to Degrees. It is so in the Operations of all *voluntary Agents*, who work by Choice and Judgment. They are not confined to *one sort of Works*, nor to the Production of the same kind of Effects ; and where

they design so to do, they *moderate them* as to degrees according to their Power and pleasure. Thus we shall find some of the Works of the Holy Spirit to be such as may be *perfect in their kind*, and Men may be made *Partakers* of the whole End and Intention of them, and yet no *saving Grace* be wrought in them. Such are his Works of Illumination, Conviction, and sundry others. Men, I say, may have a *Work of the Holy Spirit* on their Hearts and Minds, and yet not be Sanctified and Converted unto God. For the Nature and Kind of his Works are regulated by his *own Will* and Purpose; if he intends no more but their *Conviction* and *Illumination*, no more shall be effected. For he works not by a *necessity of Nature*, so that all his Operations should be of the same kind, and have their especial Form from his Nature, and not from his Will. So also where he doth work the *same Effect* in the Souls of Men, I mean the same in the *kind* of it, as in their *Regeneration* he doth; yet he doth it by *sundry means*, and carrieth it on to a great inequality, as to the strengthening of its Principle, and increase of its Fruits unto Holiness; And hence is that great difference as to *Light*, *Holiness*, and *Fruitfulness*, which we find among Believers, although all alike Partakers of the same Grace for the *kind* thereof. The Holy Spirit worketh in all these things *according to his own Will*; whereof there neither is nor can be any other Rule but his own Infinite Wisdom. And this is that which the Apostle minds the *Corinthians* of, to take away all Emulation and Envy about *Spiritual Gifts*, that every one should orderly make use of what he had received to the Profit and Edification of others. They are, saith he, *given and distributed* by the same Spirit according to *his own Will*, to one after one manner, unto another after another; so that it is an unreasonable thing for any to contend about them.

SECT. 10. But it may be said, that if not only the *working* of Grace in us, but also the *Effects* and Fruits of it, in all its variety of *Degrees*, is to be ascribed unto the Holy Spirit, and his Operations in us according to his own Will, then do we signify *nothing our selves*; nor is there any need that we should either use our endeavours and diligence, or at all take any care about the furtherance or growth of Holiness in us, or attend unto any Duties of Obedience. To what end and purpose then serve all the *Commands*, *Threatnings*, *Promises*, and Exhortations of the Scripture, which are openly designed to excite and draw forth our own Endeavours? And this is indeed the principal *Difficulty* wherewith some Men seek to intangle and perplex the Grace of God. But I Answer.

(1.) Let Men imagine what absurd Consequences they please thereon, yet that the Spirit of God is the Author and Worker of all Grace in us, and of all the Degrees of it, of all that is *spiritually good* in us, is a Truth which we must not forgo, unless we intend to part with our *Bibles* also. For in them we are taught, *That in us, that is, in our flesh, there dwelleth no good thing*, Rom. 7. 18. *That we are not sufficient of our selves to think any thing, as of our selves, but our sufficiency is of God*, 2 Cor. 3. 5. *Who is able to make all Grace abound towards us, that we may alwayes have All-sufficiency in all things abounding to every good work*, Chap. 9. 8. *But without Christ we can do nothing*, John 15. 5. *For it is God which worketh in us both to Will and to Do of his good Pleasure*, Phil. 2. 13. To grant therefore that there is any *spiritual good* in us, or any *Degree*

Degree of it, that is not wrought in us by the Spirit of God, both overthrows the Grace of the Gospel, and denies God to be the *only First, Supreme, and chiefest Good*; as also the immediate cause of what is so, which is to deny his very Being. It is therefore certain, what-ever any pretend, that nothing can hence ensue, but what is *true*, and *good*, and useful to the Souls of Men: For from Truth, especiall such great and *important Truths*, nothing else will follow.

2. It is *brutish Ignorance* in any to argue in the Things of God, from the *Effectual Operations* of the Spirit, unto a *sloth and negligence* of our own Duty. He that doth not know that God hath *promised to work in us*, in a way of *Grace*, what he requires from us in a way of *Duty*, hath either never read the Bible, or doth not believe it, or never Prayed, or never took notice of what he prayed for. He is a *Heathen*, he hath nothing of the *Christian* in him, who doth not *pray* that God would work in him what he requires of him. This we know that what God commands and prescribes unto us, what he encourageth us unto, we ought with all diligence and earnestness, as we value our Souls and their eternal welfare, to *attend* unto and comply withal. And we do know that what-ever God hath *promised*, that he will do himself in us, towards us, and upon us: It is our Duty to *believe* that he will so do. And to fancy an inconsistency between these things, is to charge God foolishly.

3. If there be an Opposition between these things, it is either because the Nature of Man is not *meet to be commanded*, or because it *needs not to be assisted*. But that both these are false and vain Suppositions, shall be afterwards declared. The Holy Spirit so worketh *in us*, as that he *worketh by us*; and what *He* doth *in us*, is done *by us*; Our *Duty* it is to apply our selves unto his Commands, according to the Conviction of our Minds; and his *Work* it is to enable us to perform them.

4. He that will indulge, or can do so, unto *sloth and negligence* in himself on the account of the promised working of the Spirit of Grace, may look upon it as an evidence, that he hath *no interest* or concern therein. For he ordinarily giveth not out his *Aids* and *Assistances* anywhere, but where he prepares the Soul with Diligence in Duty. And whereas he acts us no otherwise but in and by the Faculties of our own Minds, it is ridiculous, and implies a Contradiction, for a Man to say he *will do nothing*, because the Spirit of God doth all; For where *he doth nothing*, the Spirit of God doth *nothing*, unless it be meerly in the infusion of the *first Habit* or Principle of Grace, whereof we shall treat afterwards.

5. For *Degrees of Grace* and Holiness which are enquired after, they are peculiar unto *Believers*. Now these are furnished with an Ability and Power to attend unto and perform those Duties, whereon the increase of Grace and Holiness doth depend. For although there is no Grace, nor Degree of Grace or Holiness in Believers, but what is wrought in them by the Spirit of God; yet ordinarily and regularly the *Increase and Growth* of Grace, and their thriving in Holiness and Righteousness, depend upon the Use and Improvement of Grace received, in a diligent Attendance unto all those Duties of Obedience which are required of us, 2 *Pet.* 1. 5, 6, 7. And me-thinks it is the most unreasonable and foolish thing in the World, for a Man to be *slothful* and negligent in attending unto those Duties which God requireth of him, which
all

168 *The General Work of the Holy Spirit* Book. 2.

all his Spiritual Growth depends upon, which the eternal welfare of his Soul is concerned in, on pretence of the efficacious *Aids* of the Spirit, without which he can do nothing, and which he neither hath, nor can have, whilst he doth nothing.

SECT. 8. Here lies the Ground and Foundation of our *exercising Faith* in particular towards him, and of our acting of it in Supplications and Thankgivings. His participation of the Divine Nature is the formal Reason of our yeelding unto him Divine and Religious Worship in general; but his acting towards us according to the Sovereignty of his *own Will*, is the especial Reason of our particular Addresses unto him in the exercise of Grace, for we are baptized into his Name also.

SECT. 9. Seventhly; We may observe that in the Actings and Works of the Holy Spirit, some things are *distinctly* and *separately* ascribed unto him, although some things be of the same kind wrought by the Person in and by whom he Acts; or he is said at the same time to do the same thing distinctly by himself, and in and by others. So *John* 15. 26, 27. *I will, saith our Saviour, send the Spirit of Truth, and he shall testify of me, and ye also shall bear witness.* The Witness of the Spirit unto Christ is proposed as *distinct* and *separate* from the witness given by the Apostles. He *shall testify of me, and ye also shall bear witness.* And yet they also were enabled to give their witness by him alone. So it is expressly declared, *Acts* 1. 8. *Ye shall receive Power after that the Holy Spirit is come upon you, and ye shall be Witnesses unto me.* Their *witnessing unto Christ* was the Effect of the Power of the Holy Spirit upon them, and the Effect of his Work in them. And he himself gave no other Testimony but in and by them. What then is the distinct Testimony that is ascribed unto him? It must be somewhat that in or by whomsoever it was wrought, it did of its own Nature discover its *Relation* unto him as *his Work*. So it was in this Matter; For it was no other but those *Signs and Wonders*, or Miraculous Effects which he wrought, in the confirmation of the Testimony given by the Apostles, all which clearly evidenced their own Original. So our Apostle, *Heb.* 2. 4. The word was confirmed, *Συνεπιμαρτυροῦντες τῷ θεῷ σημεῖοις καὶ τέχναις, God co-witnessing by Signs and Wonders.* He enabled the Apostles to bear witness unto Christ by their Preaching, Sufferings, Holiness, and constant Testimony which they gave unto his Resurrection. But in this he appeared not, he evidenced not himself unto the World, though he did so in and by them in whom he wrought. But moreover he wrought such visible miraculous Works by them, as evidenced themselves to be Effects of his Power, and were his distinct Witnesses to Christ. So our Apostle tells us, *Rom.* 8. 16. *The Spirit it self beareth witness with our Spirits that we are the Children of God.* The Witness which our *own Spirits* do give unto our Adoption, is the Work and Effect of the Holy Spirit in us. If it were not, it would be false, and not confirmed by the Testimony of the Spirit himself, who is the Spirit of Truth. And none *knoweth the things of God, but the Spirit of God*, *1 Cor.* 2. 11. If he declare not our *Sonship* in us, and to us, we cannot know it. How then doth he *bear witness* with our Spirits? What is his distinct Testimony in this Matter? It must be some such Act of his, as evidenceth it self to be from him immediately, unto them that are

are concerned in it, that is, those unto whom it is given. What this is in particular, and wherein it doth consist, we shall afterwards enquire. So *Rev. 22. 17.* The *Spirit* and the *Bride say come.* The *Bride* is the Church, and she prayeth for the coming of Christ. This She doth by his Aid and Assistance, who is the Spirit of Grace and Supplications. And yet distinctly and separately the *Spirit saith come*; that is, he puts forth such earnest and fervent desires, as have upon them an Impression of his immediate efficiency. So *v. 20.* carrieth the sense of the place, namely, that it is Christ himself, unto whom She sayes *come*, or they pray for the hastning of his coming. Or they say *come* unto others, in their Invitation of them unto Christ, as the end of *v. 17.* seems to apply it. Then is it the Prayers and Preaching of the Church for the Conversion of Souls that is intended. And with both the Spirit works eminently to make them effectual. Or it may be in this place, the *Spirit* is taken for the *Spirit in the Guides and Leaders of the Church.* They praying by his especial Guidance and Assistance, say, *Come*; or Preachers say unto others, *Come*, and the *Bride*, or the Body of the Church acted by the same Spirit, joyn with them in this great Request and Supplication; and thereunto all Believers are invited in the following words; and let him that heareth, say, *Come.*

All these things were necessary to be premised in general, as giving SECT. 10. some insight into the Nature of the Operations of the Holy Spirit in us and towards us. And hereby we have made our Way plain to the consideration of his *especial Works* in the Calling, Building, and Carrying on the Church unto Perfection. Now all his Works of this kind may be reduced unto three Heads. (1.) Of *Sanctifying Grace.* (2.) Of *Especial Gifts.* (3.) Of *peculiar Evangelical Priviledges.* Only we must observe that these things are not so distinguished, as to be negatively contradistinct to each other; for the same thing under several Considerations may be all these, a Grace, a Gift, and a Priviledg. All that I intend, is to reduce the Operations of the Holy Spirit unto these Heads, casting each of them under that which it is most eminent in, and as *which* it is most directly proposed unto us. And I shall begin with his Work of Grace.

2004



B O O K. III.

W O R K
 O F T H E
H O L Y S P I R I T
 I N T H E
New Creation
 B Y
REGENERATION.

C H A P. I.

(1.) *The New Creation Completed.* (2.) *Regeneration the especial Work of the Holy Spirit;* (3,4,5,6,7,8,9.) *Wrought under the Old Testament, but clearly revealed in the New;* And (10,11,12.) *is of the same kind in all that are Regenerate.* (13,14.) *The Causes and Way of it being the same in all.* (15,16.) *It consisteth not in Baptism alone;* Nor (17,18.) *in a Moral Reformation of Life;* But (19,20.) *a New Creature is Formed in it;* whose (21,22.) *Nature is declared, and* (23.) *farther explained.* (24.) *Denial of the Original Depravation of Nature the Cause of many Noxious Opinions.* (25,26.) *Regeneration consisteth*
Z 2 not

not in Enthusiastick Raptures; their Nature and Danger. (27.) The whole Doctrine necessary, despised, corrupted, vindicated.

SECT. I.

WE have formerly declared the Work of the Holy Spirit in Preparing and Forming the *Natural Body* of Christ. This was the beginning of the *New Creation*, the Foundation of the Gospel-State and Church. But this was not the whole of the Work he had to do. As he had provided and prepared the *Natural Body* of Christ, so he was to prepare his *Mystical Body* also. And hereby the Work of the New Creation was to be compleated and perfected. And as it was with respect unto him and his Work in the *Old Creation*, so was it also in the *New*. All things in their first production had *Darkness* and Death upon them. For the Earth was *Void and without Form, and Darkness was upon the Face of the Deep*, Gen. 1. 2. Neither was there any thing that had either *Life* in it, or *Principle of Life*, or any *Disposition* thereunto. In this condition he moved on the prepared Matter, preserving and cherishing of it, and communicating unto all things a Principle of Life whereby they were animated, as we have declared. It was no otherwise in the New Creation. There was a *Spiritual Darkness* and Death came by sin on all Mankind. Neither was there in any Man living the least Principle of *Spiritual Life*, or any *Disposition* thereunto. In this State of things the Holy Spirit undertaketh to create a *New World*, New Heavens, and a New Earth, wherein Righteousness should dwell. And this in the first place was by his Effectual Communication of a New Principle of *Spiritual Life* unto the Souls of God's Elect, who were the Matter designed of God for this Work to be wrought upon. This he doth in their *Regeneration*, as we shall now manifest.

SECT. 2.

(1.) *Regeneration in Scripture* is every-where assigned to be the proper and peculiar Work of the Holy Spirit. John 3. 3, 4, 5, 6. *Jesus answered and said unto Nicodemus, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a Man be born again he cannot see the Kingdom of God. Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a Man be born when he is old; can he enter the second time into his Mothers Womb and be born? Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a Man be born of Water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the Kingdom of God. That which is born of the Flesh, is Flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit, is Spirit.* It was an ancient knowing Teacher of the Church of the Jews, a Master in Israel, whom our Blessed Saviour here discourseth withal and instructs. For on the consideration of his Miracles, he concluded that *God was with him*, and came to enquire of him about the Kingdom of God. Our Saviour knowing how all our Faith and Obedience to God, and all our Acceptance with him depended on our *Regeneration*, or being born again, acquaints him with the necessity of it, wherewith he is at first surprized. Wherefore he proceeds to instruct him in the *Nature* of the Work, whose necessity he had declared. And this he describes both by the Cause and the Effect of it. For the Cause of it he tells him, it is wrought by *Water and the Spirit*. By the Spirit as the Principal Efficient Cause; and by Water

* as the Pledg, Sign and Token of it, in the initial Seal of the Covenant, the Doctrine whereof was then preached amongst them by *John the Baptist*; or the same thing is intended in a redoubled Expression, the *Spirit* being signified by the *Water* also, under which Notion he is often promised.

* *Si in Gratia, non ex natura Aquæ, sed ex præsentia est Spiritus Sancti: numquid in Aqua vivimus, sicut in Spiritu? numquid in Aqua signamur sicut in Spiritu?* Ambros. de Spirit. Sancti. lib. 1. cap. 6.

Hereof then, or of this Work, the Holy Spirit is the Principal Efficient Cause; whence he in whom it is wrought, is said to be *born of the Spirit*, v. 8. *so is every one that is born of the Spirit*. And this is the same with what is delivered, Chap. 1. v. 13. *Who are born not of Blood, nor of the Will of the Flesh, nor of the Will of Man, but of God*. The Natural and Carnal Means of *Blood, Flesh*, and the *Will of Man*, are rejected wholly in this Matter, and the whole Efficiency of the *New Birth* is ascribed unto God alone. *His Work* answers what-ever Contribution there is unto Natural Generation, from the Will and Nature of Man. For these things are here-compared, and from its Analogie unto *Natural Generation*, is this Work of the Spirit called *Regeneration*; so in this place is the Allusion and Opposition between these things expressed by our Saviour; *That which is born of the Flesh, is Flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit, is Spirit*, v. 6. And herein also we have a farther Description of this Work of the Holy Spirit, by its Effect or the Product of it; *It is Spirit*, a new Spiritual Being, Creature, Nature, Life, as shall be declared. And because there is in it a Communication of a new *Spiritual Life*, it is called a *Vivification* or quickning, with respect unto the State wherein all Men are, before this Work is wrought in them and on them, *Ephes. 2. 1, 5*. which is the Work of the Spirit alone; for it is the *Spirit that quickneth*, the *Flesh* profiteth nothing, *John 6. 63*. see *Rom. 8. 9, 10. Titus 3. 4, 5, 6*. where the same Truth is declared and asserted. *But after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour towards Man appeared; not by Works of Righteousness which we have done, but according to his Mercy he saved us, by the washing of Regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Spirit, which he shed on us richly through Jesus Christ our Saviour*.

What we have frequently mentioned occurreth here expressly; name-ly, the whole Blessed Trinity, and each Person therein acting distinctly in the Work of our Salvation. The Spring or Fountain of the whole lyeth in the *Kindness and Love of God*, even the Father. Thereunto it is every-where ascribed in the Scripture, see *John 3. 16. Ephes. 1. 4, 5, 6*. What-ever is done in the Accomplishment of this Work, it is so in the pursuit of his Will, Purpose, and Counsel; and is an Effect of his *Love and Grace*. The procuring Cause of the Application of the Love and Kindness of God unto us, is *Jesus Christ our Saviour*, in the whole Work of his Mediation, v. 6. and the immediate efficient Cause in the Communication of the Love and Kindness of the Father, through the Mediation of the Son unto us, is the Holy Spirit. And this he doth in the *Renovation* of our Natures, by the washing of Regeneration, where-in we are purged from our sins, and sanctified unto God.

SECT. 5.

* *Similiter ex Spiritu secundum Gratiam nos renasci, Dominus ipse testatur Dicens; quod natum est ex carne, caro est, quia de carne natum est; & quod natum est de Spiritu, Spiritus est, quia Spiritus Deus est. Claret igitur spiritalis quoque generationis authorem esse Spiritum Sanctum, quia secundum Deum creamur & Filii Dei simus. Ergo cum ille nos in regnum suum per adoptionem sacrae regenerationis assumpserit, nos ei quod suum est denegamus? ille nos supernae generationis heredes fecit, nos hereditatem vindicamus, refutamus authorem: sed non potest manere beneficium cum author excluditur; nec author sine munere, nec sine auctore munus. Si vindicas Gratiam, crede potentiam; si refutas potentiam, gratiam ne requiras. Sancti igitur Spiritus opus est Regeneratio ista praestantior, & novi hujus hominis qui creatur ad imaginem Dei author est Spiritus, quem utiq; meliorem hoc exteriori esse nostro homine nemo dubitaverit. Ambros. de Sp. San. l. 2. c. 9.*

More Testimonies unto this purpose need not be insisted on. This Truth of the Holy Spirit being the *Author of our Regeneration*, which the Ancients esteemed a Cogent Argument to prove his *Deity* even from the * the Greatness and Dignity of the Work, is in words at least, so far as I know, granted by all who pretend to sobriety in Christianity. That by some others it hath been derided and exploded, is the occasion of this Vindication of it. It must not be expected that I should here handle the whole Doctrine of *Regeneration practically*, as it may be educed by Inferences from the Scripture, according to the *Analogue* of Faith, and the Experiences of them that believe; It hath been done already by others. My present aim is only, to confirm the Fundamental Principles of Truth concerning those Operations of the Holy Spirit, which at this day are opposed with violence and virulence. And what I shall offer on the present Subject, may be reduced unto the ensuing Heads.

SECT. 6. (1.) Although the Work of *Regeneration* by the Holy Spirit was wrought under the Old Testament, even from the Foundation of the World; and the Doctrine of it was recorded in the Scriptures, yet the Revelation of it was but obscure in comparison of that *Light* and Evidence which it is brought forth into by the Gospel. This is evident from the Discourse which our Blessed Saviour had with *Nicodemus* on this Subject. For when he acquainted him clearly with the Doctrine of it, he was surprized and fell into that enquiry which argued some amazement; *How can these things be?* But yet the Reply of our Saviour manifests, That he might have attained a better acquaintance with it out of the Scripture than he had done. *Art thou, saith he, a Master in Israel and knowest not these things?* Dost thou take upon thee to Teach others what is their State and Condition, and what is their Duty towards God, and art ignorant thy self of so Great and Fundamental a Doctrine, which thou mightest have learned from the Scripture? For if he might not so have done, there would have been no just cause of the Reproof given him by our Saviour. For it was neither Crime nor Negligence in him to be ignorant of what God had not revealed. This Doctrine therefore, namely, That every one who will enter into the Kingdom of God must be *born again* of the Holy Spirit, was contained in the Writings of the Old Testament. It was so in the Promises, That God would *circumcise the Hearts of his People, that he would take away their Heart of Stone, and give them a Heart of Flesh*, with his *Law written in it*, and other ways as shall be afterwards proved.

SECT. 7. But yet we see that it was so obscurely declared, that the principal Masters and Teachers of the People knew little or nothing of it. Some indeed

indeed would have this *Regeneration*, if they knew what they would have, or as to what may be gathered of their minds, out of their great swelling words of vanity, to be nothing but *Reformation of Life*, according to the Rules of the Scripture. But *Nicodemus* knew the necessity of *Reformation of Life* well enough, if he had ever read either *Moses* or the Prophets. And to suppose that our Lord Jesus Christ proposed unto him the thing which he knew perfectly well, only under a new Name or Notion which he had never heard of before: So to take an advantage of charging him with being ignorant of what indeed he full well knew and understood, is a blasphemous Imagination. How they can free themselves from the Guilt hereof, who look on *Regeneration* as no more but a *Metaphorical Expression* of Amendment of Life, I know not. And if it be so, if there be no more in it, but as they love to speak, *becoming a new Moral Man*, a thing which all the World, *Jews* and *Gentiles* understood; our Lord Jesus was so far from bringing it forth into more *Light*, and giving it more perspicuity, by what he teacheth concerning *Regeneration*, the Nature, Manner, Causes and Effects of it, that he cast it thereby into more darkness and obscurity than ever it was delivered in, either by *Jewish* Masters, or *Gentile Philosophy*. For although the Gospel do really teach all Duties of Morality with more exactness and clearness, and press unto the Observance of them, on motives incomparably more cogent than any thing that otherwise ever befel the Mind of Man to think or apprehend; yet if it must be supposed to intend nothing else in its Doctrine of the New Birth or Regeneration, but those Moral Duties and their Observance, it is dark and unintelligible; I say, if there be not a *secret mysterious* Work of the Spirit of God, in and upon the Souls of Men intended in the Writings of the New Testament, but only a *Reformation of Life*, and the Improvement of Mens Natural Abilities in the Exercise of *Moral Virtue*, through the Application of outward means unto their Minds and Understandings, conducting and perswading thereunto; they must be granted to be obscure, beyond those of any other Writers whatsoever, as some have not feared already to publish unto the World concerning the Epistles of *Paul*. But so long as we can obtain an acknowledgment from Men, that they are *true*, and in any sense the *Word of God*, we doubt not but to evince that the things intended in them, are clearly and properly expressed, so as they ought to be, and so as they are capable to be expressed; The Difficulties which seem to be in them, arising from the *Mysterious Nature* of the things themselves contained in them, and the weakness of our Minds in apprehending such things, and not from any obscurity or intricacy in the Declaration of them. And herein indeed consists the main Contest whereunto things with the most are reduced. Some judg that all things are so expressed in the Scripture with a condescension unto our Capacity, so as that there is still to be conceived an inexpressible Grandure in many of them beyond our Comprehension. Others judg on the other hand, That under a Grandure of Words and Hyperbolical Expressions, things of a meaner and a lower sense are intended and to be understood. Some judg the Things of the Gospel to be deep and mysterious, the Words and Expressions of it to be plain and proper: Others think the Words and Expressions of it to be Mystical
and

and Figurative, but the Things intended to be ordinary and obvious to the Natural Reason of every Man. But to return.

SECT. 8. Both Regeneration and the Doctrine of it were under the *Old Testament*. All the Elect of God in their several Generations were all Regenerate by the Spirit of God. But in that Ampliation and Enlargement of Truth and Grace under the Gospel which came by Jesus Christ, who brought Life and Immortality to light, as more Persons than of old were to be made Partakers of the Mercy of it, so the Nature of the Work it self is far more clearly, evidently and distinctly revealed and declared. And because this is the principal and internal *Remedy* of that Disease which the Lord Christ came to cure and take away, one of the first things that he Preached was the Doctrine of it. All things of this Nature before, even from the beginning of the World lay hid in God, *Ephes. 3. 9.* Some intimations were given of them in *Parables and dark Sayings*, חִירוֹת מִנִּי קֶרֶם, *Psal. 78. 2.* in Types, Shadows, and Ceremonies, so as the Nature of the Grace in them was not clearly to be discerned. But now when the great *Physician of our Souls* came, who was to heal the Wound of our Natures, whence we were dead in *Trespases and Sins*, he layes naked the Disease it self, declares the Greatness of it, the Ruine we were under from it, that we might know and be thankful for its Reparation. Hence no Doctrine is more fully and plainly declared in the Gospel, than this of our *Regeneration* by the effectual and ineffable Operation of the Holy Spirit. And it is a Consequent and Fruit of the Depravation of our Nature, that against the full Light and Evidence of Truth now clearly manifested, this Great and Holy Work is opposed and despised.

SECT. 9. Few indeed have yet the confidence in plain and intelligible words to deny it absolutely. But many tread in the steps of him who first in the Church of God undertook to undermine it. * This was *Pelagius*, whose principal Artifice which he used in the Introduction of his Heresie, was in the clouding of his Intentions with general and ambiguous Expressions, as some would be making use of his very Words and Phrases. Hence for a long time, when he was justly charged with his Sacrilegious Errors, he made no defence of them, but reviled his Adversaries as corrupting his Mind, and not understanding his Expressions. And by this means as he got himself acquitted in the Judgments of some, less experienced in the sleights and cunning craftiness of them who lie

* Denique
quomodo re-
spondeat ad-
vertite, & vi-
dete latebras
ambiguitatis
falsitati pre-
parare refu-
gia, ita ut e-
tiam nos cum
primum ea

legimus, recta vel correctia propemodum ganderemus. *August. de Peccat. Orig. cap. 18.*

Mibi pene persuaserit hanc illum gratiam de qua questio est confiteri; quo minus in multis ejus opusculi locis sibiipso contradicere videretur. Sed cum in manus meas & alia venissent quæ posterius latinusque scripsit, vidi quemadmodum etiam illic gratiam nominare sed ambigua generalitate quid sentiret abscondens, gratiæ tamen vocabulo frangens invidiam, offensionemque declinans. *Id. de Grat. Christ. lib. 1. cap. 37.*

Vid. August. lib. 1. cont. Julianum cap. 5. lib. 3. cap. 1. lib. de gest. Pelag. cap. 30. Epist. 95. ad Innocent. Epist. Innocent. ad August.

Negant etiam quam ad Sacram Christi virginem Nemebiadem in oriente conscripsimus, & noverint nos ita hominis laudare naturam ut Dei semper addamus auxilium, (verba Pelagii quibus respondet Augustinus) istam sane lege, mibique pene persuaserat, hanc illam gratiam de qua quæ questio est conjicere. *Id. ubi supra.*

in wait to deceive; and * *juridically* freed in an Assembly of *Bishops*: so in all probability he had suddenly infected the whole Church with the poison of those Opinions which the proud and corrupted Nature of Man is so apt to receive and embrace, if God had not stirred up some few Holy and Learned Persons, *Austin* especially, to discover his Frauds, to refel his Calumnies, and confute his *Sophisms*; which they did with indefatigable industry and good success. But yet these Tares being once sown by the *envious* one, found such a suitable and fruitful Soil in the darkned Minds and proud Hearts of Men, that from that day to this they could never be fully extirpated; but the same bitter Root hath still sprung up unto the defiling of many, though various new Colours have been put upon its Leaves and Fruit. And although those who at present amongst us have undertaken the same Cause with *Pelagius*, do not equal him either in Learning or Diligence, or an Appearance of Piety and Devotion, yet do they exactly imitate him in declaring their minds in cloudy ambiguous Expressions, capable of various Constructions until they are fully examined, and thereon reproaching (as he did) those that oppose them as not aright representing their Sentiments, when they judge it their Advantage so to do, as the scurrilous clamorous Writings of *S. P.* do sufficiently manifest.

* *Fefellit Judicium Palæstinum propterea ibi videtur purgatus; Romanam vero Ecclesiam, ubi cum esse notissimum scitis fallere usque-quaque non potuit, quamvis & hoc fuerit utrumque conatus. Tanto Judices fefellit occultius, quanto exponit ista versutius. August. lib. de peccat. Orig. cap. 16.*

Secondly; Regeneration by the Holy Spirit is the *same Work* for the kind of it, and wrought by the same Power of the Spirit in all that are Regenerate, or ever were, or shall be so, from the beginning of the World unto the end thereof. Great variety there is in the Application of the *outward means*, which the Holy Spirit is pleased to use and make effectual towards the Accomplishment of this great Work. Nor can the Wayes and Manner hereof be reduced unto any certain order. For the Spirit worketh how and when he pleaseth, following the sole Rule of his own Will and Wisdom. Mostly, God makes use of the *Preaching of the Word*, thence called an *Engrafted Word*, which is able to save our Souls, James I. 21. and the incorruptible Seed, by which we are born again, 1 Pet. I. 23. Sometimes 'tis wrought *without it*; as in all those who are Regenerate before they come to the use of Reason, or in their Infancy. Sometimes Men are called, and so regenerate in an *extraordinary* manner, as was *Paul*; but mostly they are so in and by the use of ordinary Means, instituted, blessed, and sanctified of God to that end and purpose. And great variety there is also in the *perception* and understanding of the Work it self, in them in whom it is wrought. For in it self it is secret and hidden, and is no other wayes discoverable but in its Causes and Effects. For as *the Wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, nor whither it goeth; so is every one that is born of the Spirit*, John 3. 8.

SECT. 10.

In the Minds and Consciences of some this is made known by infallible Signs and Tokens. *Paul* knew that Christ was formed and revealed in himself, Gal. I. 16. So he declared that who-ever is in Christ Jesus is a *New Creature*, 2 Cor. 5. 17. that is, is born again, whether they

SECT. 11.

A a

know

know themselves so to be or no. And many are in the dark as to their own condition in this Matter all their dayes; For they fear the Lord, and obey the Voice of his Servant (Christ Jesus) and yet *walk in Darknes and have no Light*, Isa. 50. 10. They are *Children of Light*, Luk. 16. 8. John 12. 36. Ephes. 5. 8. 1 Thess. 5. 5. and yet *walk in darknes* and have no Light; which Expressions have been well used and improved by some, and by others of late derided and blasphemed.

SECT. 12. And there is great variety in the carrying on of this Work towards Perfection, in the *Growth* of the New Creature, or the Increase of Grace, implanted in our Natures by it: For some through the supplies of the Spirit make a great and speedy progress towards Perfection; others thrive slowly and bring forth little Fruit; the Causes and Occasions whereof are not here to be enumerated. But notwithstanding all Differences in *previous Dispositions*, in the Application of outward Means, in the manner of it, ordinary or extraordinary, in the Consequents of much or less Fruit, the Work it self in its own Nature is of the *same kind*, one and the same. The Elect of God were not regenerate one way, by one kind of Operation of the Holy Spirit, under the Old Testament, and those under the New Testament another. They who were miraculously Converted, as *Paul*, or who upon their Conversion had miraculous Gifts bestowed on them, as had multitudes of the Primitive Christians, were no otherwise regenerate, nor by any other *internal Efficiency of the Holy Spirit*, than every one is at this day, who is really made Partaker of this Grace and Priviledg. Neither were those Miraculous Operations of the Holy Spirit, which were visible unto others, any part of the Work of Regeneration, nor did they belong necessarily unto it. For many were the Subjects of them, and received miraculous Gifts by them, who were *never* Regenerate; and many were Regenerate who were never Partakers of them. And it is a Fruit of the highest Ignorance and Unacquaintedness imaginable with these things, to affirm that in the *Work of Regeneration*, the Holy Spirit wrought of old *miraculously* in and by outwardly visible Operations, but now only in an *humane and rational way*, leading our Understanding by the Rules of Reason, unless the more external *Mode* and *Sign* of his Operation be intended. For all ever were and ever shall be Regenerate by the same kind of Operation, and the same Effect of the Holy Spirit on the Faculties of their Souls. Which will be farther manifest if we consider;

1. That the Condition of all Men as Unregenerate is *absolutely the same*, One is not by Nature more *unregenerate* than another. All Men since the Fall, and the corruption of our Nature by sin, are in the same State and Condition towards God. They are all alike alienated from him, and all alike under his Curse, *Psal. 51. 5. John 3. 5, 36. Rom. 3. 19. Chap. 5. 15, 16, 17, 18. Ephes. 2. 3. Tit. 3. 3, 4.* There are *Degrees of Wickedness* in them that are Unregenerate; but there is no difference as to *State* and *Condition* between them, all are Unregenerate alike. As amongst those who are Regenerate, there are different *Degrees of Holiness* and Righteousness, one it may be far exceeding another; yet there is between them no difference of *State* and *Condition*, they are all equally

equally Regenerate. Yea some may be in a greater forwardness and preparation for the Work it self, and thereby in a greater *nearness* to the State of it than others; but the State it self is incapable of such Degrees. Now it must be the *same Work* for the Kind and Nature of it, which relieves and translates Men out of the *same State* and Condition. That which gives the *formal Reason* of the change of their State, of their Translation from Death to Life, is and must be the same in all. If you can fix on any Man from the Foundation of the World, who was not equally *born in sin*, and by Nature dead in Trespasses and Sins with all other Men, the Man Christ Jesus only excepted, I would grant that he *might* have another kind of Regeneration than others have, but that I know he would stand in need of none at all.

2. The *State whereinto Men are brought* by Regeneration is the same. SECT. 14. Nor is it in its Essence or Nature capable of Degrees, so that one should be more Regenerate than another. Every one that is born of God is equally so, though one may be more beautiful than another, as having the Image of his Heavenly Father more *evidently* impressed on him, though not more *truly*. Men may be more or less Holy, more or less Sanctified; but they cannot be more or less Regenerate. All Children that are born into the World, are *equally born*, though some quickly outstrip others in the Perfections and Accomplishments of Nature. And all born of God are *equally so*, though some speedily out-go others in the Accomplishments and Perfections of Grace. There was then never but one kind of Regeneration in this World, the Essential Form of it being *specifically* the same in all.

3. That the Efficient Cause of this Work, the Grace and Power whereby it is wrought, with the internal manner of the Communication of that Grace, are the same, shall be afterwards declared. To this Standard then all must come. Men may bear themselves high, and despise this whole Work of the Spirit of God, or set up an Imagination of their own in the room thereof; but whether they will or no, they must be tried by it; and no less depends on their interest in it, than their Admission into the *Kingdom of God*. And let them pretend what they please, the true Reason why any despise the *New Birth*, is because they hate a *New Life*. He that cannot endure to *live to God*, will as little endure to hear of being *born of God*. But we shall by the Scripture enquire what we are taught concerning it, and declare both *what it is not*, of things which falsely pretend thereunto, and then *what it is* indeed.

First; Regeneration doth not consist in a participation of the Ordinance of *Baptism*, and a profession of the Doctrine of *Repentance*. This is all that some will allow unto it, to the utter rejection and overthrow of the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ. For the dispute in this Matter is not whether the *Ordinances* of the Gospel, as Baptism, do really communicate internal Grace unto them, that are, as to their outward manner of their Administration, duly made Partakers of them, whether *ex opere operato* as the *Papists* speak, or as a *federal* means of the Conveyance and Communication of that Grace which they betoken and are the Pledges of; but whether the *outward* *susception* of the Ordinance,

joined with a profession of Repentance in them that are adult, be not the whole of what is called *Regeneration*. The vanity of this presumptuous folly, destructive of all the Grace of the Gospel, invented to countenance Men in their Sins, and to hide from them the necessity of being born again, and therein of turning unto God, will be laid open in our Declaration of the Nature of the Work it self. For the present the ensuing Reasons will serve to remove it out of our way.

SECT. 16. (1.) Regeneration doth not consist in these things which are only *outward Signs* and Tokens of it, or at most, instituted means of effecting it. For the *Nature* of things is different and distinct from the *Means*, and Evidences or Pledges of them. But such only is *Baptism*, with the Profession of the Doctrine of it, as is acknowledged by all who have Treated of the Nature of that Sacrament. (2.) The Apostle *Peter* really states this Case, 1 *Pet.* 3. 21. *In answer whereunto even Baptism doth also now save us; not the putting away of the filth of the Flesh, but the answer of a good Conscience towards God, by the Resurrection of Jesus Christ.* The outward Administration of this Ordinance considered *materially*, reacheth no farther, but to the washing away of the filth of the Flesh, but more is signified thereby. There is denoted in it the Restitution of a *good Conscience* unto God, by the Resurrection of Christ from the Dead, or a Conscience purged from Dead Works to serve the Living God, *Heb.* 9. 14. and quickned by vertue of his Resurrection unto Holy Obedience; see *Rom.* 6. 3, 4, 5, 6, 7. (3.) The Apostle *Paul* doth plainly distinguish between the *outward Ordinances*, with what belongs unto a due participation of them, and the Work of Regeneration it self; *Gal.* 6. 15. *In Jesus Christ neither Circumcision availeth any thing, nor Uncircumcision availeth any thing, but a New Creature.* For as by Circumcision the whole System of *Mosaical Ordinances* is intended, so the state of *Uncircumcision*, as then it was in the Professing Gentiles, supposed a Participation of all the Ordinances of the Gospel. But from them all he distinguisheth the *New Creation*, as that which they may be without, and which being so, they are not available in Christ Jesus. (4.) If this were so, then all that are *duly Baptized*, and do thereon make profession of the Doctrine of it, that is, of Repentance for the forgiveness of Sins, must of necessity be *Regenerate*. But this we know to be otherwise. For Instance; *Simon the Magician* was rightly and duly Baptized, for he was so by *Philip the Evangelist*; which he could not be without a Profession of Faith and Repentance; accordingly it is said that *he believed*, *Acts.* 8. 13. that is, made a profession of his Faith in the Gospel. Yet he was not *Regenerate*, for at the same time he had *no part or lot in that Matter*, his Heart not being right in the sight of God, but was in the *Gall of Bitterness, and Bond of Iniquity*, *v.* 21, 23. which is not the Description of a Person newly Regenerate and Born again. Hence the *Cabbalistical Jews*, who grope in darkness after the old Notions of Truth that were among their Forefathers, do say, That at the same instant wherein a Man is made a *Proselyte of Righteousness*, there comes a *New Soul* into him from Heaven, his old *Pagan Soul* vanishing or being taken away. The Introduction of a New Spiritual Principle, to be *that* unto the Soul which the Soul is unto the Body naturally, is that which they understand,

stand, or they chuse thus to express the reiterated Promise of taking away the *Heart of Stone*, and giving an Heart of Flesh in the place of it.

Secondly ; Regeneration doth not consist in a *Moral Reformation* of SECT. 17. Life and Conversation. Let us suppose such a *Reformation* to be extensive unto all known Instances. Suppose a Man be changed from Sensuality unto Temperance, from Rapine to Righteousness, from Pride and the Dominion of Irregular Passions, unto Humility and Moderation, with all Instances of the like Nature which we can imagine, or are prescribed in the Rules of the strictest *Moralists* ? Suppose this change be laboured, exact and accurate, and so of great use in the World. Suppose also that a Man hath been brought and perswaded unto it, through the *preaching of the Gospel*, so escaping the *Pollutions that are in the World through Lust*, even by the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, or the Directions of his Doctrine delivered in the Gospel ; yet I say all this, and all this added unto *Baptism*, accompanied with a *Profession of Faith and Repentance*, is not *Regeneration*, nor do they comprize it in them. And I have extended this Assertion beyond what some among us, so far as I can see, do so much as pretend unto, in their confused Notions and sophistical Expressions about Morality, when they make it the same with Grace. But what-ever there may be of *Actual* Righteousness in these things, they do not express an inherent *habitual* Righteousness, which whosoever denies, overthrows the Gospel, and all the whole Work of the Spirit of God, and of the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ.

But we must stay a while. This Assertion of ours is by some not only denied but derided. Neither is that all, but who-ever maintains it, is exposed as an Enemy to *Morality*, Righteousness, and Reformation of Life. All *Vertue*, they say, is hereby excluded, to introduce I know not what *imaginary Godliness*. But whether we oppose or exclude *Moral Vertue* or no, by the Doctrine of Regeneration or any other, God and Christ will in due time judge and declare. Yea, were the confession of the Truth consistent with their Interests, the decision of this doubt might be referred unto their own Consciences. But being not free to commit any thing to that *Tribunal*, unless we had better security of its freedom from corrupt Principles and Prejudices than we have, we shall at present leave all the World to judge of our Doctrine, with respect unto *Vertue* and *Morality*, by the Fruits of it, compared with theirs, by whom it is denied. In the mean time we affirm that we design nothing in *Vertue* and *Morality*, but to improve them by fixing them on a proper Foundation, or ingrafting them into that Stock whereon alone they will thrive and grow to the Glory of God, and the good of the Souls of Men ; neither shall we be moved in this Design by the Clamorous or Calumnious out-cries of Ignorant or Profligate Persons. And for the Assertion laid down, I desire that those who despise and reproach it, would attempt an Answer unto the ensuing Arguments whereby it is confirmed ; with those other which shall be insisted on in our Description of the Nature of the Work of Regeneration it self ; and that upon such Grounds and

Principles as are not destructive of Christian Religion, nor introductive of *Atheism*, before they are too confident of their success.

SECT. 19.

* *Per inherentem Justitiam intelligimus supernaturale donum gratia sanctificantis, oppositum originali peccato, & in singulis animæ facultatibus reparans & renovans illam Dei imaginem, quæ per peccatum originale fadata ac dissipata fuit. Originale peccatum mentem tenebris implevit, hæc infusa gratia lumine celesti collustrat. Istud, cor humanum obstinatione & odio Dei ac Divine Legis maculavit, hæc infusa Justitia cor emollit & amore boni accendit & inflammat. Postremo illud affectus omnes atque ipsum appetitum rebellionem infecit; hæc renovata Sanctitas in ordinem cogit perturbatas affectiones, & ipsam rebellem Concupiscentiam Dominio spoliat, & quasi sub jugum mittit. Davenant. de Justit. Habit. cap. 3.*

Fides tanquam radix imbre suscepto heret in anime solo; ut cum per legem Dei excoli ceperit surgant in ea rami qui fructus operum ferant. Non ergo ex operibus radix Justitiæ, sed ex radice Justitiæ fructus operum crescit. Origen. lib. 4. in Epist. ad Roman.

† *Is qui Spiritus Sancti particeps efficitur, per communionem ejus fit Spiritualem partem & Sanctus. Didym. lib. 1. de Sp. Sanct. p. 218. inter opera Hieronymi.*

Qui Spiritu Sancto plenus est statim universis donationibus Dei repletur, sapientia, scientia, fide ceterisque virtutibus. Id. ibid.

Namquam enim accipit quicquam Spirituales Benedictiones Dei, nisi præcesserit Spiritus Sanctus; qui enim habet Spiritum Sanctum consequenter habebit benedictiones. Idem p. 220.

If there be in, and required unto Regeneration, the * infusion of a *new real Spiritual Principle* into the Soul and its Faculties, of Spiritual Life, Light, Holiness, and Righteousness, disposed unto, and suited for the Destruction or Expulsion of a contrary inbred habitual Principle of sin and enmity against God, enabling unto all Acts of Holy Obedience, and so in order of Nature antecedent unto them; then it doth not consist in a meer *Reformation of Life* and Moral Vertue, be they never so exact or accurate. Three things are to be observed for the clearing of this Assertion, before we come to the Proof and Confirmation of it. As, (1.) That this *Reformation of Life* which we say is not Regeneration, or that Regeneration doth not consist therein, is a *necessary Duty* indispensibly required of all Men. For we shall take it here for the whole course of *Actual Obedience* unto God, and that according to the Gospel. Those indeed by whom it is urged and pressed in the room of *Regeneration*, or as that wherein Regeneration doth consist, do give such an Account and Description of it, as that it is, or at least may be Foreign unto true

Gospel-Obedience, and so not contain in it one *Acceptable Duty* unto God, as shall afterwards be declared. But here I shall take it in our present enquiry, for that whole *Course of Duties*, which in Obedience towards God, are prescribed unto us. (2.) That the Principle before described, wherein Regeneration as *passively* considered, or as wrought in us consists, doth alwayes certainly and *infallibly* produce the *Reformation of Life* intended. In some it doth it more compleatly, in others more imperfectly, in all *sincerely*. For the same Grace in Nature and Kind is communicated unto several Persons in various Degrees, and is by them used and improved with more or less care and diligence. In those therefore that are adult, these things are inseparable. Therefore, (3.) The difference in this Matter cometh unto this Head; We say and believe that Regeneration consists in *Spirituali Renovatione Nature*; in a Spiritual Renovation of our Nature: Our Modern *Socinians*, that it doth so, in *Morali Reformatione Vitæ*, in a Moral Reformation of Life. Now as we grant that this *Spiritual Renovation* of Nature will infallibly produce a *Moral Reformation* of Life; so if they will grant that this Moral Reformation of Life doth proceed from a Spiritual Renovation of our Nature, this difference will be at an end. And this is that which the Ancients intend by first receiving the Holy Ghost, and then all Graces with him. * However if they only design to speak *ambiguously*, impro-

perly,

perly and unscripturally, confounding Effects and their Causes, Habits and Actions, Faculties or Powers and occasional Acts, infused Principles and acquired Habits, Spiritual and Moral, Grace and Nature, that they may take an opportunity to *rail* at others for want of better Advantage, I shall not contend with them. For allow a new *Spiritual Principle*, an infused Habit of Grace, or gracious Abilities to be required in and unto Regeneration, or to be the Product or the Work of the Spirit therein, that which is *born of the Spirit being Spirit*, and this part of the Nature of this Work is sufficiently cleared. Now this the Scripture abundantly testifieth unto.

2 Cor. 5. 17. *If any Man be in Christ he is a New Creature.* This SECT. 20. New Creature is that which is intended, that which was before described, which being born of the Spirit is Spirit.

* This is produced in the Souls of Men by a *Creating Act* of the Power of God, or it is not a *Creature*; and it is superinduced into the essential Faculties of our Souls, or it is not a *New Creature*; for what-ever is in the Soul of Power, Disposition, Ability, or Inclination unto God, or for any Moral Actions, by Nature, it belongs unto the Old Creation, it is no *New Creature*. And it must be somewhat that hath a Being and Subsistence of its own in the Soul, or it can be neither *New* nor a *Creature*. And by our Apostle it is opposed to all outward Priviledges, *Gal. 5. 6. Chap. 6. 15.* That the production of it also is by a *Creating Act* of Almighty Power the Scripture testifieth, *Psal. 51. 10. Ephes. 2. 10.* And this can denote nothing

but a New *Spiritual Principle* or Nature wrought in us by the Spirit of God. No, say some, a New Creature is no more but a *changed Man*; it is true, but then this Change is Internal also; yes, in the *Purposes, Designs, and Inclinations* of the Mind: But is it by a real Infusion of a *new Principle of Spiritual Life* and Holiness? No, it denotes no more but a *new course of Conversation*; only the Expression is *Metaphorical*, a New Creature is a *Moral Man, that hath changed his Course or Way*. For if he were alwayes a *Moral Man*, that he was never in any vitious Way or Course, as it was with him, *Matth. 19. 18, 19, 20.* then he was alwayes a *New Creature*. This is good Gospel, at once overthrowing Original Sin, and the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ. This Doctrine I am sure was not learned from the *Fathers*, whereof some used to boast: Nay, it is much more fulsome than any thing ever taught by *Pelagius* himself, who indeed ascribed more unto Grace than these Men do, although he denied this Creation of a New Principle of Grace in us, antecedent unto Acts of Obedience. * And this turning all Scripture-Expressions of Spiritual Things into *Metaphors*, is but a way to turn the whole into a Fable, or at least to render the Gospel the most obscure and improper way

* *Sicut in natiuitate carnali omnem nascentis hominis voluntatem precedit operis Divini formatio: sic in spirituali natiuitate qua veterem hominem deponere incipimus.* Fulgent. de Incarnat. & Grat. Christ. c. 29.

Forma precessit in carne Christi, quam in nostra fide spiritualiter agnoscamus; Nam Christus Filius Dei, secundum carnem de Spiritu Sancto conceptus & natus est: Carnem autem illam nec concipere virgo posset nec parere, nisi ejus carnis Spiritus Sanctus operetur exordium. Sic etiam in hominis corde nec concipi fides potuit nec augeri, nisi eam Spiritus Sanctus effundat & nutriat. Ex eodem namque Spiritu renati sumus, ex quo Christus natus est. Idem. cap. 20.

* *Adjuvat nos Deus* (the words of *Pelagius*) *per doctrinam & revelationem suam, dum cordis nostri oculos aperit, dum nobis, ne presentibus occupemur, futura demonstrat, dum Diaboli pandit insidias, dum nos multiformi & ineffabili dono gratie celestis illuminat.* August. lib. de Grat. cont. Pelag. & Cælest. cap. 7.

of teaching the Truth of things that ever was made use of in the World.

SECT. 21. This *New Creature* therefore doth not consist in a *new course of Actions*, but in renewed Faculties with *new Dispositions*, Power, and *Ability*, to them and for them. Hence it is called the *Divine Nature*, 2 Pet. 1. 4. *He hath given unto us exceeding great and precious Promises, that by these you might be Partakers of the Divine Nature.* This *θεα φύσις*, this *Divine Nature* is not the Nature of God, whereof in our own Persons we are not subjectively Partakers. And yet a *Nature* it is, which is a Principle of Operation, and that *Divine* or *Spiritual*; namely, an Habitual Holy Principle, wrought in us by God and bearing his Image. By the Promises therefore we are made Partakers of a Divine Supernatural Principle, of Spiritual Actions and Operations, which is what we contend for. So the whole of what we intend is declared, Ephes. 4. 22, 23, 24. *Put off concerning the former Conversation the Old Man, which is corrupt, according to deceitful lusts; and be renewed in the Spirit of your Mind; and put on the New Man, which after God is created in Righteousness and true Holiness.* It is the Work of Regeneration, with respect both to its Foundation and Progress that is here described. (1.) The Foundation of the whole is laid in our being *renewed in the Spirit of our Mind*; which the same Apostle else-where calls, *being transformed in the Renovation of our Minds*, Rom. 12. 2. That this consists in the participation of a new saving *Supernatural Light*, to enable the Mind unto Spiritual Actings and to guide it therein, shall be afterwards declared. Herein consists our *Renovation in Knowledge*, *after the Image of him who created us*, Col. 3. 10. And (2.) the Principle it self infused into us, created in us, is called the *New Man*, v. 24. That is the *New Creature* before-mentioned; and called the *New Man*, because it consists in the universal change of the whole Soul, as it is the principle of all Spiritual and Moral Actions. And (1.) it is opposed unto the *Old Man*, vers. 23. put off the *Old Man* and put on the *New Man*, vers. 22, 24. Now this *Old Man* is the corruption of our Nature, as that Nature is the Principle of all Religious, Spiritual and Moral Actions, as is evident, Rom. 6. 6. It is not a *corrupt Conversation*, but the Principle and Root of it. For it is distinguished both from the Conversation of Men, and those corrupt lusts which are exercised therein as to that Exercise. And (2.) it is called the *New Man*, because it is the Effect and Product of God's Creating Power, and that in a way of a *New Creation*; see Ephes. 1. 18, Col. 2. 12, 13. 2 Thess. 1. 11. and it is here said to be *Created after God*, v. 24. Now the Object of a Creating Act is an *instantaneous Production*. What-ever preparations there may be for it, and dispositions unto it, the bringing forth of a new Form and Being by Creation, is in an instant. This therefore cannot consist in a mere Reformation of Life. So are we said herein to be the *Workmanship of God created in Christ Jesus unto good Works*, Ephes. 2. 10. There is a Work of God in us preceeding all our good Works towards him. For before we can work any of them, in order of Nature, we must be the *Workmanship of God*, created unto them, or enabled Spiritually for the performance of them.

SECT. 22. Again; This *New Man*, whereby we are born again, is said to be
created

created in Righteousness and true Holiness. That there is a respect unto Man created in Innocency, wherein he was made in the Image of God, I suppose will not be denied. It is also expressed, *Col. 3. 10. You have put on the New Man, which is renewed in Knowledge, after the Image of him that created him.* Look then what was, or wherein consisted the Image of God in the *First Man*, thereunto answers this *New Man*, which is created of God. Now this did not consist in *Reformation of Life*, nor in a course of vertuous Actions; For he was created in the Image of God, before he had done any one good thing at all, or was capable of so doing. But this Image of God consisted principally, as we have evinced elsewhere, in the Uprightness, Rectitude, and Ability of his whole Soul, his Mind, Will, and Affections, in, unto, and for the Obedience that God required of him. This he was endowed withal antecedently unto all voluntary Actions whereby he was to live to God. Such therefore must be our Regeneration, or the Creation of this New Man in us. It is the begetting, infusing, creating, of a new saving Principle of Spiritual Life, Light and Power in the Soul; antecedent unto true *Evangeli- cal Reformation of Life*, in Order of Nature, enabling Men thereunto, according unto the Mind of God.

Hereunto accords that of our Saviour, *Luk. 6. 43. A good Tree bring- eth not forth corrupt Fruit, neither doth a corrupt Tree bring forth good Fruit*; compared with *Matth. 7. 18.* The Fruit followeth the Nature of the Tree. And there is no way to change the Nature of the *Fruit*, but by changing the Nature of the *Tree* which brings it forth. Now all Amendment of Life in Reformation is but *Fruit*, *Matth. 3. 10.* But the changing of our Nature is antecedent hereunto. This is the constant Course and Tenor of the Scripture, to distinguish between the *Grace of Regeneration*, which it declares to be an immediate supernatural Work of God in us and upon us, and all that Obedience, Holiness, Righteousness, Vertue, or what-ever is good in us, which is the Consequent, Product, and Effect of it. Yea, God hath declared this expressly in his Covenant, *Ezek. 36. 25, 26, 27. Jer. 31. 33. Chap. 32. 39, 40.* The Method of God's proceeding with us in his Covenant is, that he first *washeth and cleanseth our Natures*, takes away the Heart of Stone, gives an Heart of Flesh, writes his Law in our Hearts, puts his Spirit in us, wherein as shall be evidenced the *Grace of Regeneration* doth consist. The Effect and Consequent hereof is, That we shall *walk in his Statutes*, keep his *Judgments and do them*; that is, reform our Lives, and yeeld all Holy Obedience unto God; wherefore these things are distinguished as *Causes and Effects*. See to the same purpose, *Rom. 6. 3, 4, 5, 6. Col. 3. 1, 5. Ephes. 2. 10. Chap. 4. 23, 24, 25.* This I insist upon still, on supposition, that by *Reformation of Life*, all Actual Obedience is intended. For as to that kind of Life which is properly called a *moral course of Life*, in opposition to open Debaucheries and Unrighteousness, which doth not proceed from an internal Principle of Saving Grace; It is so far from being Regeneration or Grace, as that it is a thing of no acceptation with God absolutely, what-ever Use or Reputation it may be of in the World.

SECT. 23.

And yet farther; This Work is described to consist in the *Sanctifica-*

SECT. 24.

tion of the whole Spirit, Soul, and Body, 1 Thess. 5. 23. And if this be that which some men intend by *Reformation of Life* and Moral Vertue, they must needs win much esteem, for their clearness and perspicuity in teaching Spiritual Things. For who would not admire them for such a Definition of *Morality*, namely, that it is the principal Sanctification of the whole Spirit, Soul and Body of a Believer by the Holy Ghost? But not to dwell longer on this Subject, There is no description of the Work of Regeneration in the Scripture, in its *Nature, Causes, or Effects*, no *Name* given unto it, no *promise* made of it, nothing spoken of the *Wayes, Means, or Power* by which it is wrought, but is inconsistent with this bold *Pelagian Figment*, which is destructive of the Grace of Jesus Christ.

The ground of this Imagination, that *Regeneration consists in a Moral Reformation of Life*, ariseth from a denial of Original Sin, or an inherent habitual corruption of Nature. For the *Masters* unto the Men of this Perswasion tell us, that what-ever is of *vice or defilement* in us, it is contracted by a custom of sinning only. And their Conceptions hereof do regulate their Opinions about Regeneration. For if Man be not originally corrupted and polluted, if his Nature be not depraved, if it be not possessed by, and under the Power of evil Dispositions and Inclinations, it is certain that he stands in no need of an *inward Spiritual Renovation of it*. It is enough for such a one, that by change of Life he renounce a *custom of sinning*, and reform his Conversation according to the Gospel, which in himself he hath power to do. But as it hath been in part already manifested, and will fully, God assisting, be evinced afterwards, that in our Regeneration the native *Ignorance, Darkness and Blindness* of our Minds are dispelled, Saving and Spiritual Light being introduced by the Power of God's Grace into them, That the *pravity* and stubbornness of our Wills are removed and taken away, a new principle of Spiritual Life and Righteousness being bestowed on them, and that the *Disorder* and Rebellion of our Affections are cured, by the infusion of the Love of God into our Souls; so the corrupt Imagination of the contrary Opinion directly opposite to the Doctrine of the Scriptures, the Faith of the Antient Church, and the Experience of all sincere Believers, hath amongst us of late nothing but Ignorance and ready Confidence produced to give countenance unto it.

SECT. 25. Thirdly; The Work of the Holy Spirit in Regeneration doth not consist in *Enthusiastical Raptures, Extasies, Voices*, or any thing of the like kind. It may be some such things have been by some deluded Persons apprehended or pretended unto. But the countenancing of any such Imaginations, is falsely and injuriously charged on them, who maintain the powerful and *effectual Work* of the Holy Spirit in our Regeneration. And this some are prone to do, wherein whether they discover more of their Ignorance, or of their Malice I know not, but nothing is more common with them. All whom in this Matter they dissent from, so far as they know what they say, or whereof they affirm, do teach Men to look after *Enthusiastick Inspirations*, or unaccountable *Raptures*, and to esteem them for Conversion unto God, although in the mean time they live in a *neglect of Holiness and Righteousness* of Conversation. 1

Answer,

Answer, if there be those who do so, we doubt not but that without their Repentance, the Wrath of God will come upon them as upon other Children of Disobedience. And yet in the mean time we cannot but call aloud, that others would discover their diligence in attendance unto these things, who as far as I can discern, do cry up the Names of *Virtue and Righteousness*, in opposition to the Grace of Jesus Christ, and that Holiness which is a Fruit thereof. But for the Reproach now under Consideration, it is as applyed, no other but a *Calumny* and false Accusation. And that it is so, the Writings and Preachings of those who have most diligently laboured in the Declaration of the Work of the Holy Spirit in our Regeneration, will bear Testimony at the great Day of the Lord. We may therefore as unto this *Negative Principle* observe three things. (1.) That the Holy Spirit in this Work doth ordinarily put forth his Power in and by the *use of Means*. He worketh also on Men suitably unto their Natures, even as the Faculties of their Souls, their Minds, Wills, and Affections, are meet to be affected and wrought upon. He doth not come upon them with *involuntary Raptures*, using their Faculties and Powers, as the Evil Spirit wrests the Bodies of them whom he possesseth; His whole Work therefore is *rationaly* to be accounted for, by and unto them who believe the Scripture, and have received the Spirit of Truth, whom the World cannot receive. The *formal efficiency* of the Spirit indeed, in the putting forth the exceeding greatness of his Power, in our *quickning*; Which the Ancient Church constantly calleth his *Inspiration* of Grace, both in private Writing, and Canons of Councils, is no otherwise to be comprehended by us, than any other Creating Act of Divine Power: for as we hear the Wind but know not from whence it cometh, nor whither it goeth, so is every one that is born of God; yet these two things are certain herein. First, That he worketh nothing, nor any other way, nor by any other means, than what are determined and declared in the *Word*. By that therefore may, and must every thing, really belonging, or pretended to belong unto this Work of Regeneration, be tryed and examined. Secondly; That he acts nothing contrary unto, puts no force upon any of the Faculties of our Souls, but works in them and by them suitably to their Natures; and being more intimate unto them, as *Austin* speaks, than they are unto themselves, by an Almighty Facility he produceth the Effect which he intendeth.

This great Work therefore, neither in part nor whole, consists in *Raptures, Extasies, Visions, Enthusiastick Inspirations*, but in the Effect of the Power of the Spirit of God on the Souls of Men, by and according to his Word, both of the Law and the Gospel. And those who charge these things on them, who have asserted, declared, and preached it according to the Scriptures, do it probably to countenance themselves in their hatred of them, and of the Work it self. Wherefore 2dly, where by Reason of *Distempers of Mind*, Disorder of Fancy, or long continuance of distressing Fears and Sorrows, in and under such Preparatory Works of the Spirit, which sometimes *cut Men to their Hearts* in the sense of their sin, and sinful lost condition, any do fall into Apprehensions or Imaginations of any thing *extraordinary* in the wayes before-mentioned, if it be not quickly and strictly brought unto the Rule, and

discarded thereby, it may be of great danger unto their Souls; and is never of any solid Use or Advantage. Such Apprehensions for the most part are either Conceptions of distempered Minds, and *discomposed Fancies*, or Delusions of Satan transforming himself into an Angel of Light, which the Doctrine of Regeneration ought not to be accountable for. Yet I must say, (3dly,) That so it is come to pass, that many of those who have been really made Partakers of this gracious Work of the Holy Spirit, have been looked on in the World, which knows them not, as *mad, Enthusiastick and Fanatical*. So the Captrains of the Host esteemed the Prophet that came to anoint *Jehu*, 2 Kings 9. 11. And the Kindred of our Saviour, when he began to Preach the Gospel, said, He was *besides himself, or extaticall*, Mark 3. 21. and they went out to lay hold of him. So *Festus* judged of *Paul*, Acts 26. 24, 25. And the Author of the Book of *Wisdom* gives us an account what acknowledgments some will make when it shall be too late, as to their own Advantage; Chap. 5. 3, 4, 5. They shall say, crying out, because of the trouble of their Minds; *This is he whom we accounted a scorn, and a common reproach; We Fools esteemed his Life madness, and his latter End to have been shameful; but now he is reckoned among the Sons of God, and his Lot is among the Holy Ones.* From what hath been spoken it appears; That

SECT. 26. Fourthly; That the Work of the Spirit of God in Regenerating the Souls of Men, is diligently to be enquired into by the *Preaching of the Gospel*, and all to whom the Word is dispensed. For the former sort, there is a peculiar Reason for their Attendance unto this Duty. For they are used and employed in the Work it self by the Spirit of God, and are by him made *instrumental* for the effecting of this New Birth and Life. So the Apostle *Paul* styles himself the *Father* of them who were Converted to God, or *Regenerate* through the Word of his Ministry: 1 Cor. 4. 15. *Though you have ten thousand Instructors in Christ, yet have you not many Fathers, for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the Gospel.* He was used in the Ministry of the Word for their Regeneration, and therefore was their *Spiritual Father*, and he only, though the Work was afterwards carried on by others. And if Men are Fathers in the Gospel to no more than are Converted unto God by their Personal Ministry, it will be no Advantage unto any, one day, to have assumed that Title, when it hath had no Foundation in that Work as to its effectual success. So speaking of *Onesimus*, who was Converted by him in Prison, he calls him *his Son whom he had begotten in his Bonds*, Philem. 10. and this he declared to have been prescribed unto him as the Principal End of his Ministry, in the Commission he had for Preaching the Gospel, Acts 26. 17, 18. Christ said unto him, *I send thee unto the Gentiles to open their Eyes, to turn them from Darkness to Light, and from the Power of Satan unto God;* which is a Description of the Work under Consideration. And this is the principal End of our Ministry also. Now certainly it is the Duty of Ministers to understand the Work about which they are employed, as far as they are able, that they may not Work in the Dark, and Fight Uncertainly, as Men beating the Air. What the Scripture hath revealed concerning it, as to its Nature, and the manner of its Operation; as to its Causes, Effects, Fruits, Evidences, they ought

ought diligently to enquire into. To be *spiritually skilled* herein, is one of the principal Furnishments of any for the Work of the Ministry, without which they will never be able to *divide the Word aright*, nor shew themselves Workmen that need not be ashamed. Yet is it scarcely imaginable with what rage and perversity of Spirit, with what scornful Expressions this whole Work is traduced, and exposed to contempt. Those who have laboured herein, are said to *prescribe long and tedious trains of Conversion, to set down nice and subtil Processes of Regeneration, to fill Peoples Heads with innumerable Swarms of Superstitious Fears and Scruples about the due Degrees of Godly Sorrow, and the certain Symptoms of a thorough-Humiliation*, p. 306, 307. Could any mistake be charged on particular Persons in these things, or the prescribing of Rules about Conversion to God and Regeneration, that are not warranted by the Word of Truth, it were not amiss to reflect upon them, and refute them. But the intention of these Expressions is evident, and the reproach in them is cast upon the Work of God it self. And I must profess, that I believe the Degeneracy from the Truth and Power of Christian Religion; the Ignorance of the principal Doctrines of the Gospel, and that scorn which is cast in these and the like Expressions on the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, by such as not only profess themselves to be Ministers, but of an higher Degree than ordinary, will be sadly ominous unto the whole State of the Reformed Church amongst us, if not timely repressed and corrected. But what at present I affirm in this Matter is, That it is a Duty indispenibly incumbent on all *Ministers* of the Gospel, to acquaint themselves thoroughly with the Nature of this Work, that they may be able to comply with the Will of God, and Grace of the Spirit in the Effecting and Accomplishment of it, upon the Souls of them unto whom they dispense the Word. Neither without some competent knowledge hereof, can they discharge *any one part* of their Duty and Office in a right manner. If all that hear them are born dead in Trespasses and Sins, if they are appointed of God to be the Instruments of their Regeneration, It is a madness which must one day be accounted for, to neglect a sedulous enquiry into the Nature of this Work, and the means whereby it is wrought. And the ignorance hereof, or negligence herein, with the want of an Experience of the Power of this Work in their own Souls, is one great cause of that lifeless and unprofitable Ministry which is among us.

Secondly; It is likewise the Duty of all to whom the Word is SECT. 27.
Preached to enquire also into it; It is unto such to whom the Apostle speaks, 2 Cor. 13. 5. *Examine your selves whether you be in the Faith, prove your own selves; know you not your own Selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you except you be Reprobates.* It is the Concernment of all individual Christians, or Professors of Christian Religion, to try and examine themselves what Work of the Spirit of God, there hath been upon their hearts; and none will deter them from it, but those who have a design to hoodwink them to Perdition. And (1.) the Doctrine of it is revealed and taught us. *For secret things belong unto the Lord our God, but those things which are revealed belong unto us and to our Children for ever, that we may do all the Words of the Law*, Deut. 29. 29. And we

speaking not of curious Enquiries into, or after hidden things, or the secret veiled Actions of the Holy Spirit; but only of an upright endeavour to search into, and comprehend the Doctrine concerning this Work, to this very end, that we might understand it. (2.) It is of such Importance unto all our Duties, and all our Comforts, to have a due Apprehension of the Nature of this Work, and of our own Concernment therein, that an enquiry into the one and the other cannot be neglected without the greatest folly and madness. Whereunto we may add, (3.) the danger that there is of Mens being *deceived* in this Matter, which is the *Hinge* whereon their Eternal State and Condition doth absolutely turn and depend. And certain it is, that very many in the World do deceive themselves herein. For they evidently live under one of these pernicious Mistakes; namely, That (1.) either Men may go to Heaven, or enter into the Kingdom of God, and not be *born again*; contrary to that of our Saviour, *John 3. 6.* or that Men may be *born again*, and yet live in sin, contrary to *1 John 3. 9.*

Works



Works of the HOLY SPIRIT Preparatory unto Regeneration.

C H A P. II.

(1.) *Sundry things Preparatory to the Work of Conversion.* (2.) *Material and Formal Dispositions with their Difference.* (3, 4.) *Things in the power of our Natural Abilities required of us in a way of Duty.* (5.) *Internal Spiritual Effects wrought in the Souls of Men by the Word.* (6, 7.) *Illumination. Conviction of Sin. Consequents thereof.* (8.) *These Things variously taught.* (9.) *Power of the Word and Energie of the Spirit distinct.* (10.) *Subject of this Work; Mind, Affections, and Conscience.* (11, 12, 13.) *Nature of this whole Work, and Difference from Saving Conversion farther declared.*

First; In reference unto the Work of Regeneration it self, *positive-* SECT. I.
ly considered, we may observe, that ordinarily there are certain
previous and preparatory Works, or workings in and upon the
Souls of Men, that are antecedent and *dispositive* unto it. But
yet Regeneration doth not consist in them, nor can it be educed out of
them. This is for the substance of it the Position of the Divines of the
Church of England, at the Synod of Dort, two whereof died Bishops,
and others of them were dignified in the *Hierarchy*. I mention it, that
those by whom these things are despised, may a little consider whose
Asbes they trample on and scorn. Lawful doubtless it is for any Man,
on just grounds, to dissent from their Judgments and Determinations; * but to do it with
an imputation of *folly*, with *derision*, contempt, scorn and scoffing at what they believed and
taught, becometh only a Generation of *new Divines* amongst us. But to return; I speak
in this Position only of them that are *Adult*, and
not Converted until they have made use of the
Means of Grace, in and by their own Reasons
and Understandings: And the *Dispositions* I intend,
are only *materially* so; not such as contain
Grace of the *same Nature* as is Regeneration
it self. A *material Disposition* is that which
disposeth, and some way maketh a Subject fit for
the Reception of that which shall be communi-

* *Sunt quedam opera externa ab hominibus ordinarie requisita priusquam ad statum Regenerationis aut Conversionis perducantur, quæ ab iisdem quandoque libere fieri, quandoque libere omitti solent, ut adire Ecclesiam, audire verbi præconium, & id genus alia.*

Sunt quedam effecta interna ad Conversionem sive Regenerationem prævia, quæ virtute Verbi Spiritusque in nondum re-generatorum cordibus excitantur, qualia sunt notitia voluntatis Divinae, sensus peccati, timor pænæ; cogitatio de liberatione, spes aliqua veniæ. Synod. Dordrec. Suffrag. Theolog. Britan. ad Artic. quartum, Thes. 1. 2.

cated,

cated, added, or infused into it as its Form. So *Wood* by dryness and a due compofure, is made fit and ready to admit of firing, or continual Fire. A *formal Disposition* is where one Degree of the same kind, disposeth the Subject unto farther Degrees of it. As the Morning Light which is of the same kind, disposeth the Air to the reception of the full Light of the Sun. The *former* we allow here, not the *latter*. Thus in Natural Generation there are sundry *Dispositions* of the Matter before the Form is introduced. So the Body of *Adam* was formed, before the rational Soul was *breathed* into it; and *Ezekiel's Bones* came together with a noise and shaking before the Breath of Life entred into them.

SECT. 2. I shall in this place give only a summary account of this *Preparatory Work*; because in the close of these Discourses, I shall handle it practically and more at large. Wherefore what I have here to offer concerning it, shall be reduced unto the ensuing Observations.

SECT. 3. (1.) There are some things required of us in a way of Duty in order unto our Regeneration, which are so in the *power of our own natural Abilities*, as that nothing but corrupt prejudices and stubbornness in sinning, doth keep or hinder Men from the performance of them. And these we may reduce unto two Heads. (1.) An *outward Attendance* unto the Dispensation of the Word of God, with those other external means of Grace, which accompany it, or are appointed therein. *Faith cometh by Hearing, and Hearing by the Word of God*, Rom. 10. 17. that is, it is Hearing the Word of God which is the ordinary means of ingenerating Faith in the Souls of Men. This is required of all to whom the Gospel doth come, and this they are able of themselves to do, as well as any other Natural or Civil Action. And where Men do it not, where they despise the Word at a distance, yea, where they do it not with diligence and choice, it is meerly from *supine negligence* of Spiritual Things, carnal security and contempt of God, which they must answer for. (2.) A diligent *Intension* of Mind, in attendance on the Means of Grace, to understand and receive the things revealed and declared as the Mind and Will of God. For this end hath God given Men their *Reasons* and Understandings, that they may use and exercise them about their Duty towards him, according to the Revelation of his Mind and Will. To this purpose he calls upon them to *remember that they are Men, and to turn unto him*. And there is nothing herein but what is in the Liberty and Power of the rational Faculties of our Souls, assisted with those *common Aids*, which God affords unto all Men in general. And great Advantages both may be, and are daily attained hereby. Persons, I say, who diligently apply their *Rational Abilities* in and about Spiritual Things, as externally revealed in the Word, and the Preaching of it, do usually attain great Advantages by it, and excel their Equals in other things; as *Paul* did when he was brought up at the Feet of *Gamaliel*. Would Men be but as intent and diligent in their endeavours after knowledge in Spiritual Things, as revealed in a way suited unto our Capacities and Understandings, as they are to get skill in Crafts, Sciences, and other Mysteries of Life, it would be much otherwise with many than it is. A neglect herein also is the Fruit of Sensuality, Spiritual Sloth, love

love of Sin, and contempt of God, all which are the voluntary Frames and Actings of the Minds of Men.

These things are required of us in order unto our Regeneration, and SECT. 4. it is in the *power of our own Wills* to comply with them; and we may observe concerning them, That (1.) the omission of them, the neglect of Men in them, is the principal *occasion* and cause of the eternal ruine of the Souls of the generality of them to whom, or amongst whom the Gospel is preached. *This is the condemnation, that Light is come into the World, and Men loved Darknes rather than Light, because their Deeds are evil,* John 3. 19. The generality of Men know full well that they do in this Matter, no more what they are *able*, than what they *should*. All pleadable pretences of *inability* and weakness are far from them. They cannot but know here, and they shall be forced to confess hereafter, that it was meerly from their own cursed sloth, with love of the World and Sin, that they were diverted from a diligent Attendance on the Means of Conversion, and the sedulous exercise of their Minds about them. Complaints hereof against themselves will make up a great part of their last dreadful cry. (2.) In the most diligent use of outward means, Men are not *able of themselves* to attain unto Regeneration, or compleat Conversion to God, without an especial, effectual, internal Work of the Holy Spirit of Grace on their whole Souls. This, containing the substance of what is principally proposed unto confirmation in the ensuing Discourses, needs not here be insisted on. (3.) *Ordinarily* God in the effectual Dispensation of his Grace meeteth with them, who attend with Diligence on the outward Administration of the means of it. He doth so, I say, *ordinarily*, in comparison of them who are Despisers and Neglecters of them. Sometimes indeed he goeth as it were out of the way, to meet with and bring home unto himself a *persecuting Saul*, taking of him in, and taking him off, from a course of open Sin and Rebellion. But *ordinarily* he dispenseth his peculiar especial Grace, among them who attend unto the common means of it. For he will both glorifie his Word thereby, and give out Pledges of his Approbation of our Obedience unto his Commands and Institutions.

Secondly; There are certain *internal Spiritual Effects*, wrought in SECT. 5. and upon the Souls of Men, whereof the Word Preached is the immediate instrumental Cause, which ordinarily do precede the Work of Regeneration, or real Conversion unto God. And they are reduceable unto three Heads. 1. *Illumination*. 2. *Conviction*. 3. *Reformation*. The first of these respects the Mind only; the second the Mind, Conscience, and Affections; and the third the Life and Conversation.

The first is *Illumination*, of whose Nature and Causes we must after- SECT. 6. wards treat distinctly; At present I shall only consider it, as it is ordinarily *previous* unto Regeneration, and materially disposing the Mind thereunto. Now all the *Light* which by any means we attain unto, or *Knowledge* that we have in or about Spiritual Things, things of supernatural Revelation, come under this Denomination of *Illumination*. And hereof there are three Degrees. (1.) That which ariseth meerly from an industrious Application of the *Rational Faculties* of our Souls, to
C c know,

know, perceive, and understand, the Doctrines of Truth as revealed unto us. For hereby much knowledge of Divine Truth may be obtained, which others, through their negligence, sloth, and pride, are unacquainted with. And this knowledge I refer unto *Illumination*, that is, a Light superadded to the innate conceptions of Mens Minds, and beyond what of themselves they can extend unto; because it is concerning such things as the heart of Man could never of it self conceive, but the very knowledge of them is communicated by their Revelation, 1 *Cor.* 2. 9, 11. And the reason why so very few do exercise themselves to the attaining of this Knowledge, according to their Abilities, is, because of the Enmity which is in the *Carnal Minds* of all Men by Nature unto the things themselves that are revealed. And within the compass of this Degree, I comprize all knowledge of Spiritual Things that is merely Natural. (2.) There is an *Illumination* which is an especial Effect of the Holy Ghost by the Word on the Minds of Men. With respect hereunto, some who fall totally from God, and perish Eternally, are said to have been *once enlightened*, Heb. 6. 4. This Light variously affects the Mind, and makes a great Addition unto what is *purely natural* or attainable by the meer exercise of our Natural Abilities.

SECT. 7. For (1.) it adds *Perspicuity* unto it, making the things discerned in it more clear and perspicuous to the Mind. Hence Men endowed with it, are said to *know the Way of Righteousness*, 2 *Pet.* 2. 21. clearly and distinctly to apprehend the Doctrine of the Gospel as the way of Righteousness. They know it not only or merely as *true*, but as a way of *Righteousness*; namely, the way of God's Righteousness, which is therein revealed from Faith to Faith, *Rom.* 1. 17. and the way of Righteousness for sinners in the sight of God, *Rom.* 10. 3, 4. (2.) It adds a greater *Assent* unto the Truth of the things revealed, than meer natural Reason can rise up unto. Hence those thus *Illuminated* are frequently said to *believe*; their Faith being only the naked Assent of their Minds unto the Truth revealed to them. So it is said of *Simon the Magician*, Acts 8. 12. and of sundry of the *Jews*, John 2. 23, 24. Chap. 12. 42. (3.) It adds unto them some kind of *evanid Joy*. These receive the *Word with Joy*, and yet have *no Root in themselves*, Luke 18. 13. *They rejoyce in the Light of it*, at least for a Season, *Joh.* 5. 35. Persons that are thus *enlightened*, will be variously affected with the Word, so as they are not whose Natural Faculties are not Spiritually Excited. (4.) It adds oft-times *Gifts* also, whereof this Spiritual Light is as it were the common Matter, which in Exercise is formed and fashioned in great variety. I say, this kind of *Spiritual Light*, the Effect of this *Illumination* is the Subject Matter, and contains in it the *Substance* of all Spiritual Gifts. *One sort of Gift* it is, when put forth and exercised in one way, or one kind of Duty, and another as in another. And where it is improved into *Gifts*, which principally it is by Exercise, there it wonderfully affects the Mind, and raiseth its Apprehensions in and of Spiritual Things. Now concerning this Degree of *Illumination*, I say, (1.) That it is not Regeneration, nor doth it consist therein, nor doth necessarily or infallibly ensue upon it. *A third Degree* is required thereunto, which we shall afterwards explain. Many therefore may be thus enlightened, and yet never be converted. (2.) That in order of Nature

Nature it is *previous* unto a full and real Conversion to God, and is *materially preparatory* and dispositive thereunto. For Saving Grace enters into the Soul by Light. As it is therefore a Gift of God, so it is the Duty of all Men, to labour after a participation of it, however by many it be abused.

Secondly; *Conviction of Sin* is another Effect of the Preaching of SECT. 8. the Word, *antecedaneous* unto real Conversion to God. This in general the Apostle describes, 1 Cor. 14. 24, 25. *If ye prophesie, and one cometh in who believeth not, he is convinced of all; and thus are the Secrets of his Heart made manifest, and so falling down on his Face he will Worship God.* And sundry things are included herein, or do accompany it. As (1.) a *disquieting sense of the guilt of Sin*, with respect unto the Law of God, with his Threatnings and future Judgments. Things that before were slighted and made a *mock* of, do now become the Soul's Burthen and constant Disquietment. *Fools make a mock of Sin*; they traverse their ways, and snuff up the Wind like the wild As; but in their Month, when Conviction hath burthened them, you may find them. And hereby are the Minds of Men variously affected with * *fears* and anguish in various degrees, according as Impressions are made upon them by the Word. And these Degrees are *not prescribed* as necessary Duties unto Persons under their Conversions, but only *described*, as they usually fall out to the relief and direction of such as are concerned in them. As a Man going to give Directions unto another, how to guide his Course in a Voyage at Sea; he tells him, That in such a place he will meet with Rocks and Shelves, Storms and cross Winds, so that if he Steer not very heedfully, he will be in danger to miscarry and to be cast away. He doth not prescribe it unto him as his Duty, to go among such Rocks, and into such Storms, but only directs him how to guide himself in them, where he doth meet with them, as assuredly he will, if he miss not his proper Course. (2.) *Sorrow or Grief for Sin* committed, because past and irrecoverable, which is the formal Reason of this condemning Sorrow. This the Scripture calls *sorrow of the World*, 2 Cor. 7. 10. Divines usually *legal sorrow*, as that which in Conjunction with the sense of the guilt of sin mentioned, brings Men into bondage under *fear*, Rom. 8. 15. (3.) *Humiliation for Sin*; which is the exercise or working of Sorrow and Fear in outward Acts of Confession, Fasting, Praying, and the like. This is the true Nature of Legal Humiliation, 1 Kings 21. 29. (4.) Unless by these things the Soul be *swallowed up* in despair, it cannot be but that it will be filled with Thoughts, Desires, Enquiries, and Contrivances about a *Deliverance* out of that State and Condition wherein it is; as Acts 2. 27. Acts 16. 30.

Thirdly; Oftentimes a *great Reformation of Life*, and Change in Affections doth ensue hereon; as Matth. 13. 20. 2 Pet. 2. 20. Matth. 12. 43.

* *Heu miserum nimisque miserum quem torquet Conscientia sua, quam fugere non potest; nimis miserum quem expectat Damnatio sua quam vitare non potest, nisi Deus eripiat. Nimis est infelix cui mors aeterna est sensibilis; nimis arduus quem terrent continui de sua infelicitate horrores. August. de contritione Cordis.*

SECT. 9.

All these things may be wrought in the Minds of Men by the Dispensation of the Word, and yet the Work of *Regeneration* be never perfected in them. Yea, although they are *good* in themselves, and Fruits of the kindness of God towards us, they may not only be *lost* as unto any Spiritual Advantage, but also be abused unto our great disadvantage. And this comes not to pass but by our own Sin, whereby we contract a new Guilt upon our Souls. And it commonly so falls out one of these three ways. For (1.) some are no way careful or wise to *improve this Light* and Conviction unto the end whereunto they tend and are designed. Their Message is to turn the Minds of Men, and to take them off from their self-confidence, and to direct them unto Christ. Where this is not attended unto, where they are not used and improved unto the pursuit of this End, they insensibly wither, decay, and come to nothing. (2.) In some they are overborn by the Power and Violence of their Lusts, the Love of Sin, and Efficacy of *Temptation*. They are sinned away every day, and leave the Soul in *ten-times a worse condition* than they found it. (3.) Some rest in these things as though they comprized the whole Work of God towards them, and guided them in all the Duties required of them. This is the State of many where they extend their Power, in the last Instance, unto any considerable *Reformation* of Life, and Attendance unto Duties of Religious Worship. But this, as was said, falls out through the *abuse* which the Carnal Minds of Men, retaining their Enmity against God, do put these things unto. In their own Nature they are good, useful, and *material Preparations* unto Regeneration, disposing the Mind unto the reception of the Grace of God.

SECT. 10.

And the Doctrine concerning these things hath been variously handled, distinguished, and applyed, by many Learned *Divines* and Faithful Ministers of the Gospel. Unto that *Light* which they received into them from the infallible Word of Truth, they joyned those *Experiences* which they had observed in their own Hearts, and the Consciences of others with whom they had to do, which were suitable thereunto. And in the Dispensation of this Truth, according to the *measure of the Gift of the Grace of Christ*, which they severally received, they had an useful and fruitful Ministry in the World, to the Converting of many unto God. But we have lived to see all these things *decried* and rejected. And the way which some have taken therein, is as strange and uncouth as the thing it self. For they go not about once to disprove by *Scripture* or *Reason*, what hath been taught or delivered by any sober Persons to this purpose; nor do they endeavour themselves to declare from, or by the Scriptures, what is the Work of *Regeneration*, what are the Causes and Effects of it, in opposition thereunto. These and such like wayes made use of by all that have treated of Spiritual Things, from the Foundation of Christianity are despised and rejected. But horrible and contemptuous *Reproaches* are cast upon the things themselves, in words heaped together on purpose to expose them unto scorn, among Persons ignorant of the Gospel and themselves. Those that teach them are *extatical* and *illiterate*; and those that receive them are *superstitious, giddy, and Phanatical*. All conviction, sense of, and sorrow for sin; all fear of the Curse and Wrath due

due unto Sin, all Troubles and Distresses of Mind, by reason of these things, are *foolish Imaginations, the Effects of bodily Diseases and Distempers, Enthusiastick Notions arising from the disorders of Mens Brains; and I know not what untoward Humours in their Complexions and Constitutions.* The same or the like account is also given concerning all *Spiritual Desertions, or Joys and Refreshments.* And the whole Doctrine concerning these things is branded with *novelty*, and hopes expressed of its sudden vanishing out of the World. This contempt and scorn of the Gospel have we lived to see, whereof it may be other Ages and Places have not had Experience. For as all these things are plentifully taught by some of the Ancients, in their Expositions of the Scriptures, wherein they are expressed, especially by *Austin*, who had occasion particularly to enquire into them; so the Doctrine concerning them is in a great measure retained in the Church of *Rome* it self. Only some amongst our selves are weary of them; who being no way able to oppose the Principles and Foundations whereon they are Built, nor to disprove them by Scripture or Reason, betake themselves to these Revilings and Reproaches. And as if it were not enough for them to proclaim their own Ignorance and Personal unacquaintance with those things which inseparably accompany that Conviction of Sin, Righteousness and Judgment, which our Lord Jesus Christ hath promised to send the Holy Spirit to Work in all that should believe, they make the reproaching of it in others a Principal Effect of that Religion which they profess. *Nevertheless the Foundation of God standeth sure; God knoweth who are his.* But we must return to our purpose.

Thirdly; All the things mentioned as wrought instrumentally by the Word, are *Effects* of the Power of the Spirit of God. The Word it self, under a bare proposal to the Minds of Men will not so affect them. We need go no further for the Confirmation hereof, than merely to consider the *Preaching*, (with the Effects which it had towards many) of the *Prophets* of old, *Isa.* 49. 4. *Jer.* 15. 30. *Ezek.* 33. 31, 32. of *Jesus Christ* himself, *John* 8. 59. And of the *Apostles*, *Acts* 13. 41, 45, 46. Hence to this day the *Jews* who enjoy the Letter of the *Old Testament*, without the Administration of the Spirit, are as full of blindness, hardness, and obstinacy, as any in the World who are utterly deprived of it. Many amongst our selves sit *all their dayes* under the Preaching of the Word, and yet have none of the Effects mentioned wrought upon them, when others their Associates in Hearing, are really Affected, Convinced, and Converted. It is therefore the *Ministration of the Spirit*, in and by the Word, which produceth all or any of these Effects on the Minds of Men. He is the Fountain of all *Illumination*. Hence they that are enlightned are said to be made *Partakers of the Holy Spirit*, *Heb.* 6. 4. And he is promised by our Saviour to *Convince the World of Sin*, *John* 16. 8. which although in that place it respects only one kind of Sin, yet it is sufficient to establish a general Rule, that *all Conviction* of Sin is from and by him. And no wonder if Men live securely in their Sins, to whom the *Light* which he gives, and the Convictions which he worketh are a Scorn and Reproach.

SECT. 12. There is indeed an Objection of some Moment, against the Ascription of this Work, unto the *energie* of the Holy Spirit. For whereas it is granted, that all these things may be wrought in the Minds and Souls of Men, and yet they may come short of the *Saving Grace of God*; How can he be thought to be the Author of such a Work? Shall we say that he designs only a *weak and imperfect Work* upon the Hearts of Men? Or that he deserts and gives over the Work of Grace which he hath undertaken towards them as not *able* to accomplish it?

SECT. 13. *Ans.* (1.) In many Persons, it may be in the most who are thus affected, *real Conversion* unto God doth ensue; The Holy Spirit by these *Preparatory Actings* making way for the Introduction of the new Spiritual Life into the Soul. So they belong unto a Work that is *perfect* in its kind. (2.) Where-ever they fail and come short of what in their own Nature they have a *tendency* unto; it is not from any weakness and imperfection in themselves, but from the sins of them in whom they are wrought. For Instance, even common Illumination and Conviction of sin, have in their own Nature a *tendency* unto sincere Conversion. They have so in the same kind, as the Law hath to bring us unto Christ. Where this end is not attained, it is alwayes from the Interposition of an Act of *wilfulness* and *stubbornness* in those Enlightened and Convicted. They do not sincerely improve what they have received, and faint not meerly for want of strength to proceed, but by a *free Act of their own Wills*, they refuse the Grace which is further tendred unto them in the Gospel. This Will, and its actual *Resistency* unto the Work of the Spirit, God is pleased in some to take away; It is therefore of Sovereign Grace when, and where it is removed; but the Sin of Men and their Guilt is in it, where it is continued. For no more is required hereunto, but that it be *voluntary*; It is *Will* and not *Power*, that gives Rectitude or Obliquity unto Moral Actions. (3.) As we observed before, The Holy Spirit in his whole Work is a *Voluntary Agent*. He worketh what, when, and how he pleaseth. No more is required unto his Operations, that they may be such as become him but these two things. First That in themselves they be *good and holy*. Secondly, That they be *effectual* as unto the ends whereunto by him they are designed. That he should alwayes design them to the utmost length of what they have a *moral tendency* towards, though no real efficiency for, is not required. And these things are found in these Operations of the Holy Spirit. They are in their own Nature *good and holy*; Illumination is so, so is Conviction, and Sorrow for Sin, with a subsequent change of Affections and Amendment of Life.

SECT. 14. Again, what he worketh in any of these, effectually and infallibly accomplisheth the *end* aimed at; which is no more, but that Men be Enlightened, Convinced, Humbled, and reformed, wherein he faileth not. In these things he is pleased to take on him the *management of the Law*, so to bring the Soul into *bondage* thereby, that it may be stirred up to seek after Deliverance: And he is thence actively called the *Spirit of Bondage unto Fear*, Rom. 8. 15. And this *Work* is that which constitutes the *third ground* in our Saviours Parable of the *Sower*. It receives the Seed and Springs up hopefully until by *cares* of the World, Temptations and occasions

occasions of Life it is choaked and lost, *Matth. 13. 22.* Now because it oftentimes maketh a great Appearance and Resemblance of Regeneration it self, or of real Conversion to God, so that neither the *World* nor the *Church* are able to distinguish between them, it is of great concernment unto all Professors of the Gospel, to enquire diligently whether they have in their own Souls been made Partakers of *any other Work* of the Spirit of God or no. For although this be a *good Work*, and do lie in a good subserviency unto Regeneration, yet if Men attain no more, if they proceed no farther, they will perish, and that eternally. And multitudes do herein actually deceive themselves, speaking peace unto their Souls on the Effects of this Work, whereby it is not only insufficient to *save them*, as it is to all Persons at all times, but also becomes a means of their present security and future destruction. I shall therefore give some few *Instances* of what this Work in the Conjunction of all the parts of it, and in its utmost improvement cannot *effect*, whereby Men may make a Judgment how things stand in their own Souls in respect unto it.

1. It may be observed, that we have placed all the Effects of this SECT. 15.
Work in the *Mind, Conscience, Affections, and Conversation.* Hence it follows, notwithstanding all that is or may be spoken of it, that the *Will* is neither really changed, nor internally renewed by it. Now the Will is the *ruling, governing Faculty* of the Soul, as the Mind is the *guiding* and leading. Whilst this abides unchanged, ~~unrenewed~~, the Power and Reign of Sin continues in the Soul; though not undisturbed, yet unruined. It is true, there are many *checks* and *controuls* from the Light of the Mind, and Reflections of Conscience cast in this State upon the Actings of the *Will*, so that it cannot put it self forth in and towards Sin, with that freedom, security, and *licentiousness*, as it was wont to do; Its *fierceness* and *rage* rushing into Sin, as the Horse into the *Battel*, *running on God*, and the *thick Bosses of his Buckler*, may be broken and abated, by those *Hedges of Thorns* which it finds set in its way, and those *buffetings* it meets withal from Light and Convictions. Its delight and *greediness in sinning*, may be calmed and quieted by those frequent Representations of the *terror of the Lord* on the one hand, and the pleasure of *Eternal Rest* on the other, which are made unto it. But yet still, setting aside all Considerations *forreign* unto its own Principle, the Bent and Inclination of the Will it self is to Sin and Evil alwayes and continually. The Will of sinning may be restrained upon a *thousand Considerations*, which Light and Convictions will administer; but it is not taken away. And this discovers it self where the very *first Motions* of the Soul towards sinful Objects have a sensible *complacency*, until they are controuled by Light and Fear. This argues an *unrenewed Will*, if it be constant and universal.

2. The Effects of this Work on the *Mind*, which is the first Subject SECT. 16.
affected with it, proceeds not so far as to give it *Delight, Complacency, and Satisfaction*, in the lively Spiritual Nature and Excellencies of the things revealed unto it. The true Nature of *Saving Illumination* consists in this, that it gives the Mind such a direct *intuitive* insight and prospect into Spiritual Things, as that in their own Spiritual Nature they
suit,

suit, please, and satisfie it. So that it is *transformed* into them, *cast into the Mould of them*, and rests in them, *Rom. 6. 17. Chap. 12. 2. 1 Cor. 2. 13, 14. 2 Cor. 3. 18. Chap. 4. 6.* This the Work we have insisted on reacheth not unto. For notwithstanding any discovery that is made therein of Spiritual Things unto the Mind, it finds not an *immediate direct Spiritual Excellency* in them, but onely with respect unto some Benefit or Advantage which is to be attained by means thereof. It will not give such a Spiritual insight into the Mystery of God's Grace by Jesus Christ, called, *his Glory shining in the Face of Christ, 2 Cor. 4. 6.* as that the Soul in its first direct view of it, should for what it is in it self admire it, *delight* in it, approve it, and find *Spiritual Solace* with refreshment in it. But such a Light, such a Knowledg it communicates, as that a Man may *like it well* in its Effects, as a way of Mercy and Salvation.

SECT. 17. 3. This Work extends it self to the *Conscience* also ; but yet it doth not *purge the Conscience from dead Works*, that we should serve the living God. This is the effect of a real Application of the Blood of Christ by Faith unto our Souls, *Heb. 9. 14.* Two things it effects upon the Conscience. (1.) It renders it more *ready, quick, and sharp* in the re-proving and condemning of all Sin than it was before. To condemn Sin according unto its Light and Guidance, is *natural* unto, and inseparable from the Conscience of Man. But its *Readiness* and *Ability* to exercise this condemning Power, may by custom and course of sinning in the World, be variously weakned and impeded. But when Conscience is brought under the Power of this Work, having its *directing Light* augmented, whereby it sees more of the evil of sin than formerly, and having its self-reflections sharpned and multiplyed, it is more *ready* and *quick* in putting forth its Judging and Condemning Power than it was. (2.) Conscience is assisted and directed hereby to condemn *many things in Sin*, which before it approved of. For its Judging Power is still commensurate unto its Light. And many things are thereby now discovered to be *sinful*, which were not so by the meer natural guidance under which before it was. But yet notwithstanding all this, it doth not *purge the Conscience from Dead Works* ; that is, Conscience is not hereby wrought unto such an Abhorrency of Sin for it self, as continually to direct the Soul unto an Application to the Blood of Christ, for the *cleansing* of it self, and the purging of it out. It contents it self to keep all things in a *tumult*, disorder, and confusion, by its constant condemning both Sin and Sinners.

SECT. 18. (4.) This Work operates greatly on the *Affections* ; We have given Instances in the *Fear, Sorrow, Joy, and Delight*, about Spiritual Things, that are stirred up and acted thereby. But yet it comes short in two things of a through-Work upon the Affections themselves. For (1.) it doth not *fix* them. And (2.) it doth not *fill* them. (1.) It is required that our Affections be *fixed* on Heavenly and Spiritual Things, and true Grace will effect it. *Col. 3. 1, 2. If ye be risen with Christ, seek those things which are Above, where Christ sitteth on the Right Hand of God. Set your Affections on things Above.* The Joys, the Fears, the Hopes, the Sorrows, with reference unto Spiritual and Eternal Things, which

which the Work before mentioned doth produce, are *evanid*, uncertain, unstable; not onely as to the Degrees, but as to the very Being of them. Sometimes they are as a River ready to over-flow its Banks, Men cannot but be pouring them out on all occasions. And sometimes as *Waters that fail*, no drop comes from them. Sometimes they are hot; and sometimes cold; sometimes up, and sometimes down; sometimes all Heaven, and sometimes all World, without equality, without stability. But true Grace *fixeth the Affections* on Spiritual Things. As to the *Degrees of their Exercise*, there may be and is in them great variety, according as they may be excited, aided, assisted, by Grace; and the means of it, or obstructed and impeded by the interposition of Temptations and Diversions. But the *constant bent* and inclination of renewed Affections is unto Spiritual Things, as the Scripture every-where testifieth, and Experience doth confirm. (2.) The fore-mentioned Work doth not *fill the Affections*; how-ever it may serve to take them up and pacifie them. It comes like *many Strangers* to an *Inn* to Lodg, which take up a great deal of room, and make an Appearance, as if none were in the House but themselves; and yet they turn not out the *Family* which dwelleth there, but there they make their abode still. Light and Conviction with all their Train and Attendants come into the *Mind and Affections*, as if they would fill them and possess them for themselves alone. But yet when they have done all, they leave the *quiet Places* of the House for the World, and Sin, and Self; they do not thrust them out of the Affections, and fill up their places with Spiritual Things. But Saving-Grace *fills up* the Affections with Spiritual Things, fills the Soul with Spiritual Love, Joy, and Delight, and exerciseth all other Affections about their proper Objects. It denies not a room to any other Things, Relations, Possessions, Enjoyments, meerly as they are *natural*, and are content to be subordinate unto God, and Spiritual Things. But if they would be *carnal, disorderly, or predominant*, it casts them out.

5. This Work is often-times carried on very far in *Reformation of SECT. 19.* Life, and Conversation, so that it will express the whole *form of Godliness* therein. But herein also it is subject unto a *three-fold Defect* and Imperfection. For (1.) it will consist with and allow of *raging and reigning* sins of Ignorance. The conducting Light in this Work not leading into the Abhorrency of all sin as sin, nor into a pursuit of Holiness, out of a design to be *universally conformable* unto Christ; but being gathered up from this and that particular Command, it oft-times leaves behind it great *sins* unregarded. So it left *Persecution in Paul* before his Conversion; and so it leaves hatred and a desire of Persecution in many at this day. And other Sins of the like Nature may escape its utmost search to the ruine of the Soul. (2.) Its Reformation of the Conversation is seldom *universal* as to all *known sins*, unless it be for a season, whilst the Soul is under a *flagrant pursuit* of Self-Righteousness. *Paul* in that condition had preserved himself, so as that according to the Law he was *blameless*; and the young Man thought he had *kept all the Commandments* from his youth. But setting aside this Consideration, notwithstanding the utmost that this Work can attain unto, after the

efficacy of its first Impressions begin to abate. *Lust* will reserve some peculiar way of venting and discovering it self, which is much spoken unto. (3.) The *Conversations* of Persons who live and abide under the Power of this Work only, is assuredly fading and decaying; Coldness, Sloth, Negligence, Love of the World, Carnal-Wisdom and Security do every day get ground upon them. Hence although by a long course of abstinence from *open sensual sins*, and stating of a contrary Interest, they are not given up unto them; yet by the decays of the Power of their Convictions, and the ground that Sin gets upon them, they become *walking and talking Sceletons* in Religion, dry, sapless, useleſs Worldlings. But where the Soul is inlaid with real Saving-Grace, it is in a state of thriving continually. Such a one will go on from *Strength to Strength*, from *Grace to Grace*, from *Glory to Glory*, and will be fat and flourishing in Old Age. By these things may we learn to distinguish in our selves between the *preparatory Work* mentioned, and that of real *Saving-Conversion* unto God. And these are some of the Heads of those *Operations* of the Holy Spirit on the Minds of Men, which often-times are *preparatory* unto a real Conversion unto God; and sometimes their Contempt and Rejection, a great Aggravation of the sin and misery of them in whom they were wrought.

SECT. 20. And these things as they are clearly laid down in the Scripture, and exemplified in sundry Instances, so for the substance of them they have been acknowledged (till of late) by all Christians; only some of the *Papists* have carried them so far, as to make them *formally dispositive* unto Justification, and to have a congruous merit thereof. But this the Ancients denyed, who would not allow that either any such Preparation, or any Moral Virtues did capacitate Men for real Conversion, ob-

* Nonne advertimus multos fideles nostros ambulantes viam Dei, ex nulla parte ingenio comparari; non dicam quorundam hereticorum, sed etiam minorum? Item nonne videmus quosdam homines utriusque sexus in conjugali castitate viventes sine querela, & tamen vel hereticos vel paganos, vel etiam in vera fide & vera Ecclesia sic tepidos, ut eos miremur meretricum & histriorum subito converſorum, non solum sapientia & temperantia, sed etiam fide, spe & Charitate superari. August. lib. 2. Quæst. ad Simplician. q. 2.

serving that others were often called before those who were so qualified. * And in them there are *Goads* and *Nails*, which have been fastned by Wise and Experienced *Masters of the Assemblies*, to the great Advantage of the Souls of Men. For observing the usual Wayes and Means whereby these Effects are wrought in the Minds of the Hearers of the Word, with their Consequences, in Sorrow, Troubles, Fear, and Humiliations, and the Courses which they take to improve them, or to extricate themselves from the perplexity of them, they have managed the Rules of Scripture with their own and others Experience sui-

table thereunto; to the great benefit of the Church of God. That these things are now despised and *laughed to scorn*, is no part of the happiness of the Age wherein we live, as the event will manifest.

SECT. 21. And in the mean time, if any suppose that we will forgoe those Truths and Doctrines which are so plainly revealed in the Scripture, the Knowledg whereof is so useful unto the Souls of Men, and whose Publication in Preaching hath been of so great Advantage to the Church

Church of God, meerly because they understand them not, and therefore reproach them, they will be greatly mistaken. Let them lay aside that unchristian way of treating about these things which they have engaged in; and plainly prove that Men need not be convinced of sin, that they ought not to be humbled for it, nor affected with sorrow with respect unto it; that they ought not to seek for a Remedy or Deliverance from it; that all Men are not born in a state of Sin; that our Nature is not depraved by the Fall; that we are able to do all that is required of us, without the Internal Aids and Assistances of the Spirit of God, and they shall be diligently attended unto.

Dd 2

Corrup-



Corruption or Depravation of the Mind by Sin.

CHAP. III.

- (1.) *Contempt and Corruption of the Doctrine of Regeneration.* (2.) *All Men in the World Regenerate or Unregenerate.* (3.) *General Description of Corrupted Nature.* (4, 5.) *Depravation of the Mind.* (6.) *Darkness upon it.* (7.) *The Nature of Spiritual Darkness.* (8, 9.) *Reduced into two Heads of Darkness objective.* (10.) *How removed.* (11, 12, 13, 14.) *Of Darkness subjective, its Nature and Power.* (15, 16. *proved.* (17.) *Ephes. 4. 17, 18. opened.* (18.) *Applied.* (19.) *The Mind alienated from the Life of God.* (20, 21, 22.) *The Life of God what it is.* (23.) *The Power of the Mind, with respect unto Spiritual Things, examined.* (24, 25.) *1 Cor. 2. 14. opened.* *πνευματικὰ ἀνθρώπου,* or the Natural Man, who. (26.) *Spiritual Things, what they are.* (27.) *How the Natural Man cannot know or receive Spiritual Things.* (28.) *Difference between understanding Doctrines, and receiving of Things.* (29, 30.) *A two-fold Power and Ability of Mind, with respect unto Spiritual Things, explained.* (31.) *Reasons why a Natural Man cannot discern Spiritual Things.* (32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37.) *How and wherefore Spiritual Things are foolishness to Natural Men.* (38.) *Why Natural Men cannot receive the Things of God.* (39, 40, 41.) *A double impotency in the Mind of Man by Nature.* (42.) *1 Cor. 2. 14. farther vindicated.* (43.) *Power of Darkness in Persons Unregenerate.* (44.) *The Mind filled with Wills or Lusts, and enmity thereby.* (45.) *The Power and Efficacy of Spiritual Darkness at large declared.*

SECT. I.

WE have I hope made our way plain for the due Consideration of the great Work of the Spirit in the Regeneration of the Souls of God's Elect. This is that whereby he forms the Members of the Mystical Body of Christ, and prepares *Living Stones* for the building of a Temple, wherein the Living God will dwell. Now that we may not only declare the Truth in this Matter, but also vindicate it from those Corruptions wherewith some have endeavoured to debauch it, I shall premise a Description lately given of it, with confidence enough, and it may be not without too much Authority. And it is in these words; *What is it to be born again, and to have a new Spiritual Life in Christ, but to become sincere Profelytes to the Gospel; to renounce all vicious Customs and Practices,*
and

and to give an upright and uniform obedience to all the Laws of Christ; and therefore if they are all but precepts of moral virtue, to be born again, and to have a new Spiritual life, is only to become a new moral man. But their account (speaking of nonconformist Ministers) of this Article, is so wild and Phantastick, that had I nothing else to make good my charge against them, that alone would be more than enough to expose the prodigious folly of their Spiritual Divinity. p. 343, 344. I confess these are the words of one who seems not much to consider what he says, so as that it may serve his present turn, in reviling and reproaching other men. For he considers not that by this description of it he utterly excludes the baptismal Regeneration of Infants, which is so plainly professed by the Church wherein he is dignified. But this is publicly declared, avowed, and vended as allowed Doctrine amongst us, and therefore deserves to be noticed, though the person that gives it out, be at irreconcilable feuds with himself and his Church. Of Morality and Grace an account shall be given elsewhere. At present the work of Regeneration is that which is under our consideration. And concerning this, those so severely treated, teach no other Doctrine, but what for the substance of it is received in all the Reformed Churches in Europe, and which so many learned Divines of the Church of England confirmed with their suffrage at the Synod of Dort. Whether this deserves all the scorn which this haughty person pours upon it by his swelling words of vanity, will to indifferent persons be made appear in the ensuing discourse; as also what is to be thought of the description of it given by that Author; which whether it favour more of ignorance and folly, or of pride and fulsome errors, is hard to determine. I know some words in it are used with the old Pelagian trick of ambiguity, so as to be capable of having another sense and Interpretation put upon them, than their present use and design will admit of. But that Artifice will be immediately rendered useless.

There is a two-fold state of men with respect unto God which is comprehensive of all individuals in the World. For all men are either *Un-* SECT. 2.
regenerate, or *Regenerate*. There being an *Affirmation* and a *Negation* concerning the state of Regeneration in the Scripture, one of them may be used concerning every capable Subject; every man living is so, or he is not so; And herein, as I suppose, there is a general consent of Christians. Again, it is evident in the Scripture, and we have proved it in our way, that all men are born in an *unregenerate Condition*. This is so positively declared by our Saviour, that there is no rising up against it. *Joh. 3. 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8.* Now *Regeneration* being the *delivery* of men (or the means of it) from that state and condition wherein they are born, or are by nature, we cannot discover wherein it doth consist, without a declaration of that state which it gives us *deliverance* from. And this in the first place we shall insist upon at large, giving an account of the state of *lapsed nature* under a loss of the Original Grace of God. And these things I shall handle practically for the Edification of all sorts of Believers, and not in the way and method of the Schools, which yet shall be done elsewhere.

In the * Declaration of the state of corrupted nature after the fall, and SECT. 3.

* Dico veterem Nativitatem atque adeo omnes vires naturæ, qua naturali propagatione transfunduntur in subolem in scriptura damnari; maledictam cordis nostri imaginationem, rationem, os, manus, pedes peccato & tenebris involuta in nobis omnia. Johan. Ferus in Evang. Joh. cap. 1. v. 23. Fide perditâ spe relicta, in cilligentiâ obcecata, Voluntate captiva, homo quo in se reparare non invenit. de Vocat. Gent. 1.7. c. 3.

before the Reparation of it by the Grace of Jesus Christ, that is, the effectual Operation of the *Holy Spirit*, The Scripture principally insists on 3 things. (1) The Corruption and Depravation of the *Mind*; which it calls by the name of *Darkness* and *Blindness*, with the consequents of vanity, ignorance and folly. (2) The Depravation of the *Will* and *Affections*, which it expresseth several wayes, as by *weakness* or *impotency*, and *stubbornness* or *obstinacy*. (3) By the general name of *death*, extended to the condition of the whole soul; and these have various Effects and Consequences, as in our explanation of them will appear.

SECT. 4.

I. All Men by nature not inlightened, not renewed in their minds by the saving effectual Operation of the *Holy Spirit*, are in a *state of Darkness* and *Blindness*, with respect unto God and Spiritual things, with the way of pleasing him, and living unto him. Be men otherwise, and in other things never so *wise*, knowing, learned, and skilful; in Spiritual things they are *dark*, *blind*, *ignorant*, unless they are *renewed in the Spirit of their Minds* by the *Holy Ghost*. This is a matter which the World cannot endure to hear of, and is ready to fall into a tumult upon its mention. They think it but an Artifice which some weak men have got, to reflect on and condemn them who are wiser than themselves. On the like occasion did the *Pharisees* ask of our Saviour that question with pride and scorn; *are we blind also?* Joh. 9. 40. But as he lets them know, that their presumption of light and knowledge, would serve only to aggravate their sin and condemnation, v. 41. so he plainly tells them that notwithstanding all their boasting, *they had not heard the voice of God at any time, nor seen his shape*, Joh. 5. 37.

SECT. 5.

Some at present talk much about the power of the *intellectual faculties* of our Souls, as though they were neither debased, corrupted, impaired, nor depraved. All that disadvantage which is befallen our nature by the entrance of Sin is but in the disorder of the affections, and the inferiour *sensitive* parts of the Soul, which are apt to tumultuate and rebel against that poor untainted light which is in the Mind. And this they speak of it, without respect unto its *Renovation* by the *Holy Spirit*; for if they include that also, they are in their discourses most notorious confused triflers. Indeed some of them write, as if they had never deigned once to consult with the Scriptures, and others are plainly gone over into the Tents of the *Pelagians*. But setting aside their modern Artifices, of confident boasting, contemptuous reproaches, and scurrilous railings, it is no difficult underraking, so to demonstrate the *depravation* of the Minds of men by nature, and their im-

* Si quis per Naturæ vigorem evangelizanti predicationi nos consentire posse confirmet absque illuminatione Spiritus Sancti; hæretico Fallitur Spiritus. Conc. Arausic. 2 Can 7.

potency thence to discern Spiritual things in a spiritual manner, * without a saving effectual Work of the *Holy Spirit* in their *Renovation*; as that the proudest and most petulant of them shall not be able to return any thing of a solid answer thereunto. And herein we plead for no-

thing but the known doctrine of the ancient Catholick Church, declared in the writings of the most learned Fathers and Determinations of Councils against the *Pelagians*, whose errors and heresies are again revived among us by a crew of Socinianized Arminians.

SECT. 6.

We may to this purpose first consider the Testimonies given in the Scripture

pture unto the Assertion as laid down in general; Matth. 4. 16. *The People which sat in darknes saw great Light, and to them that sat in the Region and Shadow of Death, Light is sprung up.* Of what kind this Darknes was in paticular shall be afterwards declared. For the present it answers what is proposed, That before the Illumination given them by the Preaching of the Gospel, the People mentioned *sat in Darknes*, or lived under the Power of it. And such as was the *Light* whereby they were relieved, of the same kind was the *Darknes* under which they were detained. And in the same sense when Christ preached the Gospel, *the Light shined into Darknes, & the Darknes comprehended it not*, John 1. 5. gave not place to the Light of the Truth declared by him, that it might be received in the Souls of Men. The Commission which he gave to Paul the Apostle when he sent him to Preach the Gospel, was *to open the Eyes of Men, and to turn them from Darknes to Light*, Acts 26. 18. not a Light within them; for *Internal Light* is the Eye, or seeing of the Soul. But the *Darknes* was such as consisted in their blindness, in not having their eyes open. *To open their Eyes, and turn them from Darknes*, Ephes. 5. 8. *Ye were sometimes Darknes, but now are ye Light in the Lord.* What is the Change and Alteration made in the Minds of Men intended in this Expression will afterwards appear. But that a great Change is proposed none can doubt; Col. 1. 13. *Who hath delivered us from the Power of Darknes*; as also 1 Pet. 2. 9. *Who hath called us out of Darknes into his marvelous Light.* And the *Darknes* which is in these Testimonies ascribed unto Persons in an unregenerate Condition, is by Paul compared to that which was at the beginning, before the Creation of Light; Gen. 1. 2. *Darknes was upon the Face of the Deep.* There was no Creature that had a Visive Faculty, there was *Darknes Subjectively* in all, and there was no Light to see by, but all was *objectively* wrapt up in *Darknes*. In this state of things, God by an Almighty Act of his Power created Light; vers. 3. *God said, Let there be Light, and there was Light.* And no otherwise is it in this new Creation. *God who commanded then Light to shine out of Darknes, shines into the Hearts of Men to give them the knowledg of his Glory in the Face of Jesus Christ*, 2 Cor. 4. 6. *Spiritual Darknes* is in and upon all Men, until God by an Almighty and Effectual Work of the Spirit shine into them, or Create Light in them. And this *Darknes* is that *Light within* which some boast to be in themselves and others.

To clear our way in this Matter, we must consider, first, the Nature SECT. 7. of this *Spiritual Darknes*, what it is, and wherein it doth consist; and then secondly, shew its *Efficacy* and *Power* in and on the Minds of Men, and how they are corrupted by it.

First; The Term of *Darknes* in this case is *Metaphorical*, and borrowed from that which is *Natural*. What *Natural Darknes* is, and wherein it consists all Men know; if they know it not in its Cause and Reason, yet they know it by its Effects. They know it is that which hinders Men from all Regular Operations, which are to be guided by the outward Senses. And it is two-fold; (1.) When Men have not Light to see by; or when the usual Light, the only *external Medium* for the discovery of distant Objects is taken from them. So was it with the *Egyptians* during the *three dayes darknes* that was on their Land. They

They could not see for want of Light; they had their *Visive Faculty* continued unto them; yet having *no Light*, they *saw not one another*, nor *arose any from his place*, *Exod. 10. 23.* For God probably to augment the terror of his Judgment, restrained the vertue of *Artificial Light*, as well as he did that which was *Natural*. (2.) There is *Darkness* unto Men when they are *blind*, either born so, or made so. *Psal. 69. 29. Let their Eyes be darkened that they may not see.* So the Angel smote the *Sodomites* with blindness, *Gen. 19. 11.* and *Paul the Sorcerer*, *Acts 13. 11.* However the Sun shineth, it is all one perpetual Night unto them that are blind.

SECT. 8. Answerable hereunto, *Spiritual Darkness* may be referred unto two Heads. For there is an *Objective Darkness*, a Darkness that is *on* Men; and a *Subjective Darkness*, a Darkness that is *in* them. The first consists in the want of those Means whereby alone they may be enlightned in the Knowledge of God and Spiritual Things. This is intended, *Mat. 4. 16.* This Means is the *Word of God*, and the preaching of it. Hence it is called a *Light*, *Psal. 119. 105.* and is said to *give Light*, *Psal. 119. 8.* or to be a *Light shining in a dark place*, *2 Pet. 1. 19.* And it is so termed, because it is the outward Means of Communicating the Light of the Knowledge of God unto the Minds of Men. What the *Sun* is unto the World, as unto things natural, that is the Word and the Preaching of it unto Men as to Things Spiritual. And hence our Apostle applies what is said of the *Sun* in the Firmament, as to the enlightning of the World, *Psal. 19. 1, 2, 3, 4.* unto the Gospel, and the Preaching of it, *Rom. 10. 15, 18.*

SECT. 9. And this Darkness is upon many in the World, even all unto whom the Gospel is not declared, or by whom it is not received, where it is or hath been so. Some I know have entertained a vain Imagination about a Saving-Revelation of the Knowledge of God, by the Works of Creation and Providence, objected to the Rational Faculties of the Minds of Men. It is not my purpose here to divert unto the confutation of that Fancy. Were it so, it were easie to demonstrate, that there is no *Saving Revelation* of the Knowledge of God unto Sinners, but as he is in Christ reconciling the World unto himself; and that so he is not made known, but by the Word of Reconciliation committed unto the Dispensers of the Gospel. What-ever knowledg therefore of God may be attained by the means mentioned, as he is the *God of Nature* ruling over Men, and requiring Obedience from them according to the Covenant and Law of their Creation, yet the knowledg of him as a God in Christ pardoning Sin and saving Sinners, is attainable by the Gospel only. But this I have proved and confirmed elsewhere.

SECT. 10. It is the Work of the Holy Spirit to remove and take away *this Darkness*, which until it is done, no Man can see the Kingdom of God or enter into it. And this he doth by sending the Word of the Gospel into any Nation, Country, Place, or City, as he pleaseth. The Gospel doth not get ground in any place, nor is restrained from any Place or People, by *accident*, or by the endeavours of Men, but it is sent and disposed of according to the Sovereign Will and Pleasure of the Spirit of

of God. He Giveth, Calls, and Sends Men unto the Work of Preaching it, *Acts* 13. 2, 4. and disposeth them unto the Places where they shall declare it, either by *express Revelation* as of old, *Acts* 16. 6, 7, 8, 9, 10. or guides them by the secret Operations of his Providence. Thus the Dispensation of the *Light of the Gospel*, as to Times, Places, and Persons, depends on his Sovereign Pleasure, *Psal.* 147. 19, 20. Wherefore although we are to take care and pray much about the *continuance* of the Dispensation of the Gospel in any place, and its *Propagation* in others; yet need we not to be over-solicitous about it. This Work and Care the Holy Ghost hath taken on himself, and will carry it on according to the Counsel of God and his Purposes, concerning the Kingdom of Jesus Christ in this World. And thus far the Dispensation of the Gospel is only a *causa sine qua non*, of the Regeneration of Men, and the granting of it depends solely on the Will of the Spirit of God.

It is *Subjective Darknes* which is of more direct and immediate CON- SECT. 11.
sideration in this Matter, the Nature whereof, with what it doth respect, and the influence of it on the Minds of Men must be declared, before we can rightly apprehend the Work of the Holy Spirit, in its removal by Regeneration.

This is that whereby the Scripture expresseth the *Natural Depravation* and Corruption of the Minds of Men, with respect unto *Spiritual Things*, and the Duty that we owe to God according to the Tenor of the Covenant. And two things must be premised to our consideration of it. As;

1. That I shall not Treat of the Depravation or Corruption of the Mind SECT. 12.
of Man by the Fall, with respect unto *Things Natural, Civil, Political, or Moral*, but merely with regard to things *Spiritual*, Heavenly, and Evangelical. It were easie to evince, not only by Testimonies of the Scripture, but by the Experience of all Mankind built on Reason, and the Observation of Instances innumerable, that the whole Rational Soul of Man since the Fall, and by the entrance of sin, is weakened, impaired, vitiated, in all its Faculties, and all their Operations about their proper and natural Objects. Neither is there any Relief against these Evils, with all those unavoidable Perturbations wherewith it is possessed, and actually disordered in all its Workings, but by some secret and *hidden* Operation of the Spirit of God, such as he continually exerts in the Rule and Government of the World. But it is concerning the Impotency, Defect, Depravation, and Perversity of the Mind, with respect unto *Spiritual Things* alone that we shall treat at present. I say then;

2. That by reason of that *Vice, Corruption, or Depravation* of the SECT. 13.
Minds of all Unregenerate Men, which the Scripture calls *Darknes* and *Blindnes*, they are not able of themselves, by their own Reasons and Understandings how-ever exercised and improved, to discern, receive, understand, or believe savingly Spiritual Things, or the Mystery of the Gospel, when and as they are outwardly revealed unto them, without an effectual powerful Work of the Holy Spirit creating, or by

* Quomodo lux incassum circumfudit oculos cecos vel clausos, ita animalis homo non percipit ea quæ sunt Dei. Bernard. Ser. 1. sup. Cantic.

and accidental; suppose it free from *contracted habits of Vice*, or voluntary Prejudices: yet upon the Proposal of the *Doctrine and Mysteries* of the Gospel, let it be done by the most skilful *Masters of the Assemblies*, with the greatest Evidence and Demonstration of the Truth; it

† Si quis per naturæ vigorem bonum aliquid quod ad salutem pertinet vitæ æternæ cogitare ut expedit aut eligere, sive salutari, id est, Evangelicæ prædicationi consentire posse confirmat, absque illuminatione & inspiratione Spiritus Sancti, qui dat omnibus suavitatem consentiendo & credendo veritati, hæretico fallitur Spiritu. Conc. Araulican. can. 2. can. 7.

Ideo dictum est quia nullus hominum illuminatur nisi illo lumine veritatis quod Deus est; ne quisquam putaret ab eo se illuminari, a quo aliquid audit ut discat, non dico si quenuquam magnum hominem, sed nec si angelum ei contingat habere Doctorem. Adhibetur enim sermo veritatis extrinsecus Vocis Ministerio corporali; verumtamen neque qui plantat est aliquid, neque qui rigat, sed qui incrementum dat Deus. Audit quippe homo dicentem vel hominem vel angelum, sed ut sentiat & cognoscat verum esse quod dicitur, illo lumine mens ejus intus aspergitur, quod æternum manet, quod etiam in tenebris lucet. August. de Peccator. Meritis & Remissione. lib. 1. c. 25.

his Almighty Power inducing a new *Saving Light* into them. * Let it be supposed that the Mind of a Man be no way *hurt* or impaired by any natural defect, such as doth not attend the whole Race of Mankind but is *personal* only to receive, understand, and assent unto them, without the especial † Aid, and Assistance, and Operation of the Holy Spirit. To evince this Truth, we may consider in one Instance, the Description given us in the Scripture of the *Mind* it self, and of its Operations, with respect unto Spiritual Things. This we have Ephes. 4. 17, 18. *Thus I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that you hence-forth walk not as other Gentiles walk in the vanity of their Mind, having the Understanding darkened, being alienated from the Life of God, through the Ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their Heart.* It is of the *Gentiles* that the Apostle speaks, But the *Apostle* speaks of them, on the account of that which is common unto all Men by Nature. For he Treats of their Condition, with respect unto the Faculties of their Minds and Souls, wherein there is, as unto the Life of God or Spiritual Things, no difference *naturally* among Men; and their Operations and Effects are for the substance of them the same.

SECT. 14. Some indeed give such an account of this Text, as if the Apostle had said, *Do we not live after the Heathens, in the wilfulness of those Practices, and in their Idol Worship? That long course of Sin having blinded their Understandings, so that they see not that which by the Light of Nature they are enabled to see, and by that gross Ignorance and obduration of Heart, run into all Impiety, are far removed from that Life which God and Nature require of them.* It is supposed in this Exposition, (1.) That the Apostle hath respect in the first place to the *Practices* of the Gentiles, not to their State and Condition. (2.) That this Practice concerns only their *Idolatry and Idol-Worship*. (3.) That what is here ascribed unto them, came upon them by a *long course of sinning*. (4.) That the *Darkness* mentioned consists in a not discerning of what might be seen by the *Light of Nature*. (5.) That their Alienation from the Life of God, consisted in running into that *Impiety* which was distant or removed from the Life that God and Nature require. But all these *Sentiments* are so far from being contained in the Text, as that they are expressly contrary unto it. For (1.) although the Apostle doth carry on his Description of this State of the *Gentiles*, unto the *vile Practices* that ensued thereon,

on, v. 19. Yet it is their State by Nature, with respect unto the *Life of God*, which is first intended by him. This is apparent from what he prescribes unto Christians in opposition thereunto; namely, *The New Man which after God is created in Righteousness and true Holiness*, v. 24. (2.) The *Vanity* mentioned is *subjective* in their Minds, and so hath no respect to *Idol-Worship* but as it was an Effect thereof. The vanity of their Minds is the Principle whereof this *walking*, be what it will, was the Effect and Consequent. (3.) Here is no mention nor intimation of any *long course of sinning*, much less that it should be the cause of the other things ascribed to the *Gentiles*, whereof indeed it was the Effect. The Description given, is that of *the state of all Men* by Nature, as is plain from Chap. 2. 1, 2, 3. (4.) The *Darkness* here mentioned, is opposed unto being *Light in the Lord*, Chap. 5. 8. which is not meer *Natural Light*, nor can any by that Light alone discern *Spiritual Things*, or the Things that belong to the *Life of God*. (5.) The *Life of God* here is not that Life which *God and Nature require*, but that Life which God reveals in, requires and communicates by the Gospel through Jesus Christ, as all Learned Expositors acknowledg. Wherefore the Apostle treateth here of the State of Men by Nature, with respect unto *Spiritual and Supernatural Things*. And three Heads he reduceth all things in Man unto. (1.) He mentions τὸ νῦν, the *Mind*. (2.) τὴν διάνοιαν, the *Understanding*. And (3.) τὴν καρδίαν, the *Heart*. And all these are one entire Principle of all our *Moral and Spiritual Operations*; and are all affected with the *Darkness and Ignorance* whereof we treat.

1. There is ὁ νῦν, the *Mind*. This is the τὸ ἡγεμονικόν, the *Leading and Ruling Faculty of the Soul*. It is that in us which looketh out after proper Objects, for the Will and Affections to receive and embrace. Hereby we have our first Apprehensions of all things, whence Deductions are made to our Practice. And hereunto is ascribed ματαιότης, *Vanity*; they walk in the *vanity of their Mind*. Things in the Scripture are said to be vain, which are usefess and fruitless. μάταιος, Vain, is from μάτη, to no purpose, Matth. 15. 9. Hence the Apostle calls the Idols of the *Gentiles*, and the Rites used in their Worship, μάταια, *vain things*, Acts 14. 15. So he expresseth the Hebrew, חבלי שוא, *Jonas 2. 8. lying Vanities*; or און, which is as much as ἀναφελές, a thing altogether usefess and unprofitable, according to the Description given of them, 1 Sam. 12. 21. הַתְּהוּ אֲשֶׁר לֹא יַעֲלִי וְלֹא יִפְּלוּ כִּי תְהוּ הֵמָּה, *Vain things which cannot profit, nor deliver, for they are vain*. There is no profit in, nor use of that which is *vain*. As the *Mind* is said to be *vain*, or under the Power of *vanity*, two things are intended. (1.) Its natural Inclination unto things that are *vain*; that is, such as are not a proper nor useful Object unto the Soul and its Affections. It seeks about to lead the Soul to rest and satisfaction, but alwayes unto *vain things*, and that in great variety. Sin, the World, Pleasures, the Satisfaction of the Flesh, with Pride of Life, are the things which it naturally pursues. And in actings of this Nature a *vain Mind* abounds; it multiplies *vain Imaginations*, like the Sand on the Sea-shore. These are called the *Figments* of the Hearts of Men, Gen. 6. 5. which are found to be *only evil continually*. These it feigns and frames, abundantly bringing them forth as the Earth doth Grass, or as a Cloud pours out drops of Water. And

herein (2.) it is *unstable*. For that which is vain is various, inconstant, unfixed, light, as a natural Mind is; so that it is like Hell it self for Confusion and Disorder; or the Whorish Woman described by Solomon, Prov. 7. 11, 12. And this hath befallen it by the loss of that *fixed regularity* which it was created in. There was the same *cogitative* or *imaginative* Faculty in us in the State of Innocency, as there remains under the Power of Sin. But then all the Actings of it were *orderly* and *regular*. The Mind was able to direct them all unto the end for which we were made. God was and would have been the principal Object of them, and all other things in order unto him. But now being turned off from him, the Mind in them engageth in all manner of *Confusion*; and they all end in *vanity* or disappointment. They offer, as it were, their Service unto the Soul, to bring it in Satisfaction. And although they are rejected one after another, as not answering what they pretend unto, yet they constantly arise under the same Notion, and keep the whole Soul under Everlasting Disappointments. And from hence it is that the Mind cannot *assent* unto the common Principles of Religion in a due manner, which yet it cannot deny. This will be further cleared afterwards. Hereon in Conversion unto God, we are said to have *our Minds renewed*, Rom. 12. 2. and to be *renewed in the Spirit of our Minds*, Ephes. 4. 23. By the Mind the Faculty it self is intended, the rational Principle in us of Apprehension, of Thinking, Discoursing, and *Assenting*. This is *renewed* by Grace, or brought into another *Habitude* and *Frame*, by the implantation of a Ruling, Guiding, Spiritual Light in it. The *Spirit of the Mind* is the Inclination and Disposition in the Actings of it. These also must be regulated by Grace.

SECT. 16. 2. There is the *δύναμις*, the *Understanding*. This is the *τὸ διακρίνον*, the *directive, discerning, judging-Faculty* of the Soul, that leads it unto Practice. It guides the Soul in the choice of the Notions which it receives by the Mind. And this is more corrupt than the Mind it self. For the nearer things come to *Practice*, the more prevalent in them is the Power of Sin. This therefore is said to be *darkened*. And being so, it is wholly in vain to pretend a sufficiency in it to *discern Spiritual Things*, without a Supernatural Illumination. Light in the Dispensation of the Gospel *shines*, or casts out some Rayes of it self into this *darkened Understanding* of Men, but that receives it not, John 1. 5.

SECT. 17. 3. There is *καρδιά*, the *Heart*. This in Scripture is *τὸ πνευματικόν*, in the Soul the *practical Principle* of Operation, and so includes the *Will* also. It is the actual compliance of the Will and Affections with the Mind and Understanding, with respect unto the Objects proposed by them. Light is *received* by the Mind, *applied* by the Understanding, *used* by the Heart. Upon this, saith the Apostle, there is *πλάνη*, *blindness*. It is not a meer Ignorance, or Incomprehensiveness of the Notions of Truth that is intended, but a *stubborn Resistance* of Light and Conviction. An obstinate and obdurate *hardness* is upon the Heart, whence it rejects all the Impressions that come upon it from Notions of Truth. And on these Considerations Men themselves before Conversion are said to be *Darkness*, Ephes. 5. 8. There may be Degrees in a *moral Privation*; but when it is expressed in the *abstract*, it is a sign that it

it is at its height, that it is *total* and absolute; and this is spoken with respect unto Spiritual and Saving Light only, or a saving Apprehension of Spiritual Truths. There is not in such Persons so much as *any Disposition* remaining to receive Saving Knowledge, no more than there is a Disposition in *Darkness* it self to receive Light. The Mind indeed remains a *capable Subject* to receive it, but hath no *active Power* nor Disposition in it self towards it. And therefore when God is pleased to give us a *new Ability* to understand and perceive Spiritual Things in a due manner, he is said to give us a *new Faculty*, because of the utter disability of our Minds naturally to receive them, 1 *John* 5. 20. Let vain Men boast whilst they please of the Perfection and Ability of their Rational Faculties, with respect unto Religion, and the Things of God; this is the State of them by Nature, upon his Judgment that must stand for ever.

And by the way, it may not be amiss to divert here a little unto the SECT. 18.
 Consideration of that Exposition which the whole World and all things in it, give unto this Text and Testimony, concerning the Minds of Natural Men being under the Power of *Vanity*, for this is the Spring and inexhaustible Fountain of all that *Vanity* which the World is filled with. There is indeed a *Vanity* which is *penal*, namely, that vexation and disappointment which Men finally meet withal in the pursuit of perishing things, whereof the Wise Man treats at large in his *Ecclesiastes*. But I intend that *sinful Vanity* which the Mind it self produces, and that in all sorts of Persons, Ages, Sexes, and Conditions in the World. This some of the *Heathens* saw, complained of, reprov'd and derided, but yet could never reach to the cause of it, nor free themselves from being under the Power of the same *Vanity*, though in a way peculiar and distinct from the common sort, as might easily be demonstrated. But the thing is apparent, almost all that our Eyes see, or our Ears hear of in the World is altogether *vain*. All that which makes such a Noise, such a Business, such an Appearance and Shew among Men, may be reduced unto two Heads. (1.) The *Vanity* that they bring into the things that are, and that are either good in themselves, and of some use, or at least indifferent. So Men do variously corrupt their Buildings and Habitations, their Trading, their Conversation, their Power, their Wealth, their Relations; they joyn innumerable Vanities with them, which render them loathsome and contemptible, and the meanest condition to be the most suitable to rational Satisfaction. (2.) Men find out, and as it were, create things to be meer Supporters, Countenancers, and Nourishers of *Vanity*. Such in Religion are carnal pompous Ceremonies, like those of the *Church of Rome*, which have no end, but to bring in some kind of Provision for the satisfaction of *vain* Minds; Stage-Plays, Mimicks, with innumerable other things of the same nature, which are nothing but Theatres for *Vanity* to act it self upon. It were endless but to mention the common Effects of *Vanity* in the World; and Men are mightily divided about these things. Those engaged in them, think it strange that others run not out into the *same compass of excess, and riot with themselves, speaking evil of them*, 1 *Pet.* 4. 4. They wonder at the perverse stubborn and forward Humour which befalls some Men, that they delight not in, that they approve not of those Things and Wayes wherein they find so great a suitableness unto their own Minds. Others again are ready

to admire whence it is that the World is *mad* on such vain and foolish things as it is almost wholly given up unto. The Consideration we have insisted on, gives us a satisfactory account of the Grounds and Reasons hereof. The Mind of Man by Nature is wholly *vain*, under the Power of Vanity, and is an endless fruitful Womb of all monstrous Births. The World is now growing towards six thousand years old, and yet is no nearer the bottom of the Springs of its *vain*, or the drawing out of its supplies, than it was the first day that Sin entred into it. New Sins, new Vices, new Vanities break forth continually; and all is from hence, that the Mind of Man by Nature is altogether vain. Nor is there any way or means for putting a stop hereunto in *Persons, Families, Cities, Nations*, but so far as the Minds of Men are cured and *renewed* by the Holy Ghost. The World may alter its shape, and the outward appearances of things, it may change its Scenes, and act its Part in new Habits and Dresses, but it will still be altogether *vain* so long as natural *uncured vanity* is predominant in the Minds of Men, and this will sufficiently secure them from attaining any saving acquaintance with Spiritual Things.

SECT. 19. Again, it is one of the principal Duties incumbent on us to be acquainted with and diligently to watch over the *remainders* of this Vanity in our own Minds. The sinful Distempers of our Natures are not presently cured at once, but the healing and removing of them is carried on by degrees unto the consummation of the course of our obedience in this World. And there are *three Effects* of this natural Vanity of the Mind in its depraved condition to be found among Believers themselves. (1.) An *instability* in Holy Duties, as Meditation, Prayer, and Hearing of the Word; How ready is the Mind to wander in them, and to give entertainment unto vain and fond Imaginations, at least unto Thoughts and Apprehensions of things unsuited to the Duties wherein we are engaged? How difficult is it to keep it up unto an *even fixed stable frame* of acting spiritually in Spiritual Things? How is it ready at every breath to unbend and let down its Intension? All we experience or complain of in this kind, is from the uncured Reliques of this *Vanity*. (2.) This is that which inclines and leads Men towards a conformity with and unto a *vain* World, in its Customs, Habits, and ordinary Converse, which are all vain and foolish. And so prevalent is it herein, and such Arguments hath it possessed it self withal to give it countenance, that in many instances of *vain* it is hard to give a distinction between them and the whole World that lies under the Power of it. Professors it may be will not comply with the World in the things before-mentioned, that have no other use nor end, but meerly to support, act, and nourish *vain*; but from other things which being indifferent in themselves, are yet filled with Vanity in their use; How ready are many for a compliance with the course of the World which lyeth in evil and passeth away? (3.) It acts it self in *fond and foolish Imaginations*, whereby it secretly makes provision for the Flesh and the Lusts thereof, for they all generally lead unto Self-Exaltation and Satisfaction. And these, if not carefully checked, will proceed to such an excess as greatly to taint the whole Soul. And in these things lies the principal Cause and Occasion of all other Sins and Miscarriages. We have therefore

no more important Duty incumbent on us, than mightily to oppose this Radical Distemper. It is so also to attend diligently unto the remedy of it. And this consists (1.) in an holy fixedness of Mind, and an *habitual inclination* unto Things Spiritual, which is communicated unto us by the Holy Ghost, as shall be afterwards declared, *Ephes. 4. 23, 24.* (2.) In the due and constant improvement of that gracious Principle. (1.) By constant *watchfulness* against the Minds acting it self in vain, foolish, unprofitable Imaginations, so far at least that *vain thoughts may not lodge in us.* (2.) By exercising it continually unto Holy Spiritual Meditations, *minding alwayes the things that are above, Col. 3. 3.* (3.) By a constant *conscientious humbling of our Souls*, for all the vain actings of our Minds that we do observe; All which might be usefully enlarged on, but that we must return.

The Minds of Men unregenerate being thus depraved and corrupted, SECT. 20. being thus affected with *Darkness*, and thereby being brought under the Power of *Vanity*, we may yet farther consider what other Effects and Consequents are on the same account ascribed unto it. And the Mind of Man in this State may be considered; either (1.) as to its Dispositions and Inclinations. (2.) As to its Power and Actings, with respect unto Spiritual Supernatural Things.

(1.) As to its Dispositions, it is (from the Darkness described) perverse and depraved, whereby Men are alienated from the Life of God, *Ephes. 4. 18.* for this Alienation of Men from the Divine Life, is from the depravation of their Minds. Hence are they said to be Alienated and Enemies in their Minds by wicked Works, or by their Minds in wicked Works, being fixed on them, and under the Power of them, *Col. 1. 21.* And that we may the better understand what is intended hereby, we may consider both what is this *Life of God*, and how the unregenerate Mind is alienated from it.

1. All Life is from God. The Life which we have in common with SECT. 21. all other living Creatures is from him, *Acts 17. 28. Psal. 104. 30.* And (2.) that peculiar *vital Life* which we have by the union of the *rational Soul* with the Body is from God also, and that in an especial manner, *Gen. 2. 7. Job 10. 12.* But neither of these are any-where called the *Life of God*. But it is an especial *Life unto God* which is intended, and sundry things belong thereunto, or sundry things are applied unto the Description of it. (1.) It is the Life which God requireth of us, that we may please him here, and come to the enjoyment of him hereafter. The Life of Faith and Spiritual Obedience by Jesus Christ, *Rom. 1. 17. Gal. 2. 20. I live by the Faith of the Son of God, Rom. 6. 7.* (2.) It is that Life which God worketh in us, not Naturally by his Power, but Spiritually by his Grace; And that both as to the Principle and all the Vital Acts of it, *Ephes. 2. 1, 5. Phil. 2. 13.* (3.) It is that Life whereby God *liveth in us*, that is, in and by his Spirit through Jesus Christ. *Gal. 2. 20. Christ liveth in me*, and where the Son is there is the Father; whence also this Life is said to be *hid with him in God, Col. 3. 3.* (4.) It is the Life whereby we live to God, *Rom. 6. 7.* whereof God is the Supream and Absolute End, as he is the principal efficient Cause of it. And two things are contained herein; (1.) That we do
all

all things to his Glory. This is the proper End of all the Acts and Actings of this Life, *Rom. 14. 7, 8.* (2.) That we design in and by it, to come unto the eternal enjoyment of him, as our Blessedness and Reward, *Gen. 15. 1.* (5.) It is the Life whereof the Gospel is the Law and Rule, *John 6. 68. Acts 5. 20.* (6.) A Life, all whose Fruits are Holiness and Spiritual Evangelical Obedience, *Rom. 6. 22. Phil. 1. 11.* Lastly; It is a Life that dieth not, that is not obnoxious unto Death, Eternal Life, *John 17. 3.* These things contain the chief concerns of that peculiar Spiritual Heavenly Life, which is called the Life of God.

SECT. 22. 2. The Carnal Mind is *alienated* from this Life; it hath no liking of it, no inclination to it, but carrieth away the whole Soul with an averfation from it. And this Alienation or Averfation appears in two things; (1.) In its unreadiness and unaptness to receive Instructions in and about the Concernments of it. Hence are Men dull and slow of heart to believe, *Luke 24. 25. Νῶδε γὰρ ταῖς ἀνομίαις, Heb. 5. 11, 12. Heavy in Hearings,* and slow in the Apprehension of what they hear. So are all Men towards what they do not like but have an averfation from. This God complains of in the People of old; *My People are foolish, they have not known me; they are sottish Children, and have none understanding; they are wise to do evil, but to do good they have no knowledge, Jer. 4. 22.* (2.) In the Choice and preferring of any other Life before it. The first Choice a Natural Mind makes, is of a Life in Sin and Pleasure, which is but a Death, a Death to God, *1 Tim. 5. 6. James 5. 5.* a Life without the Law, and before it comes, *Rom. 7. 9.* This is the Life which is suited to the Carnal Mind, which it desires, delights in, and which willingly it would never depart from. Again, if by Afflictions or Convictions it be in part or wholly forced to forsake and give up this Life, it will chuse magnifie and extol a *moral* Life, a Life in, by and under the Law, though at the last it will stand it in no more stead than the Life of Sin and Pleasure, which it hath been forced to forgo, *Rom. 9. 32. Chap. 10. 3.* The thoughts of this Spiritual Life, this *Life of God*, it cannot away with; the Notions of it are Uncouth, the Description of it is Unintelligible, and the Practice of it either odious Folly or needless Superstition. This is the Disposition and Inclination of the Mind towards Spiritual Things, as it is corrupt and depraved.

SECT. 23. 2. The *Power* also of the Mind, with respect unto its actings toward Spiritual Things may be considered. And this in short is *none* at all, in the sense which shall be explained immediately, *Rom. 5. 6.* for this is that which we shall prove concerning the Mind of a Natural Man, or of a Man in the State of Nature; how-ever it may be excited and improved, under those Advantages of Education and Parts which it may have received; yet is not able, hath not a power of its own, Spiritually and Savingly, or in a due manner to receive, embrace, and assent unto Spiritual Things, when proposed unto it in the Dispensation and Preaching of the Gospel, unless it be renewed, enlightened, and acted by the Holy Ghost.

This

This the Apostle plainly asserts, 1 Cor. 2. 14. *The Natural Man receiveth not the Things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness unto him; neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.* SECT. 24.

(1.) The Subject spoke of is *ψυχὸς ἄνθρωπος*, *animalis homo*, the natural Man, he who is a natural Man. This Epithete is in the Scripture opposed unto *πνευματικός*, *Spiritual*, 1 Cor. 15. 44. Jud. 15. where *ψυχὸς* are described by *πνεῦμα μὴ ἔχοντες*, such as have not the Spirit of God. The foundation of this distinction, and the distribution of Men into these two sorts thereby, is laid in that of our Apostle 1 Cor. 15. 45. *ἔγενετο ὁ πρῶτος ἄνθρωπος Ἀδὰμ ἐκ ψυχῆ ζῶσης, ὁ ἕτερος Ἀδὰμ ἐκ πνεύματος ζωοποιῶν.* The first Adam was made a living Soul; Hence every Man who hath no more but what is traduced from him, is called *ψυχὸς*; he is a living Soul, as was the first Adam. And the last Adam is made a quickning Spirit; Hence he that is of him, Partaker of his Nature, that derives from him, is *πνευματικός*, a Spiritual Man. The Person therefore here spoken of, or *ψυχὸς*, is one that hath all that is or can be derived from the first Adam, one endowed with a rational Soul, and who hath the use and exercise of all its rational Faculties.

Some who look upon themselves almost so near to Advancements, as SECT. 25. to countenance them in *Magisterial Dictates*, and scornful Reflections upon others; tell us, that by this Natural Man, a Man given up to his Pleasures, and guided by brutish Affections, and no other is intended; one that gives himself up to the government of his Inferiour Faculties. But no rational Man, no one that will attend unto the Dictates of Reason, is at all concerned in this Assertion. But how is this proved? If we are not content with bare affirmations, we must at length be satisfied with railing and lying, and all sorts of Reproaches. But the Apostle in this Chapter distributes all Men living into *πνευματικοὶ* and *ψυχὸς*, *Spiritual* and *Natural*. He who is not a Spiritual Man, be he who and what he will, be he as rational as some either presume themselves to be, or would beg of the World to believe that they are, is a Natural Man. The supposition of a middle state of Men is absolutely destructive of the whole Discourse of the Apostle as to its proper design. Besides, this of *ψυχὸς ἄνθρωπος* is the best and softest term that is given in the Scripture to unregenerate Men, with respect unto the Things of God; and there is no reason why it should be thought only to express the worst sort of them thereby. The Scripture terms not Men peculiarly captivated unto brutish Affections, *ἄνθρωποι ψυχὸς*, natural Men, but rather *ἄλογα ζῶα φυσικά*, 2 Pet. 2. 12. natural brut Beasts. And Austin gives us a better account of this Exposition, *Tractat. 98. in Johan. Animalis homo, i.e. qui secundum hominem sapit, animalis dictus ab anima, carnalis a carne, quia ex anima & carne constat omnis homo, non percipit ea quæ sunt Spiritus Dei, i.e. quid gratia credentibus conferat crux Christi.* And another; *Carnales dicimur, quando totos nos voluptatibus damus; Spirituales, quando Spiritum Sanctum prævium sequimur; id est, cum ipso sapimus instruente, ipso ducimur auctore. Animales reor esse Philosophos qui proprios cogitatus putant esse Sapientiam, de quibus recte dicitur, animalis autem homo non recipit ea quæ sunt Spiritus, stultitia quippe est ei.* Hieronim. *Comment. in Epist. ad Gal. cap. 5.* And another, *ψυχὸς ἐστὶν ὁ τὸ πᾶν τοῖς λογισμοῖς καὶ ψυχῆς διδῶν,*

δοῦναι, καὶ μὴ νομίζων ἀνάγκην πρὸς δεῖσθαι βουθέας, ὅπερ ἐστὶν ἀνοΐας, καὶ ὃ ἐδύνατο αὐτῷ
 ὁ Θεὸς ἵνα μάθῃ, καὶ δέχεται τὸ παρ' αὐτῶν, ἵνα αὐτῇ αὐτὴν ἀρμεῖν νομίζῃ. καὶ ὃ
 οἱ ὀφθαλμοὶ καλοὶ καὶ χρησιμοί; ἀλλ' ἐὰν βέλονται χωρὶς φωτὸς ὁρᾶν, ὅθεν αὐτοὶ
 τὸ καλὸν οἶνουν, ὅθεν ἡ οὐμεν, ἰσχύς, ἀλλὰ καὶ παραγέλασται. οὐτὰ τοῖνον ἡ ψυχὴ
 ἐὰν βούληται χωρὶς πνεύματος βλέπειν, καὶ ἐμπόδον ἐαυτῇ γενέσθαι. Chrysost. in
 1 Cor. 2. 15. *The Natural Man is he who ascribes all things to the Power
 of the Reasonings of the Mind, and doth not think that he stands in need of
 Aid from Above, which is madness. For God hath given the Soul that it
 should learn and receive what he bestows, or what is from him, and not sup-
 pose that it is sufficient of it self, or to it self. Eyes are beautiful and pro-
 fitable; but if they would see without Light, this Beauty and Power will not
 profit but hurt them. And the Mind if it would see (Spiritual Things)
 without the Spirit of God, it doth but ensnare it self. And it is a sottish
 Supposition, that there are a sort of unregenerate Rational Men, who
 are not under the power of corrupt Affections in and about Spiritual
 Things; seeing the carnal Mind is enmity against God. This therefore is the
 Subject of the Apostle's Proposition, namely, a Natural Man, every one
 that is so, that is no more but so, that is, every one who is not a Spiritual
 Man, is not one who hath received the Spirit of Christ, v. 11, 12. one that
 hath the Spirit of a Man enabling him to search and know the things of a
 Man, or to attain Wisdom in things Natural, Civil, or Political.*

SECT. 26. 2ly, There is in the words a supposition of the *proposal* of some things
 unto the Mind of this Natural Man. For the Apostle speaks with re-
 spect unto the Dispensation and Preaching of the Gospel, whereby that
 Proposal is made, v. 4. 7. and these things are τὰ τῷ πνεύματι τῷ Θεῷ,
the things of the Spirit of God; which are variously expressed in this
 Chapter, v. 7. They are called the *Wisdom of God in a Mystery, the hid-
 den Wisdom that God hath ordained*. v. 12. The things that are freely given
 unto us of God. v. 16. The *mind of Christ*. v. 2. *Jesus Christ and him cruci-
 fied*. And sundry other ways to the same purpose. These are in the
 Gospel and belong to the preaching of it, precepts innumerable concern-
 ing *moral Duties* to be observed towards God, our selves, and other Men.
 And all these have a Coincidence with, and a suitableness unto the in-
 bred Light of Nature, because the *principles* of them all are indelibly in-
 grafted therein. These things being in some sense the *things of a man*,
 may be known by the *Spirit of a Man that is in him*, v. 11. Howbeit they
 cannot be observed and practised according to the mind of God, without
 the *Aid and Assistance* of the Holy Ghost. But these are not the things
 peculiarly here intended, but the *Mysteries*, which depend on more so-
 vereign Supernatural Revelation, and that wholly. Things that *Eye
 hath not seen, nor Ear heard, nor have they entred into the heart of man to con-
 ceive*, v. 9. Things of God's Sovereign Counsel, whereof there were no
 impressions in the Mind of Man in his First Creation, see *Ephes.* 3. v. 8.
 9, 10, 11.

SECT. 27. 3ly. That which is affirmed of the Natural Man, with respect unto
 these Spiritual things, is doubly expressed. (1) By ὃ δέχεται, *he receiveth
 them not*. (2) By ὃ δύναιτο γινῶναι, *he cannot know them*. In this double
 Assertion, (1) A *Power* of receiving Spiritual things is denied, *he cannot
 know them*. He cannot receive them. As *Rom.* 7. 8. *The Carnal Mind
 is not Subject to the Law of God, neither indeed can be*; and the reason
 hereof

hereof is subjoynd; because they are *Spiritually discerned*, a thing which such a Person hath no power to effect. (2.) a *Will of rejecting them* is implied. He receiveth them not, for the Reason hereof is, because *they are foolishness unto him*. They are represented unto him under such a notion, as that he will have nothing to do with them. (3.) *Actually*, (and that both because he cannot, and because he will not,) *he receives them not*. The Natural Man neither can, nor will, nor doth *receive the things of the Spirit of God*; is altogether incapable of giving them admission in the sense to be explained.

To clear and free this Assertion from Objections it must be observed:

SECT. 28.

1. That it is not the meer * *Literal Sense of Doctrines* or Propositions of Truth that is intended. For instance *that Jesus Christ was crucified*, mentioned by the Apostle. v. 2. is a Proposition, whose sense and importance any Natural Man may understand, and assent unto its Truth, and so be said to *receive it*. And all the Doctrines of the Gospel may be taught and declared, in *Propositions* and Discourses, the sense and meaning whereof a Natural Man may understand. And in the due investigation of this sense, and judging thereon concerning Truth and Falshood, lies that use of *Reason* in religious things, which some would ignorantly confound with an *Ability* of discerning Spiritual things in themselves, and their own proper Nature. This therefore is granted; but it is denyed that a *Natural Man* can receive the things themselves. There is a wide difference between the Mind's receiving Doctrines. Notionally, and its receiving the things taught in them *really*. The first a Natural Man can do. It is done by all, who by the use of outward means do know the *Doctrine* of the Scripture, in distinction from ignorance, falshood and error. Hence Men Unregenerate are said to *know the way of Righteousness*, 2 *Pet.* 2. 21. that is, Notionally and Doctrinally; for *Really*, saith our Apostle they *cannot*. Hereon they profess that they *know God*, that is the things which they are taught concerning him and his will, *whilst in works they deny him, being abominable and disobedient*, *Tit.* 1. 16. *Rom.* 2. 17, 18. In the latter way they only receive Spiritual things, in whose Minds they are so implanted as to produce their real and proper Effects, *Rom.* 12. 2. *Ephes.* 4. 22, 23, 24. And there are two things required unto the receiving of *Spiritual things* Really and as they are in themselves.

* *Firmissime tene & nullatenus dubites, posse quidem hominem, quem nec ignorantia literarum, neque aliqua prohibet imbecillitas aut adversitas, verba sanctæ legi & Evangelii legere sive ex ore cujusdam predicatoris audire; sed ut quod audit percipiat etiam corde, ut mandata Dei facere velit, nemo potest nisi quem Deus gratia sua prænervet, datâ divinitus bonâ voluntate & virtute*, August. de fide ad Petrum cap. 32.

SECT. 29.

(1.) That we discern, assent unto them, and *receive* them, under an Apprehension of their conformity and agreeableness to the Wisdom, Holiness, and Righteousness of God, 1 *Cor.* 1. 23, 24. The Reason why men receive not Christ crucified as preached in the Gospel, is because they see not a consonancy in it unto the Divine Perfections of the Nature of God. Neither can any receive it until they see in it an Expression of *Divine Power* and Wisdom. This therefore is required unto our receiving the things of the Spirit of God in a due manner; namely, that we spiritually see and discern their answerableness unto the Wisdom, Goodness and Holiness of God, wherein lyes the principal Rest and Satisfaction of them that really believe. This a Natural man cannot do.

2. That we discern their *suitableness* unto the great Ends for which they are proposed as the means of accomplishing. Unless we see this clearly and distinctly we cannot but judge them *Weakness* and *Foolishness*. These Ends being the Glory of God in Christ, with our Deliverance from a state of sin and misery, with a *Translation* into a state of Grace and Glory; unless we are acquainted with these things, and the aptness and fitness, and Power of the things of the Spirit of God to effect them, we cannot receive them as we ought; and this a *Natural Man* cannot do. And from these considerations unto which sundry others of the like nature might be added, it appears how and whence it is, that a *Natural Man* is not capable of the things of the Spirit of God.

SECT. 29. Secondly, it must be observed that there is, or may be, a *two-fold Capacity* or *Ability* of receiving, knowing or understanding Spiritual things in the Mind of a Man.

1. There is a *Natural Power* consisting in the *suitableness*, and proportionableness of the *faculties* of the Soul, to receive Spiritual things in the way that they are proposed unto us. This is supposed in all the Exhortations, Promises, Precepts, and Threatnings of the Gospel. For in vain would they be proposed unto us, had we not *rational Minds* and Understandings to apprehend their sense, use, and importance; and also meet Subjects for the Faith, Grace and Obedience which are required of us. None pretend that men are in their Conversion to God, like *stocks and stones*, or brut beasts that have no understanding. For although the work of our Conversion is called a *turning of stones into children of Abraham*; because of the greatness of the change, and because of our selves we contribute nothing thereunto: yet if we were every way as such, as to the capacity of our natures, it would not become the Wisdom of God to apply the means mentioned for effecting of that Work. God is said indeed herein to give us *an understanding*, 1 Joh. 5. 20. but the *Natural Faculty* of the Understanding is not thereby intended but only the *Renovation* of it by Grace, and the actual exercise of that Grace in apprehending Spiritual things. There are two Adjuncts of the Commands of God; (1.) That they are *equal*, (2.) That they are *Easy*, or not grievous. The former they have from the nature of the things commanded and the fitness of our Minds to receive such Commands, *Ezek. 28. 25*. The latter they have from the dispensation of the Spirit and Grace of Christ, which renders them not only possible unto us, but easy for us.

SECT. 30.

* *Magnum aliquid Pelagiani se scire putant quando dicunt, non fuisset Deus quod sit non posse ab homine fieri: quis hoc nesciat? sed ideo jubet a'iqua que non possumus ut noverimus quid ab illo petere debeamus. Ipsa enim est que orando impetrat, quod lex imperat. August. de Grat. & lib. Arbit. cap. 19.*

Mandando impossibilia non prevaricatores Deus homines fecit sed humiles, ut omne os obmutescat & reus fiat totus mundus Deo; accipientes igitur mandatum, & sentientes defectum clamabimus ad celum & miserabitur nostri Deus. Bernard. Serm. 50. in Cantic.

* Some pretend that whatever is required of us, or prescribed unto us in a way of Duty, that we have a *Power* in and of our selves to perform. If by this *Power* they intend no more, but that our Minds and the other rational Faculties of our Souls, are fit and meet, as to their *natural Capacity*, for and unto such Acts, as wherein those duties do consist, it is freely granted. For God requires nothing of us, but what must be acted in our Minds and Wills, and which they are naturally meet and suited for. But if they intend such an *active Power* and *Ability*, as being excited by the Motives proposed unto us, can
of

of it self answer the Commands of God in a due manner; They deny the Corruption of our Nature by the entrance of sin, and render the Grace of Christ *useless*, as shall be demonstrated.

2. There is, or may be a *Power* in the Mind to discern Spiritual things, whereby it is so able to do it, as that it can immediately *exercise* that Power in the Spiritual discerning of them upon their due Proposal unto it, that is Spiritually; as a man that hath a *Visive Faculty* sound and entire, upon the due proposal of *visible Objects* unto him, can discern and see them. This Power must be Spiritual and Supernatural. For whereas to *receive Spiritual things*, Spiritually, is so to receive them as really to believe them with Faith Divine and Supernatural, to love them with Divine Love, to conform the whole Soul and Affection unto them, *Rom. 6. 17. 2. Cor. 3. 18.* no Natural Man hath power so to do; This is that which is denied in this place by the Apostle: Wherefore between the *Natural Capacity* of the Mind, and the *Act* of Spiritual Discerning, there must be an interposition of an Effectual Work of the Holy Ghost inabling it thereunto, *1 Joh. 5. 20, 1 Cor. 4. 6.*

Of the Assertion thus laid down and explained the Apostle gives a double Reason; the first taken from the *Nature* of the things to be known, with respect unto the Mind and Understanding of a Natural Man, the other from the *Way* or Manner whereby alone Spiritual things may be acceptably discerned. SECT. 31.

1. The first Reason taken from the Nature of the things themselves with respect unto the mind, is, *that they are foolishness*. In themselves they are the *Wisdom of God*, *2. Cor. 2. 7.* Effects of the Wisdom of God, and those which have the impress of the Wisdom of God upon them; and when the Dispensation of them was said to be *foolishness*, the Apostle contends not about it, but tells them how-ever it is the foolishness of God, *1 Cor. 1. 15.* which he doth to cast contempt on all the Wisdom of Men, whereby the Gospel is despised: And they are the *hidden Wisdom* of God; such an effect of Divine Wisdom as no Creature could make any discovery of, *Ephes. 3. 9, 10. Job 28. 20, 21, 22.* And they are the *Wisdom of God in a Mystery*, or full of deep mysterious Wisdom. But to the *Natural Man* they are *foolishness*, not only *although* they are the Wisdom of God, but peculiarly *because* they are so, and as they are so; for the Carnal Mind is *Enmity against God*. Now that is esteemed *foolishness*, which is looked on either as weak and impertinent, or as that which contains or expresseth Means and Ends *disproportionate*, or as that which is *undesirable* in comparison of what may be set up in competition with it, or is on any other consideration not *eligible*, or to be complied with on the *terms whereon* it is proposed. And for one or other, or all of these Reasons, are Spiritual Things, namely, those here intended, wherein the *Wisdom of God* in the Mystery of the Gospel doth consist, *foolishness* unto a Natural Man; which we shall demonstrate by some Instances.

(1.) That they were so unto the *Learned Philosophers of old*, both our SECT. 32. Apostle doth testify, and the known Experience of those first Ages of of the Church makes evident, *1 Cor. 1. 22, 23, 26, 27, 28.* Had Spiritual Things been suited unto the Minds or Reasons of *Natural Men*,

it could not be but that those who had most improved their Minds, and were raised unto the highest exercise of their Reasons, must much more readily have received and embraced the Mysteries of the Gospel, than those who were poor, illiterate, and came many degrees behind them in the Exercise and Improvement thereof. So we see it is as to the Reception of any thing in Nature or Morality, which being of any worth is proposed unto the Minds of Men; they are embraced soonest by them that are wisest and know most. But here things fell out quite otherwise; they were the *Wise*, the *Knowing*, the *Rational*, the *Learned* Men of the World, that made the greatest and longest opposition unto Spiritual Things; and that expressly and avowedly, because they were *foolishness* unto them, and that on all the accounts before-mentioned; and their opposition unto them they managed with Pride, Scorn, and Contempt, as they thought *foolish things* ought to be handled.

SECT. 33. The profound Ignorance and Confidence whence it is that some of late are not ashamed to Preach and Print, That it was the *Learned, Rational, Wise part of Mankind*, as they were esteemed or professed of themselves; the Philosophers, and such as under their Conduct pretended unto a Life according to the Dictates of Reason, who first embraced the Gospel, as being more disposed unto its Reception than others, cannot be sufficiently admired or despised. Had they once considered what is spoken unto this purpose in the New Testament, or knew any thing of the Entrances, Growth, or Progress of Christian Religion in the World, they would themselves be ashamed of this folly. But every day in this Matter, *Prodeunt Oratores novi, stulti adolescentuli*, who talk confidently, whilst they know neither what they say, nor whereof they do affirm.

SECT. 34. 2. The principal Mysteries of the Gospel, or the Spiritual Things intended, are by many looked on and rejected as *foolish*, because *false* and *untrue*. Though indeed they have no reason to think them *false*, but because they suppose them *foolish*; and they fix upon charging them with *falsehood*, to countenance themselves in judging them to be *folly*. Whatever concerns the *Incarnation of the Son of God*, the *Satisfaction* that he made for Sin and Sinners; the *Imputation of his Righteousness* unto them that believe; the *effectual working of his Grace* in the Conversion of the Souls of Men, which with what belongs unto them, comprize the greatest part of the Spiritual Things of the Gospel, are not received by many, because they are *false* as they judge. And that which induceth them so to determine, is because they look on them as foolish and unsuited unto the rational Principles of their Minds.

SECT. 35. 3. Many plainly *scoff* at them, and despise them as the most *contemptible* *Notions* that Mankind can exercise their Reasons about. Such were of old Prophesied concerning, 2 *Pet.* 3. 3, 4. and things at this day are come to that pass. The World *swarms with Scoffers* at Spiritual Things, as those which are unfit for *rational*, noble, generous Spirits to come under a sense or power of, because they are so foolish. But these things were we foretold of, that when they came to pass we should not be troubled

bled or shaken in our Minds. Yea, the *Atheism* of some, is made a means to confirm the *Faith* of others.

It is not much otherwise with some, who yet dare not engage into an open Opposition to the Gospel with them before mentioned. For they profess the Faith of it, and avow a Subjection to the Rules and Laws of it. But the *things* declared in the Gospel may be reduced unto two Heads, as was before observed; (1.) Such as consist in the confirmation, direction, and improvement of the *moral Principles* and Precepts of the Law of Nature. (2.) Such as flow immediately from the Sovereign Will and Wisdom of God, being no way communicated unto us, but by Supernatural Revelation only. Such are all the Effects of the Wisdom and Grace of God, as he was in Christ reconciling the World unto himself; the Offices of Christ, his Administration of them, and Dispensation of the Spirit, with the especial Evangelical *Supernatural* Graces and Duties which are required in us with respect thereunto. The first sort of these things many will greatly praise and highly extol. And they will declare how consonant they are to Reason, and what Expressions suitable unto them may be found in the Ancient *Philosophers*. But it is evident that herein also they fall under a double Inconvenience; For (1.) mostly they *visibly* transgress what they boast of as their Rule, and that above others. For where shall we meet with *any*, at least with *many* of these sort of Men, who in any measure comply with that Modesty, Humility, Meekness, Patience, Self-denial, Abstinence, Temperance, Contempt of the World, Love of Mankind, Charity and Purity, which the Gospel requires under this Head of Duties? Pride, Ambition, Insatiable desires after Earthly Advantages and Promotions, Scoffing, Scorn and Contempt of others, Vanity of *Converse*, Envy, Wrath, Revenge, Railing, are none of the *Moral Duties* required in the Gospel. And (2.) no pretence of an esteem for any *one part* of the Gospel, will shelter Men from the Punishment due to the rejection of the *whole*, by whom any essential part of it is refused. And this is the condition of many. The Things which most properly belong to the Mysteries of the Gospel, or the unsearchable Riches of the Grace of God in Christ Jesus, are *foolishness* unto them; and the Preaching of them is called *Canting* and *Folly*. And some of these, although they go not so far as the *Frier at Rome*, who said, That *St. Paul fell into great excesses in these things*; yet they have dared to accuse his Writings of *Darkness and Obscurity*, for no other reason, so far as I can understand, but because he insists on the Declaration of these Spiritual Mysteries. And it is not easie to express what contempt and reproach is cast by some Preachers on the Preaching of them. But it is not amiss that some have proclaimed their own shame herein, and have left it on Record to the abhorrency of Posterity.

5. The Event of the Dispensation of the Gospel manifesteth, That the Spiritual things of it are foolishness to the most, for as such are they rejected by them: *Esa.* 53. 1, 2, 3. Suppose a Man of good Reputation for Wisdom and Sobriety, should go unto others, and inform them, and that with Earnestness, Evidence of Love to them, and care for them, with all kind of Motives to beget a belief of what he proposeth, that

SECT. 37.

that by such ways as he prescribeth, they may exceedingly *increase their Substance* in this World, until they exceed the wealth of Kings, a thing that the Minds of Men in their Contrivance and Desires are intent upon; if in this case they follow not his Advice, it can be for no other reason, but because they judge the things proposed by him, to be no way suited or expedient unto the end promised, that is to be *foolish things*; And this is the state of things with respect unto the Mysteries of the Gospel. Men are informed in and by the ways of God's Appointment, how great and glorious they are, and what blessed consequents there will be of a Spiritual reception of them. The Beauty and Excellency of Christ, the inestimable Privilege of Divine Adoption, the great and precious Promises made unto them that do believe; the glory of the World to come; the necessity and excellency of Holiness and Gospel-Obedience unto the attaining of Everlasting Blessedness, are Preached unto Men, and pressed on them with Arguments and Motives filled with *Divine Authority and Wisdom*: Yet after all this we see, how few *Eventually* do apply themselves with any industry to receive them, or at least actually do receive them; *for many are called but few are chosen*. And the Reason is, because indeed unto their *darkened* Minds, these things are *Foolishness*, whatsoever they pretend unto the contrary.

SECT. 38. Secondly; As the instance foregoing compriseth the reasons why a Natural Man *will* never receive the things of the Spirit of God, so the Apostle addes a reason why *he cannot*; and that is taken from the manner whereby alone they may be usefully and savingly received, which they cannot attain unto; *Because they are Spiritually discerned*. In this whole Chapter he insists on an Opposition between a Natural and a Spiritual Man, Natural things and Spiritual things, Natural light and knowledg and Spiritual. The *Natural Man* he informs us, will by a *Natural* light discern *Natural* things. The things of a Man knoweth the Spirit of a Man. And the Spiritual Man by a Spiritual light received from Jesus Christ, discerneth *Spiritual* Things. For none knoweth the things of God, but the Spirit of God, and he to whom He will reveal them. This Ability the Apostle denies unto a Natural Man. And this he proves (1) Because it is the *Work of the Spirit of God*, to endow the Minds of Men with that ability, which there were no need of, in case Men had it of themselves by Nature. And (2) (as he shews plentifully elsewhere) The *Light* it self, whereby alone Spiritual things can be Spiritually discerned, is wrought, effected, created in us, by an Almighty Act of the Power of God, 2. Cor. 4. 6.

SECT. 39. From these Things premised it is evident, That there is a two-fold Impotency on the Minds of Man with respect unto Spiritual things; (1.) That which immediately affects the Mind, a *Natural Impotency* whence it *cannot* receive them, for want of Light in it self; (2) That which affects the Mind by the Will and Affections, a *Moral Impotency*, whereby it cannot receive the things of the Spirit of God, because unalterably it *will not*; and that because from the unsuitableness of the Object unto its Will and Affections, and the Mind by them, they are Foolishness unto it.

(1) There

(1) There is in unregenerate Men a * *Natural Impotency*, through the immediate depravation of the faculties of the Mind, or understanding, whereby a Natural Man is absolutely *unable* without an especial Renovation by the Holy Ghost to discern Spiritual things in a saving manner. Neither is this *Impotency*, although absolutely and naturally insuperable, and although it have in it also the nature of a *punishment*, any excuse or Alleviation of the sin of Men

when they receive not Spiritual things, as proposed unto them; for although it be our *miser*y, it is our sin; it is the misery of our *Persons*, and the sin of our *Natures*. As by it there is an inconformity in our Minds to the Mind of God, it is our *sin*; as it is a consequent of the Corruption of our Nature by the fall, it is an *Effect* of sin; and as it exposeth us unto all the ensuing evil of sin and unbelief, it is both the punishment and cause of Sin. And no man can plead his sin or fault, as an excuse of another sin in any kind. This *Impotency* is *Natural*; because it consists in the deprivation of the Light and Power that was Originally in the faculties of our Minds or Understandings, and because it can never be taken away or cured but by an immediate communication of a new *Spiritual power* and Ability unto the Mind it self by the Holy Ghost in its Renovation, so curing the Depravation of the Faculty it self. And this is consistent with what was before declared, the Natural Power of the Mind to receive Spiritual things: For that Power respects the Natural Capacity of the faculties of our Minds; this *Impotency* the Depravation of them with respect unto *Spiritual Things*.

† In nullo gloriandum, quia nihil nostrum est, Cyprian. lib. 3. ad Quirin.

Fide perditā, spe relicta, intelligentia obcecata, voluntate captiva, homo quā in se reparatur non invenit. lib. 1. de Vocat. Gent. cap. 3.

Quicumque tribuit sibi bonum quod facit, etiamsi nihil videtur mali manibus operari, jam cordis innocentiam perdidit, in quo se largitori bonorum prætulit. Hieron. in Prov. cap. 16.

2. There is in the Minds of Unregenerate persons a *Moral Impotency*, SECT. 41. which is reflected on them greatly from the Will and Affections, whence the Mind never *will receive* Spiritual things; that is, it will always and unchangeably reject and refuse them, and that because of various Lusts, Corruptions and Prejudices invincibly fixed in them, causing them to look on them as Foolishness. Hence it will come to pass that no Man shall be judged and perish at the last day meerly on the account of his *Natural Impotency*. Every one to whom the Gospel hath bin preached, and by whom it is refused, shall be convinced of *positive actings* in their Minds, rejecting the Gospel for the Love of Self, Sin, and the World. Thus our Saviour tells the Jews, that *no Man can come unto him unless the Father draw him*, Joh. 6. 44. Such is their *Natural Impotency* that they cannot, nor is it to be cured but by an immediate Divine Instruction or Illumination, as it is written, *they shall be all taught of God*, v. 45. But this is not all, he tells them elsewhere; *you will not come unto me that you may have Life*, Joh. 5. 40. The present thing in question was not the Power or Impotency of their Minds, but the obstinacy of their Wills and Affections which Men shall principally be judged upon at the last day. For this is the Condemnation that light is come into the World, and Men loved darkness rather than light, because *their deeds are evil*. Joh. 3. 19. Hence it follows;

(3.) That the Will and Affections being more corrupted than the Understanding, as is evident from their Opposition unto, and defeating of its manifold Convictions; no Man doth *actually* apply his Mind to the re-

ceiving of the things of the Spirit of God to the utmost of that Ability which he hath. For all unregenerate Men are invincibly impeded therein, by the corrupt stubbornness and perverseness of their *Wills* and *Affections*. There is not in any of them a due improvement of the *capacity* of their Natural Faculties, in the use of means, for the discharge of their Duty towards God herein. And what hath been pleaded, may suffice for the vindication of this *Divine Testimony*, concerning the disability of the Mind of Man in the State of Nature, to understand and receive the Things of the Spirit of God in a spiritual and saving manner, how-ever they are proposed unto it; which those who are otherwise minded may despise whilst they please, but are no way able to answer or evade.

SECT. 42. And hence we may judge of that *Paraphrase* and *Exposition* of this place which One hath given of late; *But such things as these, they that are led only by the Light of Humane Reason, the Learned Philosophers, &c. do absolutely despise, and so hearken not after the Doctrine of the Gospel, for it seems folly to them. Nor can they by any study of their own come to the knowledge of them; for they are only to be had by understanding the Prophecies of the Scripture, and other such Means which depend on Divine Revelation, the Voice from Heaven, Descent of the Holy Ghost, Miracles, &c.* (1.) The *Natural Man* is here allowed to be the *Rational Man*, the *Learned Philosopher*, one walking by the *Light of Humane Reason*, which complies not with their Exception to this Testimony, who would have only such an one, as is sensual and given up unto *brutish Affections* to be intended. But yet neither is there any ground (though some countenance be given to it by *Hierome*) to fix this Interpretation unto that Expression. If the Apostle may be allowed to declare his own Mind, he tells us, That he intends every one of what sort and condition soever, *who hath not received the Spirit of Christ*. (2.) *ὁ δὲ Χριστός*, is paraphrased by, doth absolutely despise; which neither the Word here, nor elsewhere, nor its disposal in the present Connexion will allow of, or give countenance unto. The Apostle in the whole Discourse gives an account why so few received the Gospel, especially of those who seemed most likely so to do, being *Wise and Learned Men*; and the Gospel being no less than the *Wisdom of God*. And the Reason hereof he gives from their *disability to receive the things of God*, and their hatred of them, or opposition to them, neither of which can be cured but by the Spirit of Christ. (3.) The Apostle treats not of what Men could find out by any *study of their own*, but of what they did, and would do, and could do no otherwise, when the Gospel was *proposed*, declared, and preached unto them. They did not, they *could not* receive, give assent unto, or believe the Spiritual Mysteries therein revealed. (4.) This Preaching of the Gospel unto them, was accompanied with, and managed with those Evidences mentioned; namely, the *Testimonies of the Prophecies of Scripture*, Miracles, and the like, in the same way and manner, and unto the same degree as it was towards them by whom it was received and believed. In the outward means of Revelation and its Proposition, there was no difference. (5.) The proper meaning of *ὁ δὲ Χριστός* *receiveth not*, is given us in the ensuing Reason and Explanation of it; *ὁ δὲ Χριστός* *γινώσκει*, *he cannot know them*; that is, unless he be spiritually enabled there-

thereunto by the Holy Ghost. And this is farther confirmed in the Reason subjoyned, because they are spiritually discerned. And to wrest this unto the outward means of Revelation, which is directly designed to express the internal manner of the Mind's reception of things revealed, is to wrest the Scripture at pleasure. How much better doth the Description given by *Chrysostom* of a Natural and Spiritual Man, give Light unto and determine the sense of this place. *Ψυχικός άνθρωπος, ὁ δια σαρκὸς ζῶν, καὶ μὴ πνεύματος φωτισθείς, ὁ δὲ διὰ πνεύματος, ἀλλὰ μόνον τὴν ἐμφυτον καὶ ἀνθρωπίνην σύνεσιν ἔχων, ἐν τῇ ἀπεινότητι τῆς ψυχῆς ἐμβάλλει ὁ δημιουργός. A Natural Man is He who lives in or by the Flesh, and hath not his Mind as yet enlightened by the Spirit; but only hath that inbred Humane Understanding which the Creator hath endued the Minds of all Men withal. And ὁ πνευματικός; ὁ δια πνεύματος ζῶν φωτισθείς, ὁ δὲ διὰ πνεύματος, καὶ μόνον τὴν ἐμφυτον καὶ ἀνθρωπίνην σύνεσιν ἔχων, ἀλλὰ μᾶλλον τὴν χειροθετησάν πνευματικὴν, ἐν τῇ πίστει τῶν ψυχῶν ἐμβάλλει τὸ ἅγιον πνεῦμα. The Spiritual Man is he who liveth by the Spirit, having his Mind enlightened by him; having not only an inbred Humane Understanding, but rather a Spiritual Understanding bestowed on him graciously; which the Holy Ghost endues the Minds of Believers withal. But we proceed.*

Having cleared the Impotency to discern *Spiritual Things Spiritually*, SECT. 43. that is in the Minds of Natural Men by reason of their Spiritual Blindness, or that *Darkness* which is in them; It remains that we consider what is the *Power* and Efficacy of this *Darkness* to keep them in a constant and unconquerable *Aversation* from God and the Gospel. To this purpose some Testimonies of Scripture must be also considered. For notwithstanding all other Notions and Disputes in this matter, for the most part compliant with the Inclinations and Affections of *corrupted* Nature, by *them* must our Judgments be determined, and into them is our Faith to be resolved. I say then, that this *Spiritual Darkness* hath a *Power* over the Minds of Men to *alienate* them from God; that is, this which the Scripture so calleth, is not a meer Privation, with an Impotency in the Faculty ensuing thereon; but a depraved *Habit*, which powerfully, and as unto them in whom it is, unavoidably influenceth their Wills and Affections into an opposition unto Spiritual Things; the Effects whereof the World is visibly filled withal at this Day. And this I shall manifest first in General, and then in Particular Instances. And by the whole it will be made to appear, that not only the *Act* of believing and turning unto God, is the sole Work and Effect of Grace, which the *Pelagians* did not openly deny, and the *Semi-pelagians* did openly grant; but also that all *Power* and *Ability* for it, properly so called, is from Grace also.

(1.) Col. 1. 13. We are said to be delivered, *ἐκ τῆς ἐξουίας τοῦ σκότους*; SECT. 44. from the *Power of Darkness*. The word signifies such a Power as consists in *Authority* or *Rule*, that bears sway; and commands them who are obnoxious unto it. Hence the Sins of Men, especially those of a greater Guilt than ordinary, are called *Works of Darkness*, Ephes. 5. 11. not only such as are usually perpetrated in the dark, but such as the *darkness* also of Mens Minds doth encline them unto and naturally produce. That also which is here called the *Power of Darkness*, is called the *Power*

of Satan, Acts 26. 18. For I acknowledg that it is not only or meerly the *internal Darkneſs*, or blindneſs of the Minds of Men in the State of Nature that is here intended, but the whole *State of Darkneſs*, with what is contributed thereunto by Satan and the World. This the Prophet ſpeaks of, Iſa. 60. 2. *Behold, Darkneſs ſhall cover the Earth, and groſs Darkneſs the People, but the Lord ſhall ariſe upon thee.* Such a Darkneſs it is as nothing can diſpel, but the Light of the Lord ariſing on and in the Souls of Men; But all is reſolved into *internal Darkneſs*. For Satan hath no Power in Men, nor Authority over them, but what he hath by means of this Darkneſs. For by this alone doth that Prince of the Power of the Air work effectually in the Children of Diſobedience, Ephes. 2. 2. Hereby doth he ſeduce, pervert, and corrupt them; nor hath he any way to fortifie and confirm their Minds againſt the Goſpel, but by increaſing this blindneſs or darkneſs in them, 2 Cor. 4. 4.

SECT. 45. An Evidence of the Power and Efficacy of this Darkneſs, we may find in the Devil himſelf. The Apoſtle Peter tells us, That the Angels who ſinned are kept unto Judgment under Chains of Darkneſs, 2 Pet. 2. 4. It is plain that there is an alluſion in the words unto the dealings of Men with ſtubborn and hainous Malefactors. They do not preſently execute them upon their Offences, nor when they are firſt apprehended. They muſt be kept unto a ſolemn day of Tryal and Judgment. But yet to ſecure them that they make no eſcape, they are bound with *Chains* which they cannot deliver themſelves from. Thus God deals with fallen Angels. For although yet they go to and fro in the *Earth*, and walk up and down in it, as alſo in the *Air*, in a ſeeming Liberty and at their pleaſure, yet are they under ſuch *Chains* as ſhall ſecurely hold them unto the great Day of their Judgment and Execution. That they may not eſcape their appointed Doom, they are held in *Chains of Darkneſs*. They are alwayes ſo abſolutely and univerſally under the Power of God, as that they are not capable of the Vanity of a Thought for the ſubducting themſelves from under it. But whence is it that in all their Wiſdom, Experience, and long-continued Proſpect which they have had of their future eternal Miſery, none of them ever have attempted, or ever will, a mitigation of their Punishment or Deliverance from it, by Repentance and Compliance with the Will of God? This is alone from their *own Darkneſs*, in the Chains whereof they are ſo bound; that although they believe their own everlaſting ruine, and tremble at the Vengeance of God therein, yet they cannot but continue in their courſe of Miſchief, Diſobedience and Rebellion. And although Natural Men are not under the ſame obdurateness with them, as having a way of Eſcape and Deliverance provided for them, and propoſed unto them which they have not; yet this *Darkneſs* is no leſs effectual to bind them in a State of Sin, without the powerful Illumination of the Holy Ghoſt, than it is in the Devils themſelves. And this may be farther manifested by the Conſideration of the Inſtances wherein it puts forth its Efficacy in them.

SECT. 46. Firſt; It fills the Mind with *enmity* againſt God, and all the Things of God; Col. 1. 21. *You were Enemies in your Minds*; Rom. 8. 7. *The Carnal Mind is enmity againſt God, it is not ſubject unto the Law of God, neither indeed can it be.* And the Carnal Mind there intended, is that which

which is in every Man who hath not received, who is not made Partaker of the Spirit of God, in a peculiar saving manner, as is at large declared in the whole Discourse of the Apostle, v. 5, 6, 9, 10, 11. So that the Pretence is vain and directly contradictory to the Apostle, that it is only one sort of *fleshly sensual* unregenerate Men whom he intends. This confidence, not only in perverting, but openly opposing of the Scripture, is but of a late date, and that which few of the Ancient Enemies of the Grace of God did rise up unto. Now God in himself is infinitely Good and Desirable. *How great is his Goodness! How great is his Beauty!* Zech. 9. 17. There is nothing in him but what is suited to draw out, to answer and fill the Affections of the Soul. Unto them that know him, he is the only Delight, Rest, and Satisfaction. Whence then doth it come to pass that the Minds of Men should be filled and possessed with *enmity* against him? Enmity against, and *hatred* of Him who is absolute and infinite *Goodness*, seem incompatible unto our Humane Affections. But they arise from this Darkness, which is the Corruption and Depravation of our Nature; by the Ways that shall be declared.

It is pretended and pleaded by some in these dayes, that upon an Apprehension of the Goodness of the Nature of God, as manifested in the Works and Light of Nature, Men may, without any other Advantages, love him above all and be accepted with him. But as this would render Christ and the Gospel, as *objectively* proposed, if not useless, yet not indispensibly necessary, so I desire to know how this *enmity against God*, which the Minds of all Natural Men are filled withal, if we may believe the Apostle, comes to be removed and taken away, so as that they should *love him above all*, seeing these things are absolute extreams and utterly irreconcilable? This must be either by the Power of the Mind it self upon the proposal of God's Goodness unto it, or by the effectual Operation in it and upon it of the Spirit of God. Any other way is not pretended unto; and the latter is that which we contend for. And as to the former, the Apostle supposeth the *Goodness of God*, and the proposal of this Goodness of God unto the Minds of Men; not only as revealed in the Works of Nature, but also in the Law and Gospel, and yet affirms that the *Carnal Mind* which is in every Man, is *enmity* against him. And in Enmity there is neither Disposition nor Inclination to Love. In such Persons there can be no more true *Love* of God, than is consistent with *enmity* to him and against him. SECT. 47.

All Discourses therefore about the Acceptance they shall find with God, who love him above all for his *Goodness*, without any farther Communications of Christ or the Holy Spirit unto them, are vain and empty, seeing there never was nor ever will be any one dram of such Love unto God in the World. For what-ever Men may fancy concerning the *Love of God*, where this Enmity arising from Darkness is unremoved by the Spirit of Grace and Love, it is but a *self pleasing* with those false Notions of God which this Darkness suggests unto them. With these they either please themselves or are terrified, as they represent Things to their Corrupt Reason and Phancies. Men in this State destitute of Divine Revelation, did of old *seek after God*, Acts 17. 27. SECT. 48.

as Men groping in the Dark. And although they did in some measure *find him* and *know him*, so far as that from the Things that were made they came to be acquainted with his *eternal Power and God-head*, Rom. i. 20, 21. yet he was still absolutely unto them the *unknown God*, Acts 17. 23. whom they ignorantly worshipped; that is, they directed some Worship to him in the Dedication of their Altars, but knew him not; *οὐ ἀγνοοῦντες ἐυσεβεῖτε*. And that they entertained all of them *false Notions* of God, is from hence evident that none of them, either by vertue of their knowledge of him did free themselves from gross *Idolatry*, which is the greatest *Enmity* unto him; or did not countenance themselves in many *Impieties* or *Sins*, from those *Notions* they had received of God and his *Goodness*, Rom. i. 20, 21. The issue of their *Disquisitions* after the Nature of God was, that they *glorified him not*, but became *vain in their Imaginations*, and their *foolish Hearts were darkned*. Upon the common Principles of the first Being and the chiefest Good, their Fancy or *Imaginations* raised such *Notions* of God, as pleased and delighted them, and drew out their *Affections*; which was not indeed unto God and his *Goodness*, but unto the Effect and Product of their own *Imaginations*. And hence it was that those that had the most raised Apprehensions concerning the *Nature, Being, and Goodness* of God, with the highest Expressions of a constant Admiration of him and Love unto him, when by any means the *true God indeed* was declared unto them as he hath revealed himself, and as he will be known, these great admirers and lovers of *Divine Goodness* were constantly the greatest Opposers of him, and Enemies unto him. And an uncontrollable Evidence this is, That the *Love of Divine Goodness*, which some do fancy, in Persons destitute of *Supernatural Revelation* and other Aids of Grace, was in the best of them placed on the Products of their own *Imaginations*, and not on God himself.

SECT. 49. But omitting them, we may consider the Effects of this *Darkness* working by *Enmity* in the Minds of them who have the Word preached unto them. Even in these until effectually prevailed on by *victorious Grace*, either clossly or openly it exerts it self. And how-ever they may be *doctrinally* instructed in true *Notions* concerning God and his Attributes, yet in the *Application* of them unto themselves, or in the consideration of their own concernment in them, they *always err in their hearts*. All the *Practical Notions* they have of God, tend to alienate their Hearts from him; and that either by contempt, or by an undue dread and terror. For some apprehend him *slow* and regardless of what they do, at least one that is not so severely displeased with them, as that it should be necessary for them to seek a change of their State and Condition. They think that God is such an one as themselves, *Psal. 50. 21.* at least that he doth approve them and will accept them, although they should continue in their sins. Now this is a Fruit of the *highest Enmity* against God, though palliated with the pretence of the most raised *Notions* and Apprehensions of his *Goodness*. For as it is an hainous Crime to imagine an *outward shape* of the *Divine Nature*, and that God is like to Men or Beasts, the height of the Sin of the most gross *Idolaters*, Rom. i. 23. *Psal. 106. 20.* so it is a Sin of an higher Provocation, to conceive him so far like unto *bestial Men*, as to approve and accept of them in their Sin.

Sins. Yet this false Notion of God, even when his Nature and Will are objectively revealed in the Word, this *Darkness* doth and will maintain in the Minds of Men, whereby they are made obstinate in their sin to the uttermost. And where this fails, it will on the other hand represent God all Fire and Fury, inexorable and intractable. See *Micah* 6. 6. *Isa.* 33. 14. *Gen.* 4. 13.

Moreover this *Darkness* fills the Mind with Enmity against all the Ways of God. For as the Carnal Mind is Enmity against God, so it is not *subject unto his Law, neither can so be.* So the Apostle informs us that Men are *alienated from the Life of God,* or dislike the whole way and work of living unto him, by reason of the ignorance and blindness that is in them, *Ephes.* 4. 18. and it esteems the whole Rule and Measure of it to be foolishness, *1 Cor.* 1. 18, 20. But I must not too long insist on Particulars, although in these dayes wherein some are so apt to boast in proud swelling words of Vanity, concerning the *Power and Sufficiency of the Mind,* even with respect unto Religion and Spiritual Things, it cannot be unseasonable to declare what is the Judgment of the Holy Ghost, plainly expressed in the Scriptures in this Matter; and one Testimony thereof will be of more weight with the *Disciples of Jesus Christ,* than a thousand Declamations to the contrary. SECT. 50.

Secondly, This *Darkness* fills the Mind with *Wills* or perverse Lusts that are directly contrary to the Will of God, *Ephes.* 2. 3. There are *Σειμήματα διαβολῆς*, the *Wills* or Lusts of the Mind; that is, the *habitual Inclinations* of the Mind unto sensual Objects. It *minds earthly things,* *Phil.* 3. 19. And hence the Mind it self is said to be fleshly, *Col.* 2. 18. As unto Spiritual Things, it is born of the Flesh, and is Flesh. It likes, favours, approves of nothing but what is *carnal, sensual, and vain.* Nothing is suited unto it, but what is either curious, or needless, or superstitious, or sensual and earthly. And therefore are Men said to *walk in the Vanity of their Minds.* In the whole course of their lives they are influenced by a predominant Principle of Vanity. And in this state the Thoughts and *Imaginations* of the Mind are *always* set on work to provide sensual Objects for this vain and fleshly frame; Hence are they said to *be evil continually,* *Gen.* 6. 5. This is the course of a darkened Mind. Its vain frame or inclination, the *fleshly Will* of it stirs up vain Thoughts and Imaginations; it *minds the things of the flesh,* *Rom.* 8. 5. These thoughts fix on, and represent unto the Mind Objects suited unto the satisfaction of its Vanity and Lust. With these the Mind committeth folly and lewdness, and the *fleshly habit* thereof is thereby heightened and confirmed; and this multiplies Imaginations of its own kind, whereby Men *inflame themselves,* *Isa.* 57. 5. waxing worse and worse. And the particular bent of these Imaginations, doth answer the Predominancy of any especial *Lust* in the heart or mind. SECT. 51.

It will be Objected, That although these things are so in many, especially in Persons that are become *profligate in sin,* yet proceeding from their *Wills* and corrupt *sensual Affections,* they argue not an *Impotency* in the Mind to discern and receive Spiritual Things; but notwithstanding these Enormities of some, the Faculty of the Mind is still endued with a SECT. 52.
Power

Power of discerning, judging and believing Spiritual Things in a due manner.

Answ. 1. We do not now discourse concerning the *weakness and disability* of the Mind in and about these things, which is as it were a *natural Impotency* like blindness in the Eyes, which hath been both explained and confirmed before. But it is a *moral Disability*, and that as unto all the Powers of Nature invincible, as unto the right receiving of Spiritual Things, which ensues on that corrupt Depravation of the Mind in the state of Nature that the Scripture calls *darkness* or *blindness*, which we intend.

(2.) Our present Testimonies have sufficiently confirmed, that all the Instances mentioned, do proceed from the *Depravation of the Mind*. And whereas this is common unto, and equal in all unregenerate Men, if it produce not in all Effects to the *same degree* of Enormity, it is from some Beams of Light, and secret Convictions from the Holy Spirit, as we shall afterwards declare.

(3.) Our only aim is to prove the *indispensible necessity* of a saving Work of Illumination on the Mind, to enable it to receive Spiritual Things spiritually, which appears sufficiently from the *Efficacy* of this *Darkness*, whence a Man hath no ability to disintangle or save himself. For also;

SECT. 53. Thirdly; It fills the Mind with *Prejudices* against Spiritual Things, as proposed unto them in the Gospel. And from these *Prejudices* it hath neither Light nor Power to extricate it self. No small part of its Depravation consists in its readiness to embrace them, and pertinacious adherence unto them. Some few of these *Prejudices* may be instanced.

(1.) The Mind from the *Darkness* that is in it, apprehends that Spiritual Things, the Things of the Gospel as they are proposed, have an *utter inconsistency with true Contentment and Satisfaction*. These are the Things which all Men by various wayes do seek after. This is the *Scent and Chase* which they so eagerly pursue in different Tracts, and Paths innumerable. Something they would attain or arrive unto, which should *satisfie* their Minds and fill their Desires. And this commonly before they have had any great Consideration of the Proposals of the Gospel, they suppose themselves in the *way at least* unto, by those little Tastes of Satisfaction unto their Lusts, which they have obtained in the wayes of the World. And these hopeful Beginnings they will not forgo. Isa. 57. 10. *Thou art wearied in the greatness of thy way; yet saidst thou not, There is no hope; Thou hast found the Life of thine Hand, therefore thou wast not grieved.* They are ready oft-times to faint in the pursuit of their Lusts, because of the Disappointments which they find in them, or the Evils that attend them. For which way soever they turn themselves in their Course, they cannot but see or shrewdly suspect that the end of them is, or will be *Vanity* and Vexation of Spirit. But yet they *give not over* the pursuit wherein they are engaged; they say not, *There is no hope*. And the Reason hereof is, because they *find the Life of their Hand*. Something or other comes in daily, either from the Work that they do, or the Company they keep, or the Expectation they have, which preserves their *Hope* alive, and makes them unwilling to forgo their present Condition. They find it to be none of the best, but do not

not think there can be a better. And therefore their only design is to *improve* or to thrive in it. If they might obtain more Mirth, more Wealth, more Strength and Health, more Assurance of their Lives; more Power, more Honour, more suitable Objects unto their sensual Desires, *then* they suppose it would be better than it is; but as for any thing which differeth from these in the *whole kind*, they can entertain no respect for it. In this State and Condition, *Spiritual Things*, the spiritual mysterious things of the Gospel are proposed unto them. At first view they judg that these Things will not assist them in the pursuit or improvement of their Carnal Satisfactions. And so far they are in the *Right*, they judg not amiss. The things of the Gospel will give neither Countenance nor Help to the Lusts of Men. Nay, it is no hard matter for them to come to a discovery, that the Gospel being admitted in the Power of it, will *crucifie* and mortifie those corrupt Affections; which hitherto they have been given up to the pursuit of. For this it plainly declares, *Col. 3. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5. Tit. 2. 11, 12.*

There are but two things wherein Men seeking after Contentment and SECT. 54. Satisfaction are concerned. First, The *Objects* of their Lusts or Desires, and then those *Lusts* and Desires themselves. The former may be considered in their *own Nature*, so they are indifferent, or as they are capable of being *abused* to corrupt and sinful ends. In the *first way*, as the Gospel *condemns* them not, so it adds nothing to them unto those by whom it is received. It gives not Men more Riches, Wealth, or Honour, than they had before in the World. It promises no such thing unto them that do receive it, but rather the contrary. The latter consideration of them, it *condemns* and takes away. And for the *desires* of Men themselves, the avowed Work of the Gospel is to *mortifie* them. And hereby the naturally corrupt *Relation* which is between these Desires and their Objects, is broken and dissolved. The Gospel leaves Men unless upon *extraordinary occasions*, their Names, their Reputations, their Wealth, their Honours, if lawfully obtained and possessed. But the *League* that is between the Mind and these things in all Natural Men must be broken. They must no more be looked on as the *Chiefest Good*, or in the place thereof, nor as the Matter of Satisfaction, but must give place to spiritual, unseen, eternal Things. This secretly *alienates the Carnal Mind*, and a Prejudice is raised against it, as that which would deprive the Soul of all its present Satisfaction, and offers nothing in the room of them that is suitable to any of its Desires or Affections. For by reason of the *Darkness* that it is under the Power of, it can neither *discern* the Excellency of the Spiritual and Heavenly Things which are proposed unto it, nor have any Affections whereunto they are proper and suited, so that the Soul should go forth after them. Hereby this *Prejudice* becomes invincible in their Souls. They neither do, nor can, nor will admit of those things which are utterly inconsistent with all things wherein they hope or look for Satisfaction. And Men do but please themselves with Dreams and Fancies, who talk of such a *reasonableness* and excellency in Gospel-Truths, as that the *Mind of a Natural Man* will discern such a suitableness in them unto it self, so as thereon to receive and embrace them. Nor do any for the most part give a greater Evidence of the Prevalency of the Darkness and Enmity that

is in Carnal Minds against the Spiritual Things of the Gospel, as to their Life and Power, than those who most *pride* and please themselves in such Discourses.

SECT. 55. 2dly; The Mind by this Darkneſs is filled with *Prejudices* againſt the Myſtery of the Gospel in a peculiar manner. The *hidden Spiritual Wiſdom of God* in it as Natural Men cannot receive, ſo they do deſpiſe it; and all the parts of its Declaration they look upon as empty and unintelligible Notions. And this is that *Prejudice* whereby this Darkneſs prevails in the Minds of Men otherwiſe knowing and learned; it hath done ſo in all Ages, and in none more effectually than in that which is preſent. But there is a Sacred, Myſterious *Spiritual Wiſdom in the Goſpel* and the Doctrines of it. This is *Fanatical, Chimerical, and Fooliſh* to the wiſeſt in the World whiſt they are under the Power of this Darkneſs. To demonſtrate the Truth hereof, is the Deſign of the Apoſtle *Paul*, 1 *Cor.* 1, & 2. For he directly affirms that the Doctrines of the Goſpel is the *Wiſdom of God in a Myſtery*; that this Wiſdom cannot be diſcerned nor underſtood by the Wiſe and Learned Men of the World who have not received the Spirit of Chriſt; and therefore that the things of it are weakneſs and fooliſhneſs unto them. And that which is fooliſh is to be deſpiſed; yea, Folly is the only object of Contempt. And hence we ſee that ſome with the greateſt Pride, Scorn and Contempt imaginable, do deſpiſe the *Purity, Simplicity*, and whole Myſtery of the Goſpel, who yet profeſs they believe it. But to clear the whole Nature of this *Prejudice*, ſome few Things may be diſtinctly obſerved.

SECT. 56. (1.) There are two ſorts of Things declared in the Goſpel. Firſt, Such as are *absolutely its own*, that are proper and peculiar unto it; Such as have no footſteps in the *Law* or in the *Light of Nature*, but are of a pure Revelation peculiar to the Goſpel. Of this Nature are all Things concerning the Love and Will of God in Chriſt Jeſus. The *Myſtery* of his Incarnation, of his *Offices* and whole Mediation, of the Diſpenſation of the Spirit, and our Participation thereof, and our Union with Chriſt thereby; our Adoption, Juſtification and Effectual Sanctification thence proceeding: in brief, every thing that belongs unto the Purchase and Application of Saving-Grace is of this ſort. Theſe things are purely and properly *Evangelical*, peculiar to the Goſpel alone. Hence the Apoſtle *Paul*, unto whom the Diſpenſation of it was committed, puts that eminency upon them, that in compariſon he reſolved to inſiſt on nothing elſe in his Preaching, 1 *Cor.* 2. 2. And to that purpoſe doth he deſcribe his Miniſtry, *Ephes.* 3. 7, 8, 9, 10, 11.

SECT. 57. (2.) There are ſuch Things declared and enjoyed in the Goſpel, as have their Foundation in the *Law and Light of Nature*. Such are all the *Moral Duties* which are taught therein. And two things may be obſerved concerning them; (1.) That they are in ſome meaſure known unto Men *aliunde* from other Principles. The inbred concreated Light of Nature doth, though obſcurely, teach and confirm them. So the Apoſtle ſpeaking of Mankind in general, ſaith, τὸ γνωστὸν τῷ θεῷ φανερεῖ ἐν ἑαυτοῖς, Rom. 1. 19. *That which may be known of God, is manifested in themſelves.* The Eſſential Properties of God rendring our Moral Duty

Duty to him necessary, are known by the Light of Nature. And by the same Light are Men able to make a judgment of their Actions, whether they be Good or Evil, *Rom. 2. 14, 15.* And this is all the Light which some boast of, as they will one day find to their disappointment.

(2.) There is on all Men an *obligation unto Obedience* answerable to their Light concerning these things. The same Law and Light which discovereth these things, doth also enjoin their Observance. Thus is it with all Men antecedently unto the Preaching of the Gospel unto them.

In this Estate the Gospel *superadds* two things unto the Minds of Men.

(1.) It directs us unto a right performance of these things, from a right Principle, by a right Rule, and to a right End and Purpose, so that they and we in them may obtain acceptance with God. Hereby it gives them a new *Nature*, and turns *Moral Duties* into *Evangelical Obedience*. (2.) By a communication of that Spirit which is annexed unto its Dispensation, it supplies us with strength for their Performance, in the manner it prescribes.

Hence it follows that this is the Method of the Gospel. First, It pro-
S E C T. 58.
pofeth and declareth things which are *properly* and peculiarly its own. So the Apostle sets down the constant Entrance of his Preaching, *1 Cor. 15. 3.* It reveals its *own Mysteries* to lay them as the Foundation of Faith and Obedience. It inlayes them in the Mind, and thereby conforms the whole Soul unto them; See *Rom. 6. 17. Gal. 4. 19. Tit. 2. 11, 12. 1 Cor. 3. 11. 2 Cor. 3. 18.* This Foundation being laid, without which it hath as it were nothing to do with the Souls of Men, nor will proceed unto any other thing, with them by whom this its first Work is refused,* it then *grafts all Duties* of Moral Obedience on this stock of Faith in Christ Jesus. This is the Method of the Gospel, which the Apostle Paul observeth in all his Epistles. First, He declares the *Mysteries of Faith* that are peculiar to the Gospel, and then descends unto those *Moral Duties* which are regulated thereby.

But the *Prejudice* we mentioned inverts the *Order* of these things. Those who are under the Power of it, when on various accounts they give admittance unto the Gospel in general, yet they fix their Minds *firstly and principally* on the things which have their Foundation in the *Law and Light* of Nature. These they know and have some acquaintance with in themselves, and therefore cry them up, although not in their proper place, nor to their *proper* end. These they make the *foundation* according to the place which they held in the *Law of Nature* and Covenant of Works, whereas the Gospel allows them to be only *necessary Superstructions* on the Foundation. But resolving to give unto Moral Duties the Preheminence in their Minds, they consider afterwards the peculiar Doctrines of the Gospel with one or other of these Effects: For (1.) some in a manner *wholly despise them*, reproaching those by whom they are singularly professed. What is contained in them, is of no importance in their Judgment, compared with the *more necessary Duties of Morality* which they pretend to embrace; and to acquit themselves of the trouble of a search into them, reject them as unintelligible or unnecessary. Or (2.) they will by forced Interpretations, enervating the Spirit, and perverting the Mystery of them, *square* and fit them to their own low and Carnal Apprehensions. They would reduce the Gospel and all the Mysteries of

it, to their *own Light* as some, to Reason as others, to *Philosophy* as the rest; And let them who comply not with their weak and carnal Notions of things, expect all the *contemptuous Reproaches* which the proud pretenders unto *Science and Wisdom* of old, cast upon the Apostles and first Preachers of the Gospel. Hereby advancing *Morality* above the *Mystery* and Grace of the Gospel, they at once reject the Gospel, and destroy *Morality* also; for taking it off from its *proper Foundation*, it falls into the Dirt, whereof the Conversation of the Men of this Perswasion is no small Evidence.

SECT. 59. From this Prejudice it is, that the *Spiritual Things of the Gospel* are by many despised and contemned. So God spake of *Ephraim*, Hos. 8. 12. *I have written to him the great things of the Law, but they were counted as a strange thing.* The things intended were רבי תורה, the great, manifold, various things of the Law. That which the Law was then unto that People, that is the Gospel now unto us. The *Torah* was the intire Means of God's communicating his Mind and Will unto them, as his whole Counsel is revealed unto us by the Gospel. These things he wrote unto them, or made them in themselves and their Revelation plain and perspicuous. But when all was done they were esteemed by them כמזר, as is also the Gospel, a thing forreign and alien unto the Minds of Men, which they intend not to concern themselves in. They will heed the things that are cognate unto the Principles of their Nature, things morally Good or Evil; but for the *hidden Wisdom of God* in the Mystery of the Gospel, it is esteemed by them as a *strange thing*. And innumerable other *Prejudices* of the same Nature doth this Darkness fill the Minds of Men withal, whereby they are powerfully, and as unto any Light or Strength of their own, invincibly kept off from receiving of *Spiritual Things in a spiritual manner*.

SECT. 60. Again, the Power and Efficacy of this Darkness in and upon the Souls of Unregenerate Men, will be farther evidenced by the Consideration of its especial Subject, or the Nature and Use of that Faculty which is affected with it. This is the Mind or Understanding. Light and Knowledge, are intellectual Vertues or Perfections of the Mind; and that in every kind what-ever, whether in things Natural, Moral or Spiritual. The Darkness whereof we treat, is the Privation of Spiritual Light, or the want of it. And therefore are they opposed unto one another; *You were Darkness, but are Light in the Lord*, Ephes. 5. 8. It is therefore the *Mind* or Understanding, which is affected with this Darkness, which is vitiated and depraved by it.

Now the Mind may be considered two ways; (1.) As it is *Theoretical* or Contemplative, discerning and judging of things proposed unto it. So it is its office to find out, consider, discern and apprehend the truth of Things. In the Case before us, it is the duty of the Mind to apprehend, understand and receive the Truths of the Gospel as they are proposed unto it, in the manner of, and unto the end of their proposal. This, as we have manifested, by reason of its Depravation it neither doth nor is able to do, *John 1. 5. 2 Cor. 2. 14.* (2.) It may be considered as it is *practical*, as to the Power it hath to direct the whole Soul, and determine the Will unto actual Operation according to its Light. I shall not enquire

enquire at present whether the Will as to the *specification* of its Acts, do necessarily follow the determination of the Mind or practical Understanding: I aim at no more; but that it is the *directive Faculty* of the Soul as unto all Moral and Spiritual Operations. Hence it follows;

(1.) That nothing in the Soul, not the Will and Affections, can will, SECT. 61. desire, or cleave unto any good, but what is presented unto them by the *Mind*, and as it is presented. That Good what-ever it be which the *Mind* cannot discover, the Will cannot chuse, nor the Affections cleave unto. All their actings about and concerning them, are not such as answer their Duty. This our Saviour directs us to the consideration of, Mat. 6. 22, 23. *The Light of the Body is the Eye; if therefore thine Eye be single, the whole Body shall be full of Light. But if thine Eye be evil, the whole Body shall be full of Darknes; if therefore the Light that is in thee be Darknes, how great is that Darknes?* As the Eye is naturally the Light of the Body, or the means thereof, so is the Mind unto the Soul. And if Darknes be in the Eye, not only the Eye but the whole Body is in Darknes, because in the Eye alone is the Light of the whole; so if the *Mind* be under Darknes, the whole Soul is so also, because it hath no Light but by the Mind. And hence both is *Illumination* sometimes taken for the whole Work of Conversion unto God, and the Spiritual Actings of the Mind by the Renovation of the Holy Ghost, are constantly proposed, as those which precede any gracious Actings in the Will, Heart and Life; as we shall shew afterwards.

(2.) As the Soul can no way by any other of its Faculties receive, embrace or adhere unto that *Good* in a saving manner, which the Mind doth not savingly apprehend; so where the Mind is *practically* deceived, or any way captivated under the Power of Prejudices, the Will and the Affections, can no way free themselves from entertaining that *evil* which the Mind hath perversly assented unto. Thus where the Mind is *reprobate* or void of a sound Judgment; so as to call Good Evil, and Evil Good; the Heart, Affections, and Conversation will be conformable thereunto, Rom. 1. 28, 29. And in the Scripture, the *deceit* of the Mind is commonly laid down as the Principle of all Sin what-ever, 1 Tim. 2. 14. Heb. 3. 12, 13. 2 Cor. 11. 3.

And this is a brief Delineation of the state of the Mind of Man whilst SECT. 62. unregenerate, with respect unto Spiritual Things. And from what hath been spoken, we do conclude that the *Mind* in the state of Nature is so *depraved*, vitiated and corrupted, that it is not able upon the proposal of Spiritual Things unto it in the Dispensation and Preaching of the Gospel, to understand, receive and embrace them in a spiritual and saving manner, so as to have the *sanctifying Power* of them thereby brought into and fixed in the Soul, without an internal, especial, immediate, supernatural, effectual enlightning Act of the Holy Ghost; which what it is, and wherein it doth consist, shall be declared.



Life and Death, Natural and Spiritual, Compared.

CHAP. IV.

(1.) *Of Death in Sin. All Unregenerate Men Spiritually Dead.* (2.) *Spiritual Death two-fold. Moral.* (3.) *Metaphorical.* (4.) *Life Natural, what it is, and wherein it consists.* (5.) *Death Natural, with its necessary Consequents.* (6, 7, 8.) *The Supernatural Life of Adam in Innocency, in its Principle, Acts, and Power.* (9, 10.) *Differences between it and our Spiritual Life in Christ.* (11, 12.) *Death Spiritual a Privation of the Life we had in Adam; a Negation of the Life of Christ.* (13.) *Privation of a Principle of all Life to God. Spiritual Impotency therein.* (14.) *Differences between Death Natural and Spiritual.* (15, 16, 17.) *The Use of Precepts, Promises, and Threatnings.* (18, 19, 20, 21.) *No Man perisheth merely for want of Power.* (22, 23, 24.) *No Vital Acts in an estate of Death; the Way of the Communication of Spiritual Life.* (25, 26, 27, 28.) *Of what Nature are the best Works of Persons Unregenerate.* (29.) *No Disposition unto Spiritual Life under the Power of Spiritual Death.*

SECT. I.

ANother Description that the Scripture gives of *Unregenerate Men* as to their State and Condition is, That they are *Spiritually Dead*. And hence in like manner it follows, that there is a necessity of an *internal, powerful, effectual Work of the Holy Ghost on the Souls of Men, to deliver them out of this State and Condition by Regeneration*. And this principally respects their Wills and Affections, as the Darkeness and Blindness before described doth their Minds and Understandings. There is a *Spiritual Life* whereby Men live unto God; This they being *Strangers unto, and Alienated from*, are *spiritually dead*. And this the Scripture declares concerning all *Unregenerate Persons*, partly in direct words, and partly in other Assertions of the same importance. Of the first sort the Testimonies are many and express; Ephes. 2. 1. *You were dead in Trespasses and Sins; v. 5. When you were dead in sins; Col. 2. 13. And you being dead in your sins, and the uncircumcision of your flesh; 2 Cor. 5. 14. If one died for all, then were all dead; Rom. 5. 15. Through the offence of one many are dead; v. 12. Death passed on all Men, for that all have sinned.* And the same is asserted in the second Way, where the Recovery and Restauration of Men by the Grace of Christ is called their *Quickning*, or the bestowing of a *New Life* upon them.

them, For this supposeth that they were *dead* or destitute of that Life which in this *Revivification* is communicated unto them. For that alone can be said to be *quickened*, which was *dead* before. See *Ephes. 2. 5. Joh. 5. 21. Joh. 6. 63.*

This *Death* that Unregenerate Persons are under is two-fold ; (1.) *Le-SECT. 2.* gal with reference unto the sentence of the Law. The Sanction of the Law was, that upon Sin Man should dye. *In the day thou eatest thereof thou shalt dye the death*, Gen. 2. 17. Upon this sentence *Adam* and all his Posterity became *dead in Law*, morally dead, or obnoxious unto death *penally*, and adjudged unto it. This *Death* is intended in some of the Places before mentioned ; as *Rom. 5. 12.* and it may be also *2 Cor. 5. 14.* For as *Christ* dyed, so were all dead. He dyed *penally* under the sentence of the Law, and all were obnoxious unto death or dead on that Account. But this is not the *Death* which I intend, neither are we delivered from it by Regeneration but by Justification, *Rom. 8. 1.*

(2.) There is in them a *Spiritual Death* called so *Metaphorically* from *SECT. 3.* the *Analogie* and Proportion that it bears unto *death Natural*. Of great Importance it is to know the true nature hereof, and how by Reason thereof *Unregenerate Men* are utterly disabled from doing any thing that is *spiritually Good*, until they are *quickened by the Almighty Power* and irresistible Efficacy of the Holy Ghost. Wherefore to declare this aright we must consider the nature of *Life and Death natural*, in Allusion whereunto the *Spiritual estate of Unregenerate Men* is thus described.

Life in general, or the Life of a Living Creature is, *Actus Vivificantis in Vivificatum per unionem utriusque*, The Act of a quickning Principle on a Subject to be quickened, by Virtue of their Union. And three things are to be considered in it.

(1) The *Principle of Life* it self. And this in man is the *Rational living Soul* ; called נִשְׁמַת חַיִּים, Gen. 2. 7. God breathed into his nostrils the breath of Life, and Man became a living Soul. Having formed the Body of man of the Dust of the Earth, he designed him a Principle of Life Superior unto that of brut Creatures, which is but the Exurgency and Spirit of their Temperature and Composition, though peculiarly educed by the formative Vertue and Power of the Holy Ghost, as hath been before declared. He creates for him therefore a separate, distinct, animating soul, and infuseth it into the matter prepared for its Reception. And as he did thus in the Beginning of the Creation of the Species or Kind of humane Race in its first Individuals, so he continueth to do the same in the ordinary course of the Works of his Providence for the continuation of it. For having ordained the Preparation of the Body by *Generation*, he immediately infuseth into it the *Living Soul*, the Breath of Life.

(2) There is the *Actus primus*, or the quickning act of this Principle on the Principle quickned in and by Vertue of *Union*. Hereby the whole man becomes נִפְשׁ חַיִּים a *Living Soul* ; Ψυχὸς ἀνθρώπου, a person quickned by a Vital Principle, and enabled for all naturally Vital Actions.

(3.) There are the *Acts of this Life* it self. And they are of two sorts. (1.) Such

(1) Such as flow from Life, as *Life*: (2) Such as proceed from it, as such a Life, from the Principle of a Rational Soul. Those of the first sort are natural and necessary; as are all the *Actings*, and *Energies* of the Senses, of the *locomotive* Faculty, as also what belongs unto the receiving and improving of Nutriment. These are Acts of Life; whence the *Psalmist* proves Idols to be *dead* things, from the want of them; so far are they from having a *Divine Life*, as that they have no Life at all; *Psal.* 115. 4, 5, 6, 7. These are Acts of *Life as Life*, inseparable from it, and their End is to preserve the Union of the whole, between the quickning and quickned Principles. (2) There are *such Acts of Life* as proceed from the especial nature of this quickning Principle. Such are all the *elicit*, and *imperate Acts* of our Understandings and Wills; all Actions that are voluntary, rational and peculiarly humane. These proceed from that *special kind of Life*, which is given by the especial quickning Principle of a rational Soul.

SECT. 5. Hence it is evident wherein *Death natural* doth consist. And three things may be considered in it. (1) The Separation of the Soul from the Body. Hereby the Act of infusing the living Soul, ceaseth unto all its Ends. For as a Principle of Life unto the whole, it operates only by Ver- tue of its *Union* with the subject to be quickned by it. (2) A Cessation of all *Vital Actings* in the quickned Subject. For that Union from whence they should proceed is dissolved. (3) As a Consequent of these, there is in the Body an *Impotency* for, and an *Ineptitude* unto all Vital Operations. Not only do all Operations of Life actually cease, but the Body is no more able to effect them. There remains in it indeed, *Potentia obedi- entialis*, a *passive power* to receive Life again, if communicated unto it by an external efficient Cause. So the body of *Lazarus* being dead, had a *receptive Power* of a living Soul. But an *active Power* to dispose it self unto Life or Vital Actions, it hath not.

SECT. 6. From these things we may by a just *Analogie* collect wherein Life and Death Spiritual do consist. And to that End some things must be pre- viously observed. As 1: That *Adam* in the state of Innocency, besides his Natural life whereby he was a Living Soul, had likewise a *Superna- tural Life* with respect unto its end whereby he lived unto God. This is called the *Life of God*, *Ephes.* 4. 18.; which Men now in the state of nature are alienated from; The Life which God requires, and which hath God for its Object and End. And this Life was in him *Supernatu- ral*; for although it was concreated in, and with the *rational Soul*, as a perfection *due* unto it, in the state wherein, and with respect unto the End for which it was made; yet it did not *naturally flow* from the Prin- ciples of the rational Soul; nor were the Principles, Faculties or Abilities of it inseparable from those of the Soul it self, being only *accidental* Per- fections of them, inlaid in them by especial Grace. This Life was necessary unto him, with respect unto the state wherein, and the End for which he was made. He was made to *live* unto the living God, and that in a pe- culiar manner; to live *unto* his Glory in this World, by the discharge of the rational and moral Obedience required of him, and to live afterward *in* his Glory, and the eternal Enjoyment of him, as his Cheifest Good and Highest Reward. That whereby he was enabled hercunto, was that

Life

Life of God, which we are alienated from in the state of Nature. 2. In this Life, as in *Life in General* three things are to be considered; (1) Its Principle; (2) Its Operation; (3) Its Vertue; or Habit, Act, and Power.

(1.) There was a *Quickning Principle* belonging unto it. For every Life is an Act of a Quickning Principle. This in *Adam* was the Image of God; or an habitual Conformity unto God his Mind and Will; wherein the *Holiness* and *Righteousness* of God himself was represented, *Gen. 1. 26, 27.* In this *Image* he was created, or it was concreated with him, as a Perfection due to his Nature, in the Condition wherein he was made. This gave him an *habitual disposition* unto all duties of that Obedience that was required of him. It was the Rectitude of all the faculties of his Soul with respect unto his Supernatural End, *Eccles. 7. 20.*

(2) There belonged unto it *continual Actings*, from, or by Vertue of, and suitable unto this Principle. All the Acts of *Adam's* Life should have been subordinate unto his great moral End. In all that he did, he should have *lived unto God*, according unto the Law of that Covenant wherein he walked before him. And an Acting in all things, suitable unto the Light in his Mind, unto the Righteousness and Holiness in his Will and Affection, that Uprightness or Integrity, or Order that was in his Soul, was his *Living unto God*.

(3) He had here-withal, *Power* or *Ability* to continue the Principle of Life in suitable Acts of it, with respect unto the whole Obedience required of him; that is, he had a sufficiency of *Ability* for the Performance of any Duty, or of all, that the Covenant required. And in these three did the *Supernatural Life of Adam* in Innocency consist. And it is that which the Life whereunto we are restored by Christ doth answer. It answers unto it I say, and supplies its absence with respect unto the End of living unto God, according unto the New Covenant that we are taken into. For neither would the Life of *Adam* be sufficient for us, to live unto God according to the terms of the *New Covenant*; nor is the Life of Grace we now enjoy, suited to the Covenant wherein *Adam* stood before God. Wherefore some Differences there are between them, the Principal whereof may be reduced into two Heads.

1. The Principle of this Life was wholly and intirely in Man himself. It was the Effect of another Cause, of that which was without him, namely, the Good Will and Power of God; but it was left to grow on no other Root but what was in Man himself. It was wholly implanted in his Nature, and therein did its Springs lye. Actual Excitations by Influence of Power from God, it should have had. For no Principle of Operation can subsist in an Independence of God, nor apply it self unto Operation without his Concurrence. But in the Life whereunto we are renewed by Jesus Christ, the Fountain and Principle of it is not in our selves but in him, as One common Head unto all that are made Partakers of him. He is our Life, *Col. 1. 3.* and our Life, (as to the Spring and Fountain of it) is hid with him in God. For he quickneth us by his Spirit, *Rom. 8. 10.* And our *Spiritual Life* as in us consists in the *Vital Actings* of this Spirit of his in Us; for, *without him we can do nothing*, *John 15. 3.*

By Vertue hereof we *walk in newness of Life*; Rom. 6. 4. We live therefore hereby, yet not *so much we, as Christ liveth in us*; Gal. 2. 20.

SECT. 10. 2. There is a Difference between these Lives with respect unto the *Object* of their Vital Acts. For the Life which we now lead by the faith of the Son of God, hath sundry *Objects* of its Actings, which the other had not. For whereas all the Actings of our Faith and Love, that is, all our Obedience doth respect the Revelation that God makes of himself and his Will unto us; there are now *New Revelations* of God in Christ, and consequently new Duties of Obedience required of us, as will afterwards appear. And other such differences there are between them. The Life which we had in *Adam* and that which we are renewed unto in Christ Jesus, are so far of the same *Nature* and kind, as our Apostle manifests in sundry Places, *Ephes. 4. 23, 24. Col. 3. 10.* as that they serve to the same End and Purpose.

SECT. 11. There being therefore this *two-fold Spiritual Life*, or Ability of Living unto God, that which we had in *Adam*, and that which we have in *Christ*, we must enquire with reference unto which of these it is, that *Unregenerate Men* are said to be *Spiritually dead*, or dead in Trespasses and Sins. Now this in the first Place hath respect unto the Life we had in *Adam*: For the Deprivation of that Life, was in the Sanction of the Law, *Thou shalt die the Death*. This Spiritual Death is comprized therein, and that in the Privation of that Spiritual Life, or Life unto God, which *Unregenerate Men*, never had, neither *de facto*, nor *de jure*, in any state or condition. Wherefore with respect hereunto they are dead only *negatively*; they have it not; but with respect unto the Life we had in *Adam*, they are dead *privatively*, they have lost that Power of Living unto God which they had.

SECT. 12. From what hath been discoursed, we may discover the Nature of this Spiritual Death, under the Power whereof all *Unregenerate Persons* do abide. For there are three things in it. (1) A *Privation* of a Principle of Spiritual Life enabling us to live unto God; (2) A *Negation* of all Spiritual Vital Acts; that is, of all Acts and Duties of holy Obedience acceptable unto God, and tending to the Enjoyment of him. (3) A total *Defect* and want of *Power* for any such Acts whatever. All these are in that Death which is a Privation of Life, such as this is.

First, there is in it a *Privation* of a Principle of Spiritual Life, namely of that which we had before the Entrance of sin, or a Power of living unto God according to the Covenant of Works; and a *Negation* of that which we have by Christ, or a Power of Living unto God according to the Tenor of the Covenant of Grace. Those therefore who are thus dead have no *Principle* or *First Power* of Living unto God, or the Performance of any Duty to be accepted with him, in order to the Enjoyment of him, according to either Covenant. It is with them as to all the Acts and Ends of *Life Spiritual*, as it is with the Body as to the *Acts and Ends* of *Life Natural*, when the Soul is departed from it. Why else are they said to be *dead*?

SECT. 13. It is objected that there is a wide difference between Death *Natural* and *Spiritual*. In Death *Natural* the soul it self is utterly removed and taken

taken from the Body: but in Death Spiritual it continues. A man is still notwithstanding this *Spiritual* Death, endowed with an Understanding, Will, and Affections. And by these are Men enabled to perform their Duty unto God; and yield the Obedience required of them.

Answ. (1) In Life *Spiritual*, the Soul is unto the Principle of it; as the Body is unto the Soul in Life *Natural*. For in Life *Natural* the Soul is the quickning Principle, and the Body is the Principle *quickned*. When the Soul departs it leaves the Body with all its own Natural Properties, but utterly deprived of *them* which it had by Vertue of its Union with the Soul. So in Life *Spiritual* the Soul is not in and by its Essential Properties the *quickning Principle* of it, but it is the *Principle* that is quickned. And when the quickning Principle of Spiritual Life departs, it leaves the Soul with all its Natural Properties entire as to their Essence, though morally corrupted. But of all the Power and Abilities which it had by Vertue of its Union with a quickning Principle of Spiritual Life, it is deprived. And to deny such a *quickning Principle* of Spiritual Life super-added unto us by the Grace of Christ, distinct and separate from the Natural Faculties of the Soul, is upon the matter to renounce the whole Gospel. It is all one, as to deny that *Adam* was created in the Image of God, which he lost, and that we are renewed unto the Image of God by Jesus Christ. Hence. (2) Whatever the Soul acts in Spiritual things by its Understanding, Will, and Affections, as deprived of, or not quickned by this Principle of Spiritual Life, it doth it Naturally not *Spiritually*, as shall be instantly made to appear.

There is therefore in the first Place a *Disability* or Impotency unto all Spiritual things to be performed in a Spiritual manner, in all Persons not *born again by the Spirit*, because they are Spiritually dead. Whatever they can do; or however Men may call what they do, unless they are endowed with a *quickning Principle* of Grace, they can perform no Act *Spiritually* vital, no Act of Life, whereby we live to God; or that is absolutely accepted with him. Hence it is said, the *Carnal Mind is enmity against God, it is not subject to the Law of God, neither indeed can it be, Rom. 8. 7.* so then, *they that are in the flesh cannot please God. v. 8.* Men may cavil whilst they please about this *carnal Mind*, and contend that it is only the sensitive part of the Soul, or the Affections as corrupted by Prejudices and depraved habits of Vice. Two things are plain in the Text. First, that this *Carnal Mind*, is in all mankind whoever they be, who are not partakers of the Spirit of God, and his Quickning Power. Secondly; that where it is, there is a *Disability* of doing any thing that should please God; which is the Sum of what we contend for, and which Men may with as little a disparagement of their Modesty deny, as reject the Authority of the Apostle. So our Saviour as to one Instance tells us, that no Man *can come unto him unless the Father draw him. Joh. 6. 4. 4.* And so is it figuratively expressed where all Men being by Nature compared unto *evil Trees*, it is affirmed of them, that they *cannot bring forth Good fruit unless their Nature be changed; Mat. 7. 18.* Chap. 12. 33. And this Disability as to Good is also compared by the Prophet unto such Effects, as lye under a *Natural Impossibility* of Accomplishment, *Jerem. 13. 24.* We contend not about Expressions. This is that which the Scripture abundantly instructeth us in. There is no

SECT. 14.

Power in Men by Nature whereby they are of themselves, upon the mere proposal of their Duty in Spiritual Obedience, and Exhortations from the Word of God unto the Performance of it accompanied with all the *Motives* which are meet and suited to prevail with them thereunto, to perceive, know, will, or do any thing in such a Way or Manner, as that it should be accepted with God, with respect unto our Spiritual Life unto him according to his Will, and future Enjoyment of him, without the *Efficacious Infusion* into them, or *Creation* in them, of a *new gracious Principle* or *Habit* enabling them thereunto; and that this is accordingly wrought in all that believe by the Holy Ghost, we shall afterwards declare.

But it will be Objected; and hath against this Doctrine been ever so, since the days of *Pelagius*, that a supposition hereof renders all *Exhortations*, *Commands*, *Promises*, and *Threatnings*, which comprize the whole Way of the external communication of the Will of God unto us, vain and useless. For to what purpose is it to exhort *Blind Men* to see, or *Dead Men* to live, or to promise Rewards unto them upon their so doing? Should Men thus deal with *stones*, would it not be vain and ludicrous, and that because of their *Impatency* to comply with any such proposals of our Mind unto them. And the same is here supposed in Men: as to any Ability in Spiritual things.

* *Magnum aliquid Pelagiani se scire putant quando dicunt, non iuberet Deus quod scit non posse ab homine fieri, quis hoc nesciat? sed ideo iuber aliquis quæ non possumus ut noperimus quid ab illo petere debeamus. Ipsa enim est fides quæ orando impetrat, quod lex imperat. August. de Grat. & lib. Arbit. cap. 16.*
O homo cognosce in præceptione quid debes habere; in corruptione cognosce tuo te visio non habere; in oratione cognosce unde accipias quod vis habere. Idem de Corrupt. & Grat. Cap. 3.

Mandando impossibilia non prævaricatores Deus homines fecit sed humiles, ut omne os obturetur & reus fiat totus mundus Deo; accipientes igitur mandatum, & sentientes defectum clamabimus ad calum Bernard. Serm. 30. in Cant.

Quamvis dicamus Dei donum esse obedientiam, tamen homines exhortamur ad eam: sed illis qui Veritatis Exhortationem obedienter audiunt, ipsum donum Dei datum est, hoc est, obedienter audire; illi autem qui non sic audiunt non est datum. August. de Dono perseverant. Cap. 14.

Ans. (1) There is nothing in the highest Wisdom required in the Application of any *Means* to the producing of an Effect, but that in their own Nature they are suited thereunto; and that the Subject to be wrought upon by them, is capable of being affected, according as their Nature requires. And thus Exhortations with Promises and Threatnings are in their kind, as *Moral Instruments*, suited and proper to produce the Effects of Faith and Obedience in the Minds of Men. And the Faculties of their Souls, their Understandings, Wills, and Affections, are meet to be wrought upon by them unto that End. For by Mens rational Abilities they are able to discern their Nature, and judge of their Tendency. And because these Faculties are the Principle and Subject of all actual Obedience, it is granted that there is in Man a Natural, remote *Passive Power* to yield Obedience unto God, which yet can never actually put forth it self without the *effectual* working of the Grace of God, not only enabling, but working in them *to will and to do*.

Exhortations, Promises, and Threatnings, respect not primarily our present *Ability*, but our *Duty*. Their End is, to declare unto us, not what we *can do*, but what we *ought* to do. And this is done fully in them. On the other hand, make a general Rule, that what God commands, or Exhorts

Exhorts us unto, with *Promises* made unto our Obedience, and *Threatnings* annexed unto a supposition of Disobedience, that we have power in and of our selves to do, or that we are of our selves *able* to do; and you quite evacuate the Grace of God, or at least, make it only useful for the more easie *discharge* of our Duty, not necessary unto the very being of Duty it self, which is the *Pelagianism* Anathematized by so many Councils of old. But in the Church it hath hitherto been believed, that the *Command* directs our Duty, but the *Promise* gives strength for the performance of it.

(3.) God is pleased to make these Exhortations and Promises to be SECT. 18.
Vehicula Gratia, the means of communicating Spiritual Life and Strength unto Men. And he hath appointed them unto this end, because considering the *Moral* and *Intellectual* Faculties of the Minds of Men, they are suited thereunto. Hence these Effects are ascribed unto the Word, which really are wrought by the *Grace* communicated thereby, *Jam. 1. 18. 1 Pet. 1. 23.* And this in their Dispensation under the Covenant of Grace, is their proper end. God may therefore wisely make use of them, and *command* them to be used towards Men, notwithstanding all their own disability savingly to comply with them, seeing he can, will, and doth himself make them *effectual* unto the end aimed at.

But it will be further objected; *That if Men are thus utterly devoid of* SECT. 19.
a Principle of Spiritual Life, of all Power to live unto God; that is, to repent, believe, and yeeld obedience; is it righteous that they should perish eternally, meerly for their disability, or their not doing that which they are not able to do? This would be to require Brick and to give no Straw; yea, to require much where nothing is given. But the Scripture every-where chargeth the *Destruction* of Men upon their wilful sin, not their weakness or disability.

Ans. (1.) Mens Disability to live to God is their sin. What-ever therefore ensues thereon, may be justly charged on them. It is that which came on us by the *Sin of our Nature* in our first Parents; all whose Consequents are our sin and our misery, *Rom. 5. 12.* Had it befallen us without a guilt truly our own, according to the Law of our Creation and Covenant of our Obedience, the Case would have been otherwise. But on this Supposition, (sufficiently confirmed else-where) those who perish, do but *faed on the Fruit of their own Ways.*

(2.) In the Transactions between God and the Souls of Men, with re- SECT. 20.
spect unto their Obedience and Salvation, there is none of them but hath a *Power* in sundry things, as to some degrees and measures of them, to comply with his Mind and Will, which they voluntarily neglect. And this of it self is sufficient to *bear the Charge* of their eternal ruine. But;

(3.) No Man is so *unable* to live unto God, to do any thing for him, but that withal he is *able* to do any thing against him. There is in all Men by Nature a depraved vicious habit of Mind wherein they are *alienated* from the Life of God. And there is no command given unto Men

for Evangelical Faith or Obedience, but they can and do put forth a free *positive Act* of their Wills in the rejection of it, either directly or *interpretatively*, in preferring somewhat else before it. As they *cannot* come to Christ unless the Father draw them, so they *will not* come that they may have Life; wherefore their Destruction is just and of themselves.

This is the Description which the Scripture giveth us, concerning the Power, Ability, or Disability of Men in the State of Nature as unto the Performance of Spiritual Things. By some it is traduced as *Fanatical* and senseless, which the Lord Christ must answer for, not we. For we do nothing but plainly represent what he hath expressed in his Word, and if it be *foolishness* unto any, the Day will determine where the blame must lie.

SECT. 21. Secondly; There is in this Death an *actual cessation* of all Vital Acts. From this defect of Power, or the want of a *Principle* of Spiritual Life, it is, that Men in the state of Nature can perform no *Vital Act* of Spiritual Obedience; nothing that is *spiritually* Good, or Saving, or Accepted with God according to the Tenor of the New Covenant; which we shall in the second place a little explain.

The whole course of our Obedience to God in Christ is the *Life of God*, Ephes. 4. 18. That *Life* which is from him in a peculiar manner, whereof he is the especial Author, and whereby we *live unto* him which is our End. And the Gospel which is the Rule of our Obedience, is called the *words of this Life*, Acts 5. 20. That which guides and directs us how to live to God. Hence all the Duties of this Life are *Vital Acts*, *spiritually Vital Acts*, Acts of that Life whereby we live to God.

SECT. 22. Where therefore this Life is not, all the Works of Men are *Dead Works*. Where *Persons* are dead in sin, their *Works* are dead Works. They are so all of them, either in their *own Nature*, or with respect unto them by whom they are performed, Heb. 9. 14. They are dead Works because they proceed not from a Principle of Life, are unprofitable as dead things, Ephes. 5. 11. and end in death eternal, Jam. 1. 15. We may then consider how this *Spiritual Life* which enableth us unto these *Vital Acts* is derived and communicated unto us. (1.) The original Spring and Fountain of this Life is with God; Psal. 36. 9. *With thee is the Fountain of Life*; The sole Spring of our Spiritual Life is in an especial way and manner in God. And hence our Life is said to be *hid with Christ in God*, Col. 3. 3. that is, as in its Eternal producing and preserving Cause. But it is thus also with respect unto *all Life* whatever. God is the *living God*, all other things are in themselves but dead Things; their Life, what-ever it be, is in him efficiently and eminently, and in them is purely *derivative*. Wherefore;

SECT. 23. (2.) Our Spiritual Life, as unto the *especial Nature* of it is *specified* and discerned from a Life of any other kind, in that the *fulness* of it is communicated unto the Lord Christ as Mediator, Col. 1. 19. And from his fulness we do receive it, John 1. 16. There is a Principle of Spi-

Spiritual Life communicated unto us from his fulness thereof, whence he quickneth whom he pleaseth. Hence he is said to be *our Life*, Col. 3. 4. And in our Life, it is not so much we who live, as Christ that liveth in us, Gal. 2. 20. because we *act nothing* but as we are *acted* by Vertue and Power from him, 1 Cor. 15. 10.

3ly; The Fountain of this Life being in God, and the fulness of it being laid up in Christ for us; He communicates the Power and Principle of it unto us by the Holy Ghost, Rom. 8. 11. That he is the immediate efficient Cause hereof, we shall afterwards fully evince and declare. But yet he doth it so, as to derive it unto us from *Jesus Christ*, Ephes. 4. 15, 16. For he is the Life, and without him, or Power communicated from him, *we can do nothing*, John 15. 5. SECT. 24.

4ly; This Spiritual Life is communicated unto us by the Holy Ghost according unto, and in order for the Ends of that *New Covenant*. For this is the Promise of it, That God will first *write his Law* in our Hearts, and then we shall walk in his Statutes; that is, the Principle of Life must precede all *vital Acts*. From this Principle of Life thus derived and conveyed unto us, are all those *vital Acts* whereby we live to God. Where this is not, as it is not in any that are dead in sin, for from the want hereof are they denominated *dead*, no Act of Obedience unto God can so be performed, as that it should be an *Act of the Life of God*; and this is the way whereby the Scripture doth express it. The same thing is intended, when we say in other words, that without an infused *habit of internal inherent Grace*, received from Christ by an efficacious Work of the Spirit no Man can *believe or obey God*, or perform any Duty in a saving manner, so as it should be accepted with Him. And if we abide not in this Principle, we let in the whole poysonous Flood of *Pelagianism* into the Church. To say that we have a sufficiency in our selves, so much as to think a good thought, to do any thing as we ought, any Power, any Ability, that is our own, or in us by Nature, however externally excited and guided by Motives, Directions, Reasons, Encouragements of what sort soever, to believe or obey the Gospel savingly in any one Instance, is to *overthrow the Gospel* and the Faith of the *Catholick Church* in all Ages.

But it may be Objected; That whereas many unregenerate Persons may and do perform many duties of Religious Obedience, if there be nothing of Spiritual Life in them, then are they all sins, and so differ not from the worst things they do in this World, which are but Sins; And if so, unto what end should they take pains about them? Were it not as good for them to indulge unto their Lusts and Pleasures, seeing all comes to one end? It is all sin, and nothing else; why do the Dispensers of the Gospel press any Duties on such as they know to be in that estate? What advantage shall they have by a compliance with them? Were it not better to leave them to themselves and wait for their Conversion, than to spend time and labour about them to no purpose? SECT. 25.

Ans. (1.) It must be granted, That all the Duties of such Persons are

* Manifestissime patet in impiorum animis nullam habitare virtutem; sed omnia opera eorum immunda esse atque polluta, habentium sapientiam non spiritalem sed animale, non celestem sed terrenam. Prosper. ad Collat. cap. 28.

Omne etenim probitatis opus nisi semine vere exoritur fidei, peccatum est, in quo erratum vertitur, & sterilis cumulat sibi gloria penam. Prosper. de Ingratis. cap. 16.

Multa laudibilia atque miranda possunt in homine reperiri, quæ sine charitatis medullis habent quidem pietatis similitudinem, sed non habent veritatem. Idem. ad Ruffin. de lib. Arbit.

are in some sense sins. * It was the saying of *Austin*, That the Vertues of Unbelievers are *splendida peccata*. This some are now displeased with; but it is easier to censure him than to confute him. Two things attend in every Duty that is properly so. (1.) That it is accepted with God: And (2.) that it is sanctified in them that do it; but neither of these are in the Duties of Unregenerate Men. For they have not Faith; And *without Faith it is impossible to please God*, Heb. 11. 6. And the Apostle also assures us; That unto the defiled and unbelieving, that is, all un sanctified Persons not purified by the Spirit of Grace, *All things are unclean, because their Consciences and Minds are de-*

filed, Tit. 1. 15. So their Praying is said to be an abomination, and their Plowing sin. It doth not therefore appear what is otherwise in them or to them. But as there are Good Duties which have sin adhering to them, *Isa. 64. 6.* so there are sins which have good in them. For *bonum oritur ex integris, malum ex quocunque defectu*. Such are the Duties of Men unregenerate. Formally, and unto them they are sin, *materially* and in themselves they are good. This gives them a difference from, and a preference above such sins, as are every way sinful. As they are Duties they are good, as they are the Duties of such Persons they are evil, because necessarily *defective* in what should preserve them from being so. And on this ground they ought to attend unto them, and may be pressed thereunto.

SECT. 26. (2ly.) That which is good *materially* and in it self, though vitiated from the Relation which it hath to the Person by whom it is performed, is *approved* and hath its Acceptation in its proper place. For Duties may be performed two ways. (1.) In *hypocrisie* and pretence; so they are utterly abhorred of God in matter and manner; that is such a poisonous Ingredient as vitiates the whole, *Isa. 1. 11, 12, 13, 14. Hos. 1. 4.* (2.) In Integrity according unto present Light and Conviction, which for the substance of them are approved. And no Man is to be exhorted to do any thing in *Hypocrisie*; see *Matth. 10. 21.* And on this account also, that the Duties themselves are acceptable, Men may be pressed to them. But (3ly.) it must be granted, that the same Duty for the substance of it in general, and performed according to the *same* Rule as to the outward manner of it, may be accepted in or from one, and rejected in or from another. So was it with the Sacrifices of *Cain* and *Abel*. And not only so, but the same rejected Duty may have Degrees of evil, for which it is rejected, and be more sinful in and unto one than unto another. But we must observe that the difference doth not relate meerly unto the *different* States of the Persons by whom such are performed; as because one is in the *state* of Grace, whose Duties are accepted; and another in the *state* of Nature, whose Duties are rejected as their Persons are. For although the Acceptation of our Persons be a necessary condition for the Acceptation of our Duties, as God first had respect unto *Abel*, and then unto his Offerings; yet there is alwayes a real *specific* difference between the Duties themselves, whereof one is accepted and the

the other rejected, although, it may be unto us, it be every way imperceptible. As in the Offerings of *Cain* and *Abel*, that of *Abel* was offered in Faith, the defect whereof in the other caused it to be refused. Suppose Duties therefore to be every way the *same* as to the Principles, Rule and Ends, or what-ever is necessary to render them good in their kind; and they would be all equally accepted with God, by whomsoever they are performed, for he is *no acceptor of Persons*. But this cannot be, but where those that perform them are partakers of the same Grace. It is therefore the *Wills* of Men only that *vitate* their Duties, which are required of them as good; and if so they may justly be required of them. The defect is not immediately in their State, but in their *Wills* and their Perversity.

4ly, The *Will of God* is the Rule of all Mens Obedience. This they are all bound to attend unto; and if what they do through their own defect prove eventually sin unto them, yet the Commandment is just and holy, and the observance of it justly prescribed unto them. The Law is the *moral cause* of the performance of the Duties it requires, but not of the *sinful manner* of their performance. And God hath not lost his right of commanding Men, because they by their sin have lost their Power to fulfil his Commands. And if the equity of the Command doth arise from the proportioning of strength that Men have to answer it, He that by contracting the highest *moral Disability* that depraved habits of Mind can introduce, or a course of sinning produce in him, is freed from owing obedience unto any of God's Commands, seeing all confels that such an *habit of sin* may be contracted, as will deprive them in whom it is, of all Power of Obedience. Wherefore;

4. *Preachers of the Gospel* and others have sufficient warrant to press upon all Men, the Duties of Faith, Repentance, and Obedience, although they know that in themselves they have not a sufficiency of Ability for their due performance. For (1.) it is the *Will and Command of God* that so they should do, and that is the Rule of all our Duties. They are not to consider what Man can do or will do, but what God requires. To make a judgment of Mens Ability, and to accommodate the Commands of God unto them accordingly, is not committed unto any of the Sons of Men. (2.) They have a *double End* in pressing on Men the observance of Duties, with a supposition of the State of Impotency described. (1.) To prevent them from such *courses of sin*, as would harden them, and so render their Conversion more difficult if not desperate. (2.) To exercise a means appointed of God for their *Conversion*, or the Communication of Saving-Grace unto them. Such are God's Commands, and such are the Duties required in them. In and by them God doth use to communicate of his Grace unto the Souls of Men, not with respect unto *them* as their Duties, but as they are wayes appointed and sanctified by *him* unto such ends. And hence it follows that even such Duties as are *vitated* in their performance, yet are of advantage unto them by whom they are performed. For (1.) by attendance unto them, they are preserved from many sins. (2.) In an especial manner from the great sin of *despising God*, which ends commonly in that

which is unpardonable. (3.) They are hereby made *useful* unto others, and many ends of God's Glory in the World. (4.) They are *kept in God's Way*, wherein they may gradually be brought over unto a real Conversion unto him.

SECT. 29. Thirdly; In this State of *Spiritual Death*, there is not in them who are under the Power of it any *Disposition*, *active and inclining* unto Life Spiritual. There is not so in a *dead Carcass* unto Life Natural; It is a Subject meet for an External Power to introduce a Living Principle into; so the dead Body of *Lazarus* was quickned and animated again by the introduction of his Soul. But in it self it had not the least *active Disposition* nor Inclination thereunto. And no otherwise is it with a Soul dead in Trespasses and Sins. There is in it *Potentia Obedientialis*, a Power rendring it meet to receive the Communications of Grace and Spiritual Life. But a *Disposition* thereunto of its own it hath not. There is in it a *remote Power*, in the nature of its Faculties *meet to be wrought upon* by the Spirit and Grace of God. But an *immediate Power* disposing and enabling it unto *Spiritual Acts* it hath not. And the reason is, because Natural Corruption cleaves unto it, as an invincible *unmoveable Habit* constantly inducing unto evil, wherewith the *least Disposition* unto Spiritual Good is not inconsistent. There is in the Soul in the Scripture Language (which some call *Ganting*) the *Body of the Sins of the Flesh*, 1 Col. 11. which unless it be taken away by Spiritual Circumcision through the virtue of the Death of Christ, it will lie dead in to Eternity. There is therefore in us that which may be *quickned and saved*. And this is all we have to boast of by Nature. Though Man by Sin be made like the *Beasts that perish*, being brutish and foolish in his Mind and Affections; yet he is not so absolutely, he retains that *living Soul*, those *intellectual Faculties* which were the Subject of *Original Righteousness*, and are meet to receive again the Renovation of the Image of God by Jesus Christ.

SECT. 30. But this also seems obnoxious to an Objection from the Instances that are given in the Scripture, and whereof we have experience concerning sundry *good Duties* performed by Men Unregenerate, and that in a *tendency* unto living unto God, which argues a *Disposition* to Spiritual Good. So *Balaam* desired to die the Death of the Righteous, and *Herod* heard *John Baptist* gladly, doing many things willingly. And great Endeavours after Conversion unto God, we find in many who never attain thereunto. So that to say there is *no Disposition* unto Spiritual Life in any Unregenerate Person, is to make them all equal, which is contrary to Experience.

Ans. (1.) There is no doubt but that Unregenerate Men may perform many *external Duties*, which are good in themselves, and lie in the order of the outward Disposal of the means of Conversion. Nor is it questioned but they may have real Designs, Desires, and Endeavours after that which is presented unto them as their chiefest Good. But so far as these Desires or Actings are meerly *Natural*, there is no *Disposition* in them unto Spiritual Life, or that which is Spiritually Good: So far as they are *Supernatural*, they are not of themselves. For;

(2.) Al-

(2.) Although there are no *preparatory Inclinations* in Men, yet there are *preparatory Works upon them*. Those who have not the Word, yet may have Convictions of Good and Evil, from the *Authority* of God in their Consciences, *Rom. 2. 14, 15*. And the Law in the Dispensation of it, may work Men unto many Duties of Obedience; much more may the Gospel so do. But what-ever Effects are hereby produced, they are wrought by the *Power of God* exerted in the Dispensation of the Word. They are not *educed* out of the Natural Faculties of the Minds of Men, but are Effects of the Power of God in them and upon them. For we know that *in the flesh there dwelleth no good thing*; And all Unregenerate Men are no more; for that which is *born of the flesh is flesh*.

(3.) The Actings thus effected and produced in Men Unregenerate, are neither *Fruits* of, nor *Dispositions* unto Spiritual Life. Men that are spiritually dead, may have Designs and Desires to free themselves from dying Eternally; but such a *desire to be saved*, is no *saving Disposition unto Life*.



The Nature, Causes, and Means of Regeneration.

C H A P. V.

(1.) *Description of the State of Nature, necessary unto a right understanding of the Work of the Spirit in Regeneration.* (2.) *No possibility of Salvation unto Persons living and dying in a state of Sin.* (3.) *Deliverance from it by Regeneration only.* (4.) *The Holy Ghost the peculiar Author of this Work.* (5.) *Differences about the Manner and Nature of it.* (6.) *Way of the Ancients in explaining the Doctrine of Grace; the present Method proposed.* (7.) *Conversion not wrought by Moral Swasion only.* (8, 9, 10.) *The Nature and Efficacy of Moral Swasion, wherein they consist.* (11.) *Illumination preparatory unto Conversion.* (12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18.) *The Nature of Grace morally effective only, opened; not sufficient for Conversion.* (19, 20.) *The first Argument disproving the working of Grace in Conversion to be by Moral Swasion only.* (21, 22.) *The Second.* (23, 24.) *The Third.* (25.) *The Fourth.* (26, 27, 28.) *Wherein the Work of the Spirit in Regeneration positively doth consist; the use and end of outward means.* (29.) *Real internal efficiency of the Spirit in this Work.* (30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35.) *Grace victorious and irresistible, the Nature of it explained.* (36.) *Proved.* (37, 38, 39, 40.) *The manner of God's working by Grace on our Wills further explained. Testimonies concerning the Actual Collation of Faith by the Power of God.* (41, 42, 43, 44.) *Victorious efficacy of internal Grace proved by sundry Testimonies of Scripture.* (45, 46, 47, 48, 49.) *From the nature of the Work wrought by it, in Vivification and Regeneration.* (50, 51, 52, 53, 54.) *Regeneration considered with respect unto the distinct Faculties of the Soul. The Mind.* (55.) *The Will.* (56, 57.) *The Affections.*

SECT. I.

UNTO the Description we are to give of the *Work of Regeneration*, the precedent account of the *Subject* of it, or the *State and Condition* of them that are to be Regenerated, was necessarily to be premised. For upon the knowledge thereof, doth a due Apprehension of the Nature of that Work depend. And the occasion of all the Mistakes and Errors that have been about it, either of old or of late, hath been a misunderstanding of the true state of Men in their *lapsed condition*, or of Nature as depraved. Yea, and those by whom this whole Work is derided, do now countenance themselves there-
in

in by their Ignorance of that state, which they will not learn either from the Scripture or Experience ; For, *Natura sic apparet vitata ut hoc majoris vitii sit non videre*, as *Austin* speaks. It is an Evidence of the Corruption of Nature, that it disenables the Minds of Men to discern their own Corruption. We have previously discharged this work so far as it is necessary unto our present purpose. Many other things might be added in the Explication of it, were that our direct Design. Particularly having confined my self to treat only concerning the Depravation of the *Mind* and *Will*, I have not insisted on that of the *Affections*, which yet is effectual to retain unregenerate Men under the Power of sin ; though it be far enough from *Truth* that the whole *Corruption of Nature* consists therein, as some weakly and *Athologically* have Imagined. Much less have I treated concerning that encrease and heightning of the *Depravation* of Nature which is attracted by a Custom of sinning, as unto all the perverse Ends of it. Yet this also the Scripture much insists upon, as that which naturally and necessarily ensues in all in whom it is not prevented by the effectual transforming Grace of the Spirit of God. And it is that which seals up the Impossibility of their turning themselves to God. *Jerom.* 13. 23. *Rom.* 3. 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19. But that the whole Difficulty of Conversion should arise from Mens contracting an *Habit or Custom of sinning*, is false, and openly contradictory to the Scripture. These things are *Personal Evils* and befall *Individuals* through their own default in various Degrees. And we see that amongst Men under the same use of means, some are converted unto God, who have been deeply immersed in an habitual course of open sins, whilst others kept from them by the Influence of their Education upon their Inclinations and Affections, remain uncovered. So was it of old between the *Publicans* and Harlots on the one hand, and the *Pharisees* on the other. But my design was only to mention that which is common unto all ; Or wherein all Men Universally are equally concerned, who are partakers of the same Humane Nature in its lapsed Condition. And what we have herein declared from the Scriptures will guide us in our Enquiry after the work of the Holy Spirit of Grace in our Deliverance from it.

It is evident and needs no further confirmation that persons *Living* SECT. 2. and *Dying* in this Estate cannot be saved. This hitherto hath been allowed by all that are called Christians, nor are we to be moved that some who call themselves so, do begin to laugh at the disease and *Despise* the Remedy of our Nature. Among those who lay any serious and real claim unto Christianity, there is nothing more certain, nor more acknowledged, than that there is no Deliverance from a state of *miser*y for those who are not delivered from a state of *sin*. And he who denies the necessary perishing of all that live and dye in the state of Corrupted Nature, denies all the use of the Incarnation and Mediation of the Son of God. For if we may be saved without the *Renovation of our Natures*, there was no need, nor use of the *New Creation* of all things by Jesus Christ, which principally consists therein. And if Men may be saved under all the Evils that came upon us by the *fall*, then did Christ dye in vain. Besides, it is frequently expressed that Men in that state are *Enemies* to God, alienated from him, Children of Wrath, under the Curse ; and if such may be saved, so may *Devils* also. In brief, it is not consistent with the Nature of

of God, his Holiness, Righteousness or Truth, with the Law or Gospel, nor possible in the nature of the thing it self, that such persons should *enter into*, or be made possessors of Glory and Rest with God. A Deliverance therefore out of and from this Condition is indispensibly necessary to make us meet for the inheritance of the Saints in Light.

SECT. 3.

This Deliverance must be, and is by Regeneration. The Determination of our Saviour is positive both in this and the necessity of it before asserted, *Joh. 3. 3. Except a Man be born again, or from above, he cannot see the Kingdom of God.* Whatever sense the *Kingdom of God* is taken in either for that of Grace here, or of Glory hereafter, it is all the same as unto our present purpose. There is no Interest in it to be obtained, no Participation of the Benefits of it, unless a man be *born again*, unless he be *Regenerate*. And this Determination of our Saviour, as it is absolute and decretory, so it is applicable unto and equally comprizeth every *Individual* of mankind. And the Work intended by their *Regeneration* or in being born again, which is the Spiritual Conversion and Quickning of the Souls of Men, is everywhere ascribed unto them that shall be saved. And although Men may have through their ignorance and prejudices false *Apprehensions* about Regeneration and the Nature of it, or wherein it doth consist, yet so far as I know, all Christians are agreed, that it is the way and means of our Deliverance from the state of Sin or Corrupted Nature, or rather our *Deliverance* it self. For this both expresses Testimonies of Scripture, and the Nature of the thing it self, put beyond Contradiction, *Tit. 3. 3, 4, 5.* And those by whom it is exposed unto scorn, who esteem it a ridiculous thing for any one to enquire whether he be *Regenerate* or no, will one day understand the necessity of it; although it may be not before-it is too late to obtain any Advantage thereby.

SECT. 4.

The Holy Ghost is the *immediate Author* and Cause of this work of Regeneration. And herein again as I suppose, we have in general the Consent of all. Nothing is more in words acknowledged than that all the *Elect of God are sanctified by the Holy Ghost.* And this Regeneration is the Head, Fountain or Beginning of our Sanctification virtually comprizing the whole in it self, as will afterwards appear. However that it is a part thereof, is not to be denied. Besides, as I suppose it is equally confessed to be an Effect or Work of *Grace*, the Actual Dispensation whereof is solely in the hand of the Holy Spirit. This I say is in words acknowledged by all, although I know not how some can reconcile this Profession unto other notions and sentiments which they declare concerning it: For setting aside what Men do herein *themselves*, and what *others* do towards them in the Ministry of the Word, and I cannot see what remains as they express their loose Imaginations, to be ascribed unto the Spirit of God. But at present we shall make use of this general concession that *Regeneration* is the Work of the Holy Ghost, or an Effect of his Grace. Not that we have any need so to do, but that we may avoid contesting about those things wherein Men may shrowd their false Opinions under general ambiguous Expressions, which was the constant practice of *Pelagius* and those who followed him of Old. But the Scripture is express in Testimonies

Chap. 5. of Regeneration.

255

monies to our purpose. What our Saviour calls *being born again*, *John* 3. 3. He calls *being born of the Spirit*, *ver. 5. 6.* because he is the sole principal efficient Cause of this *new birth*. For it is the *Spirit that quickeneth*, *Joh. 6. v. 63.* *Rom. 8. 11.* And God saveth us, *according to his mercy by the washing of Regeneration, and the renewing of the Holy Ghost*, *Tir. 3. 5.* whereas therefore we are said to be born of God, or to be begotten again of his own will, *John 1. 13.* *Jam. 1. 18.* *1 John 3. 9.* it is with respect unto the especial and peculiar Operation of the Holy Spirit.

These things are thus far confessed, even by the *Pelagians* themselves, **SECT. 5.** both those of old, and those at present, at least in general; nor hath any as yet been so hardy as to deny Regeneration to be the Work of the holy Spirit in us; unless we must except those deluded Souls who deny both him and his Work. Our sole Enquiry therefore must be after the manner and nature of this work; for the nature of it depends on the manner of the working of the Spirit of God herein. This I acknowledg was variously contended about of old; and the truth concerning it, hath scarce escaped an open Opposition in any Age of the Church. And at present this is the great Ball of Contention, between the *Jesuites* and the *Jansenists*, the latter keeping close to the Doctrine of the principal Ancient Writers of the Church, the former under new Notions, Expressions and Distinctions endeavouring the Reinforcement of *Pelagianism*, wherunto some of the Elder School-Men led the way, of whom our *Bradwardine* so long ago complained. But never was it with so much Impotence and Ignorance traduced and reviled as it is by some among our selves. For a sort of Men we have who by stories of *wandering Jews*, *Rhetorical Declamations* pert Cavillings and proud Revilings of those who dissent from them, think to scorn and banish Truth out of the World; though they never yet durst attempt to deal openly and plainly with any one Argument that is pleaded in its defence and confirmation.

The Ancient Writers of the Church, who looked into these things with **SECT. 6.** most diligence and laboured in them with most success, as *Austin*, *Hilary*, *Prosper*, and *Fulgentius*, do represent the whole Work of the Spirit of God towards the Souls of Men under certain Heads or Distinctions of Grace. And herein were they followed by many of the more sober School-Men; and others of late without number. Frequent mention we find in them of Grace, as *preparing, preventing, Working, Co-working* and *Confirming*. Under these Heads do they handle the whole Work of our Regeneration or Conversion unto God. And although there may be some Alteration in Method and ways of Expression, which may be varied as they are found to be of Advantage unto them that are to be instructed; yet for the substance of the Doctrine, they taught the same which hath been preached amongst us since the Reformation, which some have ignorantly traduced as novel. And the whole of it is nobly and elegantly exemplified by *Austin* in his *Confessions*, wherein he gives us the Experience of the Truth he had taught in his own Soul. And I might follow their footsteps herein, and perhaps should for some Reasons have chosen so to have done; but that there have been so many differences raised about the Explication and Application of these Terms and Distinctions; and the Declaration

on of the nature of the Acts and Effects of the Spirit of Grace intended in them; as that to carry the Truth through the intricate perplexities which under these notions have been cast upon it, would be a longer Work than I shall here engage into; and too much divert me from my principal intention. I shall therefore in general refer the whole Work of the Spirit of God with respect unto the Regeneration of sinners unto two Heads. First, that which is *preparatory* for it; and secondly, that which is *effective* of it. That which is preparatory for it, is the *Conviction* of sin; This is the Work of the Holy Spirit. *John* 16. 8. 9. And this also may be distinctly referred unto three Heads. (1) A Discovery of the *True Nature of Sin*, by the ministry of the Law, *Rom.* 7. 7. (2) An *Application* of that discovery made in the Mind or Understanding unto the *Conscience* of the sinner. (3) The *Excitation* of Affections suitable unto that Discovery and Application; *Acts* 2. 37. But these Things so far as they belong unto our present Design have been before insisted on. Our principal Enquiry at present is after the Work it self, or the nature and manner of the working of the Spirit of God in and on the Souls of Men in their *Regeneration*. And this must be both negatively and positively declared.

SECT. 7. First; The Work of the Spirit of God in the Regeneration of sinners, or the quickning of them who are dead in trespasses and sins, or in their first Saving Conversion to God, doth not consist in a *Moral Swasion* only. By *Swasion* we intend such a *perswasion* as, may, or may not be effectual; so absolutely we call that only *perswasion* whereby a Man is actually perswaded. Concerning this we must consider, (1) What it is that is intended by that *Expression* and wherein its Efficacy doth consist; and (2.) prove that the *whole Work* of the Spirit of God in the Conversion of sinners doth *not* consist therein. And I shall handle this matter under this Notion, as that which is known unto those who are conversant in these things from the writings of the ancient and modern Divines. For it is to no purpose to endeavour the reducing of the extravagant confused Discourses of some present Writers unto a certain and determinate stating of the things in difference among us. That which they seem to aim at and conclude may be reduced unto these Heads, (1.) That God administers Grace unto all in the Declaration of the Doctrine of the Law and Gospel. (2.) That the Reception of this Doctrine, the Belief and Practice of it, is enforced by Promises and Threatnings. (3.) That the things revealed taught and commanded, are not only good in themselves, but so suited unto the Reason and Interest of Mankind, as that the Mind cannot but be disposed and enclined to receive and obey them, unless overpowered by Prejudices and a Course of Sin. (4.) That the Consideration of the Promises and Threatnings of the Gospel, is sufficient to remove these prejudices and reform that Course. (5.) That upon a compliance with the Doctrine of the Gospel and Obedience thereunto, Men are made partakers of the Spirit with other Privileges of the New Testament, and have a Right unto all the Promises of the present and future Life. Now this being a perfect systeme of *Pelagianism*, condemned in the ancient Church as absolutely exclusive of the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, will be fully removed out of our way in our present Discourse, though the loose confused expressions of some be not considered in particular. For if the Work of our Regeneration doth not consist in a Moral Swasion, which as we shall see

see contains all that these Men will allow to Grace, their whole Fabrick falls to the ground of its own accord.

1. As to the nature of this *Moral Smaſion* two things may be conſidered. (1.) The *Means*, Instrument, and Matter of it, and this is the Word of God; the Word of God or the Scripture in the Doctrinal Instructions, Precepts, Promises, and Threatnings of it. This is that, and this is that *alone* whereby we are commanded, preſſed, perſwaded to turn our ſelves and live to God. And herein we comprize the whole, both the Law and the Goſpel, with all the Divine Truths contained in them, as ſeverally reſpecting the eſpecial Ends whereunto they are deſigned. For although they are *diſtinctly* and peculiarly ſuited to produce *diſtinct Effects* on the Minds of Men, yet they all joyntly tend unto the general end of guiding Men how to live unto God, and to obtain the enjoyment of him. As for thoſe *Documents* and Instructions which Men have concerning the *Will of God*, and the Obedience which he requires of them from the Light of Nature, with the Works of Creation and Providence, I ſhall not here take them into Conſideration. For either they are *ſolitary* or without any ſuper-addition of inſtructive Light by Revelation, and then I utterly deny them to be a ſufficient outward means of the Conversion of any one Soul; or they may be conſidered as improved by the *written Word* as diſpenſed unto Men, and ſo they are comprized under it, and need not to be conſidered apart. We will therefore ſuppoſe that thoſe unto whom the Word is declared, have antecedaneouſly thereunto, all the help which the Light of Nature will afford. SECT. 8.

2. The *principal way* of the Application of this means to produce its Effect on the Souls of Men, is the *Ministry of the Church*. God hath appointed the Ministry for the Application of the Word unto the Minds and Conſciences of Men for their Inſtruction and Conversion. And concerning this we may obſerve two things. (1.) That the Word of God thus diſpenſed by the Ministry of the Church, is the only *ordinary outward means* which the Holy Ghoſt maketh uſe of in the Regeneration of the *Adult* unto whom it is preached. (2.) That it is every way *ſufficient* in its own kind; that is, *as an outward means*. For the Revelation which is made of God and his Mind thereby, is ſufficient to teach Men all that is needful for them to believe and do, that they may be converted unto God, and yeeld him the Obedience that he requires. Hence two things do enſue: SECT. 9.

(1.) That the *uſe of thoſe means* unto Men in the ſtate of Sin, if they are not complied withal, is ſufficient on the grounds before laid down, to leave them by whom they are rejected inexcusable; ſo *Iſa. 5. 3, 4, 5. Prov. 29. 1. 2 Chron. 36. 14, 15. Job.*

(2.) That the effect of Regeneration or Conversion unto God, is aſſigned unto the *Preaching of the Word*, becauſe of its efficacy thereunto in its *own kind* and way as the outward means thereof, *1 Cor. 4. 15. James 1. 14. 1 Pet. 1. 23.*

2ly; We may conſider what is the Nature, and wherein the Efficacy of this *Moral Work* doth conſiſt. To which purpoſe we may obſerve; SECT. 10.

SECT. 11. 1. That in the use of this Means for the *Conversion of Men*, there is *preparatory* unto that wherein this *Moral Perswasion* doth consist, an *Instruction* of the Mind in the knowledg of the Will of God and its duty towards him. The first regard unto Men in the Dispensation of the Word unto them, is their *Darkness* and *Ignorance*, whereby they are alienated from the Life of God. This therefore is the first End of Divine Revelation; namely, to make *known the Counsel and Will of God* unto us; see *Matth.* 4. 15, 16. *Luk.* 4. 18, 19. *Acts* 26. 17, 18. *Acts* 20. 20, 21, 26, 27. By the Preaching of the Law and the Gospel, Men are instructed in the whole Counsel of God, and what he requires of them. And in their Apprehension hereof doth the *Illumination* of their Minds consist, whereof we must treat distinctly afterwards. Without a supposition of this *Illumination* there is no use of the *Perswasive Power* of the Word; for it consists in affecting the Mind with its Concernment in the things that it knows, or wherein it is instructed. Wherefore we suppose in this Case, that a Man is taught by the Word, both the Necessity of *Regeneration*, and what is required of himself thereunto.

SECT. 12. 2. On this Supposition, that a Man is instructed in the *knowledge* of the Will of God, as revealed in the Law and the Gospel; there is accompanying the Word of God in the Dispensation of it, a *powerful perswasive Efficacy* unto a compliance with it, and observance of it. For Instance; Suppose a Man to be convinced by the Word of God of the Nature of Sin, of his own sinful Condition; of his danger from thence with respect unto the Sin of Nature, on which account he is a *Child of Wrath*, and of his actual Sin, which further renders him obnoxious unto the *Curse of the Law*, and the Indignation of God; of his Duty hereon to turn unto God, and the way whereby he may so do; there are in the Precepts, Exhortations, Expostulations, Promises and Threatnings of the Word, especially as dispensed in the Ministry of the Church, *Powerful Motives* to affect, and Arguments to prevail with the Mind and Will of such a Man, to endeavour his own Regeneration or Conversion unto God, rational and cogent above all that can be objected unto the contrary. On some it is acknowledged that these things have *no effect*; they are not moved by them, they care not for them, they do despise them, and live and die in rebellion against the Light of them, having their *Eyes blinded by the God of this World*. But this is no Argument that they are not powerful in themselves; although indeed it is that they are not so towards us *of themselves*, but only as the Holy Spirit is pleased to act them towards us. But in these *Motives, Reasons, and Arguments*, whereby Men are in and from the Word, and the Ministry of it, urged and pressed unto Conversion to God, doth this *Moral Perswasion* whereof we speak consist. And the efficacy of it, unto the end proposed, ariseth from the things ensuing, which are all resolved into God himself.

SECT. 13. (1.) From an evidence of the *Truth* of the things from whence these Motives and Arguments were taken. The Foundation of all the Efficacy of the Dispensation of the Gospel lies in an evidence, that the things proposed

proposed in it are *not cunningly devised Fables*, 2 Pet. 1. 16. Where this is not admitted, where it is not firmly assented unto, there can be no perswasive Efficacy in it. But where this is, namely a prevalent Perswasion of the Truth of the Things proposed, there the Mind is under a Disposition unto the things whereunto it is perswaded. And hereon the whole Efficacy of the Word in and upon the Souls of Men, is resolved into the Truth and Veracity of God. For the things contained in the Scripture are not proposed unto us meerly as *true*, but as *Divine* Truths, as immediate Revelations from God, which requires not only a rational, but a sacred *Religious* respect unto them. They are Things that the *Mouth of the Lord hath spoken*.

(2.) There is a proposal unto the *Wills and Affections* of Men in the Things so assented unto, on the one hand as Good, Amiable, and Excellent, wherein the chiefest Good, Happiness, and utmost End of our Natures are comprized, to be pursued and attained; and on the other of things *Evil and Terrible*, the utmost Evil that our Nature is obnoxious unto, to be avoided. For this is urged on them, that to comply with the Will of God in the proposals of the Gospel, to conform thereunto, to do what he requires, to turn from Sin unto him, is *good* unto Men, best for them, assuredly attended with present Satisfaction and future Glory. And therein is also proposed the most noble Object for our Affections, even *God* himself as a Friend, as reconciled unto us in Christ, and that in a way suited unto his Holiness, Righteousness, Wisdom and Goodness, which we have nothing to oppose unto, nor to lay in the Ballance against. The way also of the *Reconciliation* of Sinners unto God by Jesus Christ is set out, as that which hath such an Impress of *Divine Wisdom* and Goodness upon it, as that it can be refused by none, but out of a direct enmity against God himself. Unto the enforcing of these things on the Minds of Men, the Scripture abounds with *Reasons, Motives, and Arguments*, the rendring whereof effectual, is the principal end of the Ministry. On the other hand it is declared and evidenced, that *Sin* is the great *Debasement* of our Natures, the Ruine of our Souls, the only Evil in the World, in its Guilt and Punishment; that a Continuance in a state of it, with a Rejection of the Invitation of the Gospel unto Conversion to God, is a thing foolish, unworthy of a rational Creature, and that which will be everlastingly pernicious. Whereas therefore in the judgment of every rational Creature, Spiritual Things are to be preferred before Natural, Eternal Things before Temporal, and that these things are thus disposed of in infinite Goodness, Love and Wisdom, they must needs be apt to affect the Wills, and take the Affections of Men. And herein the Efficacy of the Word on the Minds and Consciences of Men is resolved into the *Authority* of God. These Precepts, these Promises, these Threatnings are *his*, who hath *right* to give them and *power* to execute them. And with his Authority, his Glorious Greatness, and his Infinite Power come under consideration. So also doth his *Goodness* and Love in an especial manner, with many other things, even all the known *Properties* of his Holy Nature, all which concur in giving Weight, Power, and Efficacy unto these Motives and Arguments.

3. Great Power and Efficacy is added hereunto from the management SECT. 14.

of these Motives in the *preaching* of the Word. Herein by some the *Rhetorical Faculty* of them by whom it is dispensed, is of great consideration. For hereby are they able to prevail very much on the Minds of Men. Being acquainted with the Inclinations and Dispositions of all sorts of Persons, the nature of their Affections and Prejudices, with the *Topics* or kinds and heads of Arguments meet to affect them and prevail with them; as also the wayes of insinuating Perswasive Motives to their Minds, they express the whole in words elegant, proper, expressive, and suited to allure, draw, and ingage them unto the Wayes and Duties proposed unto them.* Herein do some place the principal Use

* Τὸ τὸ ὄφελος, ἔαν ἐνσπινθεῖται μὴ
ὁ λόγος, κακασπινθεῖται ὁ ὅτερος;
εἰ μὴ γὰρ σοφιστὴς διδασκαλεῖον ἢ ἐκ-
κλησια ἐν γλωσσῇ ἢ οὐ καίρετος. Ἐπει-
δὲ ὁ τρεῖς τῶν ἀγῶν καὶ καρποφορεῖ τὸ
προσδοκώμενον, καὶ προσδοκία ἐργαζώ-
ντων τὸ προσδοκώμενον μὴ γλύπτει ζήτησιν,
ἀλλ' ὁ τρεῖς. Athanas. de Semente.

and Efficacy of the Ministry in the *dispensation* of the Word, with me it is of no consideration. For our Apostle rejects it utterly from any place in his Ministry; 1 Cor. 2. 4. *My Speech and my Preaching was not with enticing words of Man's Wisdom, but in the demonstration of the Spirit and of Power.* Some of late have put in faint and weak Exceptions unto the latter Clause, as

though not an evidence of the powerful presence of the Spirit of God in the Dispensation of the Gospel were intended therein, but the power of *working Miracles*, contrary to the whole scope of the place, and consent of the best Expositors. But that by the first Clause, the *Perswasive Art of Humane Oratory*, is excluded from Use and Efficacy in the preaching of the Gospel, none as yet hath had the impudence to deny. But let this also be esteemed to be as useful and efficacious in this Work, as to the end of Preaching in the Conversion of the Souls of Men, as any can imagine, it shall be granted. Only I shall take leave to resolve the *Efficacy of Preaching* into two other Causes.

SECT. 15. 1. The *Institution of God*: He hath appointed the Preaching of the Word to be the Means, the only outward ordinary Means for the Conversion of the Souls of Men, 1 Cor. 1. 17, 18, 19, 20. Mar. 16. 15, 16. Rom. 1. 16. And the Power or Efficacy of any thing that is used unto an End in Spiritual Matters, depends solely on its *Divine Appointment* unto that End.

SECT. 16. 2. The *Especial Gifts* that the Spirit of God doth furnish the Preachers of the Gospel withal, to enable them unto an effectual discharge of their Work, Ephes. 4. 11, 12, 13. whereof we shall treat afterwards. All the Power therefore that these things are accompanied withal, is resolved into the *sovereignty* of God. For he hath chosen this way of Preaching for this End, and he bestows these Gifts on whom he pleaseth. From these things it is that the *Perswasive Motives* which the Word abounds withal unto Conversion or turning to God from Sin, have that peculiar Efficacy on the Minds of Men which is proper unto them.

SECT. 17. 4. We do not therefore in this Case suppose that the *Motives of the Word* are left unto a meer *Natural Operation*, with respect unto the Ability of them by whom it is dispensed; but moreover that it is blessed of God, and accompanied with the *Power of the Holy Spirit*, for the producing

cing of its Effect and End upon the Souls of Men. Only the Operation of the Holy Ghost, on the Minds and Wills of Men in and by these means, is supposed to extend no further, but unto *Motives, Arguments, Reasons* and *Considerations*, proposed unto the Mind, so to influence the Will and the Affections. Hence his Operation is herein *Moral*, and so *Metaphorical*, not real, proper, and *Physical*. Now concerning this whole Work, I affirm these two things.

1. That the Holy Spirit doth make use of it in the *Regeneration* or **SECT. 18.** Conversion of all that are *Adult*, and that either immediately in and by the Preaching of it, or by some other Application of Light and Truth unto the Mind derived from the Word; For by the Reasons, Motives, and Persuasive Arguments which the Word affords, are our Minds affected, and our Souls wrought upon in our Conversion unto God, whence it becomes our *reasonable* Obedience. And there are none ordinarily converted, but they are able to give some account by what *Considerations* they were prevailed on thereunto. But;

2. We say that the whole Work, or the *whole of the Work* of the Holy Ghost in our *Conversion* doth not consist herein; but there is a real, *Physical* Work, whereby he infuseth a gracious Principle of *Spiritual Life* into all that are effectually Converted, and really Regenerated, and without which there is no Deliverance from the State of Sin and Death which we have described; which among others may be proved by the ensuing Arguments.

The principal Arguments in this Case will ensue in our Proofs from **SECT. 19.** the Scriptures, that there is a *Real, Physical* Work of the Spirit on the Souls of Men in their Regeneration. That all he doth, consisteth not in this *Moral Swason*, the ensuing Reasons do sufficiently evince.

1. If the Holy Spirit worketh no otherwise on Men in their Regeneration or Conversion, but by * proposing unto them, and urging upon them, *Reasons, Arguments*, and *Motives* to that purpose; then after his whole Work, and notwithstanding it, the Will of Man remains absolutely indifferent whether it will admit of them or no; or whether it will *convert it self* unto God upon them or no; for the *whole* of this Work consists in proposing *Objects* unto the Will, with respect whereunto it is left *undetermined* whether it will chuse and close with them or no. And indeed this is that which some plead for. For they say, That in all Men, at least all unto whom the Gospel is Preached, there is that *Grace* present, or with them, that they are able to comply with the Word *if they please*, and so believe, repent, or do any Act of Obedience unto God according to his Will. And if they will, they can refuse to make use of this Assistance, Aid, Power, or Grace, and so continue

* Non est igitur Gratia Dei in liberi Arbitrii natura, &c. in lege atque Doctrina sicut Pelagius desipit. sed ad singulos actus datur illius voluntate de quo scriptum est; Plurimum voluntarium segregabis Deus hereditati tuae. Quia & liberum Arbitrium ad diligendum Deum primi peccati granditate perdidimus; & lex Dei atque doctrina quamvis sancta & iusta, tamen occidit, si non vivificet Spiritus, per quem fit non ut audiendo sed ut obediendo, neque ut lectione sed ut dilectione teneatur. Quapropter ut in Deum credamus & pie vivamus, non volentis neque currentis sed miscentis est Dei; non quia velle non debemus & currere, sed quia ipse in nobis & velle operatur & currere; Non ergo gratiam dicamus esse Doctrinam, sed agnoscamus Gratiam quae facit prodesse Doctrinam; quae Gratia si desit, videmus etiam obesse Doctrinam. August. Epist. 107. ad Vitalem.

in their Sins. What this *Grace* is, or whence Men have this Power and Ability, by some is not declared. Neither is it much to be doubted but that many do imagine that it is purely *Natural*; only they will allow it to be called *Grace*, because it is from *God* who made us. Others acknowledg it to be the Work or Effect of *Grace Internal*, wherein part of the difference lay, between the *Pelagians* and *Semi-pelagians* of old. But they all agree that it is absolutely in the *Power of the Will* of Man to make use of it or not; that is, of the whole Effect on them, or product in them of this *Grace* communicated in the way described. For notwithstanding any thing wrought in us or upon us thereby, the Will is still left *various, flexible, and undetermined*. It is true, that notwithstanding the *Grace* thus Administred, the Will hath *Power to refuse it* and to abide in Sin. But that there is *no more Grace* wrought in us, but what may be so refused, or that the Will *can make use* of that *Grace* for Conversion, which it *can refuse*, is false.

SECT. 20. For (1.) this ascribes the whole Glory of our Regeneration and Conversion unto *our selves*, and not to the *Grace* of God. For that Act of our Wills, on this Supposition, whereby we convert unto God, is merely an *Act of our own*, and not of the *Grace* of God. This is evident, for if the Act itself were of *Grace*, then would it not be in the *Power of the Will* to hinder it. (2.) This would leave it absolutely uncertain, notwithstanding the purpose of God, and the purchase of Christ, whether ever any one in the World should be Converted unto God or no. For when the whole Work of *Grace* is over, it is absolutely in the Power of the Will of Man whether it shall be effectual or no; and so absolutely uncertain; which is contrary to the Covenant, Promise, and Oath of God, unto and with Jesus Christ. (3.) It is contrary to express Testimonies of Scripture innumerable, wherein actual *Conversion* unto God is ascribed unto his *Grace*, as the immediate Effect thereof. This will further appear afterwards. *God worketh in us to will and to do*, Phil. 2. 13. The Act therefore it self of *willing* in our Conversion, is of God's Operation; and although we will *our selves*, yet it is he who *causeth us to Will*, by working in us *to will and to do*. And if the Act of our Will in Believing and Obedience, in our Conversion to God, be not the effect of his *Grace* in us, he doth *not work in us both to will and to do of his own good Pleasure*.

SECT. 21. Secondly; This *Moral Perswasion*, how-ever advanced or improved, and supposed to be effectual, yet it confers no new *real supernatural strength* unto the Soul. For whereas it worketh, yea, the Spirit or *Grace* of God therein and thereby, by *Reasons*, Motives, Arguments, and Objective Considerations and no otherwise, it is able only to excite and

* *Sed quid illud est quo corporeorum sensuum pulsantur, in agro cordis cui impenditur ista cultura, nec radicem potest figere nec germen emittere, nisi ille summus & verus Agricola potentia sui operis adhibuerit, & ad vitalem profectum ea quæ sunt plantata perduxerit. Epist. ad Demetriadem.*

draw out the *strength which we have*, delivering the Mind and Affections from Prejudices and other Moral Impediments: Real Aid, * and internal Spiritual Strength, neither is nor can be conferred thereby. And he who will acknowledg that there is any such *internal spiritual strength* communicated unto us, must also acknowledg that there is another Work of the Spirit

Spirit of God in us and upon us, than can be effected by these Perswasions. But thus it is in this case as some suppose. The *Mind* of Man is affected with much *Ignorance*, and usually under the Power of many *Prejudices*, which by the corrupt course of things in the World, possess it from its first aſſings in the state of Infancy. The *Will* and the *Affecti- ons* likewise are vitiated with depraved Habits, which by the same means are contracted. But when the Gospel is proposed and preached unto them, the Things contained in it, the Duties it requires, the Promises it gives, are so rational or so suited unto the Principles of our Reason, and the *subject Matter* of them is so good, desirable and beautiful unto an intellectual Appetite, that being well conveyed unto the Mind, they are able to discard all the Prejudices and Disadvantages of a *corrupt course* under which it hath suffered, and prevail with the Soul to desist from sin, that is, a course of sinning, and to become a *new Man* in all vertuous Conversation. And that this is in the Liberty and Power of the Will, is irrefragably proved by that Sophism of *Biel* out of *Scotus* and *Occam*, which contains the substance of what they plead in this Cause. * Yea, thus to do, is so suitable unto the rational Principles of a well-disposed Mind, that to do otherwise, is the greatest folly and madness in the World. Especially will this Work of *Conversion* be unquestionably wrought, if the Application of these means of it, be so disposed in the Providence of God, as that they may be *seasonable*, with respect unto the Frame and Condition of the Mind whereinto they are applied. And as sundry things are necessary to render the means of Grace thus seasonable and *congruous* unto the present Frame, Temper, and Disposition of the Mind, so in such a Congruity much of its Efficacy doth consist. And this, as it is said, is the Work of the Holy Ghost, and an Effect of the Grace of God. For if the Spirit of God did not by the Word, prevent, excite, stir up and provoke the Minds of Men; did he not help and assist them when endeavouring to turn to God, in the removal of Prejudices and all sorts of *Moral Impediments*, Men would continue and abide, as it were, dead in Trespasses and Sins, at least their endeavours after Deliverance would be weak and fruitless.

* This is all the Grace, all the Work of the Spirit of God in our *Regeneration* and Conversion, which some will acknowledg, so far as I can learn from their Writings and Discourses. But that there is more required thereunto, I have before declared. As also it hath been manifested what is the true and proper use and efficacy of these *means* in this Work. But to place the whole of it herein, is that which *Pelagius* contended for of old; Yea, he granted a greater Use and Efficacy of Grace, than I can find to be allowed in the present confused Discourses of some

SECT. 22.

† *Omni dicamini recte rationis potest voluntas se conformare; sed diligere Deum super omnia est dicamen recte rationis; ratio enim dicitur inter omnia diligenda esse aliquid summe diligendum. Item homo errans potest diligere creaturam super omnia, ergo etiam Deum; mirum enim valde esset, quod voluntas se conformare possit dicamini erroneo & non recto. Biel. 2. sent. distinc. 27. q. Art. 4.*

* *Hoc piarum mentium est, ut nihil sibi tribuant, sed totum Gratia Dei; unde quantumcunque aliquis det Gratia Dei, etiamsi subtrahat potestati nature aut liberi arbitrii a pietate non recedit; cum vero aliquid Gratia Dei subtrahitur & Nature tribuitur quod Gratia est, ibi potest periculum intervenire. Cassander. lib. Consult. Art. 68.*

on

* Pelagiana
heresia quo
dogmate Ca-
tholicam fi-
dem destrue-
re adortus sit,
& quibus
impietatum
venenis vis-
cera Ecclesie
atque ipsa
vitalia cor-
poris Christi
voluerit oc-
cupare, notio-
ra sunt quam
ut opere Nar-

on this * Subject. Wherefore it is somewhat preposterous to endeavour an imposition of such rotten Errors upon the Minds of Men; and that by crude Assertions, without any pretence of proof, as is the way of many. And that the sole Foundation of all their Harangues, namely, the sustainability of Gospel-Principles and Promises unto our Wisdom and Reason, antecedently unto any saving Work of the Spirit on our Minds, is directly contradictory to the Doctrine of our Apostle, shall afterwards be declared. But it may be it will be said, That it is not so much what is Pelagian, and what is not, as what is Truth and what is not, that is to be enquired after. And it is granted, that this is and ought to be our first and principal Enquiry. But it is not unuseful to know in whose steps they tread, who at this day oppose the doctrine of the Effectual Grace of Christ; and what Judgment the Ancient Church made of their Principles and Opinions.

rationis indigeant. Ex his tamen una est blasphemia, nequissimum & subtilissimum germen aliarum, quæ dicunt Gratiam Dei secundum merita hominum dari. Cum enim primo tantam naturæ humane vel- lent astruere sanitatem ut per solum liberum arbitrium posset assequi Dei regnum; eo quod tam plene ip- so conditionis suæ presidio juvaretur, ut habens naturaliter rationalem intellectum facile bonum eli- geret malumque vitaret. Et ubi in utraque parte libera essent opera voluntatis, non facultatem his qui mali sunt deesse, sed studium. Cum ergo ut dixi totam justitiam hominis ex naturali vellemus relictum- dine ac possibilitate subsistere, atque hanc definitionem doctrina sana respiceret, damnatum a Catholicis sensum & multis postea hereticæ fraudis varietatibus coloratum, hoc apud se ingenio servaverunt, ut ad incipiendum, & ad proficiendum, & ad perseverandum in bono necessariam homini Dei Gratiam pro- ficerentur. Sed in hac professione quomodo vasa iræ molirentur irrepere, ipsa Dei Gratia vasis miseri- cordiæ revelavit. Intellectum est enim, saluberrimeque perspectum hoc tantum eos de Gratia confiteri, quod quadam libero Arbitrio sit Magistra, sequi per cohortationes, per Legem, per Doctrinam, per Creaturam, per Contemplationem, per Miracula, perque terrores extrinsecus judicio ejus ostendat; quo unusquisque secundum Voluntatis suæ motum, si quaesierit inveniat, si petierit, recipiat; si pulsaverit introeat. Prosp. ad Rufin. de lib. Arbit.

SECT. 23. It is pretended yet further, That Grace in the Dispensation of the Word doth work really and efficiently, especially by illumination, internal excitations of the Mind and Affections; and if thereon the Will do put forth its Act, and thereby determine it self in the choice of that which is good, in believing and repenting; then the Grace thus administred concurs with it, helps and aids it in the perfecting of its Act, so that the whole Work is of Grace. So pleaded the Semi-Pelagians, and so do others continue to do. But all this while, the way whereby Grace or the Spirit of God worketh this Illumination, excites the Affections and Aids the Will, is by Moral Perswasion only, no real strength being communicated or infused, but what the Will is at perfect liberty to make use of or to refuse at pleasure. Now this in effect is no less than to overthrow the whole Grace of Jesus Christ, and to render it useless. For it ascribes unto Man the Honour of his Conversion, his Will being the principal cause of it. It makes a Man to beget himself a-new, or to be born again of himself; to make himself differ from others, by that which he hath not in an especial manner received. It takes away the Analogie that there is between the forming of the Natural Body of Christ in the Womb, and the forming of his Mystical Body in Regeneration. It makes the Act of living unto God by Faith and Obedience, to be a meer Natural Act, no Fruit of the Mediation or Purchase of Christ, and allows

allows the Spirit of God no more Power nor Efficacy in or towards our *Regeneration*, than is in a Minister who preacheth the Word, or in an *Orator*, who eloquently and pathetically persuades to Virtue and deports from Vice. And all these consequences it may be will be granted by some amongst us, and allowed to be true; to that pass are things come in the World, through the confident pride and ignorance of Men. But not only it *may be*, but plainly and directly the whole Gospel and Grace of Christ are renounced where they are admitted.

This is not *all that we * pray for*, either for our selves or others, when we beg effectual Grace for them or our selves. There was no Argument that the Ancients more pressed the *Pelagians* withal, than that the Grace which they acknowledged, did not answer the *Prayers* of the Church, or what we are taught in the Scripture to pray for. We are to pray *only* for what God hath promised, and for the communication of it unto us in that way whereby he will work it and effect it. Now he is at a great indifferency in this Matter, who only prays that God would *persuade* him or *others*, to believe and to obey, to be converted or to convert himself. The Church of God hath alwayes prayed that God would *work* these things in us; and those who have a real concernment in them, do pray continually that God would effectually work them in their Hearts. They pray that he would *convert them*, that he would *create a clean heart*, and *renew a right Spirit in them*; that he would *give them Faith for Christ's sake*, and *increase it in them*; and that in all these things he would work in them by the *exceeding greatness of his Power* both to *will* and to *do* according to his good pleasure. And there is not a *Pelagian* in the World who e're once prayed for Grace, or gracious Assistance against Sin and Temptation, with a sense of his want of it, but that his Prayers contradicted his Profession. To think that by all these Petitions, with others innumerable dictated unto us in the Scripture, and which a Spiritual Sense of our Wants will ingage into, we desire nothing but only that God would persuade, excite and stir us up to put forth a Power and Ability of our *own*, in the performance of what we desire, is contrary unto all Christian Experience. Yea, for a Man to lie praying with Importunity, Earnestness, and Fervency, for that which is in his *own Power*, and can never be effected but by his own Power, is fond and ridiculous. And they do but mock God who pray unto him to do that for them which they can do for themselves, and which God *cannot do* for them but only when and as they do it for themselves. Suppose a Man to have a Power in himself to believe and repent; suppose these to be such Acts of his Will as God doth not, indeed *cannot* by his Grace work in him, but only *persuade* him thereunto, and shew him *sufficient Reason* why he should so do; to what purpose should this Man, or with what congruity could he *pray* that God would *give him Faith* and Repentance. This some of late, as it seems, *wisely observing*, do begin to scoff at and reproach the Prayers of Christians. For whereas in all their Supplications for Grace, they lay the Foundation of them in an humble Acknowledgment of their *own vileness* and impotency unto any thing that is spiritu-

SECT. 24.

* *Inaniter & perfunctorie potius quam veraciter pro eis ut doctrina. cui adversantur credendo consentiant, Deo fundimus preces, si ad ejus non pertinet Grati- am convertere ad fidem suam, ipsi fidei contrarias voluntates. August. Epist. 107.*

ally Good, yea, and a *natural aversation* from it, and a sense of the Power and Working of the Remainder of *in-dwelling Sin* in them; hereby ex-

* *Prima Divini muneris Gratia est, ut erudiat nos ad nostræ humilitatis Confessionem, & agnoscere faciat, quod si quid boni agimus per illum possumus, sine quo nihil possumus. Prosp. sentent. 105. ex Augustino.*

† *Quicumque tribuit sibi bonum quod facit, etiamsi videtur nihil mali manibus operari, jam cordis innocentiam perdidit in quo se largitori bonorum pretulit. Hieron. in cap. 16. Proverb.*

O bone Domine Iesu, etsi ego admisi unde me dammare potes, tu non amisisti unde salvare soles. — Verum est Conscientia mea meretur Damnationem, & penitentia mea non sufficit ad satisfactionem. Sed certum est quod Misericordia tua superat omnem offensionem. Parce ergo mihi Domine, qui es salus vera & non vis mortem peccatoris: miserere Domine peccatrici anime meæ, solve vincula ejus, sana vulnera ejus. Ecce miserearis Deus coram te exhibeo animam meam, virtutum muneribus desolatam, catenis vitiorum ligatam, pondere peccatorum gravatam, delictorum sordibus sordatam, discissam Vulneribus Daemonum, putidam & fetidam ulceribus criminum: his & aliis gravioribus malis quæ tu melius vides quam ego, obstrictam, oppressam, circumdatam, obvolutam, bonorum omnium relevamine destitutam, &c.

citing themselves unto that earnestness and importunity in their requests for Grace, which their * Condition makes necessary, (which hath been the constant practice of Christians since there was one in the World); this is by them derided and exposed to contempt. In the room therefore of such despised Prayers, I shall supply them with an Ancient *Form* that is better suited unto their Principles. † The Preface unto it is, *Ille ad Deum digne elevat manus, ille Orationem bonâ Conscientiâ effundit qui potest dicere*: The Prayer followeth; *Tu nosti Domine quam Sancta & Pura & Munda sint ab omni malitia, & iniquitate, & rapina quas ad te extendo manus. Quemadmodum justa & munda labia & ab omni mendacio libera quibus offero tibi Deprecationes, ut mihi miserearis.* This Prayer Pelagius taught a Widow to make, as it was objected unto him in the *Diospolitan Synod*, that is at *Lydia in Palestine*, cap. 6. only he taught her not to say that she had *no deceit in her Heart*, as one among us doth wisely and humbly vaunt that he knoweth of none in *his*, so every way perfect is the Man. Only to ballance this of *Pelagius*, I shall give these Men another Prayer, but in the Margin, not declaring whose it is, lest they should censure him to the Gallows. Whereas therefore it seems to be the Doctrine of some, that we have no Grace from Christ but only that of the Gospel teaching us our Duty, and proposing a Reward; I know not what they have to pray for, unless it be Riches, Wealth, and Preferments, with those things that depend thereon.

SECT. 25. Fourthly; This kind of the *Operation of Grace* where it is *solitary*, that is, where it is asserted exclusively to an internal *Physical work* of the Holy Spirit, is not suited to effect and produce the Work of *Regeneration* or *Conversion* unto God, in Persons who are really in that state of Nature which we have before described. The most effectual Perswasions cannot prevail with such Men to *convert themselves*, no more than Arguments can prevail with a *blind Man to see*, or with a *dead Man to rise from the Grave*, or with a *lame Man to walk steadily*. Wherefore the whole Description before given from the Scripture of the state of *lapsed Nature*, must be disproved and removed out of the way, before this Grace can be thought sufficient to be for the *Regeneration* and *Conversion* of Men in that Estate. But some proceed on other Principles; Men, they say, have by Nature certain Notions and Principles concerning God, and the Obedience due unto him; which are demonstrable by the Light of

of Reason, and certain Abilities of Mind to make use of them unto their proper End. But they grant, at least some of them do, that however these Principles may be improved and acted by those Abilities, yet they are not sufficient, or will not eventually be effectual to bring Men unto the Life of God, or to enable them so to believe in him, love him, and obey him, as that they may come at length unto the enjoyment of him, at least they will not do this safely and easily, but through much danger and confusion; wherefore * God out of his Goodness and Love to Mankind, hath made a further Revelation of himself by Jesus Christ in the Gospel, with the especial way whereby his Anger against Sin is averted, and Peace made for Sinners, which Men had before only a confused Apprehension and Hope about. Now the things received, proposed, and prescribed in the Gospel, are so good, so rational, so every way suited unto the Principles of our Beings, the Nature of our intellectual Constitutions, or the Reason of Men, and those fortified with such rational and powerful Motives, in the Promises and Threatnings of it, representing unto us on the one hand the chiefest Good which our Nature is capable of, and on the other the highest evil to be avoided that we are obnoxious unto, that they can be refused or rejected by none, but out of a brutish love of Sin, or the efficacy of depraved Habits contracted by a vicious course of living. And herein consists the Grace of God towards Men, especially as the Holy Ghost is pleased to make use of these things in the Dispensation of the Gospel by the Ministry of the Church. For when the Reason of Men is by these means excited so far as to cast off Prejudices, and enabled thereby to make a right Judgment of what is proposed unto it, it prevails with them to convert to God, to change their Lives, and yield Obedience according to the Rule of the Gospel that they may be saved.

And no doubt this were a notable *Systeme* of Christian Doctrine, especially as it is by some *Rhetorically* blended, or *Theatrically* represented in feigned *Stories* and *Apologues*, were it not defective in one or two things; For, first, it is exclusive of a supposition of the fall of Man, at least as unto the Depravation of our Nature which ensued thereon; and, Secondly, of all real Effective Grace dispensed by Jesus Christ; * which render it a *Phantastick Dream*, alien from the Design and Doctrine of the Gospel. But it is a fond thing to discourse with Men about either Regeneration or Conversion unto God, by whom these things are denied.

*Gratia qua Christi populus sumus hoc cohibetur
Limine nobiscum, & formam hanc ascribitis illi;
Ut cunctos vocet illa quidem invitetque, neque ullum
Præteriens studeat communem adferre salutem
Omnibus, & totum peccato absolvere Mundum.
Sed proprio quæque Arbitrio parere vocanti,
Judicioque suo, mota se extendere mente
Ad lucem oblatam, quæ se non substrabat ulli;
Sed cupidos recti juvet illustretque volentes.
Hinc adjutoris Domini bonitate Magistra
Crescere virtutum studia, ut quid quisque petendum
Mandatis didicit jugi scèdetur amore.*

Prosp. de Ingratis cap. 10.

* *Ploremus coram Domino qui fecit nos & homines
& salvos. Nam si ille nos fecit homines, nos autem
ipsi nos fecimus salvos, aliquid illo melius fecimus;
melior est enim salvus homo quam quilibet homo.
Si ergo te Deus fecit hominem, & tu te fecisti
bonum hominem, quod tu fecisti melius est. Aug.
de Verb. Apost. Serm. 10.*

*Natura humana etiamsi in illa integritate in qua est
condita, permaneret, nullo modo seipsam creatore
suo non adjuvante servaret. Unde cum sine Dei
Gratia salutem non posset custodire quam accepit, quomodo
sine Dei Gratia posset recuperare quam perdidit.
Prosp. Sentent. 308.*

SECT. 27. Such a Work of the Holy Spirit we must therefore enquire after, as whereby the Mind is *effectually* renewed, the Heart *changed*, the Affections *sanctified*, all actually and effectually, or no Deliverance will be wrought, obtained, or ensue, out of the Estate described. For notwithstanding the utmost improvement of our Minds and Reasons that can be imagined, and the most eminent *proposal* of the Truths of the Gospel, accompanied with the most powerful enforcements of Duty and Obedience that the Nature of the things themselves will afford; yet the Mind of Man in the state of Nature, without a supernatural Elevation by Grace, is not able so to apprehend them, as that its Apprehension should be Spiritual, Saving, or Proper unto the Things apprehended. And notwithstanding the Perception which the Mind may attain unto in the Truth of Gospel-Proposals; and the Conviction it may have of the *necessity* of Obedience, yet is not the Will able to apply it self unto any Spiritual Act thereof, without an Ability wrought immediately in it by the Power of the Spirit of God; or rather unless the Spirit of God by his Grace *do effect the Act of willing* in it. Wherefore not to multiply Arguments, we conclude, That the most effectual use of outward means alone, is not *all the Grace* that is necessary unto, nor all that is actually put forth in the *Regeneration* of the Souls of Men.

SECT. 28. Having thus evidenced wherein the Work of the Holy Spirit in the *Regeneration* of the Souls of Men, doth not consist, namely, in a supposed *congruous* Perswasion of their Minds where it is alone:

(1.) I shall proceed to shew wherein it doth consist, and what is the true Nature of it. And to this purpose I say, (1.) What-ever efficacy that *Moral Operation*, which accompanies, or is the Effect of the Preaching of the Word, as blessed and used by the Holy Spirit, is of or may be supposed to be of, or is possible that it should be of in and towards them that are *unregenerate*, we do willingly ascribe unto it. We grant that in the Work of Regeneration, the Holy Spirit towards those that are *Adult*, doth make use of the Word, both the Law and the Gospel, and the Ministry of the Church in the Dispensation of it, as the ordinary means thereof; yea, this is ordinarily the whole *external means* that is made use of in this Work, and an efficacy proper unto it, it is accompanied withal. Whereas therefore some contend that there is no more needful to the Conversion of Sinners, but the *Preaching of the Word* unto them who are congruously disposed to receive it, and that the whole of the Grace of God consists in the effectual Application of it unto the Minds and Affections of Men, whereby they are enabled to comply with it, and turn unto God by Faith and Repentance; they do not ascribe a greater Power unto the Word, than we do by whom this Administration of it is denied to be the *total Cause* of Conversion. For we assign the same Power to the Word as they do, and more also, onely we affirm that there is an Effect to be wrought in this Work, which all this Power, if *alone*, is insufficient for. But in its *own* kind is it sufficient and effectual, so far as that the effect of Regeneration or Conversion unto God is ascribed thereunto. This we have declared before.

(2.) There

(2.) There is not onely a *Moral*,
 * but a *Physical* immediate Operation
 of the Spirit by his Power and Grace,
 or his powerful Grace upon the Minds
 or Souls of Men in their *Regeneration*.
 This is that which we must cleave to,
 or all the Glory of God's Grace is lost,
 and the Grace administred by Christ
 neglected. So is it asserted, *Ephes. 1.*
19, 20. *That we may know what is the*
exceeding greatness of his Power towards
us who believe, according to the working
of his Mighty Power; which he wrought
in Christ when he raised him from the
Dead. The Power here mentioned,
 hath an exceeding *Greatness* ascribed
 unto it, with respect unto the Effect
 produced by it. The Power of God
 in it self is as unto all Acts equally
 Infinite, he is Omnipotent. But some
 Effects are greater than others, and
 carry in them more than ordinary Im-
 pressions of it. Such is that here in-
 tended, whereby God makes Men to be

Believers, and preserves them when they are so. And unto this Power of
 God, there is an *Actual Operation* or *Efficiency* ascribed, the *working of his*
mighty Power. And the Nature of this operation or efficiency is declared to
 be of the same kind with that which was exerted in the raising of Christ
 from the Dead. And this was by a real *Physical Efficiency* of Divine
 Power. This therefore is here testified, That the Work of God to-
 wards Believers, either to make them so, or preserve them such, for all
 is one as unto our present purpose, consists in the acting of his *Divine*
Power by a real internal Efficiency. So God is said to fulfil in us all the
 good pleasure of his Goodness, and the Work of Faith with Power, *2 Thess.*
1. 11. *2 Pet. 1. 3.* And hence the Work of Grace in Conversion is
 constantly expressed by words denoting a real internal Efficiency, such
 are *Creating, Quickning, Forming, Giving a new Heart*, whereof af-
 terwards. Where-ever this Work is spoken of, with respect unto an
Active Efficiency it is ascribed unto God. He *Creates us a new*, he
Quickens us, he *Begets us* of his own Will; but where it is spoke of
 with respect unto us, there it is *passively* expressed; we are *Created in*
Christ Jesus, we are *new Creatures*, we are *Born again*; and the like;
 which one Observation is sufficient to evert the whole *Hypothesis* of *Ar-*
minian Grace. Unless a Work wrought by Power, and that real, and
 immediate be intended herein, such a Work may neither be supposed pos-
 sible, nor can be expressed. Wherefore it is plain in the Scripture,
 That the Spirit of God works internally, immediately, *efficiently* in and
 upon the Minds of Men in their Regeneration. The New Birth is the
 Effect of an Act of his Power and Grace; or, no Man is *born again* but
 it is by the inward Efficiency of the Spirit.

* *At vero Omnipotens hominem cum Gratiâ salvat,*
Ipsa suum consummat opus cui tempus agendi
Semper adest, quæ gesta velim non moribus illi
Fit mora, non causis anceps suspenditur ullis.
Nec quod sola potest cura officioque Ministri
Exequitur, famulisve vicem committit agendi.
Qui quamvis multa admoneant mandata vocant,
Pulsant non inrant animas; Deus ergo sepultos
Suscitat & solvit peccati compede victos.
Ille obscuratis Cordibus dat intellectum.
Ille ex injustis justos facit, indit amorem
Quo redametur amans; & amor quem conferet ipse est.
Hunc itaque Affectum quo sumunt mortua Vitam,
Quo tenebra fiunt lumen, quo immunda vilescunt;
Quo stulti sapere incipiunt ægrique valescunt
Nemo alii dat, nemo sibi.

Prosp. de Ingrat. cap. 15.

Legant ergo & intelligant, intueantur & fatean-
tur, non lege atque Doctrina insonante forinsecus,
sed intima atque occulta, mirabili atque ineffabili po-
testate operari Deum in cordibus hominum non solum
veras Revelationes, sed etiam bonas Voluntates. Au-
 gust. lib. de Grat. Christ. adv. Pelagium & Cælest.
 cap. 24.

SECT. 30.

* *Quid est omnis qui audit a Patre, & didicit, venit ad me; nisi nullus est qui audiat & discat a Patre & non veniat ad me? Si enim omnis qui audit a Patre & didicit, venit, profectio omnis qui non venit non audit a Patre nec didicit: nam si audisset & didicisset veniret; — Hec itaque Gratia quæ occulte humanis Cordibus divina largitate tribuitur, a nullo duro corde respuitur; ideo quippe tribuitur ut Cordis duritia primitus auferatur. Augustin. de Predestinatione Sanctorum, lib. 1. cap. 8.*

* *O qualis est artifex ille Spiritus! nulla ad discendum mora agitur in omne quod voluerit. Mox enim ut eligeret mentem docet; solumque tetigisse docuisse est. Nam humanum subito ut illustrat immutat affectum; abnegat hoc repente quod erat, exhibet repente quod non erat. Gregor. Hom. 30. in Evangel.*

effect which in their own Nature they have a tendency unto. Were it otherwise, all Believers would be perfect. But it is manifest in Experience, that we do not alwayes answer the Inclinations of Grace, at least as unto the Degree which it moves toward. But yet even such Motions also, if they are of and from Saving-Grace, are effectual so far, and for all those ends which they are designed unto in the Purpose of God; for his Will shall not be frustrate in any Instance. And where any Work of Grace is not effectual, God never intended it should be so,

(3.) This Internal Efficiency of the Holy Spirit on the Minds of Men, as to the Event, is * infallible, victorious, irresistible, or alwayes efficacious. But in this Assertion, we suppose that the measure of the Efficacy of Grace, and the End to be attained, are fixed by the Will of God. As to that End whereunto of God it is designed, it is alwayes prevalent or effectual and cannot be resisted; or, it will effectually work what God designs it to work; for wherein he will work none shall let him; and who hath resisted his Will? There are many motions of Grace even in the Hearts of Believers, which are thus far resisted, as that they attain not that

nor did put forth that Power of Grace which was necessary to make it so. * Wherefore in or towards whomsoever the Holy Spirit puts forth his Power, or acts his Grace for their Regeneration, it removes all Obstacles, overcomes all Oppositions, and infallibly produceth the Effect intended. This Proposition being of great importance to the Glory of God's Grace, and most signally opposed by the Patrons of corrupted Nature and Man's free Will in the state thereof, must be both explained and confirmed. We say therefore;

SECT. 31. (1.) The Power which the Holy Ghost puts forth in our Regeneration, is such in its Acting or Exercise, as our Minds, Wills, and Affections, are suited to be wrought upon, and to be affected by it according to their Natures, and natural Operations. *Turn thou me, and I shall be turned; draw me, and I shall run after thee.* He doth neither act in them any otherwise than they themselves are meet to be moved and move, to be acted and act, according to their own Nature, Power and Ability. He draws us with the Cords of a Man. And the Work it self is expressed by perswading, *God perswade Japhet; and alluring; I will allure Her into the Wilderness and speak comfortably:* For as it is certainly effectual, so it carries no more repugnancy unto our Faculties, than a prevalent Perswasion doth. So that;

SECT. 32. (2.) He doth not in our Regeneration possess the Mind with any Enthusiastical Impressions; nor acteth absolutely upon us as he did in extraordinary Prophetical Inspirations of old, where the Minds and Organs of the Bodies of Men were meerly Passive Instruments, moved by him above

above their own natural capacity and activity, not only as to the Principle of Working, but as to the manner of Operation. But he works on the Minds of Men, in and by their own *natural Actings*, through an immediate influence and impression of his Power. *Create in me a clean Heart, O God. He worketh to will and to do.*

(3.) He therefore offers no * Violence or Compulsion unto the Will. This that Faculty is not naturally capable to give Admission unto. If it be compelled it is destroyed. And the mention that is made in the Scripture of *compelling* (*compel them to come in*) respects the certainty of the Event, not the manner of the Operation on them. But whereas the Will in the depraved Condition of Fallen Nature, is not only *habitually* filled and possessed with an aversation from that which is good Spiritually, (*alienated from the Life of God*) but also continually acts an Opposition unto it, as being under the Power of the Carnal Mind which is *Enmity against God*; And whereas this Grace of the Spirit in Conversion doth prevail against all this Opposition, and is effectual and *victorious* over it; it will be enquired how this can any otherwise be done, but by a kind of *Violence & Compulsion*; seeing we have evinced already that *Moral Persuasion* and Objective Allurement is not sufficient thereunto? *Ans.* It is acknowledged, That in the *Work* of Conversion unto God, though not in the very *Act* of it, there is a *Reaction* between Grace and the *Will*, their *Acts* being contrary, and that Grace is therein *victorious*; and yet no Violence or Compulsion is offered unto the Will, For;

SECT. 33.

* *Christus non dicit, duxerit, ut illic aliquo modo intelligamus precedere voluntatem; sed dicit traxerit, quis autem trahitur si jam volebat; & tamen nemo venit nisi velit, trahitur ergo miris modis ut velit, ab illo qui novit intus in ipsis hominum cordibus operari; non ut homines quod fieri non potest, nolentes credant, sed ut volentes ex nolentibus fiant.* August. cont. duas Epist. Pelag. cap. 19.

Certum est nos velle cum volumus, sed ille facit ut velimus, de quo dictum est, Deus est qui operatur in nobis velle. Idem de Grat. & lib. Arbit. cap. 16.

(1.) The Opposition is not *ad idem*. The *Enmity and Opposition* that is acted by the Will against Grace, is against it as *objectively proposed* unto it. So do Men *resist the Holy Ghost*; that is, in the *external Dispensation* of Grace by the Word. And if that be alone, they may *always resist* it; the Enmity that is in them will prevail against it; *Ye always resist the Holy Ghost*. The Will therefore is not forced by any Power put forth in Grace, in that way wherein it is capable of making opposition unto it, but the prevalency of Grace is of it as it is *internal*, working *really* and *physically*, which is not the Object of the Wills opposition; for it is not proposed unto it, as that which it may *accept or refuse*, but worketh effectually in it.

SECT. 34.

(2.) The Will in the first *Act* of Conversion, (as even sundry of the *Schoolmen* acknowledg) *acts* not but as it is *acted*, moves not but as it is moved, and therefore is *passive* therein in the sense immediately to be explained: And if this be not so, it cannot be avoided, but that the *Act* of our turning unto God is a meer *natural Act*, and not spiritual or gracious. For it is an *Act* of the Will not enabled thereunto *antecedently* by Grace. Wherefore it must be granted, and it shall be proved, that in *Order of Nature*, the Acting of Grace in the Will in our Conversion

is

SECT. 35.

is antecedent unto its own acting; though in the same instant of time wherein the Will is *moved*, it moves; and when it is *acted*, it acts it self, and preserves its own Liberty in its exercise. There is therefore herein an inward almighty *secret Act* of the Power of the Holy Ghost, producing or effecting in us the *Will of Conversion* unto God, so acting our Wills, as that they also *act* themselves, and that freely. So *Austin*, cont. *Duas Epistol. Pelag.* lib. 1. cap. 19. *Trahitur (homo) miris modis ut velit, ab illo qui novit intus in ipsis cordibus hominum operari, non ut homines, quod fieri non possit, nolentes credant, sed ut volentes ex nolentibus fiant.* The Holy Spirit who in his Power and Operation is more intimate, as it were, unto the Principles of our Souls than they are to themselves, doth with the Preservation, and in the Exercise of the *liberty of our Wills*, effectually work our Regeneration and Conversion unto God. This is the substance of what we plead for in this *Cause*, and which declares the Nature of this Work of *Regeneration*, as it is an inward Spiritual Work. I shall therefore confirm the Truth proposed with *evident Testimonies* of Scripture, and Reasons contained in them or deduced from them.

SECT. 36. 1. The *Work of Conversion* it self, and in especial the *Act of believing*, or * *Faith* it self is expressly said to be of God, to be wrought in us by

* Restat ut ipsam fidem unde omnis Justitia sumit initium, non humano, quo isti extolluntur, tribuamus arbitrio, nec ullis precedentibus meritis, quoniam inde incipiunt bona quaecunque sunt merita fidei gratitum Dei donum esse fateamur, si gratiam veram, id est, sine Meritis cogitemus. August. Epist. 105.

Nollem Ergo his tam claris testimoniis repugnare, & tamen volens a seipso sibi esse quod credit, quasi componit cum Deo ut partem fidei sibi vendicet, atque illi partem relinquat; & quod est elatius, primam tollit ipse, sequentem dat illi; & in eo quod dicit esse amborum, priorem se, posteriorem facit Deum. August. de Prædest. Sancti. cap. 2.

† Quando Deus docet per Spiritus Gratiam, ita docet ut quod quisque didicerit non tantum cognoscendo videat, sed etiam volendo appetat agendoque perficiat. Et ipso Divino Docendi modo etiam ipsa Voluntas, & ipsa operatio non sola volendi & operandi naturalis possibilitas adjuvatur. Si enim solum posse nostrum hac Gratia juvaretur, ita diceret Dominus, omnis qui audiverit a Patre & didicit potest venire ad me. August. de Grat. Christi Contra Pelagium, cap. 14.

him, to be given unto us from him. The Scripture says not that God gives us *Ability* or *Power* to believe onely, namely, such a Power as we may make use of if we will, or do otherwise; but *Faith*, *Repentance*, and *Conversion* themselves are said to be the Work and Effect of God. Indeed there is nothing mentioned in the Scripture concerning the communicating of *Power remote* or *next* unto the Mind of Man, to enable him to *believe* antecedently unto actual believing. A remote Power, if it may be so called, in the Capacities of the Faculties of the Soul, the *Reason* of the *Mind*, and *Liberty* of the *Will*, we have given an account concerning. But for that which some call a *next* + *Power*, or an ability to believe in order of Nature Antecedent unto Believing it self, wrought in us by the Grace of God, the Scripture is silent. The Apostle *Paul* saith of himself, *πᾶντα ἰκάνω ἐν τῷ ἐνδυναμένῳ με Χριστῷ*, Phil. 4. 13. *I can do all things, or prevail in all things, through Christ who enableth me*; where a Power or Ability seems to be spoken of antecedent unto *Acting*. But this is not a Power for the first *Act* of Faith, but a Power in them that believe. Such a Power I acknowledge, which is *acted* in the Co-operation of the Spirit and Grace of Christ, with the Grace which Belie-

vers have received, unto the performance of all *Acts* of Holy Obedience, whereof I must treat elsewhere. Believers have a *stock of Habitual Grace*, which may be called *Indwelling Grace*, in the same sense wherein

Original

Original Corruption is called *Indwelling-Sin*. And this Grace, as it is necessary unto every *Act* of Spiritual Obedience, so of it self without the renewed Co-working of the Spirit of Christ, it is *not able* nor sufficient to produce any Spiritual *Act*. This working of Christ upon, and with the Grace we have received, is called *enabling of us*. But with Persons Unregenerate, and as to the first *Act* of Faith, it is not so.

But it will be Objected, That every thing which is actually accomplished, was in *potentia* before. There must therefore be in us a *Power to believe* before we do so actually. *Answ.* The *Act* of God working Faith in us, is a *Creating Act*. For we are his *Workmanship created in Christ Jesus*, Ephes. 2. 10. And he that is in Christ Jesus is a *New Creature*, 2 Cor. 5. 17. Now the effects of *Creating Acts* are not in *Potentia* any-where but in the *Active Power* of God; so was the World it self before its actual existence. This is termed *Potentia Logica*; which is no more but a Negation of any contradiction to Existence; not *Potentia Physica*, which includes a disposition unto *actual existence*. Notwithstanding therefore all these Preparatory Works of the Spirit of God, which we allow in this Matter, there is not by them wrought in the Minds and Wills of Men, such a *next Power*, as they call it, as should enable them to believe without further *Actual Grace* working Faith it self. Wherefore with respect to believing, the first *Act* of God is to work in us *to will*; Phil. 1. 13. *He worketh in us to will*. Now to will to believe, is to believe. This God works in us by that Grace which *Austin* and the School-men call *Gratia Operans*, because it worketh in us, without us, the Will being meerly moved and passive therein. That there is a Power or Faculty of believing, given unto all Men unto whom the Gospel is preached, or who are called by the outward Dispensation of it, some do pretend. And that because those unto whom the Word is so Preached, if they do not actually believe, shall perish eternally, as is positively declared in the Gospel, *Mark 16. 16*. But this they could not justly do, if they had not received a *Power* or Faculty of Believing.

Answ. 1. Those who believe not upon the Proposal of Christ in the Gospel, are left without remedy in the guilt of those *other Sins*, for which they must perish eternally; *If you believe not*, saith Christ, *that I am he, you shall die in your sins*, John 8. 12.

(2.) The *Impotency* that is in Men as to the *act* of believing, is contracted by their own fault, both as it ariseth from the *Original* Depravation of Nature, and as it is increased by corrupt Prejudices and contracted Habits of Sin; wherefore they justly perished, of whom yet it is said, *That they could not believe*, John 12. 39.

(3.) There is none by whom the Gospel is refused, but they put forth an *Act* of the Will in its Rejection, which all Men are free unto and able for. *I would have gathered you but you would not*, Mat. 23. 37. *You will not come to me that you may have life*.

But the Scripture positively affirms of some to whom the Gospel was Preached that they *could not believe*, John 12. 39. And of all natural Men, that they *cannot perceive the Things of God*, 1 Cor. 2. 14. neither is it given unto all to know the *Mysteriēs of the Kingdom of God*, but some only,

SECT. 38.

only, *Matth.* 11. 25. And those to whom it is not so given, have not the Power intended. Besides, Faith is not of all, or all *have not Faith*, 2 *Thess.* 3. 2. But it is peculiar to the *Elect* of God, *Tit.* 1. 1. *Acts* 13. 48. And these *Elect*, are but some of those that are called, *Mat.* 20. 16.

SECT. 39. Yet further to clear this it may be observed, that this first *Act* of *Willing* may be considered two ways. (1.) As it wrought in the Will *subjectively*, and so it is formally only in that Faculty. And in this sense the Will is merely *passive*, and only the *Subject* moved or acted. And in this respect the *Act* of God's Grace in the Will, is an *Act* of the Will. But (2.) it may be considered as it is *efficiently* also in the Will, as being *acted* it *acts* it self. So it is from the Will as its Principle, and is a Vital *Act* thereof, which gives it the Nature of Obedience. Thus the Will in its *own Nature* is *mobilis*; fit and meet to be wrought upon by the Grace of the Spirit, to Faith and Obedience; with respect unto the Creating *Act* of Grace working Faith in us, it is *mota*, moved and acted thereby. And in respect of its own elicit *Act*, as it so acted and moved, it is *movens*, the next efficient cause thereof.

SECT. 40. These things being premised for the clearing of the Nature of the Operation of the Spirit in the first Communication of Grace unto us, and

* *Si quis sine Gratia Dei credentibus, volentibus, desiderantibus, conantibus misericordiam dicit conferri; non autem divinitus ut credamus, velimus, per infusionem & inspirationem Spiritus Sancti in nobis fieri consuetur, anathema sit.* Conc. Arausic. 2. Can. 6.

Datur potestas ut Filii Dei fiant qui credunt in eum, cum hoc ipsum datur ut credant in eum. Que potestas nisi detur a Deo nulla esse potest ex libero Arbitrio, quia nec liberum in bono eris quod liberator non liberaveris. August. lib. 1. cont. Dnas Epist. Pelag. cap. 3.

* Restat ut ipsam fidem unde omnis Justitia sumit initium, non humano, quo isti extolluntur, tribuamus arbitrio, nec ullis precedentibus meritis, quoniam inde incipiunt bona quæcunque sunt merita, sed gratuitum Dei donum esse fateamur, si gratiam veram, id est, sine Meritis cogitemus. August. Epist. 105.

the Wills compliance therewithal, we return unto our Arguments or Testimonies given unto the * *actual collation of Faith* upon us by the Spirit and Grace of God, which must needs be effectual and *irresistible*; for the contrary implies a contradiction, namely, that God should work what is not wrought; *Phil.* 1. 29. *To you it is given on the behalf of Christ; not only to believe on him, but also to suffer for his sake.* To believe on Christ, expresseth Saving-Faith it self. This is given unto us. And how is it given us? Even by the Power of God working in us to will and to do of his own good pleasure, Chap. 1. 13. Our Faith is our coming to Christ. And no Man, saith he, can come unto me, except it be given him of my Father, *Joh.* 6. 65. All Power in our selves for this end is utterly taken away; *no Man can come unto me.* How-ever we may suppose Men to be prepared or disposed, what-ever Arguments may be proposed unto them, and in what season soever to render things

congruous and agreeable unto their Inclinations, yet no Man of himself can believe, can come to Christ, unless Faith it self be given unto him; that is. be wrought in him by the Grace of the Father, *Gal.* 2. 11. So it is again asserted, and that both *negatively* and *positively*; *Ephes.* 2. 8. *By Grace are ye saved through Faith, and that not of your selves, it is the Gift of God.* Our own *Ability*, be it what it will, how-ever assisted and excited, and God's Gift are contra-distinguished. If it be of our selves it is not the Gift of God; if it be the Gift of God, it is not of our selves.

And

And the manner how God bestows this Gift upon us, is declared *v. 10.* For we are his Workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good Works. Good Works, or Gospel-Obedience, are the things designed. These must proceed from Faith, or they are not acceptable with God, *Heb. 11. 6.* And the way whereby this is wrought in us, or a Principle of Obedience, is by a Creating Act of God; we are his Workmanship created in Jesus Christ. In like manner God is said to give us Repentance, *2 Tim. 2. 25.* *Acts 11. 18.* This is the whole of what we plead. God in our Conversion, by the exceeding greatness of his Power, as he wrought in Christ when he raised him from the Dead, actually worketh Faith and Repentance in us; gives them unto us, bestows them on us, so that they are meer Effects of his Grace in us. And his working in us, infallibly produceth the Effect intended, because it is actual Faith that he works; and not only a Power to believe, which we may either put forth and make use of, or suffer to be fruitless according to the pleasure of our own Wills.

Secondly; As God giveth and worketh in us Faith and Repentance, SECT. 41.
so the way whereby he doth it, or the manner how he is said to effect them in us, make it evident that he doth it by a Power infallibly efficacious, and which the Will of Man doth never resist. For this way is such, as that he thereby takes away all Repugnancy, all Resistance, all Opposition, every thing that lyeth in the way of the Effect intended; *Deut. 30. 6.* The Lord thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thine Seed, to love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and all thy Soul, that thou mayest live. A denial of the Work here intended, is expressed *Chap. 29. 4.* The Lord hath not given you an Heart to perceive, and Eyes to see, and Ears to hear unto this day. What it is to have the Heart circumcised, the Apost'le declares, *Col. 2. 11.* It is the putting off of the Body of the Sins of the Flesh by the Circumcision of Christ; that is, our Conversion to God. It is the giving an Heart to perceive, and Eyes to see, and Ears to hear, that is, Spiritual Light and Obedience by the removal of all Obstacles and Hindrances. This is the immediate Work of the Spirit of God himself. No Man ever circumcised his own heart. No Man can say he began to do it by the Power of his own Will, and then God only helped him by his Grace. As the Act of outward Circumcision on the body of a Child, was the Act of another, and not of the Child who was onely passive therein, but the Effect was in the Body of the Child only; so is it in this Spiritual Circumcision. It is the Act of God whereof our Hearts are the Subject. And whereas it is the Blindness, Obstinacy, and Stubbornness in Sin, that is in us by Nature, with the Prejudices which possess our Minds and Affections, which hinder us from Conversion unto God, by this Circumcision they are taken away. For by it, the Body of the Sins of the Flesh is put off. And how should the Heart resist the Work of Grace, when that whereby it should resist is effectually taken away?

Ezek. 36. 26. A new Heart also will I give you, and a new Spirit will I put within you; and I will take away the stony heart out of your Flesh, and I will give you an Heart of Flesh. And I will put my Spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my Statutes, and ye shall keep my Judgments and

do them. To which may be added, *Jer. 24. 7. And I will give them an Heart to know me, that I am the Lord, and they shall be my People, and I will be their God; so they shall return unto me with their whole Heart. As also Isa. 44. 3, 4, 5. I will pour Water upon him that is thirsty, and Floods upon the dry ground; I will pour my Spirit upon thy Seed, and my Blessing on thy Off-spring, and they shall spring up as among the Grass, as Willows by the Water-courses. One shall say I am the Lord's. So Jer. 31. 33. I will put my Law in their inward parts, and write it in their Hearts.* I shall first enquire two things about these Concurrent Testimonies. (1.) Is it lawful for us, is it our duty to pray that God would do and effect what he had promised to do, and that both for our selves and others? For our selves, that the Work of our Conversion may be renewed, carried on and consummated in the way and by the means whereby it was begun; that so he who hath begun the good Work in us, may perfect it to the Day of Jesus Christ, *Phil. 1. 6.* For those who are Converted and Regenerated, and are perswaded on good and infallible grounds that so they are, may yet pray for those things which God promiseth to work in their first Conversion. And this is, because the same Work is to be preserved and carried on in them by the same Means, the same Power, the same Grace wherewith it was begun. And the Reason is, because this Work, as it is meerly the Work of Conversion, is immediately perfected and compleated as to the being of it; yet as it is the beginning of a Work of Sanctification, it is continually to be renewed and gone over again, because of the remainder of Sin in us, and the imperfection of our Grace. For others that it may be both begun and finished in them. And do we not in such Prayers desire, That God would really, powerfully, effectually, by the internal Efficiency of his Spirit, take away all Hindrances, Oppositions, and Repugnancy in our Minds and Wills, and actually collate upon us, give unto us, and work in us, a new Principle of Obedience, that we may assuredly love, fear, and trust in God alwayes? Or, do we only desire that God would so help us, as to leave us absolutely undetermined, whether we will make use of his help or no? Did ever any pious Soul couch such an Intention in his Supplications? He knows not how to pray, who prays not that God would by his own immediate Power, work those things in him which he thus prayeth for. And unto this Prayer also Grace effectual is antecedently required.

* *Semper quidem adjutorium Gratia nobis est a Deo poscendum, sed nec ipsum quod possumus viribus nostris assignem. Neque enim haberi potest ipse saltem orationis affectus nisi Divinitus fuerit attributus. Ut ergo desideremus adjutorium Gratia, hoc ipsum quoque est Gratia, ipsa namque incipit effundi ut incipiat posci.* Fulgent. *Epist. 6. ad Theod.*

* Wherefore I enquire, (Secondly) Whether God doth really effect and work in any the things which he here promiseth that he will Work and Effect? If he doth not, where is his Truth and Faithfulness? It is said that he doth so, and will do so, provided that Men do not refuse his tender of Grace, nor resist his Operations, but comply with them. But this yeelds no relief.

SECT. 43. For (1.) what is it, not to refuse the Grace of Conversion, but to comply with it? Is it not to believe, to obey, to convert our selves; so then God promiseth to Convert us, on condition that we Convert our selves; to work Faith in us on condition that we do believe; and a new Heart, on condition that we make our Hearts new our selves. To this are all the Adversaries of the Grace of God brought by those Conditions

Conditions which they feign of its Efficacy to preserve the Sovereignty of free-Will in our Conversion, that is, unto plain and open *Contradictions*, which have been charged sufficiently upon them by others, and from which they could never extricate them-

selves. (2.) * Where God promiseth thus to work, as these Testimonies do witness, and doth not effectually do so; it must be either because he *cannot* or because he *will not*; if it be said, that he doth it not, because he *will not*, then this is that which is ascribed unto God; that

* *Hoc promittit Deus quod ipse facit; non enim ipse promittit & alius facit; quod jam non est promittere sed predicere. Ideo non ex operibus, sed ex vocante, ne ipsorum sit, non Dei.* August. de Spirit. & Lit. cap. 24.

he promiseth indeed to take away our *stony Heart*, and to give us a *new Heart* with his Law written in it, but he will not do so, which is to overthrow his Faithfulness and to make him a lyar. If they say it is, because he *cannot*, seeing that Men oppose and resist the Grace whereby he would work this Effect; then where is the wisdom of promising to work that in us, which he knew he *could not* effect without our compliance, and which he knew that we would not comply withal? But it will be said, that God promiseth to work and effect these things, but in *such* a way as he hath appointed; that is, by giving such supplies of Grace as may *enable us* thereunto, which if we refuse to make use of, the fault is merely our own. *Ans.* It is the *things themselves* that are promised, and not such a communication of means to effect them, as may produce them, or may not, as the consideration of the places will manifest: Whereof observe;

(1.) The *Subject* spoken of in these Promises, is the *Heart*. And SECT. 44. the Heart in the Scripture is taken for the whole rational Soul, not *absolutely*, but as all the Faculties of the Soul are one common Principle of all our Moral Operations. Hence it hath such Properties assigned unto it as are peculiar to the Mind or Understanding, as to see, perceive, to be wise, and to understand; and on the contrary, to be blind and foolish; sometimes such as belong properly to the Will and Affections, as to Obey, to Love, to Fear, to Trust in God. Wherefore the Principle of all our Spiritual and Moral Operations is intended hereby.

(2.) There is a Description of this Heart, as it is in us, *Antecedent* SECT. 45. unto the effectual working of the Grace of God in us: It is said to be *stony*. The *heart of stone*. It is not absolutely, that it is said so to be but with respect unto some certain End. This End is declared to be our *walking in the ways of God*, or our fearing of him. Wherefore our Hearts by Nature, as unto living to God, or his Fear, are a *stone*, or *stony*; and who hath not Experience hereof from the *Remainders* of it still abiding in them? And two things are included in this Expression. (1.) An *inaptitude* unto any actings towards that End. What-ever else the Heart can do of it self, in things Natural or Civil, in outward things; as to the end of living unto God, it can of it self without his Grace, do no more than a *Stone* can do of it self, unto any end whereunto it may be applyed. (2.) An obstinate, stubborn Opposition unto all things conducing unto that End. Its hardness or obstinacy in Opposition to the pliability of an *heart of flesh*, is principally intended in this Expression. And in this stubbornness of the Heart, consists all that *Repug-*

nancy to the Grace of God, which is in us by Nature, and whence all that *Resistance* doth arise, which some say is alwayes sufficient to render any Operation of the Spirit of God by his Grace fruitless.

SECT. 46. (3.) This Heart, that is, this *Impotency* and *Enmity* which is in our

* *Hæc Gratia quæ occulte humanis cordibus divina largitate tribuitur, a nullo duro corde respuitur; Ideo quippe tribuitur, ut cordis durities primum auferatur.* August. de Prædest. Sanctor. cap. 8.

Natures unto Conversion and Spiritual Obedience, God sayes, * *He will take away*; that is, he will do so in them who are to be converted according to the purpose of his Will, and whom he will turn unto himself. He doth not say that he will *endeavour* to take it away, nor

that he will use *such or such means* for the taking of it away, but absolutely that he will *take it away*. He doth not say that he will *perswade* with Men to remove it or do it away, that he will *aid and help them* in their so doing, and that so far as that it shall *wholly* be their own fault if it be not done, which no doubt it is, where it is not removed; but *positively* that he himself will take it away. Wherefore the *Act* of taking it away, is the *Act* of God by his Grace, and not the *Act* of our Wills, but as they are *acted* thereby; and that such an *Act* as whose Effect is *necessary*. It is impossible that God should *take away the stony Heart*, and yet the *stony Heart not be taken away*. What therefore God promisseth herein, in the removal of our Natural Corruption, is as unto the Event *infallible*, and as to the manner of Operation *irresistible*.

SECT. 47. (4.) As what God *taketh* from us in the Cure of our Original Disease, so what he *bestoweth on us*, or works in us, is here also expressed; and this is a *new Heart* and a *new Spirit*. *I will give you a new Heart*. And withal it is declared what benefit we do receive thereby. For those who have this *new Heart* bestowed on them, or wrought in them, they do *actually* by vertue thereof, *fear the Lord and walk in his wayes*. For so it is affirmed in the Testimonies produced, and no more is required thereunto, as nothing less will effect it. There must therefore be in this *new Heart* thus given us a *Principle* of all Holy Obedience unto God, the *creating of which Principle* in us is our Conversion to him; for God doth *convert us*, and we are *converted*. And how is this *new Heart* communicated unto us? *I will*, saith God, *give them a new Heart*. That is, it may be, he will do what is to be done on his part that they may have it. But we may *refuse his Assistance* and go without it. *No*, saith he, *I will put a new Spirit within them*; which expression is capable of no such limitation or condition. And to make it more plain yet, he affirms that he will *write his Law in our Hearts*. It is confessed that this is spoken with respect unto his *writing of the Law of old in Tables of Stone*. As then he wrote the Letter of the Law in the Tables of Stone, so that thereon and thereby they were actually engraven therein; so by *writing the Law*, that is, the matter and substance of it in our Hearts, it is as really fixed therein, as the Letter of it was of old in the Tables of Stone. And this can be no otherwise, but in a *Principle of Obedience* and Love unto it, which is actually wrought of God in us. And the Aids or Assistances which some Men grant, that are left unto the power of our own Wills to use or not to use, have no *Analogue* with the writing of the *Law in Tables of Stone*. And the end of the Work of God described,

is

is not a *Power to obey*, which may be exerted or not. But it is *Actual Obedience* in Conversion, and all the Fruits of it. And if God doth not in these Promises declare a real Efficiency of Internal Grace, taking away all *Repuñancy* of Nature unto Conversion, curing its Depravation actually and effectually, and communicating infallibly a Principle of Spiritual Obedience, I know not in what words such a Work may be expressed. And what-ever is excepted as to the suspending of the Efficacy of this Work upon *conditions* in our selves, it falls immediately into gross and sensible contradictions. And an especial Instance of this Work we have *Acts* 16. 14.

A third Argument is taken from the State and Condition of Men by SECT. 48. Nature before described. For it is such, as that no Man can be delivered from it, but by that *Powerful, Internal, Effectual Grace* which we plead, such as wherein the Mind and Will of Man can act nothing in or towards Conversion to God, but as they are acted by Grace. The Reason why some despise, some oppose, some deride the Work of the Spirit of God in our Regeneration or Conversion, or fancy it to be onely an outward Ceremony, or a *moral* change of Life and Conversation, is their ignorance of the corrupted and depraved Estate of the Souls of Men, in their Minds, Wills, and Affections by Nature. For if it be such as we have described, that is such as in the Scripture it is represented to be, they cannot be so brutish as once to imagine that it may be cured, or that Men may be delivered from it, without any other Aid but that of those *rational Considerations*, which some would have to be the only means of our Conversion to God. We shall therefore enquire what that Grace is, and what it must be whereby we are delivered from it.

1. It is called a *vivification* or quickning. We are *by Nature dead* SECT. 49. *in Trespasses and Sins* as hath been proved, and the Nature of that Death at large explained. In our deliverance from thence we are said to be *quickned*, *Ephes.* 5. 5. Though Dead, we hear the Voice of the Son of God and live, *John* 5. 25. Being made alive unto God through Jesus Christ, *Rom.* 6. 11. Now no such Work can be wrought in us, but by an effectual communication of a Principle of Spiritual Life, and nothing else will deliver us. Some think to evade the Power of this Argument, by saying, That all these Expressions are *Metaphorical*, and arguings from them are but *fulsome Metaphors*. And it is well if the whole Gospel be not a *Metaphor* unto them. But if there be not an *impotency* in us by Nature unto all Acts of Spiritual Life, like that which is in a *dead Man* unto the Acts of Life Natural; if there be not an alike Power of God required unto our Deliverance from that Condition, and the working in us a Principle of Spiritual Obedience, as is required unto the raising of him that is dead, they may as well say, That the Scripture speaks *not truly*, as that it speaks *metaphorically*. And that it is Almighty Power, the exceeding greatness of God's Power that is put forth and exercised herein, we have proved from *Ephes.* 1. 18, 19. *Col.* 2. 12, 13. *2 Theff.* 1. 11. *2 Pet.* 1. 3. And what do these Men intend by this *quickning*, this *raising* us from the Dead by the Power of God? A persuasion of our Minds by rational Motives taken from the Word, and the Things contained in it? But was there ever heard of such a monstrous

strous Expression, if there be nothing else in it? What could the Holy Writers intend by calling such a Work as this by a *quickning of them who were dead in Trespasses and Sins, through the mighty Power of God*, unless it were by a noise of insignificant words, to draw us off from a right understanding of what is intended? And it is well if some are not of that Mind.

SECT. 50. (2.) The Work it self wrought, is our Regeneration. I have proved before that this consists in a new spiritual supernatural vital Principle or Habit of Grace infused into the Soul, the Mind, Will and Affections by the Power of the Holy Spirit, disposing and enabling them in whom it is, unto Spiritual, Supernatural, Vital Acts of Faith and Obedience. Some Men seem to be inclined to deny all *Habits of Grace*. And on such a Supposition a Man is no longer a Believer, than he is in the *Actual* Exercise of Faith. For there is nothing in him from whence he should be so denominated. But this would plainly overthrow the Covenant of God, and all the Grace of it. Others expressly deny all gracious supernatural *infused Habits*, though they may grant such as are or maybe acquired by the frequent Acts of those Graces or Vertues whereof they are the Habits. But the Scripture giveth us another Description of this Work of Regeneration, for it consists in the *Renovation of the Image of God in us*, Ephes. 4. 23, 24. *Be renewed in the Spirit of your Mind, and put on that new Man, which after God is created in Righteousness and true Holiness*. That *Adam* in innocency had a supernatural Ability of living unto God, habitually residing in him, is generally acknowledged. And although it were easie for us to prove, that whereas he was made for a supernatural End, namely to live to God and to come to the enjoyment of him, it was utterly impossible that he should answer it or comply with it by the meer strength of his *natural Faculties*, had they not been endued with a supernatural Ability, which with respect unto that End, was created with them and in them. Yet we will not contend about Terms. Let it be granted that he was created in the *Image of God*, and that he had an Ability to fulfil all God's Commands, and that in himself, and no more shall be desired. This was lost by the *Fall*. When this is by any denied it shall be proved. In our Regeneration there is a Renovation of this Image of God in us. *Renewed in the Spirit of our Minds*. And it is renewed in us by a Creating Act of Almighty Power, which after God, or according to his likeness, *is created in Righteousness and true Holiness*. There is therefore in it an Implantation of a new Principle of Spiritual Life, of a Life unto God in Repentance Faith and Obedience, or Universal Holiness according to Gospel-Truth, or the Truth which came by Jesus Christ, *John* 1. 18. And the Effect of this Work is called *Spirit*; *Joh*. 8. 5. *That which is born of the Spirit is Spirit*. It is the Spirit of God of whom we are born; that is, our new Life is wrought in us by his Efficiency. And that which in us is so born of him, *is Spirit*; not the Natural Faculties of our Souls, they are once Created, once Born, and no more; but a new Principle of Spiritual Obedience, whereby we live unto God. And this is the product of the internal immediate Efficiency of Grace.

This

This will the better appear if we consider the Faculties of the Soul SECT. 51. distinctly, and what is the especial Work of the Holy Spirit upon them in our Regeneration or Conversion to God. (1.) The leading conducting Faculty of the Soul is the *Mind* or Understanding. Now this is corrupted and vitiated by the Fall, and how it continues depraved in the State of Nature, hath been declared before. The sum is, that it is not able to discern Spiritual Things in a Spiritual manner, for it is possessed with Spiritual Blindness or Darkness, and is filled with enmity against God and his Law, esteeming the things of the Gospel to be foolishness, because it is alienated from the Life of God through the ignorance that is in it: We must therefore enquire what is the Work of the Holy Spirit on our *Minds* in turning of us to God, whereby this Depravation is removed, and this vitious State cured; whereby we come to see and discern Spiritual Things in a Spiritual manner; that we may savingly know God and his Mind as revealed in and by Jesus Christ. And this is several ways declared in the Scripture.

(1.) He is said to give us an Understanding; 1 John 5. 20. *The Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding that we may know him that is True*; which he doth by his Spirit. Man by Sin is become like the *Beasts that perish which have no Understanding*, Psal. 49. 12, 20. Men have not lost their natural intellectual Faculty or Reason absolutely; It is continued unto them with the free though impaired use of it, in things Natural and Civil. And it hath an advance in Sin. Men are *wise to do evil*. * But it is lost as to the *especial use* of it in the saving knowledge of God and his Will; to do good they have no knowledge, Jer. 4. 22. For naturally, *there is none that understandeth that seeketh after God*, Rom. 3. 17. It is corrupted not so much in the Root and Principle of its Actings, as with respect unto their proper Object, Term, and End. Wherefore although this giving of an *Understanding*, be not the creating in us a new of that Natural Faculty; yet it is that gracious work in it, without which that Faculty in us as depraved, will no more enable us to know God savingly, than if we had none at all. The Grace therefore here asserted in the *giving of an Understanding*, is the causing of our natural Understandings to understand savingly. This *David* prays for, Psal. 119. 34. *Give me Understanding and I shall keep thy Law*. The whole Work is expressed by the Apostle, Ephes. 1. 16, 17, 18. *That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of Glory, may give unto you the Spirit of Wisdom and Revelation in the knowledge of him, the eyes of your understanding being opened, that you may know what is the hope of his calling, &c.* That the Spirit of Wisdom and Revelation, is the Spirit of God working those Effects in us, we have before evinced. And it is plain, that the Revelation here intended is *subjective*, in the enabling us to apprehend what is revealed, and not *objective* in new Revelations which the *Apostle* prayed not that they might receive. And this is further evidenced by the ensuing Description of it, *the eyes of your Understanding being opened*. There is an Eye in the Understanding of Man, that is, the natural

* *Prorsus si Dei adjutorium defuerit, nihil boni agere poteris; agis quidem illo non adjuvante libera voluntate, sed male; ad hoc idonea est Voluntas tua qua vocatur libera, & male agendo fit damnabilis ancilla.* August. Serm. 13. de Verb. Apostol.

tural Power and Ability that is in it to discern Spiritual Things. But this Eye is sometimes said to be *blind*, sometimes to be *darkness*, sometimes to be shut or closed. And nothing but the impotency of our Minds to know God savingly, or discern things Spiritually when proposed unto us, can be intended thereby. It is the

* *Erat Lux vera quæ illuminat omnem hominem venientem in hunc mundum; quod ideo dictum est, quia nullus hominum illuminatur, nisi illo lumine Veritatis quod Deus est, ne quisquam putaret ab eo se illuminari a quo aliquid audit ut discat; non dico si quenkum magnum hominem sed nec si angelum ei contingat habere Doctorem. Adhibetur enim sermo Veritatis extrinsecus vocis ministerio corporali; Verumtamen neque qui plantat est aliquid, neque qui rigat; sed qui incrementum dat Deus. Audit quippe homo dicentem vel hominem vel angelum, sed ut sentiat & cognoscat verum esse quod dicitur, illo lumine intus mens aspergitur quod æternum manet, quod etiam in tenebris lucet. August. de peccator. Merit. & Remiss. lib. 1. cap. 25.*

Work of the Spirit of Grace to *open this eye*, Luke 4. 18. Acts 26. 18. * And this is the powerful effectual removal of that depravation of our Minds with all its Effects, which we before described. And how are we made Partakers hereof? It is of the *Gift of God*, freely and effectually working of it. For (1.) he *gives us the Spirit of Wisdom and Revelation* to that End. And (2.) works the thing it self in us. He gives us an *Heart to know him*, Jer. 24. 7. without which we cannot so do, or he would not himself undertake to work it in us for that end. There is therefore an effectual, powerful, *creating Act* of the Holy Spirit put forth in the Minds of Men in their Conversion unto God, enabling them Spiritually to discern Spiritual Things; wherein the Seed and Substance of Divine Faith is contained.

SECT. 53. 2. This is called the *Renovation of our Minds*; renewed in the Spirit of our Minds, Ephes. 4. 23. which is the same with being renewed in knowledge, Col. 3. 10. And this Renovation of our Minds, hath in it a transforming Power, to change the whole Soul into an obediential frame towards God, Rom. 12. 2. And the work of *renewing our Minds* is peculiarly ascribed unto the Holy Spirit. Tit. 3. 5. *The renewing of the Holy Ghost*. Some Men seem to fancy, yea, do declare, that there is no such Depravation in or of the Mind of Man, but that he is able by the use of his Reason to apprehend receive and discern those Truths of the Gospel which are objectively proposed unto it. But of the use of Reason in these Matters, and its Ability to discern and judge of the sense of Propositions, and force of Inferences in Things of Religion, we shall treat afterwards. At present I only enquire whether Men Unregenerate be of themselves able Spiritually to discern Spiritual Things, when they are proposed unto them in the Dispensation of the Gospel, so as their knowledge may be saving in and unto themselves and acceptable unto God in Christ, and that without any especial internal effectual Work of the Holy Spirit of Grace in them and upon them? if they say they are, as they plainly plead them to be, and will not content themselves with an Ascription unto them of that *Notional Doctrinal Knowledge*, which none deny them to be capable of, I desire to know, to what purpose are they said to be renewed by the Holy Ghost; to what purpose are all those gracious actings of God in them before recounted? He that shall consider what on the one hand the Scripture teacheth us concerning the *Blindness*, *Darkness*, *Impotency* of our Minds with respect unto Spiritual things when proposed unto us, as in the state of nature; and on the other, what it affirms concerning the work of the Holy Ghost in their *Renovation* and change,

change, in giving them new Power, new Ability, a new Active Understanding, will not be much moved with the groundless confident unproved Dictates of some concerning the Power of Reason in it self to apprehend and discern Religious Things, so far as we are required in a way of Duty. This is all one as if they should say, That if the Sun shine clear and bright, every *blind Man* is able to see.

God herein is said to communicate a *Light* unto our Minds; and that SECT. 54. so, as that we see by it, or perceive by it the things proposed unto us in the Gospel usefully and savingly; 2 Cor. 4. 6. *God who commanded the Light to shine out of Darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the Light of the Knowledge of the Glory of God, in the Face of Jesus Christ.* Did God no otherwise work on the Minds of Men, but by an *external objective proposal* of Truth unto them, to what purpose doth the Apostle mention the Almighty Act of Creating Power, which he put forth and exercised in the first production of Natural Light out of Darkness? What Allusion is there between that Work, and the *doctrinal proposal* of Truth to the Minds of Men? It is therefore a confidence not to be contended with, if any will deny that the Act of God in the *Spiritual Illumination of our Minds*, be not of the same Nature as to Efficacy and Efficiency, with that whereby he *created Light* at the beginning of all things. And because the Effect produced in us is called *Light*, the Act it self is described by *shining*. *God hath shined into our Hearts*, that is, our Minds, so he conveys Light unto them by an Act of Omnipotent Efficiency. And as that which is so wrought in our Minds is called *Light*, so the Apostle leaving his *Metaphor* plainly declares what he intends hereby; namely, the *actual knowledge of the Glory of God in the Face of Jesus Christ*; that is, as God is revealed in Christ by the Gospel, as he declares v. 4. Having therefore (1.) compared the Mind of Man by Nature with a respect unto a Power of discerning Spiritual Things, to the state of all things under *Darkness* before the Creation of Light: And, (2.) the powerful working of God in Illumination, unto the Act of his Omnipotency in the Production or Creation of *Light* Natural, He ascribes our Ability to know, and our actual Knowledge of God in Christ unto his real Efficiency and Operation. And these things in part direct us towards an apprehension of that *Work of the Holy Spirit* upon the Minds of Men in their Conversion unto God, whereby their Depravation is cured, and without which it will not so be. By this means and no otherwise, do we who were *Darkness* become *Light in the Lord*, or come to know God in Christ savingly, looking into and discerning Spiritual Things with a proper *intuitive sight*, whereby all the other Faculties of our Souls are guided and influenced unto the Obedience of Faith.

It is principally with respect unto the *Will* and its *Depravation* by Nature, that we are said to be *dead in Sin*. And herein is seated that peculiar *obstinacy*, whence it is that no Unregenerate Person doth, or can * *Libertas* answer his own Conviction, or walk up unto his *Light* in Obedience. For ne *Gratia* the Will may be considered two ways. (1.) As a rational vital Faculty of our Souls. (2.) As a * free Principle, freedom being of its Essence or Nature. This therefore in our Conversion to God is renewed by the Holy Ghost, and that by an effectual implantation in it, of a

Principle of Spiritual Life and Holiness in the room of that Original Righteousness which it lost by the Fall. That he doth so, is proved by all the Testimonies before insisted on. (1.) This is its Renovation as it is a rational vital Faculty; and of this Vivification see before. (2.) As it's a free Principle, it is determined unto its *Acts* in this case by the powerful Operation of the Holy Ghost, without the least impeachment of its Liberty or Freedom as hath been declared. And that this is so, might be fully evinced, as by others, so by the ensuing Arguments. For (1.) if the Holy Ghost doth not work *immediately* and *effectually* upon the *Will*, producing and creating in it a Principle of Faith and Obedience, infallibly *determining* it in its free Acts, then is all the Glory of our Conversion to be ascribed unto our selves, and we make our selves therein, by the obediencial actings of our own free-will *to differ from others* who do not so comply with the Grace of God; which is denyed by the Apostle, 1 Cor. 4. 7. Neither can any purpose of God concerning the Conversion of any one Soul be certain and determinate, seeing after he hath done all that is to be done, or can be done towards it, the Will remaining *undetermined* may not be converted, contrary to those Testimonies of our Saviour, Rom. 8. 28. Mat. 11. 25, 26. John 6. 37. Neither can there be an Original *Infallibility* in the Promises of God made to Jesus Christ, concerning the *multitudes* that should believe in him; seeing it is possible *no one* may so do, if it depends on the *undetermined Liberty* of their Wills whether they will or no. And then also must Salvation of necessity be of *him that willeth, and of him that runneth, and not of God that shews mercy on whom he will have mercy*, contrary to the Apostle, Rom. 9. 15, 16. And the whole Efficacy of the Grace of God, is made thereby to *depend* on the *Wills* of Men, which is not consistent with our being the *Workmanship of God created in Christ Jesus unto good Works*, Ephes. 2. 10. Nor on this Supposition do Men know what they pray for, when they pray for their own or other Mens Conversion to God, as hath been before declared. There is therefore necessary such a Work of the Holy Spirit upon our *Wills*, as may cure and take away the Depravation of them before described, freeing us from the state of *Spiritual Death*, causing us to live unto God, determining them in and unto the Acts of Faith and Obedience. And this he doth, whilst, and as he makes us *new Creatures, quickens us who are dead in Trespasses and Sins*, gives us a *new Heart*, and *puts a new Spirit within us, writes his Law in our Hearts*, that we may do the Mind of God, and walk in his wayes; *worketh in us to will and to do*, making them who were unwilling and obstinate, to become *willing* and obedient and that freely and of choice.

SECT. 56. In like manner a prevailing *Love* is implanted upon the Affections by the Spirit of Grace, causing the Soul with Delight and Complacency to cleave to God and his Wayes. This removes and takes away the *Enmity* before described with the Effects of it; Deut. 30. 6. *The Lord thy God will circumcise thine Heart, and the Heart of thy Seed, to love the Lord thy God with all thy Heart, and with all thy Soul, that thou mayest live.* This Circumcision of the Heart consists in the putting off the *body of the sins of the flesh*, as the Apostle speaks Col. 2. 11. He Crucifies the Flesh with the Lusts and Affections thereof. Some Men are in-

inclined to think that all the *Depravation of our Nature* consists in that of the sensitive part of the Soul, or our *Affections*. The vanity and folly of which Opinion hath been before discovered. Yet it is not denied but that the *Affections* are *signally depraved*, so that by them principally the Mind and Will do act those Lusts that are peculiarly seated in them, or by them do act according to their perverse and corrupt Inclinations, Gal. 5. 24. Jam. 1. 14, 15. Wherefore in the *Circumcision of our Hearts*, wherein the Flesh with the Lusts Affections and Deeds thereof are crucified by the Spirit, he takes from them their Enmity, *Carnal Prejudices*, and *Depraved Inclinations*, really though not absolutely and perfectly; and instead of them, he fills us with Holy *Spiritual Love*, Joy, Fear, and Delight, not changing the being of our Affections, but sanctifying and guiding them by the Principle of Saving-Light and Knowledg before described, and uniting them unto their proper Object in a due manner. From what hath been spoken in this third Argument, it is evident that the Holy Spirit designing the Regeneration or Conversion of the Souls of Men worketh therein effectually, powerfully, and irresistibly, which was proposed unto confirmation.

From the whole it appears that our *Regeneration* is a * Work of the Spirit of God, and that not any *Act of our own*, which is only so, is intended thereby. I say it is not *so our own*, as by outward Helps and Assistance to be educed out of the Principles of our Natures. And herein is the Scripture express; for mentioning this Work directly with respect unto its Cause, and the manner of its Operation in the effecting of it, it assigns it positively unto God or his Spirit; 1 Pet. 1. 3. *God according to his abundant Mercy hath begotten us again.* James 1. 18. *Of his own Will begat he us with the Word of Truth.* John 3. 5, 6, 8. *Born of the Spirit.* 1 John 3. 9. *Born of God.* And on the other hand it excludes the Will of Man from any *active interest* herein; I mean, as to the first beginning of it. 1 Pet. 1. 23. *Born again, not of Corruptible Seed, but of Incorruptible by the Word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever.* John 1. 13. *Which were born, not of Blood, nor of the Will of the Flesh, nor of the Will of Man but of God;* see Matth. 16. 17. Titus 3. 5. Ephes. 2. 9, 10. It is therefore incumbent on them who plead for the *Active Interest of the Will of Man in Regeneration*, to produce some Testimonies of Scriptures where it is assigned unto it, as the effect unto its proper Cause. Where is it said, that a Man is Born again, or Begotten a-new by *himself*? And if it be granted, as it must be so, unless violence be offered not only to the Scripture but to Reason and common Sense, that what-ever be our Duty and Power herein, yet these Expressions must denote an *Act of God* and

SECT. 57.

* *Quis istis corda mutavit, nisi qui finxit singillatim corda eorum? Quis hujus rigoris duritiem ad obediendi molliivit affectum, nisi qui potens est de lapidibus Abrahæ filios excitare? Prosp. ad Rufin. de lib. Arbit.*

Ploremus coram Domino qui fecit nos & homines & salvos. Nam si ille nos fecit homines, nos autem ipsi nos fecimus salvos, aliquid illo melius fecimus. Melior enim est salvus homo quam quilibet homo. Si ergo te Deus fecit hominem & tu te fecisti bonum hominem, quod tu fecisti melius est. Noli te extollere super Deum, confitere illi qui fecit te, quia nemo recreat nisi qui creat, nemo reficit nisi qui fecit. August. de Verbis Apost.

Nemo quisquam hominum sive ad cogitandum, sive ad operandum quodcunque bonum potest esse idoneus; nisi qui fuerit munere gratuito divine opitulati-onis adjutus; ab ipso namque est initium bonæ voluntatis, ab ipso facultas boni operis, ab ipso perseverantia bonæ conversionis. Fulgent. lib. 1. ad Monim.

not ours, the substance of what we contend for is granted, as we shall be ready at any time to demonstrate. It is true, God doth command us to *circumcise our Hearts*, and to make them New. But he doth therein declare our *Duty* not our *Power*; for himself promiseth to *work in us* what he requireth of us. And that Power which we have and do exercise in the progress of this Work in Sanctification and Holiness, proceeds from the *infused Principle* which we receive in our *Regeneration*; * for all which Ends we ought to pray for him according to the Example of Holy Men of old.

* *Jam divi-
ni amor Nu-
minis, Patris*

Omnipotentis

prolisque beatissima sancta communicatio; Omnipotens paraclete Spiritus; Merentium consolator clementissime, jam cordis mei penetralibus potenti illabere virtute, & tenebrosa quæque laris neglecti latibula, corusci luminis fulgore pius habitator letifica, tuique roris abundantia, longo ariditatis marcentia squalore, visitando fecunda.

The



The Manner of Conversion explained in the Instance of *Augustine*.

C H A P. V I.

The outward means and manner of Conversion to God, or Regeneration, with the Degrees of Spiritual Operations on the Minds of Men and their Effects, exemplified in the Conversion of Augustine, as the Account is given thereof by himself.

AS among all the *Doctrines* of the Gospel, there is none opposed SECT. I.
with more violence and subtilty, than that concerning our
Regeneration by the immediate powerful, effectual Operation
of the Holy Spirit of Grace; so there is not scarce any thing more
despised or scorned by many in the World, than that any should profess
that there hath been such a Work of God upon themselves, or on any Oc-
casion declare ought of the way and manner whereby it was wrought.
The very mentioning hereof is grown a *Derision* among some that call
themselves Christians; and to plead an interest or concern in this Grace,
is to forfeit all a Mans *Reputation* with many who would be thought wise,
and boast themselves to be rational. Neither is this a practice taken up of
late in these declining times of the World; but seems to have been star-
ted and followed from days of old, possibly from the beginning; yea the
Enmity of *Cain* against *Abel* was but a branch of this proud and perverse
Inclination. The Instance of *Ismael* in the Scripture is Representative
of all such as under an outward profession of the true Religion, did or
do scoff at those who being as *Isaac* Children of the Promise do profess
and evidence an interest in the *internal Power* of it which they are unac-
quainted withal. And the same practice may be traced in succeeding
Ages. Hence Holy *Austin* entring upon the *Confession* of his greater
sins, designing thereby to magnify the Glory and Efficacy of the Grace
of God in his Conversion, provides against this scorn of Men, which he
knew he should meet withal. *Rideant, saith he, me arrogantes & non-*
dum salubriter prostriati & elisi per te Deus meus, ego tamen confiteor tibi dede-
cora mea, in laude tua; Confess: lib. 4. cap. 1. let Arrogant Men deride
or scorn me, who were never savingly cast down nor broken in pieces by thee my
God, yet I will confess my own shame unto thy praise. Let none be offended
with these expressions of being *savingly* or *wholesomely cast down and broken*
of God; For in the Judgment of this great person they are not *Fanatical*.
We may not therefore think it strange, if the same truth, the same practice,
and

and profession of it, do still meet with the same Entertainment. Let them deride and scorn it, who were never humbled *saveingly*, nor broken with a sense of sin; nor relieved by Grace; the Holy Work of God's Spirit is to be owned, and the truth to be avowed as it is in Jesus.

SECT. 2. Of the *Original Depravation* of our nature, we have treated so far as is needful unto our present purpose. Yet some things must yet be added concerning the *Effects* of that Depravation, which will conduce unto the right understanding of the way and manner whereby the Spirit of God proceedeth for the healing and removal of it, which we have now under especial consideration. And we may observe;

SECT. 3. 1. That the Corrupt Principle of sin, the native habitual Inclination that is in us unto evil, worketh early in our natures, and for the most part preventeth all the Actings of Grace in us. Though some may be sanctified in or from the Womb, yet in order of nature this native Corruption hath first place in them; for a clean thing cannot be brought out of an unclean, but that which is born of the flesh is flesh. *Psal. 58. 3. The Wicked are estranged from the Womb, they go astray as soon as they be born, speaking lyes.* It is to no purpose to say that he speaks of *wicked Men*; that is, such who are habitually and profligately so. For whatever any Man may afterwards run into by a course of sin, all Men are *Morally* alike from the Womb, and 'tis an Aggravation of the Wickedness of Men, that it begins so early and holds on an uninterrupted course. Children are not able to *speak from the Womb*, as soon as they are born. Yet here are they said to *speak lyes*. It is therefore the perverse Acting of Depraved nature in *Infancy*, that is intended. For every thing that is irregular, that Answers not the Law of our Creation and Rule of our Obedience, is a *Lye*. And among the many Instances Collected by *Austin* of such irregular Actings of nature in its infant-state, one is peculiarly remarkable. *Confess. lib. 1. cap. 6. Paulatim sentiebam ubi essem, & voluntates meas volebam ostendere eis per quos impleverentur, & non poteram: itaque jactabam membra, & voces signa similia voluntatibus meis, pauca que poteram & qualia poteram; & cum mihi non obtemperabatur, vel non intelligendo, vel ne obesset, indignabar non subditis Majoribus, & liberis non servientibus, & me de illis flendo vindicabam.* This he again repeats. *cap. 7. An pro tempore illo bona erant, flendo petere etiam quod noxie daretur, indignari acriter non subjectis hominibus liberis, & majoribus; hisque a quibus genitus est, multisque preterea prudentioribus, non ad nutum voluntatis obtemperantibus, feriendo nocere mihi quantum potest, quia non obeditur imperiis quibus perniciose obediretur: Ita imbecillitas membrorum infantium innocens est, non animus infantium.* Those irregular and perverse Agitations of mind and of the Will or Appetite, not yet under the Conduct of Reason, which appear in *Infants*, with the Indignation and little *self-Revenge*s wherewith they are accompanied in their disappointments, when all about them do not subject themselves unto their Inclinations: it may be to their hurt, are from the *Obliquity of our nature* and effects of that depraved habit of sin, wherewith it is wholly possessed. And by the frequency of these lesser Actings are the mind and will prepared for those more violent and impetuous motions, which by the improving of their natural Capacities, and
the

the incitation of new Objects presented unto their Corruptions they are exposed unto and filled withal. God did not *Originally* thus create our nature, a Condition worse and inferiour unto that of other Creatures; in whose *Young Ones* there are none of these disorders, but a regular compliance with their natural instinct prevails in them. And as the *dying* of multitudes of Infants notwithstanding the utmost care for their preservation, whereas the *young ones* of other Creatures all generally live if they have whereby their nature may be sustained, argues the *imputation* of sin unto them, *For Death entred by Sin and passed upon all inasmuch as all have sinned*; so those irregular Actings peculiar unto them, prove sin inherent in them or the Corruption of their Nature from their Conceptions.

Secondly with the Increase of our natural Faculties, and the strength-
 ning of the members of our bodies, which by nature are *become ready instruments of unrighteousness unto sin*, Rom. 5. 13. this perverse Principle acts it self with more evidence frequency and success in the production of Actual sin, or inordinate actings of the Mind, Will and Affections. So the wiseman tells us, that *Childhood and Youth are Vanity*, Eccl. 11. 10. The Mind of Man in the state of *Childhood and Youth* puts it self forth in all kinds of vain Actings, in foolish Imaginations, perverse and froward Appetites, falseness in words, with sensible effects of corrupt Inclinations in every kind. *Austin's* first book of *Confessions*, is an excellent comment on that Text wherein the *Vanity of Childhood and Youth* are graphically described, with *pathetical* self-reflecting complaints concerning the Guilt of sin which is contracted in them. Some perhaps may think light of those ways of Folly and Vanity, wherein Childhood doth, or left alone, would consume it self; that there is no *moral evil* in those Childish Innocencies. That *Good Man* was of an other Mind. *Istane est* (saith he) *innocentia puerilis? non est Domine, non est Oro te Deus meus, nam hac ipsa sunt quae a paedagogis & magistris, a nucibus pitulis, passeribus, ad Praefectos & Reges, aurum, praedia, mancipia hac ipsa omnino quae succedentibus majoribus etatibus transeunt. lib. 1. cap. 19.* This is not *Innocency*, it is not so. The same Principle and Habit of Mind carried over unto riper Age, and greater Occasions bring forth those greater Sins, which the lives of Men are filled withal in this World. And who is there who hath a serious Reverence of God, with any due apprehension of his Holiness and a clear conviction of the Nature of Sin, who is not able to call over such Actings in *Childhood* which most think meet to connive at, wherein they may remember that perversity whereof they are now ashamed. By this means is the Heart prepared for a further Obduration in Sin by the confirmation of native Obstinacy.

Thirdly; unto those more general irregularities, *Actual sins* do succeed, SECT. 5.
 such I mean as are against the remaining light of Nature or committed in *Rebellion* unto the dictates and guidance of our Minds and Consciences, the Influence of those *Intelligencies* of Moral Good and Evil, which are inseparable from the faculties of our Souls. For although in some they may be stifled and over-born, yet can they never be utterly obliterated or extinguished, but will accompany the nature of Man unto Eternity, even in that condition wherein they shall be of no other use but to add to

and increase its misery. Amongst those we may call over one or two Instances. *Lying* is such a sin, which the Depravation of Nature in *Youth* is prone to exert it self by, and that on sundry Reasons not now to be enquired into: *They go astray from the womb speaking lies.* The first Inducement of our Nature unto Sin, was by a *Lye*; and we fell in *Adam* by giving credit therunto. And there is in every Sin a *particular Lye*. But speaking falsely, contrary unto what they know to be true, is that which Children are prone unto; though some more than others, according as other vicious Habits prevail in them, whose Actings they foolishly think to thatch over and cover thereby. This that holy Person whom we instance in acknowledgeth and bewaileth in himself; *Non videbam voraginem turpitudinis in quam projectus eram ab oculis tuis; nam in illis quid jam me turpius fuit, fallendo innumerabilibus mendaciis, & paedagogum & magistrorum & parentes amore ludendi, & studio spectandi nugatoria.* Lib. 1 Cap. 19. *I saw not (O God) into what a gulf of filth, I was cast out from before thee; for what was more filthy than I, whilst out of love of Playes, and desire of looking after vanities, I deceived Teachers and Parents with innumerable Lyes.* And this the good man was afterwards exceedingly humbled for, and from it learned much of the vileness of his own nature. And we find by experience, that a sense of this sin, oft-times accompanies the first real Convictions that befall the Souls of men. For when they seriously reflect upon themselves, or do view themselves in the Glass of the Law, they are not only sensible of the nature of this Sin, but also how much they indulged themselves therein, partly whilst they remember how on the least occasions they were surprized into it, which yet they neglected to watch against; and partly understanding how sometimes they made it their business by *premeditated falsehoods* so to cover other sins, as to escape rebuke and correction. The mention of these things will probably be entertained with contempt and scorn in this Age, wherein the most prodigious wickednesses of men are made but a sport; But God, his Holiness, and his Truth are still the same, what-ever alterations there may be in the World. And the holy Psalmist seems to have some reflection on this Vice of Youth, when he prayes, that God would take from him the way of *Lying*. Of the same nature are those lesser *Thefts* in despoiling their Parents and Governours of such things which they are not allowed to take and make use of for themselves. *They rob their Father or Mother, and say it is no transgression,* Prov. 28. 24. So saith the same Person; *furta etiam faciebam de cellario parentum & de mensis vel gula impunitante, vel ut haberem quod darem pueris ludum suum mihi quo pariter delectabantur tamen vendentibus.* He sometimes stole from his Parents, either to gratify his own sensual Appetite, or to give unto his Companions. In such instances doth *Original Pravity* exert it self in Youth, or Childhood, and thereby both increase its own power, and fortify the Mind and the Affections against the Light and Efficacy of Conviction.

SECT. 6. Fourthly; As Men grow up in the state of nature sin gets ground in them and upon them *subjectively* and *objectively*. Concupiscence gets strength with Age and grows in violence, as persons arrive to Ability for its Exercise, the Instruments of it in the faculties of the Soul, Organs of the senses and members of the body, growing every day more serviceable unto it, and more apt to receive Impressions from it or to comply with its motions.

tions. Hence some charge the sins of Youth on the *Heat of Blood*, and the *Restlessness of the animal Spirits*, which prompt men unto irregularities and extravagancies. But these are only *vehicula concupiscentie*, things which it makes use of to exert its poyson by. For sin turns every thing in this state unto its own advantage, and abuseth even the Commandment it self to *work in us all manner of concupiscence*, Rom. 7. 8. Again, the *Objects* of Lust by the occasions of Life are now multiplied. Temptations increase with years, and the businesses of the World; but especially by that *corruption of conversation* which is among the most. Hence fundry Persons are in this part of their youth, one way or other overtaken with some *gross actual sin or sins*. That all are not so, is a meer Effect of preventing grace, and not at all from themselves. This the Apostle respects in his charge; *2 Tim. 2. 22. Flee youthful Lusts*; such Lusts as work effectually and prevail mightily in those that are *young*, if not subdued by the Grace of God. And *David* in a sense and from experience hereof prayes, that God would *not remember the sins of his youth*, Psal. 25. 7. And a Reflection from them is sometimes the Torment of Age; *Job. 20. 11.* So he in whom we have chosen to exemplifie the Instances of such a Course. He humbly confesseth unto God his falling into and being overtaken with great sins, such as *Fornication* and uncleanness in his younger days, in the mire whereof he was long detained. To this purpose he discourseth at large, *lib. 2. cap. 1, 2, 3.* And of the Reason of this his humble and publick Acknowledgments, he gives this holy Account. *Neque enim tibi Deus meus, sed apud te narro hæc generi meo generi humano, quantumlacunque ex particula incidere potest in istas meas literas. Et ad quid hoc? ut videlicet ego & quisquis hæc legit cogitemus de quam profundo, clamandum sit ad te, Cap. 3.* I declare these things, O my God, not unto thee, but before thee, or in thy presence, unto my own Race, unto Humane kind, whatever portion thereof may fall on these Writings of Mine. And unto what end? Namely, that *I and every one who shall read these things may consider, out of what great Depths we are to cry unto thee.* So he who lived not to see the Days wherein humble Confession of sin was made a matter of contempt and scorn.

Now there is commonly a two-fold *Event* of Mens falling under the SECT. 7. power of Temptations and thereby into great *Actual sins*.

1. God sometimes takes occasion from them to awaken their Consciences unto a deep sense not only of that Sin in particular whose guilt they have contracted, but of their other sins also. The great *Physician* of their Souls turns this poyson into a Medicine; and makes that wound which they have given themselves, to be the lancing of a festred sore. For whereas their *Oscurancy* Prejudices and Custom of sinning, have taken away the sense of lesser sins, and secure them from Reflections from them; the stroke on their Consciences from those greater provocations pierceth so deep, as that they are forced to entertain thoughts of looking out after a Release or Remedy. So did they of old at the *Sermon of Peter*, when he charged them with the guilt of a consent to the *Crucifying of Jesus Christ*; they were *pricked to the Heart* and cried out, *Men and Brethren what shall we do*; Acts. 2. 36, 37.

2. With others it proves a violent *Entrance* into a further pursuit of SECT. 8. fin.

fin. The bounds of Restraints, with the Influence of natural light, being broken up and rejected, Mens lusts being let Loose do break through all remaining Obstacles, and run out into the greatest compass of Excess and Riot; observing no present evil to ensue on what they have done according to their first fears, they are emboldned to greater wickedness, *Eccl.* 8. 11. And by this means is their Conversion unto God rendred more difficult, and Men thus wander away more and more from him unto the greatest Distance that is recoverable by Grace. For,

SECT. 9.

Fifthly; a Course in, and a Custom of sinning with many ensues hereon. Such the Apostle treats concerning, *Ephes.* 4. 18, 19. *Being past feeling, have given themselves over unto Lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness.* Custom of sinning takes away the sense of it. The Course of the World takes away the shame of it; and Love to it makes Men greedy in the pursuit of it, see *Confess. lib. 2. Cap. 6.* And this last effect of sin, as incited, provoked, and assisted by Temptations, hath great variety in the Effects and Degrees of it. Hence are the various courses of unhumiliated sinners in the world, wherein the Outrage and Excess of some seems to Justify others in their more sedate irregularities, and less conspicuous provocations. Yea some who are not in any better state and condition as to their Interest in the Covenant of God than others, will yet not only startle at but really abhor those Outrages of sin and wickedness which they fall unto: Now this Difference ariseth not from hence that the nature of all men is not equally corrupt and depraved, but that God is pleased to make his *Restraining Grace* effectual towards some, to keep them within those bounds of sinning which they shall not pass over, and to permit others so to fall under a *Conjunction* of their Lusts and Temptations as that they proceed unto all manner of Evil. Moreover there are peculiar Inclinations unto some sins, if not inlaid in, yet much enhanced and made obnoxious unto incitations by the Temperature of the body. And some are more exposed unto Temptations in the World from their outward Circumstances and Occasions of Life. Hereby are some even precipitated to all manner of Evil. But still the *old Man* which is Corrupt according unto deceitful Lusts, is the same naturally in all. All difference as to Good from Evil, I mean not as to the nature of the things themselves, but as to Mens interest in them, so as to adhere to the one and avoid the other, is from the Will of God. Thus he secretly prepares for some a better Temperature of nature, docile and pliable unto such notices of things as may entertain their minds, and satisfy them above sensual Delights. And some he disposeth in their Education, Callings, Societies, Aymes and Designs in the World, into wayes inconsistent with open Lewdness, which will much ballance their Inclinations, besides his secret internal actings on their Hearts and Minds, whereof after wards. This is excellently expressed by *Austin, Confess. lib. 2. Cap. 7.* *Diligam te Domine, & gratias agam, & confitear nomini tuo, quoniam tanta dimisisti mihi mala & nefaria opera mea. Gratia tue deputo & misericordia tua, quod peccata mea tanquam glaciem solvisti; gratia tue deputo & quaecunque non feci mala. Quid enim non facere potui qui etiam gratuitum amavi facinus? & omnia mihi dimissa esse fat. or, & que mea sponte feci mala & qua te duce non feci. Quis est hominum qui suam cogitans infirmitatem, audet viribus suis tribere castitatem atque innocentiam suam, ut minus amet te, quasi minus necessaria fuerit*

erit misericordia tua, quâ condonas peccata conversis ad te? Qui enim vocatus ad te secutus est vocem tuam, & vitavit ea quæ me de meipso recordantem & fatentem legit, non me derideat, ab eo medico agrum sanari a quo prestitum est ut non ægrotaret, vel potius ut minus ægrotaret. Et ideo te tantundem imo vero amplius diligat, quia per quem me videt tantis peccatorum meorum languoribus exui, per eum se videt tantis peccatorum languoribus non implicari. I will love thee, O God, and thank thee and confess unto thy name, because thou hast forgiven me my evil and nefarious Deeds. I impute it to thy Grace and Mercy, that thou hast made my sins to melt away as Ice, and I impute it to thy Grace as to all the evils which I have not done. For what could not I have done, who loved wickedness for it self? All I acknowledg are forgiven me both the Evils that I have done on my own accord, and what through thy guidance I have not done. Who is there who considering his own weakness, dare ascribe his Chastity or Innocency unto his own strength, that he may less love thee, as though thy mercy were less necessary unto him, whereby thou forgiveſt the sins of them that are converted to thee. For let not him who being called of thee and having heard thy voice hath avoided the Evils which I have confessed, deride me that being sick was healed of that Physician, from whom he received the Mercy not to be sick, or not to be so sick.

This brief account of the Aÿings of corrupted Nature until it comes unto the utmost of a *recoverable Alienation* from God, may somewhat illustrate and set off the Work of his Grace towards us. And thus far, whatever habit be contracted in a course of sin, yet the state of Men is *absolutely recoverable* by the Grace of Jesus Christ administred in the Gospel; 1 *Cor.* 6. 9, 10, 11. No state of sin is *absolutely unhealable* until God hath variously dealt with Men by his Spirit. His Word must be rejected, and He must be *sinned against* in a peculiar manner, before Remission be impossible. *All Sins and Blasphemies* antecedent thereunto, may be forgiven unto Men, and that before their Conversion unto God, *Matth.* 12. 31, 32. *Luke.* 12. 10. Wherefore the *Manner* and *Degrees* of the Operations of this Spirit of God on the Minds of Men, towards and in their Conversion; is that which we shall now enquire into, reducing what we have to offer concerning it unto certain Heads or Instances.

SECT. 10.

First; under the Ashes of our collapsed nature there are yet remaining certain sparks of *Celestial Fire*, consisting in inbred notices of Good and Evil, of Rewards and Punishments, of the presence and All-seeing Eye of God, of Help and Assistance to be had from him, with a Dread of his Excellencies where any thing is apprehended unworthy of him, or provoking unto him. And where there are any means of Instruction from supernatural Revelation by the Word preached, or the care of Parents in private, there they are insensibly improved and increased. Hereby Men do obtain an *objective distinct* knowledg of what they had *subjectively* and radically, though very imperfectly before. These notices therefore God oftentimes *excites* and quickens even in them that are young, so that they shall work in them some real Regard of, and Applications unto him. And those great Workings about the things of God and towards him, which are sometimes found in *Children*, are not mere effects of nature. For that would not so act it self, were it not by one Occasion or other

SECT. 11.

for that End administred by the Providence of God, effectually excited. And many can call over such Divine *Visitations* in their Youth, which now they understand to be so. To this purpose speaks the Person mentioned; *Puer capi rogare te auxilium & refugium meum, & in tuam invocationem rumpebam nodos lingua mea, & rogavi parvus non parvo affectu, ne in Schola vapularem.* He prayed earnestly to God as a Refuge, when he was afraid to be beat at School. And this he resolves into Instruction, or what he had observed in others. *Juvenimus homines rogantes te, & didicimus ab eis, sentientes te ut poteramus esse magnum aliquem qui posset etiam non apparens sensibus nostris, exaudire nos & subvenire vobis,* lib. 1. cap. 9. And hereunto he adds some general Instruction which he had from the Word, Cap. 11. And from the same Principles, when he was a little after surprized with a fit of sickness, he cryed out with all earnestness that he might be *Baptized*; that so he might, as he thought, go to Heaven; for his Father was not yet a Christian, whence he was not baptized in his Infancy. *Vidisti Domine cum adhuc puer essem, & quodam die pressus stomachi dolore repente astuarem pene moriturus, vidisti Deus meus, quoniam custos meus jam eras quo motu animi & qua fide baptismum Christi tui, Dei & Domini mei flagitavi,* Cap. 11. Such Affections and occasional Actings of Soul towards God, are wrought in many by the Spirit. With the most they wear off and perish, as they did with him, who after this cast himself into many flagitious Sins. But in some God doth in and by the use of these means, inlay their Hearts with those Seeds of Faith and Grace which he gradually cherisheth and increaseth.

SECT. 12. Secondly; God works upon Men by his Spirit in outward Means, to cause them to take some real and *steady consideration of him*, their own distance from him, and obnoxiousness unto his Righteousness on the account of Sin. It is almost incredible to apprehend, but that it is testified unto by daily experience, how Men will live even where the Word is Read and Preached; how they will get a form of speaking of God, yea and of performing some Duties of Religion, and yet never come to have any *steady thoughts* of God, or of their Relation to him, or of their concernment in his Will. What-ever they speak of God, he is *not in all their Thoughts*, *Psal. 10. 4.* What-ever they do in Religion, they do it not unto him, *Amos 5. 25.* They have *neither heard his Voice at any time, nor seen his Shape*, *John 5. 37.* knowing nothing for themselves, which is their Duty, *Job 5. 27.* And yet it is hard to convince them that such is their condition. But when God is pleased to carry on his Work of Light and Grace in them, they can call to mind and understand how it was with them in their former Darkness. Then will they acknowledg, that in Truth they never had *serious steady thoughts of God*, but only such as were occasional and transient. Wherefore God begins here with them, and thereby to subduct them from under the absolute Power of the vanity of their Minds. By one means or other he fixeth in them *steady thoughts* concerning himself, and their relation unto him. And there are several wayes which he proceedeth in for the effecting hereof. As,

SECT. 13. 1. By some sudden *amazing Judgments* whereby he *revealeth his Wrath*

Wrath from Heaven against the ungodliness of Men, Rom. 1. 18. So *Waldo* was affected when his Companion was stricken dead as he walked with him in the Fields; which proved the occasion of his Conversion unto God. So the *Psalmist* describes the Affections and Thoughts of Men; when they are surprized with a *Storm at Sea*, Psal. 107. 25, 26, 27, 28. An instance whereof we have in the *Mariners of Jona's Ship*, Chap. 1. 5, 6, 7. And that *Pharaoh* who despised one day, saying, *Who is the Lord that I should regard him?* Being the next day terrified with Thunder and Lightning, cries out, *Intreat the Lord for me that it may be so no more*, Exod. 9. 28. And such like Impressions from Divine Power, most Men at one time or other have experience of.

2. By *Personal Afflictions*, Job 33. 19, 20. Psal. 78. 34, 35. Hof. 5. 15. Affliction naturally speaks Anger, and Anger respects Sin. It bespeaks it self to be God's Messenger to call Sin to remembrance, 1 Kings 17. 8. Gen. 42. 21, 22. The time of Affliction is a time of Consideration, Eccles. 7. 14. And if Men be not obdurate and hardened almost unto practical Atheism by a course of sinning, they cannot but bethink themselves who sends Affliction, and for what End it is sent. Hence great thoughts of the Holiness of God, and of his hatred of Sin, with some sense of Mens own Guilt and especial Crimes will arise. And these Effects many times prove preparatory and *materially dispositive* unto Conversion. And not what these things are in themselves able to operate is to be considered, but what they are designed unto, and made effectual for by the Holy Ghost.

3. By *remarkable Deliverances* and Mercies; So it was with *Naaman the Syrian*, 2 Kings 2. 15, 16, 17. Sudden changes from great Dangers and Distresses by unexpected Reliefs, deeply affect the Minds of Men, convincing them of the Power, Presence, and Goodness of God. And this produceth a sense and acknowledgment of their own unworthiness of what they have received. Hence also some temporary Effects of submission to the Divine Will and Gratitude do proceed.

4. An observation of the *Conversation* of others, hath affected many to seek into the Causes and Ends of it. And this inclines them unto imitation, 1 Pet. 3. 1, 2.

5. The *Word* in the Reading or Preaching of it is the principal means hereof. This the Holy Spirit employeth and maketh use of in his entrance into this Work, 1 Cor. 14. 24, 25. For those Convictions befall not Men from the Word universally or promiscuously, but as the Holy Spirit willeth and designeth. It is by the *Law* that Men have the knowledge of Sin, Rom. 7. 7. Yet we see by experience, that the *Doctrine of the Law* is despised by the most that hear it. Wherefore it hath not in it self a force or vertue alwayes to work conviction of Sin in them unto whom it is outwardly proposed. Only towards some the Spirit of God is pleased to put forth an especial *Energie* in the Dispensation thereof.

By these and the like means doth God oft-times put the *wildness* of SECT. 14. Corrupted Nature unto a stand, and stirs up the Faculties of the Soul by an effectual though not saving Impression upon them, seriously to consider of its self, and its Relation unto Him and his Will. And hereby are Men oft-times incited and engaged unto many Duties of Religion,

Religion, as Prayer for the Pardon of Sin, with Resolutions of Amendment; and although these things in some are subordinated unto a further and more effectual Work of the Spirit of God upon them, yet with many they prove *evanid* and fading, their Goodness in them being as a *Morning Cloud*, or as the *early Dew which passeth away*, Hof. 6. 4. And the Reasons whence it is that Men cast off these Warnings of God, and pursue not their own Intentions under them, nor answer what they lead unto are obvious. For ;

SECT. 15. (1.) *The Darknes of their Minds* being yet uncured, they are not able to discern the true Nature of these Divine Intimations and Instructions, but after a while regard them not, or reject them as the Occasions of needless Scruples and Fears. (2.) Presumption of their present Condition, that it is as good as it need be, or as is convenient in their present Circumstances and Occasions, makes them neglect the improvement of their Warnings. (3.) Profane Societies and Relations, such as it may be scoff at and deride all tremblings at Divine Warnings, with ignorant Ministers that undertake to Teach what they have not learned, are great means of hardning Men in their Sins, and of forfeiting the benefit of these Divine Intimations. (4.) They will as to all Efficacy, and the Motions they bring on the Affections of Men, decay, and expire of themselves, if they are not diligently improved. Wherefore in many they perish through meer sloth and negligence. (5.) Satan applies all his Engines to the defeatment of these beginnings of any Good in the Souls of Men. (6.) That which effectually and utterly overthrows this Work, which causeth them to cast off these Heavenly Warnings, is meer *love* of Lusts and Pleasures, or the unconquered adherence of a corrupted Heart unto sensual and sinful Objects, that offer present satisfaction unto its Carnal Desires. By this means is this Work of the Spirit of God in the Hearts and Minds of many utterly defeated, to the increase of their Guilt, an addition to their natural hardness, and the ruine of their Souls. But in some of them he is graciously pleased to renew his Work, and by more effectual means to carry it on to Perfection, as shall be afterwards declared.

SECT. 16. Now there is scarce any of these Instances of the care and watchfulness of God over the Souls of Men, whom he designs either to convince or convert for the Ends of his own Glory, but the Holy Person whom we have proposed as an Example, gives an account of them in and towards himself, declaring in like manner how by the wayes and means mentioned they were frustrate and came to nothing. Such were the Warnings which he acknowledged that God gave him by the Perswasions and Exhortations of his Mother, *lib. 2. cap. 3.* Such were those which he had in Sickneses of his own, and in the death of his dear Friend and Companion, *lib. 4. cap. 5, 6, 7.* And in all the several Warnings he had from God, he chargeth the Want and Guilt of their *non-improvement* on his natural blindness, his Mind being not illuminated, and the corruption of his Nature not yet cured, with the efficacy of evil Society, and the course of the World in the places where he lived. But it would be tedious to transcribe the particular Accounts that he gives of these things, though all of them singularly Worthy of Consideration,

sideration. For I must say, that in my Judgment there is none among the Ancient or Modern Divines unto this day, who either in the Declarations of their own Experiences or their Directions unto others, have equalled, much less out-gone him, in an accurate search and observation of all the secret Actings of the Spirit of God on the Minds and Souls of Men, both towards and in their Recovery or Conversion. And in order hereunto, scarce any one not Divinely Inspired hath so traced the way of the Serpent, or the effectual working of Original Sin in and on the Hearts of Men, with the efficacy communicated thereunto by various Temptations and Occasions of Life in this World. The wayes also whereby the *deceitfulness* of Sin in compliance with *objective* Temptations, doth seek to elude and frustrate the Work of God's Grace when it begins to attempt the strong holds of Sin in the Heart, were exceedingly discovered unto him. Neither hath any Man more lively and expressly laid open the Power of effectual and victorious Grace, with the manner of its Operation and Prevalency. And all these things by the guidance of the Good Spirit of God, and attendance unto the Word, did he exemplifie from his own Experience in the whole Work of God towards him. Only it must be acknowledged that he declareth these things in such a way and manner, as also with such Expressions, as many in our dayes would cry out on as fulsome and *fanatical*.

Secondly ; In the way of calling Men unto the saving Knowledg of SECT. 17. God, the Holy Spirit *convinceth them of Sin*; or he brings them under the Power of a *Work of Conviction*.

It is not my Design, nor here in my way to handle the Nature of the Work of *Conviction*, the Means Causes and Effects of it. Besides it hath been done at large by others. It is sufficient unto my purpose ; (1.) To shew the Nature of it in general. (2.) The Causes of it. (3.) The Wayes whereby Men lose their Convictions, and so become more and more hardned in sin. (4.) How the Holy Spirit doth carry on the Work in some unto compleat Conversion unto God.

(1.) For the Nature of it in general ; it consists in a *fixing* the vain SECT. 18. Mind of a Sinner upon a due consideration of Sin, its Nature, Tendency and End, with his own concernment therein ; and a *fixing* of a due sense of sin upon the secure Mind of the Sinner, with suitable Affections unto its Apprehensions. The Warnings before insisted on, whereby God excites Men to some steady *notices* of him and themselves, are like Calls given unto a Man in a profound sleep, whereat being startled he lifts up himself for a little space, but oppressed with the Power of his deep slumber, quickly layes him down again, as *Austin* expresseth it. But this Work of Conviction abides with Men, and they are no way able speedily to disintangle themselves from it.

Now the *Mind* of Man which is the Subject of this Work of Con- SECT. 19. viction, hath two things distinctly to be considered in it. (1.) The *Understanding*, which is the *active noetical* or *contemplative* Power and Faculty of it. (1.) The *Affections* wherein its passive and sensitive Power doth consist. With respect hereunto there are two parts of the Work

298 *The Manner of Conversion explained* Book 3.

of Conviction. (1) The *Fixing* of the Mind, the Rational contemplative Power of it, upon a due Consideration of Sin. (2) The *fixing* of a due sense of Sin on the *practical*, passive, sensible part of the Mind, that is, the *Conscience* and *Affections*, as was said before.

SECT. 20.

1. It is a great work to fix the vain Mind of an Unregenerate Sinner on a due Consideration of sin, its nature and tendency. The Darknes of their own mind & inexpressible Vanity, wherein I place the principal effect of our Apostacy from God, do disenable, hinder, and divert them from such Apprehensions. Hence God so often complains of the foolishness of the people that they *would not consider*, that they would not *be wise* to consider their latter end. We find by Experience this folly and vanity in many unto an Astonishment. No Reasons, Arguments, Entreaties by all that is naturally dear to them, no Necessities can prevail with them to fix their minds on a due consideration of sin: Moreover Satan now employs all his Engines to beat off the Efficacy and Power of this Work. And when his Temptations and Delusions are mixed with Men's natural Darknes and Vanity, the Mind seems to be impregably fortified against the power of *Conviction*. For although it be real Conversion unto God, that overthrows the Kingdom of Satan in us; yet this Work of *Conviction* raiseth such a Combustion in it, that he cannot but fear it will be its End. And this *strong Man armed*, would if possible keep his Goods and House in peace. Hence all sorts of persons have daily Experience in their Children, Servants, Relations, how difficult, yea how impossible it is to fix their Minds on a due Consideration of sin, until it be wrought in them by the exceeding Greatness of the power of the Spirit of God. Wherefore herein consists the first part of this Work of Conviction; it *fixeth the mind* on a due Consideration of sin. So it is expressed; *Psal. 51. 3. my sin is ever before me.* God reproves Men and *sets their sins in order* before their eyes, *Psal. 50. 21.* Hence they are necessitated as it were always to behold them, and that which way soever they turn themselves. Fain they would cast them behind their backs, or cast out thoughts of them, but the *Arrows of God* stick in them and they cannot take off their Minds from their consideration. And whereas there are three things in sin; (1) The *Original* of it and its native inherience in us, as *Psal. 51. 5.* (2) The *state* of it, or the Obnoxiousness of Men to the Wrath of God on the Account thereof; *Ephes. 2. 1, 2, 3.* (3) The *particular sins* of Mens Lives; in the first part of the Work of Conviction the Minds of Men are variously exercised with respect unto them, according as the Spirit of God is pleased to engage and *fix* them.

2. As the Mind is hereby fixed on the Consideration of sin, so a *sense of sin* must also be fixed on the Mind, that is, the *Conscience* and *Affections*. A bare Contemplation of the Concernments of sin is of little use in this matter. The Scripture principally evidenceth this work of Conviction or placeth it in this Effect of a sense of sin, in Trouble, Sorrow, Disquietment of Mind, fear of Ruine and the like, see *Acts 2. 37. Acts 24. 25.* But this I must not enlarge upon.

SECT. 21.

This therefore is the second thing which we observe in God's gracious Actings towards the Recovery of the Souls of Men from their *Apostacy*, and from under the Power of sin. The principal efficient Cause of this Work is the *Holy Ghost*; the preaching of the Word, especially of the *Law*, being the Instrument which he maketh use of therein. The Knowledg of sin is by

by the Law, both the Nature, Guilt, and Curse belonging to it; *Rom. 7.* 7. There is therefore no Conviction of sin, but what consists in an Emanation of *Light* and *Knowledge* from the Doctrine of the Law, with an Evidence of its Power and a sense of its Curse. Other Means, as Afflictions, Dangers, Sickneses, Fears, Disappointments, may be made use of, to excite, stir up, and put an edge upon the Minds and Affections of Men; yet it is by one means or other from the Law of God, that such a discovery is made of sin unto them, and such a sense of it wrought upon them, as belongs unto this work of Conviction. But it is the Spirit of God alone that is the *principal efficient Cause* of it, or he works these effects on the Minds of Men. God takes it upon himself as his own work to *reprove Men* and set their sins in order before their eyes; *Psal. 50, 21.* And that this same Work is done immediately by the Spirit is expressly declared, *John. 16. 8.* He alone it is who makes all means effectual unto this End and Purpose. Without his especial and immediate Actings on us to this End, we may hear the Law preached all the Days of our Lives and not be once affected with it.

And it may by the way be worth our Observation, to consider how God SECT. 22. designing the Calling or *Conversion* of the Souls of Men, doth in this holy wise Providence over-rule all their outward Concernments, so as that they shall be disposed into such Circumstances, as conduce to to the end aymed at. Either by their own Inclinations and Choice, or by the Intervention of Accidents crossing their Inclinations, and frustrating their Designs, he will lead them into such *Societies, Acquaintances, Relations, Places,* means, as he hath ordained to be useful unto them for the great ends of their Conviction and Conversion. So in particular *Augustin* aboundeth in his Contemplation on the Holy, Wise Providence of God, in carrying of him from *Carthage* to *Rome*, and from thence to *Milan*, where he heard *Ambrose* preach every *Lords-day*, which proved at length the Means of his through-Conversion to God. And in that whole Course, by his discourse upon it, he discovers Excellently as on the one hand, the variety of his own Projections and Designs, his Aymes and Ends, which oft-times were perverse and froward; so on the other, the constant guidance of divine Providence, working powerfully through all Occurrences towards the blessed End designed for him. And I no way doubt but that God exercised him unto those distinct *Experiences* of Sin and Grace in his own Heart and Wayes, because he had designed him to be the great *Champion* of the Doctrine of his Grace against all its enemies, and that not only in his own Age, wherein it met with a fierce Opposition, but also in all succeeding ages, by his Excellent *Labours* preserved for the use of the Church: see *Confess. lib. 5. cap. 7. 8, 9, &c.* *Tu spes mea in terra viventium, ad mutandum terrarum locum pro salute animæ meæ, & Carthagini stimulos quibus inde avellerer admovebas; & Romæ illecebras quibus attraherer proponebas mihi per homines qui diligebant vitam mortuam, hinc insana facientes inde vana pollicentes, & ad corrigendos gressus meos utebaris occulte & illorum & mea perversitate, cap. 8.* Thou who art my hope in the Land of the Living, that I might remove from one Country to another, for the Salvation of my Soul, didst both apply goads unto me at Carthage whereby I might be driven from thence, and proposedst Allurements unto me at Rome, whereby I might be drawn thither, and this thou didst by Men who loved

the Dead Life in sin ; here doing things outrageous, there promising things desirable to vain Minds, whilst thou to correct and reform my ways didst secretly make use of their forwardness and mine.

SECT. 23. 3. It must be granted that many on whom this work hath been wrought producing great Resolutions of Amendment, and much Reformation of Life, do lose all the *Power* and *Efficacy* of it, with all the impressions it had made on their Affections. And some of these wax worse and more profligate in sinning than ever they were before. For having broken down the Damm of their restraints, they pour out their lusts like a Flood, and are more senseless than ever of those Checks and Fears with which before they were bridled and awed ; 2 *Pet.* 2. 20, 21. 22. So the person lately mentioned declares that after many Convictions which he had digested and neglected, he was grown so obdurate and senseless, that falling into a *feaver* wherein he thought he should die and go immediately unto *Hell*, he had not that endeavour after Deliverance and Mercy as he had many years before on lesser dangers. And this perverse Effect is variously brought about.

SECT. 24. (1.) It is with most an immediate *product of the power of their own Lust*. Especially is it so with them who together with their *Convictions* receive no Gifts of the Holy Ghost. For as we observed their Lusts being only checked and controuled, not subdued, they get new strength by their Restraint, and rebel with success against Conviction. Such as these fall away from what they have attained *suddenly*; *Math.* 13. 5. 21. One day they seem to lye in *Hell* by the Terror of their Convictions, and the next to be hastning towards it by their sins and pollutions. see *Luke.* 11. 24, 25, 26. *Hof.* 4. 6. *cap.* 6. 4.

(2.) This Apostacy is promoted and hastned by others. As (1.) such as undertaking to be *Spiritual Guides* and Instructors of Men in their way towards Rest, who being unskilful in the Word of Righteousness, do heal their wounds slightly or turn them out of the way. *Seducers* also it may be interpose their crafty deceits whereby they lye in wait to deceive, and so turn Men off from those Good ways of God whereinto they would otherwise enter. So it fell out with *Austin*, who beginning somewhat to enquire after God, fell into the society and heresy of the *Manichees*, which frustrated all the Convictions which by any means he had received. (2.) Such as directly and that perhaps with importunity and violence, will endeavour to draw Men back into the ways of the World, and the pursuit of their lusts, *Pro.* 1. 11, 12, 13, 14. So the same Person declares with what earnestness and restless importunities, some of his Companions endeavoured to draw him unto the *Spectacles and Plays at Rome*. And it is not easily imagined with what subtilty some persons will intice others into sinful Courses, nor what violence they will use in their Temptations under a pretence of Love and Friendship. (3.) The Awe that is put on the Minds of Men in their Convictions, arising from a Dread of the Terror of the Law, and the Judgments of God threatned therein, is apt of it self to wear off when the Soul is a little accustomed unto it, and yet sees no evil actually to ensue, *Eccl.* 8. 11. 2 *Pet.* 1. 4.

SECT. 25. (4.) In some the Holy Spirit of God is pleased to *carry on this work of Conviction* toward a further blessed issue, and then two things ensue thereon
in

in the Minds of them who are so convinced. First, there will follow great and strange Conflicts between their *Corruptions*, and their *Convictions*. And this doth especially manifest it self in them who have been accustomed unto a course of sinning, or have any particular sin wherein they delight, and by which they have given satisfaction unto their Lusts. For the *Law* coming with Power and Terror on the Conscience, requires a relinquishment of all sins, at the eternal peril of the Soul. Sin hereby is incited and provoked, * and the Soul begins to see its disability to conflict with that, which before it thought absolutely in its own power. For Men that indulge themselves in their sins doubt not but that they can leave them at their pleasure. But when they begin to make head against them on the command of the Law, they find themselves to be in the power of that which they Imagined to be in theirs. So doth sin take occasion by the *Commandment* to work in all Men manner of Concupiscence; and those who thought themselves before to be alive, do find that it is *sin which lives*, and that themselves are dead. *Rom 7.7,8,9.* Sin rising up in Rebellion against the Law, discovers its own Power and the utter Impotency of them in whom it is, to contest with it or destroy it: But yet mens *Convictions* in this Condition will discover themselves, and operate two ways or in a two-fold Degree.

* *Libera me Domine ab his hostibus meis a quibus me liberare non valeo. Perversum & pessimum est cor meum, ad deploranda propria peccata mea est lapideum & aridum, ad resistendum insulantibus molle & luteum, ad inutilia & noxia pertractanda velox & infatigabile, ad cogitanda salubria fastidiosum & immobile. Anima mea distorta & depravata est ad percipiendum bonum; sed ad Voluptatum vitia nimis facilis & prompta, ad salutem reminiscendam nimis etiam difficilis & pigra. De Contritione cordis lib. inter opera August. cap. 4.*

(1.) They will produce some *Endeavours* & Promises of *Amendment* and *SECT. 26.* Reformation of Life. These Men are unavoidably cast upon or wrought unto, to pacify the voice of the Law in their Consciences which bids them do so or perish. But such Endeavours or Promises for the most part hold only unto the next Occasion of sinning, or Temptation. An Access of the least outward Advantage or Provocation unto the internal power of sin, sleights all such Resolutions, and the Soul gives up it self unto the power of its old Ruler. Such Effects of the Word are described, *Hof. 6.4.* So *Augustin* expresseth his own Experience after his great Convictions and before his full Conversion, *lib. 8. cap. 5. Suspirabam ligatus non ferro alieno, sed ferrea mea voluntate. Velle meum tenebat inimicus, & inde mihi catenam fecerat & constrinxerat me. Quippe ex voluntate perversa facta est libido, & dum servitur libidini, facta est consuetudo, & dum consuetudini non resistitur, facta est necessitas. Quibus quasi ansulis quibusdam sibimet innexis, unde catenam appellavi, tenebat me obstrictum dura servitus.* And he shews how faint and languid his endeavours were for Reformation and Amendment. *Sarcina seculi velut somno assolet dulciter premebar, & cogitationes quibus meditabar in te, similes erant Conatibus expergisci volentium, qui tamen superati soporis altitudine remerguntur.* And he confesseth that although through the urgency of his *Convictions* he could not but pray that he might be freed from the power of Sin, yet through the prevalence of that power in him, he had a secret reserve and desire not to part with that Sin which he prayed against. *cap. 7. Petieram a te castitatem & dixeram da mihi castitatem & continentiam, sed noli modo, timebam etiam ne*

*me cito exaudires, & cito sanares a morbo concupiscentie, quam malebam ex-
pleri, quam extinguere.*

SECT. 27.

* Vere Abyssus peccata mea sunt quia incomprehensibilia profunditate, & inestimabilia sunt numero & immensitate. O Abyssus abyssum invocans! O peccata mea, tormenta quibus me servatis abyssus sunt, quia infinita & incomprehensibilia sunt. Est & tertia abyssus, & est nimis terribilis, Judicia Dei abyssus multa, quia super omnem sensum occulta. He omnes abyssi terribiles sunt mihi undique, quia timor super timorem & dolor super dolorem. Abyssus Judiciorum Dei super me, abyssus inferni subtus me, abyssus peccatorum meorum est intra me. Illam quæ super me est timeo ne in me irruat; & me cum abyso mea, in illam quæ subtus me latet, obruat. Lib. de Contritione Cordis, inter opera Augusti. cap. 9.

giving an account of the Conversion of two eminent *Courtiers* who immediately renounced the World and betook themselves wholly to the Service of God. This Discourse God was pleased to make use of further to awake him, and even to amaze him. Lib. 8. cap. 7. Narrabat hoc Politianus; tu autem Domine inter verba ejus retorquebas me ad meipsum, auferens me a dorso meo ubi me posueram, dum nollem me attendere, & consulebas me ante faciem meam, ut viderem quam turpis essem, quam distortus & sordidus, maculosus & ulcerosus: & videbam, & horrebam, & quo a me fugerem non erat; & si conabar a me avertere aspectum, narrabat ille quod narrabat, & tu me (sursus) opponebas mihi, & imprimebas me in Oculos meos, ut invenirem iniquitatem meam & odissem. And a little after; Ita rodebar intus & confundebar pudore horribili vehementer, cum Politianus talia loqueretur. The substance of what he sayes is; That in and by that Discourse of *Politianus*, God held him to the consideration of himself, caused him to see and behold his own filth and vileness, until he was horribly perplexed and confounded in himself. So it often falls out in this Work of the Spirit of God. When his first Warnings are not complied withal, when the Light he communicates is not improved; upon the return of them they shall be mixed with some sense of Severity.

SECT. 28. This Effect I say proceeds from hence, that under this Work God is pleased secretly to communicate a *Principle of Grace* or Spiritual Life unto the Will. This therefore being designed to rule and bear sway in the Soul, begins its *conflict* effectually to eject Sin out of its Throne and Dominion. For whereas when we come under the Power of Grace, Sin can no longer have dominion over us, *Rom. 6. 12.* So the Spirit begins now to *lust against the Flesh*, as *Gal. 5. 17.* aiming at and intending a compleat Victory or Conquest. There was upon bare *conviction* a
Contest

2. These Endeavours do arise unto great Perplexities and Distresses. For after a while the Soul of a Sinner is * torn and divided between the Power of Corruption, and the Terror of Conviction. And this falls out upon a double account. (1.) Upon some occasional sharpening of former Convictions, when the sense of them hath been ready to wear off. (2.) From the *secret insinuation of a Principle of Spiritual Life and Strength* into the Will, whose Nature and Power the Soul is as yet unacquainted withal. Of both these we have signal Instances in the Person before mentioned; for after all the means which God had used towards him for his Conversion, whilst yet he was detained under the Power of Sin, and ready on every Temptation to revert to his former Courses, he occasionally heard one *Politianus*

Contest before in the Soul, but it was meerly between the *Mind* and *Conscience* on the one hand, and the *Will* on the other. The Will was still absolutely bent on Sin, only some Head was made against its Inclinations by the Light of the Mind before Sin, and rebukes of Conscience after it. But the *Conflict* begins now to be in the Will it self. A new Principle of Grace being infused thereinto, opposeth those habitual Inclinations unto Evil, which were before predominant in it. This fills the Mind with Amazement, and in some brings them to the very door of Despair, because they see not how nor when they shall be delivered. So was it with the Person instanced in *Lib. 8. Cap. 5. Voluntas nova que mihi esse ceperit, ut te gratis colerem fruique te vellem, Deus sola certa jucunditas, nondum erat idonea ad superandam priorem vetustate roborata. Ita due voluntates mea, una vetus, alia nova, illa carnalis, illa spiritalis confligebant inter se, atque discordando dissipabant animam meam. Sic intelligebam meo ipso experimento id quod legeram, quomodo caro concupisceret adversus spiritum & spiritus adversus carnem; Ego quidem in utroque, sed magis ego in eo quod in me approbavam quam in eo quod in me improbavam. Ibi enim magis jam non ego, quia ex magna parte id patiebar invitus, quod faciebam volens. The New Will which began to be in me, whereby I would love thee, O my God the only certain sweetness, was not yet able to overcome my former Will, confirmed by long continuance. So my two Wills, the one Old, the other New, the one Carnal, the other Spiritual, conflicted between themselves, and rent my Soul by their disagreement. Then did I understand by experience in my self what I had read, how the Flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit lusteth against the Flesh. I was my self on both sides, but more in that which I approved in my self than in what I condemned in my self. I was not more in that which I condemned, because for the most part I suffered unwillingly what I did willingly. This Conflict between Grace and Sin in the Will he most excellently expresseth, *Cap. 9, 10, 11.* delivering those things which more or less are evident in the Experience of those who have passed through this Work. His Fluctuations, his Promises, his Hopes and Fears, the Ground he got and lost, the pangs of Conscience and travel of Soul which he underwent in the new Birth, are all of them graphically represented by him.*

In this tumult and distress of the Soul, God oftentimes quiets it by *SECT. 29.* some suitable Word of Truth administred unto it, either in the Preaching of the Gospel, or by some other means disposed in his Providence unto the same End: In the midst of this storm and disorder he comes and sayes, *Peace be still.* For together with his Word, he communicates some influence of his Grace, that shall break the rebellious strength, and subdue the Power of Sin, and give the Mind satisfaction in a full Resolution for its everlasting Relinquishment. So was it with him mentioned, when in the condition described he was hurried up and down almost like a distracted Person, whilst he suffered the Terrors of the Lord, sometimes Praying, sometimes Weeping, sometimes alone, sometimes in the company of his Friends, sometimes walking, and sometimes lying on the Ground, he was by an unusual occurrence warned to take up a Book and read: The Book next him was that of *Paul's Epistle*, which taking up and opening, the place he first fixed his eyes upon, was *Rom. 13. 13, 14. Let us walk honestly as in the day, not in rioting and drunkenness,*

ness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying; but put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the Flesh to fulfil the Lusts thereof. Immediately on the reading of these Words, there was an end put unto his perplexing Conflict. He found his whole Soul by the Power of Almighty Grace subdued wholly to the Will of God, and fixed unto a prevalent Resolution of adhering to him with a relinquishment of Sin, with an assured composure upon the account of the success he should have therein through Jesus Christ. Immediately he declared what he had done, what had befallen him, first to his Friend, then to his Mother, which proved the occasion of Conversion to the one, and inexpressible joy to the other. The end of the Story deserves to be reported in his own words; *Arripui librum, aperui, legi, --- nec ultra volui legere nec opus erat. Statim quippe cum sine hujusce sententia quasi luce securitatis infusa cordi meo, omnes dubitationis tenebra defugerunt. Tum interjecto aut digito aut nescio quo alio signo codicem clausi, & tranquillo cum vultu indicavi Alipio. At ille quid in se ageretur quod ego nesciebam sic indicavit. Petit videre quid legissem; ostendi, & attendit etiam ultra quam ego legeram, & ignorabam quid sequeretur. Sequebatur vero, infirmum autem in fide assumite. Quod ille ad se retulit mihi quoque aperuit; Sed tali admonitione firmatus est, placitoque & proposito, bono & congruentissimo suis moribus, quibus a me in melius jam olim valde longeque distabat, sine ulla turbulenta cunctatione conjunctus est. Inde ad matrem ingredimur, indicamus, gaudet; Narramus quemadmodum gestum sit, exultat & triumphat, & benedicit tibi, qui potens es ultra quam petimus aut intelligimus facere, Lib. 8. Cap. 12.* Having read these Verses I would read no more, nor was there any need that so I should do. For upon the end of that Sentence, as if a Light of Peace or Security had been infused into my Heart, all darkness of doubts fled away; marking the Book with my Finger put into it, or by some other sign, I shut it, and with a quiet countenance declared what was done to Alipius. And hereupon he also declared what was at Work in himself, whereof I was ignorant. He desired to see what I had read, which when I had shewed him, he looked further than I had read, nor did I know what followed. But it was this, he that is weak in the Faith receive, which he applyed unto himself and declared it unto me; confirmed by this Admonition, with a firm purpose and suitable to his manners, wherein he formerly much excelled me, he was joyned to me without any turbulent delay. We go in hereon unto my Mother, and declare what was done; She rejoiceth; We make known the manner of it how it was done; she exulteth and triumpheth, and bleisseth thee, O God, who art able to do for us more than we know how to ask or understand. And these things doth the Holy Man express to bear witness, as he sayes, *Adversus typhum humani generis*, to repress the swelling pride of Mankind. And in the Example of Alipius we have an Instance, how variously God is pleased to effect this Work in Men, carrying some through strong Convictions, deep Humiliations, great Distresses, and perplexing Terrors of Mind, before they come to Peace and Rest; leading others gently and quietly without any visible disturbances, unto the saving Knowledg of himself by Jesus Christ.

SECT. 30. Secondly; A second thing which befalls Men under this Work of Conviction, is a dread and fear as to their Eternal Condition. There doth

doth befall them an apprehension of that Wrath which is due to their Sins, and threatned in the Curse of the Law to be *inflicted* on them. This fills them with *afflictive* Perturbations of Mind, with Dread and Terror, Consternation and Humbling of their Souls thereon. And what befalls the Minds of Men on this account, is handled by some distinctly under the Names or Titles of, *Dolor legalis, timor servilis, attritio mentis, compunctio cordis, humiliatio anime*; Legal sorrow, servile fear, attrition of Mind, compunction and humiliation, and the like. And as these things have been handled most of them by *Modern Divines*, and cast into a certain *series* and dependance on one another, with a discovery of their Nature and Degrees, and how far they are required in order unto *sincere Conversion and sound Believing*; so they are all of them treated on in their way by the *School-men*, as also they were before them by many of the *Fathers*. The charge therefore of *Novelty* which is laid by some against the Doctrine of these Things, ariseth from a *fulsome mixture* of Ignorance and Confidence. Whether therefore all things that are delivered concerning these things be right or no, sure enough I am that the whole Doctrine about them for the *substance* of it, is no newer than the *Gospel*, and that it hath been taught in all Ages of the Church. What is needful to be received concerning it, I shall reduce to the ensuing Heads.

(1.) *Conviction of Sin* being ordinarily by the Law, either immedi- SECT. 31.
ately or by Light and Truth thence derived; there doth ordinarily accompany it a *deep sense* and *apprehension* of the eternal danger which the Soul is lyable unto, on the account of the *guilt of the Sin* whereof it is convinced. For the Law comes with its whole Power upon the Mind and Conscience. Men may be partial in the Law the Law will not be partial. It doth not only *convince* by its Light, but also at the same time *condemns* by its Authority. For what the *Law speaks*, it *speaks unto them that are under the Law*. It takes Men *under its Power*, and then *shutting* them under Sin, it speaks unto them in great severity. This is called the *coming of the Commandment*; and slaying of a Sinner, *Rom.*

7. 9.

(2.) This Apprehension will ordinarily ingenerate *disquieting and perplexing Affections* in the Minds of Men; nor can it be otherwise where it is fixed and prevalent. As, (1.) *Sorrow and Shame*, for and of what they have done. Shame was the first thing wherein Conviction of Sin discovered it self, *Gen. 3. 7*. And Sorrow alwayes accompanieth it, *Acts 2. 36*. Hearing these things *κατενόησαν τὴ καρδίᾳ*, they were pierced with *perplexing Grief* in their Heart. Their eyes are opened to see the Guilt and Sense of Sin, which pierceth them through with dividing Sorrow. (2.) *Fear of Eternal Wrath*; This keeps the Soul in *bondage*, *Heb. 2. 14*. and is accompanied with torment. The Person so convinced, believes the threatning of the Law to be true and trembles at it. An eminent Instance whereof we have in our first Parents also, *Gen. 3. 16*. (3.) *Perplexing unsatisfactory Enquiries* after Means and Ways for deliverance out of this present Distress and from future Misery. What shall we do? What shall we do to be saved is the restless enquiry of such Persons, *Mich. 6. 8. Acts 2. Acts 14.*

306 *The Manner of Conversion explained* Book 3.

(3.) These things will assuredly put the Soul on *many Duties*, as Prayer for Deliverance, Abstinence from Sin, endeavours after a general change of Life; in all which and the like, this *Conviction* puts forth and variously exerciseth its power.

SECT. 32. (4.) We do not ascribe the Effects intended unto the *meer working* of the Passions of the Minds of Men upon the rational Consideration of their State and Condition, which yet cannot but be *grievous* and *afflictive*. These Things may be so proposed unto Men and pressed on them, as that they shall not be able to avoid their Consideration, and the Conclusions which naturally follow on them. And yet they may not be in the least affected with them as we see by experience. Wherefore we say moreover that the *Law* or the Doctrine of it, when the Consciences of Men are effectually brought under its Power, is accompanied with a *secret Vertue* from God called a *Spirit of Bondage*, which causeth a sense of the Curse of it to take a deep impresson on the Soul, to fill it with *fear* and *dread*, yea sometimes with horror and despair. This the Apostle calls the *Spirit of Bondage unto Fear*, Rom. 8. 15. and declares at large how all that are under the Law, that is, the convincing and condemning Power of it are in *bondage*, nor doth the Law in the Administration of it, lead or gender unto any thing else but *Bondage*, Gal. 4. 22, 23, 24.

SECT. 33. (5.) The *substance* of these things is ordinarily found in those who are converted unto God, when grown up unto the use of Reason and capable of Impressions from external Administrations. Especially are they evident in the Minds and Consciences of such as have been engaged in any open sinful course or practice. But yet no *certain Rule or Measure* of them can be prescribed as necessary in or unto any antecedently unto Conversion. To evince the Truth hereof two things may be observed; (1.) That Perturbations, Sorrows, Dejections, Dread, Fears, are *no Duty* unto any; only they are such things as sometimes ensue or are immitted into the Mind upon that which is a Duty indispensable, namely *conviction* of Sin. They belong not to the Precept of the Law, but to its Curse. They are no part of what is required of us, but of what is inflicted on us. There is a Gospel-Sorrow and Humiliation after believing that is a Duty, that is both commanded and hath Promises annexed unto it. But this Legal Sorrow is an Effect of the Curse of the Law and not of its Command. (2.) God is pleased to exercise a *Prerogative* and *Sovereignty* in this whole Matter, and deals with the Souls of Men in unspeakable variety. Some he leads by the Gates of Death and Hell unto Rest in his Love, like the People of old through the waste and howling Wilderness into *Canaan*, and the Paths of others he makes plain and easie unto them. Some walk or wander long in Darkness, in the Souls of others Christ is formed in the first gracious Visitation.

SECT. 34. (6.) There is as was said, no *certain Measure or Degree* of these Accidents or Consequents of Conviction to be prescribed unto any as *antecedently necessary* to sincere Conversion and sound Believing: but these two things in general are so; (1.) Such a Conviction of Sin, that is of

a state of Sin, of a course of Sin, of actual Sins, against the Light of Natural Conscience, as that the Soul is satisfied that it is thereby obnoxious unto the Curse of the Law and the Wrath of God. Thus at least doth God conclude and shut up every one under Sin on whom he will have Mercy; for every Mouth must be stopped, and all become guilty before God, Rom. 3. 19. Gal. 3. 22. without this no Man ever did nor will ever sincerely believe in Jesus Christ. For he calleth none unto him, but those who in some measure are weary or thirsty, or one way or other seek after Deliverance. The whole he tells us, that is, those who so conceit themselves, have no need of a Physician, they will neither enquire after him nor care to go unto him when they are invited so to do; see Isa. 32. 2. (2.) A due apprehension and resolved Judgment that there is no way within the compass of a Man's own contrivance to find out, or his ability to make use of and to walk in, nor any other way of God's appointment or approbation, which will deliver the Soul in and from the State and Condition wherein it is, and that which it fears, but only that which is proposed in the Gospel by Jesus Christ.

(7.) Where these things are, the Duty of a Person so convinced, is to enquire after and to receive the Revelation of Jesus Christ, and the Righteousness of God in him, John 1. 13. And in order hereunto he ought; (1.) To own the Sentence of the Law under which he suffereth, justifying God in his Righteousness, and the Law in its Holiness, what-ever be the issue of this Dispensation towards himself, Rom. 3. 19, 20. Chap. 7. 12, 13. For God in this Work intends to break the stubbornness of Men's Hearts, and to hide Pride from them, Rom. 3. 4. (2.) Not hastily to believe every thing that will propose it self unto him as a Remedy or Means of Relief, Mich. 6. 6, 7. The things which will present themselves in such a Case as means of Relief are of two sorts. (1.) Such as the Fears and Superstitions of Men have suggested or will suggest. That which hath raised all the false Religion which is in the World, is nothing but a contrivance for the satisfaction of Men's Consciences under Convictions. To pass by Gentilism, This is the very Life and Soul of Popery. What is the meaning of the Sacrifice of the Mass, of Purgatory, of Pardons, Penances, Indulgences, Abstinences, and the like things innumerable, but only to satisfy Conscience by them perplexed with a sense of Sin? Hence many among them after great and outrageous wickednesses, do betake themselves to their highest Monastical Severity. The Life and Soul of Superstition consists in endeavours to quiet and charm the Consciences of Men convinced of Sin. (2.) That which is pressed with most vehemency and plausibility, being suggested by the Law it self in a way of escape from the danger of its Sentence, as the sense of what it speaks represented in a natural Conscience, is legal Righteousness to be sought after in amendment of Life. This proposeth it self unto the Soul, as with great importunity, so with great Advantages to further its Acceptance. For (1.) the matter of it is unquestionably necessary, and without it in its proper place and with respect unto its proper End, there is no sincere Conversion unto God. (1.) It is looked on as the sense of the Law, or as that which will give satisfaction thereunto. But there is a deceit in all these things, as to the

end proposed; and if any *amendment of Life* be leaned on to that purpose, it will prove a *broken Reed* and pierce the Hand of him that rests upon it. For although the Law require at all times an abstinence from sin, and so for the future, which in a Sinner is *amendment of Life*; yet it proposeth it not as that which will deliver any Soul from the *guilt of Sin already contracted*, which is the State under Consideration. And if it win upon the Mind to accept of its Terms unto that end or purpose, it can do no more, nor will do less than shut up the Person under its *Curse*.

SECT. 36. (2.) It is the Duty of Persons in such a condition to beware of engaging Temptations. As (1.) that they have not *attained such a degree of Sorrow for Sin* and Humiliation, as is necessary unto them that are called to believe in Jesus Christ. There was indeed more reason of giving caution against Temptations of this kind in *former* dayes, when Preachers of the Gospel dealt more *severely*, I wish I may not also say, more *sincerely* with the Consciences of Convinced Sinners, than it is the manner of most now to do. But it is yet possible that herein may lie a mistake; seeing *no such Degrees* of these things as some may be troubled about, are prescribed for any such end, either in the Law or Gospel. (2.) That those who perswade them to believe, know not how great Sinners they are, but yet they know that Christ called the greatest; and it is an undervaluation of the Grace of Christ to suppose that the greatest Sins should disappoint the Effects of it in any that sincerely come unto him.

SECT. 37. The last thing whereby this Work of Conversion to God is compleated, as to the outward means of it, which is the ingenerating and acting of Faith in God by Jesus Christ, remains alone to be considered, wherein all possible brevity and plainness shall be consulted. And I shall comprize what I have to offer on this Head in the ensuing Observations.

(1.) This is the *proper and peculiar Work of the Gospel*, and ever was so from the first giving of the Promise. *The Law was given by Moses, but Grace and Truth came by Jesus Christ*, John 1. 18. Rom. 1. 16. 1 Pet. 1. 23. Jam. 1. 18. Ephes. 3. 8, 9, 10.

(2.) To this purpose it is necessary that the *Gospel*, that is, the Doctrine of it concerning Redemption, Righteousness and Salvation by Jesus Christ, be *declared* and made known to Convinced Sinners. And this also is an effect of Sovereign Wisdom and Grace, Rom. 10. 13, 14, 15.

(3.) The Declaration of the Gospel is accompanied with a *Revelation* of the Will of God, with respect unto the Faith and Obedience of them unto whom it is declared. This is *the Work of God*, the Work which he requires at our hands, *that we believe in him whom he hath sent*, Joh. 6. And this Command of God unto Sinners to believe in the Lord Jesus Christ for Life and Salvation, the Gospel teacheth us to press from the manifold *Aggravations* which attend the Sin of not complying therewith. For it is, as therein declared; (1.) *A Rejection of the Testimony of God*, which he gives unto his Wisdom, Love, and Grace, with the excellency and certainty of the way of Salvation of Sinners by Jesus Christ,

Christ, which is to make God a Liar, 1 Joh. 5. 10. Joh. 3. 32, 33. (2.) A Contempt of Love and Grace, with the way and means of their communication to lost Sinners by the Blood of the Son of God, which is the highest provocation that can be offered unto the Divine Majesty.

(4.) In the Declaration of the Gospel the Lord Christ is in an especial manner proposed, as *crucified and lifted up* for the especial Object of our Faith, *Joh. 3. 14, 15. Gal. 3. 1.* And this Proposition of Christ hath included in it an *Invitation* unto all Convinced Sinners to come unto him for Life and Salvation, *Isa. 45. 2. Chap. 65. 1.*

(5.) The Lord Christ being proposed unto Sinners in the Gospel, and their acceptance or receiving of him being urged on them, it is withal declared for *what end* he is so proposed. And this is in general *to save them from their Sins*, Mat. 1. 21. or *the Wrath to come* whereof they are afraid, 1 *Thess. 1. 10.* For in the Evangelical Proposition of him there is included; (1.) That there is a *Way yet remaining for Sinners*, whereby they may escape the Curse of the Law, and the Wrath of God which they have deserved, *Psal. 130. 4. Job 33. 24. Acts 4. 12.* (2.) That the Foundation of these Wayes lies in an *Atonement* made by Jesus Christ unto the Justice of God, and Satisfaction to his Law for Sin, *Rom. 3. 25. 2 Cor. 5. 21. Gal. 3. 13.* (3.) That God is *well-pleased with this Atonement*, and his Will is that we should accept of it, and acquiesce in it, *2 Cor. 5. 18, 19. Isa. 53. 11, 12. Rom. 5. 10, 11.*

(6.) It is proposed and promised, that through and upon their believing, that is, on Christ as proposed in the Gospel for the only way of Redemption and Salvation, *Convinced Sinners shall be pardoned*, justified, and acquitted before God, discharged of the Law against them, through the *imputation* unto them of what the Lord Christ hath done for them and suffered in their stead, *Rom. 8. 3. & 10. 3, 4. 1 Cor. 1. 30, 31. 2 Cor. 5. 21. Ephes. 2. 8, 9, 10.*

(7.) To prevail with and win over the Souls of Men unto a *consent* to receive Christ on the Terms wherein he is proposed; that is, to believe in him, and trust unto him, to what he is, hath done and suffered, and continueth to do for pardon of Sin, Life and Salvation, the Gospel is filled with *Arguments, Invitations, Incouragements, Exhortations, Promises*, all of them designed to explain and declare the Love, Grace, Faithfulness, and good-Will of God herein. In the due management and improvement of these parts of the Gospel, consists the principal Wisdom and Skill of the Ministers of the New Testament.

(8.) Among these various Ways or Means of the Declaration of himself and his Will, God frequently causeth some *especial Word*, Promise or Passage to fix it self on the *Mind of a Sinner*, as we saw it in the Instance before insisted on. Hereby the Soul is first excited to exert and act the Faith wherewith it is endued, by the effectual working of the Spirit of God before described. And by this means are Men directed unto Rest Peace and Consolation, in that variety of Degrees wherein God is pleased to communicate them.

(9.) *This Ating of Faith on Christ* through the Promise of the Gospel, for Pardon, Righteousness and Salvation, is inseparably accompanied with, and that Faith is the Root and infallible cause of an *universal In-gagement of Heart unto all Holy Obedience to God in Christ*, with a Relinquishment of all known Sin, necessarily producing a through-Change

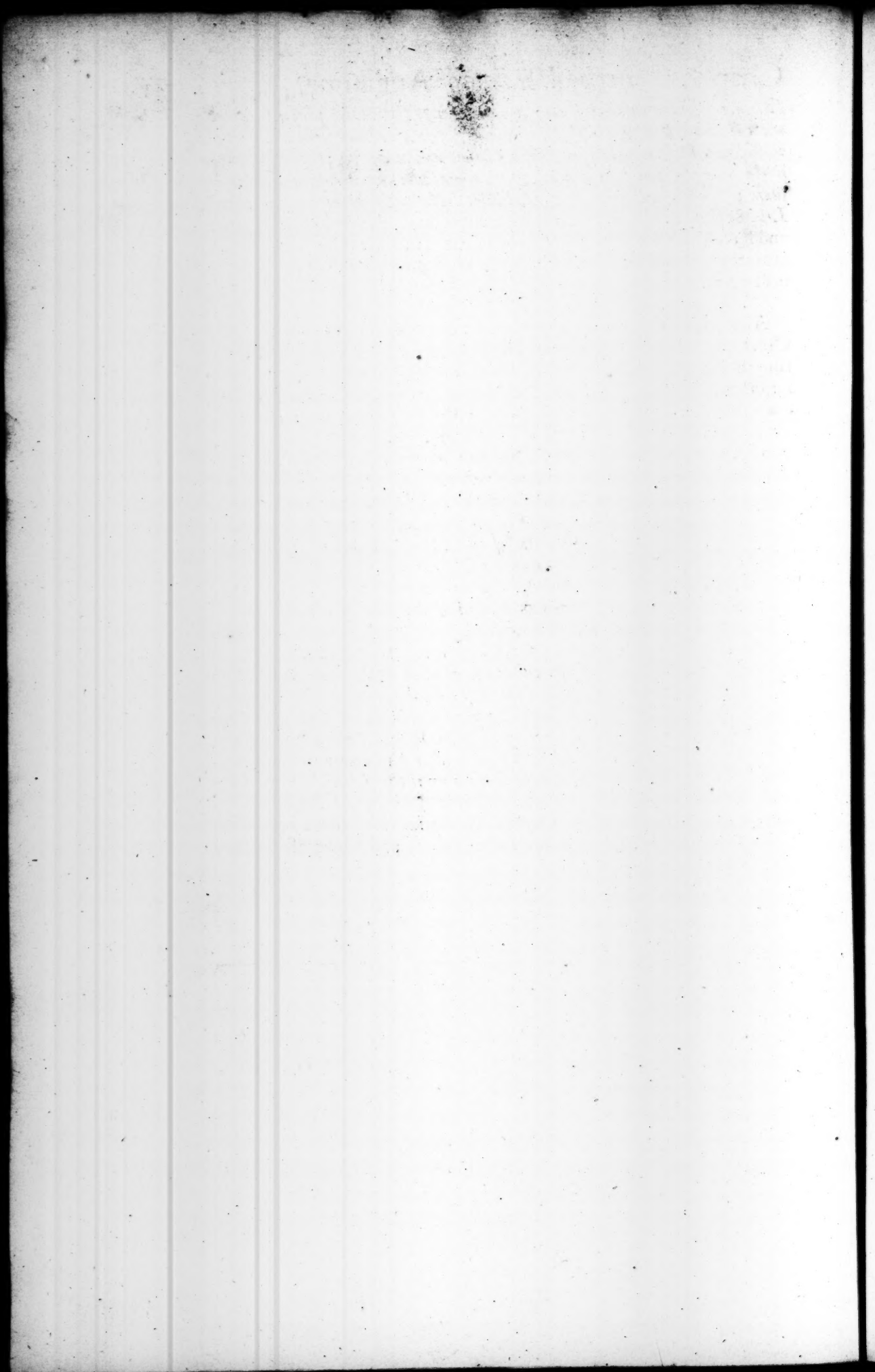
and Reformation of Life, and Fruitfulness in Obedience. For as upon a discovery of the *Love of God* in Christ, the Promises whereby it is exhibited unto us being mixed with Faith, the Soul of a poor Sinner will be filled with *Godly Sorrow* and Shame for its former Sins, and will be deeply humbled for them; so all the Faculties of it being now renewed and inwardly changed, it can no more refrain from the *Love of Holiness*, and from an Engagement into a watchful course of Universal Obedience unto God, by such free Actings as are proper unto it, than one that is *new born* can refrain from all Acts of *Life Natural*, in Motion desire of Food and the like. Vain and foolish therefore are the *Reproaches of some*, who in an high course of a Worldly Life and Profane, do charge others with Preaching a *Justification by Faith* alone in Christ Jesus unto a neglect of Holiness, Righteousness and Obedience to God, which such Scoffers and fierce Despisers of all that are good do so earnestly plead for. Those whom they openly reflect upon, do unanimously teach, That the Faith which doth not *purifie the Heart* and *reform the Life*, which is not fruitful in good Works, which is not an *effectual Cause and Means* of Repentance and newness of Life, is not genuine nor pleadable unto Justification, but empty, dead, and that which if trusted unto, will eternally deceive the Souls of Men. They do all of them press the indispenfible necessity of *Universal Holiness*, Godliness, Righteousness or Obedience to all the Commands of God on surer Principles, with more *cogent Arguments*, in a more clear compliance with the Will, Grace, and Love of God in Christ, than any they pretend unto, who ignorantly and falsely traduce them, as those who regard them not. And as they urge an *Obediential Holiness*, which is not defective in any Duty either towards God or Man, which they either plead for or pretend unto; so it contains that in it which is more *Sublime, Spiritual, and Heavenly*, than what they are either acquainted with or do regard; which in its proper place shall be made more fully to appear.

SECT. 38. (10.) Those who were thus converted unto God in the *Primitive Times* of the Church, were upon their Confession or Profession hereof admitted into Church-Society, and a Participation of all the *Mysteries* thereof. And this being the common way whereby any were added unto the *Fellowship of the Faithful*, it was an effectual Means of *intense Love* without dissimulation among them all, on the account of their joyn't Interest in the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ. And I shall shut up this Discourse with one *Instance* hereof, given us by *Austin* in the Conversion and Admission into Church-Society, of *Victorinus* a *Platonical Philosopher*; as he received the Story from *Simplicianus*, by whom he was Baptized; *Ut ventum est ad horam profitende fidei quæ verbis certis retentisque memoriter, de loco eminentiore in conspectu populi fidelis Romæ reddi solet ab eis qui accessuri sunt ad gratiam tuam, oblatum esse dicebat Victorino a Presbyteris, ut secretius redderet, sicut non nullis qui verecundia trepidaturi videbantur offerri mos erat; illum autem maluisse salutem suam in conspectu sanctæ multitudinis profiteri, non enim erat sa'us quam docebat in Rhetorica & tamen eam publice professus erat. Quanto minus vereri debuit Mansuetam gregem tuam pronuncians verbum tuum, qui non verebatur in verbis suis turbas insanorum? Itaque ubi ascendit ut redderet, omnes sibimet invicem ut eum noverant, instreperunt nomen ejus strepitu congratulationis.*

lationis. Quis autem ibi eum non noverat? Et sonuit presso sonitu per ora cunctorum, Victorinus, Victorinus; cito sonuerunt exultatione quia videbant eum, cito siluerunt intentione ut audirent eum; pronunciat ille fidem veracem præclara fiducia, & volebant eum omnes rapere intro in cor suum; & rapiebant amando & gaudento. Hæ rapiendum manus erant; Lib. 8. Cap. 2. Not a few things concerning the Order, Discipline, and fervent Love of the Primitive Christians in their Church-Societies, are intimated and represented in these words, which I shall not here reflect upon.

And this is the *second Great Work* of the Spirit of God in the New SECT. 39.
Creation. This is a summary Description of his Forming and Creating the Members of that *Mystical Body* whose Head is Christ Jesus. The latter part of our Discourse concerning the *external manner of Regeneration* or Conversion unto God, with the gradual Preparation for it and Accomplishment of it in the Souls of Men, is that Subject which many Practical *Divines* of this Nation, have in their Preaching and Writings much insisted on and improved, to the great Profit and Edification of the Church of God. But this whole Doctrine, with all the Declarations and Applications of it, is now by some among our selves *derided* and *exposed* to Scorn, although it be known to have been the constant Doctrine of the most Learned *Prelates* of the Church of *England*. And as the Doctrine is exploded, so all experience of the Work it self in the Souls of Men, is *decried* as *Fanatical* and *Enthusiastical*.

To obviate the Pride and Wantonness of this filthy Spirit, I have in the summary Representation of the Work it self now given, confirmed the several Instances of it, with the Experience of the *Great and Holy Man* so often named. For whereas some of those by whom this Doctrine and Work are despised, are puffed up with a conceit of their *Excellency* in the *Theatrical Scoptical Faculty* of these Days, unto a contempt of all by whom they are contradicted in the most importune of their *Dictates*; yet if they should *swell themselves until they break*, like the *Frog* in the *Fable*, they would never prevail with their fondest Admirers, to admit them into a competition with the *immortal Wit, Grace and Learning* of that Eminent Champion of the Truth, and Light of the Age wherein he lived.





BOOK IV.

The Nature of Sanctification and Gospel Holiness explained.

CHAP. I.

(1) *Regeneration the Way whereby the Spirit forms living Members for the Mystical Body of Christ.* (2) *Carried on by Sanctification, 2 Theff. 5. 23. opened.* (3) *God the only Author of our Sanctification and Holiness.* (4) *And that as the God of Peace.* (5) *Sanctification described.* (6) *A diligent enquiry into the nature whereof, with that of Holiness, proved necessary.* (7) *Sanctification two-fold: 1. By External Dedication; 2. By Internal Purification.* (8) *Holiness peculiar to the Gospel and its Truth.* (9) *Not discernible to the eye of Carnal Reason.* (10) *Hardly understood by Believers themselves.* (11) *It passeth order into Eternity.* (12) *Hath in it a present Glory.* (13) *Is all that God requireth of us, and in what sense.* (14) *Promised unto us.* (15) *How we are to improve the Command for Holiness.*

IN the *Regeneration* or *Conversion* of Gods Elect, the Nature and Manner whereof we have before described, consists the *second part* of the Work of the Holy Spirit in order unto the completing and perfecting of the *New Creation*. As in the former he prepared a *Natural Body* for the Son of God, wherein he was to obey and suffer according to his Will, so by this latter he prepares him a *Mystical Body*, or members spiritually living, by uniting them unto *Him* who is their *Head and their Life*, Col. 3. 4. *For as the Body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one Body, being many, are one Body, so also is Christ, 1 Cor. 12. 12.* Nor doth he leave this work in that Beginning of it whereof we have treated, but unto him also it belongs to continue it, to preserve it, and to carry it on to perfection. And this he doth in our *Sanctification*, whose Nature and Effects we are in the next place to enquire into.

Sect. 1.

Our Apostle in his first Epistle to the *Thessalonians*, Chap. 5. having closely compiled a great number of weighty particular *Evangelical Duties*, and annexed sundry Motives and Enforcements unto them, closeth all his holy Prescriptions with a fervent Prayer for them, v. 23. *And the very God of Peace sanctifie you wholly, and let your*

Sect. 2.

T t

whole

whole spirit and soul, and body, be preserved blamelesse to the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. Or, as I had rather read the words, *And God himself even the God of peace sanctifie you throughout, that your whole spirit, and soul, and body, may be preserved blameless.* The Reason hereof is, because all the Graces and Duties which he had enjoyned them did belong unto their *Sanctification*, which though their own *Duty* was not absolutely in their own Power, but was a *Work of God* in them and upon them. Therefore that they might be able thereunto and might actually comply with his *Commands*, he prays that God would thus *sanctifie* them throughout. That this shall be accomplished in them and for them, he gives them assurance from the Faithfulness (and consequently Power and Unchangeableness which are included therein) of him who had undertaken to effect it, *v. 24. Faithfull is he that calleth you, who will also do it.* Now whereas this Assurance did not arise nor was taken from any thing that was peculiar unto them, but merely from the consideration of the *Faithfulness* of God himself, it is equal with respect unto all that are effectually called. They shall all infallibly be *sanctified throughout, and preserved blameless to the Coming of Jesus Christ.* This therefore being the great priviledge of Believers, and their eternal safety absolutely depending thereon, it requires our utmost Diligence to search into the Nature and Necessity of it; which may be done from this and the like places of Scripture.

Sect. 3.

And in this place, (1) The *Author* of our Sanctification, who only is so, is asserted to be *God*. He is the Eternal Spring and only Fountain of all Holiness; there is nothing of it in any Creature but what is directly and immediately from him. There was not in our *first Creation*. He made us in his own image. And to suppose that we can now *sanctifie* or make our selves *holy*, is proudly to renounce and cast off our principal *Dependance* upon him. We may as wisely and rationally contend, that we have not our *Being* and our Lives from God, as that we have not our Holiness from him, when we have any. Hereunto are the proud Opinions of educeing an Holiness out of the *principles of Nature* to be reduced. I know all men will pretend that Holiness is from God, it was never denied by *Pelagius* himself. But many with him would have it to be from God in a way of *Nature*, and not in a way of *especial Grace*. It is this latter way which we plead for, and what is from our selves, or educed by any means out of our Natural Abilities, is not of God in that way. For God as the Author of Grace, and the best of corrupted Nature are opposed, as we shall see further afterwards; And therefore (2) is He that is the Author of our Sanctification so emphatically here expressed, *αὐτὸς ὁ θεός, Even God himself;* if he doth it not none other can do it; it is no otherwise to be wrought nor effected: There is no other way whereby it may be brought about, nor doth it fall under the power or efficacy of any means absolutely whatever, but it must be wrought by God himself. He doth it *of Himself*, from his own Grace; *by Himself*, or his own Power; *for Himself*, or his own Glory: And that (3) under this especial consideration, as he is the *God of Peace*.

Sect. 4.

This Title is ascribed unto God only by our *Apostle*, and by him frequently,

frequently, *Rom. 15. 33. chap. 16. 20. 2 Cor. 13. 11. Phil. 4. 9. Heb. 13. 20.* Were it unto our present purpose to discourse concerning the general nature of *Peace*, I might shew how it is comprehensive of all Order, Rest and Blessedness, and all that is in them. On this account the enclosure of it in this Title unto God as its only Possessor and Author, belongs to the Glory of his Sovereign Diadem. Every thing that is contrary unto it, is *evil*, and of the *evil One*; yea, all that is evil is so, because of its contrariety unto *peace*. Well therefore may God be styled the *God of Peace*. But these things I may not here stay to explain; although the words are so comprehensive and expressive of the whole work of Sanctification, and that Holiness which is the effect thereof, as that I shall choose to found my whole Discourse concerning this subject upon them. That which offers it self unto our present design from this expression, is the peculiar respect unto the *Work of our Sanctification* which lies in this especial Property of God: Wherefore he is said to sanctifie us as the *God of peace*. (1.) Because it is a *fruit and effect* of that peace with himself which he hath made and prepared for us by Jesus Christ. For he *was in Christ reconciling the World unto himself, destroying the Enmity* which entred by sin, and laying the Foundation of Eternal Peace. From hence it is, that he will *sanctifie* us or make us Holy, without a respect whereunto he would no more do so, than he will sanctifie again the *Angels* that have sinned, for whom there is *no peace* made, nor Attonement. (2.) God, by the Sanctification of our Natures and Persons *preserves that peace* with himself in its Exercise, which he made and procured by the Mediation of Christ; without which it could not be kept, nor continued. For in the Duties and Fruits thereof, consist all those Actings towards God which a *State of Reconciliation, Peace, and Friendship* do require. It is Holiness that keeps up a sense of Peace with God, and prevents those spiritual breaches which the remainders of our Enmity would occasion. Hence God as the Author of our Peace is the Author of our Holiness. God even God himself, the God of Peace doth sanctifie us: How this is done *immediately by the Holy Ghost*, the Spirit of Love and Peace, and wherein the nature of this work doth consist, are the things which must afterwards be more fully declared. And he is here said to sanctifie us *ὁλοτελῆς*, that is, *universally* and compleatly; carrying on the work untill it comes to perfection. For two things are intended in that Expression. 1. That our *whole Nature* is the subject of this work, and not any one Faculty or Part of it. 2. That as the work it self is sincere and universal, communicating all parts of real Holiness unto our whole Natures, so it is carried on to *Compleatness* and Perfection. Both these in the ensuing words the Apostle expresseth as the end and design of his Prayer for them, and the Effect of the work of Grace which he prayed for. For (1.) the *Subject* of this Sanctification he makes to be our whole Natures, which he distributes unto our *entire spirits, Souls and Bodies*; and (2.) The End of the whole is, the preservation of us *blameless* in the peace of God unto the coming of Christ, which will both of them be immediately more fully spoken unto. Wherefore,

Sanctification as here described, *is the immediate Work of God by his*
T t 2

Sect. 3.

Spirit

Spirit upon our whole Natures, proceeding from the peace made for us by Jesus Christ, whereby being changed into his likeness, we are kept entirely in peace with God, and are preserved unblameable, or in a State of gracious Acceptation with him, according to the Terms of the Covenant, unto the End.

Sect. 6.

The nature of this Work and its Effect which is our *Holiness*, with the Necessity of them both, we must on many Accounts with our utmost Diligence enquire and search into. This both the Importance of the Truth it self, and the Opposition that is made unto it, render necessary. Besides, whereas we are in the Declaration of the especial *Operations* of the Holy Ghost, although he be not so denominated originally from this peculiar Work, as though he should be called *Holy* meerly because he is the Author of Holiness in all that are made partakers of it, which we have before disproved; yet there is a general consent, in words at least, among all who are called *Christians*, that this is his immediate and proper Work, or that he is the *only sanctifier* of all them that do believe: And this I shall take as yet for granted, although some among us, who not only pretend high to the *preaching* of Holiness (whatever be their practice) but reproach others as weakning the *necessity* of it, do talk at such a rate as if in the Holiness which they pleaded for, he had nothing to do in a peculiar manner. For it is no news to meet with quaint and gilded Discourses about Holiness, intermixed with *scoffing reflections* on the work of the Holy Ghost therein. This Work therefore of his we are in an especial manner to attend unto; unless we would be found among the number of such as those who own themselves and teach their Children, That the *Holy Ghost sanctifies all the Elect of God*, and yet not only despise the work of Holiness in themselves, but deride those who plead an interest therein as an effect of the sanctification of the Spirit. For, such fruits of secret *Atheism* doth the world abound withall. But our principal Duty in this world, is to know aright what it is to be Holy, and so to be indeed.

Sect. 7.

One thing we must premise to clear our ensuing Discourse from Ambiguity. And this is, that there is mention in the Scripture of a *Two-fold sanctification*, and consequently of a two-fold Holiness. The first is common unto Persons and Things, consisting in the peculiar *Dedication* Consecration or Separation of them unto the Service of God by his own Appointment, whereby they become Holy. Thus the *Priests* and *Levites* of Old, the *Arke*, the *Altar*, the *Tabernacle*, and the *Temple*, were sanctified and made *Holy*. And indeed in all Holiness whatever there is a peculiar *Dedication* and Separation unto God. But in the sense mentioned, this was solitary and alone; no more belonged unto it but this *sacred separation*, nor was there any other effect of this Sanctification. But (secondly) There is another kind of Sanctification and Holiness, wherein this Separation to God is not the first thing done or intended, but a Consequent and Effect thereof. This is *real* and *internal*, by the Communicating of a principle of Holiness unto our Natures, attended with its Exercise in Acts and Duties of Holy Obedience unto God. This is that which in the first place

place we enquire after, and how far Believers are therein and thereby peculiarly *separated* and *dedicated* unto God, shall be afterwards declared. And unto what we have to deliver concerning it we shall make way by the ensuing observations.

This whole matter of Sanctification and Holiness is peculiarly joyned with, and limited unto the *Doctrine, Truth, and Grace* of the Gospel; for Holiness is nothing but the implanting, writing, and realizing of the Gospel in our souls. Hence it is termed *ὁσιότης ἢ ἀληθείας*, *Ephes. 4. 24. The Holiness of Truth*, which the Truth of the Gospel ingenerates, and which consists in a conformity thereunto; and the Gospel it self is *ἀληθεία ἡ κατ' ἀσέβειαν*, *Tit. 1. 1. The Truth which is according unto Godliness*, which declares that Godliness and Holiness which God requireth. The prayer also of our Saviour for our Sanctification is conformed therunto, *John 17. 17. Sanctifie them in (or by) thy Truth, thy word is Truth*. And he sanctified himself for us, to be a sacrifice, that we might be sanctified in the Truth. This alone is that Truth which makes us free, *John 8. 12.* that is from sin and the Law, unto Righteousness in Holiness. It belongs neither to nature nor the Law, so as to proceed from them, or to be effected by them. Nature is wholly corrupted and contrary unto it. The Law indeed for certain Ends was given by Moses, but all *Grace and Truth came by Jesus Christ*. There neither is, nor ever was in the world, nor ever shall be, the least dram of Holiness, but what flowing from Jesus Christ, is communicated by the Spirit, according to the Truth and promise of the Gospel. There may be something like it as to its outward Acts and effects, (at least some of them) something that may wear its Livery in the world, that is but the fruit of mens own Endeavours in Compliance with their convictions, but Holiness it is not, nor of the same kind or nature with it. And this men are very apt to deceive themselves withal. It is the design of corrupted Reason to debase all the glorious mysteries of the Gospel, and all the concernments of them. There is nothing in the whole *Mystery of Godliness*, from the Highest crown of it, which is the Person of Christ, *God manifested in the flesh*, unto the lowest and nearest effect of his Grace, but it labours to deprave, dishonour, and debase. The Lord Christ, it would have in his whole person to be but a *meer man*, in his Obedience and suffering to be but an *Example*, in his doctrine to be confin'd unto the Capacity and Comprehension of *Carnal Reason*, and the Holiness which he communicates by the Sanctification of his Spirit, to be but that *Moral vertue* which is common among men as the fruit of their own Endeavours. Herein some will acknowledge that men are guided and directed to a great Advantage by the *Doctrine of the Gospel*, and thereunto excited by motions of the Holy Ghost himself put forth in the Dispensation of that Truth; but any thing else in it, more excellent, more mysterious, they will not allow. But these low and carnal imaginations are exceedingly unworthy of the Grace of Christ, the Glory of the Gospel, the mystery of the Recovery of our Nature, and healing of the wound it received by the entrance of sin, with the whole design of God in our Restauration into a state of Communion with himself *Moral vertue* is indeed the best thing amongst men that is of them. It far exceeds in worth, use, and satisfacti-

Sect. 8.

tisfaction ; all that the Honours, Powers, Profits, and Pleasures of the World can extend unto. And it is admirable to consider, what instructions are given concerning it, what expressions are made of its excellency, what *Encomiums* of its use and beauty by Learned contemplative men among the *Heathen*, the wisest of whom did acknowledge, that there was yet something in it which they could onely admire, and not comprehend. And very eminent instances of the practice of it were given in the lives and conversations of some of them. And as the examples of their Righteousness, Moderation, Temperance, Equanimity in all Conditions, rise up at present unto the shame and reproach of many that are called *Christians*, so they will be called over at the last day, as an Aggravation of their Condemnation. But to suppose that this *Moral vertue*, whatever it be really in its own nature, or however advanced in the imaginations of men, is that *Holiness of Truth* which Believers receive by the Spirit of Christ, is to debase it, to overthrow it, and to drive the souls of men from seeking an interest in it. And hence it is that some pretending highly a friendship and respect unto it, doe yet hate, despise, and reproach what is really so, pleasing themselves with the empty name, or withered Carcase of *vertue*, every way inferiour as interpreted in their practice to the Righteousness of Heathens. And this in the first place should stir up our diligence in our enquiries after its true and real nature, that we deceive not our selves with a false appearance of it, and that unto our ruine.

Sect. 9.

It is our Duty to enquire into the nature of *Evangelical Holiness*, as it is a fruit or effect in us of the *Spirit of Sanctification*, because it is abstruse and Mysterious, and (be it spoken with the good leave of some, or whether they will or no) undiscernable unto the eye of *carnal Reason*. We may say of it in some sense as *Job of Wisdom* ; whence cometh Wisdom, and where is the place of understanding, seeing it is hid from the eyes of all living, and kept close from the fowls of Heaven ; Destruction and death say, we have heard the same thereof with our ears : God understandeth the way thereof, and he knoweth the place thereof. And unto man he said, behold the fear of the Lord that is wisdom, and to depart from evil is understanding, Chap. 28. 20, 21, 22, 23, 28. This is that wisdom whose ways, residence, and pathes, are so hidden from the *natural Reason*, and understandings of men. No man, I say, by their mere Sight and Conduct can know and understand aright the true nature of *Evangelical Holiness* ; and it is therefore no wonder if the Doctrine of it be despised by many as an *Enthusiastical fancy*. It is of the *things of the Spirit of God*, yea it is the principal effect of all his Operations in us and towards us. And these things of God knoweth no man but the Spirit of God, 1 Cor. 2. 11. It is by him alone that we are enabled to know the things that are freely given unto us of God, v. 12, as this is, if ever we receive any thing of him in this world, or shall do so to Eternity. Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entred into the heart of man, the things that God hath prepared for them that love him : The comprehension of these things is not the work of any of our natural faculties, but God reveals them unto us by his Spirit, v. 9. 10. Hence it often falls out as it did in the *Jews* and *Pharisees* of old, That those who are most zealous and industrious for and after a *Legal Righteousness*, walking in
a strict

a strict attendance unto Duties proportionable unto Light and Convictions, pretending to be it and bearing some resemblance of it, are the most fierce and implacable Enemies of true *Evangelical Holiness*. They know it not, and therefore hate it; they have embraced something else in its place and stead, and therefore despise and persecute it, as it befalls them who embrace Error for Truth in any kind.

(3) Believers themselves are oft-times much unacquainted with it, either as to their Apprehension of its true Nature, Causes and Effects, or at least as to their *own Interest* and concernment therein. As we know not of our selves the *things that are wrought in us of the Spirit of God*, so we seldom attend as we ought unto his instructing of us in them. It may seem strange indeed, that whereas all Believers are *sanctified* and made *Holy*, that they should not understand nor apprehend what is *wrought in them* and for them, and what abideth with them: But alas, how little do we know of our selves, of what we are, and whence are our Powers and Faculties even in things natural? Do we know how the members of the Body are fashioned in the womb? We are apt to be seeking after and giving Reasons for all things, and to describe the progress of the production of our Natures from first to last, so as if not to satisfy our selves, yet to please and amuse others; for vain man would be wise, although he be like the wilde Asses Colt. The best issues of our Consideration hereof is that of the *Psalmist*: *Thou, O God, hast possessed my reins, thou hast covered me in my Mothers wombe; I will praise thee, for I am fearfully and wonderfully made, marvellous are thy works, and that my soul knoweth right well. My substance was not hid from thee when I was made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the Earth. Thine Eyes did see my substance yet being unperfect, and in thy book all my members were written, which in continuance were fashioned, when as yet there was none of them*, Psal. 139. 13, 14, 15, 16. By diligent consideration of these things we may obtain a firm foundation to stand on, in an *Holy Admiration* of the Infinite Wisdom and Goodness of that Sovereign *Architect*, who hath raised this Fabrick unto his own Glory; and what we further attempt is Vanity and Curiosity. How little do we know of these Souls of ours, and all that we do so, is by their Powers and Operations, which are Consequential unto their Beings. Now these things are our own naturally, they dwell and abide with us; they are we, and we are they, and nothing else; yet is it no easie thing for us to have a reflex and intimate acquaintance with them. And is it strange if we should be much in the dark unto this *new Nature*, this new Creature, which comes from above, from God in Heaven, where-with our natural Reason hath no Acquaintance? It is New, it is wonderfull, it is a work supernatural, and is known only by supernatural Revelation.

Besides there are other things which pretend to be this Gospel Holiness and are not, whereby unspeakable Multitudes are deluded and deceived. With some any Reformation of Life and Abstinence from flagitious sins with the performance of the Common Duties of Religion, is all which they suppose is required under this Head of their Duty. Others contend with violence to substitute *Moral Vertues* by which

Sect. 10.

which they know not themselves what they intend, in the room thereof. And there is a work of the Law, which in the fruits of it internal and external in the works of Righteousness and Duties, which is hardly and not but by spiritual Light and Measures to be distinguished from it. This also adds to the difficulty of understanding it aright, and should to our diligent enquiry into it.

Sect. II.

(4) We must also consider, that Holiness is not confined to this Life, but passeth over into *Eternity* and Glory. Death hath no power over it to destroy it, or divest us of it. For (1) Its *Acts* indeed are transient, but its *Fruits* abide for ever in their Reward. They who dye in the Lord rest from their Labours *and their works follow them*, Rev. 14. 13. *God is not unrighteous to forget their labour of love*, Heb. 6. 10. There is not any Effect or Fruit of Holiness, not the least, not the giving of a *cup of cold water* to a Disciple of Christ in the name of a Disciple, but it shall be had in everlasting remembrance, and abide for ever in its Eternal Reward. Nothing shall be lost, but all the fragments of it shall be gathered up and kept safe for ever. Every thing else how specious soever it be in this world shall be *burnt up* and consumed as *hay* and *straw*; when the least, the meanest, the most secret Fruit of Holiness, shall be gathered as *Gold and silver*, durable substance, into Gods Treasury, and become a part of the Riches of the Inheritance of the Saints in Glory. Let no soul fear the *Loss* of any Labour in any of the Duties of Holiness, in the most secret contest against sin, for inward Purity, for outward Fruitfulness, in the Mortification of sin, Resistance of Temptations, Improvement of Grace, in Patience, Moderation, Self-denial, Contentment, all that you do know, and what you do not know, shall all be *revived*, called over, and abide Eternally in your Reward. Our Father who now *seeth in secret* will one day reward openly. And the more we abound in these things the more will God be glorified in the Recompence of Reward. But this is not all, nor that which I intend. It abides (2) for ever, and passeth over into Glory in its *Principle* or Nature. The Love wherewith we now *adhere to God*, and by which we act the Obedience of Faith towards the Saints faileth not, it ends not when Glory comes on, but is a part of it, 1 Cor. 13. 8. It is true some Gifts shall be *done away* as useless in a state of Perfection and Glory, as the Apostle there discourseth; and some Graces shall cease as to some *especial Acts* and peculiar Exercise, as *Faith* and *Hope* so far as they respect things unseen and future. But all those Graces whereby Holiness is *constituted* and wherein it doth consist, for the substance of them as they contain the *Image of God*, as by them we are united and do adhere unto God in Christ, shall in their present nature improved into perfection, abide for ever. In our knowledge of them therefore have we our principal insight into our Eternal Condition in Glory: And this is as a firm foundation of Consolation, so a part of our chiefest Joy in this World. Is it not a matter of unspeakable Joy and Refreshment that these *poor Bodies* we carry about us, after they have been made a prey unto death, dust, worms, and corruption, shall be raised and restored to Life and Immortality, freed from pains, sickness, weakness, weariness, and vested with those Qualities in conformity to *Christs glorious Body*, which yet

we

we understand not? It is so also that these *Souls* which now animate and rule in us, shall be delivered from all their Darknes, Ignorance, Vanity, Instability, and Alienation from things Spiritual and Heavenly. But this is not all. These poor low *Graces* which now live and are acting in us shall be continued, preserved, purified and perfected, but in their nature be the *same* as now they are, as our Souls and Bodies shall be. That *Love* whereby we now adhere to God as our chiefest Good, that *Faith* whereby we are united to Christ our everlasting Head, that *Delight* in any of the Wayes or Ordinances of God, wherein he is enjoyed according as he hath promised his presence in them; that *Love* and *Good-will* which we have for all those in whom is the Spirit, and on whom is the Image of Christ, with the entire Principle of spiritual Life and Holiness which is now begun in any of us, shall be all purified, enhanced, perfected, and pass into Glory. That very *Holiness* which we here attain, those Inclinations and Dispositions, those Frames of Mind, those Powers and Abilities in Obedience and Adherence unto God, which here contend with the weight of their own weakness and imperfections, with the Opposition that is continually made against them by the Body of Death that is utterly to be abolished, shall be gloriously perfected into *immutable Habits*, unchangeably acting our Souls in the enjoyment of God. And this also manifesteth of how much concernment it is unto us, to be acquainted with the Doctrine of it, and of how much more to be really interested in it. Yea,

(5) There is *Spiritual and Heavenly Glory* in it in this World. From hence is the Church the *Kings Daughter* said to be *all Glorious within*, *Psal. 45. 13.* Her inward adorning with the Graces of the Spirit making her beautifull in Holiness, is called *Glory*, and is so; so also the progress and increase of Believers herein, is called by our Apostle their being *changed from Glory to Glory*, *2 Cor. 3. 18.* from one degree of glorious Grace unto another. As this next unto the *Comeliness* of the Righteousness of Christ put upon us by the free Grace of God, is our only beauty in his sight, so it is such as hath a *real Spiritual Glory* in it. It is the First-fruits of Heaven; and as the Apostle argueth concerning the *Jews*, that if the *first-fruits were holy*, then is *the whole lump holy*, so may we on the other side, if the *whole weight*, as he calls it, and fulness of our future Enjoyments be *Glory*, then are the First-fruits in their Measure so also. There is in this Holiness, as we shall see further afterwards, a *Ray of Eternal Light*, a *Principle of Eternal Life*, and the entire nature of that Love whereby we shall eternally adhere unto God. The Divine Nature, the new immortal Creature, the Life of God, the Life of Christ, are all comprized in it. It represents unto God the Glory of his *own Image* renewed in us; and unto the Lord Christ the *fruits* of his Spirit and Effect of his Mediation, wherein he sees of the travail of his Soul, and is satisfied. There is therefore nothing more to be abhorred, than those carnal low and unworthy thoughts which some men vent of this *glorious Work of the Holy Spirit*, who would have it wholly to consist in a *Legal Righteousness* or *Moral Vertue*.

Sect. 12.

Sect. 13.

(6) This is that which God indispensibly *requireth* of us. The full prosecution of this Consideration we must put off unto our Arguments for the *Necessity* of it, which will ensue in their proper place. At present I shall shew, that not only God requireth Holiness indispensibly in all Believers, but also that this is *All* which he requireth of them or expecteth from them: For it comprizeth the whole Duty of man. And this surely rendreth it needfull for us both to *know* what it is, and diligently to apply our selves unto the obtaining an assured participation of it. For what Servant who hath any sense of his Relation and Duty, if he be satisfied that his Master requireth but *one thing* of him, will not endeavour an Acquaintance with it, and the Performance of it. Some indeed say that their Holiness (such as it is) is the *Chief* or *only* Design of the Gospel. If they intend that it is the first principal *Design of God* in and by the Gospel, and that not only as to the *Preceptive* part of it, but also as unto its *Doctrinal* and *Promissory* parts, whence it is principally and *emphatically* denominated, it is a fond Imagination. Gods great and first design in and by the Gospel is eternally to *Glorifie* himself, his Wisdom, Goodness, Love, Grace, Righteousness and Holiness by Jesus Christ, *Eph. 1. 5, 6.* And in order to this his great and supreme end, he hath designed the Gospel, and designs by the Gospel, which gives the Gospel its Design; (1) To *reveal* that Love and Grace of his unto lost sinners, with the *way of its* Communication through the Mediation of his Son Incarnate, as the only means whereby he will be glorified, and whereby they may be saved, *Acts 26. 18.* (2) To prevail with men in and by the Dispensation of its Truth, and Encouragement of its Promises, to renounce their sins and all other Expectations of Relief or Satisfaction, and to *betake* themselves by Faith unto that way of Life and Salvation which is therein declared unto them, *2 Cor. 5. 18, 19, 20, 21. Col. 1. 25, 26, 27, 28.* (3) To be the means and *Instrument* of conveying over unto them, and giving them a Title unto, and a Right in that Grace and Mercy, that Life and Righteousness which is revealed and tendred unto them thereby, *Mark 16. 16.* (4) To be the way and means of communicating the *Spirit of Christ* with Grace and Strength unto the Elect, enabling of them to believe and receive the Attonement, *Gal. 3. 2.* (5) Hereby to give them *Union with Christ* as their Spiritual and Mystical Head, as also to fix their Hearts and Souls in their choycest Actings in their Faith, Trust, Confidence and Love immediately on the Son of God as Incarnate and their Mediator, *Joh. 14. 1.* Wherefore the first and principal End of the Gospel *towards* us, is to invite and encourage lost sinners unto the Faith and Approbation of the Way of Grace Life and Salvation by Jesus Christ, without a Compliance wherewith in the *first place*, the Gospel hath no more to do with sinners, but leaves them to Justice the Law and themselves. But now upon a supposition of these things, *and of our giving Glory to God by Faith in them, the *whole that God requireth of us in the Gospel in a way of Duty is, that we should be Holy*, and abide in the use of those means whereby Holiness may be attained and improved in us. For if he requires any other thing of us it must be on one of these four Accounts: 1. To make Attonement for our sins; or 2. To be our Righteousness before

before him; or 3. To *merit* Life and Salvation by; or 4. To *super-erogate* in the behalf of others. No other end can be thought of, besides what are the true ends of Holiness whereon God should require any thing of us. And all the false Religion that is in the world leans on a supposition that God doth require somewhat of us with respect unto these ends.

But (1) He requires nothing of us (which we had all the Reason in the world to expect that he would) to make *Attonement* or satisfaction for our sins, that might compensate the injuries we had done him by our Apostasie and Rebellion. For whereas we had multiplyed sins against him, lived in an Enmity and Opposition to him, and had contracted insupportable and immeasurable Debts upon our own Souls, *Terms of peace* being now proposed, who could think but that the first thing required of us would be, that we should make *some kind of satisfaction* to Divine Justice for all our enormous and heynous provocations? Yea who is there that indeed doth naturally think otherwise? so he apprehended who was contriving a way in his own mind how he might come to an Agreement with God. *Micah 6. 6, 7. Wherewith shall I come before the Lord, and bow my self before the High God? shall I come before him with Burnt-Offerings, with Calves of a year old? Will the Lord be pleased with Thousands of Rams, or with ten Thousands of Rivers of Oyl? Shall I give my first-born for my Transgression, the fruit of my Body for the sin of my Soul.* This or something of this nature seems to be but a very reasonable Enquiry for a Guilty self-condemned sinner, when first he entertains thoughts of an Agreement with the Holy sin-avenging God? And this was the foundation of all that cruel and expensive Superstition that the World was in bondage unto for so many Ages. Mankind generally thought that the principal thing which was required of them in Religion, was to atone and pacifie the wrath of the Divine Power, and to make a Compensation for what had been done against him. Hence were their Sacrifices of *Hecatombs* of Beasts, of Mankind, of their Children, and of themselves, as I have elsewhere declared. And the same principle is still deep rooted in the minds of convinced sinners; and many an Abby, Monastery, Colledge and Almes-house hath it founded. For in the fruits of this Superstition the Priests which set it on work, alwayes shared deeply. But quite otherwise in the Gospel there is declared and tendred unto sinners, *an absolute free pardon* of all their sins, without any satisfaction or Compensation made or to be made on their part, that is by themselves, namely on the Account of the *Attonement* made for them by Jesus Christ. And all Attempts or Endeavours after Works or Duties of Obedience in any respect *satisfactory to God for sin*, or meritorious of pardon, do subvert and overthrow the whole Gospel. See 2 Cor. 5. 18, 19, 20, 21. Wherefore in Answer to the Enquiry before mentioned the Reply in the Prophet is, that God looks for none of these things, and that all such Contrivances were wholly vain; *He hath shewed thee O man, what is good, and what doth the Lord require of thee, but to do justly and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God?* v. 8. which last Expression comprizeth the whole of our Covenant-Obedience, *Gen. 17. 1.* as the two former are eminent Instances of it in particular.

(2.)

(2) He requireth nothing of us in a way of *Righteousness* for our *Justification* for the future; that this also he would have done we might have justly expected. For a *Righteousness* we must have or we cannot be accepted with him. And here also many are at a loss, and resolve that it is a thing fond and inconvenient to think of peace with God without some *Righteousness* of their own on the Account whereof they may be Justified before him; and rather than they will forgoe that apprehension they will let goe all other thoughts of Peace and Acceptance. Being ignorant of the *Righteousness* of God, they go about to establish their own *Righteousness*, and do not submit themselves unto the *Righteousness* of God; nor will they acquiesce in it that *Christ* is the end of the Law for *Righteousness* to every one that believeth, as Rom. 10. 3, 4. But so it is, that God requireth not this of us in the Gospel; for we are Justified freely by his Grace through the Redemption that is in *Christ Jesus*. Rom. 3. 24. And we do therefore conclude, that a man is justified by Faith, without the works of the Law, v. 28. so Rom. 8. 3, 4. Neither is there any mention in the whole Gospel, of God's requiring a *Righteousness* in us upon the Account whereof we should be justified before him, or in his sight. For the Justification by works mentioned in *James* consists in the evidencing and Declaration of our Faith by them.

(3.)

(3) God requireth not any thing of us whereby we should purchase or Merit for our selves Life and Salvation. For we are saved by Grace through Faith, not of works lest any man should boast, Ephes. 2. 8, 9. God doth save us neither by nor for the works of *Righteousness* which we have done, but according to his own Mercy, Titus 3. 5. so that although on the one side, the wages of sin is Death, there being a proportion in Justice between sin and punishment; yet there is none between our Obedience and our Salvation; and therefore *Eternal life* is the gift of God through *Jesus Christ* our Lord, Rom. 6. 23. God therefore requires nothing at our hands under this Notion or Consideration; nor is it possible that in our Condition any such thing should be required of us. For whatever we can do is due before-hand on other Accounts, and so can have no prospect to merit what is to come. Who can merit by doing his duty? our Saviour doth so plainly prove the contrary as none can further doubt of it than of his Truth and Authority, Luke 17. 10. Nor can we do any thing that is acceptable to him, but what is wrought in us by his Grace. And this overthrowes the whole Nature of merit which requires, that that be every way our own whereby we would deserve somewhat else at the hands of another, and not his more than ours. Neither is there any proportion between our Duties and the Reward of the eternal Enjoyment of God. For besides that they are all weak, imperfect, and tainted with sin, so that no one of them is able to make good its own station for any End or Purpose in the strictness of Divine Justice, they altogether come infinitely short of the desert of an Eternal Reward by any Rule of Divine Justice. And if any say that this merit of our works depends not on, nor is measured by strict Justice, but wholly by the Gracious Condescension of God who hath appointed and promised so to reward them; I answer in the first place, that this perfectly overthrowes the whole Nature of Merit: For the Nature of Merit consists

consists entirely and absolutely in this, that to him that worketh the *Reward is reckoned of Debt, and not of Grace*, Rom. 4. 4. And these two are contrary and inconsistent; for *what is by Grace is no more of Works, otherwise Grace is no more Grace; and what is of Works is no more of Grace, otherwise Work is no more Work*, Rom. 11. 6. And those who go about to found a Merit of ours in the Grace of God, do endeavour to unite and reconcile those things which God hath everlastingly separated and opposed. And I say (*secondly*) that although God doth freely, graciously and bountifully reward our Duties of Obedience, and upon the Account of his Covenant and Promise he is said to be, and he is *Righteous* in his so doing, yet he every where declares that what he so doth, is an Act of *meer Grace* in himself, that hath not respect unto any thing but only the *Interposition* and Mediation of Jesus Christ. In this sense God in the Gospel requireth of us nothing at all.

(4.) Much less doth he require of any, that they should do such things as being no way necessary unto that Obedience which themselves personally owe unto him, may yet by their *supererogation* therein, redound to the Advantage and benefit of others. This monstrous fiction which hath out-done all the *Pharisaisme* of the *Jewes* we are engaged for to the Church of *Rome*, as a pretence given to the piety, or rather covering of the impiety of their Votaries. But seeing on the one hand that they are themselves who pretend to these Works but *flesh*, and so cannot on their own Account be *Justified in the sight of God*, so it is extreme pride and cursed self-confidence for them to undertake to help others by the merit of those works whose worth they stand not in need of; concerning which it will be one day said unto them, *Who hath required these things at your hands?* But now whereas God requireth none of these things of us, nothing with respect unto any of these Ends, such is the perverseness of our Minds by Nature, that many think that God requireth nothing else of us, or nothing of us but with respect unto one or other of these Ends; nor can they in their Hearts conceive why they should perform any one Duty towards God, unless it be with some kind of regard unto these things. If they may do any thing whereby they may make some *Recompense* for their sins that are past, at least in their own Minds and Consciences, if any thing whereby they may procure an *Acceptance* with God, and the Approbation of their state and Condition, they have something which as they suppose may quicken and animate their Endeavours. Without these Considerations, *Holy Obedience* is unto them a thing *Lifeless and useless*. Others will labour and take pains both in wayes of outward *Mortification* and profuse *Munificence* in any way of Superstitious Charity, whilst they are persuaded or can persuade themselves that they shall *merit* Eternal Life and Salvation thereby, without much being beholding to the Grace of God in Christ Jesus. Yea all that hath the Face or pretence of Religion in the *Papacy*, consists in a supposition, that all which God requireth of us, he doth it with respect unto these ends, of *Attonement*, *Justification*, *Merit* and *Supererogation*. Hereunto do they apply all that remains of the *Ordinances* of God amongst them, and all their own *Inventions* are managed with the same Design. But by these things is the Gospel and the Faith of our Lord

Lord Jesus Christ made of none effect. Herein then I say lies the express Opposition that is between the *Wisdom* of God in the mystery of the Gospel, and the *φρόνημα καὶ σοφία*, the *Wisdom of the Flesh*, or our Carnal Reason. God in his dealing with us by the Gospel, takes upon his own Grace and Wisdom the providing of an *Attonement* for our sins, a *Righteousness* whereby we may be Justified before him, and the *Collation* of Eternal Life upon us, all in and by him who of God is made *unto us Wisdom and Righteousness and Sanctification and Redemption*. But withall he indispensibly requires of us *Holiness* and *universal Obedience* for the ends that shall be declared afterwards. This way, thinks the *Wisdom of the Flesh* or Carnal Reason is meer *foolishness* as our Apostle testifies, 1 Cor. i. 18, 23. But such a foolishness it is, that is wiser than men, v. 25. that is a way so excellent and full of Divine Wisdom, that men are not able to comprehend it. Wherefore in Opposition hereunto *Carnal Reason* concludes, that either what God requires of us is to be done with respect unto the ends mentioned, some or other, or all of them, or that it is no great matter whether it be done or no. Neither can it discern of what use our *Holiness* or *Obedience* unto God should be if it serve not unto some of these purposes. For the necessity of Conformity to God, of the Renovation of his Image in us before we are brought unto the enjoyment of him in Glory, the Authority of his Commands, the Reverence of his Wisdom, appointing the way of Holiness and Obedience as the means of expressing our Thankfulness, glorifying him in the World, and of coming to Eternal Life, it hath no regard unto. But the first true saving Light that shines by the Gospel from Jesus Christ into our Souls begins to *undeceive* us in this matter. And there is no greater Evidence of our receiving an *Evangelical Baptisme*, or of being baptized into the spirit of the Gospel, than the clear Compliance of our minds with the Wisdom of God herein. When we find such constraining motives unto Holiness upon us, as will not allow the least subducting of our Souls from an universal attendance unto it, purely on the Ends of the Gospel without respect unto those now discarded, it is an Evidence that the *Wisdom of God* hath prevailed against that of the flesh in our minds.

Wherefore Holiness with the fruits of it, with respect unto their proper Ends, which shall afterwards be declared, is all that God requireth of us. And this he declares in the tenor of the Covenant with *Abraham*, Gen. 17. 1. *I am God Almighty, walk before me and be thou perfect*. This is that, and this is all that I require of thee, namely thy *Holy Obedience*; for all other things wherein thou art concerned I take them all upon my own *Almighty Power* or All-sufficiency; as he sayes elsewhere, that the *whole of Man is to fear God and keep his Commandments*. And the consideration hereof taken singly and by its self, is sufficient with all that have any regard unto God, or their own Eternal welfare, to convince them of what importance these things are unto them.

Sect. 13.

(6) But neither yet are we left in this matter merely under the Authority of Gods *Command* with an Expectation of our compliance with it from our own Ability and Power; God moreover hath *promised*

mised to sanctifie us, or to work this Holiness in us, the Consideration whereof will give us yet a nearer Prospect into its nature. He that requires it of us, knows that we have it not of our selves. When we were in our best condition by nature in the state of *Original Holiness*, vested with the Image of God, we preserved it not. And is it likely that now in the state of *lapsed and depraved nature* it is in our own power to restore our selves, to re-introduce the Image of God into our Souls and that in a far more eminent manner than it was at first created by God? What needed all that Contrivance of Infinite Wisdom and Grace for the *Reparation of our nature* by *Jesus Christ*, if Holiness wherein it doth consist be in our own Power, and educed out of the natural faculties of our Souls? There can be no more fond Imagination befall the minds of men, than that *defiled Nature* is able to cleanse it self, or *depraved Nature* to rectifie it self, or we who have lost that Image of God which he created in us, and with us, should create it again in our selves by our own endeavours. Wherefore when God commandeth and requireth us to be *Holy*, he commands us to be that which by nature and of our selves we are not; and not only so, but that which we have not of our selves a Power to attain unto. Whatever therefore is *absolutely* in our own Power, is not of that Holiness which God requireth of us. For what we can do our selves, there is neither Necessity nor Reason why God should promise to work in us by his Grace. And to say, that what God so promiseth to work he will not work or effect indeed, but only persuade and prevail with us to do it, is through the pride of Unbelief to defie the Truth and Grace of God, and with the Spoils of them to adorn our own Righteousness and Power. Now God hath multiplyed his Promises to this purpose, so that we shall need to call over only some of them in way of Instance. *Jerem. 31. 33. I will put my Law in your inward parts, and write it in your hearts, and will be your God and ye shall be my People.* Chap. 32. 39, 40. *I will give them one Heart and one Way, that they may fear me for ever, and I will put my fear in their Hearts that they shall not depart from me.* *Ezek. 36. 26, 27. A new Heart will I give you, and a new Spirit will I put within you, and I will take away the stony Heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh, and I will put my Spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my Statutes, and ye shall keep my Judgments and do them.* V. 25. *I will sprinkle clean water upon you, and you shall be clean from all your filthiness:* V. 29. *I will also save you from all your uncleanness.* The whole of our Sanctification and Holiness is comprized in these Promises. To be cleansed from the Defilements of sin whatever they be, to have an Heart inclined, disposed, enabled, to fear the Lord alwayes, and to walk in all his Wayes and Statutes accordingly, with an internal habitual Conformity of the whole Soul unto the Law of God, is to be sanctified or to be Holy. And all this God promiseth directly to work in us and to accomplish himself. In the Faith of these Promises and for the fulfilling of them, the Apostle prayeth for the *Thessalonians*, as we observed at our Entrance, *That the God of Peace himself would sanctifie them throughout, whereby their whole Spirits Souls and Bodies might be preserved blameless to the coming of Jesus Christ.* And hence is evident what we before observed, that what is absolutely in our own power

is not of the nature of, nor doth necessarily belong unto Holiness whatever it be. The best of the Intellectual or Moral Habits of our minds which are but the natural Improvement and Exercise of our faculties, neither are nor can be our Holiness; nor do the best of our *Moral Duties* as meerly and only so, belong thereunto. By these Moral Habits and Duties we understand the Powers Faculties or Abilities of our Souls exercised with respect and in Obedience unto the Commands of God, as excited, perswaded, and guided by outward Motives, Rules, Arguments and Considerations. Plainly, all the Power we have of our selves to obey the Law of God, and all that we do in the pursuit and exercise of that Power, upon any Reasons, Motives or Considerations whatever, which may all be resolved into fear of Punishment and hope of Reward, with some present satisfactions of mind, on the Account of Ease in Conscience within, or outward Reputation, whether in Abstinence from sin or the Performance of Duties, are intended hereby, and are not that Holiness which we enquire after. And the Reason is plain, even because those things are not wrought in us by the power of the especial Grace of God in the pursuit of the especial Promise of the Covenant as all true Holiness is. If any shall say, that they are so wrought in us they do expressly change the nature of them. For thereby those Powers would be no more natural but supernatural; and those Duties would be no more meerly *Moral* but *Evangelical* and spiritual, which is to grant all we contend for: Wherefore that which men call *Moral Vertue* is so far from being the whole of *internal Grace or Holiness*, that if it be no more than so, it belongs not at all unto it, as not being effected in us by the *especial Grace of God* according to the Tenor and Promise of the Covenant.

xi. 14.

And we may here divert a little to consider what ought to be the frame of our minds in the pursuit of Holiness with respect unto these things; namely what regard we ought to have unto the *Command* on the one hand, and to the *Promise* on the other; to our own *Duty* and to the *Grace* of God. Some would separate these things as inconsistent. A *Command* they suppose leaves no room for a *Promise*, at least not such a *Promise* as wherein God should take on himself to work in us what the *Command* requires of us. And a *Promise* they think takes off all the influencing Authority of the *Command*. If Holiness be our *Duty* there is no room for *Grace* in this matter; and if it be an effect of *Grace* there is no place for *Duty*. But all these arguings are a fruit of the *Wisdom of the Flesh*, before-mentioned, and we have before disproved them. The *Wisdom that is from above* teacheth us other things. It is true our *Works* and *Grace* are opposed in the matter of *Justification* as utterly inconsistent; If it be of *Works* it is not of *Grace*, and if it be of *Grace* it is not of *Works*, as our Apostle argues, *Rom. 11. 6*. Our *Duty* and *Gods Grace* are no where opposed in the matter of *Sanctification*, yea the one doth absolutely suppose the other. Neither can we perform our *Duty* herein without the *Grace* of God; nor doth God give us this *Grace* unto any other End but that we may rightly perform our *Duty*. He that shall deny either that God *Commands* us to be Holy in a way of *Duty*, or promiseth to work Holiness in us in a way of *Grace*, may with as much modesty reject the whole Bible. Both these there-

therefore we are to have a due regard unto, if we intend to be Holy. And (1) our regard unto the *Command* consisteth in three things. 1. That we get our Consciences alwayes affected with the *Authority* of it, as it is the Command of God. This must afterwards be enlarged on. Where this is not there is no Holiness. Our Holiness is our *Obedience*; and the formal nature of Obedience ariseth from its respect unto the Authority of the Command. 2. That we see and understand the *Reasonableness*, the Equity, the Advantage of the Command. Our Service is *reasonable* Service; the wayes of God are *Equal*; and in the keeping of his Commands there is *great Reward*: If we judge not thus, if we rest not herein, and are thence filled with *Indignation* against every thing within us or without us that opposeth it, or riseth up against it, whatever we do in compliance with it in a way of Duty, we are not Holy. 3. That hereon we love and delight in it because it is *Holy, Just, and Good*, because the things it requires are Upright, Equal, Easie and Pleasant to the new Nature, without any regard to the false Ends before discovered. And (2) We have a due regard unto the *Promise* to the same End, when 1. We walk in a constant sense of our own *inability* to comply with the Command in any one instance from any power in our selves. For we have no Sufficiency of our selves our Sufficiency is of God. For him who is otherwise-minded his *Heart is lifted up*. 2. When we *adore that Grace* which hath provided Help and Relief for us. Seeing without the Grace promised we could never have attained unto the least part or Degree of Holiness, and seeing we could never deserve the least Dram of that Grace, how ought we to *adore* and continually praise that infinite Bounty which hath freely provided us of this supply. 3. When we *Act Faith* in Prayer and Expectation on the Promise for Supplies of Grace enabling us unto Holy Obedience. And 4. When we have *especial Regard* thereunto with respect unto especial Temptations and particular Duties. When on all such Occasions we satisfie not our selves with a respect unto the *Promise* in general, but exercise Faith in particular on it for Aid and Assistance, then doe we regard it in a due manner.

(7) To come yet nearer unto our principal Design, I say it is the *Holy Ghost* who is the *immediate peculiar Sanctifier* of all Believers and the Author of all Holiness in them. I suppose I need not insist upon the Confirmation of this Assertion in general. I have proved before that he is the *immediate Dispenser* of all Divine Grace, or the *immediate Operator* of all Divine gracious Effects in us, whereof this is the Chief. Besides, it is such an avowed and owned Principle among all that are called Christians, namely, That *the Holy Ghost is the Sanctifier of all God's Elect*; that as it is not questioned, so it need not in general be further proved; Those who are less experienced in these things may consult *Psal. 51. 10, 11, 12. Ezek. 11. 19. ch. 36. 25, 26, 27. Rom. 8. 9, 10, 11, 12, 13. 1 Cor. 6. 11. 1 Pet. 1. 2. Isa. 4. 4. chap. 44. 3, 4. Titus 3. 4, 5.* But it is the Nature and Manner of his Work herein, with the Effect produced thereby that we are to enquire into. For as this belongs unto our *general Design* of declaring the Nature, Power and Efficacy of all the gracious Divine Operations of the Holy Spirit, so it will give us an Acquaintance in particular with that work and the fruits of it wherein we are so highly concerned.

Sect. 15.

CHAP. II.

Sanctification a Progressive Work.

(1, 2) *Sanctification described.* (3) *With the Nature of the Work of the Holy Spirit therein; which is* (4) *Progressive.* (5) *The Way and Means whereby Holiness is increased in Believers;* (6) *Especially by Faith and Love, whose Exercise is required in all Duties of Obedience: As also* (7) *those Graces whose Exercise is Occasional.* (8) *The growth of Holiness expressed in an Allusion unto that of Plants, with an insensible Progress.* (9) *Renders Grace therein to be greatly admired; and is discerned in the answerableness of the Work of the Spirit in Sanctification and Supplication.* (10) *Objections against the Progressive Nature of Holiness removed.*

Sect. 1.

HAVING pass'd through the Consideration of the General Concernments of the Work of Sanctification, I shall in the next place give a Description of it, and then explain it more particularly in its principal Parts. And this I shall doe but under this express Caution; that I do not hope nor design at once to represent the Life, Glory and Beauty of it, or to comprize all things that eminently belong unto it. Only I shall set up some *Way-marks* that may guide us in our progress or future Enquiry into the Nature and Glory of it. And so I say that:

Sect. 2.

Sanctification is an immediate Work of the Spirit of God on the Souls of Believers, purifying and cleansing of their Natures from the pollution and uncleanness of sin, renewing in them the Image of God, and thereby enabling them from a spiritual and habitual Principle of Grace to yield obedience unto God according unto the Tenor and Terms of the New Covenant, by vertue of the Life and Death of Jesus Christ. Or more briefly; It is the Universal Renovation of our Natures by the Holy Spirit into the Image of God, through Jesus Christ. Hence it followes, that our Holiness which is the Fruit and Effect of this Work, the Work as terminated in us, as it comprizeth the renewed Principle or Image of God wrought in us, so it consists in an Holy Obedience unto God by Jesus Christ according to the Terms of the Covenant of Grace, from the Principle of a Renewed Nature. Our Apostle expresseth the whole more briefly yet, namely, He that is in Christ Jesus is a New Creature, 2 Cor. 5, 17. For herein he expresseth both the Renovation of our Natures, the Endowment of them with a new Spiritual Principle of Life and Operation, with Actings towards God suitable thereunto. I shall take up the first general Description of it, and in the Consideration of its Parts give some account of the Nature of the Work and its Effects; and then shall distinctly prove and confirm the true Nature of it wherein it is opposed or called into question.

(1) It

(1) It is as was before proved and is by all confessed, *the Work in us of the Spirit of God*. It is the *Renovation of the Holy Ghost* whereby we are saved. And a reall, internall, powerfull, *physical* work it is, as we have proved before abundantly, and shall afterwards more fully confirm. He doth not make us holy *only by perswading* us so to be. He doth not only require us to be holy, propose unto us Motives unto Holiness, give us Convictions of its necessity, and thereby excite us unto the pursuit and attainment of it; though this he doth *also* by the Word and Ministration thereof. It is too *high an impudency* for any one to pretend an owning of the Gospel, and yet to deny a *Work* of the Holy Ghost in our Sanctification. And therefore both the Old and New *Pelagians* did and do avow a Work of his herein. But what is it that really they ascribe unto him? meerly the Exciting our own Abilities, aiding and assisting us in and unto the Exercise of our own native Power, which when all is done leaves the Work to be *our own* and not his, and to us must the Glory and Prayse of it be ascribed. But we have already sufficiently proved that the things thus promised of God, and so effected, are really wrought by the *exceeding greatness of the Power* of the Spirit of God; and this will yet afterwards be made more particularly to appear.

Sect. 3.

(2) This Work of *Sanctification* differs from that of *Regeneration* as on other Accounts so especially on that of the Manner of their being wrought. The work of *Regeneration* is *Instantaneous*, consisting in one single creating Act. Hence it is not capable of Degrees in any subject. No One is *more or less Regenerate* than Another; every one in the world is absolutely so, or not so, and that equally, although there are *Degrees* in their state on other Reasons. But this work of *Sanctification* is *progressive* and admits of Degrees. One may be *more sanctified* and *more holy* than another, who is yet truly sanctified and truly holy. It is begun at once, and carryed on gradually. But this Observation being of great importance, and such as if rightly weighed will contribute much Light unto the Nature of the whole work of *Sanctification* and Holiness, I shall divert in this Chapter unto such an Explanation and Confirmation of it as may give an understanding and furtherance herein.

Sect. 4.

1. An *Encrease* and *Growth* in Sanctification or Holiness is frequently in the Scripture enjoined us, and frequently promised unto us. So speaks the Apostle *Peter* in a way of Command: 2 *Pet.* 3. 18. *Fall not, be not cast down, from your own steadfastness; but grow, or encrease, in Grace*. It is not enough that we decay not in our Spiritual Condition, that we be not diverted and carryed off from a steady Course in Obedience by the Power of Temptations, but an endeavour after an *Improvement*, an *Encrease*, a thriving in *Grace* that is in Holiness, is required of us. And a Compliance with this Command is that which our Apostle so commendeth in the *Thessalonians*; 2 *Epist.* Chap. 1. v. 3. namely, the *exceeding growth of their Faith, and abounding of their Love*; that is, the thriving and encrease of those Graces in them; that which is called *increasing with the increase of God*, Col. 2. 19. or the Encrease in Holiness which God requires, accepts, approves, by supplies of

CHAP. II.

Sanctification a Progressive Work.

(1, 2) *Sanctification described.* (3) *With the Nature of the Work of the Holy Spirit therein; which is* (4) *Progressive.* (5) *The Way and Means whereby Holiness is increased in Believers;* (6) *Especially by Faith and Love, whose Exercise is required in all Duties of Obedience:* As also (7) *those Graces whose Exercise is Occasional.* (8) *The growth of Holiness expressed in an Allusion unto that of Plants, with an insensible Progress.* (9) *Renders Grace therein to be greatly admired; and is discerned in the answerableness of the Work of the Spirit in Sanctification and Supplication.* (10) *Objections against the Progressive Nature of Holiness removed.*

Sect. 1.

HAVING pass'd through the Consideration of the General Concernments of the Work of Sanctification, I shall in the next place give a Description of it, and then explain it more particularly in its principal Parts. And this I shall doe but under this express Caution; that I do not hope nor design at once to represent the Life, Glory and Beauty of it, or to comprize all things that eminently belong unto it. Only I shall set up some *Way-marks* that may guide us in our progress or future Enquiry into the Nature and Glory of it. And so I say that:

Sect. 2.

Sanctification is an immediate Work of the Spirit of God on the Souls of Believers, purifying and cleansing of their Natures from the pollution and uncleanness of sin, renewing in them the Image of God, and thereby enabling them from a spiritual and habitual Principle of Grace to yield obedience unto God according unto the Tenor and Terms of the New Covenant, by vertue of the Life and Death of Jesus Christ. Or more briefly; It is the Universal Renovation of our Natures by the Holy Spirit into the Image of God, through Jesus Christ. Hence it followes, that our Holiness which is the Fruit and Effect of this Work, the Work as terminated in us, as it comprizeth the renewed Principle or Image of God wrought in us, so it consists in an Holy Obedience unto God by Jesus Christ according to the Terms of the Covenant of Grace, from the Principle of a Renewed Nature. Our Apostle expresseth the whole more briefly yet, namely, He that is in Christ Jesus is a New Creature, 2 Cor. 5. 17. For herein he expresseth both the Renovation of our Natures, the Endowment of them with a new Spiritual Principle of Life and Operation, with Actings towards God suitable thereunto. I shall take up the first general Description of it, and in the Consideration of its Parts give some account of the Nature of the Work and its Effects; and then shall distinctly prove and confirm the true Nature of it wherein it is opposed or called into question.

(1) It

(1) It is as was before proved and is by all confessed, *the Work in us of the Spirit of God*. It is the *Renovation of the Holy Ghost* whereby we are saved. And a reall, internall, powerfull, *physical* work it is, as we have proved before abundantly, and shall afterwards more fully confirm. He doth not make us holy *only by perswading* us so to be. He doth not only require us to be holy, propose unto us Motives unto Holiness, give us Convictions of its necessity, and thereby excite us unto the pursuit and attainment of it; though this he doth *also* by the Word and Ministration thereof. It is too *high an impudency* for any one to pretend an owning of the Gospel, and yet to deny a *Work* of the Holy Ghost in our Sanctification. And therefore both the Old and New *Pelagians* did and do avow a Work of his herein. But what is it that really they ascribe unto him? meerly the Exciting our own Abilities, aiding and assisting us in and unto the Exercise of our own native Power, which when all is done leaves the Work to be *our own* and not his, and to us must the Glory and Praise of it be ascribed. But we have already sufficiently proved that the things thus promised of God, and so effected, are really wrought by the *exceeding greatness of the Power* of the Spirit of God; and this will yet afterwards be made more particularly to appear.

Sect. 3.

(2) This Work of *Sanctification* differs from that of *Regeneration* as on other Accounts so especially on that of the Manner of their being wrought. The work of *Regeneration* is *Instantaneous*, consisting in one single creating Act. Hence it is not capable of Degrees in any subject. No One is *more* or *less* *Regenerate* than Another; every one in the world is absolutely so, or not so, and that equally, although there are *Degrees* in their state on other Reasons. But this work of *Sanctification* is *progressive* and admits of Degrees. One may be *more sanctified* and *more holy* than another, who is yet truly sanctified and truly holy. It is begun at once, and carryed on gradually. But this Observation being of great importance, and such as if rightly weighed will contribute much Light unto the Nature of the whole work of *Sanctification* and Holiness, I shall divert in this Chapter unto such an Explanation and Confirmation of it as may give an understanding and furtherance herein.

Sect. 4.

1. An *Encrease* and *Growth* in Sanctification or Holiness is frequently in the Scripture enjoyned us, and frequently promised unto us. So speaks the Apostle Peter in a way of Command: 2 Pet. 3. 18. *Fall not, be not cast down, from your own Steadfastness; but grow, or encrease, in Grace*. It is not enough that we decay not in our Spiritual Condition, that we be not diverted and carryed off from a steady Course in Obedience by the Power of Temptations, but an endeavour after an *Improvement*, an *Encrease*, a thriving in *Grace* that is in Holiness, is required of us. And a Compliance with this Command is that which our Apostle so commendeth in the *Thessalonians*; 2 Epist. Chap. 1. v. 3. namely, the *exceeding growth of their Faith, and abounding of their Love*; that is, the thriving and encrease of those Graces in them; that which is called *increasing with the increase of God*, Col. 2. 19. or the *Encrease* in Holiness which God requires, accepts, approves, by supplies of

spiritual strength from Jesus Christ our Head, as it is there expressed.

The Work of Holiness in its beginning is but like seed cast into the Earth; namely the *seed of God* whereby we are born again. And it is known how seed that is cast into the Earth doth grow and encrease. Being variously cherished and nourished it is in its nature to *take root* and to spring up, bringing forth fruit. So is it with the Principle of Grace and Holiness. It is *small* at first, but being received in good and honest Hearts, made so by the Spirit of God, and there nourished and cherished, it takes root and brings forth fruit. And both these, even the first *planting* and the *encrease* of it are both equally from God by his Spirit. He that *begins this good Work* doth also *perform it to the Day of Jesus Christ*, Phil. 1. 6. And this he doth two wayes.

(1) By *Encreasing* and *Strengthening* those Graces of Holiness which we have received and been engaged in the exercise of. There are some Graces whose Exercise doth not depend on any outward Occasions, but they are and that in their actual Exercise absolutely necessary unto the *least Degree* of the Life of God; such are Faith and Love. No man doth, no man can *live to God* but in the Exercise of these Graces. Whatever Duties towards God men may perform, if they are not enlivened by *Faith and Love*, they belong not unto that Spiritual Life whereby we live to God. And these Graces are capable of *Degrees*, and so of *Increase*. For so we read expressly of *little Faith*, and *great Faith*, *weak* and *strong Faith*, both true and the same in the substance, but differing in *Degrees*. So also is there *fervent Love*, and that which comparatively is but *cold*. These Graces therefore in carrying on the work of Sanctification are *gradually* encreased. So the Disciples prayed our Saviour that he would *encrease their Faith*, Luke 17. 5. That is, adde unto its *Light*, confirm it in its *Assent*, multiply its *Acts*, and make it strong against its Assaults, that it might work more effectually in difficult Duties of Obedience which they had an especial regard unto, as is evident from the Context. For they pray for this *Encrease of Faith* upon the Occasion of our Saviours enjoying frequent forgiveness of offending Brethren, a Duty not at all easie nor pleasing to Flesh and Blood. And the Apostle prays for the *Ephesians*, that they may be *rooted and grounded in Love*, chap. 3. 17. that is, that by the encrease and strengthening of their *Love*, they may be more established in all the Duties of it. See 1 *Thess.* 3. 12; 13.

Sect. 5.

These Graces being the Springs and Spirits of our *Holiness*, in the encrease of them in us the work of *Sanctification* is carried on and universal Holiness encreased. And this is done by the Holy Spirit *several wayes*.

First, By *exciting* them unto frequent Actings. Frequency of *Acts* doth *naturally* encrease and strengthen the Habits whence they proceed. And in these spiritual *Habits* of Faith and Love it is so moreover by Gods Appointment. They *grow* and *thrive* in and by their exercise, Hof. 6. 3. The want thereof is the principal means of their decay. And there are two wayes whereby the Holy Spirit, *excites the Graces of Faith and Love* unto frequent Acts.

(1) He doth it *Morally*, by proposing their Objects suitably and seasonably

seasonably unto them. This he doth by his *Ordinances of Worship* especially the preaching of the Word. God in Christ, the Promises of the Covenant and other proper Objects of our Faith and Love, being proposed unto us, these Graces are *drawn out* unto their Exercise. And this is one principal *Advantage* which we have by attendance on the Dispensation of the Word in a due Manner; namely, that by presenting those *Spiritual Truths* which are the Object of our Faith unto our Minds, and those *Spiritual Good Things* which are the Object of our Love unto our Affections, both these Graces are *drawn forth* into frequent actual Exercise. And we are greatly mistaken if we suppose we have no Benefit by the Word beyond what we retain in our *Memories*, though we should labour for that also. Our chief Advantage lyes in the *Excitation* which is thereby given unto our Faith and Love to their proper Exercise. And hereby are these Graces kept alive which without this would *decay* and wither. Herein doth the Holy Spirit *take the things of Christ and shew them unto us*, Joh. 16. 14, 15. He represents them unto us in the Preaching of the Word as the proper Objects of our Faith and Love. And so brings to remembrance the things spoken by Christ, *chap. 14. 26.* that is, in the Dispensation of the Word he minds us of the gracious Words and Truths of Christ, proposing them to our Faith and Love. And herein lies the *secret profiting and thriving* of Believers under the preaching of the Gospel, which it may be they are not sensible of themselves. By this means are many Thousands of *Acts of Faith and Love* drawn forth, whereby those Graces are *exercised* and strengthened, and consequently Holiness is encreased. And the Word by the Actings of Faith being *mixed with it*, as *Hebr. 4. 2.* increaseth it by its incorporation.

(2) The Spirit doth it *really* and internally. He dwelleth in Believers, preserving in them the Root and Principle of all their Grace by his own immediate Power. Hence all Graces in their Exercise are called the *fruits of the Spirit*, *Gal. 5. 22, 23.* He brings them forth from the *stock* that he hath planted in the Heart. And we cannot Act any one Grace without his Effectual Operation therein. *God worketh in us both to will and to doe of his good pleasure*, *Phil. 1. 13.* That is, there is no part of our Wills singly and separately from him in Obedience, but it is the *Operation* of the Spirit of God in us so far as it is Spiritual and Holy: He is the immediate Author of every good or gracious Acting in us. For *in us*, that is *in our Flesh* (and of our selves we are but Flesh) *there dwelleth no Good*. Wherefore the Spirit of God *dwelling in Believers*, doth effectually excite and stir up their Graces unto frequent Exercise and Actings whereby they are increased and strengthened. And there is nothing in the whole Course of our Walking before God that we ought to be more carefull about, than that we *grieve not*, that we *provoke not* this good and Holy Spirit whereon he should withhold his gracious Aids and Assistances from us. This therefore is the *first* way whereby the work of *Sanctification* is *gradually* carryed on by the Holy Ghost exciting our Graces unto frequent Actings; whereby they are encreased and strengthened.

Secondly, He doth it by supplying Believers with *Experiences* of the Truth and Reality and Excellency of the things that are believed. *Experience* is the Food of all Grace which it growes and thrives upon.

Every

Every *Taste* that Faith obtains of Divine Love and Grace, or *how Gracious the Lord is*, adds to its measure and stature. Two things therefore must briefly be declared: (1) That the *Experience* of the Reality, Excellency, Power and Efficacy of the things that are believed, is an effectual means of encreasing Faith and Love: (2) That *it is the Holy Ghost* which gives us this Experience. For the *First*, God himself expostulates with the Church how its Faith came to be so weak when it had so great Experience of Him, or of his Power and Faithfulness, *Isa. 40. 27, 28. Hast thou not heard, hast thou not known? How then sayest thou that God hath forsaken thee?* And our Apostle affirms that the Consolations which he had experimentally received from God, enabled him unto the discharge of his Duty towards others in trouble, *2 Cor. 7. 4.* For herein we prove, or do really approve of, as being satisfied in, *the good and acceptable and perfect will of God, Rom. 12. 2.* And this is that which the Apostle prayeth for in the behalf of the *Colossians, chap. 2. v. 2.* I may say, that he who knoweth not how Faith is encouraged and strengthened by *especial Experiences* of the Reality, Power, and spiritual Efficacy on the Soul of the things believed, never was made partaker of any of them. How often doth *David* encourage his own Faith and others from his former Experiences which were pleaded also by our Lord Jesus Christ to the same purpose, in his great Distress, *Psal. 22. 9, 10.* Secondly, That it is the Holy Ghost who giveth us all our Spiritual Experiences needs no other Consideration to evince but only this, that in them *consists* all our Consolation. His Work and Office it is to administer Consolation unto Believers, as being the only *Comforter* of the Church. Now he administreth Comfort no other way but by giving unto the Minds and Souls of Believers, a *Spiritual sensible Experience* of the Reality and Power of the things we do believe. He doth not comfort us by *Words*, but by *Things*. Other means of *Spiritual Consolation* I know none, and I am sure this never fails. Give unto a Soul an Experience, a *Taste* of the Love and Grace of God in Christ Jesus, and be its Condition what it will, it cannot refuse to be comforted. And hereby doth he *shed abroad the Love of God in our Hearts, Rom. 5. 5.* whereby all Graces are cherished and encreased.

Thirdly, He doth it by working *immediately* an Actual Encrease of these graces in us. I have shewed that these are capable of improvement and of an Addition of Degrees unto them. Now they are Originally the *immediate Work* and product of the Spirit of God in us, as hath been abundantly evinced. And as he first works and creates them, so he *encreaseth* them. Hereby they that are *feeble become as David, Zech. 12. 8.* That is, those whose Graces were weak, whose Faith was infirm, and whose Love was languid, shall by the *supplies of the Spirit* and the encrease given by him unto them, become strong and vigorous. To this purpose are Promises multiplied in the Scripture, which in our constant Supplications we principally respect. This is that which the *School-men* after *Austin* call *Gratiam corroborantem*, that is the working of the Holy Spirit in the encreasing and strengthening of Grace received. See *Ephes. 3. 16, 17. Col. 1. 10, 11. Isa. 40. 29.* And this is the principal Cause and Means of the *gradual Encrease of Holiness* in us, or the carrying on of the Work of Sanctification, *Psal. 138. 8.*

(2) There

(2) There are Graces whose Exercise is more *Occasional* and not alwayes actually necessary as unto the Life of God: That is, it is not necessary that they be alwayes in actual Exercise, as *Faith* and *Love* are to be. With respect unto these Holiness is encreased by the *Addition* of one to another, untill we are brought on several *Occasions* to the Practice and Exercise of them all. For the *Addition* of the new Exercise of any Grace belongs unto the *gradual* carrying on of the Work of Sanctification. And hereunto all things that befall us in this World, all our Circumstances are laid in a subserviency by the Wisdom of God. All our Relations, all our Afflictions, all our Temptations, all our Mercies, all our Enjoyments, all Occurrences are suited to a continual *adding* of the Exercise of one Grace to another wherein Holiness is encreased. And if we make not use of them to that purpose, we miss of all the Benefit and Advantage we might have of them, and disappoint what lyes in us the Design of Divine Love and Wisdom in them. This is given us in Charge, 2 Pet. 1. 5, 6, 7. *Besides all this, giving all diligence adde to your Faith Vertue, and to Vertue Knowledge, and to Knowledge Temperance, and to Temperance Patience, and to Patience Godliness, and to Godliness Brotherly-kindness, and to Brotherly-kindness Charity.* The end why this Injunction is given us, is that we may *escape the Corruption that is in the World through Lust*, v. 3. that is have all our Corruptions thoroughly subdued and our Souls thoroughly sanctified. To this end are the Promises given us, and a *Divine* spiritual Nature is bestowed upon us. But will that suffice, or is there no more required of us unto that End? Yes saith the Apostle, this great Work will not be effected, unless you use your *utmost Diligence* and Endeavour to *adde* the Exercise of all the Graces of the Spirit One to Another as Occasion shall require. There is a *Method* in this *Concatenation of Graces* from first to last, and an especial Reason for each particular, or why the Apostle requires that such a Grace should be *added* unto such a one in the Order laid down, which at present I shall not enquire into. But in general he intends that *every Grace* is to be exercised according to its proper season, and especial Occasion. Hereby also is the Work of Sanctification *gradually* carryed on and Holiness encreased. And this *Addition* of one Grace unto another, with the Progress of Holiness thereby, is also from the Holy Ghost. And *three ways* there are whereby he accomplisheth his Work herein. (1) By Ordering things so towards us, and bringing of us into such *Conditions*, as wherein the Exercise of these Graces shall be required and necessary. All the Afflictions and Tryals which he bringeth the Church into have no other End or Design. So the Apostle James expresseth it: Chap. 1. 2, 3, 4. *My Brethren, count it all Joy when ye fall into divers Temptations; knowing this, that the triall of your Faith worketh Patience. But let Patience have its perfect Work, that you may be perfect and entire wanting Nothing.* These Temptations are Trials upon Afflictions, Troubles, Persecutions and the like. But take them in any other sense, it is the same unto our purpose. These are all guided unto us by *Christ* and his *Spirit*; for it is he who rebukes and chastens us. But what is his End therein? It is that *Faith* may be exercised, and *Patience* employed, and one Grace *added* unto another that they may carry us on towards Perfection.

fection. So he bringeth us into that Condition as wherein we shall assuredly miscarry, if we adde not the *Exercise* of one Grace unto another. (2) In this state of things he effectually *minds us of our Duty* and what Graces ought to be put upon their Exercise. We may dispute whether it be better to *Act Faith* or to Despond; to adde *Patience* under the Continuance of our Tryals, or to trust unto our selves and irregularly to seek after Deliverance, or divert unto other satisfactions. Then doth he cause us to hear a Word behind us saying, *this is the way walk in it, when we turn to the right hand, and when we turn to the left*, Isa. 30.21. When we are at a loss and know not what to doe, and are ready it may be to *consult with flesh and blood* and to divert to irregular courses, he speaks effectually to us, saying, No, that is not your way; but this is it, namely to *Act Faith*, *Patience*, *Submission to God*, adding one Grace to another, binding our Hearts thereby to our Duty. (3) He actually excites and sets all needfull Graces at work in the Way and Manner before spoken unto. This then is to be fixed, that all this Encrease of Holiness is immediately the Work of the Holy Ghost who therein *gradually* carries on his Design of sanctifying us throughout in our whole Spirit Souls and Bodies. There is in our Regeneration and Habitual Grace received, a Nature bestowed on us capable of *Growth* and Encrease, and that is all; if it be left unto its self it will not thrive, it will decay and dye. The actual *supplyes* of the Spirit are the *waterings* that are the immediate Cause of its encrease. It wholly depends on continual Influences from God. He cherisheth and improves the work he hath begun with new and fresh supplyes of Grace every moment. Isa. 27. 3. *I the Lord water it every moment*. And it is the Spirit which is this *Water* as the Scripture every where declares. God the Father takes on him the Care in this matter; *he watcheth over his Vineyard to keep it*. The Lord Christ is the Head Fountain and Treasure of all actual supplyes: And the *Spirit* is the *Efficient Cause* communicating them unto us from him. From hence it is that any Grace in us is kept alive one Moment, that it is ever acted in one single Duty, that ever it receives the least measure of Encrease or strengthening. With respect unto all these it is that our Apostle saith, *Nevertheless I live, yet not I but Christ liveth in me*, Gal. 2.20. Spiritual Life and living by it in all the Acts of it are immediately from Christ.

I concern not my self much how *Moral Vertue* that is no more is preserved and sustained in the Minds and Lives of men, though I am not ignorant of the Precepts Directions and Instructions which are given unto that End by some of old, and some of late. But for *Grace* and *Holiness* we have infallible Assurance, that the *Being*, *Life*, *Continuance*, and all the Actings of it in any of the Sons of men, depend meerly and only upon their Relation unto that *Spring* and Fountain of all Grace which is in Christ, and the continual Supplyes of it by the Holy Spirit whose Work it is to communicate them, Col. 3. 3. *John* 15. 5. Col. 2. 19.

There is no man who hath any Grace that is true and saving, that hath any seed, any beginning of Sanctification or Holiness, but that the Holy Spirit by his watchfull Care over it, and Supplyes of it, is able to *preserve* it, to *extricate* it from Difficulties, to free it from Opposition, and to *encrease* it unto its full measure and perfection. Wherefore

let

let the hands that hang down be lifted up and the feeble knees be strengthened; we have to do with him who will not quench the smoking flax nor break the bruised reed. And on the other side, there is none who hath received Grace in such a Measure, nor hath so confirmed it by constant uninterrupted Exercise, as that he can preserve it one Moment, or Act it in any one Instance or Duty without the continual Supplies of new Actual Grace and Help from him, *who worketh in us to will and to doe.* For saith our Lord Christ unto his Apostles and in them to all Believers, the best and strongest of them, *without me ye can do nothing,* Joh. 15. 5. And they who of themselves *can do nothing* that is in a way of living unto God, cannot of themselves preserve Grace, act it, and encrease it, which are the greatest things we doe, or are wrought in us in this World. Wherefore God hath in infinite Wisdom so ordered the Dispensation of his Love and Grace unto Believers, that all of them living upon the *continual supplies of his Spirit* none may have cause on the one hand to faint or despond, nor Occasion on the other unto self-confidence, or Elation of mind, that *so no flesh may glory in its self, but he that gloryeth may glory in the Lord.* And therefore as he greatly encourageth the weak, the fearfull, the faint, the disconsolate and dejected, and that by the Engagement of all the holy Properties of his Nature in and unto their Assistance, Isa. 35. 3, 4, 5, 6. Chap. 40. 27, 28, 29, 30, 31. So he warns them who suppose themselves strong, steadfast and immovable, *not to be high-minded but fear,* Rom. 11. 20. because the whole issue of things depends on his *Sovereign Supplies of Grace.* And seeing he hath promised in the Covenant to continue faithfully these Supplies unto us, there is ground of Faith given unto all, and Occasion of Presumption administred unto none.

But it will be said, that if not only the *Beginning* of Grace Sanctification and Holiness be from God, but the *carrying of it on* and the *Encrease* of it also be from him, and not only so in general, but that all the *Actings of Grace*, and every Act of it, be an immediate Effect of the Holy Spirit, then what need is there that we should take any pains in this thing our selves, or use our own Endeavours to grow in Grace or Holiness as we are commanded; If God *worketh all himself in us*, and without his effectual Operation in us *we can do nothing*, there is no place left for our *Diligence, Duty, or Obedience.*

Sect. 7.

Ans. 1. This Objection we must expect to meet withall at every turn. Men will not believe there is a consistency between *Gods effectual Grace*, and our *diligent Obedience*; that is, they will not believe what is plainly, clearly, distinctly revealed in the Scripture, and which is suited unto the Experience of all that truly believe, because they cannot it may be comprehend it within the compass of *Carnal Reason.* 2. Let the Apostle answer this Objection for this once, 2 Pet. 1. 3. *His Divine Power hath given unto us all things that pertain to Life and to Godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to Glory and Vertue; whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious Promises, that by these ye might be partakers of the Divine Nature, having escaped the Corruption that is in the World through lust.* If all things that pertain unto Life and Godliness, among which doubtless is the *Preservation and Encrease of Grace*, be given unto us by the *power of God*; if from him we

receive that *Divine Nature*, by virtue whereof our Corruptions are subdued, then I pray what need is there of any Endeavours of our own? The whole work of *Sanctification* is wrought in us, it seems, and that by the Power of God: We therefore may let it alone, and leave it unto him whose it is, whilst we are negligent, secure and at ease. Nay, saith the Apostle, this is not the use which the Grace of God is to be put unto. The Consideration of it is or ought to be the principal Motive and Encouragement unto *all Diligence* for the Encrease of Holiness in us. For so he addes immediately, *v. 5. ὅτι αὐτὸ τὸτο δὲ, but also for this cause*, or because of the gracious Operations of the Divine Power in us; *giving all Diligence, adde to your Faith Vertue as before*. These Objectors and this Apostle were very diversly minded in these matters; what they make an insuperable discouragement unto Diligence in Obedience, that he makes the greatest Motive and Encouragement thereunto. 3. I say from this Consideration, it will unavoidably follow, that we ought continually to *wait and depend on God* for supplies of his Spirit and Grace, without which we can do nothing: That God is *more the Author* by his Grace of the good we do than we are our selves (*not I, but the Grace of God that was with me*) that we ought to be careful that by our Negligences and sins we provoke not the Holy Spirit to *with-hold his Aids and Assistances*, and so to leave us to our selves, in which condition we can do nothing that is spiritually Good; These things I say will unavoidably follow on the Doctrine before declared; and if any one be *offended* at them, it is not in our power to tender them Relief.

Sect. 8. I shall close the Discourse on this Subject with some Considerations of that *Similitude* by which the Scripture so frequently represents the gradual Improvement of Grace and Holiness. And this is the *growth of Trees and Plants*. *Hos. 14. 5, 6. I will be as the dew unto Israel, he shall grow as the Lilly and cast forth his Roots as Lebanon, his branches shall spread, and his beauty shall be as the Olive-tree, and his smell as Lebanon. Isa. 44. 3, 4. I will pour water on him that is thirsty and floods upon the dry ground, I will pour my Spirit upon thy seed, and my blessing upon thine Off-spring, and they shall spring up as among the grass, as the Willows by the Water-courses*. And so in other places very many. And we may know that this *Similitude* is singularly instructive, or it would not have been so frequently made use of to this purpose. Some few Instances tending to Administer *Light* in this matter, I shall briefly reflect upon.

(1) These *Trees and Plants* have the Principle of their growth in themselves. They do not grow immediately from external adventitious Aid and Furtherance; they grow from their own *seminal vertue* and radical Moisture. It is no otherwise in the Progress of Sanctification and Holiness. It hath a *Root*, a *Seed*, a *Principle* of Growth and Encrease in the Soul of him that is sanctified. All Grace is *immortal Seed*, and contains in it a living growing Principle. That which hath not in its self a Life and power of Growth is not Grace. And therefore what Duties soever any men do perform, whereunto they are either guided by Natural Light, or which they are urged unto by *Convictions* from the Word, if they proceed not from a Principle of Spiritual Life

Life in the Heart, they are no *fruits* of Holiness nor do belong thereunto. The Water of Grace which is from Christ, is a *Well of Water springing up unto Everlasting Life* in them on whom it is bestowed. *Joh. 4. 14.* It is therefore of the Nature of Holiness to thrive and grow, as it is of a *Tree* or *Plant* that have their *seminal Vertue* in themselves after their kind.

(2) A *Tree* or *Plant* must be *watered* from above or it will not thrive and grow by vertue of its own *seminal* power. If a *Drowth* cometh it will wither or decay. Wherefore, where God mentioneth this growth he ascribes it unto his *watering*. I will be *as the Dew*, and I will *pour water*, is the especial Cause of it. It is so in this carrying on of Holiness. There is a Nature received capable of *Increase* and growth; but if it be left unto its self it will not *thrive*, it will decay and dye. Wherefore God is unto it as the *Dew*, and *pours water* on it by the actual supplies of the Spirit, as we have shewed before.

(3) The *growth of Trees and Plants* is secret and *imperceptible*; nor is discerned but in the Effects and Consequences of it. The most watchfull Eye can discern little of its motion. *Crescit Occulto velut arbor ævo*: It is no otherwise in the *progress* of Holiness. It is not immediately discernible either by themselves in whom it is, or by others that make Observation of it. It lyes only under the Eye of him by whom it is wrought: Only by the *Fruits and Effects* of it is made manifest. And some indeed, especially in some seasons, do plainly and evidently *thrive and grow*, springing up like the *Willowes by the Water-courses*. Though their growth in its self is indiscernible, yet it is plain they have grown. Such we ought all to be. The growth of some I say is manifest on every Triall, on every occasion; their profiting is visible to all. And as some say that the growth of *Plants* is not by a constant insensible progress, but they encrease by suddain *Gusts and Motions*, which may sometimes be discerned in the *Openings of Budds and Flowers*; so the growth of Believers consists principally in some intense *vigorous actings of Grace* on great Occasions; as of Faith, Love, Humility, Self-denial, Bounty. And he who hath not some *Experience* of such actings of Grace in especial Instances, can have little Evidence of his Growth. Again there are *Trees and Plants* that have the Principle of Life and Growth in them, but yet are so withering and unthrifty that you can only discern them to be alive. And so it is with too many Believers: They are all *Trees planted in the Garden of God*, some thrive, some decay for a season, but the *growth of the best is secret*.

From what hath been proved it is evident that the work of Sanctification is a *progressive Work*, that Holiness is gradually carried on in us by it towards Perfection. It is neither wrought nor compleated at *once* in us as is Regeneration; nor doth it cease under any Attainments or in any Condition of Life, but is thriving and carried on. A River continually fed by a Living Fountain may as soon end its streams before it come to the Ocean, as a stop be put to the Course and Progress of Grace before it issues in Glory. *For the path of the Just is as the shining Light, that shineth more and more to the perfect day, Prov. 4. 18.* So is their *Path* wherein they are led and conducted

Sect. 9.

by the Holy Spirit, even as the *Morning Light* which after it once appears, though it may be sometimes clouded, yet faileth not untill it arrive unto its Perfection. And as the Wisdom, Patience, Faithfulness and Power which the Holy Spirit of God exerciseth herein are *unutterable*, so are they constantly *admired* by all that are interested in them: So are they by the *Psalmist*, *Psal.* 66. 8, 9. *Psal.* 31. 17. Who is there who hath made any diligent Observation of his own Heart and Wayes, and what have been the workings of the Grace of God in him and towards him to bring him unto the Stature and Measure whereunto he is arrived, that doth not admire the watchfull Care and powerfull workings of the Spirit of God therein? The Principle of our Holiness as in us is weak and infirm, because it is in us; in some to so low a Degree as is oft-times unto themselves imperceptible. This he *preserves* and Cherisheth that it shall not be overpowered by Corruptions and Temptations. Among all the glorious works of God, next unto that of Redemption by Jesus Christ, my Soul doth most admire this of the Spirit in preserving the Seed and Principle of Holiness in us, as a spark of living Fire in the midst of the Ocean, against all Corruptions and Temptations wherewith it is impugned. Many *Breaches* are made in and upon our Course of Obedience by the Incursions of Actual sins, these he cures and makes up, healing our backslidings and repairing our Decayes. And he *acts the Grace* we have received by constant fresh Supplies. He wants much of the Comfort and Joy of a *Spiritual Life*, who doth not diligently observe the Wayes and Means whereby it is preserved and promoted. And it is no small part of our sin and folly when we are negligent herein.

All Believers are no doubt in some measure convinced hereof, not only from the Testimonies given unto it in the Scripture, but also from their own Experience. And there is nothing in themselves which they may more distinctly learn it from, than the Nature and Course of their Prayers, with the workings of their Hearts, Minds and Affections in them. Let profane Persons deride it whilst they please, it is the Spirit of God as a Spirit of Grace that enables Believers to *pray* and make Intercession according to the mind of God. And herein as he is the *Spirit of Supplications*, he copyeth out and expresseth what he worketh in them as the Spirit of *Sanctification*. In teaching us to *pray*, he teacheth us what and how he worketh in us. And if we wisely consider his working *in* our Hearts by *Prayer*, we may understand much of his working *upon* our Hearts by *Grace*. It is said, that he who *searcheth the Hearts*, that is God himself, *knoweth the mind of the Spirit in the Intercessions he worketh in us*, *Rom.* 8. 27. There are secret powerfull Operations of the Spirit in Prayer, that are discernible only to the great searcher of Hearts. But we also ought to enquire and observe so far as we may, what he leads us unto and guides us about, which is plainly his work in us. I do not think that the Spirit worketh Supplications in us by an immediate, supernatural, Divine *Afflatus* so as he inspired the *Prophets* of old, who oft-times understood not the things uttered by themselves, but enquired afterwards diligently into them. But I do say, (let the proud carnal World despise it whilst they please, and at their peril) that the Spirit of God doth graciously in the Prayers of Believers carry out and act their Souls and Minds in
Desires

Desires and Requests which for the matter of them are far above their natural Contrivances and Invention. And he who hath not Experience hereof is a greater stranger unto these things than will at length be unto his Advantage. By a diligent Observance hereof we may know of what kind and nature the work of the Holy Ghost in us is, and how it is carried on. For how in general doth the Holy Spirit teach us and enable us to pray? It is by these three things. (1) By giving us a *spiritual Insight* into the Promises of God and the Grace of the Covenant, whereby we know what to ask upon a spiritual view of the Mercy and Grace that God hath prepared for us. (2) By acquainting us with and giving us an *Experience* of our wants with a deep sense of them, such as we cannot bear without Relief. (3) By *Creating* and stirring up desires in the *new Creature* for its own Preservation Encrease and Improvement. And in Answer unto these things consisteth his whole work of *Sanctification* in us. For it is his effectual Communication unto us of the Grace and Mercy prepared in the Promises of the Covenant through Jesus Christ; hereby doth he supply our spiritual wants, and sets the new Creature in Life and Vigour. So are our Prayers an Extract and Copy of the Work of the Holy Spirit in us given us by himself. And therefore by whomsoever he is despised as a Spirit of *Supplication*, he is so as a Spirit of Sanctification also. Now consider what it is that in your Prayers you most labour about? Is it not that the Body, the Power, the whole Interest of Sin in you may be weakened, subdued, and at length destroyed? Is it not that all the Graces of the Spirit may be renewed daily, encreased and strengthened, so as that you may be more ready and prepared for all Duties of Obedience? And what is all this but that Holiness may be gradually *Progressive* in your Souls, that it may be carried on by new Supplies and Additions of Grace, untill it come to Perfection?

It will be said perhaps by some that they find neither in themselves nor others, by the best of their Observation, that the Work of Sanctification is constantly *Progressive*, or that Holiness doth so grow and thrive wherever it is in sincerity. For as for themselves they have found Grace more *vigorous* active and flourishing in former dayes than of late; the streams of it were fresher and stronger at the *Spring of Conversion* than since they find them to be in their Course. Hence are those complaints among many of their *Leanness*, their *Weakness*, their *Deadness*, their *Barrenness*. Nor were many of the Saints in the Scripture without such Complaints. And many may cry, *Oh that it were with us as in our former Dayes, in the dayes of our youth!* Complaints of this nature do every where abound, and some are ready to conclude upon this Consideration, that either sincere Holiness is not so growing and *progressive* as is pretended, or that indeed they have no interest therein. Yea the like may be said upon a diligent Observation of others, Churches and single Professors; what Evidence do they give, that the work of Holiness is thriving in them? doth it not appear rather to be *Retrograde* and under a constant Decay?

I shall so far consider and remove this *Objection*, as that the Truth which we have asserted suffer not from it, and so be left as an empty Notion; nor yet those altogether discouraged who come not up unto a full

Sect. 10.

full compliance with it. And this I shall doe in the ensuing Rules and Observations.

(1) *It is one thing what Grace or Holiness is suited unto in its own nature, and what is the Ordinary or Regular way of the procedure of the Spirit in the work of Sanctification according to the tenour of the Covenant of Grace; Another what may occasionally fall out by Indisposition and Irregularity or any other obstructing Interposition in them in whom the work is wrought.* Under the first Consideration the Work is thriving and progressive, in the latter the Rule is liable to sundry Exceptions. A Child that hath a Principle of Life, a good natural Constitution and suitable food, will grow and thrive. But that which hath Obstructions from within, or Distempers and Diseases, or Falls and Bruises, may be weak and thrifles. When we are Regenerate we are as *New-born Babes*, and ordinarily if we have the *sincere milk of the Word* we shall grow thereby. But if we our selves give way to Temptations, Corruptions, Negligences, Conformity to the World, is it any wonder if we are lifeless and thrifles? It suffices to confirm the Truth of what we have asserted, that every one in whom is a Principle of spiritual Life, who is *born of God*, in whom the work of Sanctification is begun, if it be not gradually carryed on in him, if he thrive not in Grace and Holiness, if he go not from *strength to strength*, it is ordinarily from his own sinfull Negligence and Indulgence unto carnal Lusts, or Love of this present World. Considering the time we have had and the Means we have enjoyed, what grown, what flourishing Plants in Faith, Love, Purity, Self-denial, and universal Conformity to Christ might many of us have been, who now are weak, withering, fruitless and sapless, scarce to be distinguished from the *thorns and bryars* of the world? It is time for us rather to be *casting off every weight* and the sin that doth so easily beset us, to be by all means stirring up our selves unto a vigorous Recovery of our first Faith and Love with an abundant growth in them, than to be *complaining* that the work of Holiness doth not go on, and that before our wounds become incurable.

(2) *It is one thing to have Holiness really thriving in any Soul, another for that Soul to know it and to be satisfied in it; and these things may be separated; whereof there are many Reasons.* But before I name them I must premise one necessary Observation; and that is, Whereas this Rule is proposed for the Relief of such as are at a loss about their Condition, and know not whether Holiness be thriving in them or no, that these have no concernment herein, who may at any time if they please give themselves an Account how matters goe with them and on what grounds. For if men do indulge unto any *predominant Lust*, if they live in the neglect of any *known Duty*, or the practice of any *way of Deceit*, if they suffer the World to devour the choicest Increase of their Souls, and *Formality* to eat out the Spirit Vigour and Life of Holy Duties, or any of these in a *remarkable manner*, I have nothing to offer unto them to manifest that Holiness *may thrive* in them although they discern it not. For undoubtedly it doth not do so, nor are they to entertain any hopes but that whilst they abide in such a Condition, it will decay more and more. Such are to be awaked with *violence* like men falling into a deadly *Lethargy*, to be snatched

as brands out of the Fire, to be warned to recover their first Faith and Love, to repent and doe their first works, lest their End should be darkness and sorrow for evermore. But as unto those who walk with God humbly and in sincerity, there may be sundry Reasons given whence it is that Holiness may be *thriving in them*, and yet not be *discerned by them* so to be. And therefore though Holiness be wrought within our selves and only there, yet there may be seasons wherein sincere humble Believers may be obliged to *believe* the encrease and growth of it in them when they perceive it not, so as to be sensible of it. For (1) It being the Subject of so many Gospel-Promises it is a proper Object of Faith, or a thing that is to be believed. The Promises are God's Explanations of the Grace of the Covenant, both as to its nature and the manner of its Operation. And they do not abound in any concernment of it more than this, that those who are partakers of it *shall thrive and grow* thereby. With what Limitations they are bounded, and what is required on our part that we may have them fulfilled towards us, shall be afterwards declared. But their accomplishment depends on God's Faithfulness and not on our sense of it. Where therefore we do not openly lay an Obstruction against it, as in the case now mentioned, we may, we ought to believe that they are fulfilled towards us, although we are not continually *sensible* thereof. And (2) It is our Duty to grow and thrive in Holiness. And what God requires of us, we are to believe that he will help us in, and doth so, whatever be our own present sense and Apprehension. And he who on these grounds can believe the growth of Holiness in himself, though he have no sensible Experience thereof, is in my judgment in as *Good*, and perhaps a more *safe* Condition than he who through the vigorous working of Spiritual Affections is most *sensible* thereof. For it is certain, that such a one doth not by any wilfull Neglect, or Indulgence unto any sin, obstruct the growth of Holiness; for he that doth so cannot believe that it doth thrive in him, or is carried on, whatever his Presumptions may be. And the Life of Faith whereof this is a part is every way a *safe* Life. Besides, such a Person is not in that Danger of a vain Elation of mind, and Carelessness thereon, as others may be. For wherein we live by Faith and not at all by Sense we will be humble and fear alwayes: Such a one not finding in himself the Evidence of what he most desires, will be continually careful that he drive it not further from him. But the Reasons of this Difficulty are:

I. The Work it self, as hath been before declared at large, is *secret and mysterious*; And therefore as in some, I hope in many, there is the *Reality* and Essence of Holiness who yet can find nothing of it in themselves, nor perhaps any one else, but only Jesus Christ who is of quick understanding in the fear of the Lord; so it may in the same *secret manner thrive* as to its degrees in them who yet perceive it not. There is not any thing in our whole Course that we ought to be more awake unto, than a diligent Observation of the *Progress* and *Decayes* of Grace; for as the knowledge of them is of the same importance unto us with that of our Duties, and Comforts, so they are very hardly and difficultly to be discerned; nor will be so truly for our Good and Advantage, without our utmost Diligence and Spiritual Wisdom

Wisdom in their Observation. Hence, as we before observed, it is compared in the Scripture frequently unto the growth of *Plants and Trees*; *Hof. 14. 5, 6. Isa. 44. 3, 4.* Now we know that in those of them which are the most thrifty and flourishing, though we may perceive they are grown, yet we cannot discern their growing. And the Apostle tells us, that as the *outward man perisheth* so the *inward man is renewed day by day*, *2 Cor. 4. 16.* The perishing of the Outward man is by those natural Decays whereby it continually tends unto Death and Dissolution. And we know many of us how hardly these insensible Decays are discerned: Unless some great and violent disease befall us, we rather know that we are enfeebled and weakened by Age and Infirmities, than perceive when or how. So is the Inward man renewed in Grace. It is by such secret Ways and Means as that its Growth and Decays are hardly to be apprehended. And yet he who is negligent in this Enquiry walks at *all peradventures with God*, knowes not whereabout he is in his way, whether he be nearer or further off from his Journeys End, than he was before. Write that man a *fruitless* and a *thrifless* Christian, who calls not himself to an Account about his Encreases and Decays in Grace. *David* knew this work to be of so great Importance as that he would not trust to himself and ordinary Assistances for the discharge of it, but earnestly calls in God to undertake it for him, and to acquaint him with it, *Psal. 139. 23, 24.*

2. There may be some *perplexing Temptations* befall the Mind of a Believer, or some Corruption take advantage to break loose for a season, it may be for a long season, which may much gall the Soul with its suggestions, and so trouble disturb and unquiet it, as that it shall not be able to make a right Judgment of its Grace and Progress in Holiness. A Ship may be so *tossed* in a storm at Sea as that the most skilfull Mariners may not be able to discern whether they make any way in their intended Course and Voyage, whilst they are carryed on with Success and speed. In such cases Grace in its Exercise is principally engaged in an Opposition unto its *Enemy* which it hath to conflict withall; and so its thriving other ways is not discernible. If it should be enquired, how we may discern when Grace is exercised and thrives in *Opposition* unto Corruptions and Temptations; I say, that as great Winds and Storms do sometimes contribute to the *Fruit-bearing* of Trees and Plants, so do Corruptions and Temptations unto the Fruitfulness of Grace and Holiness. The wind comes with violence on the Tree, ruffles its boughs, it may be breaks some of them, beats off its Budds, looseth and shaketh its Roots, and threatens to cast the whole to the ground: But by this means the Earth is opened and loosed about it, and the Tree gets its Roots deeper into the Earth, whereby it receives more and fresh nourishment, which renders it fruitful, though it bring not forth Fruit visibly it may be not till a good while after. In the Assaults of Temptations and Corruptions, the Soul is wofully *ruffled* and disordered, its *Leaves* of Profession are much blasted, and its beginnings of Fruit-bearing much broken and retarded; but in the mean-time it secretly and invisibly casts out its roots of *Humility*, Self-abasement, Mourning, in hidden and continual labouring of Faith and Love after that Grace whereby Holiness doth really increase, and way is made for future visible Fruitfulness. For,

3. God

3. God who in Infinite Wisdom manageth the New Creature or whole Life of Grace by his Spirit, doth so turn the *streams* of it, and so renew and change the especial kinds of its Operations, as that we cannot easily trace his paths therein, and may therefore be often at a loss about it, as not knowing well what He is doing with us. For Instance, it may be the Work of Grace and Holiness hath greatly put forth and evidenced it self in the *Affections* which are renewed by it. Hence Persons have great Experience of Readiness unto, Delight and Cheerfulness in Holy Duties, especially those of Immediate Enter-course with God. For Affections are quick and vigorous for the most part in the Youth of Profession: And the Operations of them being sensible unto them in whom they are, and their Fruits visible, they make Persons seem always *fresh and green* in the wayes of Holiness. But it may be after a while it seems good to the Sovereign Disposer of this Affair to turn as it were the streams of Grace and Holiness into another Channel. He sees that the Exercise of *Humility, Godly Sorrow, Fear, diligent Conflicting* with Temptations, that it may be strike at the very root of Faith and Love, are more needfull for them. He will therefore so order his Dispensations towards them, by *Afflictions, Temptations, Occasions of Life* in the world, as that they shall have new work to doe, and all the Grace they have be turned into a new Exercise. Hereon it may be they find not that sensible vigour in their Spiritual *Affections*, nor that Delight in Spiritual Duties, which they have done formerly. This makes them sometimes ready to conclude that Grace is *decayed* in them, that the Springs of Holiness are drying up, and they know neither where nor what they are. But yet it may be the real Work of *Sanctification* is still thriving and effectually carryed on in them.

(3^{ly}.) It is acknowledged that there may be, that there are in many great *Decayes* in Grace and Holiness; that the work of Sanctification goeth back in them, and that, it may be, universally and for a long season. Many Actings of Grace are lost in such Persons, and the things that remain are ready to dye. This the Scripture abundantly testifieth unto, and giveth us instances of. How often doth God charge his People with *Back-sliding, Barrenness, Decayes* in Faith and Love? And the Experience of the Dayes wherein we live sufficiently confirm the Truth of it. Are there not open and visible Decayes in many, as to the whole Spirit, all the Duties and Fruits of Holiness? Cannot the best among us contribute somewhat to the Evidence hereof from our own Experience? What shall we say then, is there no sincere Holiness where such Decayes are found? God forbid; But we must enquire the Reasons whence this comes to pass, seeing this is contrary to the gradual Progress of Holiness in them that are sanctified, which we have Asserted. And I answer two things unto it:

1. That these Decayes are *Occasional and Preternatural*, as to the true Nature and Constitution of the New Creature, and a disturbance of the Ordinary Work of Grace. They are *Diseases* in our spiritual State, which it is not to be measured by. Are you dead and cold in Duties, backward in Good Works, careless of your Hearts and Thoughts, addicted to the World? These things belong not to the *State of Sanctification* but are Enemies unto it, Sickneses and Diseases

in the Spiritual Constitution of the Persons in whom they are.

2. Although our Sanctification and Growth in Holiness be a Work of the Holy Spirit, as the Efficient Cause thereof, yet is it our own Work also in a way of *Duty*. He hath prescribed unto us what shall be our part, what he expects from us, and requireth of us that the Work may be regularly carryed on unto Perfection, as was before declared. And there are two sorts of things which if we attend not unto in a due Manner, the orderly progress of it will be obstructed and retarded. For

(1) The Power and Growth of any Lust or Corruption and a compliance from them with Temptations which is inseparable from the prevalency of any sin in us, lyes directly against this Progress. If we allow or approve of any such thing in us, if we indulge unto any actings of sin, especially when known and grown frequent, in any one kind, when we neglect the use of the best Means for the constant *Mortification of sin*, which every enlightened Soul understands to be necessary thereunto, there is and will be encreased an universal *decay* in Holiness, and not only in that particular Corruption which is so spared and indulged. A *Disease* in any one of the *Vitals* or principal parts of the Body weakens not only the part wherein it is, but the whole Body it self and vitiates the whole Constitution by a *sympathy* of parts. And any particular Lust indulged unto, vitiates the whole Spiritual Health, and weakens the Soul in all Duties of Obedience.

(2) There are some things required of us to this End, that Holiness may thrive and be carryed on in us. Such are the constant use of all Ordinances and Means appointed unto that End, a due Observance of Commanded Duties in their Season, with a Readiness for the Exercise of every especial Grace in its proper circumstances. Now if we neglect these things, if we walk at all *peradventures* with God, attending neither to Means nor Duties, nor the Exercise of Grace as we should, we are not to wonder if we find our selves Decaying, yea ready to dye. Doth any man wonder to see a person formerly of a sound Constitution grown weak and sickly, if he *openly* neglect all Means of health, and contract all sorts of Diseases by his Intemperance? Is it strange that a Nation should be sick and faint at heart, that *Grey-hairs* should be sprinkled upon it, that it should be poor and decaying, whilst Consuming Lusts with a strange Neglect of all enivigorating Means do prevail in it? No more is it that a Professing people should decay in Holy Obedience whilst they abide in the Neglects expressed.

Having vindicated this Assertion, I shall yet adde a little further Improvement of it. And

1. If the Work of Holiness be such a Progressive thriving Work in its own nature, if the Design of the Holy Ghost in the use of Means be to carry it on in us and encrease it more and more unto a perfect Measure, then is our Diligence still to be continued to the same End and Purpose. For hereon depends our growth and thriving. It is required of us that we give *all Diligence* unto the Encrease of Grace, *2 Pet. 1.* and that we abound therein, *2 Cor. 8. 7. abounding in all Diligence*; and not only so, but that we shew the *same Diligence unto the End*, *Heb. 6. 11.* Whatever Diligence you have used in the attaining or improving of Holiness, abide in it unto the End, or we cast our selves under

under Decayes, and endanger our Souls. If we slack or give over as to our *Duty*, the Work of Sanctification will not be carryed on in a way of *Grace*. And this is required of us, this is expected from us, that our whole Lives be spent in a Course of *diligent Compliance* with the Progressive Work of Grace in us. There are three Grounds on which men doe or may neglect this Duty whereon the Life of their Obedience and all their Comforts do depend.

(1) A Presumption or Groundless Perswasion that they are *already perfect*. This some pretend unto in a proud and foolish Conceit destructive of the whole Nature and Duty of Evangelical Holiness or Obedience. For this on our parts consists in our *willing Compliance* with the Work of Grace *gradually* carryed on unto the measure appointed unto us. If this be already attained, there is an End of *all Evangelical Obedience*, and men return again to the Law unto their Ruine. See *Phil. 3. 12, 13, 14*. It is an excellent Description of the Nature of our Obedience which the Apostle gives us in that place. All Absolute Perfection in this Life is rejected as unattainable. The End proposed is Blessedness and Glory with the Eternal Enjoyment of God, and the Way whereby we press towards it which comprizeth the whole of our Obedience, is by continual uninterrupted *following after, pressing, reaching out*, a constant Progress, in and by our utmost Diligence.

(2) A foolish Supposition that being interested in a state of Grace, we need not now be so solicitous about exact Holiness and Obedience in all things as we were formerly whilest our minds hung in suspense about our Condition. But so much as any one hath this Apprehension or Perswasion prevailing in him, or influencing of him, so much hath he cause deeply to question whether he have yet any thing of Grace or Holiness or no. For this *Perswasion is not of him who hath called us*. There is not a more effectual Engine in the hand of Sathan either to keep us off from Holiness, or to stifle it when it is attained, nor can any thoughts arise in the Hearts of men more opposite to the nature of Grace; For which cause the Apostle rejects it with Detestation: *Rom. 6. 1, 2*.

(3) Weariness and Despondencies arising from Oppositions. Some find so much *difficulty* in, and *Opposition* to the Work of Holiness and its Progress, from the Power of Corruptions, Temptations, and the Occasions of Life in this World, that they are ready to faint and give over this Diligence in Duties and Contending against Sin. But the Scripture doth so abound with Encouragements unto this sort of Persons, as we need not to insist thereon.

CHAP. III.

Believers the only Object of Sanctification, and Subject of Gospel Holiness.

(1) *Believers the only Subject of the Work of Sanctification.* (2) *How men come to believe, if Believers alone receive the Spirit of Sanctification.* (3) *The principal Ends for which the Spirit is promised, with their Order in their Accomplishment.* (4) *Rules to be observed in praying for the Spirit of God, and his Operations therein.* (5) *That Believers only are Sanctified or Holy proved and confirmed.* (6) *Mistakes about Holiness both Notional and Practical discovered.* (7) *The Proper Subject of Holiness in Believers.*

Sect. 1.

THat which we are next to enquire into is the *personal Subject* of this Work of Sanctification; or who and of what sort those Persons are that are made *Holy*. Now these are *All and Only Believers*. All who unfeignedly believe in God through Jesus Christ are sanctified, and no other. Unto them is *Evangelical Holiness* confined. It is for them and them only that our Saviour prays for this Mercy Grace or Privilege; *Joh. 17. 17. Sanctifie them by thy Truth; And concerning them he affirms, for their sakes I sanctifie my self, that they also may be sanctified through the Truth; v. 19.* And whereas in the Verses foregoing he had immediate Respect unto his Apostles and present Disciples, that we may know that neither his Prayer nor this Grace are confined or limited unto them, he addes, *Neither pray I for these alone, that is in this Manner, and for these Ends, but for them also which shall believe on me through their Word, v. 20.* It was therefore the Prayer of our Lord Jesus Christ that all Believers should be sanctified; and so also was it his Promise; *John 7. 38, 39. He that believeth on me as the Scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water; But this he spake of the Spirit which they that believe on him should receive.* And it is with respect principally unto this Work of Sanctification that he is compared unto flowing and living Water as hath been declared before: It is for *Believers, the Church that was in God the Father and in Jesus Christ*, that is by Faith, *1 Theff. 1. 1.* that our Apostle prays, that *the God of Peace would sanctifie them throughout, chap. 5. 23.*

Sect. 2.

But before we proceed to a further Confirmation of this Assertion, an *Objection* of some importance is to be removed out of our way. For on this Supposition that the Spirit of Sanctification is given only unto *Believers*, it may be enquired, How men come so to be. For if we have not the *spirit* untill after we do Believe, then is Faith it self
of

of our selves. And this is that which some plead for; *namely*, that the Gift of the Holy Ghost unto all Ends and Purposes for which he is promised, is *consequential* unto Faith with the Profession and Obedience thereof, being as it were its Reward. See *Crell. de Sp. S. cap. 5.* To this purpose it is pleaded, that the Apostle *Peter* encourageth men unto Faith and Repentance with the Promise that thereon they should receive the Gift of the Holy Ghost, *Acts 2. 38.* And so is that also of our Saviour, *John 14. 17.* that the *World*, that is Unbelievers cannot receive the Spirit of Truth; so that our Faith and Obedience is required as a necessary Qualification unto the receiving of the Holy Ghost; and if they are so absolutely, then are they of *our selves* and not wrought in us by the Grace of God, which is expresse *Pelagianisme.*

Ans. I could dwell long on this Enquiry concerning the especial Subject of the Holy Spirit, seeing the right understanding of many places of Scripture doth depend thereon. But because I have much work yet before me, I will reduce what I have to offer on this Head into as narrow a Compass as possibly I may. In Answer therefore to this Objection I say:

1. That the Holy Spirit is said to be promised and received with respect unto the Ends which he is promised for, and the Effects which he worketh when he is received. For although he be himself but one, *the one and self-same Spirit*, and he *Himself* is promised, given forth and received as we have declared, yet he hath many and *divers Operations.* And as his Operations are *divers*, or several sorts and kinds, so our receiving of him as to the Manner of it is *divers* also, and suited unto the Ends of his Communications unto us. Thus in some sence he is promised unto and received by *Believers*, in another he is promised and received to make men so, or to make them believe. In the first way there may be some Activity of Faith in a way of *Duty*, whereas in the latter, we are *passive*, and receive him only in a way of *Grace.*

2. The chief and principal Ends for which the Holy Spirit is promised and received may be reduced to these *Four Heads.* (1) *Regeneration*, (2) *Sanctification*, (3) *Consolation*, (4) *Edification.* There are indeed very many distinct Operations and Distributions of the Spirit, as I have in part already discovered, and shall yet further go over them in particular Instances. But they may be reduced unto these general Heads, or at least they will suffice to exemplifie the different Manner and Ends of the receiving of the Spirit. And this is the plain Order and Method of these things, as the Scripture both plainly and plentifully testifies. (1) He is promised and received as to the Work of *Regeneration* unto the *Elect*; (2) as to the Work of *Sanctification* unto the *Regenerate*; (3) as to the Work of *Consolation* unto the *Sanctified*; and (4) as unto Gifts for *Edification* unto *Professors*, according to his Sovereign Will and Pleasure.

(1) He is promised unto the *Elect* and received by them as to his Work of *Regeneration.* That this is his Work in us wholly and entirely, I have proved before at large. Hereunto the *Qualifications* of Faith and Obedience are no way required as previously necessary
in

Sect. 3.

in us. In order of Nature our receiving of the Spirit is antecedent to the very *Seed* and Principle of Faith in us, as the Cause is to the Effect, seeing it is wrought in us by him alone; and the Promises concerning the Communications of the Spirit unto this End have been before explained and vindicated. Hereby doth the Holy Ghost prepare an *Habitation* for himself, and make way for all the following Work which he hath to do in us and towards us unto the Glory of God, and the perfecting of our Salvation, or the making of us *meet for the Inheritance of the Saints in Light*, Col. 1. 12.

(2) He is promised and received as a Spirit of *Sanctification* unto and by them that are *Regenerate*; That is unto Believers and onely unto them. This will be fully confirmed immediately. And this puts an Issue to the principall difficulty of the foregoing objection. It is no way inconsistent that Faith should be required previously unto the receiving of the Spirit as a Spirit of *Sanctification*; though it be not so as he is the Author of *Regeneration*. The same Spirit first worketh Faith in us, and then preserveth it when it is wrought. Only to clear the Manner of it we may observe. 1. That Sanctification may be considered two wayes. (1) As to the Original and essential Work of it, which consists in the preservation of the Principle of *spiritual Life* and Holiness communicated unto us in our *Regeneration*. (2) As to those renewed Actual Operations whereby it is carried on, and is gradually progressive as hath been declared. 2. Faith also or believing may be considered in this matter two wayes. (1) As to its Original Communication Infusion or Creation in the Soul, for it is the *gift or work of God*. In this respect, that is, as to the *Seed, Principle* and *Habit* of it, it is wrought in us, as all other Grace is, in *Regeneration*. (2) As to its actings in us, or as unto *Actual Believing* or the Exercise of Faith and the Fruits of it, in a constant Profession and Holy Obedience. Sanctification in the first sence respects Faith also in the first. That is, the Preservation of the Seed, Principle, Grace, Habit of Faith in us, belongs unto the Sanctifying Work of the Holy Spirit. And so Believers only are sanctified. And in the latter sence it respects Faith in the latter also; That is, the progress of the Work of Sanctification in us is accompanied with the Actings and Exercise of Faith. But both wayes Faith is a *necessary Qualification* in and unto them that are sanctified. Believers therefore are the Adequate Subject of the Work of Sanctification, which is all that at present is under our Consideration.

(3) The Spirit is also promised as a *Comforter*, or as a Spirit of Consolation. In this sence or for this End and Work, he is not promised unto them that are *Regenerate* meerly as such. For many may be *Regenerate* who are not capable of Consolation, nor do need it; as Infants who may be and are many of them sanctified from the Womb. Nor is he so promised unto them that are *Believers absolutely*, who have the Grace or Habit of Faith wrought in them; for so many have who are not yet exercised, nor brought into that Condition wherein Spiritual Consolations are either proper or needfull unto them. The Spirit is promised as a Comforter unto Believers, as engaged in the Profession of the Gospel, and meeting with Conflicts inward and outward on the Account thereof. The first Promise of the Holy Ghost

as a *Comforter* was made to the Disciples when their *Hearts were filled with sorrow* on the departure of Christ; and this is the Measure of all others, *John 16. 7.* And this is evident both from the Nature of the thing it self, and from all the Promises which are given concerning him to this End and Purposé. And it will be wholly in vain at any time to apply spiritual Consolations unto any other sort of Persons. All men who have any interest in Christian Religion, when they fall into Troubles and Distresses be they of what sort they will, are ready to enquire after the things that may relieve and refresh them. And whereas there are many things in the Word suited unto the Relief and Consolation of the distressed, they are apt to apply them unto themselves, and others also are ready to comply with them in the same Charitable Office as they suppose. But no true Spiritual Consolation was ever administred by the Word unto any but *Exercised Believers*, however the Minds of men may be for the present a little relieved, and their Affections refreshed by the things that are spoken unto them out of the Word. For the Word is the Instrument of the Holy Ghost; nor hath it any Efficacy but as he is pleased to use it and apply it. And he useth it unto this End and unto no other, as being promised as a Spirit of Consolation only to sanctified Believers. And therefore when Persons fall under spiritual Convictions and Trouble of Mind or Conscience upon the Account of Sin and Guilt, it is not our first work to tender Consolation unto them, whereby many in that Condition are deluded, but to lead them on to Believing, that being justified by Faith they may have peace with God, which is their proper Relief. And in that state God is abundantly willing that they should receive strong Consolation, even as many as fly for Refuge to the Hope that is set before them.

(4) The Spirit of God is promised and received as to *Gifts* for the *Edification* of the Church. This is that which is intended, *Acts 2. 38, 39.* And his whole Work herein we shall consider in its proper place. The Rule and Measure of the Communication of the Spirit for *Regeneration* is Election. The Rule and Measure of the Communication of the Spirit for *Sanctification* is Regeneration. And the Rule and Measure of his Communication as a Spirit of *Consolation*, is Sanctification, with the Afflictions, Temptations and Troubles of them that are sanctified; What then is the Rule and Measure of his Communication as a Spirit of *Edification*? I answer; *Profession* of the Truth of the Gospel and its Worship, with a Call unto the *benefiting* of others, *1 Cor. 12. 7.* And here two Rules must be observed. (1) That he carries not his Gifts for Edification out of the *Pale of the Church*, or Profession of the Truth and Worship of the Gospel. (2) That he useth a Sovereign and not a Certain Rule in this Communication, *1 Cor. 12. 11, 13.* so as that he is not wanting unto any true Professors in proportion to their Calls and Opportunities.

2^{ly}, Whereas the Spirit of *Sanctification* is promised only unto them that are Regenerate and do believe, May we in our Prayers and Supplications for him plead those *Qualifications* as Arguments and Motives for the further Communications of him unto us. *Ans. 1.* We cannot properly plead any *Qualification* in our selves, as though God

Sect. 4.

were

were Obliged with respect unto them, to give a man encrease of Grace *ex congruo* much less *ex condigno*. When we have done all, we are unprofitable Servants. As we begin, so we must proceed with God meely on the Account of Sovereign Grace. 2. We may plead the Faithfulness and Righteousness of God as engaged in his Promises. We ought to pray that he would *not forsake the Work of his own hands*, that he who hath begun the good work in us, would perfect it unto the day of Jesus Christ; that with respect unto his Covenant and Promises he would preserve that *New Creature*, that Divine Nature which he hath formed and implanted in us. 3. Upon a sense of the Weakness of any Grace we may humbly profess our sincerity therein, and pray for its encrease. So cryed the poor man with tears, *Lord I believe, help thou mine unbelief*, *Matth. 9. 24.* And the Apostles in their Prayer, *Lord increase our Faith*, *Luke 17. 5.* owned the Faith they had, and prayed for its encrease by fresh supplies of the Holy Spirit.

Again 3^{ly}, May Believers in Trouble pray for the *Spirit of Consolation* with respect unto their Troubles, it being unto such that he is promised? *Ans.* (1) They may do so directly, and ought so to doe; yea when they do it not it is a sign they turn aside unto *broken Cisterns* that will yield them no Relief. (2) Troubles are of two sorts, *Spiritual* and *Temporal*. Spiritual Troubles are so either *Subjectively*, such as are all inward Darknnesses, and Distresses on the Account of sin; or 2^{ly}, *Objectively*, such are all *Persecutions* for the Name of Christ and the Gospel: It is principally with respect unto these that the Spirit is promised as a *Comforter*, and with regard unto them are we principally to pray for him as so promised. (3) In those outward Troubles which are Common unto Believers with other men, as the death of Relations, Losses of Estate or Liberty, they may and ought to pray for the Spirit as a *Comforter*, that the Consolations of God administred by him, may out-balance their outward Troubles, and keep up their hearts unto other Duties.

4^{ly}, May all Sincere Professors of the Gospel pray for the Spirit with respect unto his *Gifts*, for the Edification of others, seeing unto such he is promised for that End? *Ans.* 1. They may do so but with the ensuing Limitations. (1) They must do it with expresse Submission to the Sovereignty of the *Spirit* himself, who *divideth to every one as he will*. (2) With respect unto that Station and Condition wherein they are placed in the Church by the Providence and call of God. Private persons have no warrant to pray for *Ministerial Gifts*, such as should carry them out of their stations without a Divine Direction going before them. (3) That their *End* be good and right to use them in their respective places unto *Edification*. So ought Parents and Masters of Families, and all Members of Churches, to pray for those *Gifts* of the Spirit whereby they may fill up the Duties of their Places and Relations.

From the Consideration of this *Order* of the Dispensation of the spirit, we may be directed how to *pray* for him, which we are both commanded and encouraged to doe, *Luke 11. 13.* For we are to *pray for him* with respect unto those Ends and Effects for which he is promised: And these are those which are before expresse, with all those particular

particular Instances which may be reduced unto them. We might therefore hence give Direction in some Enquiries, which indeed deserve a larger *Discussion* if our present Design would admit of it; one only I shall instance in.

May a Person who is yet *Unregenerate* pray for the Spirit of *Regeneration* to effect that Work in him? For whereas as such he is promised onely unto the *Elect*, such a Person not knowing his *Election*, seems to have no foundation to make such a Request upon.

Ans. (1) Election is no *Qualification* on our part which we may consider or plead in our Supplications, but only the secret Purpose on the part of God of what himself will doe, and is known unto us only by its Effects. (2) Persons convinced of sin, and a state of sin, may and ought to pray, that God by the Effectual Communications of his Spirit unto them would deliver them from that Condition. This is one way whereby we *flee from the wrath to come*. (3) The especial Object of their Supplications herein is Sovereign Grace, Goodness and Mercy, as declared in and by Jesus Christ. Such Persons cannot indeed plead any *especial Promise* as made unto them. But they may plead for the Grace and Mercy declared in the Promises, as indefinitely proposed unto sinners. It may be they can proceed no further in their Expectations but unto that of the Prophet; *who knoweth if God will come and give a Blessing*; Joel 2. 14. yet is this a sufficient ground and encouragement to keep them waiting at the *Throne of Grace*. So Paul after he had received his *Vision* from Heaven continued in great distress of mind *praying* untill he received the Holy Ghost, *Acts* 9. 11, 17. (4) Persons under such Convictions have really sometimes the *seeds* of Regeneration communicated unto them, and then as they ought, so they will continue in their Supplications for the Encrease and Manifestation of it.

It is evident that by these Observations the foregoing Objection is utterly removed out of the way; and there is no disadvantage ariseth unto the Doctrine of the Free and Effectual Grace of God, by confining this Work of *Sanctification* and Holiness unto *Believers* only. None are sanctified, none are made Holy but those who truly and savingly Believe in God through Jesus Christ; which I shall now further confirm.

(1) *Without Faith it is impossible to please God*, Heb. 11. 6. The Faith discoursed of by the Apostle is that whereby the Fathers *received the Promises, walked with God and obtained the Inheritance*, the Faith of *Abraham*; that is true saving justifying Faith. This Faith constitutes all them in whom it is *true Believers*, and without it it is impossible to please God. Now *Holiness* wherever it is *pleaseth God*, and therefore without Faith it is impossible we should have any interest in it. *This is the Will of God even our Sanctification*, 1 *Thess.* 4. 3. *and walking therein we please God*, v. 7. All that pleaseth God in us, is our Holiness, or some part of it, and it principally consists in an Opposition unto all that displeaseth him. That which he *commands* pleaseth him, and that which he *forbids* displeaseth him; and our Holiness consists in a Compliance with the one, and an Opposition unto the other. Wherefore that any others but Believers should have any thing which really

Sect. 5.

A a a

belongs

belongs unto this *Holiness*, the Apostle declares it to be impossible. Some would except against this sense of the words from the ensuing Reason which the Apostle gives of his Assertion which contains the nature of the Faith intended. *For he that cometh unto God must believe that he is, and that he is a Rewarder of them that diligently seek him.* For this is that, they say, which the Light of Nature directs unto, and therefore there is *no other Faith* necessarily required that a man may please God but only that which is included in the right use and exercise of Natural Reason. But this Exception will no way evade the Force of this Testimony. For the Apostle discourseth concerning such a Coming unto God, and such a Belief in him, as is guided, directed and ingenerated in us, by the *Promises* which it rests upon and is resolved into. Now these Promises all and every one of them, include Jesus Christ with a respect unto him and his Grace. And therefore the Faith intended is that which is *in God through Christ* as revealed and exhibited in the Promises, and this *Coming unto God* is a Fruit and Effect thereof.

(2) Our Lord Jesus Christ affirms that men are sanctified by the Faith that is in him, *Acts 26. 18. That they may receive Forgiveness of sins and an Inheritance among them that are sanctified by the Faith that is in me.* If there were any other way or means whereby men might be sanctified or *made Holy*, he would not have confined it unto the Faith that is in him. At least there is no other way to attain that Holiness which may bring them unto the *Heavenly Inheritance*, or make them meet for it, *Col. 1. 11.* which alone we enquire after. And indeed there can be no greater Contempt cast on the Lord Jesus and on the Duty of Believing in him, whereunto he makes this one of his principal Motives, than to Imagine that *without Faith in him* any one can be made Holy.

(3) Faith is the *Instrumental Cause* of our Sanctification, so that where it is not, no Holiness can be wrought in us. *God purifyeth our hearts by Faith, Acts 15. 9.* and not otherwise. And where the Heart is not purified there is no Holiness. All the Duties in the world will not denominate him Holy whose Heart is not purified; nor will any such Duties be holy themselves seeing unto the *unclean all things are unclean.* All the Obedience that is accepted with God is the Obedience of Faith, *Rom. 1. 7.* thence it springs and therewith is it animated. So is it expressed, *1 Pet. 1. 21, 22. You who by Christ do believe in God, and have purified your souls in obeying the Truth through the Spirit.* It is from Faith in God through Jesus Christ, acting it self in Obedience unto the Gospel, that we *purifie or cleanse our souls* which is our Sanctification. See *Col. 2. 12, 13, 14. Chap. 3. 7, 8, 9, 10, 11.*

(4) All Grace is Originally entrusted in and with Jesus Christ. The Image of God being lost in Adam, whatever was prepared or is used for the Renovation of it in our Natures and Persons, wherein Gospel Holiness doth consist, was to be treasured up in him as the *second Adam*, by whom many are to be made *alive*, who *died* in the first. It pleased the Father that in him all Fulness should dwell, as the *Fullness of the Godhead* in and for his own Divine Personal Subsistence, so the Fulness of all Grace for Supplies unto us; that of *his Fulness we might receive Grace for Grace.* He is made the Head unto the whole

New

New Creation, not only of Power and Rule but of Life and Influence. God hath given him for a *Covenant to the People*, and communicates nothing that belongs properly to the *Covenant of Grace*, as our Sanctification and Holiness doe, unto any but in and through him. And we receive nothing by him but by vertue of *Relation* unto him, or especial Interest in him, or union with him. Where there is an especial Communication, there must be an especial Relation whereon it doth depend, and whence it doth proceed. As the Relation of the Members unto the Head is the Cause and Means why *Vital spirits* are thence derived unto them. We must be in Christ as the *Branch is in the Vine* or we can derive nothing from him. *Joh. 15. 4. As the branch cannot bear fruit of it self except it abide in the Vine, no more can ye except ye abide in me.* Whatever any way belongeth unto Holiness is *our Fruit*, and nothing else is Fruit but what belongeth thereunto. Now this our Saviour affirms that we can bring forth *nothing* of, unless we are in him, and do abide in him. Now our being in Christ and abiding in him is by Faith; without which we can *derive* nothing from him, and consequently never be partakers of Holiness in the least Degree. But these things must be afterwards spoken unto more at large. It is therefore undenyably evident that *Believers only* are sanctified and Holy, all others are unclean, nor is any thing they doe *Holy*, or so esteemed of God.

And the due Consideration hereof discovers many pernicious mistakes that are about this matter, both *Notional* and *Practical*. For (1) There are some who would carry Holiness beyond the *Bounds* of an especial *Relation* unto Christ; or would carry that Relation beyond the only *Bond* of it, which is *Faith*. For they would have it to be no more than *Moral Honesty* or *Vertue*, and so cannot with any Modesty deny it unto *those Heathens* who endeavoured after them according to the Light of Nature. And what need then is there of Jesus Christ? I can and doe commend Morall Vertues and Honesty as much as any man ought to doe, and am sure enough there is no Grace where they are not; yet to make any thing to be our *Holiness* that is not derived from Jesus Christ, I know not what I do more abhorre. An Imagination hereof dethrones Christ from his Glory, and overthrowes the whole Gospel. But we have a sort of men who plead that *Heathens* may be *eternally* saved, so large and indulgent is their Charity, and in the mean time endeavour by all means possible to destroy *temporally* at least all those Christians who stoop not to a compliance with all their Imaginations. (2) Others there are who proceed much further and yet do but deceive themselves in the Issue. Notions they have of *good and evil* by the Light of Nature. As they come with men into the world, and grow up with them as they come to the Exercise of their Reason, so they are not stifled without offering violence to the Principles of Nature by the power of sin; as it comes to pass in many, *Ephes. 4. 19. 1 Tim. 4. 2. Rom. 1. 31. Chap. 2. 14, 15.* These Notions therefore are in many improved in Process of time by *Convictions* from the Law; and great Effects are produced hereby. For where the Soul is once effectually convinced of Sin Righteousness and Judgement, it cannot but endeavour after a Deliverance

Sect. 6.

from the one, and an Attainment of the other; that so it may be well with it at the Last Day. And here lye the Springs or Foundations of all the Morall Differences that we see amongst Mankind. Some give themselves up unto all Abominations, Lasciviousness, Uncleaness, Drunkenness, Frauds, Oppressions, Blasphemies, Persecutions, as having no bounds fixed unto their Lusts, but what are given them by their own Impotency, or dread of Humane Laws. Others endeavour to be Sober, Temperate, Just, Honest, and Upright in their dealings, with a sedulous performance of Religious Duties. This difference ariseth from the different Power and Efficacy of Legal Convictions upon the Minds of men. And these Convictions are in many variously improved according to the Light they receive in the Means of Knowledge which they do enjoy, or the Errors and *Superstitions* which they are misguided unto. For on this latter account do they grow up in some, into *Penances, Vowes*, uncommanded *Abstinencies*, and various Self-macerations; with other painfull and costly Duties. Where the Light they receive is in the generall according unto Truth, there it will engage men into Reformation of Life, a Multiplication of Duties, Abstinence from sin, Profession, Zeal, and a Cordial Engagement into one way or other in Religion. Such Persons may have *good Hopes* themselves that they are Holy, they may appear to the World so to be, and be accepted in the Church of God as such, and yet really be utter strangers from true *Gospel Holiness*. And the Reason is, because they have missed it in the Foundation; and not having in the first place obtained an Interest in Christ, have built their house on the sand, whence it will fall in the time of trouble. If it be said, that all those who come up unto the Duties mentioned are to be *esteemed* Believers, if therewith they make Profession of the true Faith of the Gospel, I willingly grant it. But if it be said, that *necessarily they are so* indeed, and in the sight of God, and therefore are also sanctified and Holy, I must say the contrary is expressly denyed in the Gospel, and especial Instances given thereof.

Wherefore let them wisely consider these things who have any Conviction of the Necessity of Holiness. It may be they have done much in the pursuit of it, and have laboured in the Duties that *materially* belong unto it. Many things they have *done*, and many things *forborn*, upon the Account of it; and still continue so to doe. It may be they think that for all the World they would not be found among the number of *unholy persons* at the Last Day. This may be the Condition of some, perhaps of many, who are but yet young, and but newly engaged into these wayes upon their Convictions. It may be so with them who for many dayes and years have been so following after a Righteousness in a way of Duty. But yet they meet with these two evils in their wayes. (1) That Duties of Obedience seldom or never prove more *ease, familiar* or pleasant unto them, than they did at first, but rather are more *grievous* and burdensome every day. (2) That they never come up unto a *satisfaction* in what they doe, but still find that there is somewhat wanting. These make all they do burdensome and unpleasant unto them, which at length will betray them into Backsliding and Apostasie. But yet there is somewhat worse behind; All they have done, or are ever able to doe on the bottom upon which

which they stand, will come to no Account, but perish with them at the great Day. Would we prevent all these fatal evils, would we engage in a reall, thriving, everlasting Holiness, let our first business be to secure a Relation unto Jesus Christ, without which nothing of it will ever be attained.

To close this discourse, I shall only from it obviate a *putid Calumny* cast by the *Papists*, *Quakers* and others of the same Confederacy against the Grace of God, upon the Doctrine of the *free Justification* of a sinner, through the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ. For with a *shameless Impudence* they clamour on all by whom it is asserted, as those who maintain Salvation to be attained through a meer *External Imputation* of Righteousness, whilest those so saved are *unclean* and *unholy*, as the *Quaker*, or negligent of the Duties of Righteousness and Obedience, as the *Papists* and others slanderously report. For the *frontless impudence* of this Calumny is sufficiently evident from hence, that as we assert *Sanctification* and *Holiness* to be peculiar only unto Believing justified Persons, that is that Faith and Holiness are inseparable habitually or actually or in both regards; so in like manner that all such Persons are *infallibly sanctified* and made Holy.

All Believers and only Believers being sanctified and made Holy, *What it is* that is sanctified in them, or what is the *proper Seat and Subject* of this Work, is in the next place to be declared. For it is not a meer *External Denomination* as things were called Holy under the Old Testament, nor any *transient Act*, nor any *series* or Course of Actions that we plead about; but that which hath, as a *reall Being* and *Existence*, so a *constant abiding* or Residence in us. Hence he that is Holy is always so, whether he be in the *Actual Exercise* of the Duties of Holiness or no; though an Omission of any of them in their proper season is contrary unto and an impeachment of Holiness, as to its Degrees. Now this *subject* of Sanctification is the *Entire Nature* or *whole Person* of a Believer. It is not any one Faculty of the Soul or Affection of the Mind, or Part of the Body that is sanctified, but the *whole Soul* and *Body*, or the entire Nature of every Believing Person. And hereby is the Work of *Sanctification* really distinguished from any other *meer common Work* which may represent it, or pretend unto it. For all such Works are *partiall*; either they are in the Mind only by Light and Notions of Truth, or on the Affections only in Zeal and Devotion, or on the Mind and Conscience in the Convictions of Sin and Duty, but further they proceed not. But true Holiness consists in the Renovation of our whole Persons, which must be demonstrated.

Sect. 7.

(1) That our entire Nature was Originally created in the *Image* of God I have proved before, and it is by all acknowledged. Our *whole Souls*, in the Rectitude of all their *Faculties* and Powers in order unto the Life of God and his Enjoyment, did bear this Image. Nor was it confined unto the Soul only. The *Body* also, not as to its shape figure or natural use, but as an *Essential part* of our Natures, was interested in the Image of God by a Participation of Original Righteousness. Hence the whole Person was a meet Principle for the Communication

munication of this Image of God unto others, by the means of Natural Propagation, which is an act of the entire Person. For a Person created and abiding in the Image of God, begetting another in his own Image and Likeness, had by vertue of the Covenant of Creation begotten him in the Image of God also; that is, had communicated unto him a *Nature upright and pure*.

(2) By the Entrance of sin this Image of God, so far as it was our Righteousness and Holiness before him, was utterly defaced and Lost. This also I have sufficiently evidenced before. It did not depart from any one Power, Part, or Faculty of our Souls, but from our whole Nature. Accordingly the Scripture describes (1) the Depravation of our Natures distinctly in all the Powers of it. In particular the Corruption that ensued on our Minds, Wills and Affections upon the loss of the Image of God, I have before declared and vindicated. And (2) in reference unto the first *Actings* of all these Faculties in things Moral and Spiritual, the Scripture adds that all the *Thoughts and Imaginations of our Hearts are evil and that continually*, Gen. 6. 5. All the Original first *Actings* of the Powers of our Souls in or about things Rational and Morall are alwayes evil. *For an evil tree cannot bring forth good fruit*. That which is lame and distorted, can act nothing that is straight and regular. Hence (3) All the *Outward Actions* of Persons in this State and Condition are evil, unfruitfull works of Darknes. And not only so but the Scripture (4) in the Description of the Effects of this Depravation of our Nature, calls in the *Body* and the members of it unto a *partnership* in all this Obliquity and Sin. *The members of the Body are Servants unto Uncleanness and Iniquity*, Rom. 6. 19. And the engagement of them all in the Course and *Actings* of Depraved Nature is particularly declared by our Apostle out of the *Psalmist*, Rom. 3. 12, 13, 14, 15. *They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable, there is none that doth good no not one. Their throat is an open sepulchre, with their tongues they have used deceit, the poyson of Asps is under their lips, whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness, their feet are swift to shed blood, in all wayes of evil*.

This being the State of our whole Nature in its Depravation, our Sanctification, wherein alone its *Reparation* in this Life doth consist, must equally respect the whole. Some suppose that it is our *Affections* only in their Deliverance from corrupt Lusts and Prejudices, with their direction unto Heavenly Objects, that are the *Subject* of this Work. For the *Mind* or rational Intellectual Power of the Soul, is in its self they say pure, noble, untainted, and needs no other Aid but to be delivered from the *Prejudices* and Obstructions of its Operations, which are cast upon it by the Engagements and Inclinations of corrupt Affections, and a vitious course of Conversation in the World, received by *uninterrupted Traditions from our Fathers*; from whence it is not able to extricate or deliver it self, without the Aid of Grace. But they have placed their Instance very unhappily. For among all things that belong unto our Nature, there is not any one which the Scripture so chargeth this *Depravation* of it upon, as the *Mind*. This in particular is said to be *fleshly*, to be *Enmity* against God, to be filled with *Vanity*, Folly and Blindness, as we have at large before evinced. Nor is there any thing concerning which the *Work of Sanctification*
and

and *Renovation* is so expressly affirmed as it is concerning the Mind. It is declared by the *Renovation of our Minds*, Rom. 12. 2. or *being Renewed in the spirit of our Minds*, Ephes. 4. 23. that we put on the *New man that is renewed in knowledge*, Col. 3. 10. with other Expressions of the like nature. It is therefore our *Entire Nature* that is the Subject of Evangelical Holiness; For to manifest in particulars.

(1) Hence it is called the *New Man*, Ephes. 4. 24. *Put on the New Man, which after God is created in Righteousness and Holiness*. As the Principle of Sin and corrupted Nature in us is called the *Old Man* for no other Reason but that it possesseth all the Active Powers of the whole Man, so that he neither doth nor can do any thing but what is influenced thereby; so this Principle of Holiness in us, the *Renovation of our Natures* is called the *New Man*, because it possesseth the whole Person with respect unto its proper Operations and Ends. And it extends it self as large as the *Old Man* or the Depravation of our Natures, which takes in the whole Person Soul and Body with all their Faculties and Powers.

(2) The *Heart* in the Scripture is taken for the *whole Soul* and all the Faculties of it, as they are one Common Principle of all Morall Operations; as I have proved before: Whatever therefore is wrought in and upon the *Heart* under this Consideration, is wrought upon the whole Soul. Now this is not only said to be affected with this Work of *Sanctification*, or to have Holiness wrought in it, but the principal Description that is given us of this Work, consists in this, that therein and thereby a *New Heart* is given unto us or created in us, as it is expressed in the Promise of the Covenant. This therefore can be nothing but the possessing of all the Powers and Faculties of our Souls with a New Principle of Holiness and Obedience unto God.

(3) There is especial mention made of the effecting of this Work on our *Souls* and *Bodies* with their *Powers* and *Faculties* distinctly. This I have already proved in the Declaration of the Work of our *Regeneration* or *Conversion* to God, which is only preserved, cherished, improved, and carried on to its proper End in our *Sanctification*. The Nature also of that spiritual *Light* which is communicated unto our Minds, of *Life* unto our Wills, of *Love* unto our Affections, hath been declared. Therefore doth it follow thence unavoidably that the whole Person is the Subject of this Work, and that *Holiness* hath its residence in the whole Soul entirely.

(4) We need goe no further for the proof hereof than unto that Prayer of the Apostle for the *Thessalonians* which we insisted on at the beginning of this Discourse, 1 *Thess.* 5. 23. *The God of Peace himself sanctifie you ὁλοτελεῖς, throughout*; that is, in your whole Natures or Persons, in all that you are and doe, that you may not in this or that part but be every whit clean and Holy throughout. And to make this the more evident that we may know *what it is* which he prayes may be sanctified, and thereby preserved blameless to the coming of Christ, he distributes our whole Natures into the two Essential parts of *Soul* and *Body*. And in the former he considereth two things, (1) the *Spirit*, (2) the *Soul* peculiarly so called. And this distinction frequently occurs in the Scripture, wherein that by the *Spirit* the *Mind* or Intellectual Faculty is understood, and by the *Soul* the Affections, is generally

Fieri non potest
ut sanctificatio
Spiritu non sit
sanctum etiam
Corpus, quo san-
ctificatus uti-
tur Spiritus.
August. lib. de
Bono Viduitat.

generally acknowledged, and may evidently be proved. These therefore the Apostle prays may be *sanctified* and *preserved* Holy throughout and entirely, and that by the Infusion of an Habit of Holiness into them, with its Preservation and Improvement, whereof more afterwards. But this is not all. Our *Bodies* are an *Essential* part of our Natures, and by their union with our Souls are we constituted *individual Persons*. Now we are the Principles of all our Operations, as we are *Persons*; Every Moral Act we do, is the Act of the whole Person. The *Body* therefore is concerned in the Good and Evil of it. It became a subject of the Depravation of our Nature by Concomitancy and Participation; and is considered as one entire Principle with the Soul of communicating Original Defilement from Parents unto Children. Besides it is now subject in that Corruption of its Constitution which it is fallen under as a punishment of sin, unto many disorderly Motions that are Incentives and Provocations unto sin. Hence sin is said to *reign in our mortal Bodies*, and our *Members to be servants unto unrighteousness*, Rom. 6. 12. 19. Moreover by its Participation in the Defilement and Punishment of sin, the *Body* is disposed and made obnoxious unto *Corruption* and Destruction. For Death entred by Sin and no otherwise. On all these Accounts therefore it is necessary on the other hand, that the *Body* should be interested in this Work and Priviledge of Sanctification and Holiness. And so it is (1) By *Participation*. For it is our Persons that are sanctified and made Holy, (*sanctifie them throughout*); and although our Souls are the *first proper Subject* of the infused Habit or Principle of Holiness, yet our *Bodies* as essential parts of our Natures are *Partakers* thereof. (2) By a *peculiar Influence* of the Grace of God upon them also, as far as they have any influence into Moral Operations. For the Apostle tells us, that our *Bodies* are *Members* of Christ, 1 Cor. 3. 15. and so consequently have influences of Grace from him as our Head. (3) In the Work of Sanctification the Holy Ghost comes and *dwells in us*. And hereon *our Bodies are the Temple of the Holy Ghost which is in us*, 1 Cor. 3. 19. And the Temple of God is Holy; although I confess this rather belongs unto the *Holiness* of *peculiar Dedication* unto God, whereof we shall treat afterwards. And hereby (1) are the *Parts and Members of the Body* made Instruments and *Servants of Righteousness* unto Holiness, Rom. 6. 19. do become meet and fit for to be used in the Acts and Duties of Holiness, as being made *clean* and sanctified unto God. (2) Hereby are they disposed and prepared unto a *blessed Resurrection* at the Last Day, which shall be wrought by the Spirit of Christ which dwelt in them and sanctified them in this Life, Rom. 8. 10, 11. Phil. 3. 20, 21. 2 Cor. 4. 14, 16, 17.

Our whole *Persons* therefore and in them our whole Natures are the Subject of this Work, and true Holiness invests the whole of it. Now whether this universal Investiture of our Nature in all the Faculties and Powers of it, by a new Principle of Holiness and Obedience unto God, whereby it is renewed unto his Image, do belong unto that *Morall Vertue* which some so plead for as to substitute it in the Room of *Gospel-Holiness*, they may do well to consider who are the Patrons of that Cause. For if it doth not, then doth not it self belong unto that *Holiness* which the Gospel teacheth, requireth, promiseth and communicates, whatever

whatever else it be. And moreover, it is practically worthy consideration that men deceive not themselves with a *partial* work in Conviction only, or Change of the Affections also, in stead of this Evangelical Sanctification. It is often and truly spoken unto, how men may have their Minds enlightened, their Affections wrought upon, and their Lives much changed, and yet come short of reall Holiness. The best tryal of this Work is by its *Universality* with respect unto its Subject. If any thing remain unsanctified in us sin may there set up its Throne and maintain its Sovereignty. But where this Work is true and reall however weak and imperfect it may be as unto its Degrees, yet it possesseth the whole Person, and leaveth not the least hold unto sin, wherein it doth not continually combat and conflict with it. There is saving Light in the Mind, and Life in the Will, and Love in the Affections, and Grace in the Conscience suited to its Nature; there is nothing in us whereunto the Power of Holiness doth not reach according to its measure. Men may therefore if they please deceive themselves by taking up with some *Notions* in their Minds, some *Devotions* in their Affections, or some good and vertuous Deeds in their Conversations, but Holiness doth not consist therein.

And Lastly, men may hence see how vainly they excuse themselves in their Sins, their Passions, *Intemperances* and the like disorders of Mind, from their Constitutions and Inclinations; for true *Sanctification* reacheth unto the Body also. It is true, Grace doth not so change the natural Constitution as to make him that was *sickly*, *healthy* and strong; nor so as to make him who was *Melancholy*, to be *Sanguine* or the like; it altereth not the course of the Blood, the animal spirits, with the Impressions they make on our Minds. But consider these things *Morally*, and as the whole Person is a Principle of Spiritual and Moral Operations, and so it doth work that Change and Alteration on the whole Person, as to cure *Morally* *sinfull distempers*, as of Passion, Elation of Mind, and Intemperancies, which men were before more than ordinarily inclined unto by their Tempers and Constitutions. Yea from the Efficacy of it upon our whole Persons, in the curing of such habitual inordinate and sinfull distempers, lyes the principal discovery of its Truth and Reality. Let no men therefore pretend that Grace and Holiness do not change mens *Constitutions*, thereby to excuse and palliate their disorderly Passions before men, and to keep themselves from being humbled for them before God. For although it do not so *naturally* and *physically*, yet it doth so *Morally*, so that the Constitution it self shall be no more such a *fomes* and Incentive unto disorderly Passions, as it hath been. If Grace hath not cured that Passion, Pride, Causeless Anger, Inveterate Wrath, Intemperance, which mens Constitutions peculiarly incline unto, I know not for my part what it hath done, nor what a number of outward Dutyes do signifie. The Spirit and Grace of Christ causeth *the Wolf to dwell with the Lamb, and the Leopard to lye down with the Kid, Isa. 11. 6.* It will change the most wild and savage Natures into Meekness, Gentleness and Kindness; Examples whereof have been multiplied in the World.

CHAP. IV.

The Defilement of Sin wherein it consists, with its Purification.

(1) *Purification the first proper Notion of Sanctification.* (2) *Institution of Baptisme confirming the same Apprehension.* (3) *A Spiritual Defilement and Pollution in Sin.* (4) *The Nature of that Defilement, or wherein it doth consist.* (5) *Depravations of Nature and Acts with respect unto Gods Holiness, How and Why called Filth and Pollution.* (6) *Two-fold Pravity and Defilement of Sin. Its Aggravations. We cannot purge it of our selves; nor could it be done by the Law, nor by any Wayes invented by men for that End.*

Sect. I.

THese things being premised, we proceed to the Consideration of *Sanctification* it self, in a further Explication of the *Description* before given. And the first thing we ascribe unto the Spirit of God herein, which constitutes the first part of it, is the *Purifying and cleansing of our Natures from the Pollution of Sin.* Purification is the first proper Notion of *internal* real Sanctification. And although in *order of Time* it do not precede the other Acts and parts of this Work, yet in *order of Nature* it is first proposed and apprehended. To be *unclean* absolutely, and to be *Holy*, are universally opposed. Not to be purged from sin, is an Expression of an *unholy Person*, as to be cleansed is of him that is *holy*. And this Purification or the effecting of this Work of Cleansing is ascribed unto all the Causes and Means of Sanctification. As (1) unto the *Spirit* who is the principal Efficient of the whole. Not that Sanctification consists wholly herein, but firstly and necessarily it is required thereunto; *Prov. 30. 12. Ezek. 36. 25. I will sprinkle clean water upon you, and you shall be clean, from all your filthiness and from all your Idols will I cleanse you.* That *this sprinkling of clean Water upon us*, is the Communication of the Spirit unto us for the End designed, I have before evinced. It hath also been declared wherefore he is called *Water* or compared thereunto. And the next Verse shews expressly that it is the Spirit of God which is intended. *I will put my Spirit within you and cause you to walk in my Statutes.* And that which he is thus in the first place promised for, is the *Cleansing of us* from the Pollution of sin, which in order of Nature is preposed unto his enabling us to *walk in Gods Statutes*, or to yield holy Obedience unto him.

To the same purpose among many others is that Promise, *Isa. 4. 4. When the Lord shall have washed away the filth of the Daughters of Zion, and shall have purged the blood of Hierusalem, by the Spirit of Judgment and*
the

the Spirit of Burning. Upon what ground the Spirit is compared to Fire and thence here called a Spirit of Burning hath been also declared. In brief, Fire and Water were the Means whereby all things were purified and cleansed Typically in the Law, Numb. 31. 23. And the Holy Spirit being the principal Efficient Cause of all spiritual cleansing is compared to them both, by which his Work was signified, and called by their names. See Mal. 3. 2, 3. And Judgment is frequently taken for Holiness. The Spirit of Judgment therefore and the Spirit of Burning is the Spirit of Sanctification and Purification. And he is here promised for the Sanctification of the Elect of God. And how shall he effect this Work? He shall do it in the first place by washing away their filth and purging away their blood; that is, all their spiritual sinfull Defilements.

(2) The Application of the Death and Blood of Christ unto our Souls for our Sanctification by the Holy Ghost, is said to be for our cleansing and purging, Ephes. 5. 26, 27. Christ loved the Church and gave himself for it, that he might sanctifie and cleanse it with the washing of Water by the Word; He gave himself that he might redeem us from all Iniquity and purifie unto himself a peculiar people zealous of Good Works, Tit. 2. 14. For the Blood of Jesus Christ cleanseth us from all our sins, 1 Joh. 1. 7. For he loved us and washed us from our sins in his own Blood, Rev. 1. 5. The Blood of Jesus Christ purgeth our Consciences from dead works to serve the living God, Heb. 9. 14. Respect I acknowledge in some of these places may be had unto the Expiation of the Guilt of sin by the Blood of Christ as offered in Sacrifice, for so in himself he purged our sins, Heb. 1. 3. But as they all suppose a Defilement in sin, so the most of them respect its cleansing by the Application of the Vertue of the Blood of Christ unto our Souls and Consciences in our Sanctification.

And (3) moreover where Sanctification is enjoined us as our Duty it is prescribed under this Notion of cleansing our selves from sin. Wash you, make you clean, Isa. 1. 16. O Jerusalem wash thine Heart from wickedness that thou mayest be saved, Jer. 4. 14. Having therefore these promises let us cleanse our selves from all filthiness of the flesh and the spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God, 2 Cor. 7. 1. Every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself; 1 Joh. 3. 3. Psal. 119. 9. 2 Tim. 2. 20. and the like Expressions of this Duty occur in other places.

(4) Answerable unto these Promises and Precepts and in the Confirmation of them we have the Institution of the Ordinance of Baptisme, the Outward way and Means of our Initiation into the Lord Christ and the Profession of the Gospel, the great Representation of the Inward washing of Regeneration, Tit. 3. 5. Now this Baptisme in the First place expresseth the outward putting away the filth of the flesh, by external washing with material water, 1 Pet. 3. 21. And that which answers hereunto can be in nothing but the inward purifying of our Souls and Consciences by the Grace of the Spirit of God; that is, faith our Apostle, the putting off the Body of the sins of the flesh, Col. 2. 11. which contains the whole Defilement and Corruption of sin. And this also was typed out unto us by all the Legal Purifications of Old. Wherefore we shall do three things in the Explication of this

Sect. 2.

first Branch of our Sanctification. (1) Shew, *That there is a spiritual Pollution and Defilement in Sin.* (2) Declare *What it is, or wherein it doth consist:* And (3) *Manifest how it is removed or washed away,* and Believers made *Holy* thereby.

Sect. 3.

For the First, it needs not much to be insisted on. Our Minds and their Conceptions are in these things to be regulated by *Divine Revelations* and Expressions. And in the whole Representation made unto us in the Scripture, of the Nature of Sin, of our Concernment therein, of the Respect of God towards us on the Account thereof; of the Way and Means whereby we may be delivered from it; there is nothing so much inculcated, as its being *filthy, abominable, full of defilement and pollution*, which is set forth both in the plain Expressions and various Similitudes. On the Account hereof is it said to be abhorred of God, *the abominable thing which his Soul hateth*, which he cannot behold, which he cannot but hate and detest, and is compared to Blood, Wounds, Sores, Leprosie, Scum, loathsome Diseases. With respect hereunto is it so frequently declared that we must be washed, purged, purified, cleansed, as in the Testimonies before cited; before we can be accepted with him, or be brought to the Enjoyment of him. And the work of the Spirit of Christ in the Application of his Blood unto us for the taking away of sin, is compared to the Effects of *Fire, Water, Sope, Nitre*, every thing that hath a purifying cleansing Faculty in it. These things so frequently occur in the Scripture and Testimonies concerning them are so multiplied that it is altogether needless to produce particular Instances. This is evident and undenyable, that the Scripture which regulates our Conceptions about spiritual things, expressly declares all sin to be *uncleanness*, and every sinner to be defiled thereby, and all unsanctified persons to be wholly unclean; and how far these Expressions are *Metaphorical*, or wherein the *Metaphor* doth consist, must be afterwards declared.

Besides, there is no Notion of Sin and Holiness whereof Believers have a more sensible spiritual *Experience*. For although they may not, or do not comprehend the *Metaphysical Notion* or Nature of this Pollution and Defilement of Sin, yet they are sensible of the *Effects* it produceth in their Minds and Consciences. They find *That* in sin which is attended with *shame* and self-Abhorrency and requires deep Abasement of Soul. They discern in it or in themselves on the Account of it, an unsuitableness unto the Holiness of God, and an unfitness thereon for Communion with him. Nothing do they more earnestly labour after in their Prayers and Supplications than a cleansing from it by the Blood of Christ; nor are any Promises more precious unto them, than those which express their *Purification* and *purging* from it. For these are they which next unto their Interest in the Attonement made by the Sacrifice of Christ, give them boldness in their approaches unto God. So our Apostle fully expresseth it, *Heb. 10. 19, 20, 21, 22. Having therefore boldness to enter into the Holiest by the Blood of Jesus, by a New and Living Way which he hath consecrated for us through the Veil that is to say his flesh, and having an High Priest over the House of God, let us draw near with a true Heart in full Assurance of Faith, having our Hearts sprinkled from an evil Conscience and our Bodies washed with*
pure

pure Water. The Foundation of all our Confidence in our Access unto God, the Right and Title we have to approach unto him is laid in the *Blood of Christ*, the Sacrifice he offered, the Attonement he made, and the Remission of sins which he obtained thereby, which Effect of it he declares, *v. 19. Having boldness by the Blood of Jesus.* The way of our Access is by pleading an Interest in his Death and Suffering, whereby an Admission and Acceptance is consecrated for us, *v. 20. by a new and living way which he hath consecrated.* And our encouragement to make use of this Foundation, and to engage in this Way, is taken from his discharge of the Office of an High-Priest in our behalf. And *having an High Priest over the House of God let us draw near.*

But besides all this, when we come to an Actual Address unto God, that we may make use of the *Boldness* given us in the full Assurance of Faith, it is moreover required that our *hearts be sprinkled and our bodies washed*; that is that our whole Persons be *purified* from the Defilement of sin by the Sanctification of the Spirit. And this Experience of Believers, we cannot only oppose unto, and plead against the stupidity of such Persons by whom these things are derided, but conclude from it, that those who are unacquainted with it in some Degree of sincerity, are wholly uninterested in that *Evangelical Holiness* which we enquire after. We need not therefore further labour in the Confirmation of that concerning which the *Testimonies* of Scripture are so multiplied, and whereof we have such undoubted Experience.

Secondly; *The Nature of this Defilement of Sin* must be enquired into. *Ans. (1)* By some it is reckoned unto *Guilt*. For whereas the inseparable Effects of Guilt, are *Shame* and *Fear*, whereby it immediately evidenced it self in our first Parents, and shame in particular is from this *filth of sin*, it may be esteemed an *Adjunct* thereof. Hence sin was said to be *purged by Sacrifices* when its Guilt was expiated: And Christ is said to *purge our sins by himself*, that is when he offered himself a Sacrifice for us, *Heb. 1. 3.* And therefore it is granted that so far as the Filth of sin was taken away, not by *Actual Purification* but by *Legal Expiation*, it is sin with its Guilt that was intended. But the Scripture as we have shewed intendeth more hereby, even such an *internal inherent Defilement* as is taken away by *real actual Sanctification* and no otherwise. *(2)* There are some especial sins which have a *peculiar Pollution* and Defilement attending them, and which thereon are usually called *uncleanness* in a peculiar manner. The ground hereof is in that of the Apostle, *1 Cor. 6. 18. Flee Fornication. Every sin that a man doth is without the Body: but he that committeth Fornication sinneth against his own Body*; All sins of that Nature have a peculiar Defilement and filth accompanying them. And Holiness is sometimes mentioned in an Opposition unto this especial Pollution, *1 Theff. 4. 3.* But yet this is not that which we enquire after, although it be included in it, as one especial kind of it. That we now consider alwayes inseparably attends *every sin* as sin, as an *Adjunct* or *Effect* of it. It is the *uncleanness of all sin* and not the *sin of uncleanness* which we intend. And for the discovery of its proper Nature we may observe:

Sect. 4.

- (1) That the Pollution of Sin is that Property of it whereby it is directly

directly opposed unto the *Holiness of God*, and which God expresseth his Holiness to be contrary unto. Hence he is said to be of *purser eyes than to behold iniquity or to look on evil*, *Hab. 1. 13.* It is a thing vile and loathsome under the Eyes of his Holiness, *Psal. 5. 4, 5, 6.* So speaking concerning it he useth that *pathetical Dehortation*, *O do not that abominable thing which my soul hateth*; *Jerem. 44. 4.* and with respect unto his own Holiness it is, that he sets it forth by the names of all things which are vile, filthy, loathsome, offensive, every thing that is Abominable. It is so to him as he is infinitely Pure and Holy in his own Nature. And that Consideration which ingenerates *shame* and self-Abhorrency on the Account of the Defilement of sin, is taken peculiarly from the *Holiness of God*. Hence it is that Persons are so often said to *blush*, to be *ashamed*, to be filled with *Confusion of Face*, to be *vile*, to be *Abased* in their own sight, under a Sense and Apprehension of this filth of sin.

(2) The Holiness of God is the Infinite Absolute Perfection and Rectitude of his Nature, as the Eternal Original Cause and Pattern of Truth, Uprightness and Rectitude in all. And this Holiness doth God exert as in all he doth naturally and necessarily, so particularly in his *Law*, which is therefore Good, Holy and Perfect, because it represents the Holiness of God which is impressed on it. God might not have made any Creature nor given a Law, which are free Acts of his Will. But on supposition he would do so, it was absolutely necessary from his own Nature that this *Law of his should be Holy*. And therefore whatever is contrary unto or different from the Law of God, is so unto and from the Holiness of God himself. Hence it follows,

(3) That this Defilement and Pollution of Sin is that *Pravity, Disorder and shamefull Crookedness that is in it, with respect unto the Holiness of God as expressed in the Law*.

Sin is either Original or Actual. Original sin is the Habitual Inconformity of our Natures unto the *Holiness of God* expressed in the Law of Creation. Actual sin is our Inconformity to God and his Holiness expressed in the *particular Commands of the Law*: The Nature of all sin therefore consists in its *Enmity*, its *Inconformity* to the Rule. Now this Rule, which is the Law, may be considered two wayes, which give a Two-fold respect or inseparable Consequent or Adjunct unto every sin.

(1) As it expresseth the *Authority of God* in its Precepts and and Sanction. Hence *Guilt* inseparably follows every sin, which is the Respect it induceth on the sinner unto the *Law*, upon the Account of the *Authority* of the Law-giver. The Act of sin passeth away, but this Guilt abideth on the Person and must do so, untill the Law be satisfied and the sinner thereon absolved. This naturally produceth *Fear* which is the first Expression of a sense of Guilt. So *Adam* expressed it upon his sin: *I heard thy Voyce and was afraid*, *Gen. 3. 10.*

(2) The Law may be considered as it expresseth the *Holiness of God* and his Truth which it was necessary from the Nature of God that it should doe. Hence there is in sin a peculiar *Inconformity to the Holiness of God*, which is the *Macula*, the *spot*, *stain* and *filth* of it, which are inseparable from it, whilst God is Holy, unless it be purged and done

done away as we shall shew. And this is inseparably attended with *shame* which is the Expression of a sence of this *filth of sin*. So *Adam* upon his sin had his Eyes open to see his *Nakedness*, and was filled with *shame*. This is the Order of these things. God who is the Object of our Obedience and Sin, is considered as the Supreme Law-giver. On his Law he hath impressed his Authority and his Holiness. Sin with respect unto his Authority is attended with *Guilt*; and this in the Conscience of the sinner produceth *Fear*. As it respects the Holiness of God it is attended with *Filth* or uncleanness, and this produceth *shame*. And the Ultimate Effects of it, are on the first Account *Pena Sensus*, on the other *Pena Damni*: This therefore is the spot, the stain, the Pollution of sin, which is purged in our Sanctification. The perverse Disorder, and shamefull Crookedness that is in sin with respect unto the Holiness of God.

And herein there is a *real filthiness, but spiritual*; which is compared with and opposed unto things materially and carnally so. Not that which goeth into a man, Meats of any sort, defile him, saith our Saviour, but that which cometh out of the Heart, that is *spiritually* with respect unto God, his Law and Holiness. And as men are taught the Guilt of sin by their own *Fear* which is the inseparable Adjunct of it, so are they taught the Filth of sin by their own *shame* which unavoidably attends it. To instruct us herein is one End of the Law and the Gospel. For in the Renovation of the Law which was added to the Promise because of Transgressions, Gal. 3. 19. and in the Institutions annexed unto it, God designed to instruct us further in them both, with the Wayes whereby we may be freed from them. In the Doctrine of the Law with the Sanction and Curse of it, and the Institution of Sacrifices to make Attonement for sin, God declared the Nature of *Guilt* and its Remedy. By the same Law, and by the Institution of sundry Ordinances for Purification and cleansing, as also by determining sundry Ceremonial Defilements, he makes known the Nature of this *Filth* and its Remedy. To what End were so many Meats and Drinks, so many Diseases and Natural Distempers, so many external fortuitous Accidents as touching the Dead and the like, made Religiously unclean by the Law? It was to no other but to teach us the Nature of the spiritual Defilement of sin. And to the same End together with a Demonstration of the Relief and Remedy thereof were the Ordinances of Purification instituted, which as they were Outward and Carnal purged those Uncleannesses as they also were Outward and Carnal made so by the Law. But Internal and Spiritual things were taught and prefigured hereby, yea wrought and effected by vertue of their Typical Relation to Christ as the Apostle teacheth, Heb. 9. 13, 14. For if the blood of Bulls and of Goats, and the Ashes of an Heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifyeth to the purifying of the Flesh, how much more shall the Blood of Christ purge our Consciences from dead Works to serve the Living God. And hence the whole Work of Sanctification is expressed by opening a Fountain for sin and for uncleanness; that is, the purging of them away, Zech. 13. 1. So is it in the Gospel, where the Blood of Christ is said to purge our sins with respect to Guilt, and to wash our Souls with respect to Filth. Yea so inseparable is this *Filth* from sin, and *shame* from Filth, that wherever abides a sence of sin,

sin, there is a sence of this Filth with Shame. The very Heathen who had only the workings of their own Minds and Consciences for their Guide, were never able to quit themselves from a sence of this *Pollution* of sin. And thence proceeded all those wayes of *Lustration*, *Purgation* and *Cleansing*, by Washings, Sacrifices and Mysterious *Ceremonious* Observances which they had invented. It remains therefore only that we enquire a little into the Reasons and Causes why this *pravity of sin*, and *discrepancy from the Holiness of God*, is such a Defilement of our Natures, and so inseparably attended with *shame*. For without the Consideration hereof, we can never understand the true Nature of *Sanctification* and *Holiness*. And it will also then yet further appear how openly they betray their prodigious Ignorance of these things, who contend that all Grace consists in the Practice of Moral Vertues. And we may to this Purpose observe,

Sect. 3.

(1) *That the Spiritual Beauty and Comeliness of the Soul consists in its Conformity unto God.* Grace gives Beauty. Hence it is said of the Lord Christ, That he is *fairer or more beautifull than the Children of Men*, and that because *Grace was poured into his lips*, *Psat. 45. 2.* And when the Church is furnished or adorned with his Graces, he affirms her to be *Fair and Comely*, *Cant. 1. 5. chap. 6. 4. chap. 7. 6.* Christ by washing of it takes away its *spots and wrinkles*, rendring it *beautifull*, that is *Holy*, and without blemish, *Ephes. 5. 27.* And this Beauty Originally consisted in the Image of God in us, which contained the whole Order, Harmony, and Symmetry of our Natures in all their Faculties and Actions with respect unto God, and our utmost End. That therefore which is contrary hereunto, as is all and every sin, hath a Deformity in it, or brings *Spots, Stains and Wrinkles* on the Soul. There is in sin all that is contrary to spiritual Beauty and Comeliness, to inward Order and Glory, and this is the *Filth* and *Pollution* of it.

(2) *Holiness and Conformity to God is the Honour of our Souls.* It is that alone which makes them truly Noble. For all Honour consists in an Accession unto Him who is the only Spring and absolute Possessor of all that is so, in whom alone is Originally and Perfectly all Being and Substance. Now this we have alone by Holiness, or that Image of God wherein we were created. Whatever is contrary hereunto is base, vile and unworthy. This is sin, which is therefore the only *base thing* in Nature. Hence it is said of some great Sinners that they had *debased themselves to Hell*, *Isa. 57. 9.* This belongs to the Pollution of Sin; that it is base, vile, unworthy, dishonouring the Soul, filling it with *shame* in its self and contempt from God. And there are no Persons who are not absolutely hardened, but are in their own Minds and Consciences sensible of this *Baseness* of sin, as they are also of the Deformity that is in it. When mens Eyes are opened to see their *Nakedness*, how vile and *base* they have made themselves by sin, they will have a sence of this Pollution not easily to be expressed. And from hence it is, that sin hath the Propertyes and Effects of *Uncleanness* in the sight of God and in the Conscience of the sinner. God abhors, loaths it, accounts it an abominable thing, as that which is directly contrary to his Holiness, which as impressed on the Law

is

is the Rule of Purity, Integrity, spiritual Beauty and Honour. And in the Conscience of the sinner it is attended with *shame*, as a thing deformed, loathsome, vile, base and dishonourable. See *Jer.* 2. 26.

In all in whom it is, I say unless they are blind and obdurate it fills them with shame. I speak not of such as are little or not at all spiritually sensible of sin or any of its propertyes, who *fear* not because of its Guilt, nor are *disquieted* by its Power, nor acquainted with its *Fomes* or Disposition to evil, and so not *ashamed* of its filth; much less of such as are given over to all uncleanness with Delight and Greediness, wallowing in the pollution of it *like the Sow in the Mire*, who not only do the things which God abhorreth, but also have pleasure in them that do them. But those I intend who have the least real Conviction of the nature and tendency of sin, who are all in one Degree or other ashamed of it as a filthy thing. And a Casting off of *outward* shame, that is so from its Object, or shame with respect unto the Conscience and Judgement of Humane Kind, as those doe who proclaim their sins as *Sodom* and hide them not, is the highest Aggravation of sinning and Contempt of God; and the casting out of *inward* shame, with respect unto the Divine Omniscience, the highest Evidence of a Reprobate Mind. But in all others who have more Light and spiritual Sense it produceth *shame* and *self-aborrancy*, which hath alwayes a respect unto the Holiness of God, as *Job* 42. 5, 6. They see that in sin which is so *vile*, *base* and *filthy*, and which renders them so, that like unto men under a loathsome Disease they are not able to bear the sight of their own sores, *Psal.* 38. 5. God detesteth, abhorreth and turneth from sin as a loathsome thing, and Man is filled with shame for it, it is therefore *filthy*. Yea no tongue can express the Sence which a Believing Soul hath of the *uncleanness* of sin with respect unto the Holiness of God. And this may suffice to give a little Prospect into the Nature of this *Defilement of sin*, which the Scripture so abundantly insiteth on, and which all Believers are so sensible of.

This Pravity or spiritual Disorder with respect unto the Holiness of God which is the shameful Defilement of sin, is two-fold. (1) That which is *Habitual* in all the Faculties of our Souls by Nature, as they are the Principle of our Spiritual and Moral Operations. They are all *shamefully* and loathsomely depraved, out of Order, and no way correspondent unto the Holiness of God. Hence by Nature we are *wholly unclean*; who can bring a clean thing out of that which is unclean? And this uncleanness is *graphically* expressed under the Similitude of a wretched polluted Infant, *Ezek.* 16. 3, 4, 5. (2) That which is *Actual* in all the Actings of our Faculties as so defiled, and as far as they are so defiled. For 1. Be any sin of what Nature it will, there is a Pollution attending of it. Hence the Apostle adviseth to cleanse our selves from all *Pollutions of Flesh and Spirit*, *2 Cor.* 7. 1. The sins that are internal and *spiritual*, as Pride, self-Love, Covetousness, Unbelief, have a pollution attending them as well as those which are fleshly and sensual. 2. So far as any thing of this Pravity or Disorder mixeth it self with the best of our Duties, it renders both us and them unclean. *Isa.* 64. 6. *We are all as an unclean thing, and all our Righteousnesses are as filthy Raggs.*

Sect. 6.

C c c

(2ly.) This

(2ly.) This Uncleanneſs as it is *Habitual*, reſpecting our Natural Defilement, is *equal* in and unto every one that is born into the World. We are by Nature all alike polluted and that to the utmoſt of what our Nature is capable. But with reſpect unto Actual ſins it is not ſo. For in them it hath various Degrees and Aggravations even as many as ſin it ſelf hath. (1) The *Greater* the ſin is from its Nature or Circumſtances, the greater is the Defilement wherewith it is attended. Hence there is no ſin expreſſed under ſuch Terms of *filthineſs* and *abhorrences* as *Idolatry*, which is the greateſt of ſins. See *Ezek.* 16. 36, 37. Or, (2) There is an Aggravation of it when the *whole Perſon* is defiled, as it is in the Caſe of *Fornication* before inſtanced in. (3) It is heightned by a *Continuance* in ſin, whereby an Addition is made to its Pollution every Day, and which is called *Wallowing in the Mire*, 2 *Pet.* 2. 22.

I have in this whole Diſcourſe but touched upon this Conſideration of ſin which the Scripture ſo frequently mentions and inculcates. For as all the *firſt Inſtitutions of Divine Worſhip* recorded therein had ſome reſpect hereunto, ſo the *laſt Rejection* of obſtinate ſinners mentioned in it is, *Let him that is filthy or unclean be filthy ſtill*, *Revel.* 22. 11. Neither is there any Notion of ſin whereby God would convey an Apprehenſion of its Nature and an Abhorrency thereof unto our Minds and Conſciences, ſo frequently inſiſted on as is this of its *Pollution*. And in order to our uſe of it unto the Diſcovery of the Nature of Holineſs we may yet obſerve theſe three things. (1) Where this *Uncleanneſs* abideth *unpurged* there neither is nor can be any *true Holineſs* at all, *Ephes.* 4. 22, 23, 24. For it is univerſally oppoſed unto it, it is our unholineſs. Where therefore it is abſolute and purified in no Meaſure or Degree, there is no Work of *Sanctification*, no Holineſs ſo much as begun. For in the *purging* hereof, it makes its entrance upon the Soul, and its Effects therein is the firſt Beginning of Holineſs in us. I acknowledge that it is not in any at once abſolutely and perfectly taken away in this World. For the Work of *purging* it is a continued Act commensurate unto the whole Work of our Sanctification. And therefore they who are truly ſanctified and Holy, are yet deeply ſenſible of the Remainder of it in themſelves, do greatly bewayl it, and earneſtly endeavour after the removal of it. But there is an initial, real, ſincere, and (as to all the Faculties of the Soul) *universal* purging of it which belongs to the Nature and Eſſence of Holineſs, begun and carryed on though not abſolutely perfected in this Life. And men who pretend unto a Grace and Holineſs that ſhould conſiſt in *Moral Vertue* only, without a ſuppoſition of and reſpect unto the Purification of this Pollution of ſin, do but deceive their own Souls and others, ſo far as any are forſaken of God to give credit unto them. The Vertues of men not *purged from the Uncleanneſs* of their Natures, are an Abomination to the Lord, *Tit.* 1. 15. (2) Unleſs this *uncleanneſs* of ſin be purged and waſhed away, we can never come unto the Enjoyment of God. Nothing *that defileth ſhall in any wiſe enter into the New Jeruſalem*, *Revel.* 21. 27. To ſuppoſe that an Unpurified Sinner can be brought unto the bleſſed Enjoyment of God, is to overthrow both the Law and the Goſpel, and to ſay that Chriſt dyed in vain. It is therefore of the ſame importance with the Everlaſting Sal-
vation

vation of our Souls, to have them purged from sin. (3) We are not able of our selves without the especial Aid Assistance and Operation of the Spirit of God, in any Measure or Degree to free our selves from this *Pollution* neither that which is *Natural* and *Habitual*, nor that which is *Actual*. It is true, it is frequently prescribed unto us as our *Duty*. We are commanded to *Wash our selves*, to *Cleanse our selves from sin*, to *Purge our selves* from all our Iniquities and the like, frequently. But to suppose that whatever God requireth of us, that we have Power of our selves to do, is to make the *Cross* and *Grace* of *Jesus Christ* of none Effect. Our Duty is our Duty constituted unalterably by the Law of God, whether we have power to perform it or no, seeing we had so at our first Obligation by and unto the Law, which God is not obliged to bend unto a conformity to our Warrings, nor to suit unto our sinfull Weaknesses. Whatever therefore God worketh in us in a *Way of Grace* he prescribeth unto us in a *Way of Duty*, and that because although he do it in us, yet he also doth it by us, so as that the same Work is an Act of *his Spirit* and of *our Wills* as acted thereby. Of our selves therefore we are not able by any endeavours of our own, nor wayes of our own finding out, to cleanse our selves from the Defilement of sin. *If I be wicked, saith Job, why then labour I in vain? if I wash my self with snow-water, and make my hand never so clean, yet shalt thou plunge me in the Ditch, and mine own Cloathes shall make me to be abhorred,* Chap. 9. 29, 30, 31. There may be Wayes and Means used whereby an Appearance of Washing and Cleansing may be made. But when things come to be tryed in the sight of God, all will be found filthy and unclean. *In vain saith the Prophet shalt thou take to thy self Sope and much Nitre, thou shalt not be purged,* Jer. 2. 22. The most probable means of Cleansing, and the most effectual in our Judgement however multiplied shall fail in this Case. Some speak much of *washing away their sins by the Tears of Repentance*. But Repentance as prescribed in the Scripture is of another Nature and Assigned unto another End. And for mens *Tears* in this matter they are but *Sope* and *Nitre* which howsoever multiplied will not produce the Effect intended. And therefore doth God in places of Scripture innumerable take this to himself as the immediate Effect of his Spirit and Grace, namely to *cleanse us from our Sins and our Iniquities*. (4) The *Institutions* of the Law for this End to purge Uncleaness could not of themselves reach thereunto. They did indeed purifie the unclean Legally, and sanctified persons as to the purifying of the flesh, Heb. 9. 13. so that they should not on their account be separated from their Priviledges in the Congregation and the Worship of God. But of themselves they could goe no further, Heb. 10. 2. only they did Typifie and signifie that whereby sin was really cleansed. But the *real stain* is too deep to be taken away by any outward Ordinances or Institutions. And therefore God as it were rejecting them all, promiseth to open another Fountain to that purpose, Zech. 13. 1. Wherefore,

(5) There is a great Emptiness and Vanity in all those Aids and Reliefs which the *Papal Church* hath invented in this Case. Sensible they are of the *spot* and *stain* that accompanyes sin, of its *Pollution* and Defilement, which none can avoyd the Conscience of who are

not utterly hardned and blinded. But they are ignorant of the true and only Means and Remedy thereof. And therefore as in the Work of *Justification* being ignorant of the Righteousness of God, and going about to establish their own Righteousness, they submit not themselves to the Righteousness of God, as the Apostle spake of their predecessors; so in the Work of *Sanctification* being ignorant of the Wayes of the working of the Spirit of Grace and Efficacy of the Blood of Christ, they go about to set up their own *Imaginations*, and submit not themselves unto a Compliance with the Grace of God. Thus in the first place they would, at least the most of them would, have the whole *uncleanness* of our Natures to be washed away by *Baptisme*, *Virtute Operis operati*. The Ordinance being administred without any more to doe; or any previous Qualifications of the Person internal or external the filth of Original Sin is washed away; though it fell not out so with *Simon Magus* who notwithstanding he were baptized by *Philip the Evangelist*, and that upon his visible Profession and Confession, yet continued in the Gall of Bitterness and Bond of Iniquity, and was therefore certainly not cleansed from his sins. But there is a *cleansing in Profession* and Signification, and there is a *Cleansing in the Reality of Sanctification*. The former doth accompany *Baptisme* when it is rightly administred. With respect hereunto are men said to be *purged from their old sins*, that is to have made a Profession and have had a fair Representation thereof in being made partakers of the outward sign of it; 2 Pet. 1. 9. as also to escape the Pollutions of the World, and the Lusts of the flesh; Chap. 2. 18, 20. But all this may be, and yet sin not be really purged: For not only the Outward Washing of Regeneration in the Pledge of it, but the Internal Renovation of the Holy Ghost is required thereunto. Tit. 3. 5. But having thus shifted themselves of the Filth of Original sin as easily as a man may put off his Cloathes when they are foul, they have found out many wayes whereby the ensuing Defilements that attend Actual sins may be purged or done away. There is the *sprinkling of Holy Water*, *Confession to a Priest*, *Penances*, in Fasting and some other Abstinences that are supposed to be of wonderfull vertue to this End and Purpose. And I do acknowledge that the one *Art of Confession* is really the greatest Invention to accommodate the Inclinations of all Flesh, that ever this World was acquainted withall. For as nothing is so suited unto all the Carnal Interests of the *Priests* be they what they will, nor so secures them a Veneration in the midst of their Looseness and worthless Conversation; so for the People, who for the most part have other Business to doe than long to trouble themselves about their sins, or find it uneasy to be conversant about their Guilt and the Consequences of it in their Minds, it is such an expedite Course of absolute Exoneration that they may be free for other sins or Business, to deposite them wholly and safely with a Priest, that nothing equal unto it could ever have been invented. For the Real Way of dealing with God by Jesus Christ in these things, with Endeavours of a Participation in the Sanctifying Cleansing Work of the Holy Ghost is long, and very irksome to Flesh and Blood, besides that it is intricate and foolish unto Natural Darkness and Unbelief. But yet it so falls out, that after all these Inventions they can come to no perfect Rest or Satisfaction in their own Minds.

Minds. They cannot but find by Experience that their Sores sometimes break forth through all these sorry Coverings unto their *Annoyance*; and their Defilements yet fill them with Shame as well as the Guilt of sin doth with Fear. Wherefore they betake themselves to their *Sheat-Anchor* in this storm, in the Relief which they have provided in another World; when, let men find themselves never so much mistaken they cannot complain of their disappointments. This is in their *Purgatory*, whereunto they must trust at last for the cancelling of all their *odd scores*, and Purging away that *filth of sin* which they have been unwilling to part withall in this World. But as this whole Business of *Purgatory* is a groundless Fable, an Invention set up in competition with, and opposition unto the Sanctification of the Spirit and Cleansing Vertue of the Blood of Christ, as a matter of unspeakable more Profit and Secular Advantage unto those who have its managment committed unto them; so it is as great an Encouragement unto Unholiness and a continuance in Sin, for those who believe it, and at the same time love the Pleasures of sin, which are the Generality of their Church, as ever was or can be found out or made use of. For, to come with a plain down-right Diswasure from Holiness and Encouragement unto Sin, is a Design that would absolutely defeat it self, nor is capable of making Impressions on them who retain the Notion of a Difference between Good and Evil. But this *Side-wind*, that at once pretends to relieve men from the *Filth* of sin, and keeps them from the only Wayes and Means whereby it may be cleansed, insensibly leads them into a quiet pursuit of their Lusts under an Expectation of Relief when all is past and done. Wherefore setting aside such vain Imaginations, we may enquire into the true Causes and Wayes of our *Purification* from the Uncleanneſs of sin described, wherein the First part of our Sanctification and the Foundation of our Holiness doth consist.

CHAP. V.

The Filth of Sin purged by the Spirit and Blood of Christ.

(1) Purification of the Filth of Sin, the first part of Sanctification, how it is effected. (2) The Work of the Spirit therein. (3) Efficacy of the Blood of Christ to that Purpose. (4) The Blood of his Sacrifice intended. (5) How that Blood cleanseth Sin. Application unto it, and Application of it by the Spirit. (6) Wherein that Application consists. (7, 8, 9.) Faith the Instrumental Cause of our Purification, with the use of Afflictions to the same purpose. Necessity of a Due Consideration of the Pollution of Sin. (10) Considerations of the Pollution and Purification of Sin practically improved. (11) Various Directions for a due Application unto the Blood of Christ for Cleansing. (12) Sundry Degrees of Shamefulness in Sinning. (13) Directions for the Cleansing of Sin continued. (14) Thankfulness for the Cleansing of Sin. (15) With other Uses of the same Consideration. (16) Union with Christ how consistent with the Remainders of Sin. (17) From all that, Differences between Evangelical Holiness and the Old Nature asserted.

Sect. 1.

THE purging of the Souls of them that Believe from the Defilements of Sin, is in the Scripture assigned unto several Causes of different Kinds. For the Holy Spirit, the Blood of Christ, Faith and Afflictions, are all said to cleanse us from our sins but in several Ways and with distinct Kinds of Efficacy. The Holy Spirit is said to doe it as the principal Efficient Cause; The Blood of Christ as the Meritorious procuring Cause; Faith and Affliction as the Instrumental Causes; the one Direct and Internal, the other External and Occasional.

Sect. 2.

(1) That we are purged and purified from sin by the Spirit of God communicated unto us, hath been before in General confirmed by many Testimonies of the Holy Scriptures. And we may gather also from what hath been spoken wherein this Work of his doth consist. For whereas the Spring and Fountain of all the Pollution of Sin lyes in the Depravation of the Faculties of our Natures which ensued on the Loss of the Image of God, he renews them again by his Grace. Tit. 3. 5. Our want of due answering unto the Holiness of God as represented in the Law, and exemplified in our Hearts Originally, is a principal Part and universal Cause of our whole Pollution and Defilement by sin. For when our Eyes are opened to discern it, this is that which in the first place filleth us with shame and self-Abhorrency,
and

and that which makes us so unacceptable yea so loathsome to God. Who is there who considereth aright the *Vanity*, *Darkness* and *Ignorance* of his Mind, the *Perverseness* and *Stubbornness* of his Will, with the *Disorder Irregularity* and *Distemper* of his Affections with respect unto things Spiritual and Heavenly, who is not *ashamed* of, who doth not *abhor* himself? This is that which hath given our Nature its Leprosie and defiled it throughout. And I shall crave leave to say, that he who hath *no Experience* of Spiritual shame and self-Abhorrency upon the Account of this Inconformity of his Nature and the Faculties of his Soul unto the Holiness of God, is a great stranger unto this whole Work of Sanctification. Who is there that can recount the Unsteadiness of his Mind in Holy Meditation, his Low and unbecoming Conceptions of Gods Excellencies, his Proneness to foolish Imaginations and Vanities that Profit not, his Aversion to Spirituality in Duty and fixedness in Communion with God, his Proneness to things Sensual and Evil, all arising from the spiritual Irregularity of our Natural Faculties, but if ever he had any due Apprehensions of Divine Purity and Holiness, that is not sensible of his own Vileness and Baseness, and is not oft-times deeply affected with shame thereon? Now this whole Evil Frame is cured by the effectual working of the Holy Ghost in the rectifying and Renovation of our Natures. He giveth a New Understanding, a New Heart, New Affections, renewing the whole Soul into the Image of God, *Ephes. 4. 23, 24. Col. 3. 10.* The way whereby he doth this hath been before so fully declared in our opening of the Doctrine of *Regeneration*, that it need not be here repeated. Indeed our Original Cleansing is therein, where mention is made of the *Washing of Regeneration*, *Tit. 3. 5.* Therein is the Image of God restored unto our Souls. But we consider the same Work now as it is the Cause of our Holyness. Look then how far our Minds, our Hearts, our Affections are *renewed by the Holy Ghost*, so far are we cleansed from our spiritual habitual Pollution. Would we be cleansed from our Sins, that which is so frequently promised that we shall be, and so frequently prescribed as our Duty to be, and without which we neither have nor can have any thing of true Holiness in us, we must labour after and endeavour to grow in this *Renovation of our Natures* by the Holy Ghost. The more we have of saving Light in our Minds, of Heavenly Love in our Wills and Affections, of a constant Readiness unto Obedience in our Hearts; the more Pure are we, the more cleansed from the Pollution of sin. The Old Principle of Corrupted Nature is unclean and defiling, shamefull and loathsome. The *New Creature*, the Principle of Grace implanted in the whole Soul by the Holy Ghost is *Pure* and purifying, Clean and Holy.

2^{ly}. The Holy Ghost doth Purifie and Cleanse us by *strengthening* our Souls by his Grace unto all Holy Duties, and against all *Actual* sins. It is by Actual Sins that our Natural and Habitual Pollution is encreased. Hereby some make themselves base and vile as Hell. But this also is prevented by the Gracious Actings of the Spirit. Having given us a Principle of Purity and Holyness, he so acts it in Duties of Obedience and in Opposition unto Sin, as that he preserves the Soul free from Defilements, or Pure and Holy according to the Tenor of the New Covenant, that is in such Measure and to such a Degree

as Universal Sincerity doth require. But it may be yet said, that indeed hereby he makes us Pure, and prevents many future Defilements, yet how is the Soul freed from those it had contracted before this work upon it, or those which it may and doth unavoidably afterwards fall into; for as there is no man doth good and sinneth not, so there is none who is not more or less defiled with Sin, whilst they are in the Body here in this World. The Apostle answereth this Objection or Enquiry, 1 Joh. 1. 7, 8, 9. *If we say we have no sin we deceive our selves and the Truth is not in us.* But if Sin be in us we are defiled, and how shall we be Cleanfed? *God is just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.* But how may this be done, by what means may it be accomplished? *The Blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.*

Sect. 3.

(2) It is therefore the *Blood of Christ* in the Second place which is the *Meritorious* procuring, and so the *Effective Cause* that *immediately purgeth* us from our sins, by an especial Application of it unto our Souls by the Holy Ghost. And there is not any Truth belonging unto the Mystery of the Gospel which is more plainly and evidently asserted, as it hath in part been made to appear before. *The Blood of Jesus Christ cleanseth us from all sin, 1 Joh. 1. 7. He hath washed us from our sins in his own Blood, Revel. 1. 5. The Blood of Christ purgeth our Consciences from dead Works that we may serve the Living God, Heb. 9. 14. He gave himself for his Church that he might wash and cleanse it, Ephes. 5. 26. To Purifie to himself a peculiar People, Tit. 2. 14.* Besides, whatever is spoken in the whole Scripture concerning purifying the Unclean, the Leprous, the Defiled, by Sacrifices or other Institutions of the Old Testament, it is all Instructive in and Directive unto the Purifying Nature of the Blood of Christ, from whence alone these Institutions had their Efficacy; and the Vertue of it is promised under that Notion, *Zech. 13. 1.* And this the Faith and Experience of all Believers doth confirm; for they are no Imaginations of their own, but what being built on the Truth and Promises of God, yield sensible Spiritual Relief and Refreshment unto their Souls. This they believe, this they pray for, and find the Fruits and Effects of it in themselves. It may be some of them do not, it may be few of them do comprehend distinctly the *Way* whereby, and the Manner how the Blood of Christ so long since shed and offered, should cleanse them now from their sins. But the Thing it self they do believe as it is revealed, and find the use of it in all wherein they have to do with God. And I must say, (let Profane and Ignorant Persons, whilst they please, deride what they understand not, nor are able to disprove) that the Holy Spirit of God which leadeth Believers into all Truth, and enableth them to pray according to the Mind and Will of God, doth guide them in and by the working and Experience of Faith to pray for those things the depths of whose Mysteries they cannot comprehend. And he who well studyeth the things which he is Taught of the Spirit to ask of God, will find a Door opened into much spiritual Wisdom and Knowledge. For (let the World rage on) in those Prayers which Believers are taught, and enabled unto by the Holy Ghost helping of them as a Spirit of Supplications, there are Two things inexpressible. (1) The Inward

ward Labouring and *Spiritual Working* of the Sanctified Heart and Affections towards God, wherein consist those *Sighs and Groans that cannot be uttered.* Rom. 8. 26. God alone sees and knowes and understands the fervent Workings of the New Creature when acted by the Holy Ghost in Supplications. And so it is added in the next words, *Vers. 27. And he who searcheth the Hearts knoweth* τὶ τὸ φρόνημα τῷ πνεύματι, *what is the meaning of the Spirit, what it favours and inclines unto.* It is not any distinct or separate Acting of the *Spirit* by himself that is intended, but what and how he works in the Hearts of Believers as he is a Spirit of Grace and Supplication. And this is known *only unto him* who is the Searcher of Hearts, and as he is so. And he knoweth what is the bent, frame, inclination and acting of the Inward Man in Prayer from the Power of the Spirit, which they themselves in whom they are wrought do not fathom nor reach the Depth of. This he doth in the *Subject of Prayer*, the Hearts and Minds of Believers, the Effects of his Operation in them are *inexpressible.* (2) As to the *Object of Prayer* or things prayed for, he doth in and by the Word so represent and exhibit the Truth, Reality, Subsistence, Power and Efficacy of spiritual Mysterious things unto the Faith and Affections of Believers, that they have a real and Experimental sence of, do mix Faith with, and are affected by those things now made nigh, now realized unto them, which it may be they are not able Doctrinally and distinctly to explain in their proper Notions. And thus do we oft-times see Men low and weak in their Notional Apprehension of things, yet in their Prayers led into Communion with God in the Highest and Holiest Mysteries of his Grace, having an Experience of the Life and Power of the Things themselves in their own Hearts and Souls. And hereby do their Faith, Love, Affiance and Adherence unto God, act and Exercise themselves. So is it with them in this matter of the actual present purifying of the Pollutions of sin by the Blood of Jesus Christ, the Way whereof we shall now briefly enquire into.

I. Therefore by the *Blood of Christ* herein, is intended the Blood of his *Sacrifice*, with the Power Vertue and Efficacy thereof. And the Blood of a Sacrifice fell under a double Consideration. (1) As it was offered unto God to make Attonement and Reconciliation: (2) As it was sprinkled on other things for their Purging and Sanctification. Part of the Blood in every Propitiatory Sacrifice was still to be sprinkled round about the Altar, *Levit. 1. 11.* And in the Great Sacrifice of Expiation, some of the Blood of the Bullock was to be sprinkled before the *Mercy-seat seven times*; *Levit. 16. 14.* This our Apostle fully expresseth in a great and signal Instance, *Heb. 9. 19, 20, 21, 22. For when Moses had spoken every Precept to all the People according to the Law, he took the Blood of Calves and of Goats, with Water and Scarletwooll and Hyssop, and sprinkled both the Book and all the People, saying This is the Blood of the Testament which he hath enjoined unto you, and almost all things are by the Law purged with Blood.* Wherefore the Blood of Christ as it was the Blood of his Sacrifice hath these two Effects, and falls under this double Consideration. (1) As he offered himself by the Eternal Spirit unto God to make Attonement for Sin,

Sect. 4.

D d d

and

and procure Eternal Redemption. (2) As it is *sprinkled* by the same Spirit on the Consciences of Believers to purge them from Dead works, as *v. 12, 13, 14*. And hence it is called with respect unto our Sanctification the *Blood of Sprinkling*, *Heb. 12. 24*. For we have the Sanctification of the Spirit unto Obedience through the sprinkling of the Blood of Jesus, *1 Pet. 1. 2*.

2. The Blood of Christ in his Sacrifice is still alwayes and continually in the same *Condition*, of the same Force and Efficacy as it was in that hour wherein it was shed. The Blood of other Sacrifices was alwayes to be used *immediately* upon its Effusion; for if it were Cold and congealed, it was of no Use to be offered or to be sprinkled; *Levit. 17. 11*. Blood was appointed to make Attonement as the Life or Animal Spirits were in it. But the Blood of the Sacrifice of Christ is alwayes hot and warm, having the same *Spirits of Life and Sanctification* still moving in it. Hence the Way of approach which we have to God thereby is said to be ζῶσα καὶ προσεγγιζόμεθα, *Heb. 10. 20*; alwayes *Living*, and yet *alwayes as Newly slain*. Every one therefore who at any Time hath an especial actual Interest in the Blood of Christ as Sacrificed, hath as real a Purification from the Defilement of sin as he had *Typically* who stood by the Priest and had Blood or Water sprinkled on him. For the Holy Ghost diligently declares that whatever was done Legally, Carnally or Typically, by any of the Sacrifices of Old at any time as to the Expiation or Purification of sin, that was all done really and Spiritually by that one Sacrifice, that is the Offering and Sprinkling of the Blood of Christ, and abideth to be so done continually. To this Purpose is the Substance of our Apostles Discourse in the Ninth and Tenth Chapters of the Epistle to the *Hebrews*. And they had Various sorts of Sacrifices wherein to this End the Blood of them was sprinkled, they being Propitiatory in their Offering. As (1) There was the חטאת or continual *Burnt-Offering* of a Lamb or Kid for the whole Congregation Morning and Evening, whose Blood was sprinkled as at other Times. And hereby the Habitual Purification of the Congregation, that they might be Holy to the Lord, and their Cleansing from the daily incursions of secret and unknown sins was signified and carryed on. (2) On the *Sabbath-day* this *Juge Sacrificium* was doubled Morning and Evening, denoting a Peculiar and abounding Communication of Mercy and purging Grace through the Administration of Instituted Ordinances on that Day. (3) There was the *Great Annual Sacrifice* at the Feast of Expiation, when by the Sacrifice of the *Sin-Offering* and the *Scape-Goat* the whole Congregation were purged from all their known and great sins, and recovered into a state of Legal Holiness. And other stated Sacrifices there were. (4) There were *Occasional Sacrifices* for every one according as he found his Condition to require. For those who were Clean one Day, yea one Hour, might by some Miscarriage or surprizal be Unclean the next; but there was a Way continually ready for any Man's Purification, by his bringing his Offering unto that Purpose. Now the Blood of Christ must continually and upon all Occasions answer unto all these, and accomplish spiritually what they did Legally effect and Typically represent. This our Apostle asserts and proves; *Heb. 1. v. 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14*. Thereby is the gradual carrying on of our Sanctification

fication habitually effected, which was signified by the continual Daily Sacrifice. From thence is especial Cleansing Vertue communicated unto us by the Ordinances of the Gospel, as is expressly affirmed, *Ephes. 5. 25, 26.* denoted by the doubling of the Daily Sacrifice on the Sabbath. By it are we purged from all our sins whatever, great or small, as was typified in the Great Sacrifice on the Day of Expiation. And unto him have we continual recourse upon all Occasions of our spiritual Defilements whatever. So was his Blood as to its purifying Vertue to answer and accomplish all Legal Institutions. Especially it doth so that of the *Ashes of the red Heifer, Numb. 19.* which was a standing Ordinance whereby every one who was any way defiled might immediately be cleansed: And he who would not make Application thereunto was to be cut off from the People, *v. 20.* And it is no otherwise with respect unto the Blood of Christ, in our spiritual Defilements; Thence is it called a *Fountain opened for sin and uncleanness, Zech. 13. 1.* And he who neglects to make Application thereunto, shall perish in his Uncleanness and that Eternally.

Farther to clear this whole Matter, two things are to be enquired into. (1) How doth the *Blood of Christ* thus *Cleanse* us from our sins, or what it is that is done thereby. (2) How we come to be made *Partakers* of the Benefit thereof, or come to be interested therein.

Sect. 5.

As to the First, it must be observed what hath been declared before, that the *Uncleanness* we Treat of is not Physical or Corporeal, but *Moral* and *Spiritual* only. It is the Inconformity of sin unto the Holiness of God as represented in the Law, whence it is Loathsome to God, and attended with shame in us. Now wherever there is an Interest obtained in the Purifying Vertue of the Blood of Christ, it doth (by the Will, Law and Appointment of God) do these two Things. 1. It takes away all *loathsomeness* in the sight of God, not from sin in the Abstract, but from the sinner; so that he shall be as one absolutely washed and purified before him. see *Isa. 1. 16, 18. Psal. 51. 7. Ephes. 5. 25, 26, 27.* 2. It taketh away *shame* out of the Conscience, and gives the soul Boldness in the presence of God, *Heb. 10. 19, 20, 21, 22.* When these things are done, then is sin purged and our souls are cleansed.

(2^{ly}.) It may be enquired, How we are to *apply* our selves unto the Blood of Christ for our Purification, or how we may come continually to *partake* of the Vertue of it as it is sprinkled unto that Purpose. Now because what we do herein is wrought in us by the spirit of God, my Principal Design being to declare his Work in our sanctification, I shall at once declare both his Work and our Duty in the following Instances.

1. It is he who discovereth unto us and spiritually convinceth us of the *Pollution of Sin*, and of our Defilements thereby. something indeed of this Kind will be wrought by the Power of *Natural Conscience* awakened and excited by Ordinary outward Means of Conviction. For wherever there is a sence of Guilt there will be in some kind a sence of Filth; as Fear and shame are inseparable. But this sence alone will never guide us to the Blood of Christ for Cleansing. Such a sight and Conviction of it as may fill us with self-Abhorrency

and Abasement, as may cause us to loath our selves for the Abomination that is in it, is required of us. And this is the Work of the Holy Ghost belonging to that peculiar Conviction of sin which is from him alone. *Joh. 16. 8.* I mean, that self-aborrancy, shame and Confusion of Face with respect unto the Filth of sin, which is so often mentioned in the Scripture as a Gracious Duty, as nothing is an higher Aggravation of sin than for men to carry themselves with a Carnal Boldness with God and in his Worship, whilst they are unpurged from their Defilements. In a sence hereof the *Publican* stood afar off as one ashamed, and destitute of any Confidence for a nearer Approach. So the Holy Men of Old professed to God, that they blushed and were *ashamed* to lift up their *Faces* unto him. Without this Preparation whereby we come to know the *Plague* of our own Hearts, the Infection of our Leprosie, the Defilement of our Souls, we shall never make Application unto the Blood of Christ for Cleansing in a due Manner. This therefore in the First place is required of us, as the First Part of our Duty, and First Work of the Holy Ghost herein.

2. The Holy Ghost proposeth declareth and presents unto us the only *true Remedy*, the only Means of Purification. *When Ephraim saw his sickness and Judah his wound, then went Ephraim to the Assyrian and sent to King Jareb, yet would he not heal you, nor cure you of your wound, Hos. 5. 13.* When men begin to discern their Defilements they are apt to think of many Wayes for their purging. What false Wayes have been invented to this Purpose hath been before declared; and every one is ready to find out a Way of his own; every one will apply his own *Sope* and his own *Nitre*. Though the only *Fountain for Cleansing* be nigh unto us, yet we cannot see it untill the Holy Ghost open our Eyes as he did the Eyes of *Hagar*; He it is who shews it unto us, and leads us unto it. This is an Eminent Part of his Office and Work. The principal End of his sending and consequently of his whole Work was to Glorifie the Son; as the End and Work of the Son was to Glorifie the Father. And the great Way whereby he Glorifieth Christ is by *shewing such things unto us, Joh. 16. 14.* And without his Discovery we can know nothing of Christ, nor of the things of Christ; for he is not sent in vain to shew us the things that we can see of our selves. And what is more so of Christ than his Blood and its Efficacy for the purging of our sins? We never therefore discern it spiritually and in a due Manner but by him. To have a true spiritual sence of the Defilement of Sin, and a gracious View of the Cleansing Vertue of the Blood of Christ, is an eminent Effect of the Spirit of Grace. Something like it there may be in the Workings of an awakened Natural Conscience, with some Beams of outward Gospel-Light falling on it: But there is nothing in it of the Work of the Spirit. This therefore Secondly we must endeavour after if we intend to be cleansed by the Blood of Christ.

3. It is he who worketh *Faith* in us, whereby we are actually interested in the purifying Vertue of the Blood of Christ. By Faith we receive Christ himself, and by Faith do we receive all the Benefits of his Mediation, that is, as they are tendred unto us in the Promises of God. He is our Propitiation through Faith in his Blood as *offered*; and he is our Sanctification through Faith in his Blood as *sprinkled*.

And

And particular acting of Faith on the Blood of Christ, for the cleansing of the Soul from sin, is required of us. A renewed Conscience is sensible of a Pollution in every sin, and is not freed from the shame of it without a particular Application unto the Blood of Christ. It comes by Faith to the Fountain set open for sin and Uncleanness, as the sick man to the Pool of Healing Waters, and waiteth for a season to be cleansed in it. So *David* on the Defilement he had contracted by his great sins, addresseth himself unto God with that Prayer, *Purge me with Hyssop, and I shall be clean, wash me and I shall be whiter, than snow; Psal. 51. 7.* He alludeth unto the purging of the *Leprous* person, the Ordinance whereof is Instituted, *Levit. 14. 5, 6, 7;* or that more general Institution for the Purification of all Legal Uncleanness, by the *Water of Separation* made of the *Ashes of the red Heyfer*, *Numb. 19. 4, 5, 6.* which our Apostle hath respect unto, *Heb. 9. 14.* For both these Purifications were made by the Sprinkling of Blood or Water with *Hyssop*. It is plain I say that he alludeth unto these Institutions, but it is as plain they are not the things which he intendeth. For there was not in the Law any purging by *Hyssop* for Persons guilty of such sins as he lay under. And therefore he professeth in the close of the Psalm, that *Sacrifice and Burnt-Offering God would not accept*, in his Case, *v. 16.* It was therefore that which was signified by those Institutions which he made his Application unto; namely, really to the *Blood of Christ*, by which he might be Justified from all things, from which he could not be Justified by the Law of Moses, *Acts 13. 39.* and so likewise purified. In like manner do all Believers make an actual Application unto the Blood of Christ for the purging away of their sins, which untill it is done they have a Conscience of sin, that is condemning them for sin, and filling them with shame and Fear, *Heb. 10. 1, 2, 3.*

And this Actual Application by Faith unto the Blood of Christ for Cleansing, the Mystery whereof is scorned by many as a thing *Fanatical* and unintelligible, consists in these Four things. (1) A *spiritual View* and *Due Consideration* of the Blood of Christ in his Sacrifice, as proposed in the Promises of the Gospel for our Cleansing and Purification. *Look unto me*, saith he, *and be saved, Isa. 45. 22.* which respects the whole Work of our Salvation and all the Means thereof. Our way of coming unto our Interest therein is by *Looking to him*, namely as he is proposed unto us in the Promise of the Gospel. For *as the Serpent was lifted up by Moses in the Wilderness, so was he in his Sacrifice on the Cross lifted up, Job. 3. 14.* And so in the Gospel is he represented unto us, *Gal. 3. 1.* And the Means whereby they were heal'd in the Wilderness, was by *looking* unto the Serpent that was lifted up. Herein then doth Faith first Act it self, by a spiritual View and due Consideration of the Blood of Christ, as proposed unto us in the Gospel for the only Means of our Purification. And the more we abide in this Contemplation, the more Effectual will our success be in our Application thereto. (2) Faith actually *relyeth* on his Blood, for the real effecting of that great Work and End for which it is proposed unto us. For God sets him forth, as to be a *Propitiation through Faith in his Blood* as offered, *Rom. 3. 25.* so to be our *sanctification* through

Sect. 6.

through Faith in his Blood as sprinkled. And the Establishing of this especial Faith in our Souls is that which the Apostle aims at in his excellent Reasoning, *Heb. 9. 13, 14.* And his Conclusion unto that Purpose is so evident, that he encourageth us thereon to draw nigh in the full Assurance of Faith, *Heb. 10. 22.* (3) Faith worketh herein by *Fervent Prayer*, as it doth in its whole Address unto God, with Respect unto his Promises; because for all these things God will be sought unto by the House of *Israel*. By this Means the Soul brings it self nigh unto its own Mercy. And this we are directed unto *Heb. 4. 15, 16.* (4) An *Acquiescency* in the Truth and Faithfulness of God, for Cleansing by the Blood of Christ, whence we are freed from discouraging perplexing shame, and have Boldness in the Presence of God.

4. The Holy Ghost *actually Communicates* the cleansing Purifying Vertue of the Blood of Christ unto our Souls and Consciences, whereby we are freed from *shame* and have Boldness towards God. For the whole work of the Application of the Benefits of the Mediation of Christ unto Believers, is his properly. And these are the things which Believers aim at and intend in all their fervent Supplications for the Purifying and Cleansing of their Souls by the *sprinkling and washing of the Blood of Christ*; the Faith and Perswasion whereof give them Peace and Holy Boldness in the presence of God, without which they can have nothing but *shame* and Confusion of Face in a sence of their own Pollutions.

Sect. 7.

How the Blood of Christ was the *Meritorious Cause* of our Purification as it was offered, in that thereby he procured for us *Eternal Redemption*, with all that was conducing or needfull thereunto, and how thereby he Expiated our sins, belongs not unto this place to declare. Nor shall I insist upon the more mysterious Way of Communicating cleansing Vertue unto us from the Blood of Christ, by Vertue of our *Union* with him. What hath been spoken may suffice to give a little insight into that *Influence* which the Blood of Christ hath into this first part of our Sanctification and Holiness. And as for those who affirm, that it no otherwise cleanseth us from our sins, but only because we Believing his Doctrine confirmed by his Death and Resurrection, do amend our Lives, turning from Sin unto Righteousness and Holiness, they renounce the Mystery of the Gospel, and all the proper Efficacy of the Blood of Christ.

Sect. 8.

(3) Faith is the *Instrumental Cause* of our Purification. *Purifying their Hearts by Faith, Acts 15. 9.* The two unfailing Evidences of sincere Faith are, that *within* it *purifyeth the Heart*, and *without* it *worketh by Love*. These are the Touch-stone whereon Faith may, yea ought to be tryed. We *purifie our Souls in obeying the Truth through the Spirit*, *1 Pet. 1. 20.* That is, by *Believing* which is our Original Obedience unto the Truth. And hereby are our Souls purified: Unbelievers and Unclean are the same. *Tit. 1. 15.* For they have nothing in them whereby they might be Instrumentally cleansed. And we are *Purified by Faith*. Because (1) Faith it self is the *principal Grace* whereby our Nature is restored unto the Image of God, and so freed from our

Original

Original Defilement; *Col. 3. 10. Joh. 17. 3.* (2) It is by Faith on our part whereby we receive the Purifying Vertue and Influences of the Blood of Christ whereof we have before Discourfed. Faith is the Grace whereby we constantly adhere and cleave unto Christ. *Dent. 4. 4. Josh. 23. 8. Acts 11. 10.* And if the Woman who touched his Garment in Faith, obtained Vertue from him to heal her *Issue of Blood*, shall not those who cleave unto him continually derive Vertue from him for the healing of their spiritual Defilements. (3) It is by the Working of Faith *principally*, whereby those Lusts and Corruptions which are Defiling, are mortified, subdued, and gradually wrought out of our Minds. All actual Defilements spring from the Remainders of defiling Lusts, and their depraved Workings in us, *Heb. 12. 15. Jam. 1. 14.* How Faith worketh to the correcting and subduing of them, by deriving supplies of the Spirit and Grace to that End from Jesus Christ, as being the Means of our abiding in him whereon alone those supplies do depend, *Joh. 15. 3, 4, 5.* as also by the Acting of all other Graces which are contrary to the Polluting Lusts of the Flesh and destructive of them, is usually declared, and we must not too far enlarge on these things. (4) Faith takes in all the *Motives* which are proposed unto us, to stir us up unto our utmost Endeavours and Diligence in the use of all Means and Wayes for the preventing of the Defilements of sin, and for the Cleansing our Minds and Consciences from the Relicts of Dead Works. And these Motives which are *great* and *many* may be reduced unto Two Heads: (1) *A Participation of the Excellent Promises of God* at the Present; the Consideration hereof brings a singular Enforcement on the Souls of Believers to endeavour after universal Purity and Holiness, *2 Cor. 7. 1.* And (2) the *future Enjoyment* of God in Glory, whereunto we cannot attain without being purified from sin, *1 Joh. 3. 1.* Now these Motives which are the Springs of our Duty in this Matter, are received and made Efficacious by Faith only.

(4) Purging from sin is likewise in the Scripture ascribed unto *Afflictions* of all sorts. Hence they are called *Gods Furnace*, and his *Finishing-Pot*, *Isa. 31. 9. Chap. 48. 10.* whereby he taketh away the Dross and Filth of the Vessels of his House. They are called *Fire* that trieth the Wayes and Works of Men, consuming their Hay and Stubble, and purifying their Gold and Silver, *1 Cor. 3. 13.* And this they do through an Efficacy unto the Ends communicated unto them, in the design and by the Spirit of God. For by and in the Cross of Christ, they were cut off from the Curse of the First Covenant, whereunto all Evil and Trouble did belong, and implanted into the Covenant of Grace. The Tree of the Cross being cast into the Waters of Affliction hath rendred them Wholsom and Medicinal. And as the Lord Christ being the Head of the Covenant, all the Afflictions and Persecutions that befall his Members are Originally his, *Isa. 63. 9. Acts 9. 5. Col. 1. 24.* so they all tend to work us unto a Conformity unto him in Purity and Holiness. And they work towards this Blessed End of purifying the Soul several wayes. For (1) They have in them some Tokens of Gods Displeasure against sin, which those who are Exercised by them are led by the Consideration of unto a fresh View of the Vileness of it. For although Afflictions are an Effect of Love, yet it is of Love mixed with

Sect. 9.

Care,

Care, to obviate and prevent Distempers. Whatever they are else they are alwayes *Chastisements*; and Correction respects Faults. And it is our safest course in every Affliction to lodge the Adequate Cause of it in our own Deserts; as the Woman did, 1 *King.* 17. 18. and as God directs, *Psal.* 81. 30, 31, 32. *Lament.* 3. 33, 34. And this is one Difference between his Chastisements and those of the Fathers of our Flesh; that he doth it *not for his Pleasure*, *Heb.* 12. 9, 10. Now a View of *sin* under Suffering makes men loath and abhorre themselves for it, and to be ashamed of it. And this is the first step towards our Purifying of our selves by any Wayes appointed for it. Self-pleasing in *sin* is the highest Degree of our Pollution; and when we loath our selves for it, we are put into the Way at least of seeking after a Remedy. (2) Afflictions take off the Beauty and Allurements of all *Created Good Things* and their Comforts, by which the Affections are solicited to commit Folly and Lewdness with them; that is to embrace and cleave unto them inordinately, whence many Defilements do ensue *Gal.* 6. 14. This God designs them for, even to wither all the Flowrings of this World in the Minds of men, by discovering their Emptiness, Vanity and Insufficiency to give Relief. This intercepts the disorderly intercourse which is apt to be between them and our Affections whereby our Minds are polluted. For there is a Pollution attending the least inordinate Actings of our Minds and Affections towards Objects either in their own nature sinfull, or such as may be rendred so by an Excess in us towards them, whilst we are under the Command of Loving the Lord our God with all our Minds, Souls, and strength, and that alwayes: (3) Afflictions take off the *Edge*, and put a Deadness on those Affections whereby the Corrupt Lusts of the Mind and Flesh, which are the Spring and Cause of all our Defilements do act themselves. They curb those Vigorous and Brisk Affections which were alwayes ready press'd for the service of Lust, and which sometimes carry the Soul into the pursuit of sin, like the *Horse into the Battail* with Madness and Fury. They are no more such prepared Channels for the *Fomes* of Concupiscence to empty it self into the Conversation, nor such *Vehicles* for the spirits of Corrupted Lusts and Inclinations. God I say by Afflictions brings a kind of Death unto the World and the Pleasures of it upon the Desires and Affections of the Soul, which render them unserviceable unto the Remainder of Defiling Lusts and Corruptions. This in some indeed endures but for a season, as when in Sickness, Wants, Fears, Distresses, Losses, Sorrowes, there is a great appearance of Mortification, when yet the strength of sin and the Vigour of Carnal Affections do speedily revive upon the least outward Relief. But with Believers it is not so, but by all their Chastisements they are really more and more delivered from the Pollutions of *sin*, and made Partakers of Gods Holiness, 2 *Cor.* 4. 16, 17. (4) God doth by them excite, stir up and draw forth all the Graces of the Spirit into a constant Diligent and Vigorous *Exercise*, and therein the Work of cleansing the Soul from the Pollution of sin is carried on. A time of Affliction is the Especial *season* for the peculiar Exercise of all Grace. For the Soul can then no otherwise support or relieve it self. For it is cut short or taken off from other Comforts and Reliefs, every *sweet* thing being made *bitter* unto it. It must therefore live not only by

Faith

Faith and Love, and Delight in God, but in some sense upon them. For if in their Exercise, Supportment and Comfort be not obtained we can have none. Therefore doth such a Soul find it necessary to be constantly abounding in the Exercise of Grace, that it may in any measure be able to support it self under its Troubles or Sufferings. Again, there is no other Way whereby a Man may have a sanctified Use of Afflictions, or a good Issue out of them, but by the assiduous Exercise of Grace. This God calls for, this he designs, and without it Afflictions have no other End but to make men Miserable; and they will either have no Deliverance from them, or such a one as shall tend to their farther Misery and Ruine.

And so have we taken a View of the First Part of our Sanctification and Holiness, which I have the more largely insisted on, because the Consideration of it is utterly neglected by them who frame us an Holiness to consist only in the Practice of *Moral Vertue*. And I do not know but what hath been delivered may be looked on as *Fanatical* and *Enthusiastical*. Yet is there no other Reason why it should be so, but only because it is taken from the Scripture. Neither doth that so much insist on any Consideration of *Sin* and *Sanctification*, as this of the Pollution of the one, and the Purifying of it by the other. And to whom the Wisdom and Words of the Holy Ghost are displeasing, we cannot in these things give any satisfaction. And yet I could easily demonstrate, that they were well known to the Ancient Writers of the Church, and for the substance of them were discerned and discussed by the *Schoolmen* in their Manner. But where men hate the *Practice* of Holiness, it is to no Purpose to teach them the *Nature* of it.

But we may not pass over these things without some Reflections upon our selves, and some Consideration of our Concernment in them. And First, Hence we may take a View of our own *State* and Condition by Nature. It is usefull for us all to be looking back into it; and it is necessary for them who are under it to be fully acquainted with it. Therein are we wholly defiled, polluted, and every way unclean. There is a *Spiritual Leprosie* spread all over our Natures, which renders us loathsome to God, and puts us in a state of *separation* from him. They who were Legally unclean were separated from the Congregation, and therein all the Pledges of Gods Gracious Presence, *Numb.* 5. 2. It is so Virtually with all them who are *spiritually* defiled, under that Pollution which is Natural and Universal; they are abhorred of God and separated from him, which was signified thereby. And the Reason why so many Laws with so great severity and exactness were given about the *Cleansing of a Leprous person*, and the Judgement to be made thereon, was only to declare the Certainty of the Judgement of God, *that no unclean person should approach unto him*. Thus is it with all by Nature, and whatever they do of themselves to be quit of it, it doth but hide and not cleanse it. *Adam* cured neither his Nakedness nor the *shame* of it by his *Fig-leaves*. Some have no other Covering of their Natural Filth but outward Ornaments of the Flesh, which encrease it, and indeed rather proclaim it than hide it. The Greatest Filth in the World is covered with the greatest Bravery. See *Isa.* 3. 16. 17. Whatever we do of our selves in answer unto our

E e e

Convictions,

Convictions, is a *Covering* not a *Cleansing*. And if we dye in this Condition unwashed, uncleansed, unpurified, it is utterly impossible that ever we should be admitted into the Blessed Presence of the Holy God, *Rev.* 21. 27. Let no man deceive you then with Vain Words. It is not the doing of a few Good Works, it is not an outward Profession of Religion, that will give you an *Access with Boldness* and Joy unto God. Shame will cover you when it will be too late. Unless you are *washed* by the Spirit of God, and in the Blood of Christ from the Pollutions of your Natures, you shall not inherit the Kingdom of God, *1 Cor.* 6, 9, 10, 11. Yea you will be an horrid spectacle unto Saints and Angels, yea to your selves, unto one another, when the shame of your Nakedness shall be made to appear, *Isa.* 66. 24. If therefore you would not perish and that Eternally, if you would not perish as base defiled Creatures, *an abhorring unto all flesh*, Then when your Pride, and your Wealth, and your Beauty, and your Ornaments, and your Duties, will stand you in no stead, look out betimes after that only way of *purifying* and cleansing your Souls, which God hath ordained. But if you love your Defilements, if you are proud of your Pollutions, if you satisfy your selves with your outward Ornaments; whether *Moral*, of Gifts, Duties, Profession, Conversation; or *Natural*, of Body, Wealth, Apparel, Gold and Silver; there is no Remedy, you must perish for ever, and that under the Consideration of the Basest and Vilest part of the Creation.

Sect. II.

Seeing this is the Condition of all by Nature, if any one now shall enquire and ask what they shall doe, what course they shall take, that they may be cleansed according to the Will of God; in Answer hereunto, I shall endeavour to direct defiled Sinners by sundry steps and degrees in the Way unto the Cleansing Fountain. There is a *Fountain set open for Sin and Uncleaness*, *Zech.* 13. 1. But it falleth out with many, as the Wise man speaketh; *The Labour of the Foolish wearyeth every one of them, because he knoweth not how to goe to the City*, *Eccles.* 10. 15. Men weary themselves and pine away under their Pollutions, because they cannot find the Way; they know not how to go to the *Cleansing Fountain*. I shall therefore direct them from First to Last according to the best skill I have.

1. Labour after an *Acquaintance* with it, to know it in its Nature and Effects. Although the Scripture so abounds in the Assertion and Declaration of it as we have shewed, and Believers find a fence of it in their Experience, yet men in common take little Notice of it. Somewhat they are affected with the *Guilt* of sin, but little or not at all with its *Filth*. So they can escape the *Righteousness* of God which they have provoked, they regard not their unanswerableness unto his *Holiness* whereby they are Polluted. How few indeed do enquire into the Pravity of their Natures, that Vileness which is come upon them by the Loss of the Image of God, or do take themselves to be much concerned therein? How few do consider aright that *Fomes* and filthy Spring which is continually bubbling up crooked, perverse, defiled Imaginations in their Hearts, and influencing their Affections unto the Lewdness of depraved Concupiscence? Who meditates upon the *Holiness* of God in a due Manner, so as to ponder what we our selves ought to be, how Holy, how Upright, how Clean, if we intend

to

to please him or enjoy him? With what Appearances, what Out-sides of things are most men satisfied? Yea how do they please themselves in the shades of their own Darknes and Ignorance of these things, when yet an unacquaintedness with this Pollution of sin is unavoidably ruinous unto their Souls? See the Danger of it, *Revel. 3. 16, 17, 18.* Those who would be *cleansed* from it must first know it; and although we cannot do so aright without some convincing Light of the Spirit of God, yet are there Duties required of us in Order thereunto. As (1) To *Search the Scripture*, and to consider seriously what it declareth concerning the Condition of our Nature after the Loss of the Image of God. Doth it not declare that it is shamefully naked, destitute of all Beauty and Comeliness, wholly polluted and defiled? And what is said of that nature which is common unto all, is said of every one who is Partaker of it. Every one is *gone aside, every one is become altogether filthy*, or stinking, *Psal. 53. 3.* This is the Glass wherein every man ought to Contemplate himself, and not in foolish flattering Reflections from his own Proud Imaginations; And he that will not hence learn his Natural Deformity, shall live *Polluted* and dye *Accursed.* (2) He who hath received the Testimony of the Scripture concerning his corrupted and polluted Estate, if he will be at the Pains to trie and Examine himself by the *Reasons* and *Causes* that are assigned thereof, will have a farther View of it. When men read, hear, or are instructed in what the Scripture teacheth concerning the Defilement of *sin*, and giving some Assent to what is spoken, without an Examination of their own *state* in particular, or bringing their Souls unto that *Standard* and *Measure*, they will have very little advantage thereby; Multitudes learn that they are polluted by Nature which they cannot gainsay, but yet really find no such thing in themselves. But when men will bring their own Souls to the *Glass of the Perfect Law*, and consider how it is with them in respect of that Image of God wherein they were at first created, what manner of Persons they ought to be with respect unto the Holiness of God, and what they are, how Vain are their Imaginations, how Disorderly are their Affections, how Perverse all the Actings of their Minds, they will be ready to say with the Leprous Man, *Unclean, unclean.* But they are but few who will take the pains to search their own Wounds, it being a matter of smart and trouble to corrupt and carnal Affections. Yet (3) *Prayer* for Light and Direction herein is required of all as a Duty. For a Man to know himself, was of Old esteemed the highest Attainment of Humane Wisdom. Some men will not so much as enquire into themselves, and some men dare not, and some neglect the doing of it from *spiritual sloth* and other deceitfull Imaginations. But he that would ever be purged from his sins, must thus far make bold with himself, and dare to be thus far Wise. And in the use of the Means before prescribed, considering his own Darknes and the Treacheries of his Heart, he is to *pray* fervently that God by his Spirit would guide and assist him in his *search* after the Pravity and Defilement of his Nature. Without this he will never make any great or usefull Discoveries. And yet the discerning hereof is the first Evidence that a Man hath received the least Ray of Supernatural Light. The Light of a Natural Conscience will convince Men of, and reprove them for *actual* sins as to their *Guilt*,

Rom. 2. 14, 15. But the meer Light of Nature is dark and confused about its own Confusion. Some of the Old *Philosophers* discerned in general that our Nature was disordered, and complained thereof: But as the Principal Reason of their Complaints was because it would not throughout serve the Ends of their Ambition, so of the Causes and Nature of it, with respect unto God and our Eternal Condition, they knew nothing of it at all. Nor is it discerned but by a *Supernatural Light* proceeding immediately from the Spirit of God. If any therefore have an Heart or Wisdom to know their own Pollution by sin, without which they know nothing of themselves unto any Purpose, let them pray for that Directing Light of the Spirit of God, without which they can never attain to any usefull Knowledge of it.

2. Those who would indeed be purged from the Pollution of Sin, must endeavour to be affected with it suitably to the Discovery which they have made of it. And as the proper Effect of the Guilt of sin is Fear, so the proper Effect of the Filth of sin is Shame. No man who hath read the Scriptures, can be ignorant how frequently God calls on men to be ashamed and confounded in themselves for the Pollutions and Uncleanesses of their sin. So is it expressed in Answer unto what he requires. *O my God, I am ashamed and blush to lift up my face to thee my God, because of our Iniquities*, Ezra 9. 6. And by another Prophet, *We lye down in our shame, and our Confusion covereth us, for we have sinned against the Lord our God*, Jerem. 3. 25. And many other such Expressions are there of this Affection of the Mind with respect unto the Pollution of sin. But we must observe, that there is a Two-fold shame with respect unto it. (1) That which is Legal, or the product of a meer Legal Conviction of Sin. Such was that in Adam immediately after his Fall. And such is that which God so frequently calls open and profligate sinners unto; A shame accompanied with Dread and Terrour, and from which the sinner hath no Relief, unless in such sorry Evasions as our First Parents made use of. And (2) There is a shame which is Evangelical, arising from a mixed Apprehension of the Vileness of sin, and the Riches of Gods Grace in the Pardon and Purifying of it. For although this latter gives Relief against all terrifying discouraging Effects of shame, yet it encreaseth those which tend to genuine self-Abasement and Abhorrency. And this God still requires to abide in us, as that which tends to the Advancement of his Grace in our Hearts. This is fully Expressed by the Prophet, Ezek. 16. 60, 61, 62, 63. *I will remember my Covenant with thee in the Days of thy Youth, and I will establish unto thee an Everlasting Covenant; then shalt thou remember thy Wayes and be ashamed, and I will establish my Covenant with thee, and thou shalt know that I am the Lord, that thou mayest remember and be confounded, and never open thy mouth any more, because of thy shame, when I am pacified toward thee for all that thou hast done, saith the Lord God.* There is a shame and Confusion of face for sin, that is a Consequent yea an Effect of Gods renewing his Covenant, and thereby giving in the full Pardon of sin, as being pacified. And the Apostle asks the Romans what Fruit they had in those things whereof they were now ashamed, Chap. 6. 21. Now, after the Pardon of them they were yet ashamed, from the Consideration of their Filth and Vileness. But it is shame in the First sence that I here intend, as antecedent

antecedent unto the *First Purification* of our Natures. This may be thought to be in all men; but it is plainly otherwise, and men are not at all ashamed of their Sins, which they manifest in Various Degrees. For,

(1) Many are *senceless and stupid*; no Instruction, nothing that befalls them will fix any real *shame* upon them. Of some particular Facts they may be *ashamed*, but for any thing in their Natures they slight and despise it. If they can but preserve themselves from the known Guilt of such sins as are punishable amongst Men, as to all other things they are secure. This is the Condition of the Generality of men living in sin in this World. They have no *inward shame* for any thing between God and their Souls, especially not for the Pravity and Defilement of their Natures, no although they hear the Doctrine of it never so frequently. What may outwardly befall them that is *shamefull* they are concerned in; but for their Internal Pollutions between God and their Souls they know none. Sect. 12.

(2) Some have a *Boldness and Confidence* in their Condition as that which is well and pure enough. *There is a Generation that is pure in their own Eyes, yet are they not washed from their Filthiness, Prov. 30.12.* Although they were never sprinkled with the pure Water of the Covenant, or cleansed by the Holy Spirit; although their Consciences were never purged from dead Works by the Blood of Christ, nor their Hearts purified by Faith, and so are no Way washed from their Filthiness; yet do they please themselves in their Condition as pure in their own Eyes, and have not the least sence of any Defilement. Such a Generation were the *Pharisees* of Old, who esteemed themselves as clean as their Hands and Cups that they were continually washing, though within they were filled with all manner of Defilements, *Isa. 65. 4, 5.* And this Generation is such as indeed despise all that is spoken about the *Pollution of Sin* and its Purification; and deride it as *Enthusiastical*; or a fulsome *Metaphor* not to be understood.

(3) Others proceed farther, and are so far from taking *shame* to themselves for what they are, or what they doe, as that they openly *Boast* of and *Glory* in the most shamefull sins that Humane Nature can contract the Guilt of. *They proclaim their Sins*, saith the Prophet, *like Sodom*, where all the People consented together in the Perpetration of Unnatural Lusts. They are not at all ashamed but *Glory* in the things, which because they do not here, will hereafter fill them with Confusion of Face, *Jerem. 6. 15. Chap. 8. 12.* And where once *sin* gets this Confidence, wherein it compleats a Conquest over the Law, the in-bred Light of Nature, the Convictions of the Spirit, and in a word God himself, then is it ripe for Judgement. And yet is there a higher Degree of *shamelessness* in sin. For,

(4) Some content not themselves with Boasting in their own Sins, but also they *approve* and *delight* in all those who give up themselves unto the like Out-rage in *Sinning* with themselves. This the Apostle expresseth as the highest Degree of *shameless sinning*, *Rom. 1. 32. Who knowing the Judgement of God, that they which Commit such things are worthy of Death, not only do the same, but have Pleasure in them that do them.* When open Profligate Sinners do as it were make themselves up

up into Societies, encouraging and approving one another in their Abominable Courses, so that no Company pleaseth them but such as have obtained an Impudence in sinning, then is the greatest Defiance given unto the *Holiness* and *Righteousness* of God.

NOW such as these will never seek after Cleansing. For why should they do so who are sensible of no *Spiritual Pollution*, nor have the least touch of *shame* with respect thereunto? It is Necessary therefore unto the Duty of Purifying our Souls, that we be *affected with shame* for the Spiritual Defilements which our Nature under the Loss of the Image of God is even rolled in. And where this is not, it will be but lost Labour that is spent in the Invitation of men to the *Cleansing Fountain*.

Sect. 13.

3. Let Persons so affected be fully satisfied, that they can never *Cleanse or Purifie* themselves by any Endeavours that are meerly their own, or by any Means of their own finding out. According unto mens Convictions of the Defilements of sin, so have and alwayes will their Endeavours be after *Purification*, *Hof. 5. 13.* And indeed it is the Duty of Believers to *purifie themselves* more and more in the Exercise of all Purifying Graces, and the use of all Means appointed of God for that Purpose, *2 Cor. 7. 1.* And their neglect thereof is the highest Disadvantage, *Psal. 38. 5.* But men in the state of Nature, concerning whom we now treat, are no way able to cleanse their Natures, or purge themselves. He only who can restore, repair, and renew their Natures unto the Likeness of God, can cleanse them. But here many fall into Mistakes. For when by Reason of their Convictions they can no longer satisfy and please themselves in the Pollution of sin, they goe about by Vain attempts of their own to *purifie their Souls*, *Hof. 5. 13. Jerem. 2. 22. Job 9. 30, 31.* their own Sorrow, and Repentance, and Tears of Contrition, and that sorry Amendment of Life they can attain unto, shall do this Work for them. And every especial defiling Act, or every renewed sense of it, shall have an especial Act of Duty for its Cleansing. But though these things are Good in themselves, yet there is required more Wisdom to the right stating of them, as to their Causes, Respects, Ends, and Use, than they are furnished withall. Hence are they so frequently abused and turned into an effectual Means not only of keeping Men off and at a Distance from Christ, but also from a due and acceptable *Performance* of the very Duties themselves pretended unto. For *Legal Sorrow* or Repentance, or meer *Legal Convictions*, being trusted unto, will infallibly keep the Soul from coming up unto that *Evangelical Repentance* which alone God accepts. And meer *Reformation of Life* rested in, proves opposite to Endeavours for the *Renovation of our Natures*. But let these Duties be performed however in what Manner you please, they are utterly insufficient of themselves to cleanse our Natural Defilements. Nor will any seek duely for that which alone is effectual unto this Purpose, untill they are fully convinced hereof. Let therefore Sinners hear and know whether they will or will not believe it, that as by Nature they are *wholly defiled* and polluted with those Abominations of *Sin* which render them Loathsome in the sight of God, so they have no Power by any Endeavours or Duties of their own to Cleanse themselves; but
by

by all they doe to *this End*, they do but farther plunge themselves into the Ditch, and encrease their own Defilements; yet are all those Duties necessary in their proper Place and unto their *proper End*.

4. It is therefore their Duty to *acquaint themselves* with that only *Remedy* in this Case, that only Means of Cleansing which God hath appointed, and which he makes Effectual. One great End of the Revelation of the Will of God from the Foundation of the World of his Institutions and Ordinances of Worship, was to direct the Souls and Consciences of Men in and unto the Way of their *Cleansing*, which as it argues his Infinite Love and Care, so the great Importance by the Matter it self. And one Principal Means which Satan from the Beginning made use of to keep men in their Apostasie from God, and to encourage them therein, was by supplying them with innumerable Wayes of *Purifications* suited to the Imaginations of their dark unbelieving and superstitious Minds. And in like manner when he designed to draw men off from Christ and the Gospel under the *Papacy*, he did it principally by the suggestion of such present and future *Purgatories* of Sin as might comply with their Lusts and Ignorance; of so great Importance is it therefore to be acquainted with the only true real Way and Means hereof. And there are two Considerations that are suited to excite the Diligence of Sinners in this Enquiry. 1. The *Weight* that is laid on this Matter by God himself. 2. The *Difficulty* of attaining an Acquaintance with it. And (1) as hath been observed, any one by considering the *Legal Institutions* of Old will see what weight God layes hereon. No Sacrifice had any respect unto *sin*, but there was somewhat Peculiar in it that was for its *Cleansing*. And there were sundry *Ceremonious* Ordinances which had no other End but only to purifie from Uncleannesses. (2) Among all the *Promises* of the Old Testament concerning the Establishment of the New Covenant and the Grace thereof, which are Many and Precious, there are none more Eminent than those which concern our Cleansing from sin by the Administration of the Spirit, through the Blood of Christ. Some of them have been mentioned before. Which also farther manifests the Care that God hath taken for our Instruction herein. (3) There is nothing more *pressed* on us, nothing more frequently *proposed* unto us in the Gospel than the *Necessity* of our *Purification* and the only Way of Effecting it. If therefore either Instructions, or Promises, or Precepts, or all concurring, may evidence the Importance of a Duty, then is this manifested to partake therein. And those who will preferre the Guidance of *Carnal Reason* and vain Traditions before these Heavenly Directions, shall live in their Ignorance and dye in their Sins. 2^{ly}, The *Difficulty* of attaining an Acquaintance with it, is to be duely considered. It is a part of the Mystery of the Gospel, and such a part as is among those which the Wisdom of the World or Carnal Reason esteemeth *Foolishness*. It is not easily admitted nor received, that we can no otherwise be *cleansed from our sins* but by the *sprinkling* of that Blood which was shed so long ago. Yet this and no other way doth the Scripture propose unto us: To fancy that there is any *cleansing* from sin but by the Blood of Christ, is to overthrow the Gospel. The Doctrine hereof are Persons therefore obliged to enquire after and come to the knowledge of, that being satisfied with its Truth and that
this

this is the only Way of *Cleansing Sin* appointed and blessed by God himself, their Minds may be exercised about it, and so be taken off from resting on those Vain Medicines and Remedies, which (having nothing else to fix upon) their own Hearts, and others blind Devotions, would suggest unto them.

5. But now the great Enquiry is, How a sinfull *Defiled Soul* may come to have an interest in, or be partaker of, the purifying Vertue and Efficacy of the Blood of Christ? *Ans.* (1) The *purifying* Vertue and Force of the Blood of Christ, with the Administration of the Spirit for its Application to make it effectual unto our Souls and Consciences, is proposed and exhibited unto us in the Promises of the Covenant, 2 *Pet.* 1. 4. This all the Instances (which need not be recited) before produced do testify unto; (2) The only Way to be made partaker of the good things presented in the Promises, is by *Faith*. So *Abraham* is said to have *received the Promises*, *Heb.* 11. 17. and so are we also, and to *receive Christ* himself. Now this is not from *their* being *proposed* unto us, but from *our Believing* of that which is proposed, as it is expressed of *Abraham*, *Rom.* 4. 19, 20, 21. *Chap.* 10. 6, 7, 8, 9. The whole use, benefit and Advantage of the Promises depends absolutely on our *mixing them with Faith*, as the Apostle declares, *Heb.* 4. 1. Where they are mixed with Faith, there they profit us, there we really receive the thing promised. Where they are not so *mixed* they are of no use, but to aggravate our sins and Unbelief. I know that by some men the whole Nature and Work of Faith is derided. They say it is nothing but a *strong fixing of the Imagination* upon what is said. However, we know that if a man promise us any thing seriously and solemnly which is absolutely in his Power, we trust unto his Word or believe him, considering his Wisdom Honesty and Ability. This we know is not a meer *fixing of the Imagination*, but it is a real and usefull Confidence or Trust. And whereas God hath given unto us *great and precious Promises*, and that under several Confirmations, especially that of his Oath and Covenant, if we do really believe their Accomplishment, and that it shall be unto us according to his Word upon the Account of his Veracity, Divine Power, Righteousness and Holiness; why shall this be esteemed a *Fanatical fixing of the Imagination*? If it be so, it was so in *Abraham* our Example, *Rom.* 4. 19, 20, 21. But this Blasphemous Figment designed to the overthrow of the Way of Life and Salvation by Jesus Christ, shall be elsewhere more fully examined. God, as was said, gives unto us great and precious Promises, that by them we might be made partakers of the Divine Nature. These Promises he requireth us to *receive*, and to *mix them with Faith*; that is, trusting to and resting on his Divine Power and Veracity, ascribing unto him thereby the Glory of them, to believe that the things promised unto us shall be accomplished, which is the Means by Gods Appointment whereby we shall be really made partakers of them. Such was the Faith of *Abraham*, so celebrated by our Apostle; and such was all the true and saving Faith that ever was in the World from the Foundation of it. Wherefore (3) This is the *only Way* and Means to obtain an Interest in the *Cleansing Vertue* of the Blood of Christ. God hath given this Power and Efficacy unto it by the Covenant. In the Promise of the Gospel it is proposed and tendered unto us. Faith in that

that Promise is that alone which gives us an Interest in it, makes us partakers of it and renders it actually Effectual unto us, whereby we are really *Cleansed* from sin. (4) There are Two things which concur unto the *Efficacy of Faith* to this Purpose: 1. The *Excellency of the Grace* or Duty it self. Despise their Ignorance who tell you this is but a deceitfull fixing of the Imagination, for they know not what they say. When men come to the real Practice of this Duty, they will find what it is to discard all other Wayes and pretences of *Cleansing*, what it is sincerely and really to give unto God, against all Difficulties and Oppositions, the Glory of his Power, Faithfulness, Goodness and Grace, what it is to approve of the Wisdom and Love of God in finding out this *Way for us*, and the Infiniteness of his Grace in providing it when we were lost and under the Curse, and to be filled with an holy Admiration of him on that Account, all which belong unto the Faith mentioned, neither is it nor can it be acted in a due manner without them; and when you understand these things, you will not think it so strange that God should appoint this *Way of Believing* only as the Means to *interest* us in the purifying Vertue of the *Blood of Christ*. 2. Hereby are we as hath been shewn *united* unto Christ, from whom alone is our *Cleansing*; He that declares another Way must make another Gospel.

6. *Faith* in this Case will act it self in and by *fervent Prayer*. When *David* had by Sin brought himself into that Condition wherein he stood in need of a new universal Purification, how earnest is he in his Supplications that God would again *purge and cleanse him*, *Psal. 51*. And when any Soul is really coming over to the Way of God for his *washing* in the Blood of Christ, he will not be more earnest and fervent in any Supplication than in this; and herein and hereby doth Christ communicate of the *purging Efficacy* of his Blood unto us. And these things may in some measure suffice for the Direction and Guidance of those who are yet wholly under the *Pollution of Corrupted Nature*, how they may proceed to get themselves *cleansed* according to the Mind of God. Not that this Order or Method is prescribed unto any; only these are the Heads of those things which in one Degree or other are wrought in the Souls of them whom Christ will and doth *cleanse* from their Sins.

Secondly, *Instruction* also may be hence taken for them concerning whom our Apostle sayes, *Such were you, but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the Name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God*, *1 Cor. 6. 9*. Such as are freed from the generall Pollution of Nature by the *Washing of Regeneration and renewing of the Holy Ghost*, *Tit. 3. 5*. Those I mean who have been made partakers of that *cleansing* purifying Work of the Holy Ghost, which we have described; several Duties are incumbent on them with respect hereunto. As,

Sect. 14.

(1) Continual *self-abasement* in the Remembrance of that wofull defiled state and Condition from whence they have been delivered. This Consideration is one of them which principally doth influence the Minds of Believers unto *Humility*, and *hideth Pride* from them. For what should Creatures of such a base and defiled Extraction have

to boast of in themselves? It is usual I confess, for Vile men of the most Contemptible Beginnings, when they are greatly exalted in the World, to out-goe others in Pride and Elation of Mind, as they are behind them in the Advantages of Birth and Education. But this is esteemed a vile thing amongst men; and it is but one *Potsherd of the Earth* boasting it self against another. But when Believers shall consider what was their vile and polluted Estate with respect unto God when first he had regard unto them, it will cause them to walk *humbly* in a deep sence of it, or I am sure it ought so to doe. God calls his People to *self-Abasement*, not only from what they *are*, but from what they *were*, and whence they came. So he ordained that Confession to be made by him that offered the *First-fruits* of his Fields and Possessions; *A Syrian ready to perish was my Father*, or a *Syrian*, that is, *Laban* was ready to destroy my Father, a poor helpless man that went from one Countrey to another for Bread. How is it of Sovereign Mercy that I am now in this State and Condition of Plenty and Peace? *Dent. 16. 4, 5.* And in particular, God wonderfully binds upon them the sence of that defiled Natural Extrac-tion whereof we speak, *Ezek. 16. 3, 4, 5.* And when *David* upon his great Sin and his Repentance took in all humbling self-abasing Considerations, here he fixeth the Head of them, *Psal. 51. 5. Behold I was shapen in Iniquity, and in Sin did my Mother conceive me.* His Original natural defilement was that which in the First place influenced him into *self-Abasement*. So our Apostle frequently calls the Saints to a Remembrance of their former Condition before they were *purged*, *Ephes. 2, 11, 12, 13. 1 Cor. 6. 8, 9.* and therewith are the Minds of all true Believers greatly affected and greatly humbled. When they consider what was their Natural State and Condition, universally *leprous* and polluted, with what Reminders of it do still abide, it casts them on the Earth, and causeth them to lay their mouths in the Dust. Hence proceed their great and deep Humiliations of themselves, and Confessions of their own Vileness in their Prayers and Supplications. Considering the Holiness of God with whom they have to doe, unto whom they do approach, they are no way able to expresse what low Thoughts and Apprehensions they have of themselves. Even God himself doth teach them to use *figurative Expressions* whereby to declare their own Vileness by Nature, which abound in the Scripture. It is true, all Declarations hereof in Prayer and Confession of Sin are derided and scorned by some, who seem to understand nothing of these things, yea to Glory that they do not. Whatever is spoken to expresse as they are able the deep sence any have of their Natural Defilement with the Remainder of it, their *shame* and self-Abasement with respect unto the Holiness of God, is reputed either as false and *Hypocritical*, or that it containeth such things as for which men ought to be *hanged*; such prodigious Impudence in proclaiming a senselessness of the Holiness of God, and of the Vileness of Sin, have we lived to see and hear of. But when we have to deal with God, who puts no trust in his Servants, and chargeth his *Angels with Folly*, what shall we say? What Lowliness becomes them who dwell in Houses of Clay, whose Foundation is in the Dust, and who are crushed before the Moth?

(2) That *Initial Deliverance* which Believers have from their *Original*

nal Pollution of Sin, is a Matter and Cause of everlasting Thankfulness. When our Lord Jesus Christ cleansed the *Ten Lepers*, he manifests how much it was their Duty to return unto him with their thankful Acknowledgement, though *Nine* of them failed therein, *Luke* 17. 17. And when of Old any one was cleansed from a carnal Defilement, there was an Offering enjoined him to testify his Gratitude. And indeed, the Consideration hereof is that which in an eminent manner influenceth the Minds of Believers in all their Gratefull Ascriptions of Glory, Honour, and Praise to Jesus Christ. *To him, say they, who loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own Blood, to him be Glory and Dominion for ever and ever, Revel. 1. 5, 6.* And there are three Things which concur to this Duty. (1) A due *Valuation* of the Causes and Means of our Purification, namely, the *sprinkling* of the Blood of Christ in the Sanctification of the Spirit. As these alone have effected this great Work, so they alone were able so to doe. Had we not been *washed* in the Blood of Christ, we must have lived and dyed in our Pollutions, and have lain under them to Eternity. For the Fire of Hell will never purge the Defilements of sin, much less will the fictitious Fire of Purgatory *cleanse* any from them. How ought we then to prize, value and admire both the Vertue or Efficacy of the Blood of Christ, and the Love from whence it was given for us, and is applied unto us. And because this Valuation and Admiration are Acts of Faith, the very Work it self also of *cleansing* our Souls is carryed on by them. For by the Exercise of Faith do we continually derive Vertue from Christ to this purpose, as the Woman did by touching of his Garment for the stopping of her Issue of Blood. (2) *Inward Joy* and Satisfaction in our Freedom from that *shame* which deprived us of all Boldness and Confidence in God. This Internal Joy belongs unto the Duty of Thankfulness. For therein is God glorified when we are graciously sensible of the Effects of his Love and Kindness towards us. Every Grace then glorifies God, and expresseth our Thankfulness for his Love, when a Soul finds it self really affected with a sense of its being *washed* from all its loathsome Defilements in the Blood of Christ, and, being thereby freed from discouraging oppressing *shame*, to have Filial Boldness in the presence of God. (3) *Acknowledgment* in a way of Actual Prayer.

Again; We have declared not only that there is in our Natural Sect. 15. Frame and Spiritual Constitution a Discrepancy to the Holiness of God, and consequently an universal Defilement, but that there is from its Pravity and Disorder a *Pollution* attending every *actual Sin*, whether *internal* of the Heart and Mind only, or *external* in Sin perpetrated, aversè to Holiness and contrary to the carrying on of the Work of Sanctification in us. And sundry things, Believers whose Concernment alone this is, may learn from hence also. As,

(1) How they ought to *Watch against Sin* and all the Motions of it, though never so secret. They all of them *defile* the Conscience. And it is an Evidence of a Gracious Soul to be watchfull against sin on this Account. Convictions will make men wary where they are prevalent, by continual Representations of the Danger and Punishment of sin: And these are an allowable Motive to Believers them-

selves to abstain from it in all known Instances. The Consideration of the Terroure of the Lord, the Use of the Threatnings both of the Law and Gospel, declare this to be our Duty. Neither let any say, that this is *servile fear*; that Denomination is taken from the *frame of our Minds*, and not from the *Object feared*. When men so fear as thereon to be discouraged and to encline unto a Relinquishment of God, Duty, and Hope, that Fear is *servile* whatever be the Object of it. And that Fear which keeps from Sin, and excites the Soul to cleave more firmly to God, be the Object of it what it will, is no servile Fear, but an holy Fear of due Reverence unto God and his Word. But this is the most genuinely gracious fear of sin, when we dread the *defilement* of it, and that Contrariety which is in it to the Holiness of God. This is a Natural Fruit of Faith and Love. And this Consideration should alwayes greatly possess our Minds; and the truth is, if it do not so, there is no assured Preservative against sin. For together with an Apprehension of that *spiritual Pollution* wherewith sin is accompanied, Thoughts of the Holiness of God, of the Care and Concernment of the sanctifying Spirit, of the Blood of Christ, will continually abide in our Minds, which are all efficaciously preservative against Sin. I think that there is no more forceable Argument unto Watchfulness against all sin unto Believers in the whole Book of God, than that which is mannaged by our Apostle, with especial respect unto one kind of sin, but may in Proportion be extended unto all, 1 Cor. 3. 16, 17. Chap. 6. 15, 19. Moreover, where this is not, where the Soul hath no respect to the *Defilement* of sin, but only considers how it may shift with the *Guilt* of it, innumerable things will interpose, partly arising from the abuse of Grace, partly from Carnal Hopes and foolish Resolutions for after-times, as will set it at Liberty from that watchfull Diligence in universal Obedience which is required of us. The Truth is, I do not believe that any one that is awed only with respect to the *Guilt* of sin and its Consequents, doth keep up a firm Integrity with regard to inward and outward actings of his Heart and Life in all things. But where the Fear of the Lord and of Sin is influenced by a deep Apprehension of the *Holiness* of the one and the *Pollution* that inseparably attends the other, there is the Soul kept alwayes upon its best Guard and Defence.

(2) How we ought to *walk humbly* before the Lord all our Dayes. Notwithstanding our utmost Watchfulness and Diligence against sin, there is yet *no man that liveth and sinneth not*. Those who pretend unto a Perfection here, as they manifest themselves to be utterly ignorant of God and themselves, and despise the Blood of Christ, so for the most part they are left visibly and in the sight of men to confute their own Pride and Folly. But to what purpose is it to hide our selves from our selves when we have to do with God? God knows and our own Souls know, that more or less we are *defiled* in all that we doe. The best of our Works and Duties brought into the presence of the Holiness of God, are but as *filthy raggs*. And Man even every man of himself *drinketh in Iniquity like water*. Our own Cloaths are ready to defile us every day. Who can expresse the Motions of Lust that are in the Flesh, the irregular actings of Affections, in their *inordinate* risings up to their Objects, the Folly of the Imaginations of our Hearts and

Minds,

Minds, which as far as they are not Principled by Grace are only evil, and that continually; with the vanity of our Words, yea with a mixture of much corrupt Communications, all which are *defiling*, and have Defilements attending of them? I confess I know not that my Heart and Soul abhors any Eruption of the Diabolical pride of man, like that whereby they reproach and scoff at the deepest Humiliations and self-Abasements which poor sinners can attain unto in their Prayers, Confessions and Supplications. Alas! that our Nature should be capable of such a Contempt of the Holiness of God, such an Ignorance of the infinite distance that is between him and us, and be so senseless of our own Vileness, and of the abominable Filth and Pollution that is in every Sin, as not to tremble at the despising of the lowest Abasements of poor sinners before the Holy God. *Behold his soul which is lifted up is not upright in him, but the just shall live by his Faith.*

(3) How we ought continually to endeavour after the *wasting* of Sin in the *Root* and Principle of it. There is a *Root* of sin in us which springs up and defiles us. Every man is tempted (that is *chiefly* and *principally*) of his own Lust, and seduced, and then when Lust hath conceived it bringeth forth Sin. It is the Flesh that lusteth against the Spirit, and which bringeth forth corrupted and corrupting, polluted and polluting Fruits. This Principle of Sin, of Averſation from God, of Inclination unto things Sensual and Present, however wounded, weakened, dethroned, impaired, yet still abides in all Believers. And it is the Foundation, the Spring, the Root, the next Cause of all sin in us, which tempts, enticeth, draws aside, conceives and brings forth. And this hath in us all, more or less degrees of Strength, Power and Activity, according as it is more or less mortified by Grace, and the Application of the Vertue of the Death of Christ unto our Souls. And according to its *strength* and *power*, so it abounds in bringing forth the *defiled Acts* of sin. Whilst this retains any considerable Power in us, it is to no purpose to set our selves merely to watch against the Eruptions of Actual sins in the Frames of our Hearts, in the Thoughts of our Minds, or outward Actions. If we would preserve our selves from multiplying our Defilements, if we would continually be perfecting the Work of Holiness in the Fear of the Lord, it is this we must set our selves against. The *Tree* must be made *good* if we expect *good Fruit*, and the evil Root must be digged up, or *evil Fruit* will be brought forth. That is, our main Design should be to crucify and *destroy the Body of the sins of the flesh* that is in us, the Remainders of the Flesh or In-dwelling sin, by the Wayes and Means which shall afterwards be declared.

(4) Hence also is manifest the Necessity we have of *continual Applications* to Jesus Christ for *cleansing Vertue* from his Spirit, and the sprinkling of his Blood on our Consciences in the Efficacy of it to purge them from dead works. We *defile* our selves *every day*, and if we go not *every day* to the Fountain that is open for sin and for uncleanness, we shall quickly be all over Leprous. Our Consciences will be filled with *dead Works*, so that we shall no way be able to serve the Living God, unless they are daily purged out. How this is done hath been at large before declared. When a Soul filled with self-Abasement, under a sense of
its

its own Defilements, applies it self unto Christ by Faith for *cleansing*, and that constantly and continually, with a Fervency answering its sense and Convictions, it is in its Way and proper Course. I am persuaded no true Believer in the World is a stranger unto this Duty. And the more any one abounds therein, the more genuine is his Faith evidenced to be, and the more Humble is his Walk before the Lord.

Sect. 16.

But it may justly be enquired, upon all that we have discoursed upon this Subject concerning the *Defilement* of sin, How, if it be so, Believers can be *united unto Jesus Christ*, or be *Members* of that Mystical Body whereof he is the Head, or obtain *Fellowship* with him. For whereas he is absolutely *pure*, holy, and perfect, how can he have *Union* or *Communion* with them who are in any thing *defiled*? There is no Fellowship between Righteousness and Unrighteousness, no Communion of Light and Darkness, and what can there be between Christ and those that are defiled with sin? And because he is *holy, harmless and undefiled*, he is said to be *separate from sinners*.

Many things must be returned unto this Objection, all concurring to take away the seeming difficulty that is in it. As,

(1) It must be granted, that where men are *wholly* under the Power of their Original Defilement, they neither have nor can have either Union or Communion with Christ. With respect unto such Persons, the Rules before mentioned are universally true and certain: There is no more *Communion* between them and Jesus Christ, than is between Light and Darkness, as the Apostle speaks expressly, 1 *Joh.* 1.6. Whatever Profession they may make of his Name, whatever Expectations they may unduely raise from him in their own Minds, he will say unto them at the last day, *Depart from me, I never knew you*. No person therefore whatever, who hath not been made Partaker of the washing of Regeneration and the Renovation of the Holy Ghost, can possibly have any Union with Christ. I do not speak this as though our *purifying* were in order of Time or Nature antecedent unto our Union with Christ, for indeed it is an Effect thereof. But it is such an Effect as immediately and inseparably accompanyeth it; so that where the one is not, there is not the other. The *Act* whereby he unites us unto himself, is the same with that whereby he *cleanseth* our Natures.

(2) Whatever our *Defilements* are or may be, he is not *defiled* by them. They adhere only unto a *capable Subject*, which Christ is not. He was capable to have the *Guilt* of our sins imputed to him, but not the *Filth* of one sin adhering to him. A Member of a Body may have a putrified Sore. The *Head* may be troubled at it, and grieved with it, yet is not defiled by it. Wherefore, where there is a Radical Original Cleansing by the Spirit of Regeneration and Holiness, whereby any one is meet for Union and Communion with Christ, however he may be *affected* with our *partial Pollutions*, he is not *defiled* by them; He is able *συμπαθεῖν*, *compati, condolere*, he suffers with us in his Compassion; but he is not liable *συμμοιῦναι*, to be *defiled with us*, or for us. The *Visible* Mystical Body of Christ may be defiled by *corrupt Members*, *Heb.* 12. 15. but the *Mystical* Body cannot be so, much less the Head.

(3) The

(3) The Design of Christ when he takes Believers into Union with himself, is to *purge and cleanse* them absolutely and perfectly; and therefore the present remainders of some Defilements are not absolutely inconsistent with that Union. *He gave himself for it, that he might sanctifie and cleanse it with the washing of Water by the Word, that he may present it unto himself a Glorious Church not having spot or wrinkle, or any such thing, but that it should be holy and without blemish, Ephes. 5. 26, 27.* This he aims at, and this he will, in his own Way and in his own Time, perfectly accomplish. But it is not done at once, it is a Progressive Work, that hath many degrees. God did never *sanctifie* any Soul at once, unless by Death. The *Body* must dye by reason of Sin. Every Believer is truly and *really* sanctified at once, but none is *perfectly* sanctified at once. It is not therefore necessary unto Union that we should be *completely* sanctified, though it is that we should be *truly* sanctified. Compleat Sanctification is a necessary Effect of Union in its proper Time and Season. See *Joh. 15. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5.*

(4) Where the Work of Sanctification and Spiritual Cleansing is *really begun* in any, there the whole Person is, and is thence denominated Holy. As therefore Christ the Head is Holy, so are all the Members Holy according to their Measure. For although there may be Defilements *adhering* unto their Actions, yet their Persons are sanctified. So that no *unholy Person* hath any Communion with Christ, no Member of his Body is unholy, that is, absolutely so, in such a state as thence to be denominated Unholy.

(5) Our Union with Christ is immediately in and by the *New Creature* in us, by the Divine Nature which is from the Spirit of Holiness, and is Pure and Holy. Hereunto and hereby doth the Lord Christ communicate himself unto our Souls and Consciences; and hereby have we all our Entercourse with him. Other Adherences that have any Defilement in them, and consequently are opposite unto this Union, he daily worketh out by vertue hereof, *Rom. 8. 10.* The whole Body of Christ therefore, and all that belongs unto it is *holy*, though those who are Members of this Body are in themselves oft-times polluted, but not in any thing which belongs to their Union. The Apostle describeth the two-fold Nature, or Principle that is in Believers, the New Nature by Grace, and the Old of Sin, as a double Person, *Rom. 7. 19, 20.* And it is the former, the renewed, (and not the latter, which he calls *I* also, but corrects as it were that Expression, calling it *Sin which dwelleth in him,*) that is the subject of the *Union* with Christ, the other being to be destroyed.

(6) Where the *Means of Purification* are duely used, no Defilement ensues on any sin that Believers fall into, which doth or can totally obstruct Communion with God in Christ according to the Tenor of the Covenant. There were many things under the Old Testament, that did Typically and Legally defile men that were lyable unto them. But for all of them there were provided *Typical* and Legal Purifications, which sanctified them as to the purifying of the Flesh. Now no man was absolutely cut off or separated from the People of God for his being so defiled; but he that being defiled did not take care that he might be Purified according to the Law, He was to be cut off from among the People. It is in like manner in things Spiritual
and

and Evangelical. There are many sins whereby Believers are defiled. But there is a *Way of Cleansing* still open unto them. And it is not merely the Incidence of a *Defilement*, but the Neglect of *Purification* that is inconsistent with their state and Interest in Christ. The Rule of Communion with God, and consequently of Union with Christ in its Exercise, is expressed by *David*, *Psal.* 19. 12, 13. *Who can understand his Errors, cleanse thou me from secret sins; keep back thy Servant also from presumptuous sins, let them not have dominion over me, then shall I be upright, and I shall be innocent from the great transgression.* The Design of the *Psalmist* is to be preserved in such a state and Condition, as wherein he may be *upright* before God. To be *upright* before God is that which God requireth of us in the Covenant, that we may be accepted with him, and enjoy the Promises thereof, *Gen.* 17. 1. He that is so, will be freed from that great Transgression, or that Abundance of sin which is inconsistent with the Covenant, Love and Favour of God. And hereunto three things are required. 1. A constant humble Acknowledgement of Sin; *Who can understand his Errors?* 2. Daily Cleansing from those Defilements which the least and most secret sins are accompanied withall. *Cleanse thou me from secret sins;* and 3. A Preservation from Presumptuous sins, or Willfull sins committed with an high hand. Where these things are, there a man is *upright*, and hath the Covenant-ground of his Communion with God. And whilst Believers are preserved within these Bounds, though they are defiled by sin, yet is there not any thing therein inconsistent with their Union with Christ.

(7.) Our Blessed Head is not only *pure* and Holy, but he is also Gracious and Mercifull, and will not presently cut off a Member of his Body, because it is sick or hath a sore upon it. He is himself passed through his Course of Temptations, and is now above the reach of them all. Doth he therefore reject and despise those that are Tempted, that labour and suffer under their Temptations? It is quite otherwise, so that on the Account of his own present *state* his Compassions do exceedingly abound towards all his that are Tempted. It is no otherwise with him as to their Sins and Defilements. These he himself was absolutely freed from in all his Temptations and Sufferings, but we are not. And he is so far from casting us away on that Account, while we endeavour after Purification, as that it draweth out his Compassions towards us. In brief, he doth not unite us to himself because we are *perfect*, but that in his own Way and Time he may make us so; not because we are *clean*, but that he may cleanse us, for it is the *Blood of Jesus Christ* with whom we have Fellowship, *that cleanseth us from all our sins.*

Sect. 17.

Lastly, to wind up this Discourse, There is hence sufficiently evidenced a Comprehensive Difference between a *Spiritual Life* unto God by *Evangelical Holiness*, and a *Life of Moral Vertue* though pretended unto God also. Unto the first, the Original and continual *Purification* of our Nature and Persons by the Spirit of God and Blood of Christ is indispensibly required. Where this Work is not, there neither is nor can be any thing of that Holiness which the Gospel prescribes, and which we enquire after. Unless the Purification and
Cleansing

Cleansing of sin belongs necessarily unto the Holiness of the New Covenant, all that God hath taught us concerning it in the Old Testament and the New, by his Institution of Legal purifying Ordinances, by his Promises to wash purifie and cleanse us, by his Precepts to get our selves cleansed by the Means of our Purification, namely, his Spirit and the Blood of Christ, by his *Instructions* and Directions of us to make use of those Means of our Cleansing, by his Declarations that Believers are so washed and cleansed from all their Defilements of their sins, are things *Fanatical, Enthusiastick, Notions*, and Unintelligible Dreams. Untill men can rise up to a Confidence enabling them to own such horrible Blasphemies, I desire to know, whether these things are required unto their *Morality*? If they shall say they are so, they give us a new Notion of *Morality* never yet heard of in the World; and we must expect untill they have further cleared it, there being little or no signification in the great swelling words of Vanity which have hitherto been lavished about it: But if they do not belong thereunto, as it is most certain, the most improved *Moralists*, that are only so, whether in Notion or Practice, have no regard unto them; then is their *Life of Moral Vertues* (were it as real in them as it is with notorious Vanity pretended) cast out from all Consideration in a serious Disquisition after *Evangelical Holiness*. And what hath been spoken may suffice to give us some Light into the Nature of this First Act of our Sanctification by the Spirit, which consists in the *Cleansing* of our Souls and Consciences from the *Pollutions* of Sin both Original and Actual.

CHAP. VI.

The Positive Work of the Spirit in the Sanctification of Believers.

(1) Differences in the Acts of Sanctification as to Order. (2) The Manner of the Communication of Holiness by the Spirit. (3) The Rule and Measure whereof is the Revealed Will of God. (4) As the Rule of its Acceptance is the Covenant of Grace. (5) The Nature of Holiness as Inward. (6) Righteousness Habitual and Actual. (7) False Notions of Holiness removed. (8) The Nature of a Spiritual Habit. (9) Applied unto Holiness, with its Rules and Limitations. (10) Proved and Confirmed. (11) Illustrated, and (12) Practically improved. (13) The Properties of Holiness as a Spiritual Habit, declared. (14) 1. Spiritual Dispositions unto Suitable Acts; (15, 16.) How expressed in the Scripture. (17) With their Effects. (18) Contrary Dispositions unto Sin and Holiness how consistent. (19) 2. Power; (20) The Nature thereof; or what Power is required in Believers, unto Holy Obedience. (21) With its Properties and Effects in Readiness and (22) Facility. (23) Objections thereunto answered, and (24) An Enquiry on these Principles after true Holiness in our selves, directed. (25) Gospel Grace distinct from Morality, and (26) All other Habits of the Mind. (27, 28, 29.) Proved by many Arguments, especially its Relation unto the Mediation of Christ. (30) The Principal Difference between Evangelical Holiness and all other Habits of the Mind, proved by the Manner and Way of its Communication from the Person of Christ as the Head of the Church, and the peculiar Efficiency of the Spirit therein. (31) Moral Honesty not Gospel Holiness.

Sect. I.

THE Distinction we make between the Acts of the Holy Ghost in the Work of Sanctification, concerneth more the Order of Teaching and Instruction, than any Order of Precedency that is between the Acts themselves. For that which we have passed through concerning the *Cleansing* of our Natures and Persons, doth not in Order of Time go before those other Acts which leave a real and positive Effect upon the Soul, which we now enter upon the Description of; nor absolutely in Order of Nature. Yea, much of the Means whereby the Holy Ghost purifieth us, consisteth in this other Work of his which now lyes before us. Only we thus distinguish them and cast them into this Order, as the Scripture also doth, for the Guidance of our Understanding in them, and furtherance of our Apprehension of them.

We

We therefore now proceed unto that part of the Work of the Holy Spirit, whereby he Communicates the great permanent positive Effect of *Holiness* unto the Souls of Believers, and whereby he guides and assists them in all the Acts, Works and Duties of Holiness whatever, without which, what we doe is not so, nor doth any way belong thereunto. And this part of his Work we shall reduce unto two Heads, which we shall first propose, and afterwards clear and vindicate.

Sect. 2.

And our First Assertion is, *That in the Sanctification of Believers, the Holy Ghost doth work in them, in their whole Souls, their Minds, Wills and Affections, a gracious supernatural Habit, Principle, and Disposition of Living unto God, wherein the Substance or Essence, the Life and Being of Holiness doth consist.* This is that *spirit* which is born of the *spirit*, that *new Creature*, that new and Divine Nature which is wrought in them, and whereof they are made partakers. Herein consists that *Image of God* whereunto our Natures are repaired by the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, whereby we are made conformable unto God, firmly and steadfastly adhering unto him through Faith and Love. That there is such a *Divine Principle*, such a gracious supernatural *Habit*, wrought in all them that are Born again, hath been fully proved in our Assertion and Description of the Work of *Regeneration*. It is therefore acknowledged, that the first supernatural Infusion or Communication of this *Principle of spiritual Light and Life*, preparing, fitting and enabling all the Faculties of our Souls unto the Duties of Holiness, according to the Mind of God, doth belong unto the Work of our first Conversion. But the preservation, cherishing and encrease of it belongs unto our Sanctification, both its Infusion and Preservation being necessarily required unto Holiness. Hereby is the *Tree made good*, that the Fruit of it may be good, and without which it will not so be. This is our new Nature, which ariseth not from *precedent Actions* of Holiness, but is the Root of them all. *Habits* acquired by a multitude of Acts, whether in things Morall or Artificial, are not a *new Nature*, nor can be so called, but a readiness for Acting from Use and Custom. But this Nature is from God its Parent, it is that in us which is born of God. And it is Common unto, or the same in all Believers, as to its Kind and Being, though not as to Degrees and Exercise. It is that we cannot learn, which cannot be taught us but by God only, as he teaches other Creatures in whom he planteth a natural Instinct. The Beauty and Glory hereof as it is absolutely inexpressible, so have we spoken somewhat to it before. Conformity to God, Likeness to Christ, Compliance with the Holy Spirit, Interest in the Family of God, Fellowship with Angels, Separation from Darkness and the World, do all consist herein.

Secondly, The *Matter* of our Holiness consists in our *Actual Obedience* unto God, according to the Tenor of the Covenant of Grace. For God promiseth to write his Law in our Hearts, that we may fear him and walk in his Statutes. And concerning this in general we may observe two things.

Sect. 3.

1. *That there is a certain fixed Rule and Measure of this Obedience, in a Conformity and Answerableness whereunto it doth consist.* This

is the *Revealed Will* of God in the Scripture, *Micah* 6. 8. Gods Will I say as revealed unto us in the Word is the Rule of our Obedience. A Rule it must have, which nothing else can pretend to be. The secret Will or hidden Purposes of God are not the Rule of our Obedience, *Dent.* 29. 29. much less are our own Imaginations, Inclinations or Reasons so; neither doth any thing, though never so specious, which we do in Compliance with them or by their Direction, belong thereunto, *Col.* 2. 19, 20, 21, 22. But the Word of God is the Adequate Rule of all Holy Obedience. (1) It is so *materially*. All that is commanded in that Word belongs unto our Obedience, and nothing else doth so. Hence are we so strictly required neither to *add unto it* nor to *diminish* or take any thing from it, *Dent.* 4. 2. *Chap.* 12. 32. *Josh.* 1. 7. *Prov.* 30. 6. *Revel.* 22. 18. (2) It is so *formally*; that is, we are not to do only *what is commanded*, all that is commanded, and nothing else, but whatever we do we are to do it *because it is commanded*, or it is no part of our Obedience or Holiness, *Dent.* 6. 24, 25. *Chap.* 29. 19. *Psal.* 119. 9. I know there is an in-bred Light of Nature as yet remaining in us, which gives great Direction as to Moral Good and Evil, commanding the one and forbidding the other, *Rom.* 2. 14, 15. But this Light, however it may be made subservient and subordinate thereunto, is not the Rule of Gospel Holiness as such, nor any part of it. The *Law* which God by his Grace writes in our Hearts, answers unto the Law that is written in the Word that is given unto us; and as the first is the only Principle, so the latter is the only Rule of our Evangelical Obedience. For this End hath God promised that his Word and his Spirit shall alwayes accompany one another, the one to quicken our Souls, and the other to guide our *Lives*, *Isa.* 59. 20. And the Word of God may be considered as our Rule in a threefold Respect. 1. As it requires the *Image of God* in us. The Habitual Rectitude of our Nature with respect unto God and our Living to him, is Enjoyed us in the Word, yea and wrought in us thereby. The whole Renovation of our Natures, the whole Principle of Holiness before described, is nothing but the Word changed into Grace in our Hearts; for we are *born again by the incorruptible seed of the Word of God*. The Spirit worketh nothing in us, but what the Word first requireth of us. It is therefore the Rule of the inward Principle of spiritual Life, and the growth thereof is nothing but its increase in Conformity to that Word. 2. With respect unto all the *Actual Frames*, Designs and Purposes of the Heart, All the internal Actings of our Minds, All the *Volitions* of the Will, all the *Motions* of our Affections are to be regulated by that Word which requires us to Love the Lord our God with all our Minds, all our Souls, and all our Strength. Hereby is their Regularity or Irregularity to be tried. All that Holiness which is in them consists in their Conformity to the Revealed Will of God. 3. With respect unto all our *outward Actions* and Duties, private, publick, of Piety, of Righteousness, towards our selves or others, *Titus* 2. 12. This is the Rule of our Holiness. So far as what we are and what we doe answers thereunto, so far are we *holy* and no further. Whatever Acts of *Devotion* or Duties of *Morality* may be performed without respect hereunto, belong not to our Sanctification.

2. As there is a Rule of our *Performance* of this Obedience, so there is a Rule of the *Acceptance* of our Obedience with God. And this is the *Tenor of the New Covenant*, Gen. 17. 1. What answers hereunto is accepted, and what doth not so is rejected, both as to the Universality of the whole, and the Sincerity that accompanyes each particular Duty in it. And these two things, *Universality* and *Sincerity*, answer now as to some certain Ends the Legal Perfection at first required of us. In the Estate of Original Righteousness, the Rule of our Acceptance with God in our Obedience was the Law and Covenant of Works. And this required that it should be absolute, perfect in *Parts* and *Degrees*, without the least intermixture of *sin* with our *good*, or interpolation of it in the least Instance, which was inconsistent with that Covenant. But now although we are renewed again by Grace in the Image of God really and truly, yet not absolutely nor perfectly, but only in part. We have yet remaining in us a contrary Principle of Ignorance and Sin, which we must alwayes conflict withall, Gal. 5. 16, 17. Wherefore God in the Covenant of Grace is pleased to accept of that Holy Obedience which is *universal* as to all Parts, in all known Instances of Duty, and *sincere* as to the Manner of their Performance. What in particular is required hereunto, is not our present Work to declare. I only aim to fix in general the Rule of the Acceptance of this Holy Obedience. Now the Reason hereof is not, that a Lower and more imperfect kind of Righteousness, Holiness and Obedience, will answer all the Ends of God and his Glory now under the New Covenant, than would have done so under the Old. Nothing can be imagined more distant from the Truth, or more dishonourable to the Gospel, nor that seems to have a nearer approach unto the making of Christ the *Minister of sin*. For what would he be else, if he had procured that God would accept of a weak imperfect Obedience, accompanied with many failings infirmities and sins, being in nothing compleat, in the Room and stead of that which was compleat, perfect and absolutely sinless, which he first required of us? Yea, God having determined to exalt and glorifie the Holy Properties of his Nature in a more eminent and Glorious manner under the New Covenant than the Old, for which Cause and End alone it is so exalted and preferred above it, it was necessary that there should be a *Righteousness* and Obedience required therein, far more compleat, eminent and glorious than that required in the other. But the Reason of this Difference lyes solely herein, that our *Evangelical Obedience* which is accepted with God, according to the Tenor of the New Covenant, doth not hold the same place which our Obedience should have had under the Covenant of Works. For therein it should have been our *Righteousness* absolutely before God, that whereby we should have been Justified in his sight, *even the Works of the Law*, and for which in a due Proportion of Justice we should have been Eternally rewarded. But this place is now filled up by the Righteousness and Obedience of Christ our Mediator, which being the Obedience of the Son of God, is far more eminent and glorious, or tends more to the Manifestation of the Properties of Gods Nature, and therein the Exaltation of his Glory, than all that we should have done had we abode steadfast
in

in the Covenant of Works. Whereunto then, it may be some will say, serves our *Holiness* and Obedience, and what is the Necessity of it. I must deferre the answering of this Enquiry unto its proper place, where I shall prove at large the *Necessity of this Holiness*, and demonstrate it from its proper Principles and Ends. In the mean time, I say only in general, that as God *requireth* it of us, so he hath appointed it as the *only means* whereby we may express our Subjection to him, our Dependance on him, our Fruitfulness and Thankfulness, the only Way of our Communion and Entercourse with him, of using and improving the Effects of his Love, the Benefits of the Mediation of Christ, whereby we may glorifie him in this World, and the only orderly way whereby we may be made meet for the Inheritance of the Saints in Light, which is sufficient in general to manifest both its Necessity and its use. These things being then in general premised, I shall comprize what I have further to offer in the Declaration and Vindication of Gospel-Sanctification and Holiness, in the two ensuing Assertions.

Sect. 5.

1. *There is wrought and preserved in the Minds and Souls of all Believers, by the Spirit of God, a supernatural Principle or Habit of Grace and Holiness, whereby they are made meet and enabled to live unto God, and perform that Obedience which he requireth and accepteth through Christ in the Covenant of Grace, essentially or specifically distinct from all natural Habits intellectual and moral, however or by what Means soever acquired or improved.*

2. *There is an immediate Work or effectual Operation of the Holy Spirit by his Grace, required unto every Act of holy Obedience, whether internal only in Faith and Love, or external also; that is, unto all the holy Actings of our Understandings, Wills and Affections, and unto all Duties of Obedience in our Walking before God.*

The First of these Assertions I affirm not only to be true, but of so great weight and importance, that our Hope of Life and Salvation depends thereon, and it is the second great Principle constituting our Christian Profession. And there are Four things that are to be confirmed concerning it. (1) That there is such an *Habit* or Principle *supernatural*, Infused or Created in Believers by the Holy Ghost, and alwayes abiding in them. (2) That according to the Nature of all *Habits* it *inclines* and *disposeth* the Mind, Will and Affections, unto Acts of Holiness suitable unto its own Nature, and with regard unto its proper End, and to make us meet to live unto God. (3) It doth not only encline and dispose the Mind, but gives it *Power*, and enables it to live unto God in all Holy Obedience. (4) That it differs *specifically* from all other Habits *Intellectual* or *Morall*, that by any Means we may acquire or attain; or *spiritual Gifts* that may be conferred on any Persons whatever.

Sect. 6.

In the handling of these things, I shall manifest the Difference that is between a *spiritual supernatural Life* of Evangelical Holiness, and a Course of *Moral Vertue*, which some to the rejection of the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, do endeavour to substitute in the Room thereof. Such a *Spiritual, Heavenly, Supernatural Life*, so denominated

nated from its Nature, Causes, Acts and Ends, we must be partakers of in this World, if ever we mind to attain Eternal Life in another.

And herein we shall take what View we are able of the Nature, Glory and Beauty of Holiness, and do confess, it is but little of them which I can comprehend. It is a matter indeed often spoken unto; but the Essence and true Nature of it, are much hidden from the Eyes of all living men. The sense of what the Scripture proposeth, what I believe, and what I desire an Experience of, that I shall endeavour to declare. But as we are not in this Life perfect in the Duties of Holiness, no more are we in the Knowledge of its Nature.

Sect. 7.

First therefore I say, it is a *gracious supernatural Habit*, or a Principle of spiritual Life. And with respect hereunto I shall briefly do these three things. 1. Shew what I mean by such an *Habit*. 2. Prove that there is such an *Habit* required unto Holiness, yea that the Nature of Holiness consists therein. 3. Declare in general the Properties of it.

1. Our First Enquiry is after the *Essence* and *form* of Holiness, that from which any one is truly and really made and denominated Holy; or what is the *formal Reason* of that Holiness which our Nature is partaker of in this World. This must be something *peculiar*, something *excellent* and *sacred*, as that which constitutes the great and only Difference that is between Mankind, on their own part, in the sight of God, with respect unto Eternity. Every one that hath this Holiness pleaseth God, is accepted with him, and shall come to the Enjoyment of him. And every one that hath it not, is rejected of him here and hereafter.

Sect. 8.

And this Holiness in the first place doth not consist in any *single Acts of Obedience* unto God, though good in their own Nature, and acceptable unto him. For such Acts may be performed, yea many of them, by *unholy* persons, with Examples whereof the Scripture aboundeth. *Cain's Sacrifice* and *Ahab's Repentance*, were signal single Acts of Obedience *materially*; yet no Acts of Holiness *formally*, nor did either make or denominate them Holy. And our Apostle tells us, that men may give *all their Goods to the Poor, and their Bodies to be burned*, and yet be nothing, 1 Cor. 13. yet in single Acts who can go further? Such Fruits may spring from Seed that hath no Root. Single Acts may evidence Holiness, as *Abraham's Obedience* in sacrificing his Son, but they constitute none Holy; nor will a *series*, a Course, a Multiplication of Acts and Duties of Obedience either constitute or denominate any one so, Isa. 1. 11, 12, 13, 14, 15. All the Duties, a *series* and *multiplication* whereof are there rejected for want of Holiness, were good in themselves, and appointed of God. Nor doth it consist in an *Habitual Disposition* of Mind unto any *outward Duties*, of Piety, Devotion or Obedience, however obtained or acquired. Such *Habits* there are both Intellectual and Morall. *Intellectual Habits* are Arts and Sciences. When men by Custom, Usage, and frequent Acts in the Exercise of any Science, Art or Mystery, do get a ready Facility in and unto all the Parts and Duties of it, they have an *Intel-*
lectual

lectual Habit therein. It is so in things Morall, as to Vertues and Vices. There are some seeds and sparks of *Moral Vertues* remaining in the Ruines of depraved Nature, as of Justice, Temperance, Fortitude, and the like. Hence God calls on profligate Sinners to remember and shew themselves Men, or not to act contrary to the Principles and Light of Nature, which are inseparable from us as we are Men, *Isa.* 46. 8. These Principles may be so excited in the Exercise of Natural Light, and improved by Education, Instruction and Example, untill persons by an assiduous diligent performance of the Acts and Duties of them, may attain such a Readiness unto them and Facility in them, as is not by any outward Means easily changed or diverted; and this is a *Moral Habit*; in like manner in the Duties of Piety and Religion, in Acts of outward Obedience unto God, men by the same Means may so accustom themselves unto them, as to have an *habitual Disposition* unto their Exercise. I doubt not but that it is so unto an high Degree with many superstitious Persons. But in all these things, the *Acts* do still precede the *Habits* of the same nature and kind, which are produced by them and not otherwise. But this *Holiness* is such an *Habit* or Principle as is antecedent unto all Acts of the same kind, as we shall prove. There never was by any, nor ever can be, any *Act* or Duty of true *Holiness* performed, where there was not in Order of Nature antecedently an *Habit* of Holiness in the Persons by whom they are performed. Many Acts and Duties for the substance of them good and approveable, may be performed without it, but no one that hath the proper Form and Nature of Holiness can be so. And the Reason is, because every Act of true Holiness must have something *supernatural* in it from an internal renewed Principle of Grace, and that which hath not so, be it otherwise what it will, is no Act or Duty of true Holiness.

Sect. 9. And I call this Principle of Holiness an *HABIT*; not as though it were absolutely of the same kind with *acquired Habits*, and would in all things answer to our Conceptions and Descriptions of them: But we only call it so, because in its Effects and Manner of Operation, it agreeth in sundry things with acquired intellectual or moral Habits. But it hath much more Conformity unto a natural unchangeable Instinct, than unto any acquired Habit. Wherefore, God chargeth it on men, that in their Obedience unto him they did not answer that *instinct* which is in other Creatures towards their Lords and Benefactors, *Isa.* 1. 3. and which they cordially observe, *Jerem.* 8. 7. But herein God teacheth us more than the Beasts of the Earth, and maketh us wiser than the Fowls of Heaven, *Job* 35. 11.

This therefore is that which I intend; A Vertue, a Power, a Principle of Spiritual Life and Grace, wrought, created, infused into our Souls, and in-laid in all the Faculties of them, constantly abiding, and unchangeably residing in them, which is antecedent unto, and the next Cause of all Acts of true Holiness whatever. And this is that as was said, wherein the *nature of Holiness* doth consist, and from which in those that are *Adult*, the actual Discharge of all Duties and Works of Holiness is inseparable. This abideth alwayes in and with all that are sanctified, whence they are alwayes Holy, and not only so when they

they are actually exercised in the Duties of Holiness. Hereby are they prepared disposed and enabled unto all Duties of Obedience, as we shall shew immediately, and by the Influence hereof into their Acts and Duties do they become Holy, and no otherwise.

For the further Explanation of it, I shall only add three things.

Sect. 10.

(1) That this *Habit* or Principle thus wrought and abiding in us, doth not, if I may so say, Firm its own Station, or abide and continue in us by its own natural Efficacy, in adhering unto the Faculties of our Souls. *Habits* that are acquired by many Actions, have a natural Efficacy to preserve themselves, untill some Opposition that is too hard for them, prevail against them, which is frequently (though not easily) done. But this is preserved in us, by the constant powerfull Actings and Influence of the Holy Ghost. He which works it in us, doth also *preserve it in us*. And the Reason hereof is because the Spring of it is in our Head Christ Jesus; it being onely an Emanation of Vertue and Power from him unto us by the Holy Ghost; if this be not actually and alwayes continued, whatever is in us, would dye and wither of its self. See *Ephes. 4. 16. Col. 3. 3. Job. 4. 14.* It is in us as the Fructifying Sap is in a Branch of the Vine or Olive. It is there really and formally, and is the next Cause of the Fruit-bearing of the Branch. But it doth not live and abide by its self, but by a continual Emanation and Communication from the Root. Let that be intercepted and it quickly withers. So is it with this Principle in us, with respect unto its Root Christ Jesus.

(2) Though this Principle or *Habit* of Holiness be of the same kind or Nature in all Believers, in all that are sanctified, yet there are in them very *distinct Degrees* of it. In some it is more strong, lively, vigorous and flourishing, in others more weak, feeble and unactive, and this in so great variety, and on so many Occasions, as cannot here be spoken unto.

(3) That although this *Habit* and Principle is not acquired by any or many Acts of Duty or Obedience, yet is it in a way of Duty *preserved, encreased, strengthened and improved* thereby. God hath appointed that we should live in the Exercise of it, and in and by the Multiplication of its Acts and Duties, is it kept alive and stirred up, without which it will be weakened and decay.

This being what I intend as to the Substance of it, we must in the next place shew, That there is such a *spiritual Habit or Principle of spiritual Life* wrought in Believers, wherein their Holiness doth consist. Some few Testimonies of many shall suffice as to its present Confirmation.

Sect. 11.

The Work of it is expressed, *Dent. 30. 6. The Lord thy God will Circumcise thy Heart, to love the Lord thy God with all thy Heart and all thy Soul, that thou mayest live.* The End of Holiness is that *we may live*, and the principal Work of Holiness is, to love the Lord our God with all our Hearts and Souls. And this is the Effect of Gods *circumcising* our Hearts, without which it will not be. Every Act of Love and Fear, and consequently of every Duty of Holiness whatever, is consequential unto Gods *circumcising of our Hearts*, But it should

H h h

seem

seem that this Work of God is only a removal of Hinderances, and doth not express the Collation of the Principle which we assert. I answer, that although it were easie to demonstrate, that this Work of *circumcising our Hearts* cannot be effected without an implantation of the Principle pleaded for in them, yet it shall suffice at present to evince from hence, that this Effectual Work of God upon our Hearts is antecedently necessary unto all Acts of Holiness in us. But herewithall, *God writes his Law in our Hearts. Jerem. 31. 33. I will put my Law in their inward parts, and write it in their Hearts.* The Habit or Principle which we have described, is nothing but a Transcript of the Law of God, implanted and abiding on our Hearts, whereby we comply with and answer unto the whole Will of God therein. This is Holiness in the *Habit* and Principle of it. This is more fully expressed, *Ezek. 36. 26, 27. A new Heart will I give you, and a new Spirit will I put within you, and cause you to walk in my Statutes, and ye shall keep my Judgements and do them.* The whole of all that actual Obedience, and all those Duties of Holiness which God requireth of us, is contained in these Expressions; *ye shall walk in my Statutes, and keep my Judgements to doe them.* Antecedent hereunto, and as the Principle and Cause thereof, God gives a *new Heart* and a *new Spirit*. This *new Heart* is an Heart with the Law of God written in it, as before mentioned; and this *new spirit* is the habitual Inclination of that heart unto the Life of God, or all Duties of Obedience. And herein the whole of what we have asserted, is confirmed; namely, that antecedently unto all Duties and Acts of Holiness whatever, and as the next Cause of them, there is by the Holy Ghost, a new spiritual Principle or *habit* of Grace, communicated unto us, and abiding in us, from whence we are made and denominated *holy*.

Sect. 12.

It is yet more Expressly revealed and declared in the New Testament. *Joh. 3. 6. There is a Work of the Spirit of God upon us in our Regeneration, we are born again of the Spirit.* And there is the Product of this Work of the Spirit of God in us, *that which is born in this new Birth, and that is spirit also.* It is something *existing* in us, that is of a *spiritual* Nature and *spiritual* Efficacy. It is something *abiding* in us, acting in a continual Opposition against the Flesh or Sin; as *Gal. 5. 17.* and unto all Duties of Obedience unto God. And untill this *spirit* is formed in us, that is, our whole Souls have a furnishment of spiritual Power and Ability, we cannot perform any one Act that is spiritually good, not any one *Vital Act* of Obedience. This Spirit or spiritual Nature, which is born of the Spirit, by which alone we are enabled to live to God, is that *Habit* of Grace or Principle of *holiness* which we intend. And so also is it called a New Creature. *He that is in Christ is a new Creature, 1 Cor. 5. 17.* It is something, that by an almighty creating Act of the Power of God by his Spirit, that hath the Nature of a *living Creature*, is produced in the Souls of all that are in Christ Jesus. And as it is called the *new Creature*, so it is also a *Divine Nature*; *2 Pet. 1. 4.* and a Nature is the Principle of all Operations; And this is what we plead for. *The Spirit of God createth a new Nature in us, which is the Principle and next Cause of all Acts of the Life of God.* Where this is not, whatever else there may be, there is no
Evau-

Evangelical Holiness. This is that whereby we are enabled to live unto God, to fear him, to walk in his Wayes, and to yield Obedience according to his Mind and Will. See *Ephes.* 4. 23, 24. *Col.* 3. 10, 11. this the Scripture plentifully testifieth unto; but withall I must adde, that as to the proper Nature or Essence of it, no Mind can apprehend it, no Tongue can expresse it, none can perfectly understand its glory; some few things may be added to illustrate it.

(1) This is that whereby we have *Union with Jesus Christ* the Head of the Church. Originally and *efficiently* the Holy Spirit dwelling in him and us, is the Cause of this Union. But *formally* this new Principle of Grace is so. It is that whereby we become *members of his bones and of his flesh*, *Ephes.* 5. 30. As *Eve* was of *Adam*; she was one with him because she had the same Nature with him, and that derived from him, which the Apostle alludeth unto, so are we of him, partakers of the same *Divine Nature* with him. Thus he that is *joynd unto the Lord is one spirit*, *1 Cor.* 6. 17. that is, of one and the same *spiritual Nature* with him, *Heb.* 2. 11, 14. How excellent is this Grace which gives us our Interest in, and Continuity unto the Body of Christ, and to his Person as our Head. It is the same Grace in the *kind* thereof which is in the *holy Nature* of Christ, and renders us one with him.

(2) Our *Likeness and Conformity unto God* consists herein. For it is the *Reparation of his Image* in us, *Ephes.* 4. 23, 24. *Col.* 3. 10. Something I hope I apprehend concerning this Image of God in Believers, and of their Likeness unto him, how great a Priviledge it is, what *honour* safety and security depend thereon, what Duties are required of us on the Account thereof: But perfectly to conceive or expresse the Nature and Glory of it, we cannot attain unto, but should learn to adore the Grace whence it doth proceed and is bestowed on us, to admire the Love of Christ, and the Efficacy of his Mediation, whereby it is renewed in us; but the thing it self is ineffable.

(3) It is our *Life*, our *spiritual Life*, whereby we live to God. Life is the Foundation and summe of all Excellencies: Without this we are *dead in Trespasses and sins*, and how we are quickened by the holy Ghost, hath been declared. But this is the *internal Principle of Life*, whence all Vital Acts in the Life of God do proceed. And whereas we know not well what is the true Form and Essence of Life Natural, only we find it, discern it, and judge of it by its Effects; much less do we know the Form and Essence of Life Spiritual, which is far more Excellent and Glorious. This is that Life which is *hid with Christ in God*, *Coloss.* 3. 3. In which words the Apostle draws a Veil over it, as knowing that we are unable steadfastly to behold its Glory and Beauty.

But before I proceed unto a further Description of this Principle of Holiness in its Effects, as before laid down, it may not be amiss *practically* to call over these general Considerations of its Nature; and our own Concernment in this Truth, which is no empty Notion, will be therein declared. And,

First, We may learn hence, not to satisfy our selves, or not to rest in any *Acts* or *Duties* of Obedience, in any good Works, how good

and usefull soever in themselves, nor howsoever multiplied by us, unless there be a *Vital Principle of Holiness* in our Hearts. A few honest Actions, a few usefull Duties do satisfy some persons that they are as holy as they should be, or as they need to be. And some mens Religion hath consisted in the multiplying of outward Duties, that they might be meritorious for themselves and others. But God expressly rejecteth not only such Duties, but the greatest *multitude* of them, and their most frequent Reiteration, if the *heart* be not antecedently purified and sanctified, if it be not possessed with the Principle of Grace and Holiness insisted on; *Isa.* 1. 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16. Such Acts and Duties may be the Effects of other Causes, the Fruits of other Principles. Meer Legal Convictions will produce them, and put men upon a Course of them. Fears, Afflictions, Terrors of Conscience, Dictates of Reason improved by Education and confirmed by Custom, will direct, yea compell men unto their Observance. But all is lost, men do but labour in the Fire about them, if the Soul be not prepared with this spiritual Principle of *habitual Holiness* wrought in it immediately by the Holy Ghost. Yet we must here observe these two things.

(1) That so far as these Duties, be they of Morality or Religion, of Piety or Divine Worship, are good in themselves, they ought to be approved, and men encouraged in them. There are sundry ways whereby the best Duties may be abused and misapplied, as when men rest in them, as if they were *meritorious*, or the matter of their Justification before God. For this as is known, is an effectual Means to divert the Souls of sinners from Faith in Christ for Life and Salvation, *Rom.* 9. 31, 32. *Ghap.* 10. 3, 4. And there are Reasons and Causes that render them unacceptable before God, with respect unto the Persons by whom they are performed; as when they are not done in Faith, for which *Cain's* Sacrifice was rejected; and when the Heart is not previously sanctified and prepared with a spiritual Principle of Obedience. But yet on neither of these grounds or pretences can we, or ought we to condemn or undervalue the Duties themselves, which are good in their own nature, nor take off men from the performance of them, yea it were greatly to be desired that we could see more of the Fruits of *Moral Vertues*, and Duties of Religious Piety among un-sanctified Persons than we doe. The World is not in a Condition to spare the *good* Acts of *bad* men. But this we may doe, and as we are called we ought to doe: When men are engaged in a course of Duties and good Works, on Principles that will not abide and endure the triall, or for Ends that will spoyl and corrupt all they doe, we may tell them, (as our Saviour did the Young man, who gave that great Account of his Diligence in all Legal Duties) *one thing is yet wanting unto you*; you want Faith, or you want Christ, or you want a spiritual Principle of Evangelical Holiness, without which all you do will be lost, and come to no account at the last Day. The due Assertion of Grace never was nor never can be an Obstruction unto any Duty of Obedience. Indeed, when any will give up themselves unto such Works or Actions under the Name of Duties and Obedience unto God, which although they may make a specious shew and appearance in the World, yet are *evil* in themselves, or such as God requireth not of men, we may speak against them, deny them, and take

take men off from them. So *Persecution* hath been looked on as a good Work, men *supposing* they did God good service when they slew the Disciples of Christ, and men giving their *Goods* unto pious Uses, as they were called, (indeed impious Abuses) to have others pray for their Souls, and expiate their sins, when they were gone out of this World. These and the like other innumerable pretended Duties may be judged, condemned, exploded, without the least fear of deterring men from Obedience.

(2) That wherever there is this Principle of Holiness in the *Heart*, in those that are *Adult*, there will be the Fruits and Effects of it in the *Life*, in all Duties of Righteousness, Godliness and Holiness. For the main Work and End of this Principle is to enable us to comply with that Grace of God, which teacheth us to deny all Ungodliness and worldly Lusts, and to live Soberly, and Righteously, and Godly in this present World, Tit. 2. 11, 12. That which we press for, is the great Direction of our Saviour, make the Tree good, and the Fruit will be so also. And there can be no more vile and sordid Hypocrisie, than for any to pretend unto inward habitual Sanctification, whilst their Lives are barren in the Fruits of Righteousness and Duties of Obedience. Wherever this Root is, there it will assuredly bear Fruit.

Secondly, It will appear from hence, whence it is that men propose and steer such various Courses with respect unto Holiness. All men who profess themselves to be *Christians*, are agreed, in words at least, that Holiness is absolutely necessary unto them that would be saved by Jesus Christ. To deny it, is all one as openly to renounce the Gospel. But when they should come to the practice of it, some take one false Way some another, and some Actually despise and reject it. Now all this ariseth from Ignorance of the true Nature of Evangelical Holiness on the one hand, and Love of Sin on the other. There is nothing wherein we are spiritually and eternally concerned, that is more frequently insisted on, than is the true Nature of Sanctification and Holiness. But the thing it self, as hath been declared, is deep and mysterious, not to be understood without the Aid of spiritual Light in our Minds. Hence some would have Moral Vertue to be Holiness, which as they suppose they can understand by their own Reason, and practise in their own Strength, and I heartily wish that we could see more of the Fruits of it from them. But real Moral Vertue will hardly be abased into an Opposition unto Grace; the Pretence of it will be so easily, and is so every day. Some on the other hand place all Holiness in superstitious Devotions, in the strict Observance of Religious Duties which Men and not God have appointed. And there is no end of their Multiplication of them, nor measure of the Strictness of some in them. The Reason why men give up themselves unto such soul-deceiving Imaginations, is their Ignorance and hatred of that only true real Principle of Evangelical Holiness which we have discoursed. For, what the World knoweth not in these things, it alwayes hateth. And they cannot discern it clearly, or in its own Light and Evidence; for it must be spiritually discerned. This the Natural man cannot doe, 1 Cor. 2. 14. And in that false Light of Corrupted Reason wherein they discern and judge it, they esteem it foolishness or Fancy. There

is not a more Foolish and Fanatical thing in the World with many, than that *internal habitual Holiness* which we are in the Consideration of. And hence are they lead to despise and to hate it. But here the Love of Sin secretly takes place, and influenceth their Minds. This universal Change of the Soul in all its Principles of Operation into the Image and Likeness of God, tending to the Extirpation of all sins and vitious Habits, is that which men fear and abhorre. This makes them take up with Morality and superstitious Devotion, any thing that will pacifie a Natural Conscience, and please themselves or others with a *Reputation of Religion*. It is therefore highly incumbent on all that would not wilfully deceieve their own Souls unto their Eternal Ruine, to enquire diligently into the true Nature of *Evangelical Holiness*, and above all to take care that they miss it not in the Foundation, in the true Root and Principle of it, wherein a mistake will be pernicious.

Thirdly, It is moreover evident from hence, that it is a greater matter to be *truely and really holy* than most Persons are aware of. We may learn eminently, how great and Excellent a Work this of Sanctification and Holiness is, from the Causes of it. How emphatically doth our Apostle ascribe it unto God even the Father, *1 Thess. 5. 23. Even the God of Peace himself sanctifie you.* It is so great a Work as that it cannot be wrought by any but the *God of Peace* himself. What is the immediate Work of the Spirit therein, what the Influence of the Mediation and Blood of Christ into it, hath been already in part declared, and we have yet much more to adde in our Account of it. And these things do sufficiently manifest, how Great, how Excellent and Glorious a Work it is. For it doth not become Divine and Infinite Wisdom, to engage the immediate Power and Efficacy of such glorious Causes and Means, for the producing of any ordinary or common Effect. It must be somewhat as of great Importanee unto the Glory of God, so of an Eminent Nature in it self. And that little Entrance which we have made into an Enquiry after its Nature, manifests how Great and Excellent it is. Let us not therefore deceive our selves with the Shadowes and Appearances of things in a few Duties of Piety, or Righteousness, no nor yet with many of them, if we find not this great Work at least begun in us. It is sad to see what *trifling* there is in these things amongst men. None indeed are contented to be without a Religion, and very few are willing to admit it in its Power.

Fourthly, Have we received this Principle of Holiness and of spiritual Life, by the gracious Operation of the Holy Ghost; there are among many others *three Duties* incumbent on us, whereof we ought to be as carefull as of our Souls. And the First is, Carefully and diligently by all Means to *cherish* and preserve it in our hearts. This Sacred *Depositum* of the New Creature, of the Divine Nature, is entrusted with us, to take care of, to cherish and improve. If we willingly or through our neglect suffer it to be wounded by Temptations, weakened by Corruptions, or not exercised in all known Duties of Obedience, our Guilt is great, and our Trouble will not be small. And then Secondly, It is equally incumbent on us, to *evidence* and manifest it by its *Fruits* in the Mortification of corrupt Lusts and Affections, in all Duties of Holiness, Righteousness, Charity and Piety
in

in the World. For that God may be glorified hereby, is one of the Ends why he indues our Natures with it. And without these visible Fruits, we expose our entire Profession of Holiness to reproach. And in like manner is it required, that we be *thankfull* for what we have received.

Secondly; As This Principle of Inherent Grace or Holiness hath Sect. 15.
the *Nature* of an *Habit*, so also hath it the *Properties* thereof. And the first Property of an *Habit* is, that it *inclines* and disposeth the Subject wherein it is, unto Acts of its own kind, or suitable unto it. It is directed unto a certain End, and enclines unto Acts or Actions which tend thereunto, and that with evenness and Constancy. Yea Moral Habits are nothing but *strong and firm Dispositions and Inclinations* unto Moral Acts and Duties of their own kind; as Righteousness, or Temperance, or Meekness. Such a Disposition and Inclination therefore there must be in this *new spiritual Nature* or Principle of Holiness which we have described, wherewith the Souls of Believers are in-laid and furnished by the Holy Ghost in their Sanctification. For,

1. It hath a *certain End*, to enable us whereunto, it is bestowed on Sect. 16.
us. Although it be a great Work in it self, that wherein the *Renovation of the Image of God* in us doth consist, yet is it not wrought in any but with respect unto a further End in this World. And this end is, that we may Live to God; We are made *like* unto God, that we may *live* unto God. By the Depravation of our Natures we are *alienated from this Life of God*, this Divine spiritual Life, *Ephes. 4. 18.* we like it not, but have an Aversion unto it. Yea, we are under the Power of a Death that is universally opposed unto that Life; *For, to be carnally minded is death, Rom. 8. 6.* that is, it is so with respect unto the Life of God, and all the Acts that belong thereunto. And this Life of God hath two parts. (1) The *outward Duties* of it, (2) The *inward Frame* and Actings of it. For the First; Persons under the Power of Corrupted Nature may perform them, and doe so, but without Delight, Constancy or Permanency. The Language of that Principle whereby they are Acted is, *Behold what a Weariness it is, Mal. 1. 13.* and such Hypocrites will not pray alwayes. But as to the Second, for the *internal actings of Faith and Love*, whereby all outward Duties should be quickened and animated, they are utter strangers unto them, utterly alienated from them. With respect unto this Life of God, a Life of spiritual Obedience unto God, are our Natures thus spiritually renewed, or furnished with this spiritual Habit and Principle of Grace. It is wrought in us, that by vertue thereof we may *live to God*, without which we cannot do so in any one single Act or Duty whatever. For, they that are in the *flesh* cannot please God, *Rom. 8. 8.* Wherefore, the first Property and inseparable Adjunct of it is, that it *enclineth* and *disposeth* the Soul wherein it is, unto all Acts and Duties that belong to the Life of God, or unto all the Duties of holy Obedience, so that it shall attend unto them, not from Conviction or external Impression only, but from an internal genuine Principle so inclining and disposing them thereunto. And these things may be illustrated by what is contrary unto them. There is in the
state

state of Nature a *Carnal Mind*; which is the Principle of all Morall and Spiritual Operations in them in whom it is; And this *Carnal Mind* hath an *Enmity*, or is Enmity against God; *it is not subject unto the Law of God, neither indeed can be, Rom. 8. 7.* that is, the Bent and Inclination of it lyes directly against *spiritual* things, or the Mind and Will of God, in all things which concern a Life of Obedience unto himself. Now as this Principle of Holiness is that which is introduced into our Souls in Opposition unto, and to the Exclusion of the Carnal Mind; so this Disposition and Inclination of it, is opposite and contrary unto the *Enmity* of the Carnal Mind, as tending alwayes unto Actions *spiritually* good, according to the Mind of God.

Sect. 17.

2. This *Disposition* of Heart and Soul, which I place as the first Property or Effect of the Principle of Holiness before declared and explained, is in the Scripture called, *Fear, Love, Delight*, and by the names of such other Affections as expresse a constant regard and inclination unto their Objects. For these things do not denote the Principle of Holiness it self, which is seated in the Mind, or Understanding and *Will*, whereas they are the names of Affections only; but they signify the first Way whereby that Principle doth act it self in an holy Inclination of the Heart unto Spiritual Obedience. So when the People of *Israel* had engaged themselves by solemn Covenant, to hear and do whatsoever God commanded, God addes concerning it, *Oh that there were such an Heart in them, that they would fear me, and keep all my Commandements alwayes, Dent. 5. 29.* that is, that the Bent and Inclinations of their Hearts were alwayes unto Obedience. It is that which is intended in the Promise of the Covenant, *Jerem. 32. 39. I will give them one Heart, that they may fear me*, which is the same with the *new Spirit*, *Ezek. 11. 19.* The *new Heart*, as hath been declared, is the *new Nature*, the new Creature, the new spiritual supernatural Principle of Holiness; The first Effect, the first Fruit hereof is, the *Fear of God alwayes*, or a New spiritual Bent and Inclination of Soul unto all the Will and Commands of God. And this *new Spirit*, this Fear of God, is still expressed as the inseparable Consequent of the new Heart, or the writing of the Law of God in our Hearts, which are the same. So it is called, *Fearing the Lord and his goodness, Hof. 3. 5.* In like manner it is expressed by *Love*, which is the Inclination of the Soul unto all Acts of Obedience unto God and Communion with him, with Delight and Complacency. It is a Regard unto God and his Will, with a Reverence due unto his Nature, and a Delight in him suited unto that Covenant-Relation wherein he stands unto us.

Sect. 18.

3. It is moreover expressed by being *spiritually minded*: *To be spiritually minded is Life and Peace, Rom. 8. 6.* that is, the bent and inclination of the Mind unto *spiritual* things, is that whereby we Live to God, and enjoy Peace with him, *it is Life and Peace.* By Nature we favour only the things of the *flesh*, and mind Earthly things, *Phil. 3. 19.* our Minds or Hearts are set upon them, disposed towards them, ready for all things that lead us to the Enjoyment of them, and Satisfaction in them. But, hereby we mind the things that are *above*,

or

or set our *Affections* on them, *Coloss.* 3. 3. By vertue hereof *David* professeth, that his Soul followed hard after God; *Psal.* 63. 8. or inclined earnestly unto all those Wayes whereby he might live unto him, and come unto the Enjoyment of him: Like the Earnestness which is in him who is in the pursuit of something continually in his Eye, as our Apostle expresseth it, *Phil.* 3. 13, 14. By the Apostle *Peter* it is compared unto that *natural inclination* which is in those that are hungry unto Food, *1 Pet.* 2. 2. *As new-born Babes desire the sincere Milk of the Word, that you may grow thereby;* which is a constant unalterable Inclination.

This therefore is that which I intend. Every Nature hath its Disposition unto Actings suitable unto it. The Principle of Holiness is such a Nature, a New or Divine Nature; wherever it is, it constantly inclines the Soul unto Duties and Acts of Holiness; it produceth a constant Disposition unto them. And as by the Principle it self, the contrary Principle of Sin and Flesh is impaired and subdued, so by this *gracious Disposition*, the Inclination unto sin which is in us, is weakened, impaired, and gradually taken away.

Wherefore, wherever this *Holiness* is, it doth *dispose* or encline the whole Soul unto Acts and Duties of Holiness, and that (1) *Universally* or impartially; (2) *Constantly* or Evenly. (3) *Permanently*, unto the End. And where these things are not, no Multiplication of Duties will either make or Denominate any Person *Holy*. Sect. 19.

(1) There is *no Duty of Holiness whatever*, but there is a *Disposition* in a sanctified heart unto it. There is a respect unto all Gods Commands. Some of them may be more contrary unto our natural Inclinations than others, some more cross unto our present secular Interests, some attended with more Difficulties and disadvantages than others; and some may be rendred very hazardous by the circumstances of Times and Seasons. But however, if there be a gracious Principle in our Hearts, it will *equally encline and dispose us* unto every one of them in its proper place and season. And the Reason hereof is, because it being a *new Nature*, it equally inclines unto all that belongs unto it, as all Acts of Holy Obedience doe. For every Nature hath an equal Propensity unto all its natural Operations, in their Times and Seasons. Hence our Saviour tried the rich Young Man, who gave an Account of his Duties and Righteousness, with one that lay close unto his secular Interests and worldly Satisfaction. This immediately carried him off, and evidenced that all he had done besides, was not from an *internal* Principle of spiritual Life. Any other Principle or Cause of Duties and Obedience, will upon Sollicitations give way unto an habitual Reserve of one thing or other that is contrary thereunto. It will admit either of the *Omission* of some Duties, or of the *Commission* of some Sin, or of the retaining of some Lust. So *Naaman*, who vowed Obedience upon his Conviction of the Power of the God of *Israel*, would nevertheless upon the solicitation of his Worldly interest, have a Reserve to bow in the house of *Rimmon*. So Omissions of Duties that are dangerous, in a way of Profession, or the Reserve of some corrupt Affections, Love of the World, Pride of Life, will be admitted upon any other Principle of Obedience, and that *habitually*.

For even those who have this real spiritual Principle of Holiness, may be *surprized* into actual Omission of Duties, Commission of sins, and a temporary indulgence unto Corrupt Affections. But *habitually* they cannot be so. An *habitual Reserve* for any thing that is sinfull or Morally evil, is eternally inconsistent with this Principle of *Holiness*. Light and Darknes, Fire and Water, may as soon be reconciled in one. And hereby is it distinguished from all other Principles, Reasons or Causes, whereon men may perform any Duties of Obedience towards God.

Sect. 20.

(2) It thus disposeth the Heart unto Duties of Holiness *constantly and evenly*. He in whom it is *feareth alwayes*, or is in the Fear of the Lord *all the day long*. In all *instances*, on all Occasions, it equally disposeth the Mind unto Acts of Holy Obedience. It is true, that the Actings of Grace which proceed from it, are in us sometimes more intense and vigorous than at other times. It is so also, that we are our selves sometimes more watchfull, and diligently intent on all Occasions of acting Grace, whether in Solemn Duties, or in our general Course, or on particular Occasions, than we are at some other times. Moreover, there are especial Seasons wherein we meet with greater Difficulties and Obstructions from our Lusts and Temptations than ordinary, whereby this *holy Disposition* is intercepted, and impeded. But notwithstanding all these things, which are contrary unto it, and obstructive of its Operations, in it self and its own Nature it doth *constantly and evenly*, encline the Soul at all Times and on all Occasions, unto Duties of Holiness. Whatever falls out otherwise, is Accidental unto it. This Disposition is like a Stream that ariseth equally from a living Fountain, as our Saviour expresseth it; *John 4. 14. A Well of Water springing up into everlasting Life*. As this *stream* passeth in its Course it may meet with Oppositions, that may either stop it or divert it for a season: But its Waters still press forward continually. Hereby doth the Soul *set God alwayes before him*, and walk continually as in his sight. Men may perform Duties of Obedience unto God, yea many of them, yea be engaged into a constant Course of them as to their outward performance, on other Grounds, from other Principles, and by vertue of other Motives. But whatever they are, they are not a new Nature in and unto the Soul, and so do not dispose men *constantly and evenly* unto what they lead unto. Sometimes their Impressions on the Mind are strong and violent, there is no withstanding of them but the Duties they require must instantly be complied withall. So is it when Convictions are excited by Dangers or Afflictions, strong Desires, or the like. And again, they leave the Soul unto its own Formality and Course, without the least impression from them towards any Duties whatever. There is no Cause nor Principle, or Reason of Obedience, besides this one insisted on, that will *evenly and constantly* incline unto the Acts of it. Men proceeding only upon the Power of Convictions, are like those at Sea, who sometimes meet with storms or vehement winds which fit them for their Course, and would seem immediately to drive them as it were with Violence into their Port or Harbour, but quickly after they have an *utter Calme*, no breath of Air stirres to help them forward; and then it may be after a while
another

another *gust of wind* befalls them, which they again suppose will dispatch their Voyage; but that also quickly fails them. Where this Principle is, Persons have a natural Current which carries them on quickly, *evenly*, and *constantly*; And although they may sometimes meet with Storms, Tempests, and Cross winds, yet the *stream*, the Current which is natural, at length worketh its way, and holds on its course through all external occasional *impediments*.

(3) It is also *permanent* herein, and abideth for ever. It will never *cease inclining* and disposing the whole Soul unto Acts and Duties of Obedience, untill it comes unto the End of them all in the Enjoyment of God. It is *living Water*, and whosoever drinketh of it, shall never *thirst any more*, that is, with a total *indigence* of Supplies of Grace, but it is a *Well of Water springing up into everlasting Life*, *Joh. 4. 14.* It springs up, and that as *alwayes* without *intermission*, because it is *living water* from which Vital Acts are inseparable, so *permanently* without *ceasing*, it *springs up into Everlasting Life*, and faileth not untill those in whom it is, are safely lodged in the Enjoyment of it. This is expressly promised in the Covenant. *I will put my Fear in their Hearts, and they shall not depart from me, Jer. 32. 40.* They shall never *doe* so in whom is this *Fear*, which is permanent and Endless. It is true, that it is our Duty, with all Care and Diligence, in the use of all Means, to preserve, cherish and improve both the Principle it self, and its actings in these Holy Dispositions. We are to *shew all Diligence unto the full Assurance of Hope unto the End; Heb. 6. 11.* And in the use of Means and the Exercise of Grace is it, that it is infallibly kept and preserved, *Isa. 40. 31.* And it is also true, that sometimes, in some Persons, upon the fierce *interpositions* of Temptations, with the violent and deceitfull working of Lusts, the Principle it self may seem for a Season to be *utterly stifled*, and this Property of it to be destroyed; as it seems to have been with *David* under his sad Fall and decay. Yet such is the Nature of it, that it is *immortal*, everlasting, and which shall never absolutely dye; such is the Relation of it unto the Covenant-Faithfulness of God, and Mediation of Christ, as that it shall never utterly cease or be extinguished. It abideth *disposing* and *enclining* the Heart unto all Duties of Holy Obedience unto the grave. Yea ordinarily, and where its genuine Work and Tendency is not interrupted by cursed Negligence or Love of the World, it thrives and growes continually unto the End. Hence some are not only Fruitfull, but *Fat and flourishing in their Old Age*, and as the *outward* man decayeth, so in them the *inward* man is dayly renewed in Strength and Power. But as unto all other Principles of Obedience whatever, as it is in their own nature to decay and wither, all their actings growing insensibly weaker and less efficacious, so for the most part either the *increase of Carnal Wisdom*, or the Love of the World, or some powerfull Temptations at one time or other put an utter end unto them, and they are of no use at all. Hence there is not a more secure Generation of sinners in the World, than those who have been acted by the Power of Conviction unto a course of Obedience in the performance of many Duties. And those of them who fall not openly to Profaneness or Lasciviousness, or Neglect of all

Sect. 23.

Duties of Religion, do continue in their Course, from what they have been habituated unto, finding it compliant with their present Circumstances and Conditions in the World, as also having been preserved from such Wayes and Practices as are inconsistent with their present course by the power of their former Convictions. But the Power of these Principles, of Conviction, Education, Impressions from Afflictions, Dangers, Fears, all in one, dye before men, and if their eyes were open, they might see the End of them.

In this manner therefore, doth the *New Divine Nature* that is in Believers, *dispose* and *encline* them, *impartially*, *evenly* and *permanently* unto all Acts and Duties of Holy Obedience.

Sect. 24.

One thing yet remains to be cleared, that there may be no mistake in this matter. And this is, that in those who are thus constantly enclined and disposed unto all the Acts of an Heavenly spiritual Life, there are yet remaining contrary Dispositions and Inclinations also.

There are yet in them Inclinations and Dispositions to sin, proceeding from the *Remainders* of a contrary habitual Principle. This the Scripture calls the *Flesh*, *Lust*, *the sin that dwelleth in us*, the *Body of Death*; being what yet remaineth in Believers of that vitious corrupted Depravation of our Nature, which came upon us by the loss of the Image of God, disposing the whole Soul unto all that is evil. This yet continueth in them, enclining them unto Evil, and all that is so, according to the Power and Efficacy that is remaining unto it in various Degrees. Sundry things are here observable; as (1) This is that which is *singular* in this Life of God. There are in the same Mind, Will and Affections, namely, of a Person Regenerate, contrary Habits and *inclinations*, continually opposing one another, and acting adversely about the same Objects and Ends. And this is not from any Jarrings or Disorder between the distinct Faculties of the Soul it self, as in Natural men there are adverse Actings between their Wills and Affections on the one hand bent unto sin, and the Light of their Minds and Consciences on the other, prohibiting the committing of sin, and condemning its Commission, which Disorder is discernible in the Light of Nature, and is sufficiently canvased by the *Old Philosophers*. But these contrary Habits, Inclinations and Actings are in the *same Faculties*. (2) As this cannot be apprehended but by vertue of a *previous Conviction* and acknowledgement, both of the total Corruption of our Nature by the Fall, and the Initial Renovation of it by Jesus Christ, wherein these contrary Habits and Dispositions do consist, so it cannot be denied without an open Rejecting of the Gospel, and Contradiction to the Experience of all that do Believe, or know any thing of what it is to live to God. We intend no more but what the Apostle so plainly asserts, *Gal. 5. 17. The Flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the Flesh*; that is, in the Mind, Will and Affections of Believers, *and these are contrary the one unto the other*; they are contrary Principles attended with contrary Inclinations and Actings, *so that ye cannot do the things that ye would*. (3) There cannot be *contrary Habits* meerly Natural or Moral in the same Subject, with respect unto the same Object, at the same time; at least they cannot be so in any high Degree, so as to encline and act contrary one to another with

with Urgency or Efficacy. For violent Inclinations unto sin, and a Conscience fiercely condemning for sin, whereby sinners are sometimes torn and even distracted, are not *contrary Habits* in the same Subject. Only Conscience brings in from without the Judgment of God, against what the Will and Affections are bent upon.

But it is, as was said, otherwise in the contrary Principles or *Habits* of *spirit* and *flesh*, of *Grace* and *Sin*, with their adverse inclinations and actings. Only they cannot be in the *highest Degree* at the same time, nor be equally prevalent or predominant in the same instances. That is, Sin and Grace cannot *bear rule* in the same Heart at the same time, so as that it should be equally under the conduct of them both. Nor can they have in the same Soul contrary Inclinations *equally* efficacious; for then would they absolutely obstruct all sorts of Operations whatever. Nor have they the same *influence* into particular Actions, so as that they should not be justly denominated from one of them either *gracious* or *sinfull*. But by Nature the vitious depraved Habit of sin, or *the flesh*, is wholly predominant and universally prevalent, constantly disposing and enclining the Soul to sin. Hence *all the Imaginations of mens hearts are evil, and that continually*: And, *they that are in the Flesh cannot please God*. There dwelleth no good thing in them, nor can they do any thing that is good; and the Flesh is able generally to subdue the Rebellions of Light, Convictions and Conscience, against it. But, upon the Introduction of the New Principle of Grace and Holiness in our Sanctification, this Habit of sin is weakened, impaired, and so disabled, as that it cannot nor shall encline unto sin with that Constancy and Prevalency as formerly, nor press unto it ordinarily with the same Urgency and Violence. Hence in the Scripture it is said to be dethroned by Grace, so as that it shall not *reign or lord it over us*, by hurrying us into the pursuit of its uncontrollable inclinations, *Rom. 6. 12*. Concerning these things the Reader may consult my Treatises of the *Remainder of Indwelling sin*, and the *Mortification of it in Believers*. Sect. 25.

But so it is, that this *Flesh*, this Principle of Sin, however it may be dethroned, corrected, impaired and disabled, yet is it never wholly and absolutely dispossessed and cast out of the Soul in this Life. There it will remain, and there it will work, seduce and tempt, more or less, according as its remaining Strength and Advantages are. By Reason hereof, and the Opposition that hence ariseth against it, the Principle of Grace and Holiness cannot, nor doth perfectly and absolutely, *encline* the Heart and Soul unto the Life of God and the Acts thereof, so as that they in whom it is should be sensible of no Opposition made thereunto, or of no contrary motions and inclinations unto sin. For, the *Flesh* will lust against the Spirit, as well as the Spirit against the Flesh, and these are contrary. This is the *Analogie* that is between these two States. In the state of Nature, the Principle of sin or the *Flesh* is predominant and bears rule in the Soul, but there is a Light remaining in the Mind, and a Judgment in the Conscience, which being heightened with Instructions and Convictions doe continually oppose it, and condemn *sin* both before and after its commission. Sect. 26.

mission. In them that are Regenerate it is the Principle of Grace and Holiness that is predominant and beareth rule: But there is in them still a Principle of Lust and sin, which rebels against the Rule of Grace, much in the proportion that Light and Convictions rebell against the Rule of sin in the Unregenerate. For as they hinder men from doing many evils, which their ruling Principle of sin strongly inclines them unto, and puts them on many Duties that it likes not; so do these on the other side in them that are Regenerate: They hinder them from doing many good things which their ruling Principle inclines unto, and carry them into many Evils which it doth abhor.

Sect. 27. But this belongs unto the Principle of Holiness, inseparably and necessarily; that it inclineth and disposeth the Soul wherein it is, *universally* unto all Acts of Holy Obedience. And these *inclinations* are predominant unto any other, and keep the Soul pointed to Holiness continually. This belongs unto its Nature, and where there is a Cessation or Interruption in these *inclinations*, it is from the prevailing *Re-action* of the Principle of *sin*, it may be, advantaged by outward Temptations and Incentives, which an holy Soul will constantly contend against. Where this is not, there is no Holiness. The Performance of Duties, whether of Religious Worship, or of Morality, how frequently, sedulously and usefully soever, will denominate no man Holy, unless his whole Soul be disposed and possessed with prevalent *inclinations* unto all that is *spiritually* Good, from the Principle of the Image of God renewed in him. Outward Duties of what sort soever, may be multiplied upon Light and Conviction, when they spring from no root of Grace in the Heart, and that which so riseth up will quickly wither, *Math. 13*. And this free, genuine, unforced *Inclination* of the Mind and Soul *evenly and universally* unto all that is Spiritually Good, unto all Acts and Duties of Holiness, with an inward labouring to break through and to be quit of all Opposition, is the first Fruit and most pregnant Evidence of the Renovation of our Natures by the Holy Ghost.

ct. 28. It may be enquired, Whence it is, (if the Habit or inherent Principle of Holiness do so constantly encline the Soul unto all Duties of Holiness and Obedience) that *David* prays, that *God would incline his Heart unto his Testimonies*, *Psal. 119. 36*. For it should seem from hence to be a *new Act* of Grace that is required thereunto, and that it doth not spring from the *Habit* mentioned, which was then eminent in the *Psalmist*.

Ans. (1) I shall shew afterwards, that notwithstanding all the Power and Efficacy of *Habitual Grace*, yet there is required a *new Act* of the Holy Spirit by his Grace, unto its actual Exercise in particular *instances*. (2) God inclines our Hearts to Duties of Obedience principally by *strengthening, encreasing, and exciting* the Grace we have *received*, and which is inherent in us. But we neither have, nor ever shall have in this World, such a stock of spiritual Strength, as to doe any thing as we ought, without Renewed *Co-operations* of Grace.

Thirdly,

Thirdly, There is *Power* accompanying this Habit of Grace as well as *Propensity* or *Inclination*. It doth not meerly *dispose* the Soul to holy Obedience, but enables it unto the Acts and Duties of it. Our Living unto God, our walking in his Wayes and Statutes, keeping his Judgements, which things expresse our whole Actual Obedience, are the Effects of the New Heart that is given unto us, whereby we are enabled unto them, *Ezek. 36. 26, 27.* But this must be somewhat further and distinctly declared. And (1) I shall shew, That there is such a *Power* of holy Obedience in all that have the Principle of Holiness wrought in them by the Sanctification of the Holy Spirit, which is inseparable from it; and (2) shew, What that *Power* is, or wherein it doth consist.

Sect. 29.

That by Nature we have *no Power* unto, or for any thing that is Spiritually good, or to any Acts or Duties of Evangelical Holiness, hath been sufficiently proved before. *When we were yet without strength in due time Christ dyed for the Ungodly, Rom. 5. 6.* Untill we are made partakers of the Benefits of the Death of Christ in and by his sanctifying Grace, as we are *ungodly*, so we are *without strength*, or have *no Power to live to God*. But, as was said, this hath been formerly fully and largely confirmed in our Declaration of the *impotency* of our Nature by Reason of its Death in Sin, and so need not here to be further insisted on.

The present Assertion which we are to prove is, That there is in and by the Grace of Regeneration and Sanctification, *a Power and Ability given unto us of living unto God*, or performing all the Duties of acceptable Obedience. This is the first Act of that *Spiritual Habit*, arising out of it and inseparable from it. It is called *Strength* or *Power*, *Isa. 40. 31. They that wait upon the Lord shall renew their strength*, that is, for and unto Obedience, or walking with God without Weariness; *Strength* they have, and in their Walking with God it is renewed or encreased. By the same Grace are we *strengthened with all might according to the glorious Power of God, Col. 1. 11. or strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man, Ephes. 3. 16.* whereby we can do all things through Christ that strengtheneth us, *Phil. 4. 13.* In our Calling or Conversion to God, all things are given unto us by his *Divine Power which pertain unto Life and Godliness, 2 Pet. 1. 3.* every thing that is needfull to enable us unto a *holy Life*. The Habit and Principle of Grace that is wrought in Believers, gives them new *Power* and spiritual *Strength* unto all Duties of Obedience. The Water of the Spirit therein, is not only a *Well of Water* abiding in them, but it *springeth up into everlasting Life, Joh. 4. 14.* or enables us continually to such gracious Actings as have a Tendency thereunto. There is a *sufficiency* in the Grace of God bestowed on them that Believe, to enable them unto the Obedience required of them. So God told our Apostle, when he was ready to faint under his Temptations, that *his Grace was sufficient for him, 2 Cor. 12. 9.* or there is a *Power* in all that are sanctified, whereby they are able to yield all holy Obedience unto God. They are *alive* unto God, *alive* to Righteousness and Holiness. They have a Principle of spiritual Life; and where there is

Sect. 30.

Life,

Life, there is *Power* in its Kind and for its End. Whence there is not in our Sanctification only a *Principle* or inherent *Habit of Grace* bestowed on us, whereby we really and habitually as to State and Condition differ from all unregenerate persons whatever, but there belongs moreover thereunto, an *active Power* or an Ability for and unto spiritual holy Obedience, which none are partakers of but those who are so sanctified. And unto this Power there is a respect in all the Commands or Precepts of Obedience, that belong to the New Covenant. The Commands of each Covenant respect the Power given in and by it. Whatever God required or doth require of any, by virtue of the Old Covenant or the Precepts thereof, it was on the Account of, and proportionate unto, the *strength* given under and by that Covenant. And that we have lost that strength by the Entrance of sin, exempts us not from the *Authority* of the Command; and thence it is that we are righteously obliged to doe, what we have no Power to perform. So also the Command of God under the *new Covenant*, as to all that Obedience which he requireth of us, respects that *Power* which is given and communicated unto us thereby. And this is that *Power* which belongs unto the New Creature, the Habit and Principle of Grace and Holiness, which as we have proved, is wrought by the Holy Ghost in all Believers.

Sect. 31.

We may therefore enquire into the *Nature* of this *spiritual Power*, what it is, and wherein it doth consist. Now this cannot be clearly understood without a due Consideration of that *Impotency* unto all *spiritual* good which is in us by Nature, which it cures and takes away. This we have before at large declared, and thither the Reader is referred. When we know what it is to be *without Power* or *Strength* in *Spiritual* things, we may thence learn what it is to have them: To this purpose we may consider, that there are three things or Faculties in our Souls, which are the Subject of all Power or Impotency in *spiritual* things; namely, our *Understandings*, *Wills* and *Affections*. That our spiritual Impotency ariseth from their Depravation hath been proved before; and what Power we have for holy spiritual Obedience, it must consist in some especial Ability communicated distinctly unto all these Faculties. And our Enquiry therefore is, What is this *Power* in the Mind, what in the Will, and what in the Affections. And,

(1) This power in the Mind consists in a *spiritual Light* and *Ability* to discern *spiritual* Things in a *spiritual* Manner, which Men in the state of Nature are utterly devoyd of, 1 Cor. 2. 13, 14. The Holy Spirit in the first Communication of the Principle of spiritual Life and Holiness, shines into our Hearts, to give us the knowledge of the Glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ, 2 Cor. 4. 6. yea this strengthening of the Mind by *saving Illumination*, is the most eminent Act of our Sanctification. Without this there is a Veil, with Fear and Bondage upon us, that we cannot see into *spiritual* things. But where the Spirit of God is, where he comes with his sanctifying Grace, there is Liberty; And thereby we all *with open face beholding as in a Glass the Glory of the Lord, are changed into the same Image from Glory to Glory*, 2 Cor. 3. 18. See Ephes. 1. 17, 18.

Wherefore,

Wherefore, all sanctified Believers have an *Ability* and *Power* in the renewed Mind and Understanding, to *see, know, discern* and *receive* spiritual Things, the Mysteries of the Gospel, the Mind of Christ, in a due and spiritual Manner. It is true, they have not all of them this Power and Ability in the same Degree; but every one of them hath a sufficiency of it, so as to discern what concerns themselves and their Duties necessarily. Some of them seem indeed to be very low in Knowledge, and in comparison of others very Ignorant. For there are different Degrees in these things, *Ephes. 4. 7.* And some of them are kept in that Condition by their own *Negligence* and *Sloth*. They do not use as they ought, nor improve those Means of Growing in Grace and in the Knowledge of Jesus Christ, which God prescribes unto them; as *Heb. 6. 14, 15, 16.* But every one who is truly sanctified, and who thereby hath received the least Degree of saving Grace, hath Light enough to understand the *spiritual* Things of the Gospel in a *spiritual* Manner. When the Mysteries of the Gospel are Preached unto Believers, some of them may be so declared as that those of meaner Capacities and Abilities may not be able to comprehend aright the Doctrine of them, which yet is necessary to be so proposed for the Edification of those who are more grown in Knowledge. Nevertheless, there is not any the meanest of them, but hath a spiritual insight into the things themselves intended, so far as they are necessary unto their Faith and Obedience in the Condition wherein they are. This the Scripture gives such abundant Testimony unto, as to render it unquestionable. For we have *received the Spirit of God, that we may know the things that are freely given us of God.* By vertue of what we have received, we know or discern Spiritual things, *1 Cor. 2. 12.* So we know the mind of Christ, *v. 15.* This is the substance of that double Testimony, *1 Joh. 2. 20, 27.* This *abiding Unction* is no other but that habitual inherent Grace which we plead for, and by it as it is an *holy Light* in our Mind we know all things; The Understanding that is given us to know him that is True, *1 John 5. 20.* Only it is their Duty continually to endeavour the improvement and enlargement of the Light they have, in the daily Exercise of the spiritual Power they have received, and in the use of Means; *Heb. 5. ult,*

Sect. 32.

(2) This *Power* in the Will consists in its *Liberty, Freedom* and *Ability* to consent unto, choose and embrace *spiritual* Things. Believers have *Free-will* unto that which is spiritually Good. For they are freed from that Bondage and slavery unto sin which they were under in the state of Nature: Whatever some dispute concerning the Nature of *Free-will*, that it consists in an *Indifferency* unto Good or Evil, one thing or another, with a Power of applying it self unto all its Operations, whatever their *Objects* be, as the Scripture knoweth nothing of it, so it is that which we *cannot* have, and if we could, it would be no *advantage* at all unto us, yea we had much better be without it. Have it indeed we *cannot*, for a supposition of it includes a Rejection of all our Dependance on God, making all the *springs* of our Actions to be absolutely and *formally* in our selves. Neither, considering the Prejudices, Temptations and Corruptions that we are possessed

Sect. 33.

and exercised with, would such a *flexibility* of Will be of any Use or Advantage unto us, but would rather certainly give us up to the Power of Sin and Sathan. All that the Scripture knows about *Free-will*, is that in the state of Nature antecedent unto the Converting sanctifying Work of the Spirit, all men whatever are in *bondage unto sin*, and that in all the Faculties of their Souls. They are sold under sin, are not *subject unto the Law of God, nor can be*; can neither think, nor will, nor doe, nor desire, nor love any thing that is *spiritually Good*, according to the Mind of God. But as unto what is Evil, perverse, unclean, that they are free and open unto, ready for, prone and inclined, and every way able to doe. On the other side, in those who are renewed by the Holy Ghost and sanctified, it acknowledgeth and teacheth a *freedom* of Will, not in an Indifferency and Flexibility unto Good and Evil, but in a Power and Ability to like, love, choose, and cleave unto God and his Will in all things. The Will is now freed from its Bondage unto sin, and being enlarged by Light and Love, willeth and chooseth freely the things of God, having received spiritual Power and Ability so to doe. It is the Truth, that is, Faith in the Gospel, the Doctrine of the Truth, which is the Means of this Freedom. The *Truth that makes you free*, Job. 8. 32. And it is the Son of God by his Spirit who is the principal Efficient cause of it. *For if the Son make us free, then are we free indeed*, v. 36. and otherwise we are not, whatever we pretend. And this *freedom* unto spiritual Good we have not of our selves in the state of Nature; for if we have, then are we *free indeed*, and there would be no need that the Son should make us free.

Sect. 34.

The Difference therefore about *Free-will*, is reduced unto these Heads. 1. Whether there be a Power in Man, *indifferently* to Determine himself, his Choice and all his Actings, to this, or that, Good or Evil, one thing or another, independently on the Will, Power and Providence of God, and his Disposal of all future Events. This indeed we deny, as that which is inconsistent with the Prescience, Authority, Decrees and Dominion of God; and as that which would prove certainly ruinous and destructive to our selves. 2. Whether there be in men *unregenerate*, not renewed by the Holy Ghost, a *Freedom, Power* and *Ability* unto that which is *spiritually good*, or to Believe and Obey according to the Mind and Will of God. This also we deny, as that which is contrary to innumerable Testimonies of Scripture, and absolutely destructive of the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ. 3. Whether the *Freedom* of Will that is in Believers, do consist in an *indifferency* and *freedom* from any Determination only, with a *power* equally ready for Good or Evil, according as the Will shall determine it self; or whether it consist in a Gracious *Freedom* and *Ability* to choose, will and doe that which is *spiritually Good*, in Opposition to the Bondage and slavery unto sin, wherein we were before detained. This last is that Liberty and Power of the Will which we assert with the Scripture in persons that are sanctified. And a *Liberty* this is every way consistent with all the Operations of God, as the Sovereign first Cause of all things; every way compliant with, and an Effect of the special Grace of God, and the Operations of the Holy Ghost; a Liberty whereby

whereby our Obedience and Salvation are secured, in Answer to the Promises of the Covenant. And who, that understands himself, would change this reall, usefull, gracious *free-will*, given by Jesus Christ the Son of God, when he makes us *free*, and an Effect of Gods writing his Law in our Hearts, to cause us to walk in his Statutes, that Property of the new Heart whereby it is able to consent unto, choose and embrace freely the things of God, for that fictitious *imaginary freedom*, yea for it if it were *reall*, of an Indifferency unto all things, and an Equal Power unto every thing, whether it be Good or Evil. I say then, that by the Habit of Grace and Holiness infused into us by the Spirit of Sanctification, the Will is freed, enlarged, and enabled to answer the Commands of God for Obedience, according to the Tenor of the New Covenant. This is that *freedom*, this is that *Power* of the *Will* which the Scripture reveals and regards, and which by all the Promises and Precepts of it we are obliged to use and exercise, and no other.

(3) The *Affections*, which naturally are the principal servants and instruments of Sin, are hereby engaged unto God, *Deut.* 30. 6. And from what hath been thus far discoursed, the sense of our former Assertion is evident, as also the Nature of the Principle of Holiness insisted on. Sect. 35.

The Holy Ghost in our *sanctification* doth work effect and create in us, a *new, holy, spiritual, vital Principle* of Grace, residing in all the Faculties of our Souls, according as their especial Nature is capable thereof, after the manner of a permanent and prevalent *Habit*, which he cherisheth, preserveth, encreaseth, and strengtheneth continually, by effectual *supplies of Grace* from Jesus Christ, disposing, enclining, and enabling the whole Soul unto all Wayes, Acts and Duties of Holiness, whereby we live to God; opposing, resisting, and finally conquering whatever is opposite and contrary thereunto. This belongs Essentially unto *Evangelical Holiness*, yea herein doth the Nature of it *Formally* and *Radically* consist. This is that from whence Believers are denominated *Holy*, and without which none are so, or can be so called.

Secondly; The Properties of this Power are *Readiness* and *Facility*. Wherever it is, it renders the Soul *ready* unto all Duties of Holy Obedience, and renders all Duties of holy Obedience *easy* unto the Soul. Sect. 36.

1. It gives *Readiness*, by removing and taking away all those *incumbrances* which the Mind is apt to be clogged with and hindred by, from Sin, the World, spiritual Sloth, and Unbelief. This is that which we are exhorted unto in a way of Duty, *Heb.* 12. 1. *Luke* 12. 35. *1 Pet.* 1. 13. *chap.* 4. 1. *Ephes.* 6. 14. Herein is the Spirit *ready* though the Flesh be weak, *Mark* 14. 35. And those Incumbrances which give an *unreadiness* unto Obedience to God, may be considered two wayes. (1) As they are in their *full power* and *efficacy*, in persons Unregenerate; whence they are unto every *good work* *reprobate*; *Tit.* 1. 13. Hence proceed all those prevalent Tergiversations against a Compliance with the Will of God, and their own Convictions, which bear sway in such

persons. Yet a little slumber, a little sleep, a little folding of the hands to sleep, Prov. 6. 10. By these do men so often put off the Calls of God, and perniciously procrastinate from time to time a full Compliance with their Convictions. And whatever particular Duties such Persons do perform, yet are their Hearts and Minds never prepared or ready for them; but the *incumbrances* mentioned, do influence them into spiritual Disorders in all that they do. (2) These Principles of *Sloth* and *Unreadiness* do oft-times *partially* influence the Minds of Believers themselves unto great Indispositions unto *spiritual* Duties; So the Spouse states her case, *Cantic.* 5. 2, 3. By reason of her Circumstances in the World, she had an *unreadiness* for that *Converse* and *Communion* with Christ, which she was called unto. And it is so not unfrequently with the Best of men in this World. A spiritual *unreadiness* unto holy Duties, arising from the Power of *Sloth* or the Occasions of Life, is no small part of their *sin* and Trouble. Both these are removed by this *spiritual Power* of the Principle of *Life* and *Holiness* in Believers. The total prevailing *Power* of them, such as is in persons *unregenerate*, is broken by the first Infusion of it into the Soul, wherein it gives an *habitual* fitness and Preparation of Heart unto all Duties of Obedience unto God. And by various Degrees it freeth Believers from the Remainders of the *Incumbrances* which they have yet to conflict with; and this it doth three ways. As (1) it *weakeneth* and taketh off the *bent* of the Soul from Earthly things, so as they shall not possess the Mind as formerly, *Col.* 3. 2. How it doth this, was declared before, and when this is done, the Mind is greatly eased of its Burden, and some way *ready* unto its Duty. (2) It gives an *insight* into the Beauty, the Excellency and Glory of *Holiness* and all Duties of Obedience. This they see nothing of who being unsanctified, are under the Power of their Natural Darkness. They can see no *Beauty in Holiness*, no form nor Comeliness why it should be desired; and it is no wonder if they are unfree to the Duties of it, which they are but as it were compelled unto. But the spiritual *Light* wherewith this Principle of Grace is accompanied, discovers an Excellency in *Holiness* and the Duties of it, and in the *Communion* with God which we have thereby, so as greatly to encline the mind unto them, and prepare it for them. (3) It causeth the *Affections* to cleave and adhere unto them with Delight. *How doe I love thy Law, saith David, my delight is in thy Statutes, they are sweeter unto me than the Honey-Comb.* Where these three things concur, that the Mind is freed from the powerfull Influences of carnal Lusts and Love of this World, where the Beauty and Excellency of *Holiness* and the Duties of Obedience lye clear in the Eyes of the Soul, and where the *Affections* cleave unto *spiritual* things as commanded, then will be that *Readiness* in Obedience which we enquire after.

Sect. 37.

2. It gives *Facility* or *Easiness* in the Performance of all Duties of Obedience. Whatever men do from an *Habit*, they do with some kind of *Easiness*. That is easie to them which they are accustomed unto, though hard and difficult in its self. And what is done from *Nature* is done with *Facility*. And the Principle of Grace as we have shewed, is a new Nature, an infused *Habit* with respect unto the Life of

of God, or all Duties of Holy Obedience. I grant, there will be Opposition unto them even in the Mind and Heart it self, from sin and Sathan, and Temptations of all sorts, yea and they may sometimes arise so high, as either to *defeat* our purposes and intentions unto Duties, or to clogge us in them, to take off our Chariot-wheels, and to make us drive heavily. But still it is in the Nature of the Principle of Holiness to make the whole Course of Obedience and all the Duties of it *ease* unto us, and to give us a *Facility* in their Performance. For (1) it introduceth a *suitableness* between our Minds and the Duties we are to perform. By it is the Law written in our Hearts; that is, there is an Answerableness in them unto all that the Law of God requires. In the state of Nature, the great things of the Law of God are a *strange thing unto us*, *Hos. 8. 12.* there is an *enmity* in our Minds against them; *Rom. 8. 7.* There is no *suitableness* between our Minds and them. But this is taken away by the Principle of *Grace*. Thereby do the Mind and Duty answer one another, as the Eye and a light-some Body. Hence the Commands of *Christ* are not grievous unto them in whom it is, *1 Joh. 5. 3.* They do not appear to contain any thing uncouth, unreasonable, burdensome, or any way unsuited to that new Nature whereby the Soul is influenced and acted. Hence all the *Wayes of Wisdom* are unto Believers as they are in themselves, *Pleasantness*, and all her paths are peace, *Prov. 3. 17.*

The great Notion of some in these dayes is, about the *suitableness* of *Christian Religion* unto *Reason*. And to make good their Assertion in the principal Mysteries of it, because Reason will not come to them, they bring them by violence unto their Reason. But it is with respect unto this renewed Principle alone that there is a *suitableness* in any of the things of God unto our Minds and Affections. (2) It keeps up the Heart or whole Person unto a *frequency* of all Holy Acts and Duties. And *frequency* gives *facility* in every kind. It puts the Soul upon reiterated Actings of Faith and Love, or renewed holy Thoughts and Meditations. It is a Spring that is continually bubbling up in them, on the frequent Repetition of the daily Duties of Prayer, Reading, holy Discourse; as on closing with all Opportunities and Occasions of Mercy, Benignity, Charity and Bounty amongst men. Hereby is the Heart so accustomed unto the Yoke of the Lord, and made so conversant in his Wayes, that it is *natural* and *ease* to it to bear them, and to be engaged in them. And it will be found by Experience, that the more Intermissions of Duties of any sort we fall under, the more *difficulty* we shall find in the performance of them. (3) It engageth the *Assistance* of *Christ* and his *Spirit*. It is the Divine Nature, the New Creature which the Lord Christ careth for; in and by its Actings in all Duties of Obedience doth its Life consist: Therein also is it strengthened and improved. For this cause doth the Lord Christ continually come in by the Supplies of his Spirit unto its Assistance. And when the strength of Christ is engaged, then and there is his Yoke *ease* and his Burden *light*.

Some perhaps will say, that they find not this *Facility* or *Easiness* in the Course of Obedience, and in the Duties of it. They meet with secret Unwillingnesses in themselves, and great Oppositions on other

Accounts,

Sect. 38.

Accounts, whence they are apt to be *faint* and *weary*, yea are almost ready to give over. It is hard to them to *pray continually*, and not to faint; to stand in their Watch night and day against the Inroads of their *spiritual* Adversaries, to keep themselves from the Insinuations of the World, and up unto those Sacrifices of Charity and Bounty that are so well-pleasing to God: Many Weights and Burdens are upon them in their Course; many Difficulties press them, and they are ready to be beset round about, every moment. Wherefore, they think that the Principle of Grace and Holiness doth not give the *Facility* and *Easiness* mentioned, or that they were never made Partakers of it.

I answer: (1) Let these Persons *examine* themselves, and duely consider whence these Obstructions and Difficulties they complain of do *arise*: If they are from the *inward* Inclinations of their Souls, and unwillingness to bear the *Yoke of Christ*, only they are kept up unto it by their Convictions which they cannot cast off, then is their Condition to be bewailed. But if themselves are sensible and convinced, that they arise from Principles which as far as they are *within* them they hate and abhorre, and long to be freed from, and as they are from *without* are such as they look on as Enemies unto them, and do watch against them; then what they complain of is no more, but what in one Degree or other, all that Believe have Experience of. And if their Impediments do arise from what they know themselves to be opposite unto them, and that Principle whereby they are acted, then notwithstanding this Objection it may be in the Nature of the Principle of Holiness to give *Facility* in all the Duties of it.

Sect. 39.

(2) Let Enquiry be made, Whether they have been *constant* and *assiduous* in the Performance of all those Duties which they now complain that they find so much difficulty in. The Principle of Grace and Holiness gives *Facility* in all Duties of Obedience, but in the *proper* Way and Order. It first gives *Constancy* and *Assiduity*, and then *Easiness*: If men comply not with its Guidance and Inclination in the former, it is in vain for them to expect the latter. If we are not *constant* in all Acts of Obedience, none of them will ever be *easie* unto us. Let not those who can omit *proper* and *due* Seasons of Meditation, Prayer, Hearing, Charity, Moderation in all things, Patience, Meekness and the like, at their pleasure, on the least Occasions, Excuses, or Diversions, ever think or hope to have the Ways of Obedience smooth, its Paths pleasant, or its Duties *easie*. Let him never think to attain any *Readiness*, *Delight* or *Facility* in any Art or Science, who is alwayes beginning at it, touching upon it sometimes. As this is the way in all sorts of things Natural and Spiritual, to be alwayes *learning*, and never to come to the Knowledge of the Truth; so in the Practice of Holy Obedience; if men are as it were alwayes *beginning*, one while performing, another intermitting the Duties of it, fearing or being unwilling to engage into a *constant*, *equal*, *assiduous* Discharge of them, they will be alwayes *striving*, but never come unto any *Readiness* or *Facility* in them.

(3) The Difficulty and Burdensomeness complained of, may proceed from the Interposition of *perplexing Temptations*, which weary, disquiet

disquiet and distract the Mind. This may be and frequently is so, and yet our Assertion not impeached. We only say, that set aside extraordinary Occasions, and sinfull Neglects, this Principle of Grace and Holiness doth give that *suitableness* to the Mind unto all Duties of Obedience, that *constancy* in them, that *love* unto them, as make them both *easie* and *pleasant*.

By these things we may enquire after the *Habit* or Principle of Holiness in our own Minds, that we be not deceived by any thing that falsely pretendeth thereunto. As, Sect. 40.

(1) Let us take heed, that we *deceive* not our selves, as though it would suffice unto Gospel-Holiness, that we have *occasionally good Purposes* of leaving Sin and living unto God, then when something urgeth upon us more than ordinary, with the Effects which such Purposes will produce. Afflictions, Sickneses, Troubles, sense of great Guilt, fear of Death, and the like, do usually produce this Frame. And although it is most remote from any pretence unto *Evangelical Obedience*, yet I could not but give a Caution against it, because it is that whereby the Generality of men in the World do delude themselves into Eternal Ruine. It is rare to find any that are so stubbornly Profligate, but at one time or another, they project and design, yea promise and engage unto a Change of their Course, and Amendment of their Lives, doing sundry things it may be in the pursuit of those Designs and Purposes. For they will thereon abstain from their old Sins, with whose haunt they are much perplexed, and betake themselves unto the Performance of those Duties from whence they expect most Relief unto their Consciences, and whose Neglect doth most reflect upon them. Especially will they do so when the hand of God is upon them in Afflictions and Dangers, *Psal.* 78. 34, 35, 36, 37. And this produceth in them that kind of Goodness, which God sayes, *is like the Morning Cloud or the Early Dew*, things that make a fair Appearance of something, but immediately vanish away, *Hos.* 6. 4. Certainly there need not much pains to convince any man, how unspeakably this comes short of that *Evangelical Holiness* which is a Fruit of the Sanctification of the Spirit. It hath neither the Root of it, nor any Fruit that doth so much as resemble it. But it is to be lamented, that such Multitudes of Rational Creatures, living under the Means of Light and Grace, should so vainly and wofully delude their own Souls. That which they aim at and intend, is to have that in them whereby they may be accepted with God. Now not to insist on what will absolutely frustrate all the Designs of such persons, namely, their want of Faith in Christ, and an Interest in his Righteousness thereby, which they are regardless of; all that they project and design is as farre beneath that Holiness which God requireth of them, and which they think hereby to obtain, as the Earth is beneath the Heavens. All that they do in this kind is utterly lost, it will never be either a Righteousness *unto* them or an Holiness *in* them. But this Deceit is frequently rebuked; God only by his Grace can remove and take it away from the Minds of Men.

(2) And

Sect. 41.

(2) And we may Learn hence, not to be imposed on by *Gifts*, though never so usefull, with a *plausible Profession* thereon. These things go a great way in the World, and many deceive both themselves and others by them. *Gifts* are from the Holy Ghost in an especial manner; and therefore greatly to be esteemed. They are also frequently usefull in and unto the Church; For the *Manifestation of the Spirit is given unto men to profit withall*. And they put men on such Duties as have a great *shew* and Appearance of Holiness. By the help of them alone may men *pray* and *preach*, and maintain spiritual Communication among them with whom they do converse. And as Circumstances may be ordered, they put sundry persons on a frequent performance of these Duties; and so keep them up to an Eminency in Profession. But yet when all is done, they are not *Holiness*, nor are the Duties performed in the strength of them alone, Duties of *Evangelical Obedience* accepted of God in them by whom they are performed; and they may be where there is nothing of Holiness at all. They are not indeed only consistent with Holiness, but subservient unto it, and exceeding promoters of it in Souls that are really Gracious. But they may be *alone without Grace*, and then are they apt to deceive the Mind with a pretence of being and doing what they are not, nor doe. Let them be called to an Account by the *Nature* and *Properties* of that Habit and Principle of Grace which is in all true Holiness as before explained, and it will quickly appear how short they come thereof. For, as their Subject where they have their Residence, is the *mind only*, and not the Will or Affections, any further but as they are influenced or restrained by Light, so they do not *renew* nor *change* the Mind it self, so as to *transform* it into the Image of God. Neither do they give the Soul a general Inclination unto all Acts and Duties of Obedience, but only a Readiness for that Duty which their Exercise doth peculiarly consist in. Wherefore, they answer no one Property of true Holiness, and we have not seldom seen Discoveries made thereof.

Sect. 42.

Least of all can *Morality* or a Course of *Moral Duties*, when it is alone, maintain any pretence hereunto. We have had Attempts to prove, that there is no *specific* Difference between Common and Saving Grace, but that they are both of the same Kind, differing only in *Degrees*. But some, as though this ground were already gained, and needed no more contending about, do adde without any Consideration of these petty distinctions of *Common and Saving Grace*, that *Morality* is *Grace*, and *Grace* is *Morality* and nothing else. To be a Gracious *Holy* man according to the Gospel, and to be a *Moral* man, is all one with them. And as yet it is not declared, whether there be any Difference between *Evangelical Holiness* and *Philosophical Morality*. Wherefore, I shall proceed to the Second Thing proposed; And this is, further to prove, That this *Habit* or Gracious Principle of Holiness is *specifically distinct* from all other Habits of the Mind whatever, whether Intellectual or Moral, Connate or Acquired, as also from all that Common Grace and the Effects of it, whereof any Persons not really sanctified may be made partakers.

The

The Truth of this Assertion is indeed sufficiently evident from the Description we have given of this *spiritual Habit*, its Nature and Properties. But whereas there are also other Respects giving further Confirmation of the same Truth, I shall call over the most important of them, after some few things have been premised. As,

Sect. 43.

1. An *Habit* of what sort soever it be, qualifies the Subject wherein it is, so that it may be denominated from it, and make the Actions proceeding from it to be suited unto it, or to be of the same Nature with it. As *Aristotle* says, *Vertue is an Habit which maketh him that hath it Good or Vertuous, and his Actions good*. Now all *Moral Habits* are seated in the Will. *Intellectual Habits* are not immediately affective of Good or Evil, but as the Will is influenced by them. These *Habits* do encline, dispose and enable the Will to act according to their Nature. And in all the Acts of our Wills, and so all external Works which proceed from them, two things are considered. First, the *Act* it self, or the Work done; and Secondly, the *End* for which it is done. And both these things are respected by the Habit it self, though not immediately, yet by vertue of its Acts. It is moreover *necessary* and *natural*, that every Act of the Will, every Work of a Man be for a *certain End*. Two things therefore are to be considered in all our Obedience; (1) The *Duty* it self we doe, and (2) The *End* for which we doe it. If any Habit therefore doth not encline and dispose the Will unto the proper *End* of Duty, as well as unto the Duty it self, it is not of that Kind from whence true Gospel Obedience doth proceed. For the End of every Act of Gospel Obedience, which is the *Glory of God* in *Jesus Christ*, is Essential unto it. Let us then take all the Habits of *Moral Vertue*, and we shall find, that however they may incline and dispose the Will unto such Acts of Vertue as *materially* are Duties of Obedience, yet they do it not with respect unto this End. If it be said, that such *Moral Habits* do so incline the Will unto Duties of Obedience with respect unto this *End*, then is there no need of the *Grace of Jesus Christ* or the Gospel, to enable men to Live unto God, according to the Tenor of the Covenant of Grace, which some seem to aim at.

2. Whereas, it is the *End* that gives all our Duties their special Nature, this is two-fold: Sect. 44.

(1) The *next*; and (2) The *ultimate*; or it is *particular* or *universal*. And these may be different in the same Action. As a man may give Almes to the *poor*, his *next* Particular End may be to Relieve and Cherish them: This End is good, and so far the Work or Duty it self is good also. But the *ultimate* and General End of this Action may be Self, Merit, Reputation, Praise, Compensation for sin committed, and not the Glory of God in Christ; which vitiates the whole. Now *Moral Habits*, acquired by Endeavours answerable unto our Light and Convictions, or the Dictates of Enlightened Reason, with Resolutions and Perseverance, may encline and dispose the Will unto Actions and Works, that for the Substance of them are Duties, and are capable of having *particular Ends* that are good, but a want of Respect unto the General End allows them not to be any part of

Gospel Obedience. And this is applicable unto all *Morall Habits* and Duties whatever. But the difference asserted, is farther manifested,

Sect. 45.

First, From the especial *Fountain* and *Spring* of Holiness, which constitutes its Nature of another Kind than any Common Grace or Morality can pretend unto: And this is *Electing Love*, or Gods Purpose of Election. *Ephes. 1. 4. He hath chosen us in Christ before the Foundation of the World, that we should be Holy and unblameable before him in Love.* God chooseth us from Eternity, that we should be Holy; that is, with a Design and Purpose to make us so. He sets some men apart in his Eternal Purpose, as those unto whom he will communicate Holiness. It is therefore an especial Work of God, in the pursuit of an especial and eternal Purpose. This gives it its especial Nature, and makes it, as was said, of another Kind than any Effect of *Common Grace* whatever. That is Holiness, which God works in men by his Spirit, because he hath chosen them, and nothing else is so. For he chooseth us unto salvation through the sanctification of the Spirit, *2 Thess. 2. 13.* Salvation is the End that God aimeth at in his choosing of us, in subordination unto his own Glory; which is and must be the *Ultimate End* of all his Purposes and Decrees, or of all the free Acts of his Wisdom and Love. The Means which he hath ordained, whereby we shall be brought unto this *Salvation* so designed in his Eternal Purpose, is the *sanctification of the Spirit*. Gospel Holiness therefore is the Effect of that Sanctification of the Spirit, which God hath designed as the especial Way and Means on their part, of bringing the Elect unto Salvation. And his *choosing* of them is the Cause and Reason why he doth so sanctifie them by his Spirit. And, where our *Sanctification* is comprized under our *Vocation*, because therein and thereby we are sanctified by the sanctifying Principle of Holiness communicated unto us, it is not only reckoned as an Effect and Consequent of our *Predestination*, but is so conjoynd thereunto, as to declare, that none others are partakers of it, but those that are Predestinate; *Rom. 8. 30.*

And this Consideration is of it self sufficient to Evince, that this *Holiness* whereof we treat, differs essentially from all other Habits of the Mind, and Actions proceeding from them, as having an especial Nature of its own. Whatever there may be in any men, of *Vertue* and *Piety*, or whatever their Endeavours may be, in Wayes of Honesty and Duty towards God and Men, if the Power and Principle of it in them be not a *Fruit of Electing Love*, of the Spirit of Sanctification, given of God for this certain End, that we may attain the Salvation whereunto we are chosen, it belongeth not unto this *Holiness*. Wherefore, the Apostle *Peter* giving us in charge, to use all Diligence whereby we may make our *Calling and Election sure*, that is, unto our Souls, and in our own Minds, prescribes as the Means of it, the Exercise and Encrease of those Graces which are its proper Effects, *2 Pet. 1. 5, 6, 7, 10.* And the Reason why we see so many glorious Professions of Faith and Obedience utterly to fail as we do, is because the Faith so professed was not the *Faith of the Elect of God*, *Tit. 1. 1.* And the Obedience of it was not the Fruit of that Spirit of Sanctification which God gives to man, to make his Purpose of Election infallibly Effectual; that so
the

the Purpose of God which is according to Election might stand; Rom. 11. And the Election, or those Elected might obtain the Grace and Glory designed for them, Rom. 11. 5. 7. And it is an Evidence of much spiritual Sloth in us, or that which is worse, namely that our Graces and Obedience are not genuine and of the true Heavenly Race, if we endeavour not to satisfy our selves, that they are real Effects of Electing Love.

If any one shall enquire, How we may know whether the Graces of Holiness, which we hope are in us, and the Duties that proceed from them are Fruits and Effects of Election, seeing such only are genuine and Durable. I answer, it may be done three wayes. Sect. 46.

(1) By their Growth and Encrease. This in ordinary Cases, setting aside the Seasons of prevalent Temptations and Desertions, is the best Evidence hereof. Waters that proceed from a living Fountain, encrease in their progress, because of the continual Supplies which they have from their Spring; when those which have only Occasional Beginnings, from showers of Rain or the like, do continually decay untill they are dried up. The Graces that come from this Eternal Spring, have continual supplies from it, so that if they meet with no violent Obstructions, (as they may do sometimes for a season) they do constantly encrease and thrive. And therefore no man can secure his spiritual Comforts one Moment under a sensible decay of Grace. For such a decay is a very sufficient Reason why he should call the Truth of all his Grace into Question. Where the Spirit of Sanctification is, as given in pursuit of the Purpose of Election, it is a Well of Water springing up into Everlasting Life, Joh. 4. 14. The quietness and satisfaction of Professors under a Decay of Grace, is a Soul-ruining security, and hath nothing in it of Spiritual Peace.

(2) We may discern it, when we are much stirred up unto diligent Actings and Exercise of Grace, out of a sense of that Electing Love from whence all Grace doth proceed. It is the Nature of Grace that is the Fruit of Election, greatly to affect the Heart and Mind with a sense of the Love that is therein: So the Apostle sayes expressly, that one Grace exciteeth and stirreth up another, from a sense of the Love of God, which sets them all on work, Rom. 5. 2, 3, 4, 5. So God is said to draw us with Loving-kindness, because he hath loved us with everlasting love, Jerem. 31. 3. That is, he gives us such a sense of his everlasting Love, as thereby to draw us after him in Faith and Obedience. Those Principles of Duties in us which are excited only by Fear, Awe, Hope, and the jealous Observances of an awakened Conscience, will scarce at any time evince this heavenly Extract unto a spiritual Understanding. That Grace which proceeds from especial Love, will carry along an holy quickening sense of it, and thereby be excited unto its due Exercise. And we do what we can to famish and starve our Graces, when we do not endeavour their Supplies by Faith on that Spring of Divine Love from whence they proceed. Sect. 47.

(3) Seeing we are chosen in Christ, and predestinated to be like unto him, those Graces of Holiness have the most evident and legible Characters Sect. 48.

ractions of *Electing Love* upon them, which are most Effectual in working us unto a *Conformity* to him. That Grace is certainly from an Eternal Spring, which makes us like unto *Jesus Christ*. Of this sort are Meekness, Humility, Patience, Self-denial, Contempt of the World, Readiness to pass by Wrongs, to Forgive Enemies, to Love and do Good unto all, which indeed are despised by the most, and duely regarded but by few. But I return.

Sect. 49. *Secondly*; The especial *procuring Cause* of this Holiness is the *Mediation of Christ*. We are not in this Matter concerned in any thing, let men call it what they please, *Vertue* or *Godliness* or *Holiness*, that hath not an especial Relation unto the Lord Christ, and his Mediation. Evangelical Holiness is purchased for us by him, according to the Tenour of the Everlasting Covenant, is promised unto us on his Account, actually impetrated for us by his Intercession, and communicated unto us by his Spirit. And hereby we do not only cast off all the *Moral Vertues* of the Heathens from having the least concernment herein, but all the Principles and Duties of Persons professing Christianity, who are not really and actually implanted into Christ. For he it is who of God is made unto us *Sanctification*, 1 Cor. 1. 30. And this he is on several Accounts, the Heads whereof may be called over.

Sect. 50. (1) He is made unto us of God *Sanctification*, with respect unto his *sacerdotal Office*, because we are purified, purged, washed and cleansed from our Sins by his Blood, in the Oblation of it, and the Application of it unto our Souls, as hath been at large declared. *Ephes. 5. 26, 27. Tit. 2. 14. 1 Joh. 1. 7. Heb. 9. 14.* All that we have Taught before, concerning the Purification of our *Minds* and *Consciences* by the Blood of Christ, is peculiar unto Gospel-Holiness, and distinguisheth it Essentially from all Common Grace, or Moral Vertues. And they do but deceive themselves, who rest in a Multitude of Duties, it may be animated much with Zeal, and set off with a Profession of the most rigid Mortification, whose Hearts and Consciences are not thus purged by the Blood of Christ.

Sect. 51. (2) Because he prevails for the actual *sanctification* of our Natures, in the *Communication* of Holiness unto us by his *Intercession*. His Prayer, *Joh. 17. 17.* is the blessed Spring of our Holiness. *Sanctifie them through thy Truth, thy Word is Truth.* There is not any thing of this Grace wrought in us, bestowed on us, communicated unto us, preserved in us, but what is so in Answer unto, and Compliance with the *Intercession* of Christ. From his Prayer for us, is Holiness begun in us; *Sanctifie them*, saith he, *by thy Truth*. Thence is it kept alive and preserved in us: *I have*, saith he to Peter, *prayed for thee, that thy Faith should not fail*; and through his Intercession are we saved to the uttermost. Nothing belongs to this Holiness, but what in the Actual Communication of it is a peculiar Fruit of Christs Intercession: What is not so, what men may be made partakers of upon any more general Account, belongs not thereunto. And if we really design Holiness, or intend to be Holy, it is our Duty constantly to improve the *Intercession* of Christ for the Encrease of it. And this we may do by especial Applications

Applications to him for that Purpose. So the Apostles prayed him, to *encrease their Faith*, Luke 17. 3. And we may do so, for the Encrease of our Holiness. But the *Nature* of this Application unto Christ, for the Encrease of Holiness, by vertue of his Intercession, is duely to be considered. We are not to pray unto him, that he would *intercede* for us, that we may be Sanctified. For as he needs not our minding for the Discharge of his Office, so he intercedes not *Orally* in Heaven at all, and alwayes doth so *Virtually* by his Appearance in the Presence of God with the Vertue of his Oblation or Sacrifice. But whereas the Lord Christ gives out no Supplyes of Grace unto us, but what he receiveth from the Father for that End by vertue of his Intercession, we apply our selves unto him under that Consideration; namely, as he who upon his Intercession with God for us, hath all stores of Grace to give us supplyes from.

(3) He is so, because the *Rule and Measure* of Holiness unto us; the Instrument of working it in us, is His Word and Doctrine; which he taught the Church as the great Prophet of it. *The Law was given by Moses, but Grace and Truth came by Jesus Christ.* The in-bred dictates of the Light and Law of Nature in their greatest Purity, are not the Rule or Measure of this Holiness; much less are these Rules and *Maxims* which men deduce, partly right and partly wrong, from them, of any such use. Nor is the Written Law it self so. It is the Rule of Original Holiness, but not the adequate Rule of that Holiness whereunto we are restored by Christ. Neither are both these in Conjunction, the Dictates of Nature and the Law written, the Instrument of working Holiness in us. But it is the Doctrine of the Gospel which is the Adequate Rule and immediate Instrument of it. My meaning is, That the Word, the Gospel, the Doctrine of Christ in the *Preceptive part* of it, is so the Rule of all our Obedience and Holiness, as that all which it requireth belongeth thereunto, and nothing else but what it requireth doth so; and the Formal Reason of our Holiness consists in Conformity thereunto, under this Consideration, that it is the Word and Doctrine of Christ. Nothing belongeth unto Holiness *materially*, but what the Gospel requireth; and nothing is so in us *formally*, but what we doe *because the Gospel* requireth it. And it is the *Instrument* of it, because God maketh use of it alone as an external Means for the Communicating of it unto us, or the Ingenerating of it in us. Principles of Natural Light, with the Guidances of an awakened Conscience, do direct unto, and exact the performance of many material Duties of Obedience. The written Law requireth of us all Duties of Original Obedience, and God doth use these things variouly for the preparing of our Souls unto a right Receiving of the Gospel. But there are some Graces, some Duties belonging unto *Evangelical Holiness*, which the Law knows nothing of: Such are the *Mortification of sin, Godly Sorrow, daily Cleansing of our Hearts and Minds*; not to mention the more sublime and *spiritual Acts* of Communion with God by Christ, with all that Faith and Love which is required in us towards him. For although these things may be contained in the Law *radically*, as it requires universal Obedience unto God, yet are they not so *formally*. And it is not used as the Means to beget Faith and Holiness in us: This is the Effect of the *Gospel* only.
Hence

Sect. 52.

Hence it is said to be the *Power of God unto Salvation*; *Rom. 1. 16.* or that whereby God puts forth the *Greatness of his Power* unto that Purpose; the *Word of his Grace, which is able to build us up, and give us an Inheritance among them that are sanctified, Acts 20. 30.* It is that by whose *Preaching Faith cometh*; *Rom. 10. 17.* and by the *Hearing* whereof we receive the Spirit, *Gal. 3. 2.* It is that whereby we are *begotten* in Christ Jesus; *1 Cor. 4. 15. Jam. 1. 17. 1 Pet. 1. 23, 24, 25.* And all that is required of us in the way of external Obedience, is but that our Conversation be such as becometh the Gospel.

Sect. 53.

And this is a proper *Touch-stone* for our Holiness, to try whether it be genuine, and of the right Kind or no. If it be, it is nothing but the *seed of the Gospel* quickened in our Hearts, and bearing Fruit in our Lives. It is the Delivery up of our Souls into the Mould of the Doctrine of it, so as that our Minds and the Word should Answer one another, as Face doth unto Face in Water. And we may know whether it be so with us or no, two ways. For (1) if it be so, none of the *Commands* of the Gospel will be *grievous* unto us, but easie and pleasant. A Principle suited unto them all, enclining unto them all, connatural unto them, as proceeding from them, being implanted in our Minds and Hearts, it renders the Commands themselves so *suited* unto us, so *usefull*, and the Matter of them so *desireable*, that Obedience is made pleasant thereby. Hence is that *satisfaction of Mind*, with Rest and Joy, which Believers have in Gospel Duties, yea the most Difficult of them; with that Trouble and Sorrow which ensues upon their Neglect, Omission, or their being deprived of Opportunities for them. But in the strictest Course of Duties that proceedeth from any other Principle, the *Precepts of the Gospel*, or at least some of them, on the Account of their Spirituality, or Simplicity, are either esteemed *grievous* or despised. (2) None of the Truths of the Gospel will seem *strange* unto us. This makes up the Evidence of a genuine Principle of Gospel-Holiness, when the Commands of it are not *grievous*, nor the Truths of it *strange* or uncouth. The Mind so prepared receives every Truth, as the Eye doth every Encrease of Light, naturally and pleasantly, untill it come unto its proper measure. There is a Measure of Light which is suited unto our Visive Faculty, what exceeds it, dazles and amazes, rather than enlightens; but every Degree of *Light*, which tends unto it, is connatural and pleasant to the Eye. So is it with the sanctified Mind and spiritual Truth: There is a Measure of Light issuing from spiritual Truths, that our Minds are capable of; what is beyond this Measure, belongs to Glory; and the gazing after it will rather dazle than enlighten us: And such is the issue of over-strained Speculations, when the Mind endeavours an Excess as to its Measure. But all Light from Truth which tends to the filling up of that Measure, is pleasant, and natural to the sanctified Mind. It sees Wisdom, Glory, Beauty, and Usefulness, in the most spiritual, sublime and mysterious Truths, that are revealed in and by the Word; labouring more and more to comprehend them, because of their Excellency. For want hereof, we know how the Truths of the Gospel are by many despised, reproached, scorned, as those which are no less *foolishness* unto them, to be believed, than the Precepts of it are *grievous* to be obeyed.

(4) He

(4) He is so, as he is the *Exemplary Cause* of our Holiness. The design of God in working Grace and Holiness in us, is that *we may be conformed unto the Image of his Son, that he may be the First-born among many brethren, Rom. 8. 29.* And our Design in the attaining of it, is first that we may be *like him*, and then express or shew forth the *Vertues of him who hath called us out of Darknes into his Marvellous Light, unto his Glory and Honour, 1 Pet. 2. 9.* To this End is he proposed in the Purity of his Natures, the Holiness of his Person, the Glory of his Graces, the Innocency and usefulness of his Conversation in the World, as the great *Idea* and *Exemplar*, which in all things we ought to conform our selves unto. And as the Nature of *Evangelical Holiness* consists herein, namely, in an universal Conformity unto him, as he is the Image of the Invisible God, so the Proposal of his *Example* unto us, is an effectual Means of ingenerating and encreasing it in us.

Sect. 34.

It is by all confessed, that Examples are most effectual wayes of Instruction, and if seasonably proposed do secretly sollicit the Mind unto Imitation, and almost unavoidably encline it thereunto. But when unto this Power which Examples have *naturally* and *morally* to instruct and affect our Minds, things are peculiarly designed and instituted of God to be our *Examples*, He requiring of us, that from them we should learn both what to doe, and what to avoid, their Force and Efficacy is encreased. This the Apostle instructs us in at large, *1 Cor. 10. 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11.* Now both these concur in the *Example of Holiness* that is given us in the Person of Christ. For,

Sect. 35.

First, He is not only in himself *morally* considered, the most perfect, absolute, glorious *Pattern* of all Grace, Holiness, Vertue, Obedience, to be chosen and preferred above all others, but he is *only* so; there is no other compleat Example of it. As for those Examples of *Heroical Vertue*, or *Stoical Apathie* which are boasted of among the Heathens, it were an easie matter to find such Flaws and Tumors in them, as would render them not only *uncomely* but *deformed* and monstrous. And in the Lives of the best of the Saints, there is declared what we ought expressly to avoid, as well as what we ought to follow; and in some things we are left at a loss, whether it be safe to conform unto them or no, seeing we are to be followers of none any further than they were so of Jesus Christ, and wherein they were so; neither in what they were or did, absolutely our Rule and Example in its self, but only so farr as therein they were conformable unto Christ. And the best of their Graces, the highest of their Attainments, and the most perfect of their Duties, have their Spots and Imperfections; so that although they should have exceeded what we can attain unto, and are therefore meet to be proposed unto our Imitation, yet do they come short of what we aim at, which is to be Holy as God is Holy. But in this our great *Exemplar*, as there was never the least shew of variableness from the Perfection of Holiness, (*for he did no sin, neither was there any guile found in him, yea in him was Light and no Darknes at all*) so were all his Graces, all his Actings of them, all his Duties, so absolute and compleat, as that we ought to aim no higher, nor to propose any other *Pattern* unto our selves. And who

who is it, that aiming at any Excellency, would not design the most absolute and perfect Example. This therefore is to be found as unto *Holiness* in Christ, and in him alone.

Sect. 56.

And *Secondly*, He is *appointed of God* for this Purpose. *One End* why God sent his Son to take our Nature upon him, and to converse in the World therein; was that he might set us an *Example* in our own Nature, in one who was like unto us in all things, sin only excepted, of that Renovation of his Image in us, of that Return unto him from Sin and Apostasie, of that Holy Obedience which he requireth of us. Such an *Example* was needfull, that we might never be at a loss about the Will of God in his Commands, having a glorious Representation of it before our Eyes; and this could be given us no otherwise but in our own Nature. The *Angelical* Nature was not suited to set us an Example of Holiness and Obedience, especially as to the *Exercise* of such Graces as we principally stand in need of in this World. For what Examples could *Angels* set unto us in themselves, of Patience in Afflictions, of Quietness in Sufferings, seeing their Nature is incapable of such things. Neither could we have had an Example that was perfect and compleat in our *own Nature*, but only in *One* who was Holy, Harmless, Undeified and separate from Sinners. To this End therefore among others did God send his *own Son* to take our Nature on him, and therein to represent unto us the perfect *Idea* of that Holiness and Obedience which he requireth of us. It is evident therefore, that these two Considerations of an *Instructive Example*, that it hath a *moral aptitude* to incite the Mind unto Imitation, and that it is *instituted of God* unto that Purpose, are both found Eminently in this of Christ.

Sect. 57.

But there is yet more in this matter: For (*First*) as God hath *appointed* the Consideration of *Christ* as an especial Ordinance unto the Encrease of Holiness in us, so his *Holy Obedience* as proposed unto us, hath a *peculiar Efficacy* unto that purpose beyond all other Instituted Examples. For (1) we are often called to *behold Christ*, and to *look upon him*; or it is promised that we shall do so, *Isa. 45. 22. Zech. 12. 10.* Now this *beholding of Christ* or *looking on him*, is the Consideration of him by *Faith* unto the Ends for which he is exhibited, proposed and set forth of God in the Gospel, and Promises thereof. This therefore is an especial Ordinance of God, and is by his Spirit made effectual. And these Ends are two: 1. *Justification*, 2. *Salvation*, or Deliverance from Sin and Punishment. *Look*, saith he, *unto me, and be saved.* This was he on the Cross, and is still so in the Preaching of the Gospel, wherein he is *evidently crucified before our eyes*, *Gal. 3. 1.* lifted up as *the Brazen Serpent in the Wilderness*, *Joh. 3. 14, 15.* That we looking on him by Faith, as *bearing our sins in his own Body on the Tree*, *1 Pet. 1. 24.* and *receiving the Attonement* made thereby, *Rom. 5. 11.* may through *Faith in him* be Justified from all our Sins, and *saved* from the Wrath to come. But this we intend not. For (2) He is of God *proposed* unto us in the Gospel, as the great *Pattern* and Exemplar of Holiness; so as that by Gods Appointment our *beholding and looking on him* in the Way mentioned, is a Means of the Encrease and growth of it in us. So our Apostle declares, *2 Cor. 3. 18. We all with*

with open face, beholding as in a Glass the Glory of the Lord, are changed into the same Image, from Glory to Glory, even by the Spirit of the Lord. That which is proposed unto us, is the *Glory of the Lord*; or the *Glory of God in the Face of Jesus Christ*, Chap. 4. v. 6. that is, God gloriously manifesting himself in the Person of Christ. This are we said to *behold with open face*; The Veil of Types and Shadowes being taken off and removed, Faith doth now clearly and distinctly view and consider Jesus Christ as he is represented unto us in the *glass of the Gospel*; that is, the Evidences of the Presence of God in him and with him, in his Work, Purity and Holiness. And the Effect hereof is, that we are through the Operation of the Spirit of God *changed into the same Image*, or made Holy, and therein like unto him.

(Secondly,) There is *peculiar Force and Efficacy* by the way of *Motive* in the *Example* of Christ, to encline us unto the Imitation of him, that is not to be found in any other Example on any Occasion whatever. Because, (1) Whatever is *proposed* unto us, in what he was, or what he did, as our *Pattern* and *Example*, he was it, and did it, not for his own sake, but out of free and meer *Love* unto us. That pure Nature of his, which we ought to be labouring after a Conformity unto, 1 *Joh.* 3. 3. and which he will at length bring us unto, *Phil.* 3. 21. he took it upon him by an infinite Condescension, meerly out of *Love* unto us, *Heb.* 2. 14, 15. *Phil.* 2. 5, 6, 7. And all the Actings of Grace in him, all the Duties of Obedience which he performed, all that glorious Compliance with the Will of God in his Sufferings which he manifested, proceed all from his Love unto us, *Joh.* 17. 19. *Gal.* 2. 20. These things being in themselves truly Honourable and Excellent, yea, being only so; the Holiness and Obedience which God requirerh of us consisting in them, being by the Appointment of God proposed unto our Imitation in the Example of Jesus Christ, how must it needs influence and prevail on gracious Souls to endeavour a Conformity unto him therein, to be as he was, to do as he did, seeing he was what he was, and did what he did, meerly out of Love unto us, and for no other End. And (2) Every thing which we are to imitate in Christ, is other wayes also *beneficial* unto us. For we are in its Place and Way even saved thereby. By his *Obedience we are made Righteous*, *Rom.* 5. 19. There is no Grace nor Duty of Christ, which he did perform, but we have the Advantage and Benefit of it. And this encreaseth the Efficacy of this Example. For who would not strive to obtain these things in himself, of whose being in Christ he hath so great Advantage.

Sect. 58.

In this Regard also therefore is the Lord Christ made *Sanctification unto us*, and is the Cause of *Evangelical Holiness* in us. And certainly we are the most of us much to blame, that we do not more abound in the use of this Means unto the End mentioned. Did we abide more constantly in the *beholding* or *Contemplation* of the Person of Christ, of the Glory and Beauty of his Holiness, as the Pattern and great *Example* proposed unto us, we should be more transformed into his Image and Likeness. But it is so fallen out, that many who are called *Christians*, delight to be talking of, and do much admire

Sect. 59.

the vertuous Sayings and Actions of the *Heathen*, and are ready to make them the Object of their Imitation, whilst they have no thoughts of the Grace that was in our Lord Jesus Christ, nor do endeavour after Conformity thereunto. And the Reason is, because the Vertue which they seek after and desire, is of the same Kind with that which was in the *Heathen*, and not of that Grace and Holiness which was in Christ Jesus. And thence also it is that some, who, not out of Love unto it, but to decry other important Mysteries of the Gospel thereby, do place all Christianity in the *Imitation of Christ*, do yet indeed in their practice despise those Qualities and Duties wherein he principally manifested the Glory of his Grace. His Meekness, Patience, Self-denial, Quietness in bearing Reproaches, Contempt of the World, Zeal for the Glory of God, Compassion to the Souls of men, Condescensions to the Weaknesses of all, they regard not. But there is no greater Evidence, that whatever we seem to have of any thing that is good in us, is no part of *Evangelical Holiness*, than that it doth not render us conformable to Christ.

Sect. 60.

And we should alwayes consider, how we ought to act *Faith* on Christ with respect unto this End. Let none be guilty *practically* of what some are falsely charged withall as to *Doctrine*. Let none divide in the Work of Faith, and Exercise themselves but in the one half of it. To Believe in Christ for Redemption, for Justification, for Sanctification, is but *one half* of the Duty of Faith. It respects Christ only as he died and suffered for us, as he made Attonement for our sins, Peace with God, and Reconciliation for us, as his Righteousness is imputed unto us unto Justification. Unto these Ends indeed is he *firstly* and *principally* proposed unto us in the Gospel, and with respect unto them are we exhorted to receive him, and to believe in him. But this is not all that is required of us. Christ in the Gospel is proposed unto us as our *Pattern* and *Example* of Holiness. And as it is a cursed Imagination, that this was the whole End of his *Life* and *Death*, namely, to *exemplify* and *confirm* the Doctrine of Holiness which he taught; so to neglect his so being our *Example*, in considering him by Faith to that End, and labouring after Conformity to him, is *evil* and *pernicious*. Wherefore, let us be much in the Contemplation of what he was, what he did, how in all Instances of Duties and Trials he carried himself, untill an Image or *Idea* of his perfect *Holiness* is implanted in our Minds, and we are made like unto him thereby.

Sect. 61.

(4^{ly}.) That which principally differenceth *Evangelical Holiness* with respect unto the Lord Christ, from all other *Natural* or *Moral* Habits or Duties, and whereby he is made *sanctification* unto us, is, that from him, his Person as our Head, the Principle of *spiritual Life and Holiness* in Believers is derived; and by vertue of their *Union* with him, real Supplies of spiritual Strength and Grace, whereby their Holiness is preserved, maintained and encreased, are constantly communicated unto them. On the stating and proof hereof, the whole difference about *Grace* and *Morality* doth depend, and will issue. For if that which men call *Morality* be so derived from the Lord Christ by vertue of our *Union* with him, it is *Evangelical Grace*; if it be not, it

it is either nothing, or somewhat of another Nature and Kind; for Grace it is not, nor Holiness neither. And all that I have to prove herein, is, that the Lord Jesus Christ is an *Head of Influence*, the Spring or Fountain of spiritual Life unto his Church, wherein I know my self to have the Consent of the Church of God in all Ages. And I shall confine the proof of my Assertion unto the ensuing Positions, with their Confirmation.

First, Whatever Grace God promiseth unto any, bestoweth on them or worketh in them, it is all so bestowed and wrought, in, by and through Jesus Christ, as the *Mediatour* or middle Person between God and them. This the very *Notion* and *Nature* of his Office of Mediator, and his *Interposition* therein between God and us, doth require. To affirm, that any good thing, any Grace, any Vertue is given unto, or bestowed on us, or wrought in us by God, and not immediately through Christ; or that we Believe in God, yield Obedience unto him, or Praise with Glory, not directly by Christ; is utterly to overthrow his *Mediation*. *Moses* indeed is called a *Mediator* between God and the People, *Gal. 3. 19.* as he was an *Internuntius*, a *Messenger* to declare the Mind of God to them, and to return their Answers unto God; but to limit the *Mediatory* Work of Christ unto such an *Interposition* only, is to leave him but one Office, that of a *Prophet*, and to destroy the principal Uses and Effects of his *Mediation* towards the Church. In like manner, because *Moses* is called *σωτηρ*, a *Saviour* or *Redeemer*, *Acts 7. 35.* metaphorically, with respect unto his Use and Employment in that mighty Work of the Deliverance of the People out of *Egypt*; some will not allow, that the Lord Christ is a *Redeemer* in any other sence, subverting the whole Gospel, with the Faith and Souls of men. But in particular what there is of this nature in the *Mediation* of Christ, in his being the middle Person between God and us, may be declared in the ensuing Assertions.

Sect. 62.

(1) God himself is the absolute, infinite *Fountain*, the supream efficient *Cause* of all Grace and Holiness. For He alone is originally and essentially Holy, as he only is Good, and so the first Cause of Holiness and Goodness to others. Hence he is called the *God of all Grace*, *1 Pet. 5. 10.* The Author, Possessor and Bestower of it. He hath Life in himself, and quickeneth whom he pleaseth, *Joh. 5. 26.* With him is the *Fountain of Life*, *Psal. 36. 9.* as hath been declared before. This I suppose needs no further Confirmation with them who really acknowledge any such thing as Grace and Holiness. These things, if any, are among those perfect Gifts which are from above, coming down from the Father of Lights, with whom is no variableness nor shadow of turning, *Jam. 1. 17.*

Sect. 63.

(2) God from his own fullness communicates unto his Creatures, either by the way of *Nature*, or by the way of *Grace*. In our first Creation God implanted his Image on us, in Uprightness and Holiness, in and by the making or Creation of our Nature: And had we continued in that State, the same Image of God should have been communicated by *natural Propagation*. But since the Fall and entrance

Sect. 64.

of Sin, God no more communicates Holiness unto any by way of Nature, or natural Propagation. For if he did so, there would be no Necessity that every one who is born must be *born again*, before he enter into the Kingdom of God; as our Saviour affirmeth there is, *Joh. 3. 3.* For he might have Grace and Holiness from his *first Nativity*. Nor could it be said of Believers, that they are *born not of Blood, nor of the Will of the Flesh, nor of the Will of Man, but of God, John 1. 13.* For Grace might be propagated unto them by those natural Means. It was the old *Pelagian Figment*, That what we have by Nature we have by Grace, because God is the Author of Nature. So he was as it was *pure*, but it is our own as it is *corrupt*; and what we have thereby, we have of our selves in Contradiction to the Grace of God. *That which is born of the flesh is flesh*; and we have nothing else by Natural Propagation.

Sect. 65.

(3.) God communicates nothing in a way of Grace unto any, but in and by the Person of Christ as the *Mediator and Head* of the Church, *John 1. 18.* In the *old Creation* all things were made by the Eternal Word, the *Person of the Son*, as the Wisdom of God, *Joh. 1. 3. Col. 1. 16.* There was no *immediate* Emanation of Divine Power from the Person of the Father, for the production of all or any created Beings, but in and by the *Person of the Son*, their Wisdom and Power being one and the same as acted in him. And the supportation of all things in the course of *Divine Providence* is his immediate Work also; whence he is said to *uphold all things with the Word of his Power, Heb. 1. 3.* And so it is in the *New Creation*, with respect unto his Person as *Mediator*. Therein was he the *Image of the Invisible God, the First-born of every Creature, having the preeminence in all things; and he is before all things, and by him all things consist, Col. 1. 15, 17, 18.* In the raising of the whole New Creation, which is by a new spiritual Life and Holiness communicated unto all the parts of it, the Work is carried on immediately by the *Person of Christ* the Mediator, and none hath any share therein but what is received and derived from him. This is plainly asserted, *Ephes. 2. 10.* So the Apostle disposeth of this matter; the *Head of every man is Christ, and the Head of Christ is God, 1 Cor. 11. 3.* which is so in respect of *Influence*, as well as of *Rule*. As God doth not immediately govern the Church, but in and by the Person of Christ, whom he hath given to be Head over all things thereunto; so neither doth he administer any *Grace or Holiness* unto any, but in the same order; For, *the Head of every man is Christ, and the Head of Christ is God.*

Sect. 66.

(4.) God doth work real, effectual, sanctifying Grace, spiritual Strength and Holiness in Believers, yea that Grace whereby they are enabled to Believe, and are made Holy, and doth really sanctifie them more and more, that they may be preserved *blameless to the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ*. This hath been so fully confirmed in the whole of what hath been discoursed both concerning *Regeneration* and *Sanctification*, as that it must not be here again insisted on. Wherefore, all this Grace according unto the former Assertions is Communicated unto us through and by Christ, and no otherwise.

Secondly,

Secondly, Whatever is wrought in Believers by the *Spirit of Christ*, it is in their *Union* to the Person of Christ, and by vertue thereof. That the Holy Spirit is the immediate *efficient Cause* of all Grace and Holiness, I have sufficiently proved already, unto them to whom any thing in this kind will be sufficient. Now the End why the *Holy Spirit* is sent, and consequently of all that he doth as he is so sent, is to glorifie Christ; and this he doth by receiving from Christ, and communicating thereof unto others, *Joh. 16. 13, 14, 15.* And there are two Works of this kind which he hath to doe, and doth effect. 1. To unite us to Christ: And, 2. To Communicate all Grace unto us from Christ, by vertue of that Union.

(1) By him are we united unto Christ, that is his Person, and not a Light within us as some think, nor the *Doctrine of the Gospel* as others with an equal folly seem to imagine. It is by the *Doctrine and Grace* of the Gospel that we are united, but it is the Person of Christ whereunto we are united. For he that is joyned unto the Lord is one Spirit, *1 Cor. 6. 17.* because by that one Spirit he is joyned unto him. For by one Spirit we are all baptized into one Body, *1 Cor. 12. 13.* implanted into the Body, and united unto the Head. And therefore, if we have not the Spirit of Christ, we are none of his, *Rom. 8. 9.* We are therefore his, that is, united unto him, by a Participation of his Spirit. And hereby Christ himself is in us, for *Jesus Christ is in us, except we be Reprobates, 2 Cor. 13. 5.* That is, he is in us by his Spirit that dwelleth in us, *Rom. 8. 9, 11. 1 Cor. 6. 19.* It may therefore be enquired, Whether we receive the Spirit of the Gospel from the Person of Christ, or no. And this is the Enquiry, which nothing but the extreme Ignorance or Impudence of some could render seasonable or tolerable, seeing formerly no Christian ever doubted of it, nor is he so now, who doth disbelieve it. It is true, we receive him by the *Preaching of the Gospel, Gal. 3. 2.* But it is no less true, that we receive him immediately from the Person of Christ. For no other Reason is he called so frequently the Spirit of Christ; that is, the Spirit which he gives, sends, bestowes, or Communicates. He receives of the Father the Promise of the Holy Ghost, and sheddeth him forth. *Acts 2. 33.*

But it may be said, That if hereby we are united unto Christ, Sect. 67, namely, by his Spirit, then we must be Holy and Obedient before we so receive him, wherein our Union doth consist. For certainly, Christ doth not unite ungodly and impure Sinners unto himself, which would be the greatest dishonour unto him imaginable. We must therefore be holy, obedient, and like unto Christ, before we can be united unto him, and so consequently before we receive his Spirit, if thereby we are united to him.

An. 1. If this be so, then indeed are we not beholding in the least unto the Spirit of Christ that we are Holy and Obedient, and like to Christ. For he that hath the Spirit of Christ, is united unto him: And he who is united to him, hath his Spirit, and none else. Whatever therefore is in any man, of Holiness, Righteousness or Obedience, antecedent unto Union with Christ, is no especial Effect of his Spirit. Wherefore, in this case we must purifie our selves, without any Application of the Blood of Christ unto our Souls, and we must sanctifie our selves,

selves, without any Especial Work of the Spirit of God on our Nature. Let them that can, satisfy themselves with these things; for my part, I have no esteem or valuation of that *Holiness* as *Holiness*, which is not the immediate Effect of the Spirit of *Sanctification* in us.

2. It is granted, that Ordinarily, the Lord Christ, by the *Dispensation* of his Word, by *Light* and *Convictions* thence ensuing, doth prepare the Souls of men in some measure for the *Inhabitation* of his Spirit. The Way and Manner hereof hath been fully before declared.

3. It is denied, that on this Supposition, the Lord Christ doth *unite impure or ungodly Sinners* unto himself, so as that they should be so united, and continue impure and ungodly. For in the *same instant* whereby any one is united unto Christ, and by the *same Act* whereby he is so united, he is *really* and *habitually* purified and sanctified. For, where the Spirit of God is, there is *Liberty*, and *Purity*, and *Holiness*. All Acts and Duties of *Holiness*, are in order of Nature consequential hereunto; but the Person is quickened, purified, and sanctified in its *Union*.

Whereas therefore the *spirit* of Christ communicated from him, for our *Union* with him, is the Cause and Author of all Grace and Evangelical *Holiness* in us, it is evident, that we receive it directly from *Christ* himself, which gives it the Difference from all other *Habits* and Acts pleaded for.

Sect. 68.

(2) The second Work of the *spirit* is, to *communicate* all Grace unto us from *Christ*, by virtue of that *Union*. I shall take it for granted, untill all that hath been before discoursed about the Work of the Holy Spirit in our *Regeneration* and *Sanctification*, be disproved, that he is the Author of all Grace and *Holiness*; and when that is disproved, we may part with our Bibles also, as Books which do openly and palpably mislead us. And what he so works in us, he doth it in pursuit of his first *Communication* unto us, whereby we are *united* unto Christ, even for the Edification, Preservation, and further *Sanctification* of the *Mystical Body*, making every Member of it meet for the *Inheritance of the Saints in Light*. And in those Supplies of Grace which he so gives, acted by us in all Duties of Obedience, consists all the *Holiness* which I desire any acquaintance withall, or a participation of.

Sect. 69.

(3) There is a *mystical spiritual Body* whereof Christ is the Head, and his Church are the Members of it. There is therefore an Union between them in things *spiritual*, like unto that which is between the head and members of the Body of a Man in things *natural*. And this the Scripture, because of the Weight and Importance of it, with its singular Use unto the Faith of Believers, doth frequently express. God hath given him to be the head over all things to the Church, which is his Body, the Fulness of him that filleth all in all, Ephes. 1. 22, 23. For as the Body is one and hath many Members, and all the Members of that Body being many are one Body; so also is Christ, 1 Cor. 12. 12. Christ is the Head, from whom the whole Body fitly joyned together, and compacted, by that which every Joynt supplyeth, according to the effectual working of every part, maketh increase of the Body, unto the edifying of it self
in

in Love, Ephes. 4. 15, 16. And the same Apostle speaks again to the same purpose; Col. 2. 19. Not holding the Head, from which the Body by joynts and bands, having nourishment ministred, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God. Now it hath been alwayes granted, by all them who acknowledge the Divine Person of the Son of God, or the Union of the Humane Nature unto the Divine in his Person, that the Lord Jesus is the Head of his Church, in the double sence of that word; For he is the Political Head of it in a way of Rule and Government; and he is the Really spiritual Head as unto Vital Influences of Grace unto all his Members. The Romanists indeed cast some disturbance on the former, by interposing another immediate Ruling, Governing Head, between him and the Catholick Church; yet do they not deny, but that the Lord Christ in his own Person, is yet the absolute supream King, Head and Ruler of the Church. And the latter the Socinians cannot grant; for denying his Divine Person, it is impossible to conceive, how the Humane Nature subsisting alone by it self, should be such an immense Fountain of Grace, as from whence there should be an Emanation of it into all the Members of the mystical Body; But by all other Christians this hath hitherto been acknowledged; and therefore there is nothing belongs unto Gospel Grace or Holiness, but what is Originally derived from the Person of Christ, as he is the Head of the Church. And this is most evidently expressed in the places before alleadged. For, 1 Cor. 12. 12. it is plainly affirmed, that it is between Christ and the Church as it is between the Head and the Members of the same natural Body. Now not only the whole Body hath guidance and direction in the disposal of it self from the Head, but every Member in particular hath influences of Life actually, and Strength from thence, without which it can neither act nor move, nor discharge its place or Duty in the Body. So also is Christ, saith the Apostle; not only hath the whole mystical Body of the Church, Guidance and Direction from him, in his Laws, Rules, Doctrine and Precepts, but spiritual Life and Motion also: And so hath every Member thereof. They all receive from him Grace for Holiness and Obedience, without which they would be but withered and dead Members in the Body: But he hath told us, that because he liveth, we shall live also, Job. 14. 19. For the Father having given him to have Life in himself, Job. 5. 26. whereon he quickeneth with spiritual Life whom he will, v. 23. from that Fountain of spiritual Life which is in him, supplies of the same Life are given unto the Church, and therefore, because he liveth, we live also; that is, a spiritual Life here, without which we shall never live Eternally hereafter. And Ephes. 4. 16. the Relation of Believers unto Christ being stated exactly, to answer the Relation and Union of the Members of the Body unto the Head, it is expressly affirmed, that as in the Natural Body there are Supplies of Nourishment and natural Spirits communicated from the Head unto the Members, by the subserviency of all the parts of the Body, designed unto that purpose, to the Growth and Encrease of the whole in every part; so from Christ the Head of the Church, which he is in his Divine Person as God and Man, there is a Supply of spiritual Life, Strength and Nourishment, made unto every Member of the Body, unto its Encrease, Growth and Edification; for we are members of his body,

body, of his flesh, and of his bones, Chap. 5. 30. being made out of him, as Eve was out of Adam; yet so continuing in him, as to have all our Supplies from him; *we in him, and he in us*, as he speaks, *Joh. 14. 20.* And *Col. 2. 19.* it is expressly affirmed, that from him the Head, there is *Nourishment ministred* unto the Body, unto its Encrease with the Encrease of God. And what this Spiritual Nourishment supplied unto the Souls of Believers for their Encrease and Growth, from Christ their Head, can be, but the *Emanation* from his Person, and Communication with them of that Grace which is the Principle and Spring of all Holiness and Duties of Evangelical Obedience, none have as yet undertaken to declare. And if any do deny it, they do what lies in them to destroy the *Life* and overthrow the *Faith* of the whole Church of God. Yea, upon such a blasphemous Imagination, that there could be an *Intercision* for one Moment, of Influences of *spiritual* Life and Grace from the Person of *Christ* unto the *Church*; the whole must be supposed to dye and perish, and that Eternally.

Sect. 70.

(4) The whole of what we assert, is plainly and evidently proposed in sundry *instructive Allusions*, which are made use of to this purpose. The principal of them is, that both laid down and declared by our Saviour himself, *Joh. 15. 1. 4, 5. I am the true Vine, and my Father is the Husbandman. Abide in me, and I in you: As the Branch cannot bear fruit of it self, except it abide in the Vine, no more can ye except ye abide in me. I am the Vine, and ye are the Branches, he that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit, for without me (or severed from me, apart from me) ye can do nothing.* The Natural in-being of the Vine and Branches in each other, is known unto all, with the Reason of it; and so is the Way whereby the *in-being* of the Branches in the Vine, is the Cause and Means of their Fruit-bearing. It is no otherwise, but by the Communication and Derivation of that *succus*, i.e. *Juyce* and *Nourishment*, which alone is the Preservative of Vegetative Life, and the next Cause of Fruit-bearing. In this Juyce and Nourishment all Fruit is *Virtually*, yea also as to the first *matter* and substance of it: In and by the *Branch* it is only formed into its proper Kind and Perfection. Let any thing be done to intercept this Communication from the *Vine* unto any *Branch*, and it not only immediately looseth all its Fruit-bearing Power and Vertue, but its self also withereth and dyeth away. And there is a *mutual acting* of the Vine and Branches in this matter. Unto the Vine it self it is Natural from its own Fullness to communicate *Nourishment* unto the Branches; it doth it from the Principle of its Nature. And unto the Branches it is also Natural, to *draw* and derive their *Nourishment* from the Vine. *Thus is it*, saith the Lord Christ unto his Disciples, *between me and you. I am the Vine*, saith he, *and ye are the Branches*; and there is a mutual *in-being* between us, *I am in you, and ye are in me*, by vertue of our Union. That now which is expected from you is, that you bring forth Fruit; that is, that you live in *Holiness* and *Obedience* unto the Glory of God: Unless you do so, you are no *true real Branches* in me, whatever outward Profession you may make of your so being. But how shall this be effected? How shall they be able to bring forth Fruit? This can be no otherwise done, but by their

their abiding in Christ; and thereby continually deriving spiritual nourishment, that is, Grace and supplies of Holiness from him. For, saith he, χωρὶς ἐμοῦ, *separate, or apart from me*, ye can do nothing of this kind. And that is, because nothing becomes Fruit in the Branch that was not Nourishment from the Vine. Nothing is Duty, nothing is Obedience in Believers, but what is Grace from Christ communicated unto them. The Preparation of all fructifying Grace is in Christ, as the Fruit of the Branches is naturally in the Vine. And the Lord Christ doth spiritually and voluntarily communicate of this Grace unto all Believers, as the Vine communicates its Juice unto the Branches naturally: And it is in the new Nature of Believers to derive it from him by Faith. This being done, it is in them turned into particular Duties of Holiness and Obedience. Therefore it is evident, that there is nothing of Evangelical Holiness in any one Person whatever, but what is in the Vertue Power and Grace of it, derived immediately from Jesus Christ, by vertue of Relation unto him, and Union with him: And it may be enquired, Whether this be so with Moral Vertue or no. The same is taught by our Apostle, under the Similitude of an Olive-tree and its Branches, Rom. 11. As also, where he is affirmed to be a living Stone, and Believers to be built on him, as lively Stones into a spiritual House, 1 Pet. 2. 4, 5.

Particular Testimonies do so abound in this Case, as that I shall only name some few of them. Joh. 1. 15. *He is full of Grace and Truth. And of his fulness have all we received, and grace for grace.* It is of the Person of Christ, or the Word made Flesh, the Son of God Incarnate, that the Holy Ghost speaketh. He was made Flesh, and dwelt among us, full of Grace and Truth. It is not the Fulness of the Deity, as it dwelt in him personally, that is here intended, but that which was in him as he was made flesh, that is, in his Humane Nature as inseparably united unto the Divine: An All-fulness that he received by the good pleasure or voluntary Disposal of the Father; Col. 1. 19. and therefore belongeth not unto the Essential Fulness of the Godhead. And as to the Nature of this Fulness, it is said to consist in Grace and Truth; that is, the Perfection of Holiness, and Knowledge of the whole Mind, Counsel and Mystery of the Will of God. Of this Fulness do we receive Grace for Grace, all the Grace in every Kind whereof we are made partakers in this World. That this Fulness in Christ, expresseth the unconceivable Fulness of his Humane Nature, by vertue of his indissoluble Personal Union with all Graces in their perfection, wherein he received not the Spirit by measure, Joh. 3. 34. is as I suppose by all Christians acknowledged, I am sure cannot be denied without the highest Impiety and Blasphemy. Hence therefore, the Holy Ghost being witness, do we derive and receive all our Grace, every one according to his Measure, Ephes. 4. 7. Wherefore, Grace is given unto the Lord Christ in an immeasurable Perfection, by vertue of his Personal Union; Col. 2. 9. and from him is it derived unto us, by the gracious Inhabitation of his Spirit in us, 1 Cor. 6. 19. Eph. 4. 30. according unto the Degree of participation allotted unto us. This in the substance of it is contained in this Testimony. There was and is in Jesus Christ a Fulness and Perfection of all Grace; in us, of our selves,

Sect. 722

or by any thing that we have by Nature, or natural Generation, by Blood, or the Flesh, or the Will of Man, (*v. 13.*) there is none at all. Whatever we have, is *received* and *derived* unto us from the Fullness of Christ, which is an inexhaustible Fountain thereof, by Reason of his *Personal Union*.

Sect. 72. To the same purpose is he said to be our *Life*, and *our Life to be hid with him in God*; *Col. 3. 3.* Life is the Principle of all Power and Operation. And the *Life* here intended, is that whereby we live to God, the Life of Grace and Holiness. For the Actings of it consist in the setting of our Affections on *heavenly things*, and mortifying our Members that are on the Earth. This *Life Christ* is; He is not so *Formally*; for if he were, then it would not be *our Life*, but his only. He is therefore so *Efficiently*, as that he is the immediate Cause and Author of it, and that as he is now with God in Glory. Hence it is said, that we *live*, that is, this Life of God, yet so *as that we live* not of our selves, but *Christ* liveth in us, *Gal. 1. 20.* And he doth no otherwise live in us, but by the Communication of *vital Principles*, and a Power for *vital Acts*, that is, Grace and Holiness from himself unto us. If he be our *Life*, we have nothing that belongs thereunto, that is, nothing of Grace or Holiness, but what is derived unto us from him.

Sect. 73. To conclude, we have all *Grace* and *Holiness* from Christ, or we have it of our selves. The old *Pelagian* Fiction, that we have them from Christ, because we have them by yielding Obedience unto his Doctrine, makes our selves the only Spring and Author of them, and on that Account very justly condemned by the Church of old, not only as *false*, but as *blasphemous*. Whatever therefore is not thus derived, thus conveyed unto us, belongs not unto our *Sanctification* or *Holiness*, nor is of the same Nature or Kind with it. Whatever Ability of Mind or Will may be supposed in us, what Application soever of *Means* may be made for the exciting and exercise of that Ability, whatever Effects, in Vertues, Duties, all Offices of Humanity and Honesty, or Religious Observances, may be produced thereby from them, and wrought by us, if it be not all derived from Christ, as the Head and Principle of *spiritual* Life unto us, it is a thing of another nature than *Evangelical Holiness*.

Sect. 74. *Thirdly*; The immediate efficient *Cause* of all Gospel Holiness, is the *Spirit of God*. This we have sufficiently proved already. And although many Cavils have been raised against the Manner of his Operation herein, yet none have been yet so hardy, as openly to deny that this is indeed his Work: For so to doe, is upon the matter expressly to renounce the Gospel. Wherefore, we have in our foregoing Discourses, at large vindicated the manner of his Operations herein, and proved, that he doth not educe Grace by *Moral* Applications unto the natural Faculties of our Minds, but that he creates Grace in us by an immediate *Efficiency* of Almighty Power. And what is so wrought and produced, differeth Essentially from any Natural or Moral Habits of our Minds, however acquired or improved.

Fourthly;

Fourthly ; This Evangelical Holiness is a *Fruit* and *Effect* of the *Covenant of Grace*. The Promises of the Covenant unto this purpose, we have before on other Occasions insisted on. In them doth God declare, That he will cleanse and purifie our Natures, that he will write his Law in our Hearts, put his Fear in our inward parts, and cause us to walk in his Statutes, in which things our Holiness doth consist. Whoever therefore hath any thing of it, he doth receive it in the Accomplishment of these Promises of the Covenant. For there are not two wayes whereby men may become Holy, one by the Sanctification of the Spirit according to the Promise of the Covenant, and the other by their own Endeavours without it ; though indeed *Cassianus* with some of the *Semi-Pelagians*, dreamed somewhat to that purpose. Wherefore, that which is thus a Fruit and Effect of the *Promise* of the Covenant, hath an especial Nature of its own, distinct from whatever hath not that Relation unto the same Covenant. No man can ever be made partaker of any the least Degree of that Grace or Holiness which is promised in the Covenant, unless it be by virtue and as a Fruit of that Covenant. For if they might do so, then were the Covenant of God of none Effect ; for what it seems to promise in a peculiar Manner, may on this Supposition be attained without it, which renders it an empty Name.

Sect. 75.

Fifthly ; Herein consists the *Image* of God, whereunto we are to be renewed. This I have proved before, and shall afterward have Occasion to insist upon. Nothing less than the intire Renovation of the *Image* of God in our Souls, will constitute us *Evangelically* Holy. No *series* of Obediential Actings, no Observance of Religious Duties, no Attendance unto Actions amongst men as Morally vertuous and usefull, how exact soever they may be, or how constant soever we may be unto them, will ever render us *lovely* or *holy* in the sight of God, unless they all proceed from the Renovation of the *Image* of God in us, or that Habitual Principle of spiritual Life and Power which renders us *conformable* unto him.

Sect. 76.

From what hath been thus briefly discoursed, we may take a Prospect of that horrible mixture of Ignorance and Impudence wherewith some contend, that the *Practice* of *Moral Vertue* is all the Holiness which is required of us in the Gospel ; neither understanding what they say, nor whereof they do affirm. But yet this they do with so great a Confidence, as to despise and *scoffe* at any thing else which is pleaded to belong thereunto. But this Pretence, notwithstanding all the swelling words of vanity wherewith it is set off and vended, will easily be discovered to be weak and frivolous. For,

Sect. 77.

(1) The *Name* or Expression it self is foreign to the Scripture, not once used by the Holy Ghost, to denote that Obedience which God requireth of us in and according to the Covenant of Grace. Nor is there any sence of it agreed upon, by them who so magisterially impose it on others. Yea, there are many expresse Contests about the *signification* of these words, and what it is that is intended by them ;

Sect. 78.

which those who contend about them are not ignorant of, and yet have they not endeavoured to reduce the fence they intend unto any Expression used concerning the same matter in the Gospel, but all men must needs submit unto it, that at least the main parts, if not the whole of Religion, consists in *Moral Vertue*, though it be altogether uncertain what they intend by the one or the other. These are they who scarce think any thing intelligible, when declared in the words of the Scripture, which one hath openly traduced as a *ridiculous Jargon*. They like not, they seem to abhorre the *speaking of Spiritual Things*, in the Words which the Holy Ghost teacheth, the only Reason whereof is, because they understand not the *things* themselves. And whilest they are *foolishness* unto any, it is no wonder, the *terms* whereby they are declared, seem also so to be. But such as have *received the Spirit of Christ*, and do know the Mind of Christ, (which profane Scoffers are sufficiently remote from) do best receive the Truth and apprehend it, when declared, not in the *Words which Mans Wisdom teacheth*, but which are taught by the Holy Ghost. It is granted, to be the Wisdom and Skill of men further to explain and declare the Truths that are taught in the Gospel, by sound and wholsom words of their own, which yet all of them, as to their Propriety and Significancy, are to be tryed and measured by the Scripture it self. But we have a *new Way* of teaching *spiritual Things* sprung up among some, who being ignorant of the whole Mystery of the Gospel, and therefore despising it, would debase all the glorious Truths of it, and the Declaration made of them, into dry, barren, sapless, *Philosophical* Notions and Terms, and those the most common, obvious and vulgar, that ever obtained among the *Heathen* of old. *Vertuous Living* they tell us is the Way to Heaven; but what this *Vertue* is, or what is a *Life of Vertue*, they have added as little in the Declaration of, as any Persons that ever made such a Noyse about them.

Sect. 79.

(2) That ambiguous Term *Morall*, hath by Usage obtained a double Signification, with respect unto an Opposition unto other things which either are not so, or are more than so. For sometimes it is applied unto the *Worship* of God, and so is opposed unto *Instituted*. That Religious Worship which is prescribed in the *Decalogue*, or required by the Law of Creation, is commonly called *Moral*, and that in Opposition unto those Rites and Ordinances which are of a superadded Arbitrary *Institution*. Again, it is opposed unto things that are more than merely *moral*, namely, *Spiritual*, *Theological* or *Divine*. So the Graces of the Spirit, as Faith, Love, Hope, in all their Exercise, whatever they may have of *Morality* in them, or however they may be exercised in and about *moral Things* and Duties, yet because of sundry Respects wherein they exceed the *Sphear of Morality*, are called *Graces* and Duties, Theological, Spiritual, Supernatural, Evangelical, Divine, in Opposition unto all such Habits of the Mind and Duties, which being required by the Law of Nature, and as they are so required, are merely *moral*. In neither fence can it with any tolerable Congruity of speech be said, that *Moral Vertue is our Holiness*, especially the whole of it. But because the Duties of Holiness, have the most of them a *Morality* in them, as *Morall* is opposed to *Instituted*, some would have them

them have nothing also in them, as *Moral* is opposed to *Supernatural* and *Theological*. But that the Principle and Acts of Holiness are of another special Nature, hath been sufficiently now declared.

(3) It is, as was before intimated, somewhat uncertain, what the great Pleaders for *Moral Vertue* do intend by it. Many seem to design no more but that Honesty and Integrity of Life which was found among some of the *Heathens*, in their vertuous Lives and Actions. And indeed, it were heartily to be wished, that we might see more of it amongst some that are called *Christians*. For, many things they did were *Materially* good, and usefull unto Mankind: But let it be supposed to be never so exact, and the Course of it most diligently attended unto; I defie it, as to its being the *Holiness* required of us in the Gospel, according unto the terms of the Covenant of Grace; and that because it hath none of those Qualifications which we have proved Essentially to belong thereunto. And I defie all the men in the World to prove, that this *Moral Vertue* is the summe of our Obedience to God, whilst the Gospel is owned for a Declaration of his Will and our Duty. It is true, all the Duties of this *Moral Vertue* are required of us, but in the Exercise of every one of them there is more required of us than belongs unto their *Morality*, as namely, that they be done in Faith, and Love to God through Jesus Christ; and many things are required of us as necessary parts of our Obedience, which belong not thereunto at all. Sect. 80.

(4) Some give us such a Description of *Morality*, as that it should be of the same extent with the Light and Law of Nature, or the Dictates of it, as rectified and declared unto us in the Scripture. And this I confess requires of us the Obedience which is due towards God by the Law of our Creation, and according to the Covenant of Works *materially* and *formally*. But what is this unto *Evangelical Holiness* and Obedience? Why it is alleadged, that *Religion* before the Entrance of Sin and under the Gospel is one and the same, and therefore there is no difference between the Duties of Obedience required in the one and the other. And it is true, that they are so far the same, as that they have the same *Author*, the same *Object*, the same *End*, and so also had the Religion under the Law, which was therefore so far the same with them. But that they are the same as to all the Acts of our Obedience, and the Manner of their Performance, is a vain Imagination. Is there no *Alteration* made in Religion by the *Interposition* of the Person of Christ to be Incarnate, and his Mediation? No Augmentation of the Object of Faith? No Change in the Abolishing of the Old Covenant, and the Establishment of the New; the Covenant between God and Man being that which gives the especial *form* and *kind* unto Religion, the Measure and Denomination of it? No Alteration in the Principles, Aids, Assistances, and whole Nature of our Obedience unto God? The whole Myltery of Godliness must be renounced, if we intend to give way unto such Imaginations. Be it so then, that this *Moral Vertue* and the Practice of it, do contain and express all that Obedience *materially* considered, which was required by the Law of Nature in the Covenant of Works, yet, I deny it to be Sect. 81.
our

our Holiness or *Evangelical Obedience*; and that as for many other Reasons, so principally, because it hath not that respect unto Jesus Christ which our Sanctification hath.

Sect. 82.

(5) If it be said, that by this *Moral Vertue* they intend no Exclusion of Jesus Christ, but include a respect unto him, I desire only to ask, whether they design by it such an Habit of Mind, and such Acts thence proceeding, as have the Properties before described, as to their Causes, Rise, Effects, Use, and Relation unto Christ and the Covenant, as are expressly and plainly in the Scripture assigned unto *Evangelical Holiness*? Is this Moral Vertue, that which God hath predestinated or chosen us unto before the Foundation of the World? Is it that which he worketh in us in the pursuit of *Electing Love*? Is it that which gives us a *new Heart*, with the Law of God written in it? or is it a Principle of *spiritual Life*, disposing, enclining, enabling us to live to God according to the Gospel, produced in us by the effectual Operation of the Holy Ghost, not educed out of the natural Powers of our own Souls by the mere Applications of external Means? Is it that which is purchased and procured for us by Jesus Christ, and the Increase whereof in us he continueth to intercede for? Is it the Image of God in us, and doth our Conformity unto the Lord Christ consist therein? If it be so, if *Moral Vertue* answer all these Properties and Adjuncts of *Holiness*, then the whole Contest in this matter is, whether the *Holy Spirit* or these men be wisest, and know best how to express the things of God Rationally and Significantly. But if the *Moral Vertue* they speak of, be unconcerned in these things, if none of them belong unto it, if it may and doth consist without it, it will appear at length to be no more as to our Acceptance before God, than what one of the greatest Morallists in the World complained that he found it when he was dying, a mere *empty Name*. But this fullsome *Pelagian* Figment of an Holiness or Evangelical Righteousness, whose Principle should be Natural Reason, and whose Rule is the Law of Nature as explained in the Scripture, whose Use and End is Acceptation with God, and Justification before him, whereof those who plead for it, the most of them, seem to understand no more but outward Acts of Honesty, nor do practise so much, being absolutely opposite unto and destructive of the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, being the mere Doctrine of the *Quakers*, by whom it is better and more intelligibly expressed, than by some new Patrons of it amongst us; will not in the Examination of it create any great Trouble, unto such as look upon the Scripture to be a Revelation of the Mind of God in these things.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

Of the Acts and Duties of Holiness.

- (1) *Actual inherent Righteousness in Duties of Holiness and Obedience, explained. The Work of the Holy Spirit with respect thereunto.* (2) *Distribution of the Positive Duties of Holiness.* (3) *Internal Duties of Holiness.* (4) *External Duties, and their Difference.* (5) *Effectual Operation of the Holy Spirit Necessary unto every Act of Holiness.* (6) *Dependance on Providence with respect unto things Natural, and on Grace with respect unto things Supernatural, compared.* (8) *Arguments to prove the Necessity of Actual Grace, unto every Duty of Holiness.* (15) *Contrary Designs and Expressions of the Scripture and some men, about Duties of Holiness.*

THE Second Part of the Work of the Spirit of God in our Sanctification, respects the *Acts and Duties* of Holy Obedience. For what we have before treated of, chiefly concerns the *Principle* of it as habitually resident in our Souls, and that both as unto its first Infusion into us, as also its Preservation and Increase in us. But we are not indued with such a *Principle* or Power to Act it at our pleasure, or as we see good, but God moreover, *worketh in us to will and to doe, of his own good pleasure.* And all these Acts and Duties of Holiness or Gospel Obedience, are of two sorts; or may be referred unto two Heads. (1) Such as have the *Will* of God in *Positive Commands* for their Object, which they respect in Duties *internal* and *external*, wherein we do what God requireth. (2) Such as respect *Divine Prohibitions*, which consist in the Actings of Grace or Holiness, in an Opposition unto or the *Mortification* of Sin. And what is the Work of the Holy Spirit, what is the Aid which he affords us in both these sorts of Duties, must be declared.

Sect. 1.

The Acts and Duties of the First sort, respecting *Positive Divine Commands*, fall under a double Distinction. For, 1. They are in their own Nature either *Internal* only; Or, 2. *External* also. There may be *internal* Acts of Holiness, that have no *external* Effects. But no *external* Acts or Duties are any part of Holiness, which are *only* so and no more; for it is required thereunto, that they be quickened and sanctified by *internal* Actings of Grace. Two Persons may therefore at the same time perform the same Commanded Duties, and in the same *outward* Manner, yet may it be the Duty of *Evangelical Holiness* in the one, and not in the other; as it was with *Cain* and *Abel*, with the other Apostles and *Judas*. For if Faith and Love be

Sect. 2.

not

not acted in either of them, what they do, is Duty but *Equivocally*, properly it is not so.

Sect. 3. 1. By the Duties of Holiness that are *internal* only, I intend all Acts of Faith, Love, Trust, Hope, Fear, Reverence, Delight, that have God for their immediate Object, but go not forth, nor exert themselves in any *external* Duties; and in these doth our spiritual Life unto God principally consist. For they are as the *first Acts of Life*, which principally evidence the Strength or Decays of it. And from these we may take the best Measure of our spiritual Health, and interest in Holiness. For we may abound in *outward Duties*, and yet our Hearts be very much alienated from the Life of God. Yea sometimes men may endeavour to make up what is wanting with them, by a multitude of outward Duties, and so have a *Name to live when they are dead*, wherein the true Nature of Hypocrisy and Superstition doth consist. *Isa. i. 11, 12, 13, 14, 15.* But when the *internal* Actings of Faith, Fear, Trust and Love, abound and are constant in us, they evidence a vigorous and healthy Condition of Soul.

Sect. 4. 2. Duties that are *external* also are of two sorts; or are distinguished with respect unto their *Objects*, and *End*. For, (1) God himself is the *Object* and End of some of them, as of Prayer and Prayses, whether *private* or more *solemn*. And of this nature are all those which are commonly called, *Duties of the first Table*, all such as belong unto the Sanctification of the Name of God in his Worship. (2) Some respect *Men* of all sorts in their various Capacities, and our various Relations unto them, or have Men for their *Object*, but God for their *End*. And among these also I include those which principally regard our selves, or our own Persons. The whole of what we intend, is summarily expressed by our Apostle, *Tit. 2. 12.*

Sect. 5. Concerning all these Acts and Duties, whether *internal* only, or *external* also, whether their proper Object be God, our selves, or other Men, so far as they are *Acts of Holiness*, and are accepted with God, they proceed from a *peculiar Operation* of the Holy Spirit in us. And herein to make our Intention the more evident, we may distinctly observe,

(1) That there is in the Minds, Wills and Affections of all Believers, a *Meetness, Fitness, Readiness* and habitual Disposition unto the *Performance* of all Acts of Obedience towards God, all Duties of Piety, Charity, and Righteousness, that are required of them, and hereby are they *internally* and *habitually* distinguished from them that are not so. That it is so with them, and whence it comes to be so, we have before declared. This Power and Disposition, is wrought and preserved in them by the Holy Ghost.

(2) No Believer can of *himself* act, that is, actually exert or exercise this *Principle*, or Power of a *spiritual* Life, in any one Instance of any Duty, *internal* or *external*, towards God or Men, so as that it shall be an Act of Holiness, or a Duty accepted with God. He cannot I say do so of *himself*, by virtue of any *Power habitually inherent* in him. We are not in this World intrusted with any such *spiritual* Ability

Ability from God, as without further actual Aid and Assistance, to do any thing that is Good: Therefore,

(3) That which at present I design to prove is, That the *Actual Aid, Assistance and internal Operation of the Spirit of God, is necessary, required and granted, unto the producing of every holy Act of our Minds, Wills and Affections, in every Duty whatever.* Or, notwithstanding the Power or Ability which Believers have received in, or by *Habitual Grace*, they still stand in need of *Actual Grace*, in, for, and unto every single gracious holy Act or Duty towards God. And this I shall now a little further explain, and then confirm.

As it is in our *natural Lives* with respect unto Gods *Providence*, so it is in our *spiritual Lives* with respect unto his *Grace*. He hath in the Works of Nature endowed us with a *vital Principle*, or an Act of the quickening Soul upon the Body, which is quickened thereby. By virtue hereof, we are enabled unto all *vital Acts*, whether Natural and Necessary, or Voluntary according to the Constitution of our Beings, which is Intellectual. *God breathed into man the Breath of Life, and he became a living Soul, Gen. 2. 7.* giving him a Principle of Life, he was fitted for, and enabled unto all the proper Acts of that Life. For, a Principle of Life, is an Ability and Disposition unto Acts of Life. But yet whosoever is thus made a *living Soul*, who is indued with this Principle of Life, he is not able *Originally*, without any *motion* or Acting from God as the first Cause, or independently on him, to exert or put forth any vital Act: That which hath not this Principle, as a dead Carcase, hath no *meetness* unto vital Actions, nor is capable either of *Motion* or *Alteration*, but as it receives Impressions from an *outward Principle of Force*, or an *inward Principle of Corruption*. But he in whom it is, hath a *Fitness, Readiness* and *habitual Power* for all vital Actions, yet so as without the Concurrence of God in his *Energetical Providence*, moving and Acting of him, he can do nothing. For, in God we live, and move, and have our being, *Acts 17. 28.* And if any one could of *himself* perform an Action without any Concourse of Divine Operation, he must himself be absolutely the first and only Cause of that Action, that is, the *Creatour* of a New Being.

Sect. 6.

It is so as unto our *spiritual Life*. We are by the Grace of God through Jesus Christ, furnished with a Principle of it, in the *Way* and for the *Ends* before described. Hereby are we enabled and disposed to Live unto God in the Exercise of *spiritually vital Acts*, or the performance of Duties of Holiness. And he who hath not this Principle of spiritual Life, is *spiritually dead*, as we have at large before manifested, and *can do nothing at all* that is *spiritually Good*. He may be moved unto, and as it were compelled by the Power of *Convictions*, to do many things that are *materially* so. But that which is on all Considerations *spiritually good*, and accepted with God, he can do nothing of. The Enquiry is, What Believers themselves, who have received this *Principle of spiritual Life*, and are *Habitually sanctified*, can do as to Actual Duties, by virtue thereof, without a new immediate Assistance and working of the Holy Spirit in them. And I say, they can no more do any thing that is *spiritually good*, without the particular

Sect. 7.

Concurrence and Assistance of the Grace of God unto every Act thereof, than a man can *naturally* act, or move, or doe any thing in an absolute *Independency* on God, his Power and Providence. And this proportion between the Works of Gods *Providence* and of his *Grace*, the Apostle expresseth, *Ephes. 2. 10. For we are his Workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good Works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.* God at the Beginning made all things by a *creating* Power, producing them out of Nothing, and left them not meerly to themselves and their own *Powers* when so created, but he *upholds*, supports, sustains and preserves them in the Principles of their Beings and Operations, acting powerfully in and by them, after their several Kinds. Without his Supportment of their Beings by an Actual incessant *Emanation of Divine Power*, the whole Fabrick of Nature would dissolve into Confusion and nothing. And without his Influence into, and Concurrence with their *Ability* for Operation by the same Power, all things would be *dead and deformed*, and not one Act of Nature be exerted. So also is it in this Work of the *New Creation* of all things by Jesus Christ. *We are the Workmanship of God*, he hath formed and fashioned us for himself by the Renovation of his Image in us. Hereby are we *fitted for good Works*, and the Fruits of Righteousness, which he hath appointed as the Way of our Living unto him. This *New Creature*, this Divine Nature in us, he supporteth and preserveth, so as that without his continual *influential Power* it would perish and come to nothing. But this is not all; He doth moreover act it, and effectually concur to every singular Duty, by *new supplies* of Actual Grace. So then, that which we are to prove, is; That there is an *Actual Operation* of the Holy Ghost in us, *necessary* unto every Act and Duty of Holiness whatever, without which none either will or can be produced or performed by us, which is the Second Part of his Work in our Sanctification: And there are several Wayes whereby this is confirmed unto us.

- Sect. 8. *First*; The Scripture declares, that *we our selves*, cannot in and by our selves, that is, by vertue of *any strength or power* that we have received, *do any thing* that is spiritually Good. So our Saviour tells his Apostles, when they were *sanctified Believers*, and in them all that are so; *without me ye can do nothing*, *John 15. 3. χωρις εμου*, So, without me, *Seorsim a me*, so separated from me, as a Branch may be from the Vine. If a Branch be so separated from the Root and Body of the Vine, as that it receives not continual supplies of Nourishment from them, if their Influence into it, be by any Means intercepted, it proceeds not in its Growth, it brings forth no Fruit, but is immediately under decay: It is so, saith our Saviour, with *Believers* in respect unto him. Unless they have continual *uninterrupted influences* of Grace, and spiritually vital Nourishment from him, *they can do nothing. Without me*, expresseth a Denial of all the spiritual Aid that we have from Christ. On supposition hereof, *we can do nothing*; that is, by our own Power, or by vertue of any Habit or Principle of Grace we have received. For when we have received it, what we can do thereby without further actual Assistance, we can do of our selves. *You can do nothing*; that is, which appertains to *Fruit-bearing* unto God. In things
Natural

Natural and Civil we can do somewhat, and in things Sinfull too much; we need no Aid or Assistance for any such purpose. But in *Fruit-bearing* unto God we can do nothing. Now every Act of *Faith* and *Love*, every Motion of our Minds or Affections towards God, is a part of our *Fruit-bearing*, and so unquestionably are all external Works and Duties of Holiness and Obedience. Wherefore, our Saviour himself being Judge, *Believers* who are really sanctified, and made partakers of Habitual Grace, yet cannot of themselves, without new *actnal* Aid and Assistance of Grace from him, do any thing that is spiritually Good, or acceptable with God.

Our Apostle confirmeth the same Truth, 2 Cor. 3. 4, 5. *And such trust have we through Christ to God-ward; not that we are sufficient of our selves, to think any thing as of our selves, but our sufficiency is of God.* It is a great and eminent Grace which he declareth that he was acting, namely, *Trust in God* through Christ in the Discharge of his Ministry, and for the blessed Success thereof: But he had no sooner expressed it, than he seems to be jealous lest he should appear to have assumed something to himself, in this Work, or the Trust he had for its Success. This no man was ever more cautious against, and indeed it was incumbent on him so to be, because he was appointed to be the principal Minister and Preacher of the Grace of Jesus Christ. Therefore I say, he addes a *Caution* against any such Apprehensions, and openly renounceth any such Power, Ability, or *Sufficiency* in himself, as that by vertue thereof he could act so excellent a Grace, or perform so great a Duty. *Not that we are sufficient of our selves;* And in this matter, he hath not only in places innumerable asserted the Necessity and Efficacy of Grace, with our *impotency* without it, but in his own Instance he hath made such a Distinction between what was of *himself*, and what of *Grace*, with such an open Disclaimure of any Interest of his own in what was Spiritually good, distinct from Grace, as should be sufficient with all sober Persons, to determine all differences in this Case. See 1 Cor. 15. 10. Gal. 2. 21. and this place. I assume no such thing to my self, I ascribe no such thing unto any other, as that *I* or *they* should have in our selves a *sufficiency* unto any such purpose. For our Apostle knew nothing of any *sufficiency* that needed any other thing to make it effectual. And he doth not exclude such a *sufficiency* in our selves with respect unto *eminent Actings* of Grace, and greater Duties, but with respect unto every good *Thought*, or whatever may have a tendency unto any spiritual Duty. We cannot conceive, we cannot engage in the *Beginning* of any Duty by our own *sufficiency*. For it is the *beginning of Duties* which the Apostle expresseth by *thinking*; our Thoughts and Projections being Naturally the first thing that belongs unto our Actions. And this he doth as it were on purpose to obviate that *Pelagian Fiction*, that the *Beginning of Good* was from our selves, but we had the help of Grace to perfect it. But what then! if we have no such *sufficiency*, to what purpose should we set about the *thinking* or doing of any thing that is good? Who will be so *unwise* as to attempt that which he hath no *strength* to accomplish? And doth not the Apostle hereby deny, that he *himself* had performed any Holy Duties, or Acted any Grace, or done any thing

thing that was good, seeing he *had no sufficiency* of himself so to doe? to obviate this cavil he confines this denial of a sufficiency *unto our selves*, we have it not of our selves. But, saith he, our *sufficiency* is of God, that is, we have it by Actual supplies of Grace, necessary unto every Duty; and how God Communicates this *sufficiency*, and how we receive it, he declares, *Chap. 9. v. 8. God is able to make all Grace abound towards you, that ye alwaies having all sufficiency in all things, may abound to every good work.* God manifests the *abounding of Grace* towards us, when he works an *effective sufficiency* in us, which he doth so as to enable us to abound in good works, or Duties of Holiness. These are those *supplies of Grace* which God gives us unto all our Duties, as He had promised unto him in his own case, *Chap. 12. 9.* And this is the first Demonstration of the Truth proposed unto Consideration, namely the Testimonies given in the Scripture, that Believers themselves cannot of *themselves* perform any Acts or Duties of Holiness, any thing that is spiritually good. Therefore these things are Effects of Grace, and and must be wrought in us by the *Holy Ghost*, who is the immediate Author of all Divine Operations.

Sect. 10. Secondly, All *Actings of Grace*, all good Duties are actually ascribed unto the Operation of the Holy Ghost. The particular Testimonies hereunto, are so multiplyed in the Scripture, as that it is not *convenient* nor indeed *possible* to call them over distinctly, some of them in a way of instance may be insisted on, and reduced unto three heads.

Sect. 11. (1) There are many places wherein we are said to be *led, guided, acted* by the Spirit, to *live* in the Spirit, to *walk* after the Spirit, to *do things* by the Spirit that dwelleth in us. For nothing in general can be intended in these expressions, but the *Actings of the Holy Spirit* of God upon our Souls, in a Compliance wherewith, as acting when we are acted by him, our Obedience unto God according to the Gospel doth consist, *Gal. 5. 16. Walk in the spirit.* To walk in the Spirit, is to walk in Obedience unto God according to the *supplies of Grace* which the Holy Ghost administers unto us; for so it is added, *that we shall not then fullfill the lusts of the flesh*; that is, we shall be kept up unto Holy Obedience and the avoydance of sin. So are we said to be *led by the Spirit*, *ver. 18.* being *acted* by him, and not by the vitious depraved principles of our corrupted Nature, *Rom. 8. 4. Walk not after the flesh but after the spirit.* To walk after the flesh is to have the *principles of indwelling sin*, acting its self in us unto the production and perpetration of actual sins. Wherefore to *walk after the spirit*, is to have the Spirit acting in us, to the effecting of all gracious Acts and Duties. And this is given unto us in command, that we neglect not his motions in us, but comply with them in a way of Diligence and Duty; see *ver. 14. 15.* So are we enjoined, to attend unto particular Duties *through the Holy Ghost that dwelleth in us*, *2 Tim. 1. 14.* that is, through his Assistance, without which we can do nothing.

Sect. 12. (2) As we are said to be *led*, and *acted* by him, so he is declared to be the Authour of all gracious Actings in us, *Galat. 5. 22. 23. The fruit of the spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, meekness,*

ness, temperance. All these things are wrought and brought forth in us by the Spirit, for they are *his fruits*. And not onely the *Habit* of them, but all their *Actings*, in all their *Exercise* are from him. Every *Act* of *Faith* is *Faith*, and every *Act* of *Love* is *Love*, and consequently no *Act* of them is of our selves, but every one of them is a *fruit of the Spirit of God*. So in another place he adds an *universal affirmative*, comprehending all instances of particular *Graces* and their *Exercise*, *Ephes. 5. 9. The fruit of the Spirit is in all Goodness, and Righteousness and Truth.* Unto these three heads, all *Actings* of *Grace*, all *Duties* of *Obedience*, all parts of *Holiness* may be reduced. And it is through *the supplies of the Spirit*, that he trusteth for a good issue of his *Obedience*, *Phil. 1. 19.* So is it expressly in the *Promise* of the *Covenant*, *Ezek. 36. 27. I will put my Spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my Statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments and doe them.* This is the whole that God requireth of us, and it is all wrought in us by his Spirit. So also *Chap. 11. 19, 20. Jerem. 32. 39, 40.* All the *Obedience* and *Holiness* that God requires of us in the *Covenant*, all *Duties* and *Actings* of *Grace*, are promised to be wrought in us by the Spirit, after we are assured that of our selves we can doe nothing.

(3) Particular *Graces* and their *Exercise*, are assigned unto his *acting* and working in us, *Gal. 5. 5. We through the Spirit wait for the Hope of Righteousness by Faith.* The *hope* of the *Righteousness* of *Faith*, is the thing hoped for thereby. All that we look for or expect in this World or hereafter, is by the *Righteousness* of *Faith*. Our quiet waiting for this, is an especial Gospel *Grace* and *Duty*. This we do not of our selves, but through the Spirit, *Phil. 3. 3. We worship God in the Spirit, love the brethren in the Spirit, Col. 1. 8. we purifie our souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit, unto unfeigned love of the Brethren, 1 Pet. 1. 22. See Eph. 1. 17. Act. 19. 31. Rom. 5. 5. Rom. 8. 15. 22, 26. 1 Thes. 1. 6. Rom. 14. 17. Chap. 15. 13, 16.* of *Faith* it is said expressly, that it is not of our selves, it is the gift of God, *Ephes. 2. 7, 8.* Sect. 13.

Thirdly; There are Testimonies that are expresse unto the *Position* as before laid down, *Phil. 2. 13. It is God who worketh in you both to will and to doe of his good pleasure.* The things thus wrought, are all things that appertain unto our *Obedience* and *Salvation*, as is evident from the *Connection* of the words with *v. 12. Work out your Salvation with fear and trembling.* Hereunto two things are required: (1) *Power* for such *Operations*, or for all the *Duties* of *Holiness* and *Obedience* that are required of us. That this we are *indued* withall, that this is wrought in us, bestowed upon us, by the Holy Ghost, hath been before abundantly confirmed. But when this is done for us, is there ought else yet remaining to be done? Yea, (2) There is the *Actual Exercise* of the *Grace* we have received. How may this be Exercised? All the whole work of *Grace* consists in the *internal Acts* of our *Wills*, and *external Operations* in *Duties* suitable thereunto. This therefore is incumbent on us, this we are to look unto in our selves; it is our *Duty* so to do, namely to stir up and exercise the *Grace* we have received in and unto its proper *Operations*. But it is so our *Duty*, as that of our selves we cannot perform it. It is God who worketh Sect. 14.

worketh effectually in us all those gracious Acts of our Wills, and all holy Operations in a way of Duty. Every Act of our *Wills*, so far as it is Gracious and Holy, is the Act of the Spirit of God *efficiently*, He *worketh in us to will*, or the very Act of willing. To say he doth only perswade us, or excite and stirre up our Wills by his Grace to put forth their own Acts, is to say he doth not do what the Apostle affirms him to do. For, if the gracious Actings of our Wills be so our *own* as not to be his, he doth not work in us *to will*, but only perswadeth us so to do. But the same Apostle utterly excludeth this pretense, *1 Cor. 15. 10. I laboured abundantly, yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me.* He had a Necessity incumbent on him, of declaring the great labour he had undergone, and the pains he had taken in *preaching of the Gospel*: But yet immediately, lest any one should apprehend, that he ascribed any thing to himself, any gracious holy Actings in those Labours, he addes his usual *Epanorthosis*, *Not I*; let me not be mistaken; it was not I, by any power of mine, by any thing in me, but it was all wrought in me by the free Grace of the Spirit of God. *Not I, but Grace*, is the Apostles Assertion. Suppose now, that God by his Grace doth no more but *aid, assist*, and *excite* the Will in its Actings, that he doth not effectually work all the gracious Actings of our Souls in all our Duties; the Proposition would hold on the other hand, *Not Grace, but I*, seeing the principal Relation of the Effect is unto the next and immediate Cause, and thence hath it its Denomination. And as he worketh them, *To Will* in us, so also *To Doe*; that is, Effectually to perform those Duties whereunto the gracious *actings* of our Wills are required.

Sect. 15. And what hath been spoken may suffice to prove, that the Holy Spirit as the *Author* of our *Sanctification*, worketh also in us all gracious Acts of Faith, Love and Obedience, wherein the first Part of our *Actual Holiness* and *Righteousness* doth consist. And the Truth thus confirmed, may be further improved unto our Instruction and Edification.

(1) It is easily hence discernible, How contrary are the *Designs* and *Expressions* of the Scripture, and the *Notions* of some Men among us. There is not any thing that is good in us, nothing that is done well by us in the way of Obedience, but the Scripture expressly and frequently assigns it unto the immediate Operations of the Holy Spirit in us. It doth so in general as to all gracious *Actings* whatever, and not content therewith, it proposeth every Grace, and every Holy Duty, distinctly affirming the Holy Ghost to be the immediate Author of them. And when it comes to make mention of us, it *positively* indeed prescribes *our Duty* to us, but as *plainly* lets us know, that we have no *power* in or from our selves to perform it. But some men *speak*, and *preach*, and *write* utterly to another purpose. The Freedom, Liberty, Power and Ability of our own Wills; the Light, Guidance, and Direction of our own Minds or Reasons; and from all, our own Performance of all the Duties of Faith and Obedience, are the Subjects of their Discourses; and that in Opposition unto what is ascribed in the Scriptures unto the Immediate Operations of the Holy Ghost. They are all for Grace, *Not I, but Grace, not I but Christ, without him we*

can

can do nothing: These are all for our Wills; not Grace but our Wills doe all. It is not more plainly affirmed in the Scripture, that God created Heaven and Earth, that he sustains and preserves all things by his Power, than that he *creates grace* in the Hearts of Believers; preserves it, acts it, and makes it effectual, working all our Works for us, and all our Duties in us. But Evasions must be found out, strange, forced, uncouth fences, be put upon plain, frequently repeated Expressions, to secure the Honour of our Wills, and to take care, that all the Good we doe, may not be assigned to the Grace of God. To this purpose Distinctions are coyned, Evasions invented, and such an Explanation is given of all Divine Operations, as renders them useles and insignificant. Yea, it is almost grown, if not *Criminal*, yet weak and *ridiculous* in the Judgement of some, That any should assign those Works and Operations to the Spirit of God, which the Scripture doth, in the very words that the Scripture useth. To lessen the Corruption and Depravation of our Nature by Sin; to extoll the Integrity and Power of our Reasons; to maintain the Freedom and Ability of our Wills in and unto things spiritually Good; to resolve the Conversion of men unto God, into their Natural good Dispositions, Inclinations and the right use of their Reason; to render *Holiness* to be only a Probity of Life, or Honesty of Conversation, upon rational Motives and Considerations; are the things that men are now almost wearied with the Repetition of. Scarce a Person that hath Confidence to commence for Reputation in the World, but immediately he furnisheth himself with some new *tinkling Ornaments* for these old *Pelagian* Figments. But whoever shall take an impartial View of the Design and constant Doctrine of the Scripture in this matter, will not be easily carried away with the plausible Pretences of men exalting their own Wills and Abilities, in Opposition to the Spirit and Grace of God by Jesus Christ.

(2) From what hath been discoursed, a further discovery is made of Sect. 16. the Nature of *Gospel Obedience*, of all the Acts of our Souls therein, and of the Duties that belong thereunto. It is commonly granted, that there is a great difference between the Acts and Duties that are truly gracious, and those which are called by the same name, that are not so, as in any Duties of Faith, of Prayer, of Charity. But this difference is supposed generally to be in the Adjuncts of those Duties, in some properties of them, but not in the *kind, nature* or substance of the Acts of our minds in them. Nay it is commonly said, that whereas wicked men are said to *believe*, and doe many *things gladly* in a way of Obedience; what they so doe, is for the *substance of the Acts* they perform, the same with those of them who are truly Regenerate and Sanctified. They may differ in their *Principle* and *End*, but as to their *Substance* or *Essence* they are the same. But there is no small mistake herein. All gracious Actings of our Minds and Souls, whether internal only, in Faith, Love, or Delight, or whether they go out unto external Duties required in the Gospel, being wrought in us by the immediate Efficacy of the Spirit of Grace, differ in their Kind, in their Essence and substance of the Acts themselves, from whatever is not so wrought or effected in us. For whatever may be done by any one, in any acting

acting of common Grace, or performance of any Duty of Obedience, being educed out of the power of the Natural Faculties of men, excited by Convictions, as directed and enforced by Reasons and Exhortations, or assisted by common Aids of what nature soever, they are natural as to their kind, and they have no other substance or Being but what is so. But that which is wrought in us by the especial Grace of the Holy Ghost in the way mentioned, is *supernatural*, as being not educed out of the Powers of our natural Faculties, but an immediate Effect of the Almighty supernatural Efficacy of the Grace of God. And therefore the sole Reason why God accepts and rewards Duties of Obedience in them that are sanctified, and regardeth not those which for the *outward* Matter and Manner of Performance are the same with them, (as unto *Abel* and his Offering he had respect, but he had no respect unto *Cain* and his Offering, *Gen.* 4. 4, 5.) is not taken from the State and Condition of the Persons that perform them only, though that also have an influence thereinto; but from the Nature of the Acts and Duties themselves also. He never accepts and rejects Duties of the same Kind absolutely with respect unto the Persons that do perform them. The Duties themselves are of a different Kind. Those which he accepts are *supernatural* Effects of his own Spirit in us, whereon he rewardeth and crowneth the Fruits of his own Grace. And as for what he rejects, whatever Appearance it may have of a Compliance with the *outward* Command, it hath nothing in it that is *supernaturally* Gracious, and so is not of the same Kind with what he doth accept.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

Mortification of Sin, the Nature and Causes of it.

(1) *Mortification of Sin, the Second Part of Sanctification.* (2) *Frequently prescribed and enjoined as a Duty.* (3) *What the Name signifies, with the Reason thereof:* (4) *As also that of Crucifying Sin.* (5) *The Nature of the Mortification of Sin, explained.* (6) *In-dwelling Sin in its Principle, Operations and Effects, the Object of Mortification.* (7) *Contrariety between Sin and Grace.* (8) *Mortification a Part-taking with the whole Interest of Grace against Sin.* (9) *How Sin is Mortified, and why the Subduing of it is so called.* (10) *Directions for the right Discharge of this Duty.* (11) *Nature of it unknown to many.* (12) *The Holy Spirit the Author and Cause of Mortification in us.* (13) *The Manner of the Operation of the Spirit in the Mortification of Sin.* (14) *Particular Means of the Mortification of Sin.* (15) *Duties necessary unto the Mortification of Sin, directed unto by the Holy Ghost.* (16) *Mistakes and Errors of Persons failing in this matter.* (17) *How Spiritual Duties are to be managed, that Sin may be mortified.* (18) *Influence of the Vertue of the Death of Christ, as applied by the Holy Spirit, into the Mortification of Sin.*

THere is yet another Part or Effect of our *Sanctification* by the Holy Ghost, which consisteth in, and is called, *Mortification* of Sin. As what we have already insisted on, concerneth the Improvement and Practice of the *Principle of Grace*, wherewithall Believers are indued; so what we now propose, concerneth the Weakening, Impairing and Destroying of the *Contrary Principle of Sin* in its Root and Fruits, in its Principle and Actings. And whereas the Spirit of God is every where said to *sanctifie us*; we our selves are commanded, and said constantly to *mortifie* our Sins. For *Sanctification* expresseth Grace communicated and received in general; *Mortification* Grace as so received, improved and acted unto a certain End. And I shall be brief in the handling of it, because I have formerly published a *small Discourse* on the same Subject. And there are two things that I shall speak unto: (1) *The Nature of the Duty it self.* (2) *The Manner* how it is wrought in us by the Holy Ghost; which I principally intend.

Sect. 1.

It is known, that this Duty is frequently enjoined and prescribed unto us. Col. 3. 5. *Mortifie therefore your Members that are on the Earth, Fornication, Uncleanness, inordinate Affection, evil Concupiscence, and Covetousness which is Idolatry.* ἐν ταῖς φεύγαις, may be supplied. Mortifie

Sect. 2.

P p p

your

your Members that are on the Earth; that is, your carnal earthly Affections, avoyding, or by avoyding Fornication, &c. And so a distinction is made between carnal Affections and their Fruits: Or, the special sins mentioned, are instances of these carnal Affections; *Mortifie your carnal Affections*, namely, Fornication and the like; wherein there is a Metonymy of the Effect for the Cause. And they are called *our Members*, (1) Because, as the whole Principle of sin, and Course of sinning which proceedeth from it, being called the *Body of Sin*, Rom. 6. 6. or the *Body of the Sins of the Flesh*, Col. 2. 11. with respect thereunto these particular Lusts are here called the *members of that Body*, *Mortifie your members*; For, that he intends not the Parts or Members of our Natural Bodies, as though they were to be destroyed, as they seem to imagine who place Mortification in outward Afflictions and Macerations of the Body, he adds, *τα ἑνὶ τῷ γῆς*, *that are on the Earth*, that is, Earthly, carnal and sensual. (2) These Affections and Lusts, *the Old man*, that is, our depraved Nature, useth naturally and readily, as the Body doth its Members: And, which adds Efficacy unto the Allusion, by them it draws the very *Members* of the Body into a compliance with it, and the service of it; against which we are cautioned by our Apostle, Rom. 6. 12. *Let not therefore sin reign in your mortal Bodies*, (that is, our natural Bodies) *that ye should obey it in the Lusts thereof*; which Exhortation he pursues v. 19. *as ye have yielded your Members servants unto Uncleaness and to Iniquity, unto Iniquity, even so now yield your Members servants to Righteousness unto Holiness*. Which some neglecting, do take the Members of Christ, that is, of their own Bodies, which are the Members of Christ, and make them the *members of an Harlot*, 1 Cor. 6. 15. And many other Commands there are to the same purpose, which will afterwards occur.

Sect. 3.

And concerning this great Duty, we may consider three things: 1. The Name of it, whereby it is expressed. 2. The Nature of it, wherein it consists. 3. The Means and Way whereby it is effected and wrought.

First; For the Name, it is two wayes expressed, and both of them Metaphorical. (1) By *νεκρῶν*, and *θανάτων*, which we render to *mortifie our selves*. The first is used Col. 3. 5. *νεκρώσατε*, which is *mortifie*, that is, Extinguish and destroy all that Force and Vigour of corrupted Nature, which enclines to earthly carnal things, opposite unto that spiritual Heavenly Life and its actings, which we have in and from Christ, as was before declared: *νεκρῶ* is *eneco*, *morte mactō*, to kill, to affect with or destroy by Death. But yet this word is used by our Apostle not absolutely to *destroy*, and to *kill*, so as that which is so *mortified* or *killed* should no more have any Being, but that it should be rendred useles as unto what its *strength* and *vigour* would produce. So he expresseth the Effects of it in the passive word, *ἐ κατενόησε τὸ ἑαυτοῦ σῶμα ὡς νεκρὸν*; Rom. 4. 19. He considered not his own Body now dead, now *mortified*. The Body of Abraham was not then absolutely dead, only the natural Force and Vigour of it was exceedingly abated. And so he seems to mollifie this Expression, Heb. 11. 12. *ἀφ' ἑνὸς ἐχρησθῆσαν, καὶ ταῦτα νεκρῶμεν*; which we well render, *of one, and him as good as Dead*; ταῦτα intimating a Respect unto the

the thing treated of. So that *νεκρῶν* to *mortifie*, signifies a continued Act, in taking away the Power and Force of any thing, untill it comes to be *νεκρωμένον*, *dead*, unto some certain Ends or Purposes, as we shall see it is in the Mortification of sin. *Rom. 8. 13. If ye through the Spirit doe mortifie the Deeds of the Body, ye shall live; ζήτετε*, another word to the same purpose, it signifies as the other doth, to *put to death*. But it is used in the Present Tense, to denote that it is a work which must be *always doing*; *If ye do mortifie*, that is, *If you are always and constantly imployed in that work*. And what the Apostle here calls *ταῖς πράξεσι τοῦ σώματος*, the *Deeds of the Body*, he therein expresseth the Effect for the Cause *Metonymically*: For he intends *τὴν σάρκα σὺν τοῖς παθήμασι καὶ ταῖς ἐπιθυμίαις*, as he expresseth the same thing, *Gal. 5. 24. The Flesh with its Affections and Lusts*; whence all the corrupt Deeds wherein the Body is instrumental, do arise.

(2) The same Duty, with relation unto the Death of Christ, as the Meritorious, Efficient and Exemplary Cause, is expressed by *Crucifying*. *Rom. 6. 6. Our old Man is Crucified with him. Gal. 2. 20. I am crucified with Christ*; Chap. 5. 20. *They that are Christs have crucified the Flesh, with the Affections and Lusts*. Chap. 6. 14. *By the Lord Jesus Christ, the World is crucified unto me, and I unto the World*. Now as perhaps there may be something intimated herein, of the Manner of mortification of sin, which is Gradually carryed on unto its final Destruction, as a Man dyes on the Cross; yet that which is principally intended, is the Relation of this Work and Duty to the Death of Christ, whence we and our sins are said to be *crucified with him*, because we and they are so by vertue of his Death; And herein do we always bear about in the Body, *τὴν νεκρωσιν*, the *dying of our Lord Jesus Christ*, *2 Cor. 4. 10.* representing the Manner of it, and expressing its Efficacy.

Sect. 4.

Secondly: Thus is this Duty expressed, whose Nature in the next place we shall more particularly enquire into, and declare, in the ensuing Observations.

Sect. 5.

1. Mortification of Sin is a Duty *always* incumbent on us, in the whole Course of our Obedience. This the Command testifieth, which represents it as an *always present* Duty. When it is no longer a Duty to grow in Grace, it is so not to *mortifie* Sin. No man under Heaven can at any Time say, that he is exempted from this Command, nor on any Pretence. And he who ceaseth from this Duty, lets go all Endeavours after Holiness. And as for those who pretend unto an *absolute Perfection*, they are of all Persons living the most impudent, nor do ever in this Matter open their mouths, but they give themselves the Lye. For,

2. This Duty being *always* incumbent on us, argues undenyably the abiding in us of a *Principle of Sin* whilest we are in the Flesh, which with its Fruits is that which is to be *mortified*. This the Scripture calleth the *sin that dwelleth in us*, the *evil that is present with us*, the *Law of the Members*, *evil Concupiscence*, *Lust*, the *Flesh*, and the like. And thereunto are the Properties and Actings of *folly*, *deceit*,

tempting, seducing, rebelling, warring, captivating, ascribed. This is not a place to dispute the Truth of this Assertion, which cannot with any Reputation of Modesty be denied by any who own the Scripture, or pretend to an Acquaintance with themselves. But yet through the Craft of Sathan, with the Pride and Darknes of the Minds of men, it is so fallen out, that the want of a true understanding hereof, is the Occasion of most of those pernicious Errors wherewith the Church of God is at present pestered; and which practically keeps men off from being seriously troubled for their sins, or seeking out for Relief by Jesus Christ. Thus one hath not feared of late openly to profess, that he knows of no *deceit* or *evil* in his own Heart, though a wiser than he, hath informed us, that *he who trusteth his own Heart is a Fool*, Proverb. 28. 26.

Sect. 6.

3. *In-dwelling sin*, which is the Object of this Duty of *Mortification*, falls under a three-fold Consideration. 1. Of its *Root* and *Principle*: 2. Of its *Disposition* and *Operations*: 3. Of its *Effects*. These in the Scripture are frequently distinguished, though mostly under *Metaphorical* Expressions. So are they mentioned together distinctly, Rom. 6. 6. *Our old Man is crucified with Christ, that the Body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.* (1) The *Root* or *Principle* of sin, which by Nature possesseth all the Faculties of the Soul, and as a depraved Habit enclines unto all that is evil, is the *Old man*, so called in Opposition unto the *New man* which after God is created in Righteousness and true Holiness. (2) There is the *Inclination*, actual *Disposition* and *Operations* of this Principle or Habit, which is called the *Body of sin* with the Members of it. For, under those Expressions sin is proposed as *in procinctu*, in a Readiness to Act its self, and enclining unto all that is evil. And this also is expressed by the *Affections* and *Lusts* of the *Flesh*, Gal. 4. 25. *Deceitfull Lusts*, Ephes. 4. 24. *The Old man is Corrupt, according unto the deceitfull Lusts, the Wills of the Flesh, and the Mind.* (3) There are the *Effects*, Fruits and Products of these things, which are Actual sins, whereby as the Apostle speaks, we *serve sin*, as bringing forth the Fruits of it; that we should not henceforth *serve sin*. And these Fruits are of two sorts: 1. *Internal*, in the *Figments* and *Imaginations* of the Heart, which is the first way whereby the Lusts of the Old man do act themselves. And therefore, of those that are under the Power or Dominion of sin, it is said, that *every Figment or Imagination of their Hearts are evil continually*, Gen. 6. 5. For they have no other Principle whereby they are acted, but that of Sin, and therefore all the Figments of their Hearts must be necessarily evil. And with respect hereunto, our Saviour affirms, that all Actual sins *proceed out of the Heart*, Math. 15. 19. because there is their *Root*, and there are they first formed and framed. 2. *External*, in Actual sins, such as those enumerated by our Apostle; Col. 3. 5. Gal. 5. 19, 20, 21. All these things together, make up the compleat Object of this Duty of *Mortification*. The *old man*, the *body of Death* with its Members, and the *Works of the flesh*, or the *Habit, Operations* and *Effects* of Sin, are all of them intended, and to be respected herein.

Sect. 7.

4. This *Principle*, its *Operations* and *Effects*, are opposed and directly con-

contrary unto the *Principle, Operations, and Fruits of Holiness*, as wrought in us by the Spirit of God, which we have before described. (1) They are opposed in their *Principle*. For the *Flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit lusteth against Flesh, and these are contrary the one to the other, Gal. 5. 17.* These are those two adverse *Principles*, which maintain such a Conflict in the Souls of *Believers*, whilst they are in this world, and which is so *Graphically* described by our Apostle, *Rom. 7.* so the Old and New man are opposed and contrary. (2) In their *Actings*; The *Lusting* of the *Flesh*, and the *Lusting* or desires of the *Spirit*, *Walking* after the *Flesh*, and *Walking* after the *Spirit*, *living* after the *Flesh*, and *living* in the *Spirit* are opposed also. This is the Opposition that is between the Body of *Sin* with its Members, and the Life of *Grace*; *Who walk not after the Flesh but after the Spirit, Rom. 8. 1, 4, 5.* *We are Debtors not to the flesh, to live after the flesh; for if ye live after the flesh ye shall die; but if ye by the Spirit, doe mortifie the Deeds of the Flesh ye shall live, ver. 11, 12, 13.* By this walking after the *Flesh*, I understand not, at least not principally, the committing of *Actual Sins*, but a Compliance with the *Principle* or *Habit* of sin prevailing in *Depraved* un sanctified Nature, allowing it a predominancy in the *Hearts* and *Affections*. It is when men are disposed to *Act* according to the *Inclinations, Lustings, Motions, Wills and Desires* of it. Or it is to bend that way *Habitually* in our *Course* and *Conversation*, which the *Flesh* inclines and leads unto. This *Principle* doth not indeed *Equally* bring forth *Actual sins* in all, but hath various *Degrees* of its *Efficacy*, as it is *advantaged* by *Temptations*, controlled by *Light*, or hampered by *Convictions*. Hence all that are under the *Power* of *Sin*, are not all equally vitious and sinful. But *after the flesh* goes the bent of the *Soul*, and the generality of its *Actings*. To *walk after the Spirit*, consists in our being given up to *Rule* and *Conduct*, or walking according to the *Dispositions* and *Inclinations* of the *Spirit*, that which is born of the *Spirit*, Namely, a *Principle* of *Grace* implanted in us by the *Holy Ghost*, which hath at large insisted on before. And (3) The *External Fruits and Effects* of these two *Principles* are contrary also, as our Apostle expressly and at large declares, *Gal. 5. 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24.* For whereas in the Enumeration of the Works of the *Flesh*, he reckons up *Actual sins*, as *Adultery, Fornication*, and the like, in the Account he gives of the *Fruits* of the *Spirit*, he insists on *Habitual Graces*, as *Love, Joy, Peace*, he expresseth them both *Metaphorically*. In the former he hath respect unto the vitious *Habits* of those *Actual sins*; and in the latter, unto the *Actual Effects* and *Duties* of those *Habitual Graces*.

5. There being this universal Contrariety, Opposition, contending and warfare between *Grace* and *Sin*, the *Spirit* and the *Flesh*, in their inward *Principles, Powers, Operations*, and outward *Effects*; the *Work* and *Duty* of *Mortification* consists in a constant taking part with *Grace*, in its *Principle, Actings* and *Fruits*, against the *Principle Acts* and *Fruits* of *Sin*. For the Residence of these contrary *Principles* being in, and their *Actings* being by the same *Faculties* of the *Soul*, as the one is increased, strengthened, and improved, the other must of necessity be weakened and decay. Wherefore the *Mortification of Sin* must consist in these three things. (1) The cherishing and improving of the Principle

Sect. 8.

Principle of Grace and Holiness which is implanted in us by the Holy Ghost, by all the wayes and means which God hath appointed thereunto, which we have spoken unto before. This is that which alone can undermine and ruine the power of Sin, without which all Attempts to weaken it are vain and fruitless. Let men take never so much pains to Mortifie, Crucifie or Subdue their sins, unless they endeavour in the first place to weaken and impair its strength by the increase of Grace, and growing therein, they will labour in the fire, where this work will be consumed. (2) In frequent *actings* of the Principles of Grace in all Duties Internal and External. For where the Inclinations, Motions, and Actings of the Spirit in all Acts, Duties, and Fruits of Holy Obedience, are vigorous and kept in constant Exercise, the contrary Motions and Actings of the Flesh are defeated. (3) In a due *Application* of the Principle, Power, and Actings of Grace, by way of opposition unto the Principle, Power, and Actings of Sin. As the whole of Grace is opposed unto the whole of Sin; so there is no particular Lust whereby Sin can act its power, but there is a particular Grace ready, to make effectual Opposition unto it, whereby it is mortified. And in this Application of Grace in its Actings in Opposition unto all the Actings of sin, consists the Mystery of this great Duty of *Mortification*. And where men being ignorant hereof, have yet fallen under a Conviction of the Power of Sin, and been perplexed therewith, they have found out *foolish wayes* innumerable, for its Mortification, wickedly opposing External, Natural, bodily Force and Exercise, unto an Internal, Moral, Depraved Principle which is no way concerned therein. But hereof we must treat more afterwards under the third Head concerning the *Manner* how this work is to be carried on, or this Duty performed.

Sect. 9.

6. This Duty of weakening Sin, by the Growth and improvement of Grace, and the Opposition which is made unto sin in all its Actings thereby is called *Mortification, Killing, or putting to Death*, on sundry accounts. First and principally, from that *Life*, which because of its Power, Efficacy and Operation is ascribed unto *Indwelling Sin*. The state of the Soul by reason of it is a state of *Death*. But whereas Power and Operations, are the proper Adjuncts or Effects of Life, for their sakes *life* is ascribed unto sin, on whose account sinners are dead. Wherefore this corrupt Principle of Sin in our depraved Nature, having a constant, powerful inclination, and working Actually towards all evil; it is said *Metaphorically* to *Live*, or to have a *Life* of its own. Therefore is the Opposition that is made unto it for its ruine and Destruction, called *Mortification, or Killing*, being its Deprivation of that strength, and efficacy whereby, and wherein it is said to *live*. Secondly, It may be so called because of the *Violence* of that contest which the Soul is put unto in this Duty. All other Duties that we are called unto in the course of our Obedience, may be performed in a *more easie, gentle, and plain* manner. Though it is our Work and Duty to conflict with all sorts of Temptations, yea to *wrestle with Principalities and Powers, and spiritual wickednesses in high places*, yet in this which we have with our selves, which is wholly within us and from us, there is more of *Warring, Fighting, Captivating, Wounding, Crying out for Help and Assistance*, a deep sense of such a violence as is used in taking away the

the Life of a mortal Enemy, than in any thing else we are called unto. And Thirdly, the end aymed at in this Duty, is *Destruction*, as it is of all killing. Sin, as was said, hath a Life, and that such a Life, as whereby it not onely Lives, but Rules and Reigns in all that are not born of God. By the entrance of Grace into the Soul it looseth its Dominion, but not its Being; its Rule, but not its Life. The utter Ruine, Destruction and gradual Annihilation of all the Remainders of this cursed Life of Sin, is our Design and Aym in this Work and Duty, which is therefore called *Mortification*. The design of this Duty wherever it is in sincerity, is to leave sin neither Being, nor Life, nor Operation.

And some *Directions*, as our manner is, may be taken from what we have discoursed concerning the Nature of this Duty, Directive of our own Practices. Sect. 10.

And (1) It is evident from what hath been discoursed, that it is a Work which hath a *Gradual Progress*, in the proceed whereof we must continually be Exercised. And this respects in the first place the Principle of sin it self. Every day, and in every Duty an especial eye is to be had unto the Abolition and Destruction of this Principle. It will no otherwise dye, but by being *Gradually* and constantly weakened, spare it and it heals its wounds and recovers strength. Hence many who have attained to a great Degree in the *Mortification* of sin, doe by their negligence suffer it in some Instances or other so to take head again, that they never recover their former state whilst they live.

And this is the Reason why we have so many *Withering Professors* among us, decayed in their Graces, fruitless in their lives, and every way conformed to the world. There are some indeed who being under the Power of that Blindnesse and Darknesse, which is a Principal part of the Depravation of our Nature, doe neither see nor discern the Inward secret Actings and Motions of sin; its Deceit and Restlessness, its mixing its self one way or other in all our Duties, with the Defilement and Guilt wherewith these things are accompanied; who judge that God scarce takes notice of any thing but outward Actions, and it may be not much of them neither, so as to be displeased with them, unless they are very foul indeed, which yet he is easily intreated to passe by and excuse, who judge this Duty superfluous, despising both the Confession and *Mortification* of Sin, in this Root and Principle of it. But those who have received most Grace and Power from above against it, are of all others the most *sensible* of its Power and Guilt, and of the Necessity of Applying themselves continually unto its Destruction. Sect. 11.

(2) With respect unto its *Inclinations* and *Operations*, wherein it variously exerts its Power, in all particular instances we are continually to watch against it, and to subdue it. And this concerns us in all that we are and doe; in our Duties, in our Calling, in our Conversation with others, in our Retirements, in the frames of our Spirits, in our streights, in our Mercies, in the use of our Enjoyments, in our Temptations. If we are negligent unto any Occasion we shall suffer by it. This is our Enemy, and this is the Warre we are engaged in. Every mistake, every neglect is perillous.

And

Sect. 12.

And, (3.) The *End* of this Duty with respect unto us, expressed by the Apostle is, *that henceforth we should not serve sin*; which referres unto the Perpetration of Actual Sins, the bringing forth of the Actual Fruits of the Flesh internal or external also. In whosoever the *Old man* is not crucified with Christ, let him think what he will of himself, he is a *servant* of Sin. If he have not received Vertue from the Death of Christ, if he be not wrought unto a *Conformity* to him therein, whatever else he may do or attain, however he may in any thing, in many things, change his Course, and reform his Life, he *serves sin* and not God. Our great Design ought to be, that we should no longer *serve sin*, which the Apostle in the ensuing Verses gives us many Reasons for. It is indeed the *worst service* that a Rational Creature is capable of, and will have the most dolefull End. What therefore is the only *Way and Means* whereby we may attain this End; namely, that although Sin will *abide* in us, yet that we may not *serve* it, which will secure us from its Danger? This is that *Mortification* of it which we insist upon, and no other. If we expect to be freed from the *service* of Sin, by its own giving over to press its Dominions upon us, or by any Composition with it, or any other way but by being alwayes *killing* or *destroying* of it, we do but deceive our own Souls.

Sect. 13.

And indeed, it is to be feared, that the *Nature* of this Duty is not sufficiently understood, or not sufficiently considered. Men look upon it as an easie Task, and that which will be carried on with a little Diligence, and ordinary Attendance. But do we think it is for nothing, that the Holy Ghost expresseth the Duty of opposing Sin, and weakening its Power by *Mortification*, killing or putting to death? Is there not somewhat *peculiar* herein, beyond any other Act or Duty of our Lives? Certainly there is intimated a great Contest of Sin, for the preservation of its Life. Every thing will do its utmost to preserve its Life and Being. So will Sin do also; and if it be not constantly pursued with Diligence and Holy Violence, it will escape our Assaults. Let no man think to *kill sin* with few, easie or gentle strokes. He who hath once smitten a Serpent, if he follow not on his blow untill it be slain, may repent that ever he begun the quarrel. And so will he who undertakes to deal with Sin, and pursues it not constantly to death; Sin will after a while revive, and the Man must dye. It is a great and *fatal* Mistake, if we suppose this Work will admit of any *remisseness* or intermission. Again, the Principle to be slain is *in our selves*, and so possessed of our Faculties, as that it is called *our selves*. It cannot be killed without a sense of *pain* and *trouble*. Hence it is compared to the cutting off of *Right Hands*, and the plucking out of *Right Eyes*. Lusts that pretend to be usefull to the State and Condition of men, that are pleasant and satisfactory to the Flesh, will not be mortified without such a Violence as the whole Soul shall be deeply sensible of. And sundry other things might be insisted on, to manifest how men deceive themselves, if they suppose this Duty of Mortification is that which they may carry on in a negligent careless Course and Manner. Is there no Danger in this *Warfare*? no Watchfulness, no Diligence required of us? Is it so easie a thing to *kill an Enemy* who hath so many Advantages of force and

and *fraud*? Wherefore, if we take care of our Souls, we are to attend unto this Duty, with that Care, Diligence, Watchfulness, and earnest Contention of spirit, which the Nature of it doth require.

And moreover, there is no less *fatal* Mistake where we make the Object of this Duty to be only some *particular Lusts*, or the Fruits of them in Actual sins, as was before observed. This is the way with many. They will make Head against some Sins, which on one Account or other they find themselves most concerned in; but if they will observe their Course, they shall find with how little success they do it. For the most part Sin gets ground upon them, and they continually groan under the Power of its Victories. And the Reason is, because they mistake their *Business*. Contests against particular sins, are only to comply with Light and Convictions. Mortification with a Design for Holiness, respects the *Body of Sin*, the Root and all its Branches: The first will miscarry, and the latter will be successful. And herein consists the Difference between that *Mortification* which men are put upon by Convictions from the Law, which always proves fruitless, and that wherein we are acted by the Spirit of the Gospel: The first respects only *particular* sins, as the Guilt of them reflects upon Conscience; the latter, the *whole Interest* of Sin as opposed to the Renovation of the Image of God in us. Sect. 14

Thirdly: That which remains further to be demonstrated is, That the Holy Spirit is the *Author* of this Work in us, so that although it is *our Duty*, it is *his Grace* and Strength whereby it is performed; as also the *Manner* how it is wrought by him, which is principally intended. Sect. 15

For the first, we have the truth of it asserted, *Rom. 8. 13. If ye through the Spirit do mortifie the Deeds of the Flesh*. It is *we* that are to mortifie the Deeds of the Flesh; it is our Duty, but of our selves we cannot do it, it must be done in or by the *Spirit*. Whether we take the Spirit here for the Person of the Holy Ghost, as the Context seems to require, or take it for the gracious Principle of spiritual Life in the Renovation of our Nature, not the Spirit himself, but that *which is born of the Spirit*, it is all one as to our purpose; the Work is taken from our own Natural Power or Ability, and resolved into the Grace of the Spirit.

And that we go no further for the proof of our Assertion, it may suffice to observe, That the Confirmation of it is the principal Design of the Apostle, from the second Verse of that Chapter unto the end of the 13th. That the Power and Reign of Sin, its Interest and Prevalency in the Minds of Believers, are weakened, impaired, and finally destroyed (so as that all the pernicious Consequences of it shall be avoyded,) by the Holy Ghost, and that these things could no otherwise be effected, he both affirms and proves at large. In the foregoing Chapter, from the 7th Verse unto the end, he declares the *Nature, Properties, and Efficacy of In-dwelling sin*, as the Remainders of it do still abide in Believers. And whereas a two-fold Conclusion might be made from the Description he gives of the Power and Actings Sect. 16

of this sin, or a double Question arise, unto the great Disconsolation of Believers, he doth in this Chapter remove them both, manifesting that there was no cause for such Conclusions or Exceptions, from any thing by him delivered. The first of these is, that if such, if this be the Power and Prevalency of *In-dwelling sin*, if it so obstruct us in our doing that which is good, and impetuously incline unto evil; what will become of us in the End, how shall we answer for all the Sin and Guilt which we have contracted thereby? We must, we shall therefore perish under the Guilt of it. And the second Conclusion which is apt to arise from the same Consideration is, that seeing the Power and Prevalency of Sin is so great, and that we in our selves are no way able to make Resistance unto it, much less to overcome it, it cannot be, but that at length it will absolutely prevail against us, and bring us under its Dominion, unto our everlasting Ruine. Both these *Conclusions* the Apostle obviates in this Chapter, or removes them if laid as *Objections* against what he had delivered. And this he doth,

Sect. 17.

(1) By a *Tacit Concession*, that they will both of them be found true towards all who live and dye *under the Law*, without an Interest in Jesus Christ. For, affirming that *there is no condemnation unto them that are in Christ Jesus*, he grants, that those who are not so cannot avoyd it. Such is the Guilt of this sin, and such are the Fruits of it in all in whomsoever it abides, that it makes them obnoxious unto Condemnation. But,

(2) There is a *Deliverance* from this Condemnation, and from all *liableness* thereunto, by free *Justification in the Blood of Christ*, v. 1. For those who have an Interest in him, and are made partakers thereof, although sin may grieve them, trouble and perplex them, and by its Deceit and Violence cause them to contract much Guilt in their surprizals, yet they need not despond, or be utterly cast down; there is a stable ground of Consolation provided for them, in that *there is no Condemnation unto them that are in Christ Jesus*.

(3) That none may *abuse* this Consolation of the Gospel, to countenance themselves unto a Continuance in the *service of sin*, he gives a Limitation of the Subjects unto whom it doth belong, namely, all them and only them *who walk not after the Flesh, but after the Spirit*, v. 1. As for those who give up themselves unto the Conduct of this Principle of *In-dwelling sin*, who comply with its Motions and Inclinations, being acted wholly by its Power, let them neither flatter nor deceive themselves, there is nothing in Christ nor the Gospel to free them from Condemnation. It is they only who give up themselves to the *Conduct of the Spirit of Sanctification and Holiness*, that have an interest in this Priviledge.

(4) As to the other Conclusion, taken from the Consideration of the Power and Prevalency of this Principle of sin, he prevents or removes it, by a full Discovery *how* and by *what means* that Power of it shall be so broken, its strength abated, its prevalency disappointed, and its self destroyed, as that we need not fear the Consequents of it before mentioned; but rather may secure our selves, that we shall be the *death thereof*, and not *that* the death of our Souls. Now this is, saith he, by the *Law or Power* of the Spirit of Life, which is in Christ Jesus,

Jesus, v. 2. And thereon he proceeds to declare, that it is by the effectual working of this Spirit in us alone, that we are enabled to overcome this spiritual Adversary. This being sufficiently evident, it remaineth only that we declare, the *Way* and *Manner* how he produceth this Effect of his Grace.

(1) The Foundation of all Mortification of Sin, is from the *Inhabitation of the Spirit in us*. He dwells in the Persons of Believers as in his *Temple*, and so he prepares it for himself. Those Defilements or Pollutions which render the Souls of men unmeet *Habitations* for the Spirit of God, do all of them consist in *sin inherent* and its Effects. These therefore he will remove and subdue, that he may dwell in us suitably unto his *Holiness*. Rom. 8. 11. *If the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the Dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the Dead shall also quicken your mortal Bodies, by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.* Our mortal Bodies, are our Bodies as obnoxious unto Death by reason of sin; as v. 10. And the *Quickening* of these mortal Bodies, is their being freed from the Principle of Sin, or Death and its Power, by a contrary Principle of Life and Righteousness. It is the freeing of us from *being in the Flesh*, that we may be *in the Spirit*, v. 9. And by what *Means* is this effected? It is by the *spirit of him that raised Jesus from the Dead*; that is, of the Father, which also is called the *spirit of God*, the *spirit of Christ*, v. 9. For he is equally the spirit of the Father and the son. And he is described by this *Periphrasis*, both because there is a similitude between that Work as to its Greatness and Power which God wrought in Christ when he raised him from the Dead, and what he worketh in Believers in their Sanctification, Ephes. 1. 19, 20. and because this Work is wrought in us by virtue of the Resurrection of Christ. But under what especial Consideration doth he effect this Work of mortifying sin in us? It is as he *dwelleth in us*. God doth it by his spirit as he dwelleth in us. As it is a *work of Grace*, it is said to be *wrought by the Spirit*; and as it is *our Duty*, we are said to work *it through the Spirit*, v. 13. And let men pretend what they please, if they have not the spirit of Christ *dwelling in them*, they have not mortified any sin, but do yet walk after the flesh, and, continuing so to doe, shall dye.

Sect. 18.

Moreover, as this is the only *spring* of Mortification in us as it is a *Grace*, so the Consideration of it is the principal Motive unto it as it is a *Duty*. So our Apostle pressing unto it, doth it by this Argument; *Know ye not that your Body is the Temple of the Holy Ghost, which is in you, which you have of God?* 1 Cor. 6. 19. To which we may adde that weighty Caution which he gives us to the same purpose; 1 Cor. 3. 16. *Know you not that ye are the Temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? if any man defile the Temple of God, him shall God destroy, for the Temple of God is Holy, which Temple are ye.*

Sect. 19.

Whereas therefore in every Duty two things are principally considered. First, The *Life* and *spring* of it, as it is wrought in us by *Grace*: Secondly, The *principal Reason* for it and Motive unto it, as it is to be performed in our selves by the way of *Duty*: Both these as to this matter of *Mortification*, do center in this *Inhabitation* of the Spirit.

For, (1) It is he who *mortifies* and *subdues* our Corruptions, who quickens us unto Life, Holiness and Obedience, as he *dwelleth in us*, that he may make and prepare an *Habitation* meet for himself. And, (2) The principal Reason and Motive which we have to attend unto it, with all Care and Diligence as a *Duty*, is that we may thereby preserve his *Dwelling-place* so as becometh his Grace and Holiness. And indeed, whereas (as our Saviour tells us) they are things which arise from and come out of the Heart, that defile us, there is no greater nor more forcible Motive to contend against all the defiling Actings of sin, which is our Mortification, than this, that by the Neglect hereof the Temple of the Spirit will be defiled, which we are commanded to watch against under the severe Commination of being destroyed for our Neglect therein.

Sect. 20. If it be said, that whereas we do acknowledge that there are still *remainders* of this sin in us, and they are accompanied with their Defilements, how can it be supposed, that the Holy Ghost will *dwell in us*, or in any one that is not perfectly *Holy*? I answer, (1) That the great Matter which the Spirit of God considereth in his Opposition unto sin, and that of *sin* to his Work, is *Dominion and Rule*. This the Apostle makes evident, *Rom. 6. 12, 13, 14*. Who, or what shall have the principal Conduct of the Mind and Soul, (*Chap. 8. 7, 8, 9.*) is the matter in Question. Where *sin* hath the Rule, there the Holy Ghost will never dwell. He enters into no soul as his Habitation, but at the same instant he dethrones *sin*, spoils it of its Dominion, and takes the Rule of the soul into the hand of his own Grace. Where he hath effected this Work, and brought his Adversary into subjection, there he will *dwell*, though sometimes his Habitation be troubled by his subdued Enemy. (2) The *souls* and *minds* of them who are really sanctified, have continually such a *sprinkling* with the Blood of Christ, and are so continually *purified* by vertue from his *sacrifice* and *oblation*, as that they are never unmeet Habitations for the *holy spirit* of God.

Sect. 21. (2) The *Manner* of the actual Operation of the *spirit* of God in effecting this Work, or *how* he *mortifies* sin, or enables us to mortify it, is to be considered. And an Acquaintance herewith dependeth on the Knowledge of the sin that is to be mortified, which we have before described. It is the *vitious corrupt Habit*, and Inclination unto sin, which is in us by Nature, that is the principal Object of this Duty; or, *the Old man which is corrupt according unto deceitfull Lusts*. When this is weakened in us as to its Power and Efficacy, when its *strength* is abated, and its Prevalency destroyed, then is this Duty in its proper Discharge, and *Mortification* carryed on in the *soul*.

Now this the Holy Ghost doth, *First*, By *implanting* in our Minds and all their Faculties, *A contrary Habit and Principle*, with contrary Inclinations, Dispositions and Actings, namely, a Principle of *spiritual* Life and Holiness, bringing forth the Fruits thereof. By means hereof is this work effected. For sin will no otherwise dye, but by being *killed* and *slain*: And whereas this is *gradually* to be done, it must be by Warring and Conflict. There must be something in us that is contrary unto it, which opposing of it, conflicting with it, doth insensibly and

and by Degrees, (for it dyes not at once) work out its Ruine and Destruction. As in a *Chronical* Distemper, the Disease continually Combates and Conflicts with the Powers of Nature, untill having insensibly improved them, it prevails unto its Dissolution. So is it in this matter. These adverse Principles with their Contrariety, Opposition, and Conflict, the Apostle expressly asserts and describes, as also their contrary Fruits and Actings, with the Issue of the whole, *Gal. 5. 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25.* The contrary Principles are the *Flesh* and *Spirit*, and their contrary Actings are in *Lusting* and *Warring* one against the other, *ver. 16. Walk in the Spirit and ye shall not fulfill the Lusts of the Flesh:* Not to fulfill the lusts of the flesh is to Mortifie it; for it neither will nor can be kept alive if its Lusts be not fulfilled. And he gives a fuller Account hereof *ver. 17. For the Flesh Lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit Lusteth against the Flesh, and these are contrary one to the other.* If by the Spirit, the Spirit of God himself be intended, yet he *Lusteth not in us*, but by vertue of that spirit which is born of him, that is, the New Nature or Holy Principle of Obedience which he worketh in us. And the way of their mutual Opposition unto one another, the Apostle describes at large in the following verses, by instancing in the contrary Effects of the one and the other. But the Issue of the whole is, *v. 24. They that are Christs have crucified the Flesh with its Affections and Lusts.* They have crucified it, that is, fastned it unto that Cross, where at length it may expire. And this is the way of it, namely, the Actings of the Spirit against it, and the Fruits produced thereby. Hence he shuts up his discourse with that Exhortation, *If we live in the Spirit, let us walk in the Spirit.* That is, if we are endowed with this Spiritual Principle of Life, which is to live in the Spirit, then let us Act, Work and Improve that spiritual Principle unto the Ruine and Mortification of sin.

This therefore is the *first way* whereby the Spirit of God Mortifieth sin in us, and in a compliance with it under his conduct do we regularly carry on this work and Duty: That is, *we Mortifie sin*, by cherishing the Principle of Holiness and Sanctification in our Souls, labouring to encrease and strengthen it by growing in Grace, and by a constancy and frequency in acting of it in all Duties, on all Occasions, abounding in the Fruits of it. Growing, Thriving, and Improving in universal Holiness, is the great way of the *Mortification* of sin. The more *vigorous* the Principle of Holiness is in us, the more *weak, infirm, and dying* will be that of sin. The more *frequent and lively* are the *Actings* of Grace, the *feebler* and *seldomer* will be the *Actings* of sin. The more we abound in the *Fruits* of the *Spirit*, the less shall we be concerned in the *Works* of the *Flesh*. And we doe but deceive our selves if we think sin will be mortified on any other terms. Men when they are galled in their Consciences, and disquieted in their Mindes with any *Sin* or *Temptation* thereunto, wherein their *Lusts* or *Corruptions*, are either influenced by *Satan*, or entangled by *Objects*, *Occasions*, and *Opportunities*, doe set themselves oft-times in good earnest to oppose and subdue it, by all the *ways* and *means* they can think upon. But all they doe is in vain, and so they find it at last unto their cost and sorrow. The reason is, because they neglect this course, without which never
any

Sect. 22.

any one sin was *truly Mortified* in the world, nor ever will so be. The course I intend is, that of labouring universally to improve a *Principle of Holiness*, not in this or that way, but in all Instances of *Holy Obedience*. This is that which will ruine sin, and without it nothing else will contribute any thing thereunto. Bring a man unto the *Law*, urge him with the *Purity* of its *Doctrine*, the *Authority* of its *Commands*, the *Severity* of its *Threatnings*, the dreadfull *Consequences* of its transgression. Suppose him convinced hereby of the evil and danger of sin, of the necessity of its *Mortification* and *Destruction*. Will he be able hereon to discharge this Duty, so as that sin may dye, and his soul may live? The Apostle assures us of the contrary, *Rom. 7. 7, 8, 9.* The whole *Effect* of the *Application* of the *Law* in its power unto *indwelling sin*, is but to *irritate*, *provoke*, and *increase* its guilt. And what other probable way besides this unto this End, can any one fix upon.

Sect. 23.

Secondly, The Holy Ghost carryeth on this work in us as a *Grace*, and enableth us unto it as our *Duty*, by those *actual Supplies* and *Assistances* of *Grace*, which he continually communicates unto us. For the same Divine Operations, the same *Supplies* of *Grace* which are necessary unto the positive *Acts* and *Duties* of *Holiness*, are necessary also unto this End, that sin in the *Actual Motions*, and *Lustings* of it may be *Mortified*; So the Apostle issues his long Account of the *Conflict* between sin and the Soul of a Believer, and his complaint thereon, with that Good word, *I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord, Rom. 7. 25.* namely, who supplies me with *gracious Assistance* against the Power of sin. Temptation is successfull onely by sin, *Lam. 1. 14.* And it was with respect unto an especial Temptation, that the Lord Christ gives that Answer unto the Apostle, *My Grace is sufficient for thee, 2 Cor. 12. 9.* It is the Actual Supply of the Spirit of Christ that doth enable us to withstand our Temptations and subdue our Corruptions. This is the ἐμπροσθεν τοῦ πνεύματος, *Phil. 1. ver. 19.* An *Additional supply* as occasion requireth beyond our constant daily provision; or χάρις εἰς ἐκκλήσεις βοήθειαν *Heb. 4. ver. 16.* Grace given in to help seasonably upon our cry made for it. Of the Nature of these supplies, we have discoursed before. I shall now onely observe, that in the Life of Faith and Dependance on Christ, the Expectation and Derivation of these supplies of Grace and spiritual strength, is one principal part of our Duty. These things are not *empty Notions* as some Imagine. If Christ be an Head of *Influence* unto us, as well as of Rule, as the Head natural is to the Body; If he be *our Life*, if our Life be in him, and we have nothing but what we doe receive from him, if he gives unto us supplies of his *Spirit*, and *increases* of *Grace*, and if it be our Duty by Faith to look for all these things from him, and that be the means of receiving them, which things are all *expressely* and *frequently* affirmed in the Sripture; then is this Expectation and Derivation of spiritual strength continually from him, the way we are to take for the *Actual Mortification* of sin. And therefore if we would be found in a successfull discharge of this Duty, it is required of us; (1) That we endeavour diligently in the whole Course of our lives after these continual supplies of *Grace*, that is, that we wait for them in all those ways and means whereby they are communicated. For although the Lord Christ giveth them out freely and bountifully, yet

yet our *Diligence in Duty*, will give the measure of receiving them. If we are negligent in Prayer, Meditation, Reading, Hearing of the Word, and other Ordinances of Divine Worship, we have no ground to expect any great *supplies* to this End. And, (2) That we live and abound in the *Actual Exercise* of all those Graces, which are most directly opposite unto those peculiar Lusts or Corruptions that we are most exercised withall, or obnoxious unto. For *Sin and Grace* do trie their Interest and Prevalency in *particular* Instances. If therefore any are more than ordinarily subject unto the Power of any Corruption, as Passion, inordinate Affections, Love of the World, Distrust of God; unless he be constant in the Exercise of those Graces which are *Diametrically* opposed unto them, they will continually suffer under the Power of Sin.

Thirdly, It is the Holy Spirit which *directs* us unto and *helps* us in the Performance of *those Duties* which are appointed of God unto this End, that they may be *Means* of the Mortification of sin. Unto the right use of those Duties (for such there are) two things are required: 1. That we *know* them aright, in their *Nature and Use*, as also that they are appointed of God unto this End: And then, 2. That we *perform* them in a due manner. And both these we must have from the *Spirit* of God: He is given to Believers, to lead them into all Truth; he teacheth and instructs them by the Word, not only what Duties are *incumbent* on them, but also how to *perform* them, and with respect unto what Ends.

(First,) It is required, that we *know* them aright, in their *Nature, Use and Ends*. For want hereof, or through the Neglect of looking after it, all sorts of men have wandred after *foolish Imaginations* about this Work, either as to the *Nature* of the Work it self, or as to the *Means* whereby it may be effected. For it being a Grace and Duty of the Gospel, thence only is it truly to be learned, and that by the *Teachings* of the Spirit of God. And it may not be amiss to give some Instances of the Darknes of mens Minds and their Mistakes herein.

(1.) A general Apprehension that *somewhat of this nature* is necessary, arising from the Observation of the Disorder of our *Passions*, and the Exorbitancy of the *Lives* of most in the World, is suited even to the Light of Nature, and was from thence variously improved by the *Philosophers* of old. To this purpose did they give many Instructions about denying and subduing the disorderly Affections of the Mind, conquering Passions, moderating Desires, and the like. But whilest their Discoveries of sin rose no higher than the *actual Disorder* they found in the Affections and Passions of the Mind, whilest they knew nothing of the *Depravation* of the Mind it self, and had nothing to oppose unto what they did discover, but *morall* Considerations, and those most of them notoriously influenced by Vain-glory and Applause, they never attained unto any thing of the same Kind with the due *Mortification* of sin. Sect. 24.

(2) We may look into the *Papacy*, and take a View of the great Appearance of this Duty which is therein, and we shall find it all disappointed, because they are not led unto, nor taught the Duties whereby Sect. 25.

by it may be brought about by the *Spirit of God*. They have by the Light of the *Scripture* a far clearer Discovery of the Nature and Power of sin, than had the *Philosophers* of Old. The *Commandment* also being variously brought and applyed unto their Consciences, they may be, and doubtless are and have been, many of them, made deeply sensible of the *Actings* and *Tendency* of *In-dwelling sin*. Hereon ensues a Terror of Death and Eternal Judgement. Things being so stated, Persons who were not profligate, nor had their Consciences feared, could not refrain from contriving *wayes* and *means* how Sin might be mortified and destroyed. But whereas they had lost a true Apprehension of the only Way whereby this might be effected, they betook themselves unto innumerable *false ones* of their own. This was the *Spring* of all the Austerities, Disciplines, Fastings, self-Macerations, and the like, which are exercised or in use among them. For although they are now in Practice turned mostly to the Benefit of the *Priests*, and an Indulgence unto Sin in the *Penitents*, yet they were invented and set on foot at first, with a Design to use them as Engines for the *Mortification* of sin; and they have a great Appearance in the *Flesh* unto that End and Purpose. But yet when all was done, they found by Experience that they were insufficient hereunto; Sin was not *destroyed*, nor Conscience *pacified* by them. This made them betake themselves to *Purgatory*. Here they have Hopes all will be set right, when they are gone out of this World, from whence none could come back to complain of their Disappointments. These things are not spoken to condemn even *External Severities* and Austerities, in Fastings, Watchings and Abstinencies in their proper place. Our Nature is apt to run into extremes; Because we see the vanity of the *Papists* in placing Mortification of Sin, in an outward Shadow and Appearance of it, in that *Bodily Exercise* which profiteth not; we are apt to think that all things of that Nature are utterly needless, and cannot be subordinate unto spiritual Ends. But the truth is, I shall much suspect their *internal* Mortification, (pretend what they will) who alwayes *pamper* the *Flesh*, indulge to their sensual Appetite, conform to the World, and lead their Lives in Idleness and Pleasures. Yea it is high time, that Professors by joynt-consent should retrench that *Course of Life*, in Fulness of Diet, Bravery of Apparel, Expence of Time, in vain Conversation, which many are fallen into. But these outward *Austerities* of themselves, I say, will never effect the End aimed at: For as to the most of them, they being such as God never appointed unto any such End or Purpose, but being the Fruit of mens own *Contrivances* and *Inventions*; let them be insisted on and pursued unto the most imaginable Extremities, being not blessed of God thereunto, they will not contribute the least towards the *Mortification* of Sin. Neither is there either Vertue or Efficacy in the residue of them, but as they are subordinated unto other *spiritual Duties*. So *Hierome* gives us an honest *Instance* in himself, telling us, that whilest he lived in his horrid Wilderness in *Judea*, and lodged in his Cave, his Mind would be in the Sports and Revels at *Rome*.

Heb. 26.

(3) The like may be said of the *Quakers* amongst our selves. That which first recommended them, was an *Appearance* of Mortification, which

which it may be also some of them really intended, though it is evident they never understood the *Nature* of it. For in the height of their outward Appearances, as they came short of the sorry Weeds, begging Habits, macerated Countenances, and severe Looks of many *Monks* in the *Roman Church*, and *Devices* among the *Mahumetans*; so they were so far from restraining or mortifying their real Inclinations, as that they seemed to excite and provoke themselves to exceed all others in Clamours, Railings, evil Speakings, Reproaches, Calumnies, and malicious Treating of those who dissented from them, without the least Discovery of an Heart filled with Kindness and Benignity unto Mankind, or love unto any but themselves; in which Frame and state of things, Sin is as secure from *Mortification* as in the Practice of open Lusts and Debaucheries. But supposing that they made a real industrious Attempt for the *Mortification* of sin, what *success* have they had, what have they attained unto? Some of them have very wisely slip over the whole Work and Duty of it, into a *pleasing Dream of Perfection*. And generally finding the *fruitfulness* of their Attempt, and that indeed Sin will not be mortified by the Power of their *Light within*, nor by their Resolutions, nor by any of their austere outward Appearances, nor peculiar Habits or Looks, which in this matter are openly *Pharisaical*, they begin to give over their Design. For who among all that pretend to any Reverence of God, do more openly indulge themselves unto Covetousness, Love of the World, *Emulation*, Strife, Contentions among themselves, severe Revenges against others, than they doe; not to mention the Filth and Uncleaness they begin mutually to charge one another withall. And so will all *self-devised* ways of *Mortification* end. It is the *Spirit* of God alone who leads us into the Exercise of those Duties whereby it may be carried on.

(Secondly,) It is required, that the *Duties* to be used unto this End be *rightly performed*, in *Faith*, unto the Glory of God. Without this, a *Multiplication* of Duties is an increase of *Burden* and Bondage, and that is all. Now that we can perform no Duty in this *way* or *manner*, without the especial Assistance of the Holy Spirit, hath been sufficiently before evinced: And the Duties which are appointed of God in an especial manner unto this End, are *Prayer*, *Meditation*, *Watchfulness*, *Abstinence*, *Wisdom* or Circumspection with reference unto Temptations and their prevalency. Not to go over these Duties in particular, nor to shew wherein their especial Efficacy unto this End and Purpose doth consist, I shall only give some general *Rules* concerning the Exercising of our Souls in them, and some Directions for their right performance. Sect. 27.

(1) All these Duties are to be designed and managed with an especial *Respect* unto this End. It will not suffice that we are Exercised in them in general, and with regard only unto this general End. We are to apply them unto this particular Case, designing in and by them the *Mortification* and Ruine of sin. Especially, when by its especial Actings in us, it discovers it self in a *peculiar Manner* unto us. No man who wisely considereth himself, his State and Condition, his

Occasions and Temptations, can be wholly ignorant of his especial Corruptions and Inclinations, whereby he is ready for *halting*, as the *Psalmist* speaks. He that is so, lives in the dark to himself, and walks at *peradventures* with God, not knowing how he walketh, nor whether he goeth. *David* probably had respect hereunto, when he said, *I have kept the Wayes of the Lord, and have not wickedly departed from my God; for all his Judgments were before me, and I did not put away his Statutes from me. I was also upright before him, and I kept myself from mine Iniquity, Psal. 18. 21, 22, 23.* He could have done nothing of all this, nor have preserved his Integrity in walking with God, had he not known, and kept a continual Watch upon his *own Iniquity*, or that working of Sin in him which most peculiarly inclined and disposed him unto Evil. Upon this Discovery are we to apply these *Duties* in a particular Manner to the weakening and Ruine of the Power of Sin. And as they are all usefull and Necessary, so the *Circumstances* of our Condition will direct us, which of them in particular we ought to be most conversant in. Sometimes *Prayer* and *Meditation* claim this place, as when our Danger ariseth solely from our *selves*, and our own perverse Inclinations, disorderly Affections, or unruly Passions; sometimes *Watchfulness* and *Abstinence*, when Sin takes Occasion from Temptations, Concerns and Businessses in the World; sometimes *Wisdom* and *Circumspection*, when the Avoydance of Temptations and Opportunities for sin, is in an especial manner required of us. These Duties I say, are to be managed with a peculiar design to oppose, defeat and destroy the Power of sin, into which they have a powerfull Influence as designed of God unto that End. For,

Sect. 29.

(2) All these Duties *rightly improved*, work two wayes towards the End designed. 1. *Morally*, and by way of *Impetration*, namely, of Help and Assistance: 2. *Really*, by an immediate Opposition unto Sin and its Power, whence Assimilation unto Holiness doth arise.

(First,) These Duties work *Morally*, and by way of *Impetration*. I shall instance only in one of them, and that is *Prayer*. There are two parts of *Prayer* with respect unto Sin and its Power. (1) *Complaints*: (2) *Petitions*.

1. *Complaint*. So is the Title of *Psal. 102. The Prayer of the Afflicted when he is overwhelmed, and powreth out his Complaint before the Lord.* So *David* expresseth himself, *Psal. 55. 2. Attend unto me, and hear me, I mourn in my Complaint, and make a Noysse.* His Prayer was a Dolefull Lamentation. And *Psal. 142. 2. I powred out my Complaint before him, I shewed before him my trouble.* This is the first Work of Prayer, with respect unto Sin, its Power and Prevalency. The Soul therein pours out its *Complaints* unto God, and sheweth before him the trouble it undergoes on the Account thereof. And this it doth in an humble Acknowledgement of its Guilt, crying out of its Deceit and Violence. For all just and due *Complaint* respecteth that which is *grievous*, and which is beyond the Power of the Complainer to relieve himself against. Of this sort there is nothing to be compared with the Power of Sin, as to Believers.

Sect. 30.

This therefore is and ought to be the *principal* Matter and Subject of

of their *Complaints* in Prayer. Yea, the very *Nature* of the whole Case is such, as that the Apostle could not give an Account of it without great *Complaints*, *Rom. 7. 24.* This part of Prayer indeed is with profligate Persons derided and scorned, but it is acceptable with God, and that wherein Believers find Ease and Rest unto their Souls. For, let the World scoffe while it pleaseth, what is more acceptable unto God, than for his Children, out of pure Love unto him and Holiness, out of fervent Desires to comply with his Mind and Will, and thereby to attain Conformity unto Jesus Christ, to come with their *Complaints* unto him, of the *Distance* they are kept from these things by the captivating Power of sins, bewailing their frail Condition, and humbly acknowledging all the Evils that they are liable unto upon the Account thereof? Would any man have thought it possible, had not Experience convinced him, that so much *Luciferian Pride* and *Atheisme* should possess the Minds of any who would be esteemed Christians, as to scoffe at and deride these things? that any one should ever read the Bible, or once consider what he is, and with whom he hath to doe, and to be ignorant of this Duty? But we have nothing to do with such Persons, but to leave them to please themselves whilest they may, with these fond and impious Imaginations. They will come either in this World, (which we hope and pray for) in their *Repentance* to know their Folly, or in another. I say, these *Complaints* of sin, powred out before the Lord, these Cryings out of Deceit and Violence, are acceptable to God, and prevalent with him to give out *Aid* and *Assistance*. He owns Believers as his Children, and hath the Bowels and Compassion of a Father towards them; Sin he knowes to be their greatest Enemy, and which fights directly against their Souls. Will he then despise their Complaints, and their bemoaning of themselves before him? will he not *avenge* them of that Enemy, and that speedily? See *Jerem. 31. 18, 19, 20.* Men who think they have no other Enemies, none to complain of, but such as oppose them, or obstruct them, or oppress them in their Secular Interests, Advantages and Concerns, are *strangers* unto these things. *Believers* look on *sin* as their greatest Adversary, and know that they suffer more from it than from all the World: Suffer them therefore to make their Complaints of it unto him who pities them, who will *relieve* them and *avenge* them.

2. Prayer is directly *Petitions* to this purpose; it consists of Petitions unto God, for supplies of Grace to conflict and conquer Sin withall. I need not prove this; No man Prayes as he ought, no man joyns in Prayer with another who prayes as he ought, but these *Petitions* are a part of his Prayer. Especially will they be so, and ought they so to be, when the Mind is peculiarly engaged in the Design of *destroying sin*. And these *Petitions* or Requests are, as far as they are *gracious* and *effectual*, wrought in us by the Holy Ghost, who therein maketh *intercession* for us according to the Will of God. And hereby doth he carry on this work of the *Mortification of sin*, for his Work it is. He makes us to put up prevalent Requests unto God, for such continual supplies of Grace, whereby it may be constantly kept under, and at length *destroyed*. And this is the *first way* whereby this Duty hath an Influence into *Mortification*, namely, *Morally* and by way of *Impetration*.

R r r 2

(Secondly,)

Sect. 311

Sect. 32.

(Secondly,) This Duty hath a *real Efficiency* unto the same End. It doth its self (when rightly performed, and duly attended unto) mightily prevail unto the weakning and Destruction of sin. For in and by *fervent Prayer*, especially when it is designed unto this End, the Habit, Frame, and Inclinations of the Soul unto universal Holiness, with a Detestation of all sin, are increased, cherished, and strengthened. The soul of a Believer is never raised unto a higher Intension of spirit in the pursuit of, love unto, and delight in Holiness, nor is more conformed unto it, or cast into the mould of it, than it is in Prayer. And frequency in this Duty, is a principal means to fix and consolidate the mind in the form and likeness of it; And hence doe Believers oft-times continue in, and come off from Prayer above all *Impressions* from sin, as to *Inclinations* and *Complyances*. Would such a frame alwayes continue, how happy were we. But abiding in the Duty is the best way of reaching out after it. I say therefore that this Duty is really *Efficient* of the *Mortification* of sin, because therein all the Graces whereby it is opposed and weakened, are excited, exercised, and improved unto that End; as also the Detestation and Abhorency of sin is increased in us. And where this is not so, there are some secret flaws in the Prayers of men, which it will be their wisdom to find out and heal.

Sect. 33.

Fourthly, The Holy Spirit carrieth on this work by applying in an especial manner the *death of Christ* unto us for that end. And this is another, thing which, because the World understandeth not, it doth despise. But yet in whomsoever the Death of Christ is not the death of sin, he shall dye in his sins. To evidence this Truth, we may observe (1) in general, That the *Death of Christ* hath an especial *influence* into the *Mortification* of sin, without which it will not be *Mortified*. This is plainly enough testified unto in the *Scripture*. By his *Cross*, that is, his *Death* on the *Cross*, *We are crucified unto the world*; Gal. 6. 14. *Our old man is crucified with him, that the Body of sin might be destroyed*, Rom. 6. 6. That is, sin is *Mortified* in us by vertue of the *Death* of Christ, (2) In the *Death of Christ*, with respect unto sin there may be considered, 1. His *Oblation* of himself, and 2. The *Application* thereof unto us. By the *first* it is, that our sins are expiated as unto their Guilt; but from the *latter* it is, that they are actually subdued as to their Power. For it is by an Interest in, and a participation of the Benefits of his Death, which we call the Application of it unto us. Hereon are we said to be *buried* with him, and to *rise with him*, whereof our Baptism is a pledge; Rom. 6. 3, 4. not in an outward Representation, as some imagine of being *dipped under the water*, and taken up again (which were to make one *sign* the *sign* of another,) but in a powerful Participation of the vertue of the Death and Life of Christ, in a death unto sin, and newness of life in Holy Obedience, which Baptisme is a pledge of, as it is a token of our initiation and implanting into him. So are we said to be *baptized into his death*; or into the likeness of it, that is, into its power, ver. 3. (3) The *old man* is said to be *crucified with Christ*, or sin to be *Mortified* by the Death of Christ, as was in part before observed on two Accounts.

(1) Of *Conformity*. Christ is the Head, the Beginning or *Idea*, of the

the New Creation; The first born of every Creature. Whatever God designeth unto us therein, he first exemplified in Jesus Christ; And we are predestinated to be conformed to the Image of his Son, *Rom. 8. 29.* Hereof the Apostle gives us an express instance in the Resurrection. Christ the first Fruits, afterwards they that are Christs at his coming, *1 Cor. 15. 23.* It is so in all things; all that is wrought in us, it is in resemblance and conformity unto Christ. Particularly, we are by Grace *planted into the likeness of his Death, Rom. 6. 5. being made conformable unto his Death, Phil. 3. 10.* and so to be *dead with Christ, Col. 2. 20.* Now this conformity is not in our *Natural* Death, nor in our being *put to death* as he was; for it is that which we are made partakers of in this Life, and that in a way of Grace and Mercy. But Christ died for sin, for our sin, which was the meritorious procuring cause thereof. And he lived again by the Power of God. A likeness and conformity hereunto God will work in all Believers. There is by nature a Life of sin in them, as hath been declared. This Life must be destroyed, sin must dye in us, and we thereby become dead unto sin. And as he *rose again*; So are we to be *quickened* in and unto newness of life. In this death of sin consists that *Mortification* which we treat about; and without which we cannot be *conformed unto Christ in his Death*, which we are designed unto. And the same Spirit which wrought these things in Christ, will in the pursuit of his Design, work that which answers unto them in all his Members.

(2) In respect of *Efficacy*; vertue goeth forth from the Death of *Christ*, for the subduing and Destruction of sin. It was not designed to be a dead, unactive, *passive Example*, but it is accompanied with a Power conforming and changing us into its own likeness. It is the Ordinance of God unto that End, which he therefore gives efficacy unto. It is by a fellowship or participation in his sufferings, that we are made *conformable to his Death, Phil. 3. 10.* this *κοινωνία τῆς παθῆματος*, is an interest in the Benefit of his suffering; we also are made partakers thereof. This makes us conformable to his Death, in the Death of sin in us. The Death of Christ is designed to be the Death of sin; let them who are dead in sin deride it whilst they please. If *Christ* had not dyed, sin had never dyed in any sinner unto Eternity. Wherefore that there is a vertue and Efficacy in the Death of *Christ* unto this purpose, cannot be denied without a Renunciation of all the Benefits thereof. On the one hand the Scripture tells us, that he is *our Life*, our *spiritual Life*, the Spring, Fountain, and Cause of it; we have nothing therefore that belongs thereunto but what is derived from him. They cast themselves out of the verge of Christianity, who suppose that the Lord Christ is no otherwise our Life, or the Authour of Life unto us, but as he hath revealed and taught the way of Life unto us; He is our Life as he is our Head. And it would be a sorry Head that should onely *teach the feet to go*, and not communicate strength to the whole Body so to doe. And that we have real influences of Life from Christ, I have sufficiently proved before. Unto our spiritual Life doth ensue the Death of sin; for this on the other hand is peculiarly assigned unto his Death in the Testimonies before produced. This therefore is by vertue derived from *Christ*, That is, in an especial manner from his Death, as the Scripture testifies. All

Sect. 34.

Sect. 35.

All the Enquiry is, *How the Death of Christ is applyed unto us*, or which is the same, *How we apply our selves to the Death of Christ for this purpose*. And I answer, We do it two wayes.

(1) By *Faith*. The way to derive Vertue from Christ, is by *touching of him*. So the *diseased Woman* in the Gospel touched but the Hemme of his Garment, and Vertue *went forth from him to stay her Bloody Issue*, *Math. 9. 22*. It was not her Touching him outwardly, but her *Faith* which she acted then and thereby, that derived Vertue from him. For so our Saviour tells her in his Answer, *Daughter be of good Comfort, thy Faith hath made thee whole*. But unto what End was this *touching of his Garment*? It was only a Pledge and Token of the particular Application of the *healing Power of Christ* unto her Soul, or her *Faith* in him in particular for that End. For at the same time many thronged upon him in a presse, so as his Disciples marvelled he should ask *who touched his Cloaths*; *Mark 5. 30, 31*. yet was not any of them advantaged but the poor sick Woman. A great Emblem it is of *common Profession* on the one hand, and *especial Faith* on the other. Multitudes presse and throng about Christ in a Profession of Faith and Obedience, and in the real performance of many Duties; but no Vertue goeth forth from Christ to *heal* them. But when any one, though poor, though seemingly at a distance, gets but the least touch of him by *especial Faith*, this Soul is healed. This is our Way with respect unto the Mortification of Sin. The *Scripture* assures us, that there is Vertue and Efficacy in the Death of Christ unto that End. The Means whereby we derive this Vertue from him, is by *Touching of him*, that is, by *Acting Faith* on him in his Death, for the Death of Sin.

Sect. 36.

But how will this effect it, how will *sin* be mortified hereby? I say, *how*, by what Power and Vertue were they healed in the Wilderness, who looked unto the *Brazen Serpent*? was it not because that was an Ordinance of God, which by his Almighty Power he made effectual unto that purpose? The *Death of Christ* being so as to the Crucifying of sin, when it is looked on, or applyed unto by *Faith*, shall not Divine Vertue and Power go forth unto that End? The *Scripture*, and Experience of all Believers, give Testimony unto the Truth and Reality thereof. Besides, *Faith* it self as acted on the Death of Christ, hath a *peculiar Efficacy* unto the subduing of sin; for, beholding him thereby as in a *Glass*, *we are changed into the same Image*; *1 Cor. 3. 18*. And that which we peculiarly behold, we are peculiarly transformed into the Likeness of. And moreover, it is the only Means whereby we *Actually* derive from Christ the Benefits of our *Union* with him; from thence we have all Grace, or, there is no such thing in the World. And the Communication of it unto us, is in and by the Actual Exercise of *Faith* principally. So it being acted with respect unto his Death, we have Grace for the Killing of sin, and thereby become dead with him, Crucified with him, Buryed with him, as in the Testimonies before produced. This is that which we call, the *Application of the Death of Christ unto us*, or our Application of our selves to the Death of Christ for the Mortification of sin. And they by

by whom this Means thereof is despised or neglected, who are ignorant of it, or do Blaspheme it, must live under the Power of sin, unto what Inventions soever they turn themselves for Deliverance. According as we abide and abound herein, will be our success. Those who are careless and remiss, in the Exercise of Faith, by *Prayer* and *Meditation*, in the Way described, will find that *sin* will keep its ground, and maintain so much Power in them as shall issue in their perpetual Trouble. And men who are much conversant with the Death of Christ, not in Notions and Lifeless Speculations, not in Natural or Carnal Affections, like those which are raised in weak Persons by *Images* and *Crucifixes*, but by holy Actings of *Faith*, with respect unto what is declared in the Scripture as to its Power and Efficacy, will be implanted into the Likeness of it, and experience the Death of sin in them continually.

(2) We do it by *Love*. Christ as Crucified is the great Object of our *Love*, or should so be. For he is therein unto sinners *altogether Lovely*. Hence one of the Ancients cried out, *ὁ Ἰησοῦς ἰμὸν σαβοῦσαι*; *My Love is crucified, and why doe I stay behind*. In the Death of Christ, do his Love, his Grace, his Condescension, most gloriously shine forth. We may therefore consider three things with respect unto this *Love*. (1) The *Object* of it. (2) The *Means* of the Representation of that Object unto our Minds and Affections. (3) The *Effects* of it as to the Case in hand. The *Object* of it is Christ himself, in his unsearchable Grace, his unspeakable Love, his infinite Condescension, his patient Suffering, and victorious Power, in his Death, or dying for us. It is not his Death absolutely, but *himself*, as all these Graces conspicuously shine forth in his Death, which is intended. And there are various Ways whereby this may be represented unto our Minds. Sect. 37.

(1) Men may doe it unto *themselves* by their own *Imaginations*. They may frame and fancy *dolorous things* unto themselves about it, which is the way of Persons under deep and devout Superstitions. But no Love in *sincerity* will ever be ingenerated towards Jesus Christ hereby. (2) It may be done by *others*, in *pathetical* and *tragical Declarations* of the Outward part of Christs sufferings. Herein some have a great faculty to work upon the Natural Affections of their *Auditors*; And great Passions accompanied with Tears and Vows may be so excited. But for the most part, there is no more in this Work, than what the same persons do find in themselves it may be, in the *reading* or *hearing* of a *feigned Story*. For there is a *sympathy* in Natural Affections with the things that are their *proper Objects*, though represented by false Imaginations. (3) It is done in the *Papacy*, and among some others, by *Images*, in *Crucifixes* and *dolorous Pictures*, whereunto they pay great Devotion, with an appearance of ardent Affections. But none of these are such a due *Representation* of this Object, as to ingenerate *sincere Love* towards Christ crucified in any Soul. Wherefore, (4) This is done *effectually* only by the *Gospel*, and in the Dispensation of it according to the Mind of God. For therein is *Jesus Christ evidently crucified before our Eyes*, Gal. 3. 1. And this it doth by proposing unto our Faith, the Grace, the Love, the Patience, the Condescension, the Obedience, the End and Design of Christ therein. So is Christ eyed by Faith Sect. 38.

Faith as the proper Object of sincere Love. And being so stated, the Effects of it, as of all true Love, are, 1. *Adherence*; 2. *Assimilation*.

(1) *Adherence*; Love in the Scripture is frequently expressed by this Effect; The Soul of one did *cleave* or was *knit* unto another; as that of *Jonathan* to *David*, 1 *Sam.* 18. 1. So it produceth a firm Adherence unto Christ crucified, that makes a Soul to be in some sense alwayes present with Christ on the Cross. And hence (2) ensues *Assimilation* or *Conformity*. None treat of the Nature or Effects of Love, but they assign this as one of them, that it begets a Likeness between the *Mind* loving, and the *Object* beloved. And so I am sure it is in this matter. A Mind filled with the Love of Christ as *crucified*, and represented in the Manner and Way before described, will be changed into its *Image* and Likeness, by the effectual Mortification of sin, through a Derivation of Power and Grace from thence for that purpose.

Sect. 39.

Fifthly; The Holy Ghost carryeth on this Work by constant Discoveries unto, and pressing on Believers, on the one hand, the *true Nature* and *certain End* of Sin; and on the other, the *Beauty*, *Excellency*, *Usefulness* and *Necessity* of Holiness, with the Concerns of God, Christ, the Gospel, and their own Souls therein. A Rational Consideration of these things, is all the Ground and Reason of *Mortification* in the Judgements of some men. But we have proved, that there are other Causes of it also. And now I adde, that if we have no Consideration of these things, but what our own Reason is of it self able to suggest unto us, it will never be prevalent unto any *sincere* or *permanent* Attempt in the *Mortification* of any *sin* whatever. Let men make the best of their Reason they can, in the *searching* and Consideration of the perverse Nature and dreadful Consequents of *sin*, of the perfect Peace and future Blessedness which attendeth the Practice of *Holiness*, they will find an Obstinacy and Stubbornness in their Hearts, not conquerable by any such Reasonings or Considerations: That *Conviction* of *Sin* and *Righteousness* which is usefull and prevalent unto that End and Purpose, is wrought in us by the Holy Ghost, *Joh.* 16. 18. Although he makes use of our Minds, Understandings, Reasons, Consciences, and the best of our Consideration in this matter, yet if he give not a *peculiar Efficacy* and *Power* unto all, the Work will not be *effectual*. When he is pleased to make use of Reasons and Motives taken from the *nature* and *end* of Sin and Holiness, unto the *Mortification* of *sin*, they shall hold good, and bind the Soul unto this Duty, against all Objections and Temptations that would divert it whatever.

Sect. 40.

And thus I have briefly, and I confess weakly and obscurely, delineated the Work of the Holy Ghost in the *Sanctification* of them that do Believe. Many things might have been more enlarged, and particularly enquired into; what have been discoursed, I judge sufficient to my present purpose. And I doubt not, but that what hath been argued from plain *Scripture* and *Experience*, is sufficient, as to direct us in the Practice of true *Evangelical Holiness*, so with all sober Persons to cast out of all Consideration that fulsome Product of *Pride* and *Ignorance*, that all *Gospel Holiness* consists in the Practice of *Moral Vertues*.

Book V.

CHAP. I.

Necessity of Holiness from the Consideration of the Nature of God.

(1) *The Necessity of Evangelical Holiness owned by all Christians : Doctrines falsely charged with an Inconsistency with it. (2) Though owned by all, yet practised by few, and disadvantageously pleaded for by many; the true Nature of it briefly expressed. (3) First Argument for the Necessity of Holiness from the Nature of God; frequently proposed unto our Consideration for that End. (4) This Argument Cogent and unavoidable; pressed with its Limitation. (5) Not the Nature of God absolutely, but as he is in Christ, the Foundation of this Necessity, and a most Effectual Motive unto the same End; the Nature and Efficacy of that Motive declared. (10) The Argument enforced, from the Consideration of our Conformity unto God by Holiness; with that Communion and Likeness with him which depend thereon; (13) With our future everlasting Enjoyment of him. (14) True force of that Consideration vindicated; Merit rejected, (15) And the Substitution of Morality in the Room of Gospel Holiness. (16) False Accusations of the Doctrine of Grace, discarded; and (17) The Neglect of the true Means of promoting Gospel Obedience, charged. (18, 19.) The principal Argument farther enforced, from the Preeminence of our Natures and Persons by this Conformity to God; (21) And our Accesses unto God thereby, in order unto our eternal Enjoyment of him : (22) As it also alone renders us usefull in this World unto others. (23) Two sorts of Graces, by whose Exercise we grow into Conformity with God; (24) Those that are Assimulating, as Faith, and (26) Love; And (28) those which are Declarative of that Assimilation; as Goodness or Benignity, and (31) Truth. (32) An Objection against the Necessity of Holiness from the Freedom and Efficacy of Grace, answered.*

THat wherewith I shall close this Discourse is, the Consideration of the *Necessity* of that *Holiness* which we have thus far described, unto all Persons who make Profession of the Gospel, with the *Reasons* of that Necessity, and principal *Motives* unto it. And for our Encouragement in this part of our Work, this *Necessity* is such,

SSS

as

Sect. I.

as that it is by all sorts of Christians allowed, pleaded for, and the thing it self pretended unto. For, whereas the Gospel is *eminently*, ἀληθία, or ἀθανασία ἡ κατ' ἐνοίκιον, 1 Tim. 6. 3. Tit. 1. 1. *The Truth or Doctrine which is according unto Godliness*, or that which is designed and every way suited unto the attaining, furtherance and practice of it, no men can with Modesty refuse the Tryal of their Doctrines by their Tendency thereunto. But what is of that Nature, or what is an *Hinderance* thereunto, that many are not yet agreed about. The *Socinians* contend, that the Doctrine of the *satisfaction of Christ* doth overthrow the *Necessity* of an Holy Life. The *Papists* say the same, concerning the Imputation of the *Righteousness of Christ* unto our Justification. The same Charge is laid by others against the Doctrine of the *gratuitous Election of God*, the almighty *Efficacy* of his Grace in the Conversion of *Sinners*, and of his *Faithfulness* in the Preservation of true *Believers* in their state of Grace unto the End: On the other hand, the *Scripture* doth so place the Foundations of all true and real *Holiness* in these things, that without the Faith of them, and an Influence on our Minds from them, it will not allow of any thing to be so called.

Sec. 2.

To examine the pretences of others concerning the *suitableness* of their Doctrines unto the Promotion of Holiness, is not my present Business. It is well that it hath alwayes maintained a Conviction of its *Necessity*, and carryed it through all different Perswasions in Christianity. In this one thing alone almost, do all Christians agree; and yet notwithstanding, the want of it, is, if not the *only* yet the *principal* thing, whereby the most who are so called, are ruined. So ordinary a thing is it, for men to agree for the *Necessity* of Holiness, and live in the Neglect of it, when they have so done. Conviction comes in at an easie rate, as it were whether men will or no, but Practice will stand them in pains, cost and trouble. Wherefore, unto the due handling of this matter, some few things must be premised. As,

(First,) It is *disadvantageous* unto the Interest of the Gospel, to have men plead for Holiness with weak incogent Arguments, and such as are not taken out of the Stores of its Truth, and so really affect not the Consciences of men. And it is *pernicious* to all the Concerns of Holiness it self, to have that defended and pleaded for, under its Name and Title, which indeed is not so, but an *Usurper* of its Crown and Dignity; which we shall afterwards enquire into.

(Secondly,) It is *uncomely* and unworthy, to hear men *contending* for Holiness, as the *whole* of our Religion, and in the mean time on all Occasions, expresse in themselves an *Habit* and Frame of Mind utterly inconsistent with what the *Scripture* so calls, and so esteems. There is certainly no readier way on sundry Accounts to unteach men all the Principles of Religion, all Respect unto God and common Honesty. And if some men did this only, as being at variance with themselves, without Reflections on others, it might the more easily be borne. But to see or hear men proclaiming themselves in their whole Course, to be Proud, Revengefull, Worldly, Sensual, Neglecters of Holy Duties, Scoffers at Religion, and the Power of it, pleading for an *Holy Life*, against the Doctrine and Practice of those who walked unblameably before

before the Lord in all his Ways, yea upon whose *Breasts and Foreheads* was written *Holiness unto the Lord*, such as were most of the *first Reformed Divines*, whom they reflect upon, is a thing which all sober men do justly *nauseate*, and which God *abhorres*. But the further Consideration hereof I shall at present omit, and pursue what I have proposed.

(Thirdly,) In my Discourse concerning the *Necessity* of Holiness, with the Grounds and Reasons of it, and Arguments for it, I shall confine my self unto these two Things.

(1) That the Reasons, Arguments and Motives which I shall insist on, being such as are taken out of the Gospel, or the Scripture, are not only consistent and compliant with the great Doctrines of the *Grace of God* in our free Election, Conversion, Justification, and Salvation by Jesus Christ, but such as *naturally flow* from them, discover what is their true Nature and Tendency in this matter.

(2) That I shall at present suppose all along, what *that Holiness* is which I do intend. Now this is not that *outward* Shew and pretence of it, which some plead for; not an Attendance unto, or the Observation of *some* or all *Moral Vertues* only; not a Readiness for some *Acts of Piety and Charity*, from a superstitious proud Conceit of their being *Meritorious* of Grace or Glory. But I intend that *Holiness* which I have before described, which may be reduced to these three heads: (1) An *internal Change* or Renovation of our Souls, our Minds, Wills and Affections by Grace. (2) An *universal Compliance* with the Will of God in all Duties of Obedience, and Abstinence from Sin, out of a Principle of *Faith and Love*. (3) A *Designation* of all the *Actions of Life* unto the Glory of God by Jesus Christ, according to the Gospel: This is *Holiness*; so to be, and so to doe, is to be Holy. And I shall divide my Arguments into Two sorts: 1. Such as prove the *Necessity* of Holiness as to the *Essence* of it, Holiness in our Hearts and Natures; 2. Such as prove the *Necessity* of Holiness as to the *Degrees* of it, Holiness in our Lives and Conversations.

First then; *The Nature of God* as revealed unto us, with our Dependance on him, the Obligation that is upon us to Live unto him, with the Nature of our Blessedness in the Enjoyment of him, do require indispensibly that we should be *Holy*. The *Holiness of Gods Nature* is every where in the Scripture made the Fundamental Principle and Reason of the *Necessity* of Holiness in us. Himself makes it the ground of his Command for it, *Levit. 11. 44. For I am the Lord your God, ye shall therefore sanctifie your selves, and ye shall be Holy, for I am Holy.* So also *Chap. 19. 2. Chap. 20. 7.* And to shew the everlasting Equity and Force of this Reason, it is transferred over to the Gospel, *1 Pet. 1. 15, 16. As he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of Conversation, because it is written, Be ye holy, for I am holy.* God lets them know, that his Nature is such, as that unless they are sanctified and Holy, there can be no such Entercourse between him and them as ought to be between a *God* and his *People*. So he declares the Sence of this Enforcement of that Precept to be, *Levit. 11. 45. I brought you out of the Land of Egypt to be your God, ye shall therefore be Holy, for I am Holy.* Without this, the Relation designed cannot be main-

Sect. 3.

tained, that I should be *your* God and you should be *my* People. To this Purpose belongs that Description given us of his Nature, *Psal. 5. 4, 5, 6. For thou art not a God that hath pleasure in Wickedness, neither shall Evil dwell with thee. The Foolish shall not stand in thy sight, thou hatest all Workers of Iniquity. Thou shalt destroy them that speak Lying, the Lord will abhorre the Bloody and Deceitfull man.* Answerable unto that of the Prophet; *Thou art of purer Eyes than to behold Evil, and canst not look on Iniquity, Hab. 1. 13.* He is such a God, that is, such is his Nature, so pure, so holy, that previous to the Consideration of any free Acts of his Will, it is evident, that he can take no pleasure in *Fools, Lyars, or Workers of Iniquity.* Therefore *Joshua* tells the People, that if they continued in their *sins*, they could not serve the Lord, for he is an *Holy God, Chap. 24. 19.* All the Service of *unholy* Persons towards this God, is utterly lost and cast away, because it is inconsistent with his own Holiness to accept of it. And our Apostle argues in the same Manner, *Heb. 12. 28, 29. Let us have Grace whereby we may serve God acceptably, with Reverence and Godly Fear. For our God is a consuming Fire.* He layes his Argument for the Necessity of Grace and Holiness in the *Worship* of God, from the Consideration of the *Holiness* of his Nature, which as a *consuming fire* will devour that which is unsuited unto it, inconsistent with it. There would be no end of pursuing this Reason of the Necessity of Holiness, in all places where it is proposed expressly in the *Scripture.* I shall only adde in General, that God of Old strictly required, that no *unholy, no unclean, no defiling* thing should be in the Camp of his People, because of his *presence* among them who is himself *holy*, and without an exact Observance hereof he declares, that he will depart and leave them.

Sect. 4.

If we had no other Argument to prove the Necessity of Holiness, and that it is indispensibly required of us, but only this, that the God whom we serve and worship is absolutely *Holy*, that his Being and Nature is such, as that he can have no delightful Entercourse with any that are *unholy*, it were abundantly sufficient unto our purpose. He who resolveth not to be *Holy*, had best seek another God to worship and serve, with our God he will never find Acceptance. And therefore the Heathen, who gave up themselves unto all filthiness with delight and greediness, to stifle the Notions of a *Divine Being*, that they might not controll them in their Sins and Pleasures, fancied such gods to themselves as were *wicked and unclean*, that they might freely conform unto them, and serve them with satisfaction. And God himself lets us know, that men of wicked and *flagitious* lives, have some secret thoughts that he is not *Holy*, but like themselves, *Psal. 50. 21.* For if they had not, they could not avoid it, but they must either think of leaving him or their sins.

Sect. 5.

But we must yet further observe some things to evidence the Force of this Argument. As (*First,*) That unto us, in our present State and Condition, the *Holiness* of God as absolutely considered, merely as an Infinite Eternal Property of the Divine Nature, is not the immediate Ground of, and Motive unto Holiness, but it is the *Holiness* of God as manifested and revealed unto us in *Christ Jesus.* Under the first Consideration,

sideration, we who are sinners can make no *Conclusion* from it, but that of *Joshua*, *He is an Holy God, a Jealous God, he will not forgive their Iniquities, nor spare.* This we may learn indeed from thence, that nothing which is *unholy* can possibly subsist before him, or find Acceptance with him. But a *Motive* and *Encouragement* unto any *Holiness* that is not absolutely *Perfect*, no Creature can take from the Consideration thereof. And we doe not, we ought not to urge any such Argument for the *Necessity* of *Holiness*, as cannot be answered and complied with by the Grace of God as to the Substance, though we come short in the Degrees of it. My meaning is, that no Argument can be rationally and usefully pleaded for the *Necessity* of *Holiness*, which doth not contain in its self an Encouraging Motive unto it. To declare it necessary for us, and at the same time impossible unto us, is not to promote its Interest. They understand neither the *Holiness* of God nor man, who suppose that they are absolutely and immediately suited unto one another, or that under that *Notion* of it, we can take any *encouraging Motive* unto our Duty herein. Nay no Creature is capable of such a *Perfection* in *Holiness*, as absolutely to Answer the *Infinite Purity* of the *Divine Nature*, without a *Covenant-Condescension*, *Job 4. 18. chap. 15. 15.* But it is the *Holiness* of God as he is in *Christ*, and as in *Christ* represented unto us, that gives us both the *Necessity* and *Motive* unto ours.

Wherefore, God in dealing with his people of Old in this matter, did not propose unto them to this End the Absolute Perfection of his own Nature, but his being *Holy*, as he dwelt among them, and was their God, that is in Covenant, both which had respect unto Jesus Christ. In him all the glorious Perfections of God are so represented unto us, as we may not thence onely learn our Duty, but also be encouraged unto it. For, Sect. 6.

(1) All the *Properties* of God as so represented unto us, are more *Conspicuous*, *Resplendent*, *Alluring* and *Attractive*, than as *Absolutely* considered. I know not what Light into, and Knowledge of the *Divine Perfections*, Adam had in his state of *Innocency*, when God had declared himself onely in the Works of Nature; Sufficient no doubt it was to guide him in his *Love* and *Obedience*, or that Life which he was to live unto him. But I know that now, all our knowledge of God and his Properties, unless it be that which we have in and by Jesus Christ, is insufficient to lead or conduct us in that Life of *Faith* and *Obedience*, which is necessary unto us. He therefore gives us the *Light of the knowledge of his Glory in the face of Jesus Christ*, 2 Cor. 4. 6. That is, clear *Manifestations* of his *Glorious Excellencies*. The light of the knowledge hereof is a clear, useful, saving Perception and understanding of them. And this is not onely *Directive* unto *Holiness*, but also *Effective* of it. For thus beholding the Glory of the Lord, we are *changed into the same Image*, from *Glory to Glory*, Chap. 3. 18.

(2) In particular. The *Fiery Holiness* of God, is represented unto us in Christ, so, as that although it lose nothing of declaring the indispensable *Necessity* of *Holiness* in all that draw nigh to him, yet under such a *Contemperation* with *Goodnesse*, *Grace*, *Love*, *Mercy*, *Condescension*, as may invite and encourage us to endeavour after a *Conformity* thereunto.

(3) Together

Sect. 7. (3.) Together with a Representation of the *Holiness* of God in *Christ*, there is a *Revelation* made of *what Holiness* in us he doth require, and will accept. As was observed before, the Consideration of it absolutely neither requires nor admits of any but that which is *absolutely perfect*, and where there is any one failing, the whole of what we do is condemned, *Jam. 2. 10*. This therefore can only perplex and torture the Soul of a sinner, by pressing on him at the same time the Necessity and Impossibility of Holiness, *Isa. 33. 14*. But now as God is in Christ, through his Interposition and Meditation, he accepts of such an *Holiness* in us, as we are capable of, and which no man hath any discouragement from endeavouring to attain.

Sect. 8. (4.) There is in and by *Christ* declared and administered a *spiritual Power of Grace*, which shall work this *Holiness* in us, or that Conformity unto the Holiness of God which he doth require. From this Fountain therefore we draw immediately as the Reasons of the Necessity, so prevalent Motives unto Holiness in our Souls. Hence some things may be inferred. As (First,) That the Mediation of *Christ*, and in particular his Satisfaction, is so farre from being an Hinderance of, or a *Discouragement* unto *Holiness*, as some blasphemously pretend, that the great fundamental Reason of it in us, namely, the *Holiness* of God himself, can have no influence upon us, without the supposition of it and Faith in it; unless Faith be built hereon, no sinner upon a view of Gods Holiness as absolutely considered, can have any other thoughts but those of *Cain*, *My sin is great it cannot be pardoned*. God is an Holy God, I cannot serve him, and therefore will depart out of his presence. But the *Holiness* of God as manifested in *Jesus Christ*, including a supposition of *Satisfaction* made unto what is required by its absolute Purity, and a condescension thereon to accept in him, that Holiness of Truth and Sincerity which we are capable of, doth equally maintain the indispensable necessity of it, and encourage us unto it. And we may see what contrary Conclusions will be made on these different Considerations of it: Those who view it only in the first way, can come to no other issue in their thoughts but that which they express in the Prophet, *Isa. 33. 14. Who among us shall dwell with the devouring fire, who among us shall inhabit with everlasting burnings*. Gods fiery Holiness serves towards them unto no other End but to fill them with terror and despair. But other Inferences are natural from the Consideration of the same Holiness, in the latter way. Our God, saith the Apostle, *is a consuming fire*; what then, what follows as our Duty thereon? *Let us have Grace whereby we may serve him acceptably with Reverence and Godly fear*, *Heb. 12. 28, 29*. There is no such forcible Reason for, no such powerful Motive unto our Adherence unto him in Holy Obedience. Such different Conclusions will men make from these different Considerations of the Holiness of God, when once they come to be serious and in good earnest about them.

Sect. 9. (Secondly,) It follows from hence also, that our *Holiness* under the *New Covenant*, although it have the same general Nature and one principal End with that which was required in the *Covenant of Works*, yet as

as it hath an *especial Spring and Fountain* which that had not, and relates unto sundry *Causes* which the other had no concernment in, so it is not of the same *especial use* therewith. The immediate End and Use of that *Holiness* in us, was to answer the *Holiness* of God *absolutely* as expressed in the Law, whereon we should have been Justified. This is now done for us by *Christ* alone, and the *Holiness* which God requireth of us, respects onely those Ends which God hath proposed unto us, in Compliance with his own *Holiness*, as he will Glorifie it in Jesus Christ; which must be afterwards declared.

(Secondly,) We may consider in what particular *Instances* the Force of this Argument is conveyed unto us, or what are the *especial Reasons* why we ought to be *Holy because God is so*. And they are three.

(1) Because herein consists all that *Conformity* unto God, whereof Sect. I. in this World we are capable, which is our *Priviledge, Preeminence, Glory and Honour*. We were Originally Created in the *Image and Likeness* of God. Herein consisted the *Priviledge, Preeminence, Order, and Blessedness* of our first state; and that for the Substance of it, it was no other but our *Holiness*, is by all confessed. Wherefore, without this *Conformity* unto God, without the *Impress* of his *Image and Likeness* upon us, we do not, we cannot stand in that *Relation* unto God which was designed us in our Creation. This we lost by the Entrance of sin. And if there be not a way for us to acquire it again, if we do not so, we shall alwaies come short of the *Glory* of God, and of the End of our Creation. Now this is done in and by *Holiness* alone, for therein consists the *Renovation* of the *Image* of God in us, as our Apostle expressly declares, *Ephes. 4. 22, 23, 24.* with *Col. 3. 10.* It is therefore to no purpose for any man to expect an *Interest* in God, or any thing that will prove Eternally to his Advantage, who doth not endeavour after *Conformity* unto him. For such a man despiseth all the *Glory* that God designed unto himself in our Creation, and all that was Eminent and peculiarly bestowed upon our selves.

He therefore whose Design is not to be *like unto God*, according to Sect. II. his Measure, and the Capacity of a Creature, alwaies misseth both of his End, his Rule, and his Way. Our Saviour would have his Disciples to do all things so, as that they may be the *Children of their Heavenly Father*, *Matth. 5. 45.* that is, *like him*, representing him, as Children do their Father. And the truth is, if this Necessity of *Conformity unto God* be once out of our View and Consideration, we are easily turned aside by the meanest Temptation we meet withall. In brief, without that *Likeness* and *Conformity* unto God, which consists in *Holiness*, as we do under his Eye bear the Image of his great Adversary the Devil, so we can have no especial Interest in him, nor hath he any in us.

(2) The Force of the Argument ariseth from the Respect it bears unto our Actual *Entercourse* and *Communion with God*: This we are called unto, and this in all our Duties of Obedience we must endeavour to attain. If there be not in them a *real Entercourse* between God and our Souls, they are all but *uncertain beatings of the Ayre*. When we are Accepted in them, when God is Glorified by them, then have we in them

them this *Entercourse* and *Communion* with God. Now whereas God is *Holy*, if we are not in our Measure *holy* according to his Mind, this cannot be. For God neither *accepts* of any Duties from unholy Persons, nor is he *glorified* by them; and therefore as unto these Ends doth he expressly reject and condemn them. It is a good Duty to *Preach the Word*; But unto the *Wicked* God saith, *What hast thou to doe to declare my Statutes, or that thou shouldest take my Covenant in thy mouth, seeing thou hatest Instruction, and castest my Words behind thee, Psal. 50. 16, 17.* Seeing thou art *unholy*. To pray is a good Duty; But unto them that are not *washed* and made *clean*, and *put not away the evil of their Doings* from before his Eyes, saith God, *When ye spread forth your hands I will hide mine Eyes from you, and when ye make many Prayers, I will not hear, Isa. 1. 15, 16.* And the like may be said of all other Duties whatever.

Sect. 12.

It is certain therefore, that whereas God is *Holy*, if we are not so, all the Duties which we design or intend to perform towards him, are everlastingly lost, as unto their proper Ends. For there is no *Entercourse* nor *Communion* between *Light* and *Darkness*: God is *Light*, and in him is no *Darkness* at all; and if we say, we have Fellowship with him, and walk in *Darkness*, as all unholy Persons doe, we lye, and doe not the truth; but if we walk in the *Light* as he is in the *Light*, we have Fellowship one with another; and truly our Fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Christ Jesus, 1 Joh. 1. 6, 7. v. 3. Now what man that shall consider this, unless he be infatuated, would for the Love of any one *sin*, or out of Conformity to the World, or any other thing, whereby the *Essence* and *Truth* of Holiness is impeached, utterly lose and forfeit all the Benefit and Fruit of all those Duties wherein perhaps he hath laboured, and which he hath, it may be, been at no small charge withall. But yet this is the Condition of all men, who come short in any thing that is *essentially necessary* unto universal Holiness. All they doe, all they suffer, all the Pains they take in and about Religious Duties, all their compliance with Convictions, and what they do therein *within* doors and *without*, is all lost, as unto the great Ends of the *Glory* of God, and their own *Eternal Blessedness*, as sure as God is *Holy*.

Sect. 13.

(3) It ariseth from a Respect unto our future *everlasting Enjoyment* of him. This is our utmost End, which if we come short of, (*Life* it self is the greatest Loss) better ten thousand times we had never been. For without it, a Continuance in Everlasting Miseries is inseparable from our State and Condition. Now this is never attainable by any *unholy* Person. Follow Holiness, saith our Apostle, *without which no man shall see God.* For it is the *pure in Heart* only that shall see God, Matth. 5. 8. It is hereby that we are *made meet for the Inheritance of the Saints in Light*, Col. 1. 12. Neither can we attain it before we are thusmade meet for it. No *unclean* thing, nothing that defileth or is defiled, shall ever be brought into the glorious Presence of this *Holy* God. There is no Imagination wherewith Mankind is besotted, more foolish, none so pernicious as this, That Persons not *purified*, not *sanctified*, not made *holy* in this Life, should afterwards be taken into that

that *state of Blessedness* which consists in the *Enjoyment* of God. There can be no Thought more Reproachfull to his Glory, nor more inconsistent with the Nature of the things themselves. For neither can such Persons *enjoy* him, nor would God himself be a *Reward* unto them. They can have nothing whereby they should adhere unto him as their *chiefest Good*, nor can see any thing in him that should give them Rest or Satisfaction; nor can there be any *Medium* whereby God should Communicate himself unto them, supposing them to continue thus *unholy*, as all must do who depart out of this Life in that Condition. Holiness indeed is *perfected* in Heaven, but the *Beginning* of it is inviolably and unalterably confined to this World; and where this fails, no hand shall be put unto that Work unto Eternity. All *unholy* persons therefore who feed and refresh themselves with Hopes of Heaven and Eternity, do it meerly on *false* Notions of God and Blessedness, whereby they deceive themselves. Heaven is a place where as well they *would* not be, as they *cannot* be; in it self it is neither desired by them, nor fit for them. He that hath this Hope indeed, that he shall see God, *purifieth himself even as he is pure*, 1 *Joh.* 3. 2. 3. There is therefore a manifold *Necessity* of Holiness impressed on us, from the Consideration of the Nature of that God whom we serve and hope to enjoy, which is *Holy*.

I cannot pass over this Consideration, without making some especial *Improvement* of it. We have seen how all our *Concernment* and *Interest* in God both here and hereafter, do depend on our being *Holy*. They invented a very *effectual* Means for the Prejudicing, yea indeed a fatal Engine for the Ruine of true *Holiness* in the World, who built it on no other *bottom*, nor pressed it on any other *motive*, but that the Acts and Fruits of it were *Meritorious* in the sight of God. For whether this be Believed and complied withall or not, true *Holiness* is ruined, if no other more effectual Reason be substituted in its room. Reject this *Motive*, and there is no need of it; which I am perswaded hath really taken place in many, who being taught that *good Deeds* are not *meritorious*, have concluded them *useless*. Comply with it, and you destroy the Nature of true Holiness, and turn all the pretended Duties of it into Fruits and Effects of *spiritual Pride* and blind *superstition*. But we see the *Necessity* of it with respect unto God, hath other Foundations suited unto, and consistent with the Grace and Love and Mercy of the *Gospel*. And we shall fully shew in our Progress, that there is not one *Motive* unto it, that is of any real Force or Efficacy, but perfectly complies with the whole Doctrine of the free undeserved *Grace* of God towards us by Jesus Christ; nor is there any of them which gives the least Countenance unto any thing of worth in our selves, as from our selves, or that should take us off from an absolute and universal Dependence on Christ for *Life* and *salvation*. But yet such they are, as render it as *necessary* unto us to be *Holy*, that is, to be *sanctified*, as to be *justified*. He that thinks to please God, and to come to the Enjoyment of him without *Holiness*, makes him an *unholy* God, putting the highest Indignity and Dishonour imaginable upon him. God deliver poor Sinners from this Deceit. There is no Remedy, you must leave *your Sins*, or *your God*. You may as easily

Sect. 14.

reconcile Heaven and Hell, the one remaining Heaven and the other Hell, as easily take away all Difference between *Light* and *Darkness*, *Good* and *Evil*, as procure Acceptance for *unholy* Persons with *our God*. Some live without God in the World; whether they have any Notion of his *Being* or no, is not material: They live without any Regard unto him, either as unto his *present* Rule over them, or his *future* Disposal of them. It is no wonder if *Holiness*, both Name and Thing, be universally despised by these Persons; their Design being to serve their Lusts to the utmost, and immerse themselves in the Pleasures of the World, without once taking God into their Thoughts, they can do no otherwise. But for Men who live under some *constant sense* of God, and an eternal Accountableness unto him, and thereon do many things he requires, and abstain from many Sins that their Inclinations and Opportunities would suggest and prompt them unto, not to endeavour after that *universal Holiness* which alone will be accepted with him, is a deplorable *Folly*. Such men seem to Worship an *Idol* all their dayes. For he that doth not endeavour to be *like unto God*, doth contrarily think wickedly that *God is like* unto himself. It is true, our Interest in God is not *built upon* our Holiness, but it is as true, that we have none *without* it. Were this Principle once well fixed in the Minds of men, that *without Holiness no man shall see God*, and that enforced from the Consideration of the *Nature* of God himself, it could not but influence them unto a greater Diligence about it, than the most seem to be engaged in.

Sect. 15.

There is indeed amongst us a great Plea for *Morality*, or for *Moral Vertue*; I wish it be more out of Love to *Vertue* its self, and a Conviction of its *Usefulness*, than out of a Design to cast Contempt on the *Grace* of our Lord Jesus Christ and the *Gospel*, as it is declared by the faithfull Dispensers of it. However, we are bound to believe the Best of all men. Where we see those who so plead for *Moral Vertues*, to be in their own Persons, and in their Lives, *modest, sober, humble, patient, self-denying, charitable, usefull* towards all, we are obliged to believe, that their Pleas for *Moral Vertue* proceed from a Love and Liking of it. But where men are *proud, furious, worldly, revengefull, profane, intemperate, covetous, ambitious*, I cannot so well understand their Declamations about Vertue. Only I would for the present enquire, What it is that they intend by their *Morality*. Is it the *Renovation of the Image of God* in us by Grace? is it our *Conformity* from thence unto him in his *Holiness*? is it our being Holy in all *Manner* of Holiness, because God is *holy*? is it the *acting* of our Souls in all Duties of Obedience, from a Principle of *Faith* and *Love*, according to the Will of God, whereby we have *Communion* with him here, and are lead towards the Enjoyment of him? If these are the things which they intend, what is the matter with them? why are they so afraid of the *Words* and *Expressions* of the Scripture? Why will they not speak of the things of God in Words that the *Holy Ghost* teacheth? Men never dislike the *Words* of God, but when they dislike the *Things* of God; Is it because these Expressions are not *intelligible*, People do not know what they mean, but this of *Moral Vertue* they understand well enough? We appeal to the *Experience* of all that truly fear

fear God in the World unto the contrary. There is none of them, but the Scripture Expressions of the *Causes, Nature, Work and Effects* of Holiness, do convey a clear *experimental Apprehension* of them unto their Minds: Whereas, by their *Moral Vertue*, neither themselves, nor any else, do know what they intend, since they do or must reject the common received Notion of it, for *Honesty* amongst men. If therefore they intend that *Holiness* hereby which is required of us in the Scripture, and that particularly on the Account of the *Holiness of that God* whom we serve, they fall into an high Contempt of the *Wisdom of God*, in despising of those Notices and Expressions of it, which being used by the Holy Ghost, are suited unto the *spiritual Light* and Understanding of Believers; substituting their own arbitrary, doubtfull, uncertain Sentiments and Words, in their Room and place. But if it be something else which they intend, as indeed (evidently it is, nor doth any man understand more in the Design, than *Sobriety and Usefulness* in the World, things singularly *good* in their proper place) then it is no otherwise to be looked on, but as a Design of Sathan to undermine the *true Holiness of the Gospel*, and to substitute a deceitfull and deceiving Cloud or *Shadow* in the Room of it.

And moreover, what we have already Discourfed, doth abundantly evince the *folly* and *falsehood* of those *clamorous Accusations*, wherein the most important Truths of the Gospel are charged as inconsistent with, and as repugnant unto *Holiness*. The Doctrine, say the *Socinians*, of the *Satisfaction of Christ*, ruins all Care and Endeavours after an Holy Life: For when men do believe that Christ hath satisfied the *Justice of God* for their Sins, they will be enclined to be *careless* about them, yea to live in them. But as this Supposition doth transform Believers into *Monsters* of Ingratitude and Folly, so it is built on no other Foundation than this, that if Christ take away the *Guilt of Sin*, there is no Reason in the Nature of these things, nor mentioned in the Scripture why we should need to be *holy*, and keep our selves from the Power, Filth and Dominion of Sin, or any way Glorifie God in this World; which is an Inference weak, false and ridiculous. The *Papists* and others with them, lay the same Charge on the Doctrine of *Justification* through the Imputation of the *Righteousness of Christ* unto us. And it is wonderfull to consider with what *virulent Railing* this Charge is managed by the *Papists*, so with what *scorn* and *scoffing*, with what *Stories and Tales* some amongst our selves endeavour to expose this *sacred Truth* to Contempt, as though all those by whom it is Believed, must consequently be Negligent of *Holiness* and good *Works*. Now although I deny not, but that such men may find a great Strength of *Connexion* between these things in their own Minds, seeing there is a Principle in the corrupt Heart of man to *turn the Grace of God into Lasciviousness*, yet (as shall in due time be proved) this sacred Truth is both *Doctrinally* and *Practically* the great constraining Principle unto *Holiness* and Fruitfulness in Obedience. For the present I shall return no other Answer unto those Objections, but that the Objectors are wholly mistaken in our Thoughts and Apprehensions concerning that God whom we serve. God in Christ whom we Worship, hath so revealed his own *Holiness* unto us, and what is

Sect. 16.

necessary for us on the Account thereof, as that we know it to be a *foolish, wicked and blasphemous thing*, for any one to think to please him, to be accepted with him, to come to the Enjoyment of him, without that *Holiness* which he requireth, and from his own *Nature* cannot but require. That the *Grace* or *Mercy*, or *Love* of this God, who is *our God*, should encourage those who indeed *know* him, unto Sin, or countenance them in a Neglect of *Holy Obedience* to him, is a *monstrous* Imagination. There are as I shall shew afterwards, other invincible Reasons for it, and Motives unto it. But the owning of this one Consideration alone, by them who Believe the *Grace* of the Gospel, is sufficient to secure them from the Reproach of this Objection.

Sect. 17. Moreover, from what hath been discoursed, we may all Charge our selves with Blame for our *Sloth* and *Negligence* in this Matter. It is to be feared, that we have none of us endeavoured as we ought, to grow up into this *Image* and *Likeness* of God. And although for the main of our Duty herein, *our Hearts may not condemn us*, yet there are no doubt sundry things that belong unto it, wherein we have all failed. Our *Likeness* unto God, that wherein we bear his Image, is our *Holiness*, as hath been declared. Wherever there is the *Holiness* of Truth before described, in the *Essence* of it, there is a *radical* Conformity and *likeness* unto God. In the first Communication of it unto us, through the *Promises* of the Gospel, we are made Partakers *τῆς Διαισθησεως*, of the *Divine Nature*, 1 Pet. 1. 4. Such a new spiritual Nature as represents that of God himself: Being *begotten by him*, we are made partakers of his *Nature*. But though all Children do partake of the *Nature* of their Parents, yet they may be, and some of them are very *deformed*, and bear very little of their *Likeness*. So is it in this matter; we may have the *Image* of God in our Hearts, and yet come short of that *Likeness* unto him in its Degrees and Improvement which we ought to aim at. And this happens Two wayes; (1) When our *Graces* are *weak, withering, and unthrifty*; for in their flourishing and *fruit-bearing* is our *Likeness* unto God evidenced, and in them doth the *Glory* of God in this World consist. (2) When by the *Power* of our *Corruptions* or our *Temptations*, we contract a *Deformity*; something that hath the *Likeness* of the *old crooked Serpent*. Where either of these befall us, that our *Graces* are *low* and *thrifless*; that our *Corruptions* are *high* and *active*, frequently discovering themselves; there, though the *Image of God* may be in us, there is not much of his *Likeness* upon us, and we come short of our Duty, in this great and Fundamental Duty of our *Faith* and *Profession*. So far as it is thus with us, may we not, ought we not greatly to *blame* our selves? Why are we so slow, so *Negligent* in the pursuit of our principal *Interest* and *Happiness*? Why do we suffer *every* thing, why do we suffer *any* thing to divert our Minds from, or retard our Endeavours in this Design? Wherefore, that I may contribute something to the *awakening* of our Diligence herein, I shall adde some few *Motives* unto it, and some *Directions* for it, that herein we may be found *perfecting Holiness* in the *Fear of the Lord*, which is the only way whereby we may be *like* unto him, in this World.

First,

First, In our *Likeness* unto God, consists the Excellency and Preeminence of our *Nature*, above that of all other Creatures in the world, and of our *Persons* above those of other Men, who are not partakers of his *Image*. Sect. 18.

For, (1) With Reference unto other Things, this is the highest Excellency that a *Created Nature* is capable of. Other things had *External Impressions* of the *Greatness*, *Power*, and *Goodness* of God upon them; Man alone in this lower world was capable of the *Image of God* in him. The Perfection, the Glory, the Preeminence of our *Nature* in the first Creation, was expressed only by this, that we were made in the *Image and likeness of God*, Gen. 1. 26, 27. This gave us a Preeminence above all other Creatures, and hence a *Dominion* over them ensued. For although God made a distinct grant of it unto us, that we might the better understand and be thankfull for our Priviledge; yet was it a necessary Consequence of his *Image in us*. And this is that which James respects, where he tells us, that πάντα φύσις, every *Nature*, the *Nature* of all things in their several kinds, δαμάσκειται τῇ φύσει τῇ ἀνθρώπινῃ, is tamed, that is, subjected to the *Nature* of man. He renders נבשׁ Gen. 1. 28. by δαμάσκει, which the LXX. render κατασκευάζω, subdue it. But being not contented to be like God, that is in *Holiness* and *Righteousness*, we would be as God in *Wisdom* and *Sovereignty*; and not attaining what we aimed at, we lost what we had, Gen. 3. 5. Being in honour we continued not, but became like the Beasts that perish, Psal. 49. 12. we were first like God, and then like Beasts, 2 Pet. 2. 12. By the loss of the *Image of God*, our *Nature* lost its Preeminence, and we were reduced into order amongst perishing Beasts. For notwithstanding some feeble Reliques of this *Image* yet abiding with us, we have really, with respect unto our proper End, in our lapsed Condition, more of the *Bestial Nature* in us, than of the *Divine*. Wherefore the Restauration of this *Image* in us by the Grace of Jesus Christ, Ephes. 4. 24. Col. 3. 10, is the Recovery of that Preeminence and Priviledge of our *Nature* which we had foolishly lost. Hereby there is an *Impression* again made upon our *Natures* of the Authority of God, which gives us a Preeminence above other Creatures, and a *Rule* over them; yea, that whole *Dominion* which Mankind scrambles for with Craft and Violence, over the residue of the Creation, depends on this *Renovation of the Image of God* in some of them. Not that I judge that mens Right and Title to their Portion and Interests in this world, doth depend on their own *Personal Grace* or *Holiness*; But that if God had not designed to renew his *Image* in our *Nature* by Jesus Christ, and as the Foundation thereof to take our *Nature* into Union with himself in the person of his Son, and thereby to gather up all things unto a *New Head* in him, and to make him the first-born of the Creation, the Head and Heir of all, he would not have continued any thing of Right or Title therein. It was upon the Promise and the Establishment of the *New-Covenant*, that this Right was restored unto us. So it is expressed in the *Renovation of the Covenant* with Noah and his Children, Gen. 9. 1, 2. God blessed Noah and his Sons, and said unto them, Be fruitfull and multiply, and replenish the Earth; and the fear of you, and the dread of you shall be upon every beast of the Earth, and upon every fowl of the Air, and upon all that moveth on the Earth,

Earth, and upon all the Fishes of the Sea, into your hand are they delivered; which is an expresse Renovation of the Grant made unto us at our first Creation, Gen. 1. 28. The Right whereunto we had lost, in our Loss of the Image of God. And therefore in that service wherein the Creature is continued unto Mankind, it is made *subject to vanity*, and put into bondage, in which state though it groan, and look out as it were for Deliverance, it must continue until God hath accomplished the whole Design of the glorious liberty of his Children, Rom. 8. 20, 21. Whatever they may *Pride* themselves in, their Parts or Enjoyments, however they may sport themselves in the Use or Abuse of other Creatures, if this Image of God be not renewed in them, they have really no great Preeminence above the things which perish under their hands, 2 Pet. 2. 12. God having Exalted our Natures by Union with himself in the Person of his Son, requires of us to preserve its Dignity above others.

Sect. 19.

(2) Again, this is that which gives Priviledge and Preeminence unto the persons of some above others; *The Righteous*, saith the wiseman, *is more Excellent than his Neighbour*, Prov. 12. 26. It is seldom that this is so upon the account of *Civil Wisdom, Wealth, Greatness, or Power*. There is nothing can establish this general Rule, but their *conformity and likeness* to God. Hence are such persons called the *Saints in the Earth, and the Excellent*, Psal. 16. 3. Both the Terms אֲדוֹמִים and אֲרֻמִּים do first belong properly to God. He above is absolutely קִדְּשׁ or *Holy*; and he is אֲדוֹרִי Psal. 8. 2. unto men they are ascribed upon their *Likeness* unto him in *Holiness*. This makes them the *Saints and Excellent in the Earth*, that gives them a Preeminence of *Office and Authority* in some above others. And this Dignity of *Office* reflects a Dignity of *Person* on them who are vested in it, and communicates a Preeminence unto them; For their *Office and Authority* is from God, which gives both it and them a real Priviledge and Honour above others. But that which is *Originally* in and from Persons themselves, is solely from the *Renovation of the Image of God* in them, and is heightened and increased according to the Degrees they attain in the Participation of it. The more *Holy*, the more *Honorable*. Hence wicked men in the Scripture are said to be *vile*, וְלוֹחֲעֵבִי אִים Psal. 12. 8. *Quisquiliæ hominum, trifling vilenesses*; And the Righteous are said to be *Precious and Valuable*. And hence it is, that there hath oft-times an Awe been put on the spirits of vile and outrageous sinners, from the Appearances of God in *Holy* Persons. And indeed at all times, where men do *Eminently* bear a Conformity to God in Holiness, wicked men exasperated by their secular *Interests, Prejudices*, and an unconquerable *Adherence* to their Lusts, may oppose, revile, reproach and persecute them, but secretly in their Hearts they have an Awe from the *Likeness* of God in them, whence they will sometimes *dread* them, sometimes *flatter* them, and sometimes wish that they *were not*, even as they deal with God himself. Why do we weary our selves about other things? why do we spend our Labour in vain, and our *Strength* for that *which is not bread*? such will all Endeavours after any other *Excellency* at length appear.

Sect. 20.

Herein lyes the whole of that Dignity which our Nature was made for, and is capable of; *Sin* is the sole *debasement* of it, that alone whereby

by we render our selves *base* and *contemptible*. Mens *self-pleasing* in the *ways* and *fruits* of it, or in worldly Advantages, and their Mutual Applauses of one another, will suddenly vanish into *smoak*. It is *Holiness* alone that is *Honourable*, and that because there is in it the *Image* and *Representation* of God. I think we are satisfied, that the *Dignity* of Professors above others, doth not consist in *Worldly* or *Secular Advantages*, for they are very few who have them; *Not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble are called*, 1 Cor. I. 26. nor doth it consist in *spiritual gifts*; many who have excelled us, not onely in the *Degree* of them, but in the *Kind* also, who have had extraordinary Gifts of the Spirit, shall be shut out of Heaven with the worst of the world, *Matth. 7. 22. Many shall say unto me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy Name, and in thy Name cast out devils, and in thy Name wrought* *δυνάμεις πολλὰς, many miraculous works?* which is more than any of us can say; yet Christ will profess unto them, *I never knew you, depart from me, ye that work iniquity, you unholy persons*. Nor is it in *Profession* it self. Many make it in rigid austerities, Renunciation of the world, and outward works of Charity, beyond the most of us, and yet perish in their Superstitions. Nor is it in the *Purity of Worship*, without such mixtures of *Humane Inventions* as others defile the Service of God withal. For Multitudes may be made partakers thereof in the *great house of God*, and yet be *Vessels of wood and stone*, who being not purged from sin, are not vessels to honour, *sanctified and meet for the Masters use*, 2 Tim. 2. 20, 21. It consists therefore alone in that *likeness* unto God, which we have in and by *Holiness*, with what doth attend it, and is inseparable from it. Where this is not, no other thing will exempt us from the *common herd* of perishing mankind.

Secondly, According unto our *Growth* and *Improvement* in this *likeness* unto God, are our *Accesses* and *Approaches* towards Glory. We are drawing every day towards our *Natural End* whether we will or no; and if we doe not therewithall draw nearer towards our *Supernatural End* in Glory, we are most miserable. Now men doe but deceive themselves, if they suppose that they are approaching towards Glory in *time*, if they are not at the same time making nearer unto it in *Grace*; It is some Representation of future Glory, that therein we shall be *ἰσὺς ἁγίων, Luk. 20. 36. like, or equal unto Angels*. But that respects one *particular* only of that state. It is a far more excellent Description of it, that we shall be *like unto God, when he shall appear we shall be like him, for we shall see him as he is*, 1 John 3. 2. Our glory as subjectively considered, will be our *Likeness* unto God according to the capacity of Creatures. And it is the highest *folly* for any to think that they shall love that hereafter, which now they hate; that that *will* be their Glory which they *now* abhorre; such *sottish Contradictions* are the *Minds* of men filled withal. There is nothing in this World which they more despise, than to be *like unto God*, and they hate every one that is so; yet pretend a Desire and Expectation of that Estate wherein they shall be so, which is a being so for ever. But this will be our Glory; *to behold the Face of God in Righteousness, and to be satisfied with his Likeness*, *Psal. 17. 15*. How then shall we make Approaches towards this Glory *spiritually*, which at least may answer the Approaches

Sect. 2^d.

proaches we make towards our Ends *naturally*, seeing not to do so, is *folly* and intolerable *negligence*? We have no other way, but Thriving and Growing in that *Likeness of God* which we have here in *Holiness*. Hereby alone are we *transformed into the Image of God, from Glory to Glory*; 2 Cor. 3. 18. From one glorious Degree of Grace unto another, untill one great *Change* shall issue all Grace and Holiness in *Eternal Glory*: And in our Desires for Heaven, if they are *regular*, we consider not so much our Freedom from *Trouble* as from *Sin*; nor is our Aym in the first place so much at *compleat Happiness*, as *perfect Holiness*. And they who desire Heaven, as that which would only ease them of their *Troubles*, and not as that which will perfectly free them of *Sin*; will fall into a state wherein *Sin* and *Trouble* shall be *Eternally inseperable*. As therefore we would continually tend towards our *Rest* and *Blessedness*, as we would have assured and evident *Pledges* of it in our own Souls, as we would have *Fore-tastes* of it, and an experimental Acquaintance with it, (as who would not know as much as is possible of his *Eternal Blessedness*) this is the Design which we ought to pursue. It is to be feared, that the most of us know not *how much of Glory* may be in present Grace, nor how much of *Heaven* may be attained in *Holiness* on the Earth. We have a Generation amongst us, that would fain be Boasting of *Perfection*, whilst in their Minds they are evidently under the Power of *Darkness*, *corrupt* in their Affections, and *worldly* in their Lives. But our Duty it is, to be *always perfecting Holiness in the fear of the Lord*. This pursued in a due Manner, is continually transforming the Soul into the *Likeness of God*. Much of the *Glory of Heaven* may dwell in a simple *Cottage*. And *poor* Persons, even under Ragges, may be very *like* unto God.

Sect. 22.

Thirdly, It is from our *Likeness* and *Conformity* unto God alone, that we are or may be *usefull* in the World in a due Manner and Order. I shall have Occasion to speak more unto this afterwards, and shall therefore here only touch upon it, with respect unto one Concernment or Circumstance. God is the great *Preserver* and *Benefactor* of the whole Creation: He is *good* and doth *Good*, the sole Cause and Fountain of all *Good*, that in any kind, any Creature is made partaker of. And there is no *Property* of God more celebrated in the Scripture than this of his *Goodness*, and his giving out of the Fruits of it to all his Creatures. And he is so *only Good*, that there is nothing so in any sence but by a *participation* of it, and a *Likeness* unto him therein. They therefore who are *like* unto God, and they only, are *usefull* in this World. There *is* indeed, or at least there *hath* been, much *Good*, *usefull good* done by others, on various Convictions, and for various Ends: But there is one *flaw* or other in all they doe. Either *Superstition*, or *Vain-glory*, or *Selfishness*, or *Merit*, or one thing or other, gets into all the *Good* that is done by *unholy Persons*, and brings Death into the Pot, so that although it may be of some use in *particulars*, unto individual Persons, in some Seasons, it is of none unto the *general Good* of the whole. He that bears the *Likeness of God*, and in all that he doth, acts from that Principle, he alone is truly *usefull*, represents God in what he doth, and spoys it not by false Ends of his own. If therefore we would keep up the *Priviledge* and *Preeminence* of

of our *Nature* and *Persons*, if we would make due and daily *Accessions* towards *Glory* and *Blessedness*, if we would be of any *real use* in this *World*, our great *Endeavour* ought to be, to *grow up more and more* into this *Likeness* of *God*, which consists in our *Holiness*.

It will, therefore, or it may be justly here enquired, *How* or *what* we may doe, that we may *thrive* and *grow up more and more* into this *Likeness* unto *God*. To remit other *Considerations* unto their proper place, at present I answer, that there are some *Graces* of *Holiness* that are effectually *Assimulating*, and others that are *Declarative*, and *Expressive* of this *Likeness* of *God* in us. Sect. 23.

(*First.*) Those of the *first* sort, which have a peculiar *Efficacy* to promote the *likeness* of *God* in our *Souls*, are *Faith* and *Love*, in whose constant *Exercise* we ought to abide and abound, if we intend to *grow* in *Likeness* and *Conformity* to *God*.

(1) *Faith* is a part of our *Holiness*, as it is a *Grace* of the sanctifying *Spirit*, and it is a *Principle* of *Holiness* as it *purifies* the *Heart*, and is effectual by *Love*. The more *Faith* is in its due and proper *Exercise*, the more *holy* we shall be, and consequently the more *like* unto *God*. This were a large *Theme*, I shall confine it unto one *Instance*. The glorious *Properties* of *God*, as we have shewed before, are manifested and revealed in *Jesus Christ*, in his *Face* do they shine forth. The only way whereby we behold them, whereby we have an *intuition* into them, is by *Faith*. In *Christ* are the glorious *Excellencies* of *God* represented unto us, and by *Faith* do we behold them. And what is the *Effect* hereof? we are changed into the same *Image* and *Likeness*, from *Glory* to *Glory*, 2 Cor. 3. 18. This is the great *Mystery* of *Growing* in *Holiness*, and *Thriving* in the *Image* of *God*, which the *World* being ignorant of, have laboured in vain by other *Means* to satisfy their *Notions* and *Convictions*. But this is the great *Way* and *Means* of it, appointed and blessed of *God* unto that *Purpose*; namely, constantly by *Faith*, in a way of *Believing* the *Revelation* made in the *Gospel*, to view, behold, and contemplate on the *Excellencies* of *God*, his *Goodness*, *Holiness*, *Righteousness*, *Love* and *Grace*, as manifested in *Jesus Christ*; and that so as to make use of, and apply unto our selves and our *Condition* the *Effects* and *Fruits* of them, according to the *Promise* of the *Gospel*. This is the great *Arcanum* of *growing up* into the *likeness* of *God*; without which, however men may multiply *Duties* in a *Compliance* with their *Convictions*, they will have never the more *Conformity* to *God*. And all *Professors* who come short in this matter, do or may know, that it ariseth from their want of a constant *Exercise* of *Faith* on *God* in *Christ*. If therefore we have a real *Design*, of being yet more *like unto God*, which is our *Privilege*, *Safety*, *Glory*, *Blessedness*, this is the way we must take for its *Accomplishment*. Abound in *Actings* of *Faith*, and we shall thrive in *Holiness*. And they are but *Acts of Presumption* under the Name of *Faith*, which do not infallibly produce this *Effect*. Sect. 24.

(2) *Love* hath the same *Tendency* and *Efficacy*. I mean, the *Love* of *God*. He that would be *like* unto *God* must be sure to *love* him, or all other

other Endeavours to that Purpose will be in vain. And he that *loves* God sincerely, will be *like* him. Under the Old Testament none in his general Course so *like* unto God as *David*, called therefore the *man after Gods own Heart*; and none ever made greater Expressions of *Love* unto him, which occur continually in the *Psalms*. And let men take what pains they can in Acts and Duties of Obedience, if they proceed not from a Principle of *Divine Love*, their Likeness unto God will not be increased by them. All *Love* in general hath an *assimulating Efficacy*, it casts the Mind into the *Mould* of the thing beloved. So *Love* of this World makes men *Earthly minded*; their Minds and Affections grow *Earthy*, carnal and sensual. But of all Kinds *Divine Love* is most effectual to this purpose, as having the best, the most noble, proper and attractive Object. It is our Adherence unto God with *Delight*, for what he is in himself, as manifested in Jesus Christ. By it we cleave unto God, and so keep near him, and thereby derive *trans-forming* Virtue from him. Every Approach unto God by ardent Love and Delight is *Transfiguring*. And it acts it self continually by (1) *Contemplation*; (2) *Admiration*, and (3) *Delight* in Obedience.

1. *Love* acts it self by *Contemplation*. It is in the Nature of it to be meditating and Contemplating on the Excellencies of God in Christ. Yea, this is the *Life* of it, and where this is not, there is no *Love*. An heart filled with the *Love* of God, will Night and Day be exercising it self in and with Thoughts of Gods glorious Excellencies, rejoycing in them. This the *Psalmist* exhorts us unto, *Psal.* 30. 4. *Sing unto the Lord; O ye Saints of his, and give thanks at the remembrance of his Holiness*. And *Love* will do the same with respect unto all his other Properties. See to this purpose, *Psal.* 63. throughout. And this will further our *Likeness* unto him; our Minds by it will be *changed into the Image* of what we Contemplate, and we shall endeavour, that our Lives be *conformed* thereunto.

Sect. 26.

2. It works by *Admiration* also. That is the voyce of Love; *How great is his Goodness! how great is his Beauty!* *Zech.* 9. 17. the Soul being as it were *ravished* with that View which it hath of the glorious Excellencies of God in Christ, hath no way to express its Affections but by *Admiration*. How great is his Goodness! how great is his Beauty! And this Beauty of God is that *sweetness* and holy *symmetry* of Glory; (if I may be allowed to speak so improperly) in all the Perfections of God, being all in a sweet Correspondency exalted in Christ, which is the proper Object of our *Love*. To see *infinite* Holiness, Purity and Righteousness, with *infinite* Love, Goodness, Grace and Mercy, all equally Glorified in and towards the same Things and Persons, one Glimpse whereof is not to be attained in the World out of Christ; is that *Beauty* of God which attracts the *Love* of a Believing Soul, and fills it with an holy *Admiration* of him. And this also is a most effectual Furtherance of our *Conformity* unto him, which without these steps we shall labour in vain after.

Sect. 27.

3. Again, *Love* gives *Delight* in Obedience, and all the Duties of it. The common Instance of *Jacob* is known, of whom it is said, that his *seven Years Service* seemed *short*, and so *easy* to him, for the *Love* he bare

bare to *Rachel*. He did that with *Delight*, which he would not afterwards undergoe for the greatest Wages. But we have a greater Instance: Our Lord Jesus Christ sayes concerning all the Obedience that was required of him; *Thy Law O God is in my heart, I delight to do thy Will*. And yet we know how terrible to Nature were the things he did and suffered in Obedience to that Law. But his unspeakable Love to God and the Souls of men, rendred it all his *Delight*. Hence follows *Intension* and *Frequency* in all the Duties of it. And where these two are, *Intension* of mind and spirit, with a *Frequency* of holy Duties, both proceeding from *Delight*, there *Holiness* will thrive, and consequently we shall do so in our *Conformity* to God. In brief, *Love* and *Likeness* unto God are inseperable, and proportionate unto one another. And without this, no Duties of Obedience are any part of his *Image*.

(Secondly.) There are Graces which are *Declarative* of this Affirmulation, or which *evidence* and manifest our *Likeness* unto God. I shall instance only in two of them. Sect. 28.

(1) And the first is such, as I shall give many Names unto it in its Description, as the Scripture doth also, but the thing intended is one and the same. This is *Goodness*, *Kindness*, *Benignity*, *Love*, with Readiness to do good, to forgive, to help and relieve, and this towards all Men, on all Occasions. And this also is to be considered in Opposition unto an evil *Habit* of Mind exerting it self in many Vices, which yet agree in the same general Nature; such are *Anger*, *Wrath*, *Envy*, *Malice*, *Revenge*, *Frowardness*, *Selfishness*; all which are directly opposite to the Grace of *Holiness*, at present instanced in and pleaded for. And this I fear, is not so considered as it ought to be: For if it were, it would not be so common a thing as it may be it is, for men to plead highly for the *Imitation* of God, and almost in all they doe, give us a full Representation of the Devil. For as this universal *Benignity* and *Love* to all, is the greatest Representation of the Nature of God on the Earth; so is *Fierceness*, *Envy*, *Wrath* and *Revenge*, of that of the Devil. Would we then be like unto our Heavenly Father, would we manifest that we are so unto his Glory, would we represent him in and unto the World, it must be by this frame of spirit, and Actings constantly suited thereunto. This our Blessed Saviour instructs us in and unto, *Matth. 5. 44, 45*. A Man, I say, thus Good, his Nature being cured and rectified by *Grace*, thence *usefull*, and *helpfull*, free from Guile, *Envy* and *Selfishness*, *Pride* and *Elation* of Mind, is the best Representation we can have of God on the Earth, since the *Humane Nature* of Christ was removed from us.

This therefore we are to labour after, if we intend to be like God, or to manifest his Glory in our Persons and Lives unto the World. And no small part of our *Holiness* consists herein. Many Lusts, Corruptions, and distempered Passions are to be subdued by *Grace*, if we design to be Eminent. Strong Bents and Inclinations of Mind to comply with innumerable Provocations and Exasperations that will befall us, must be corrected and discarded. Many Duties be constantly attended unto, and sundry Graces kept up to their Exercise. The whole Sect. 29.

drive of Temptations, all whose force consists in a pretence of *care for self*, must be scattered or resisted. And hence it is, that in the Scripture a *Good man*, a *Merciful man*, an *usefull, liberal man*, is frequently spoken of by way of *Eminency* and *Distinction*, as one whom God hath an especial regard unto, and concerning whom there are peculiar Promises. When men live to themselves, and are satisfied that they doe no hurt, though they doe no good; are secure, selfish, wrathfull, angry, peevish, or have their kindness confined to their Relations, or otherwise are little usefull but in what they are prest unto, and therein come off with *Difficulty* in their own minds, who esteem all lost that is done for the *Relief* of others, and the greatest part of Wisdom to be cautious, and disbelieve the necessities of men; in a word, that make *Self* and its concerns the End of their lives; whatever otherwise their profession be, or their Diligence in Religious duties, they doe very little either Represent or Glorifie God in the world. If we therefore *Design* to be *Holy*, let us constantly in our *Families*, towards our *Relations*, in *Churches*, in our *Conversations* in the world, and dealings with all men, towards our *Enemies* and *Persecutors*, the worst of them, so far as they are ours only, towards all Mankind as we have Opportunity, labour after *conformity* unto God, and to expresse our *likeness* unto him, in this *Philanthropy*, *Goodness*, *Benignity*, *Condescension*, readiness to *forgive*, to *help* and *relieve*, without which we neither are, nor can be the Children of our Father which is in Heaven.

Scct. 30.

Especially is this *frame of Heart*, and *actings* suitable therunto, required of us with respect unto the *Saints* of God, unto *Believers*. Even God himself, whom we are bound to imitate, and a *Conformity* unto whom we are pressing after, doth exercise his Benignity and Kindness in a peculiar manner towards them, 1 Tim. 4. 10. *He is the Saviour of all men, but especially of them that believe.* There is a *specialty* in the Exercise of His saving Goodness towards Believers. And in Answer hereunto, We are likewise commanded to *doe good unto all men, but especially unto them who are of the Household of Faith*, Gal. 6. 10. Although we are obliged to the Exercise of the Goodness before described, unto all men whatever, as we have Opportunity; so we are allowed, yea we are enjoined a peculiar regard herein unto the *Household of Faith*. And if this were more in Exercise, if we esteemed our selves, (notwithstanding the *Provocations* and *Exasperations* which we meet withall, or suppose we doe so; when perhaps none are given us, or intended us) obliged to expresse this Benignity, Kindness, Goodness, Forbearance, and Love towards all *Believers* in an especial manner; it would prevent or remove many of those scandalous *Offences* and *Animosities* that are among us. If in Common we doe love them that love us, and doe good to them that doe good to us, and delight in them who are of our Company and go the same way with us, it may advance us into the condition of *Pharisees* and *Publicanes*, for they did so also. But if among *Believers*, we will take this course, love them only, delight in them only, be open and free in all effects of genuine kindness, towards them who go our way, or are of our Party, or are kind and friendly to us, or that never gave us provocations really, nor in our own surmizes; we are so far, and therein worse than either *Pharisees* or *Publicanes*

canes. We are to endeavour *Conformity* and *Likeness* unto God, not only as he is the God of *Nature*, and is good unto all the works of his hands; but as he is our *Heavenly Father*, and is *Good, Kind, Benign, Merciful* in an especial manner, unto the whole Family of his *Children*, however differenced among themselves, or indeed unkind or provoking unto him. I confess, when I see men apt to retain a sense of *old Provocations* and *Differences*, ready to receive *Impressions* of *new ones*, or ready for *Apprehensions* of such, where there are none; *incredulous* of the *sincerity* of others who profess a readiness for *Love* and *Peace*, to take things in the worst sense, to be *Morose* and *Severe* towards this or that sort of *Believers*, unready to help them, scarce desiring their *Prosperity*, or it may be their safety; I cannot but look upon it as a very great *Stain* to their *Profession* whatever else it be. And by this Rule would I have my own ways examined.

(2) *Truth* is another *Grace*, another part of *Holiness*, of the same Sect. 317
Import and Nature. *Truth* is used in the Scripture for *Uprightness* and *Integrity*; *Thou requirest Truth in the inward parts*, *Psal. 51.* and frequently the Doctrine of *Truth*, as of God revealed, and by us believed. But that which I intend is only what is enjoined us by the Apostle, namely, in all things to *Speak the Truth in Love*, *Ephes. 4.15.* Our Apostasie from God was Eminently from him as the God of *Truth*, by an Opposition to which Attribute we sought to dethrone him from his Glory; We would not believe that his word was *Truth*. And sin entred into the world by and with a long *Train* of *Lies*. And ever since, the whole world, and every thing in it is filled with them, which represents him and his Nature who is the *Father of Lyes* and *Ljars*. Hereby doth it visibly and openly continue in its Apostasie from the God of *Truth*. I could willingly stay to manifest how the whole world is corrupted, depraved, and sullied by *Lyes* of all sorts, but I must not divert thereunto. Wherefore *Truth* and *sincerity in Words*, for that at present I confine my self unto, is an Effect of *Renovation* of the *Image* of God in us, and a *Representation* of him to the world. No *Duty* is more frequently pressed upon us; *Put away false speaking, lye not to one another, Speak the Truth in Love*; And the consideration hereof, is exceeding necessary unto all those who by their course of Life are engaged in *Trading*, and that both because of the *Disreputation*, which by the evil practices of some, of many, that I say not of the most, is cast upon that Course of *Life*, and also because failures in *Truth*, are apt a thousand ways to insinuate themselves into the Practices of such Persons, yea when they are not aware thereof. *It is naught, it is vaught* saith the buyer, but when he goeth away he boasteth; and it is good, it is good saith the seller, but when he hath sold it, he boasteth, or is well pleased with the advantage, which he hath made by his words. But these things have the Image of Sathan upon them, and are most opposite to the God of *Truth*. Another Occasion must be taken, further to press this necessary Duty: only at present I doe but intimate, that where *Truth* is not universally observed, according to the utmost watchfullness of *Sincerity* and *Love*, there all other *Marks* and *Takens* of the *Image* of God in any Persons, are not onely *sullied* but *Defaced*, and the Representation of Sathan is most prevalent. And these things I could not but

but adde, as naturally Consequential unto that first principall Argument for the *Necessity* of *Holiness*, which we have proposed and insisted on.

Sect. 32. Having dispatched this *first Argument*, and added unto it some especial *Improvements* with respect unto its Influence into our *Practice*, it remains only, that we free it from *one Objection* which it seems exposed unto. Now this ariseth from the Consideration of the Infinite *Grace*, *Mercy*, and *Love* of God, as they are proposed in the Dispensation of the Word. For it may be said unto us, and like enough it will, considering the *frame* of mens Minds in the *Dayes* wherein we live, Doe not you your selves, who thus press unto *Holiness*, and the *Necessity* of it from the Consideration of the *Nature* of God, preach unto us every day the Greatness of his *Mercy* towards all sorts of Sinners, his *Readiness* to receive them, his *Willingness* to pardon them, and that *freely* in Christ, without the Consideration of any *Worth*, *Merit*, or *Righteousness* of their own? And do you not herein invite all sorts of Sinners, the *worst* and the *greatest*, to come unto him by Christ, that they may be *pardoned* and *accepted*? Whence then can arise any *Argument* for the *Necessity* of *Holiness*, from the Consideration of the *Nature* of this God, whose Inestimable Treasures of *Grace*, and the *freedom* of whose *Love* and *Mercy* towards Sinners, no Tongue, as you say, can express.

Sect. 33. An. (1) This *Objection* is very *natural* unto carnal and *unbelieving Minds*, and therefore we shall meet with it at every turn. There is nothing seems more *reasonable* unto them, than that we may live in *sin* because *Grace* hath abounded. If men must yet be *Holy*, they can see no need nor use of *Grace*. And they cannot see that God is *Gracious* to any Purpose, if notwithstanding men may perish because they are not *Holy*. But this *Objection* is raised, rejected and condemned by our Apostle, in whose Judgement we may acquiesce; *Rom. 6. 1.* And in the same place he subjoyns the *Reasons*, why notwithstanding the *superabounding Grace* of God in Christ, there is an indispensable *Necessity* that all Believers should be *Holy*.

(2) God himself hath obviated this *Objection*. He proclaims his Name, *Exod. 34. 6, 7.* The Lord, the Lord God, *gracious and mercifull, abundant in Goodness and Truth, keeping Mercy for thousands, forgiving Iniquity, Transgressions and sin.* Had he stood here, and neither in this nor in any other place of Scripture, further declared his *Nature* and *unchangeable Purposes* concerning Sinners, some Colour might have been laid on this *Objection*. But he addes immediately, *and that will by no means clear the Guilty*; that is, as it is explained in places of Scripture innumerable, such as go on in their *Sins*, without regard unto *Obedience* and *Holiness*, springing from the *Attonement* made for their *guilty Souls* in the Blood of Christ.

(3) We doe, we ought to declare, the rich and free *Love*, *Grace*, *Mercy*, and *Bounty* of God unto Sinners in and by Jesus Christ; and *Woe unto us*, if we should not be found in that Work all our *Dayes*; and thereby Encourage all sorts of Sinners to come unto him for the free *Pardon* of their *Sins*, *without Money or Price*, without *Merit* or Desert

Desert on their part; For this is the *Gospel*. But notwithstanding all this *Grace* and *Condescension*, we declare, that he doth not *dethrone* himself, nor *deny* himself, nor *change* his Nature, nor become *unholy*, that we may be *saved*. He is God still, Naturally and Essentially *holy*; *Holy* as he is in *Christ*, *reconciling* the sinfull World unto himself; and therefore indispensibly requires, that those whom he *pardons*, *receives*, *accepts* into his *Love*, and *Communion* with himself, should be *Holy* also. And these things are not only consistent, but inseparable. Without the Consideration of this *Grace* in God, we can have no Encouragement to be *Holy*; and without the *Necessity* of *Holiness* in us, that *Grace* can neither be glorified nor usefull.

W

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

Eternal Election a Cause of, and Motive unto Holiness.

Other Arguments for the Necessity of Holiness, from Gods Eternal Election. The Argument from thence explained, improved, vindicated.

Sect. 1.

WE have seen upon the whole Matter, what Conclusions (as unto our own Duty) we ought to draw from that Revelation of the Nature of God in Christ, which is made unto us, and our Relation unto him: If we are not thereby prevailed on, always, in all Instances of Obedience, to endeavour to be Holy, universally, in all manner of Holy Conversation, we neither can enjoy his Favour here, nor be brought unto the Enjoyment of him in Glory hereafter.

Sect. 2.

That Consideration which usually we take of God, next after his Nature and the Properties of it, is of the Eternal free Acts of his Will, or his Decrees and Purposes. And we shall now enquire, what Respect they have unto Holiness in us, what Arguments and Motives may be taken from them, to evince the Necessity of it unto us, and to press us thereunto; especially from the Decree of Election, which in an especial Manner is by some traduced, as no Friend to this Design. I say then, that,

Sect. 3.

It is the Eternal and Immutable Purpose of God, that all who are his in a peculiar manner, all whom he designs to bring unto Blessedness in the Everlasting Enjoyment of himself; shall antecedently thereunto be made Holy. This Purpose of his, God hath declared unto us, that we may take no wrong Measures of our Estate and Condition, nor build Hopes or Expectations of future Glory, on sandy Foundations that will fail us. Whatever we are else, in Parts, Abilities, Profession, Moral Honesty, Usefulness unto others, Reputation in the Church, if we are not personally, spiritually, Evangelically Holy, we have no Interest in that Purpose or Decree of God, whereby any Persons are designed unto Salvation and Glory. And this we shall briefly confirm.

Ephes. 1. 4. He hath chosen us in Christ, before the Foundation of the World, that we should be holy, and unblameable before him in Love. But is this that which firstly and principally we are ordained unto, and that for its own sake, namely, Holiness, and Unblameableness in the Obedience of Love? No; we are firstly Ordained unto eternal life, *Acts 13. 48. we are chosen from the Beginning unto Salvation, 2 Thess. 2. 13.* That which God in the first place intends as his End in the Decree

Decree of Election, is our *Eternal Salvation*, to the *praise of the Glory of his Grace*; Ephes. 1. 5, 6, 11. How then is he said to Choose us that we should be *Holy*? in what sense is our *Holiness* proposed as the Design of God in Election? It is as the *indispensible Means* for the attaining of the *End* of Salvation and Glory. I doe, saith God, choose these poor lost Sinners, to be mine in an *especial manner*, to save them by my Son, and bring them through his Mediation unto *Eternal Glory*; But in order hereunto, I do *purpose* and *decree*, that they shall be *holy* and unblameable in the Obedience of Love, without which as a *Means* none shall ever attain that *End*. Wherefore, the Expectation and Hope of any man, for Life and Immortality and Glory, without previous *Holiness*, can be built on no other Foundation but this, that God will Recind his *Eternal Decrees*, and change his Purposes, that is, cease to be God, meerly to comply with them in ther Sins. And who knowes not what will be the *End* of such a cursed Hope and Expectation? The contrary is seconded by that of the Apostle, Rom. 8. 36. *Whom we did Predestinate, them he also Called*. Wherever *Predestination* unto Glory goes before, concerning any Person, there *Effectual Vocation* unto Faith and Holiness infallibly ensues: And where these never were, the other never was. So 2 *Thess.* 2. 13. *God hath chosen you from the Beginning unto Salvation, through the Sanctification of the Spirit*. Chosen we are unto Salvation, by the free *Sovereign Grace* of God: But how may this *Salvation* be actually obtained? how may we be brought into the *actual possession* of it? Through the *Sanctification of the Spirit*, and no otherwise. Whom God doth not sanctifie and make *Holy* by his Spirit, he never chose unto *Salvation* from the Beginning. The Councils of God therefore concerning us, do not depend on our *Holiness*; but upon our *Holiness* our future *Happiness* depends in the Councils of God.

Hence we may see, wherein lyes the *Force* of the Argument for the *Necessity of Holiness*, from Gods Decree of Election; and it consists in these two things:

Sect. 4.

(1) That such is the *Nature* of the *unalterable Decree* of God in this Matter, that no Person living, can ever attain the *End of Glory and Happiness*, without the *Means of Grace and Holiness*. The same *Eternal Purpose* respecteth both. I shall afterwards shew, how the infallible and indissoluble Connexion of these things is established by the Law of God. Our present Argument is from hence, that it is *fixed* by Gods *Eternal Decree*. He hath ordained none to Salvation, but he hath ordained them Antecedently to be *Holy*. Not the least *Infant* that goes out of this World, shall come to *Eternal Rest*, unless it be *sanctified*, and so made *habitually and radically Holy*. He chooseth none to Salvation but *through the sanctification of the Spirit*. As therefore whatever else we have or may seem to have, it is contrary to the *Nature* of God, that we should come to the Enjoyment of him, if we are not *holy*, so it is contrary to his *Eternal and unchangeable Decree* also.

(2) It ariseth from hence, that we can have no *Evidence* of our *Interest* in Gods Decree of Election, whereby we are designed unto

Sect. 5.

X x x

Life

Life and Glory, without *Holiness* effectually wrought in us. Wherefore, as our *Life* depends upon it, so do all our *Comforts*. To this Purpose speaks our Apostle, *2 Tim. 2. 19. The Foundation of God standeth sure, having this Seal, The Lord knoweth who are his.* It is the Decree of *Election* which he intends, and he proposeth it as that alone which will give security against *Apostasy* in a time of great Temptations and Trials; As our Saviour doth likewise, *Matth. 24. 24.* Every thing else will fail, but what is an especial Fruit and Effect of this Decree. What therefore is incumbent on us with respect thereunto, that we may know we have an Interest in this single Security against final *Apostasy*? saith the Apostle, *And let every one that nameth the Name of Christ, depart from Iniquity.* There is no other way to come unto an Evidence thereof, but by a Departure from all *Iniquity*, by universal *Holiness*. So the Apostle *Peter* directs us, to give all diligence to make our *Election* sure, *2 Pet. 1. 10.* Sure it is in it self, from all Eternity. *The Foundation of God standeth sure.* But our Duty it is to make it sure, and certain unto our selves. And this is a thing of the highest Importance and Concernment unto us, whence we are required to give all Diligence unto that End. How then may this be done or effected? This he declares in the foregoing Verses, and it is only by finding in our selves, and duely Exercising that Train of Gospel Graces and Duties which he there enumerates, *Vers. 5, 6, 7, 8, 9.*

Sect. 6. It is evident therefore and necessary from Gods Decree of *Election*, that if we intend either *Eternal Glory* hereafter, or any *Consolation* or *Affurance* here, that we must endeavour to be *holy*, and *unblameable before him in Love*. For whomsoever God purposeth to save, he purposeth first to *sanctify*; neither have we any ground to suppose, that we are built on that *Foundation* of God which standeth sure, unless we depart from all *Iniquity*. What further *Motives* may be taken from the especial Nature of this Decree, shall be considered when we have removed one Objection out of our way.

Sect. 7. Some there are, who apprehend that these things are quite otherwise. For they say, that a Supposition of Gods Decree of *personal Election* is a Discouragement unto all Endeavours for *Holiness*, and an effectual Obstruction thereof in the Lives of Men. And under this pretense chiefly, is the Doctrine concerning it blasphemed and evil spoken of. For, say they, if God have freely from Eternity chosen men unto Salvation, what need is there that they should be Holy? They may live securely in the pursuit of their Lusts, and be sure not to fail of Heaven at the last. For Gods Decree cannot be frustrated, nor his Will resisted. And if men be not elected, whatever they endeavour in the Ways of Holy Obedience, it will be utterly lost, for eternally saved they cannot, they shall not be. This therefore is so far from being a Conviction of the Necessity of *Holiness*, and a Motive unto it, as that indeed it renders it unnecessary and useless; yea defeats the Power and Efficacy of all other Arguments for it, and Motives unto it.

Now this Objection, if not for the sake of those who make use of it as a Cavil against the Truth, yet of those who may feel the force of it in the way of a Temptation, must be removed out of our way: To this End, I answer two Things:

1. In

1. In *general*; that this *Perswasion* is not of him that calleth us. This way of *arguing* is not taught in the Scripture, nor can thence be learned. The Doctrine of Gods free *Electing Love* and *Grace* is fully declared therein. And withall, it is proposed as the *Fountain* of all *Holiness*, and made a great *Motive* thereunto. Is it not safer now for us to adhere to the plain *Testimonies* of *Scripture*, confirmed by the *Experience* of the Generality of Believers, captivating our Understandings to the Obedience of *Faith*, than hearken unto such perverse Cavils as would possess our Minds with a *Dislike* of God and his Wayes? Those who hate *Gospel Holiness*, or would substitute something else in the room of it, will never want Exceptions against all its Concernments. An *Holiness* they lay claim unto, and plead an Interest in. For, as I said formerly, a Confession in *general* of the Necessity hereof, is almost the onely thing wherein all that are called *Christians* do agree. But such an *Holiness* they would have, as doth not spring from *Eternal Divine Election*, as is not wrought in us Originally by the Almighty *Efficacy* of *Grace* in our Conversion, as is not promoted by free *Justification*, through the Imputation of the *Righteousness* of *Christ*. Now this is such an *Holiness* as the Scripture knoweth nothing of, unless it be to reject and condemn it. Wherefore, this Objection proceeding onely from the Craft of Sathan, opposing the Wayes and Methods of Gods *Grace*, when he dareth not openly oppose the thing it self, it is safer for a Believer to rest quietly in clear *Scripture Revelation*, than to attend unto such proud, perverse and froward Cavillings.

2. In *particular*; we are not onely obliged to believe all *Divine Revelations*, but also in the *Way, Order* and *Method* wherein by the *Will* of God they are proposed unto us, and which is required by the *Nature* of the things themselves. For Instance, The Belief of *Eternal + Life* is required in the Gospel: But yet no man is obliged to Believe, that he shall be *eternally saved* whilst he lives in his Sins, but rather the contrary. On this Supposition, which is plain and evident, I shall in the ensuing Propositions, utterly cast this Objection out of Consideration. Sect. 9.

(1) The Decree of *Election* considered *absolutely* in it self, without respect unto its *Effects*, is no part of Gods *revealed Will*. That is, it is not Revealed, that this or that man, is, or is not *elect*ed. This therefore can be made neither Argument nor Objection, about any thing wherein *Faith* or *Obedience* are concerned; For we know it not, we cannot know it, it is not our Duty to know it, the Knowledge of it is not proposed as of any *use* unto us, yea it it is our *sin* to enquire into it. It may seem to some, to be like the *Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil* unto *Eve*; good for *Food*, pleasant to the *Eyes*, and much to be *desired* to make one *wise*, as all secret Forbidden things seem to carnal Minds. But men can gather no *Fruit* from it but Death. See *Deut. 29. 29*. Whatever *Exceptions* therefore are laid against this Decree as it is in it self, whatever *Inferences* are made, on supposition of this or that mans being or not being *elect*ed, they are all *unjust* and *unreasonable*, yea proved *contending with God*, who hath appointed another Sect. 10.

another Way for the Discovery hereof, as we shall see afterwards.

Sect. 11.

(2) God sends the *Gospel* to men in pursuit of his *Decree of Election*, and in order unto its effectual Accomplishment. I dispute not what other End it hath or may have, in its *indefinite proposal* unto all. But this is the first *Regulating, principal* End of it. Wherefore, in the preaching of it, our Apostle affirms, that he *endured all things for the Elects sake, that they might obtain the Salvation which is in Jesus Christ, with eternal Glory*, 2 Tim. 2. 10. So God before-hand commanded him to stay and preach the Gospel at *Corinth*, because *he had much People in that City*, namely, in his Purpose of Grace, Acts 18. 10. See Chap. 2. 47. Chap. 13. 48.

Sect. 12.

(3) Wherever this *Gospel* comes, it proposeth *Life and Salvation by Jesus Christ*, unto all that shall *believe, repent*, and yield *Obedience* unto him. It plainly makes known unto men their *Duty*, and plainly proposeth unto them their *Reward*. In this state of things, no man without the highest *Pride* and utmost Effect of *Unbelief*, can oppose the secret *Decree* of God unto our known *Duty*. Saith such a one, I will neither *repent*, nor *believe*, nor *obey*, unless I may first know whether I am *Elected* or no, for all at last will depend thereon. If this be the Resolution of any man, he may go about his other Occasions, the Gospel hath nothing to *say* or *offer* unto him. If he will admit of it on no other terms, but that he may set up his *own Will and Wisdom* and *Methods*, in Opposition unto and Exclusion of those of *God*, he must, for ought I know, take his own Course, whereof he may Repent when it is too late.

Sect. 13.

(4) The *sole Way* of God's Appointment, whereby we may come to an Apprehension of an Interest in *Election*, is by the *Fruits* of it in our *own Souls*: Nor is it Lawfull for us to enquire into it or after it any other way. The Obligation which the Gospel puts upon us to *believe* any thing, respects the *Order* of the Things themselves to be Believed, and the *Order* of our *Obedience*, as was before observed. For instance; when it is declared, that *Christ dyed for Sinners*, no man is immediately obliged to believe, that Christ dyed for him in *particular*, but only that he dyed to *save Sinners*, to procure a *Way of Salvation* for them, among whom he finds himself to be. Hereon the Gospel requires of men *Faith* and *Obedience*: This are they obliged to comply withall. Untill this be done, no man is under an Obligation to believe, *that Christ dyed for him in particular*. So is it in this matter of *Election*: A man is obliged to believe the *Doctrine* of it upon the first Promulgation of the Gospel, because it is therein plainly declared. But as for his own *personal Election*, he cannot believe it, nor is obliged to believe it any otherwise, but as God reveals it by its *Effects*. No man ought, no man can justly Question his own *Election*, doubt of it, or disbelieve it, untill he be in such a Condition as wherein it is impossible that the *Effects* of Election should ever be wrought in him; if such a Condition there be in this World. For as a man whilst he is *unholy* can have no Evidence that he is *elect*, so he can have none that he is *not elect*, whilst it is possible that
ever

ever he *may be Holy*. Wherefore, whether men are *Elected* or no, is not that which God calls any immediately to be conversant about. *Faith, Obedience, Holiness*, are the inseparable Fruits, Effects, and Consequents of *Election*; as hath been proved before. See *Ephes. 1. 4. 2 Thess. 2. 13. Tit. 1. 1. Acts 13. 48*. In whomsoever these things are wrought, he is obliged according to the Method of God and the Gospel, to believe his own *Election*: And any Believer may have the same Assurance of it as he hath of his *Calling, Sanctification or Justification*; for these things are inseparable. And by the *Exercise* of Grace are we obliged to secure our Interest in *Election*, *2 Pet. 1. 11*. But as for those who are as yet *Unbelievers* and *unholy*, they can draw no Conclusion that they are not *elect*, but from this Supposition, that they are in a state and Condition wherein it is impossible that ever they should have either *Grace* or *Holiness*; which cannot be supposed concerning any man but he that knowes himself to have sinned against the *Holy Ghost*.

Wherefore, all the supposed *strength* of the Objection mentioned, lieth onely in the *Pride* of mens Minds and Wills, refusing to submit themselves unto the Order and Method of God in the Dispensation of his *Grace*, and his Prescription of their *Duty*, where we must leave it.

To return unto our designed Discourse. The Doctrine of Gods *Eternal Election* is every where in the Scripture proposed for the *Encouragement* and *Consolation* of Believers, and to further them in their Course of *Obedience* and *Holiness*. See *Ephes. 1. 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10. Rom. 8. 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33*. As unto Mens present Concernment therein, it is infallibly assured unto them by its *Effects*; and being so, it is filled with *Motives* unto Holiness, as we shall now further declare in particular.

Sect. 14.

First, The *Sovereign* and ever to be Adored *Grace* and *Love* of God herein, is a powerfull *Motive* hereunto. For we have no way to express our *Repentment* of this *Grace*, our *Acknowledgement* of it, our *Thankfulness* for it, but by an *holy fruitfull* Course of *Obedience*; nor doth God on the Account hereof require any thing else of us. Let us therefore enquire what Sence and Obligation this puts upon us; That God from all Eternity, out of his meer *Sovereign Grace*, not moved by any thing in our selves, should first choose us unto *Life* and *Salvation* by Jesus Christ, decreeing immutably to save us out of the perishing multitude of Mankind, from whom we neither then did in his Eye or Consideration, nor by any thing in our selves ever would differ in the least? What *Impression* doth this make upon our Souls? What *Conclusion* as to our Practice and Obedience do we hence educe? Why saith one, *If God hath thus chosen me, I may then live in sin as I please, all will be well and safe in the latter End, which is all I need care for*: But this is the Language of a *Devil*, and not of a *Man*. Suggestions possibly of this nature, by the Craft of Sathan, in Conjunction with the Deceitfulness of Sin, may be injected into the Minds of Believers; as what may not so be? But he that shall foment, embrace, and act *practically* according to this Inference, is such a *monster* of *Impiety* and *presumptuous Ingratitude*, as Hell it self cannot parallel, in many

another Way for the Discovery hereof, as we shall see afterwards.

Sect. 11.

(2) God sends the *Gospel* to men in pursuit of his *Decree of Election*, and in order unto its effectual Accomplishment. I dispute not what other End it hath or may have, in its *indefinite proposal* unto all. But this is the first *Regulating, principal* End of it. Wherefore, in the preaching of it, our Apostle affirms, that he *endured all things for the Elects sake, that they might obtain the Salvation which is in Jesus Christ, with eternal Glory*, 2 Tim. 2. 10. So God before-hand commanded him to stay and preach the Gospel at *Corinth*, because *he had much People in that City*, namely, in his Purpose of Grace, Acts 18. 10. See Chap. 2. 47. Chap. 13. 48.

Sect. 12.

(3) Wherever this *Gospel* comes, it proposeth *Life and Salvation by Jesus Christ*, unto all that shall *believe, repent*, and yield *Obedience* unto him. It plainly makes known unto men their *Duty*, and plainly proposeth unto them their *Reward*. In this state of things, no man without the highest *Pride* and utmost Effect of *Unbelief*, can oppose the secret *Decree* of God unto our known *Duty*. Saith such a one, I will neither *repent*, nor *believe*, nor *obey*, unless I may first know whether I am *Elected* or no, for all at last will depend thereon. If this be the Resolution of any man, he may go about his other Occasions, the Gospel hath nothing to *say* or *offer* unto him. If he will admit of it on no other terms, but that he may set up his *own* Will and Wisdom and Methods, in Opposition unto and Exclusion of those of *God*, he must, for ought I know, take his own Course, whereof he may Repent when it is too late.

Sect. 13.

(4) The *sole Way* of God's Appointment, whereby we may come to an Apprehension of an Interest in *Election*, is by the *Fruits* of it in our *own Souls*: Nor is it Lawfull for us to enquire into it or after it any other way. The Obligation which the Gospel puts upon us to *believe* any thing, respects the *Order* of the Things themselves to be Believed, and the *Order* of our *Obedience*, as was before observed. For instance; when it is declared, that *Christ dyed for Sinners*, no man is immediately obliged to believe, that Christ dyed for him in *particular*, but only that he dyed to *save Sinners*, to procure a *Way of Salvation* for them, among whom he finds himself to be. Hereon the Gospel requires of men *Faith and Obedience*: This are they obliged to comply withall. Untill this be done, no man is under an Obligation to believe, that *Christ dyed for him in particular*. So is it in this matter of *Election*: A man is obliged to believe the *Doctrine* of it upon the first Promulgation of the Gospel, because it is therein plainly declared. But as for his own *personal Election*, he cannot believe it, nor is obliged to believe it any otherwise, but as God reveals it by its *Effects*. No man ought, no man can justly Question his own *Election*, doubt of it, or disbelieve it, untill he be in such a Condition as wherein it is impossible that the *Effects* of Election should ever be wrought in him; if such a Condition there be in this World. For as a man whilst he is *unholy* can have no Evidence that he is *elected*, so he can have none that he is *not elected*, whilst it is possible that
ever

ever he *may be Holy*. Wherefore, whether men are *Elected* or no, is not that which God calls any immediately to be conversant about. *Faith, Obedience, Holiness*, are the inseparable Fruits, Effects, and Consequents of *Election*; as hath been proved before. See *Ephes. 1. 4. 2 Thess. 2. 13. Tit. 1. 1. Acts 13. 48*. In whomsoever these things are wrought, he is obliged according to the Method of God and the Gospel, to believe his own *Election*: And any Believer may have the same Assurance of it as he hath of his *Calling, Sanctification or Justification*; for these things are inseparable. And by the *Exercise* of Grace are we obliged to secure our Interest in *Election*, *2 Pet. 1. 11*. But as for those who are as yet *Unbelievers* and *unholy*, they can draw no Conclusion that they are not *elect*, but from this Supposition, that they are in a state and Condition wherein it is impossible that ever they should have either *Grace* or *Holiness*; which cannot be supposed concerning any man but he that knowes himself to have sinned against the *Holy Ghost*.

Wherefore, all the supposed *strength* of the Objection mentioned, lieth onely in the *Pride* of mens Minds and Wills, refusing to submit themselves unto the Order and Method of God in the Dispensation of his *Grace*, and his Prescription of their *Duty*, where we must leave it.

To return unto our designed Discourse. The Doctrine of Gods *Eternal Election* is every where in the Scripture proposed for the *Encouragement* and *Consolation* of Believers, and to further them in their Course of *Obedience* and *Holiness*. See *Ephes. 1. 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10. Rom. 8. 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33*. As unto Mens present Concernment therein, it is infallibly assured unto them by its *Effects*; and being so, it is filled with *Motives* unto *Holiness*, as we shall now further declare in particular.

Sect. 14.

First, The *Sovereign* and ever to be Adored *Grace* and *Love* of God herein, is a powerfull *Motive* hereunto. For we have no way to express our *Repentment* of this *Grace*, our *Acknowledgement* of it, our *Thankfulness* for it, but by an *holy fruitfull* Course of *Obedience*; nor doth God on the Account hereof require any thing else of us. Let us therefore enquire what Sence and Obligation this puts upon us; That God from all Eternity, out of his meer *Sovereign Grace*, not moved by any thing in our selves, should first choose us unto *Life* and *Salvation* by Jesus Christ, decreeing immutably to save us out of the perishing multitude of Mankind, from whom we neither then did in his Eye or Consideration, nor by any thing in our selves ever would differ in the least? What *Impression* doth this make upon our Souls? What *Conclusion* as to our Practice and Obedience do we hence educe? Why saith one, *If God hath thus chosen me, I may then live in sin as I please, all will be well and safe in the latter End, which is all I need care for*: But this is the Language of a *Devil*, and not of a *Man*. Suggestions possibly of this nature, by the Craft of Sathan, in Conjunction with the Deceitfulness of Sin, may be injected into the Minds of Believers; as what may not so be? But he that shall foment, embrace, and act *practically* according to this Inference, is such a *monster* of *Impiety* and *presumptuous Ingratitude*, as Hell it self cannot parallel, in many

many Instances. I shall use some Boldness in this Matter. He that doth not understand, who is not sensible, that an Apprehension by *Faith* of Gods *Electing Love* in Christ, hath a Natural, immediate, powerful Influence upon the Souls of *Believers*, unto the *Love of God* and *Holy Obedience*, is utterly unacquainted with the *Nature* of Faith, and its whole Work and Actings towards God, in the Hearts of them that believe. Is it possible, that any one who knowes these things, can suppose, that those in whom they are in *Sincerity* and *Power*, can be such stupid, impious and ungratefull *Monsters*, so devoid of all Holy Ingenuity, and filial Affections towards God, as meerly out of despight unto him, to cast Poyson into the *Spring* of all their own Mercies? Many have I known complain, that they could not arrive at a comfortable *Perswasion* of their own *Election*; never any, who when they had received it in a due Way and Manner, that it proved a *Snare* unto them, that it tended to ingenerate *looseness* of Life, *Unholiness*, or a Contempt of God in them. Besides, in the Scripture it is still proposed and made use of unto other Ends. And those who know any thing of the *Nature* of Faith, or of the *Love* of God, any thing of *Entercourse* or *Communion* with him by Jesus Christ, any thing of *Thankfulness*, *Obedience* or *Holiness*, will not be easily perswaded, but that Gods *Electing Love* and *Grace*, is a mighty constraining *Motive* unto the due Exercise of them all.

Sect. 15.

God himself *knoweth* this to be so, and therefore he maketh the Consideration of his *electing Love*, as free and undeserved, his principal *Argument* to stirre up the People unto holy Obedience, *Dent. 7. 6, 7, 8, 11.* And a Supposition hereof, lyes at the bottom of that blessed Exhortation of our Apostle, *Col. 3. 12. Put on therefore as the Elect of God, holy and beloved, Bowels of Mercy, Kindness, Humbleness of Mind, Meekness, Long-suffering, forbearing one another, forgiving one another.* These things which are so great a part of our *Holiness*, become the *Elect of God*; these are required of them on the Account of their Interest in *Electing Love* and *Grace*. Men may frame an *Holiness* to themselves, and be stirred up unto it by *Motives* of their own (as there is a *Religion* in the World, that runs in a parallel Line by that of *Evangelical Truth*, but toucheth it not, nor will do so to Eternity) but that which the *Gospel* requires, is promoted on the grounds and by the *Motives* that are peculiar unto it, whereof this of Gods free *electing Love* and *Grace* is among the principal. Farther to confirm this Truth, I shall instance in some especial *Graces*, *Duties*, and *parts* of *Holiness*, that this Consideration is suited to promote.

Sect. 16.

(1) *Humility* in all things, is a necessary Consequent of a due Consideration of this Decree of God. For what were we when he thus set his Heart upon us, to choose us, and to do us good for ever? Poor lost undone Creatures, that lay *perishing* under the Guilt of our Apostasie from him? What did he see in us, to move him so to choose us, nothing but Sin and Misery? What did he foresee that we would doe of our selves more than others, if he wrought not in us by his *effectual Grace*? nothing but a Continuance in *Sin* and *Rebellion* against him, and that for ever. How should the Thoughts hereof, keep our Souls

in

in all *Humility* and continual self-abasement. For what have we in or from our selves, on the Account whereof we should be lifted up? Wherefore, as the *Elect of God*, let us *put on Humility* in all things. And let me adde, that there is no *Grace* whereby at this Day we may more glorifie God and the Gospel, now the World is sinking into Ruine under the weight of its own *Pride*.

The *Spirits* of men, the *Looks* of men, the *Tongues* of men, the *Lives* of men, are lifted up by their *Pride* unto their Destruction. The Good Lord keep *Professors* from a share in the *Pride* of these Dayes. *Spiritual Pride* in foolish self-exalting Opinions, and the *Pride of Life* in the Fashions of the World, are the *Poyson* of this Age.

(2) *Submission* to the *Sovereign Will* and *Pleasure* of God, in the Disposal of all our *Concerns* in this World: That this is an excellent *Fruit of Faith*, an eminent part of *Holiness*, or *Duty of Obedience*, is acknowledged; and never was it more signally called for than it is at this day. He that cannot live in an *Actual Resignation* of himself and all his *Concerns* unto the *Sovereign Pleasure* of God, can neither glorifie him in any thing, nor have one hours *solid Peace* in his own Mind. This *publick Calamities*, this *private Dangers* and *Losses*, this the *uncertainty* of all things here below, call for at present in an *especial Manner*. God hath taken all *Pretences of security* from the Earth, by what some men *feel*, and some men *fear*. None knowes how soon it may be his *Portion*, to be brought unto the *utmost Extremity* of *Earthly Calamities*. There is none so *old*, none so *young*, none so *wise*, none so *rich*, as thence to expect *Relief* from such things. Where then shall we in this Condition cast Anchor? whither shall we betake our selves for *Quietness* and *Repose*? It is no way to be obtained, but in a *Resignation* of our selves and all our *Concernments* into the *Sovereign Pleasure* of God: And what greater *Motive* can we have thereunto than this? The first Act of *Divine Sovereign Pleasure* concerning us, was the *choosing* of us from all *Eternity* unto *Holiness* and *Happiness*. This was done when we were not, when we had no *Contrivances* of our own. And shall we not now put all our *Temporary Concerns* into the same Hand? Can the same Fountain send out *sweet* and *bitter* water? Can the same *Sovereign Pleasure* of God, be the free only *Cause* of all our *Blessedness*, and can it do that which is *really Evil* unto us? Our *Souls*, our *Persons*, were secure and blessedly provided for, as to *Grace* and *Glory*, in the *Sovereign Will* of God; and what a *Prodigious Impiety* is it, not to trust all other things in the same Hand, to be disposed of freely and absolutely? If we will not forgoe our *Interest* in meer *Absolute Free Sovereign Grace* for ten thousand Worlds, as no *Believer* will, how ready should we be to resign up thereunto that *little Portion* which we have in this World among *perishing* things?

(3) *Love, Kindness, Compassion, Forbearance* towards all *Believers*, all the *Saints* of God, however differenced among themselves, are made indispensibly *necessary* unto us, and pressed on us from the same *Consideration*. And herein also doth no small part of our *Holiness* consist. To this purpose is the *Exhortation* of the *Apostle* before mentioned, *Col. 3. 12*. For, if God have *chosen* them all from *Eternity*,
and

Sect. 17.

Sect. 18.

and made them the Objects of his *Love* and *Grace*, as he hath done so concerning all *sincere Believers*, do we not think it necessary, doth not God require of us, that we should *love* them also? How dare any of us entertain unkind severe Thoughts, how dare we maintain Animosities and Enmities against any of them whom God hath *Eternally chosen* to *Grace* and *Glory*? Such things, it may be, upon Provocations, and Surprizals, and clashings of Secular Interests, have fallen out, and will fall out amongst us; But they are all opposite and contrary unto that Influence which the Consideration of *Gods Electing Love* ought to have upon us. The Apostles Rule is, That as unto our *Communion* in *Love*, we ought to receive him whom *God* hath received, and *because* God hath received him, against which no other thing can be laid in barr, *Rom. 14. 1, 3.* And the Rule is no less certain, yea is subject to less Exceptions, that we ought to *choose, embrace* and *love*, all those whoever they be, whom God hath *chosen* and loved from *Eternity*. There is no greater Evidence of *low, weak, selfish* Christians, than to prescribe any other Rules or Bounds unto their spiritual Evangelical *Affections*, than the Decree of *Gods Election*, as manifesting it self in its Effects. *I endure all things*, saith our Apostle, not for the *Jews* or *Gentiles*, not for the *weak* or *strong* in the Faith, not for those of this or that Way, but *for the Elects sake*. This should regulate our *Love*, and mightily stirre it up unto all *Actings* of Kindness, Mercy, Compassion, Forbearance, and Forgiveness.

Sect. 19.

(4) *Contempt of the World*, and all that belongs unto it, will hence also be ingenerated in us. Did God set his Heart upon *some* from *Eternity*? did he *choose* them to be his own *peculiar*, to distinguish them as *his* from all the residue of Mankind? Doth he design to give them the highest, greatest, best Fruits and Effects of his *Love*, and Glorifie himself in their Prayses for ever? What then will he do for them? Will he make them all *Kings* or *Emperours* in the World? Or at least, will he have them to be Rich, and Noble, and Honourable among men, that it may be known and proclaimed, *Thus shall it be done to the Man whom the King of Heaven delighteth to honour*; however, that they should be kept from Streights, and Difficulties, and Trials, from Poverty, and Shame, and Reproach in the World? Alas! none of these things were in the least in the Heart of God concerning them. They deserve not to be named on the same day, as we use to speak, with the least of those things which God hath chosen *his* unto. Were there any real substantial *Good* in them on their own Account, he would not have cast them out of the Councils of his *Love*. But on the contrary, *You see your Calling, Brethren*, which is the infallible fruit and consequent of Election, how that not many *Wise men* after the *Flesh*, not many *Noble*, not many *Mighty* are called, but God hath chosen the *Poor of the World*, the *Base* and the *Contemptible*, for the most part. Yea, he hath designed the Generality of his *Elect* to a *poor, low, and afflicted* Condition in this World. And shall we set our *Hearts* on those things that God hath so manifestly put an *under-valuation* upon, in Comparison of the least Concernment of *Grace* and *Holiness*? Wherefore, let them that are *poor* and *despised* in the World, learn to be *satisfied* with their State and Condition: Had God seen it to have been
good

good for you to have been otherwise, he would not have passed it by, when he was acting *Eternal Love* towards you. And let them that are *Rich*, not set their Hearts upon *uncertain Riches*. Alas! they are things which God had no regard unto, when he prepared *Grace* and *Glory* for his *own*. Let the Remembrance hereof suit your *esteem* and *valuation* of them, and let it *cool* your spirits in your eager pursuit after them. Do but think with your selves, that these are not the Things that God had any Regard unto, when he chose us unto *Grace* and *Glory*, and it will abate of your *Cares* about them, cool your *love* towards them, and take off your *Hearts* from them, which is your *Holiness*.

Secondly, *Electing Love* is a *Motive* and *Encouragement* unto Holiness, because of the *enabling Supplies* of *Grace* which we may and ought thence to expect by Jesus Christ. The Difficulties we meet withall in a Course of *Holiness*, are great and many. Here Sathan, the World, and Sin, do put forth and try their utmost *strength*; oft-times the Best are foyled, oft-times discouraged, sometimes weary and ready to give over: It requires a good *spiritual Courage*, to take a Prospect of the Lyons, Serpents and Snares, that lye in the Way of a *constant persevering Course* in *Gospel Obedience*. Hereon our *knees* are ready to grow feeble, and our *hands* to hang down. It is no small Relief herein, no small Encouragement to continue in our Progress, that the *Fountain* of *Electing Grace*, will never fail us, but continually give out *Supplies* of *spiritual Strength* and Refreshment. Hence may we take heart and courage, to rise again when we have been foyled, to abide when the shock of Temptation is violent, and to persevere in those Duties which are most wearisome to the Flesh. And they are unacquainted with a Course of *Holy Obedience*, who know not how needfull this *Consideration* is unto a comfortable Continuance therein. Sect. 20.

Thirdly, It hath the same *Tendency* and Effect in the *Assurance* we have from thence, that notwithstanding all the Oppositions we meet withall, we shall not utterly and finally miscarry. Gods Election will at last obtain; Rom. 11. 7. and His Foundation standeth sure, 2 Tim. 1. 19. His Purpose which is according unto Election, is unchangeable; and therefore the final Perseverance and Salvation of those concerned in it, are everlastingly secured. This is the Design of the Apostles Discourse, Rom. 8. from v. 28. unto the end. Because of the immutability of Gods *Eternal Purpose* in our *Predestination*, and his effectual gracious Operations, in the Pursuit, and for the Execution thereof, the Elect of God shall infallibly be carried through all, even the most dreadfull Oppositions that are made against them, and be at length safely Landed in *Glory*. And there is no greater Encouragement to grow and persist in *Holiness*, than what is administred by this *Assurance* of a blessed End and Issue of it. Sect. 21.

Those who have had Experience of that *spiritual slumber* and *sloth* which *Unbelief* will cast us under, of those Weaknesses, Discouragements and Despondencies, which *Uncertainties*, *Doubts*, *Fears* and *Perplexities* of what will be the Issue of things at last with them, doe cast

upon the Souls of men, how *Duties* are discouraged, *spiritual Endeavours* and *Diligence* are impaired, *Delight* in God weakened, and *Love* cooled by them, will be able to make a right Judgement of the Truth of this Assertion. Some think that this Apprehension of the *immutability* of Gods Purpose of *Election*, and the *Infallibility* of the Salvation of *Believers* on that Account, tends only to *Carelesness* and *Security* in sin; and that to be alwayes in Fear, Dread, and Uncertainty of the *End*, is the only Means to make us *Watchfull* unto Duties of *Holiness*. It is very sad, that any man should so far proclaim his inexperience and unacquaintedness with the *Nature* of *Gospel Grace*, the *Genius* and Inclination of the *New Creature*, and the proper *workings* of *Faith*, as to be able thus to argue, without a Check put upon him by himself and from his own *Experience*. It is true, were there no Difference between *Faith* and *Presumption*, no Difference between the Spirit of *Liberty* under the *Covenant of Grace*, and that of *Bondage* under the *Old Covenant*; no Spirit of *Adoption* given unto *Believers*, no Filial genuine *Delight* in and *Adherence* unto God, ingenerated in them thereby, there might be something in this Objection: But if the *Nature* of *Faith*, and of the *New Creature*, the Operations of the one and Disposition of the other, are such as they are declared to be in the *Gospel*, and as *Believers* have *Experience* of them in their own Hearts; men do but bewray their Ignorance, whilest they contend, that the *Assurance* of Gods unchangeable *Love* in Christ, flowing from the *Immutability* of his Council in *Election*, doth any way impeach, or doth not effectually promote the *Industry* of *Believers* in all Duties of *Obedience*.

Sect. 23. Suppose a Man that is on his *Journey*, knoweth himself to be in his *right Way*, and that passing on therein, he shall certainly and infallibly come to his Journeys End, especially if he will a little quicken his *speed*, as Occasion shall require; will you say, that this is enough to make such a man *Careless* and *Negligent*, and that it would be much more to his *Advantage* to be *lost* and *bewildred* in uncertain Paths and Wayes, not knowing whither he goes, nor whether he shall ever arrive at his Journeys End? Common *Experience* declares the contrary, as also how *momentary* and *useless* are those violent Fits and Gusts of Endeavours, which proceed from *Fear* and *Uncertainty*, both in things *Spiritual* and *Temporal*, or *Civil*. Whilest men are under the Power of Actual Impressions from such *Fears*, they will convert to God, yea that they will *Memento turbinis*, and perfect *Holiness* in an instant: But so soon as that *Impression* wears off, (as it will doe on every Occasion, and upon none at all) such Persons are as *dead* and *cold* towards God, as the Lead or Iron, which ran but now in a *fiery stream*, is when the Heat is departed from it. It is that Soul alone ordinarily, which hath a *comfortable Assurance* of Gods Eternal Immutable *Electing Love*, and thence of the blessed *End* of its own Course of *Obedience*, who goeth on *constantly* and *evenly* in a Course of *Holiness*, quickening his Course, and doubling his speed as he hath Occasion from Trials or Opportunities. And this is the very Design of our Apostle, to explain and confirm, *Heb. 6.* from the tenth Verse unto the end of the Chapter, as is declared elsewhere.

It

It appears from what hath been discoursed, that the *Electing Love* of God, is a powerfull contraining *Motive* unto *Holiness*, and that which proves invincibly, the *Necessity* of it in all who intend the *Eternal Enjoyment* of God. But it will be said, That if it be supposed or granted, that those who are *Actually Believers*, and have a sence of their *Interest* herein, may make the use of it that is pleaded; yet as for those who are *unconverted*, or are otherwise uncertain of their *spiritual State* and *Condition*, nothing can be so *discouraging* unto them as this Doctrine of *Eternal Election*. Can they make any other Conclusion from it, but that, *If they are not Electèd, all Care and Pains in and about Duties of Obedience are Vain; if they are, they are Needless.* The *Removal* of this Objection shall put a Close unto our Discourse on this Subject. And I Answer:

Sect. 24.

(1) That we have shewed already, that this Doctrine is *revealed* and *proposed* in the *Scripture*, principally to acquaint *Believers* with their Priviledge, Safety, and Fountain of their *Comforts*. Having therefore proved its *Usefulness* unto them, I have discharged all that is absolutely *needfull* to my present Purpose. But I shall shew moreover, that it hath its *proper Benefit* and *Advantage* towards others also.

Sect. 25.

For, (2) Suppose the Doctrine of *Personal Election* be Preached unto Men, together with the other *Sacred Truths* of the Gospel: Two *Conclusions*, it is possible, may by sundry Persons be made from it. (*First,*) That whereas this is a Matter of great and *Eternal Moment* unto our *Souls*, and there is no way to secure our *Interest* in it, but by the Possession of its *Fruits* and *Effects*, which are saving *Faith* and *Holiness*; we will, we must, it is our Duty, to use our *utmost Endeavours*, by Attaining of them, and Growth in them, to make our *Election* sure. And herein, if we be *sincere* and *diligent*, we shall not fail. Others (*Secondly*) may conclude, That if it be so indeed, that those who shall be *saved* are *chosen* thereunto *before the Foundation of the World*, then it is to no Purpose to go about to *Believe* or *Obey*, seeing all things must fall out at last, according as they were Fore-ordained. Now I ask, which of these Conclusions, is (I will not say, *most suited* unto the Mind and Will of God, with that Subjection of Soul and Conscience which we owe to his *Sovereign Wisdom* and *Authority*, but whether of them is) the *most rational*, and most suitable to the Principles of sober *Love of our selves*, and Care of our *Immortal Condition*? Nothing is more certain, than that the latter *Resolution* will be infallibly Destructive (if pursued) of all the *Everlasting Concernments* of our Souls; Death and Eternal Condemnation are the unavoidable Issues of it. No man giving himself up to the Conduct of that Conclusion, shall ever come to the *Enjoyment* of God. But in the other way, it is possible at least; that a man may be found to be the Object of Gods *Electing Love*, and so be *saved*. But why doe I say, it is possible? there is nothing more *infallibly certain*, than that he who pursues Sincerely and Diligently the Wayes of *Faith* and *Obedience*,

which are, as we have often said, the *Fruits* of *Election*, shall obtain in the End *Everlasting Blessedness*; and ordinarily, shall have in this World a *Comfortable Evidence* of their own *personal Election*. This therefore on all Accounts, and towards all sorts of Persons, is an invincible Argument of the *Necessity* of *Holiness*, and a mighty *Motive* thereunto: For it is unavoidable, that if there be such a thing as *personal Election*, and that the *Fruits* of it are *Sanctification*, *Faith* and *Obedience*; it is utterly impossible, that without *Holiness* any one should *see God*, the *Reason* of which Consequence is apparent unto all.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Holiness Necessary from the Commands of God.

Necessity of Holiness proved, from the Commands of God in the Law and the Gospel.

WEE have evinced the *Necessity of Holiness* from the *Nature* and the *Decrees of God*: Our next Argument shall be taken from his *Word, or Commands*, as the *Nature and Order* of these things do require. And in this Case, it is needless to produce Instances of *Gods Commands*, that we should be *Holy*, it is the concurrent *Voyce of the Law and Gospel*. Our Apostle summes up the whole Matter; *1 Thess. 4. 1, 2, 3. We exhort you, that as you have received of us how you ought to walk, and please God, so you would abound more and more; for you know what Commandment we gave you, by the Lord Jesus; for this is the Will of God, even your Sanctification, or Holiness; whereunto he addes one especial Instance. This is that which the Commandements of Christ require, yea this is the summe of the whole Commanding Will of God. The substance of the Law is; Be ye Holy, for I the Lord your God am Holy, Levit. 11. 44. the same with what it is referred unto by our Saviour, Matth. 22. 37, 39. And whereas Holiness may be reduced unto two Heads: (1) The Renovation of the Image of God in us; (2) Universal Actual Obedience; they are the summe of the Preceptive Part of the Gospel, Ephes. 4. 22, 23, 24. Tit. 2. 11, 12. Hereof therefore there needeth no further Confirmation by especial Testimonies.*

Sect. 1.

Our Enquiry must be, What *Force* there is in this Argument, or whence we doe conclude unto a *Necessity of Holiness* from the *Command of God*. To this End, the *Nature* and proper *Adjuncts* of these *Commands* are to be considered; that is, we are to get our *Minds and Consciences affected* with them, so as to endeavour after *Holiness* on their Account, or with respect unto them. For whatever we may doe, which seems to have the *Matter of Holiness* in it, if we do it not with respect unto *Gods Command*, it hath not the *Nature of Holiness* in it. For our *Holiness* is our *Conformity and Obedience to the Will of God*; and it is a *Respect unto a Command* which makes any thing to be *Obedience*, or gives it the *formal Nature* thereof. Wherefore, as God rejects That from any place in his *Fear, Worship, or service*, which is resolved only into the *Doctrines or Precepts of Men*, *Isa. 29. 13.* so for men to pretend unto I know not what *Freedom, Light and Readiness* unto all *Holiness*, from a *Principle within*, without *Respect unto the Commands of God without*, as given in his *Word*,

Sect. 2.

Word, is to make *themselves* their own God, and to despise Obedience unto him who *is over all, God blessed for ever*: Then are we the *Servants of God*, Then are we the *Disciples of Christ*, when we do *what* is Commanded us, and *because* it is Commanded us. And what we are not *influenced unto* by the Authority of God in his *Commands*, we are not *principled for* by the Spirit of God administered in the *Promises*. Whatever Good any man doth in any Kind, if the *Reason* why he doth it be not Gods *Command*, it belongs neither to Holiness nor Obedience. Our Enquiry therefore is, after those things in the *Commands of God*, which put such an *indispensible Obligation* upon us unto *Holiness*, as that whatever we may *be* or we may *have* without it, will be of no Use or Advantage unto us, as unto Eternal Blessedness, or the Enjoyment of him.

Sect. 3.

But to make our Way more *clear* and *safe*, one thing must yet be premised unto these Considerations. And this is, that *Gods Commands* for *Holiness* may be considered two ways: (1) As they belong unto, and are Parts of the *Covenant of Works*; (2) As they belong and are inseparably annexed unto the *Covenant of Grace*. In both respects they are *materially* and *formally* the same; that is, the same *Things* are required in them, and the same *Person* requires them, and so their *Obligation* is Joyned and Equal. Not only the Commands of the *New Covenant* do oblige us unto Holiness, but those of the *Old* also, as to the Matter and Substance of them: But there is a great Difference in the *Manner* and *Ends* of these Commands, as considered so *distinctly*.

For, (1) The *Commands* of God as under the *Old Covenant*, do so require *universal Holiness* of us, in all Acts, Duties and Degrees of them, that upon the least Failure, in Substance, Circumstance, or Degree, they allow of nothing else we do, but Determine us *Transgressors of the whole Law*. For with respect unto them, *whosoever shall keep the whole Law, and yet offend in one point, is Guilty of all*, James 2. 10. Now I acknowledge, that although there ariseth from hence an *Obligation unto Holiness*, to them who are under that Covenant, and such a *Necessity* of it, as that without it they must certainly perish; yet no Argument of the Nature with those which I insist upon, can hence be taken to *press* us unto it. For no Arguments are *forceable* unto this Purpose, but such as include *Encouragements* in them unto what they urge. But *that*, this Consideration of the *Command* knoweth nothing of, seeing a *Compliance* with it is in our Lapsed Condition absolutely impossible; and for the Things that are so, we can have no Endeavours. And hence it is, that no man influenced only by the *Commands* of the Law, or first Covenant *absolutely* considered, whatever in particular he might be forced or compelled unto, did ever sincerely Ayme or Endeavour after *universal Holiness*.

Sect. 4.

Men may be subdued by the *Power* of the Law, and *compelled* to habituate themselves unto a *strict* Course of Duty, and being advantaged therein, by a *sedate* Natural Constitution, desire of *Applause*, *Self-Righteousness*, or *Superstition*, may make a great Appearance of *Holiness*. But if the *Principle* of what they do be onely the *Commands* of the Law, they never tread one *true step* in the Paths of it.

(2) The

(2) The *End* why these Commands require all the Duties of *Holiness* of us, is that they may be our *Righteousness* before God, or that we may be *Justified* thereby. For *Moses* describeth the *Righteousness* which is of the Law, that the Man which doth those things shall live by them, *Rom.* 10. 5. that is, it requires of us all Duties of Obedience unto this *End*, that we may have *Justification* and *Eternal Life* by them. But neither on this Account can any such Argument be taken as those we enquire into. For by the deeds of the Law no man can be justified: If thou Lord shouldest mark Iniquities, O Lord who shall stand? *Psal.* 130. 3. So prays *David*, Enter not into Judgment with thy Servant, for in thy sight shall no man living be justified, *Psal.* 143. 2. *Rom.* 3. 20. *Gal.* 2. 16. And if none can attain the *End* of the Command, as in this fence they cannot, what Argument can we take from thence to prevail with them unto Obedience? Whoever therefore presseth men unto *Holiness*, meerly on the Commands of the Law, and for the *Ends* of it, doth but put them upon tormenting Disquietments, and deceive their Souls. However men are indispensibly obliged hereby, and must Eternally perish for want of what the Law so requires, who do not or will not by Faith comply with the only Remedy and Provision that God hath made in this Case. And for this Reason are we necessitated to deny a Possibility of Salvation unto all to whom the Gospel is not preached, as well as unto those by whom it is refused. For they are left unto this Law, whose Precepts they cannot answer, and whose *End* they cannot attain.

Sect. 5.

It is otherwise on both these Accounts with the Commands of God for Holiness under the New Covenant, or in the Gospel. For,

(1) Although God in them requireth universal Holiness of us, yet he doth not do it in that strict and rigorous way as by the Law, so as that if we fail in any thing either as to the Matter or Manner of its performance, in the Substance of it, or as to the Degrees of its Perfection, that thereon both that and all we doe besides, should be rejected. But he doth it with a Contemperation of Grace and Mercy, so as that if there be an universal sincerity, in a Respect unto all his Commands, he both pardoneth many sins, and accepts of what we doe, though it come short of Legal Perfection; both on the Account of the Mediation of Christ. Yet this hindreth not, but that the Law or Command of the Gospel doth still require universal Holiness of us, and a Perfection therein, which we are to do our utmost Endeavour to comply withall, though we have a Relief provided in sincerity on the one hand, and Mercy on the other. For the Commands of the Gospel doe still declare what God approves, and what he doth condemn, which is no less than all Holiness on the one hand, and all Sin on the other, as exactly and extensively as under the Law. For this the very Nature of God requireth, and the Gospel is not the Ministry of Sin, so as to give an Allowance or Indulgence unto the least, although in it Pardon be provided for a multitude of sins by Jesus Christ. The Obligation on us unto Holiness is Equal as unto what it was under the Law, though a Relief be provided where unavoidably we come short of it. There is therefore nothing more certain, than that there is no Relaxa-

Sect. 6.

tion

tion given us as unto any Duty of *Holiness*, by the Gospel, nor any Indulgence unto the least sin. But yet upon the Supposition of the Acceptance of *Sincerity*, and a *perfection of Parts*, instead of *Degrees*, with the *Mercy* provided for our Failings and Sins; there is an Argument to be taken from the *Command* of it unto an indispensable *Necessity* of *Holiness*, including in it the highest *Encouragement* to endeavour after it. For, together with the *Command*, there is also *Grace administered*, enabling us unto that Obedience which God will accept. Nothing therefore can avoid or evacuate the Power of this *Command* and Argument from it, but a stubborn *Contempt* of God, arising from the Love of *sin*.

Sect. 7. (2) The *Commands* of the *Gospel* do not require *Holiness* and the Duties of *Righteousness* of us, to the *same End* as the *Commands* of the *Law* did, namely, that thereby we might be *Justified in the sight of God*. For, whereas God now accepts from us an *Holiness* short of that which the *Law* required, if he did it still for the *same End*, it would reflect Dishonour upon his own *Righteousness*, and the *Holiness* of the *Gospel*.

For (First,) if God can accept of a *Righteousness* unto *Justification* inferiour unto, or short of what he required by the *Law*, how great severity must it be thought in him, to bind his Creatures unto such an exact *Obedience* and *Righteousness* at first, as he could and might have dispensed withall? If he doth accept of *sincere Obedience* now unto our *Justification*, why did he not do so before, but obliged Mankind unto absolute *Perfection* according to the *Law*, for coming short wherein they all perished. Or shall we say, that God hath *changed his Mind* in this matter, and that he doth not stand so much now on *rigid and Perfect Obedience* for our *Justification*, as he did formerly? Where then is the *Glory* of his *Immutability*, of his *Essential Holiness*, of the absolute *Rectitude* of his *Nature* and *Will*?

Sect. 8. Besides, (Secondly,) what shall become of the *Honour* and *Holiness* of the *Gospel* on this Supposition? Must it not be looked on as a Doctrine less *Holy* than that of the *Law*? For whereas the *Law* required *absolute perfect sinless Holiness* unto our *Justification*, the *Gospel* admits of that to the *same End*, on this Supposition, which is every way imperfect, and consistent with a multitude of Sins and Failings? What can be spoken more to the Derogation of it? Nay, would not this indeed make *Christ the Minister of Sin*, which our Apostle rejects with so much Detestation? *Gal. 2. 17*. For to say, that he hath merited that our *imperfect Obedience*, attended with many and great sins (*for there is no man that liveth and sinneth not*) should be accepted unto our *Justification*, instead of *perfect and sinless Obedience* required under the *Law*, is plainly to make him the *Minister of Sin*, or one that hath acquired some Liberty for sin, beyond whatever the *Law* allowed. And thus upon the whole matter, both *Christ* and the *Gospel*, in whom and whereby, God unquestionably designed to declare the *Holiness* and *Righteousness* of his own *Nature*, much more Gloriously than ever he had done any other way, should be the great means to darken and obscure them. For in and by them on this Supposition, God must be thought (and is declared) to accept of a *Righteousness* unto

unto our Justification, *unspeakably inferiour* unto what he required before.

It must be granted therefore, that the *End* of Gospel Commands requiring the Obedience of *Holiness* in us, is not, that thereby or *thereon we should be Justified*. God hath therein provided another *Righteousness* for that End, which fully, perfectly, absolutely answers all that the Law requires; and on some Considerations is far more *Glorious* than what the Law either did or could require. And hereby hath he exalted more than ever the Honour of his own *Holiness* and *Righteousness*, whereof the External Instrument is the *Gospel*, which is also therefore most Holy: Now this is no other but the *Righteousness of Christ imputed* unto us; for he is the *End of the Law for Righteousness unto them that do believe*, Rom. 10. 4. But God hath now appointed other Ends unto our *Holiness*, and so unto his Command of it, under the Gospel, all of them consistent with the Nature of that Obedience which he will accept of us, and such as we may attain through the Power of Grace, and so all of them offering new *Encouragements* as well as *Enforcements* unto our Endeavours after it. But because these Ends will be the Subject of most of our *ensuing Arguments*, I shall not here insist upon them. I shall only adde two things in General. (1) That God hath *no design* for his own Glory, in us or by us, in this World or unto Eternity, that there is no *especial Communion* that we can have with him by Jesus Christ, nor any Capacity for us to enjoy him, but *Holiness* is Necessary unto it, as a *Means* unto its End. (2) These *present Ends* of it under the Gospel are such, as that God doth no less *indispensibly require* it of us now, than he did when our *Justification* was proposed as the End of it. They are such in brief, as God upon the Account of them judgeth meet to *command us to be Holy* in all Manner of *Holiness*, which what Obligation and Necessity it puts upon us so to be, we are now to enquire.

Sect. 9.

(First,) The first thing considerable in the Command of God to this purpose, is the *Authority* wherewith it is accompanied. It is indispensibly necessary that we should be Holy, on the Account of the *Authority* of Gods Command. *Authority* wherever it is just, and exerted in a due and equal Manner, carryeth along with it an *Obligation* unto Obedience. Take this away, and you fill the whole World with Disorder. If the *Authority* of Parents, Masters and Magistrates, did not oblige Children, Servants and Subjects, unto Obedience, the World could not abide one moment out of *Hellish Confusion*. God himself maketh use of this Argument in general, to convince men of the Necessity of Obedience. *A Son honoureth his Eather, and a Servant his Master; if I then be a Father where is mine Honour, and if I be a Master where is my Fear, saith the Lord of Hosts unto you Priests who despise my Name? Mal. 1. 6.* If in all particular Relations, where there is any thing of *Superiority*, which hath the least parcel of *Authority* accompanying of it, Obedience is expected, and exacted; is it not due to me who have all *Authority*, of all Sovereign Relations in me towards you? And there are two things that enforce the *Obligation* from the Command on this Consideration, *Jus imperandi*, and *Vis exequendi*, both

Sect. 10.

Z z z

comprized

comprized in that of the Apostle *James*, *ch. 4. v. 12.* *There is one Law-giver, who is able to save and to destroy.*

1. He who *commands* us to be Holy, is our *Sovereign Law-giver*; He that hath *absolute* Power to prescribe unto us what *Laws* he pleaseth. When *Commands* come from them who have *Authority*, and yet are themselves also *under Authority*, there may be some secret Abatement of the *Power* of the *Command*. Men may think either to *appeal* from them, or one way or other *subduct* themselves from under their *Power*. But when the *Power immediately commanding* is *Sovereign* and *absolute*, there is no room for *Tergiversation*. The *Command* of God proceeds from the *absolute Power* of a *Sovereign Legislator*. And where it is not complied withall, the *whole Authority* of God, and therein God himself is *despised*. So God in many places calleth *sinning* against his *Commands*, the *despising* of him, *Numb. 11. 20.* *1 Sam. 2. 30.* the *despising* of his *Name*, *Mal. 1. 6.* the *despising* of his *Commandement*, and that in his *Saints* themselves, *2 Sam. 12. 10.*

Sect. 11.

Being then under the *Command* of God to be *holy*, not to Endeavour alwayes and in all things so to be, is to *despise* God, to reject his *Sovereign Authority* over us, and to live in *Defiance* of him. This *state* I suppose there are few who would be willing to be found in: To be constant *Despisers* of God, and *Rebels* against his *Authority*, is a Charge that men are not ready to own, and do suppose that those who are so indeed, are in a very ill Condition. But this and no better is the *state* of every one who is not *holy*, who doth not follow after *Holiness*. Yet so it is, propose unto men the true Nature of *Evangelical Holiness*, press them to the *Duties* wherein the *Exercise* of it doth consist, convince them with *Evidence* as clear as the *Light* at Noon-day, that such and such *Sins*, such and such *Courses* wherein they live and walk, are absolutely inconsistent with it, and irreconcilable unto it, yet for the most part it is but *little* they will heed you, and *less* they will doe to answer your *Exhortations*. Tell the same Persons, that they are *Rebels* against God, *Despisers* of him, that they have utterly broken the *Toke*, and cast off his *Authority*, and they will *desie* you, and perhaps *revile* you. But yet these things are inseperable; God having given his *Command* unto men to be Holy, declared his *Sovereign Will* and *Pleasure* therein, if we are not so accordingly, we are not one Jott better than the Persons described. Here then in the first place we found the *Necessity* of *Holiness*, on the *Command* of God. The *Authority* wherewith it is accompanied, makes it *Necessary*: Yea, from hence if we endeavour not to thrive in it, if we watch not diligently against every thing that is contrary unto it, we are therein and so far *Despisers* of God, and his *Name*, as in the places before cited.

Sect. 12.

This therefore evidenceth unto the *Consciences* of men, that the *Obligation* unto *Holiness* is indispenfible. And it would do well, if we alwayes carryed this *formal Consideration* of the *Commandement* in our Minds; nothing would be more prevalent with us unto *Watchfulness* in *Holiness*, as nothing doth more effectually render what we doe, to be *Obedience* properly so called. Forgetfulness hereof, or not heeding it as we ought, is the great Reason of our *loose* and *careless* Walking,

ing, of our Defect in making a Progress in *Grace* and *Holiness*. No man is safe a Moment, whose Mind by any means is dispossessed of a Sense of the *Sovereign Authority* of God in his *Commands*; nor can any thing secure such a Soul from being pierced and entred into by various *Temptations*. This therefore are we to carry about with us wherever we goe, and whatever we doe, to keep our Souls and Consciences under the power of it, in all Opportunities of Duties, and on all Occasions of Sin. Had men alwayes, in their Wayes, Trades, Shops, Affairs, Families, Studyes, Closets, this written on their *Hearts*, they would have *Holiness to the Lord* on their *Breasts* and *Foreheads* also.

2. The Apostle tells us, that as God in his *Commands* is a *Sovereign Law-giver*, so he is able to *kill* and *keep alive*. That is, his *Commanding Authority* is accompanied with such a *Power*, as that whereby he is able absolutely and Eternally to *Reward the Obedient*, and to return unto the *Disobedient* a *meet Recompense of Punishment*. For, although I would not exclude other Considerations, yet I think this of *Eternal Rewards and Punishments* to be principally here intended. Sect. 13.

But (1) supposing it to have Respect unto things *Temporal* also, it carries along with it the greater *Enforcement*. God commands us to be *holy*: Things are in that State and Condition in the World, as that if we endeavour to answer his Will in a due Manner, designing to *perfect Holiness in the fear of the Lord*, we shall meet with much *Opposition*, many *Difficulties*, and at length perhaps it may cost us our *Lives*; multitudes have made Profession of it at no cheaper Rate. But let us not mistake in this matter; He who *commands us to be Holy* is the only *Sovereign Lord of Life and Death*, that hath alone the Disposal of them both, and consequently of all things that are subservient and conducing unto the one or other. It is he alone who can *kill* in a way of Punishment, and he alone can *keep alive* in a way of Mercifull Preservation. This *Power* of our *Law-giver*, the holy Companions of *Daniel* committed themselves unto, and preserved themselves by the Consideration of, when with the Terror of Death they were commanded to forsake the Way of *Holiness*, *Dan. 3. 17, 18*. And with respect unto it, our Lord Jesus Christ tells us, that he who *would save his Life*, namely, by a sinfull Neglect of the Command, *shall lose it*. This therefore is also to be considered; the *Power* of him who *commands* us to be Holy is such, as that he is able to carry us through all *Difficulties* and *Dangers* which we may incurre upon the Account of our being so. Now whereas the *Fear of Man* is one principal Cause or Means of our failing in *Holiness* and *Obedience*, either by sudden Surprizals, or violent *Temptations*, and the next hereunto, is the *Consideration* of other things esteemed *Good* or *Evil* in this World; the *Faith* and *Sence* hereof will bear us up above them, deliver us from them, and carry us through them.

Be of good Courage all ye that *trust in the Lord*; you may, you ought, without Fear or Dauntedness of spirit, to engage into the Pursuit of *universal Holiness*: He who hath *commanded* it, who hath *required* it of you, will bear you out in it; nothing that is *truely evil* or *finally disadvantageous* shall befall you on that Account. For (let Sect. 14.

the World rage whilst it pleaseth, and threaten to fill all things with Blood and Confusion) to God the Lord belong the Issues from Death, he alone can kill and make alive. There is therefore no small Enforcement unto Holiness, from the Consideration of the Command, with respect unto the Power of the Commander, relating unto things in this World.

But (2) I suppose it is a Power of *Eternal Rewards and Punishments*, that is principally here intended. The Killing here, is that mentioned by our Saviour, and opposed to all Temporal Evil, and Death it self, *Matth. 10. 28. Fear not them who can kill the Body, but are not able to kill the Soul; but rather fear him who is able to destroy both Soul and Body in Hell.* And this keeping alive, is a Deliverance from the Wrath to come in Everlasting Life. And this is that which gives an unavoidable Efficacy to the Command. Every Command of a Superiour doth tacitly include a Reward and Punishment to be intended. For a Declaration is made of what is pleasing and what is displeasing unto him that gives the Command; and therein is there a virtual Promise and Threatning. But unto all Solemn Laws Rewards and Punishments are expressly annexed.

Sect. 15.

But there are two Reasons why for the most part they do but little influence the Minds of Men who are inclined unto their Transgression. (1) The first is, that the Rewards and Punishments declared, are such as men think they do justly preferre their own satisfaction in the Transgression of the Lawes, before them. It is so with all Good men, with respect unto Lawes made contrary to the Lawes of God; and Wise men also may do so with respect unto useles Lawes, with trifling Penalties; and Evil men will do so with respect unto the highest Temporal Punishments, when they are greedily set on the satisfaction of their Lusts. Hence I say it is in the first place, that the Minds of men are so little influenced with those Rewards and Punishments that are annexed unto Humane Lawes. And (2^{dly},) a secret Apprehension that the Commanders or Makers of the Lawes, neither will nor are able to execute those Penalties in case of their Transgression, evacuates all the Force of them. Much they ascribe to their Negligence, that they will not take Care to see the Sanction of their Lawes executed; more to their Ignorance, that they shall not be able to find out their Transgressions; and somewhat in sundry Cases to their Power, that they cannot Punish nor Reward, though they would. And for these Reasons are the Minds of men little influenced by Humane Lawes beyond their own honest Inclinations and Interest. But things are quite otherwise with respect unto the Law and Commands of God that we should be Holy. The Rewards and Punishments, called by the Apostle Killing and Keeping alive, being Eternal, in the highest Capacities of Blessedness or Misery, cannot be Ballanced by any Consideration of this present World, without the highest Folly and Villany unto our selves. Nor can there be any Reserve on the Account of Mutability, Indifferency, Ignorance, Impotency, or any other Pretence, that they shall not be Executed. Wherefore, the Commands of God which we are in the Consideration of, are accompanied with Promises and Threatnings, of Eternal Blessedness on the one hand, or of Misery on the other. And these will

will certainly befall us, according as we shall be found *Holy* or *Unholy*. All the Properties of the Nature of God are immutably engaged in this matter; and hence ensues an *indispensible Necessity* of our being *Holy*. God commands that we should be so, but what if we are not so? Why as sure as *God is Holy and Powerfull* we shall Eternally perish, for with the Threatning of that *Condition*, is his *Command* accompanied in Case of Disobedience. What if we doe comply with the *Command*, and become *holy*? Upon the same ground of *Assurance*, we shall be brought unto *Everlasting Felicity*. And this is greatly to be considered in the *Authority* of the Commandement. Some perhaps will say, that to yield *holy Obedience* unto God with respect unto *Rewards* and *Punishments*, is *servile*, and becomes not the *free spirit* of the Children of God. But these are vain Imaginations: The *Bondage* of our own *spirits* may make every thing we doe *servile*. But a due Respect unto Gods *Promises* and *Threatnings*, is a principal part of our *Liberty*. And thus doth the *Necessity* of *Holiness*, which we are engaged in the Demonstration of, depend on the *Command* of God, because of that *Authority* from whence it doth proceed, and wherewith it is accompanied. It is therefore certainly our Duty, if we would be found walking in a Course of *Obedience*, and the Practice of *Holiness*, to keep a *sence* hereof constantly fixed on our Minds. This is that which in the first place God intends in that great Injunction of *Obedience*, Gen. 17. 1. *I am God Almighty, walk before me, and be thou perfect*. The way to walk *uprightly*, to be sincere or *perfect* in *Obedience*, is alwayes to consider, that he who requires it of us is, *God Almighty*, accompanied with all the *Authority* and *Power* before mentioned, and under whose Eye we are continually. And in particular we may apply this unto *Persons* and *Occassions*.

(1) As to *Persons*; let them in an especial manner have a continual *Regard* hereunto, who on any Account are *Great* or *High*, or *Noble* in the World, and that because their especial Temptation is to be *lifted* up unto a *Forgetfulness* or *Regardlessness* of this *Authority* of God. The Prophet distributes incorrigible Sinners into two sorts, and gives the different Grounds of their *Impenitency* respectively. The first are the *Poor*; And it is their *Folly*, *Stupidity* and sensual *Lusts*, that keep them off from attending to the Command. Jerem. 5. 3, 4. *They have refused to receive Correction, they have made their Faces harder than a Rock, they have refused to return; therefore I said, Surely these are Poor, they are sottish, for they know not the Way of the Lord, nor the Judgement of their God*. There are a sort of *poor* incorrigible Sinners, whose *Impenitency* ariseth much out of their *Ignorance*, *Blindness* and *Folly*, which they please themselves in, although they differ but little from the *Beasts that perish*. And such do we abound withall, who will take no Pains for, who will admit of no Means of *Instruction*. But there is another sort of Sinners to whom the Prophet makes his Application, and discovers the Ground of their incorrigible *Impenitency* also; *I will get me to the Great men, and will speak unto them, for they have known the Way of the Lord, and the Judgement of their God; v. 5*. Great men, by Reason of their *Education* and other Advantages, do attain unto a Knowledge of the *Will of God*, or at least may be thought so

Sect. 16.

so to have done, and would be esteemed to excell therein. They therefore are not likely to be Obstinate in sin, meerly from *stupid Ignorance* and Folly. No, saith the Prophet, they take another Course. *They have altogether broken the Yoke, and burst the Bonds.* They are like a Company of rude Beasts of the Field, who having broken their Yokes and Cords, do run up and down the Fields, treading down the Corn, breaking up the Fences, pushing with the Horn, and trampling on all before them. This is the Course of men in the Pursuit of their Lusts, when they have *broken the Yoke of the Lord.* And this the Prophet declares to be the *especial Evil* of Great Men, the Rich, the Mighty, the Honourable in the World. Now this *Breaking of the Yoke*, is the Neglecting and Despising of the *Authority* of God in the Command. Seeing therefore that this is the *especial Temptation* of that sort of Persons, and Things innumerable there are of all sorts, that concur to render that Temptation prevalent upon them, let all those who are of that Condition, and have the least sincere Desire after *Holiness*, watch diligently, as they love and value their Souls, to keep alwayes and in all things, a due Sence of the *Authority* of God in his Commands upon their Minds and Consciences. When you are in the *height* of your Greatness, in the *fulnes* of your Enjoyments, in the most *urgent* of your Avocations by the Things or Societies of the World, and those who belong unto it, when the variety of publick Appearances and Attendencies are about you, where you are uppermost in the *Words* of others, and it may be in your own *Thoughts*, remember Him who *is over all*, and consider that you are subject and obnoxious unto his *Authority*, equally with the *poorest* Creature on the Earth. Remember, that it is your *especial Temptation* to doe otherwise. And if you do yet abhorre those who by this Means are come to be *Sons of Belial*, or such as have altogether *broken the Yoke*, and run up and down the World in the pursuit of their Lusts, saying, *Our Lips are our own, and who is Lord over us*, be you Watchfull against the *least Beginnings* or Entrances of it in your selves.

- Sect. 17. (2) In general; let us all endeavour to carry a constant Regard unto the *Authority* of God in his *Commands*, into all those *Seasons*, *Places*, *Societies*, *Occasions*, wherein we are apt to be surprized in any *Sin*, or a Neglect of *Duty*. And I may reduce this Instruction, or Point it unto three Heads or Occasions; namely, *Secresie*, *Busineses*, and *Societies*. (1) Carry this along with you into your *secret Retirements* and *Enjoyments*. Neglect hereof is the next Cause of those *secret Actual* provoking Sins which the World swarms with. When no Eye sees but the Eye of God, men think themselves secure. Hereby have many been surprized into *Folly*, which hath proved the *Beginning* of a total Apostasie. An Awe from the *Authority* of God in the *Command* upon the Heart, will equally secure us in all *Places*, and on all *Occasions*. (2) Let us carry it into our *Busineses*, and the Exercise of our *Trades* or *Callings*. Most men in these things, are very apt to be intent on *present Occasions*, and having a certain End before them, do *habituate* themselves unto the wayes of its Attainment. And whilest they are so engaged, many things occurre which are apt to *divert* them from the Rule of *Holiness*. Whenever therefore you enter into your *Occasions*,

cations, wherein you may suppose that Temptations will arise, call to mind the *Greatness, Power and Authority* over you, of him who hath commanded you in all things to be *holy*. Upon every Entrance of a Surprizal, make your Retreat unto such Thoughts which will prove your Relief. (3) Carry it with you into your *Companies and Societies*. For many have frequent Occasions of engaging in such *Societies*, as wherein the least Forgetfulness of the *Sovereign Authority* of God, will betray them unto Profuseness in Vanity, and corrupt Communication, untill they *doe* with Delight, and *hear* with Pleasure such things as wherewith the *Holy Spirit* of God is grieved, their own *Consciences* are defiled, and the *Honour* of Profession is cast to the ground.

(Secondly,) The Command of God that we should be *Holy*, is not to be considered only as an Effect of *Power and Authority* which we must submit unto, but as a Fruit of *infinite Wisdom and Goodness* also, which it is our *highest Advantage and Interest* to comply withall. And this introduceth a peculiar *Necessity of Holiness*, from the Consideration of what is *Equal, Reasonable, Ingenious*; the contrary whereunto is *Foolish, Perverse, Ungratefull*, every way unbecoming Rational Creatures. Where nothing can be discerned in Commands, but meer *Authority, Will and Pleasure*; they are looked on as meerly respecting the Good of them that command, and not at all theirs who are to obey, which disheartens and *weakens* the Principle of Obedience. Now though God, because his *Dominion* over us is *Sovereign and absolute*, might have justly left unto us no other Reason or Motive of our Obedience, and it may be did so deal with the Church of Old, as to some particular Temporary *Ceremonial Institutions*; yet he doth not, nor ever did so as to the Main of their Obedience. But as he proposeth his Law as an Effect of infinite Wisdom, Love and Goodness, so he declares and pleads, that all his *Commands* are *just and equal* in themselves, *good and usefull* unto us, and that our Compliance with them is our *present*, as well as it will be our *future Happiness*. And that this is so, that the Command of God requiring that we should be *Holy*, as a Fruit of *Wisdom and Goodness*, is *Equal and Advantageous* unto our selves, appears from all the Considerations of it.

Sect. 18.

First, Look upon it *formally*, as a *Law prescribed* unto us, and it is so because the Obedience in *Holiness* which it requires, is *proportioned* unto the *Strength and Power* which we have to *Obey*, which declares it *Equal* unto us, and an Effect of infinite *Wisdom and Goodness* in God. The Command, as we shewed before, may be considered either as it belonged unto the *Old Covenant*, or as it is annexed unto, and so is a part of the *New*. In the first way, as it belonged unto the *Old Covenant*, the *Strength of Grace* which we had *Originally* from God under the Law of *Creation*, was sufficient to enable us unto all that *Holy Obedience* which was required therein; and our not doing so, was from *wilfull Rebellion*, and not from any *Impotency or Weakness* in us. We fell not from our first Estate for want of *Power to Obey*, but by the neglect of the *Exercise* of that *Power* which we had. God made us *Upright*, but we sought out *many Inventions*. And in the latter way, as it belongs to the *Covenant of Grace*, there is by virtue of that

Sect. 19.

Covenant

Covenant a Supply of *spiritual strength* given in by the *Promise*, unto all them who are taken into it, enabling them to Answer the *Commands* for *Holiness*, according to the Rule of the Acceptance of their Obedience, before laid down. No man who is instated in the *Covenant of Grace*, comes *short* or *fails* of the Performance of that Obedience which is required and accepted in that Covenant, meerly for want of Power and *spiritual strength*. For God therein according to his *Divine Power* gives unto us all things that pertain unto *Life and Godliness*, through the Knowledge of him that hath called us to *Glory and Vertue*, 1 Pet. 1. 3.

Sect. 20. It is true, this *Grace* or *Strength*, is administred unto them by certain *Wayes* and *Means*, which if they attend not unto, they will come short of it. But this I say, in the carefull, diligent, sedulous use of those means appointed, none who belong to the *Covenant of Grace*, shall ever fail of that Power and Ability which shall render the *Commands* of the Gospel *easie* and not grievous unto them, and whereby they may so fulfill them, as infallibly to be accepted. This the Scripture is plain in, where Christ himself tells us, that *his Yoke is easie*, and *his Burden light*, Matth. 11. 30. and his holy Apostle, that *his Commands are not grievous*, 1 Joh. 5. 3. For, if they should exceed all the *Strength* which we either have, or he is pleased to give unto us, they would be like the *Jewish Ceremonies*, a *Yoke* which we could not bear, and a Law not only *grievous* but *unprofitable*. But on the contrary, our Apostle expressly affirms, and so may we, *that he could do all things*, that is, in the Way and Manner, and unto the End for which they are required in the Gospel, *through Christ that strengthened him*. Some would confound these things, and cast all into Disorder. They would have men that are under the *Old Covenant*, to have a Power and *spiritual Strength* to fulfill the *Commands* of the *New*, which God hath never spoken of nor declared, and which indeed is contrary to the whole Design of his *Grace*. They would have men, who having broken the *Old Covenant*, and forfeited all their *Strength* and Ability which they had by it for Obedience, and are not initiated in the *New Covenant*, yet to have a Power of their own to fulfill the Command of the one or the other, which God neither giveth nor is obliged to give, nor is it necessary to prove that the *Command is Equal and Holy*. For, as was observed, God giveth us no *Command* of *Holiness* and *Obedience*, but in, with, and by vertue of some *Covenant*. And there is no more required to prove them to be *just and equal*, but that they are *easie* unto them who walk with God in that Covenant whereunto they do belong, and that, that *Performance* of them shall be accepted which they have *Power* for. If any will sinfully cast away ther *Covenant Interest* and *Priviledge*, as we did all that of our *Original Creation*, we must thank our selves if we have not *Power* to answer its *Commands*. Nor doth it belong unto the *Equity* of the Command of the *New Covenant*, that those who are not yet made partakers of it by *Grace*, should have *Power* to fulfill them. Nay, if they had so, and should do so accordingly, (were any such thing possible) it would not avail them. For, being supposed not as yet to belong unto the *New Covenant*, they must belong unto the *Old*. And the

the Performance of the *Commands* of the New Covenant in the Way and Manner which are required therein, would not avail them who are really under the Rule and Law of the *Old*, which admits of nothing short of *absolute perfection*. But what the *Law* speaks, it speaks unto them that are under the *Law*; and what the *Gospel* speaks, it speaks unto them who are not under the *Law*, but under *Grace*. And the formal Transition of men from one of these States unto another, is by an Act of Gods *Grace*, wherein themselves are meerly *passive*, as hath elsewhere been demonstrated. See *Col. 1. 13.*

This is that which I doe intend. God at first made a *Covenant* with Mankind, the First *Covenant*, the *Covenant of Works*. Herein he gave them *Commands* for *Holy Obedience*. These *Commands* were not only possible unto them both for Matter and Manner, by vertue of that Strength and Power which was concreated with them, but *ease* and *pleasant*, every way suited unto their Good and Satisfaction in that state and Condition. This rendred their Obedience *equal*, *just*, *reasonable*, and aggravated their Sin with the Guilt of the most horrible *Folly* and *Ingratitude*. When by the *Fall* this *Covenant* was broken, we lost therewith all *Power* and *Ability* to comply with its *Commands* in *holy Obedience*. Hereupon, the *Law* continued *holy*, and the *Commandement*, *holy*, *just* and *good*, as our Apostle speaks, *Rom. 7. 12.* For what should make it otherwise, seeing there was no Change in it by *sin*, nor did God require *more* or *harder* things of us than before? But to us it became *impossible*, for we had lost the *strength* by which alone we were enabled to Observe it. And so the *Commandement* which was Ordained to *Life*, we find to be unto *Death*, *Rom. 7. 10.* Towards all therefore that remain in that State, we say, the *Commandement* is still *just* and *holy*, but it is neither *ease* nor *possible*. Hereon God brings in the *Covenant of Grace* by Christ, and renews therein the *Commands* for *holy Obedience*, as was before declared. And here it is, that men trouble themselves and others about the *Power*, *Ability*, and *Free-will* that men have as yet under the first *Covenant*, and the *Impotency* that ensued on the Transgression of it to fulfill the Condition of the New Covenant, and yield the Obedience required in it. For this is the place where men make their great Contests about the *Power* of *Free-will*, and the *Possibility* of Gods *Command*. Let them but grant, that it is the meer Work of Gods *Sovereign* and *Almighty Grace* effectually to enstate men in the New Covenant, and we shall contend with them or against them, that by vertue thereof, they have that *spiritual Strength* and *Grace* administred unto them, as render all the *Commands* of it to be not onely *possible* but *ease* also, yea *pleasant*, and every way suited unto the Principle of an *Holy Life* wherewith they are endued. And this we make an Argument for the *Necessity* of *Holiness*. The Argument we have under Consideration, is that whereby we prove the *Necessity* of *Holiness* with respect unto Gods *Command* requiring it, because it is a Fruit of Infinite *Wisdom* and *Goodness*. It is so in an especial Manner as it belongs unto the New Covenant. And therefore by our Disobedience or living in Sin, unto the Contempt of Gods *Authority*, we adde that of his *Wisdom* and *Goodness* also. Now that it is so a Fruit of them, appears in the first place

place from hence, that it is *proportioned* unto the *Strength* and *Ability* which we have to *Obey*. Hence Obedience in Holiness becomes *equal, ease, and pleasant* unto all Believers who sincerely attend unto it. And this fully evinceth the *Necessity* of it, from the *Folly* and *Ingratitude* of the contrary. That these things, and in them the *Force* of the present Argument may the better be apprehended, I shall dispose them into the ensuing Observations.

Sect. 22.

(1) We do not say, that any one hath this *Power* and *Ability* in *himself*, or *from himself*. God hath not in the *New Covenant* brought down his *Command* to the *Power* of Man, but by his *Grace* he raiseth the *Power* of Man unto his *Command*: The former were only a *Compliance* with the Sin of our *Nature*, which God abhorres; the latter is the *Exaltation* of his own *Grace*, which he aymeth at. It is not mens *Strength* in and of themselves, the *Power* of *Nature*, but the *Grace* which is administred in the *Covenant*, that we intend. For men to trust unto themselves herein, as though they could do any thing of themselves; is a *Renunciation* of all the *Aids* of *Grace*, without which we can do nothing. We can have no *power* from Christ, unless we live in a *Perswasion* that we have none of our *own*. Our whole *spiritual Life* is a *Life* of *Faith*; and that is, a *Life* of *Dependance* on Christ for what we have not of our selves. This is that which ruins the Attempt of many for *Holiness*, and renders what they do, (though it be *like* unto the *Acts* and *Duties* of it) not at all to belong unto it. For, what we do in our *own strength*, is no part of *Holiness*; as is evident from the preceding Description of it. Neither doth the Scripture abound in any thing more, than in Testifying that the *Power* and *Ability* we have to fulfill the *Commands* of God as given in the *New Covenant*, is not *our own*, nor from our selves, but meerly from the *Grace* of God administred in that *Covenant*; as *John*. 15. 5. *Phil*. 2. 13. 2 *Cor*. 3. 5. It will be said then, where lies the Difference? Because it is the meer *Work* of *Grace* to *instate* us in the *Covenant*, you conclude that we have no *power* of our *own* to that Purpose. And if when we are in *Covenant*, all our *strength* and *power* is still from *Grace*, we are, as to any *Ability* of our own to fulfill the *Command* of God, as remote from it as ever. I Answer: The *first* *Work* of *Grace* is meerly upon us. Hereby the Image of God is renewed, our Hearts are changed, and a Principle of *spiritual Life* is bestowed on us. But this latter *Work* of *Grace* is in us, and by us. And the *Strength* or *Ability* which we have thereby, is as truly our *own* as *Adams* was his; which he had in the State of *Innocency*. For he had his immediately from God, and so have we ours, though in a different way.

Sect. 23.

(2) There is no such *Provision* of *spiritual Strength* for any Man, enabling him to comply with the *Command* of God for *Holiness*, as to Countenance him in the least *carnal Security*, or the least *Neglect* of the diligent Use of all those *Means* which God hath appointed for the Communication thereof unto us, with the *Preservation* and *Increase* of it. God who hath determined Graciously to give us *supplies* thereof, hath also declared, that we are obliged unto our *utmost diligence* for the Participation of them, and unto their *due Exercise* when received.

This

This innumerable *Commands* and *Injunctions* give Testimony unto; but especially is the whole Method of *Gods Grace* and *our Duty* herein, declared by the Apostle *Peter*, 2 *Epist.* Chap. 1. v. 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8; 9, 10, 11. which Discourse I have Opened and Improved elsewhere. The summe is, that God creating in us a *new spiritual Nature*, and therewithall giving unto us *all things appertaining unto Life and Godliness*, or a Gracious *Ability* for the Duties of an Holy, Godly, *spiritual Life*, we are obliged to use *all Means* in the continual Exercise of *all Grace*, which will ascertain unto us our Eternal *Election*, with our Effectual *Vocation*, whereon we shall obtain an *assured Joyfull Entrance* into the *Kingdom of Glory*.

(3) This Administration of *Grace* and *spiritual Strength* is not equally Sect. 24.
Effectual at all Times. There are Seasons wherein to Correct our Negligences in giving place to our Corruptions and Temptations, or on other Grounds to discover unto us our own *Frailty* and *Impotency*, with other Holy Ends of his own, that God is pleased to withhold the powerfull Influences of his *Grace*, and to leave us unto our selves. In such Instances we shall assuredly come short of answering the Command for *universal Holiness*, one way or other. See *Psal.* 30. 6, 7. But I speak of *ordinary Cases*, and to prevent that *slothfulness* and *Tergiversation* unto this Duty of complying with all the Commands of God for *Holiness*, which we are so obnoxious unto.

(4) We do not say, That there is in the *Covenant of Grace* spiritual strength administred, so as that by Vertue thereof we should yield *sinless and absolutely Perfect Obedience* unto God, or to render any one Duty so *absolutely Perfect*. If any such there are, or ever were, who maintain such an *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ* unto us, as should render our own *personal Obedience* unnecessary, they doe overthrow the *Truth* and *Holiness* of the Gospel. And to say, that we have such supplies of *Internal Strength*, as to render the Imputation of the *Righteousness of Christ* unto our Justification, Unnecessary, is to overthrow the *Grace of the Gospel*, and the *New Covenant* it self. But this alone we say; There is *Grace* administred by the *Promises* of the Gospel, enabling us to Perform the Obedience of it, in that *Way and Manner* as God will accept. And herein there are *various Degrees*, whereof we ought constantly to ayme at the *most Compleat*, and so to be *perfecting Holiness in the Fear of the Lord*. And where we signally come short of the *best Rules and Examples*, it is principally from our Neglect of those *Supplies of Grace* which are tendred in the *Promises*. Sect. 25.

(5) There is a Two-fold *Gracious Power* Necessary to render the Sect. 26.
Command for *Holiness* and *Obedience* thereunto *easie* and *pleasant*.

1. That which is *Habitually Resident* in the Hearts and Souls of *Believers*, whereby they are constantly enclined and disposed unto all *Fruits of Holiness*. This the Scripture calls *our Life*, a *New Principle of Life*, without which we are *dead in Trespasses and Sins*; Where this is not, whatever Arguments you constrain and press men withall to be *Holy*, you do as it were but *offer violence* unto them, endeavour-

ing to *force* them against the fixed Bent and Inclination of their Minds. By them all you do but set up a *Damme* against a Stream of Waters, which will not be *Permanent*, nor turn the Course of the stream contrary to its *natural* Inclination. Unto such the *Command* for *Holiness* must needs be *grievous* and difficult. But such a *Disposition* and *Inclination*, or a *Principle* so inclining, and disposing of us unto Duties of *Holiness*, we have not in nor of our selves by Nature; nor is it to be raised out of its Ruines. For the *carnal Mind* (which is in us all) is *Enmity against God*, which carrieth in it an Aversion unto every thing that is required of us in a way of *Obedience*, as hath been proved at large. And yet without this *Habitual Principle*, we can never in a due Manner comply with any one *Command* of God that we should be *Holy*. Want hereof is that which renders *Obedience* so *grievous* and *Burdensome* unto many. They *endure* it for a Season, and at length either violently or insensibly cast off its Yoke. *Light* and *Conviction* have compelled them to take it on themselves, and to attend unto the *performance* of those Duties which they *dare* not omit. But having no *Principle* enabling or enclining them unto it, all they *doe*, though they do *much*, and continue *long* therein, is against the grain with them, they find it difficult, uneasy and wearisome. Wherein they can by any Pretences countenance themselves in a Neglect of any part of it, or Bribe their Consciences into a Compliance with what is contrary unto it, they fail not to deliver themselves from their *Burden*. And for the most part, either *insensibly* by *multiplied Instances* of the Neglect of Duties of *Obedience*, or by some *great Temptations*, before they leave the *World*, they utterly leave all the Wayes of *Holiness*, and Respect unto the *Commands* of God; or if they continue any, it is unto External Acts of *Morality* which pass with Approbation in the *World*, the *inward* and *spiritual* part of *Obedience* they utterly Renounce. The Reason hereof, I say is, because having no *Principle within*, enabling them unto a Compliance with the *Commands* of God, with Delight and Satisfaction, they grow *grievous* and *intolerable* unto them. So unto many on the same Ground, the *Worship* of God is very *burdensome*, unless it be borne for them, by *External Additions* and *Ornaments*.

Sect. 27. 2. There is an *Actual Assistance* of *Effectual Grace* required hereunto. We are not put into that Condition by the *Covenant*, as that we should be able to *doe any thing of our selves*, without *Actual Divine Assistance*. This were to set us free from our *Dependance* on God, and to make us Gods unto our selves. The *Root* still bears us, and the Springs of our *spiritual Life* are in another. And where both these are, there the *Command* is *Equal* not onely in it self but unto us, and *Obedience* unto it as *easy* as *just*.

Sect. 28. (6) And both these sorts of *Grace* are Administred in the *New Covenant*, suited unto the holy *Obedience* it requires.

1. For the *first*; it is that which God so frequently, so expressly promiseth, where he sayes, that he will *take away the Heart of Stone*, and give us an *Heart of Flesh*, that he will *write his Laws in our Hearts*, and put his *Fear in our inward parts*; that we shall *fear him*, and never depart

depart from him; that he will *circumcise our Hearts to know and love him*: Which Promises, and the Nature of the Grace contained in them, I have before at large explained. It is sufficient unto our present Purpose, that in and by these Promises, we are *made partakers of the Divine Nature*, and are therein endowed with a constant *Habitual Disposition and Inclination* unto all Acts and Duties of *Holiness*; For our Power followeth our Love and Inclinations, as Impotency is a Consequent of their Deceit.

And here we may stay a little, to confirm our principal Assertion. Upon the Supply of this Grace, which gives both *Strength* for, and a constant *Inclination* unto Holy Obedience, the *Command* for it becomes *equal and just, meet and easie* to be complied withall. For none can refuse a Compliance with it in any Instance, but their so doing is contrary unto that *Disposition and Inclination* of the *New Nature* which God hath implanted in themselves. So that in them to *Sin*, is not only contrary to the Law *without* them, to the Light of their *Minds*, and Warning of their *Consciences*, but it is so also unto that which is their *own Inclination and Disposition*, which hath sensibly in such Cases a *Force and Violence* put upon it, by the Power of Corruptions and Temptations. Wherefore, although the *Command* for *Holiness* may and doth seem *grievous and burdensome* unto Unregenerate Persons, as we have observed, because it is against the *habitual bent and Inclination* of their whole Souls; yet neither is it, nor can it be so unto them who cannot *neglect* it, or act any thing against it, but that therein also they must Crucifie and offer *Violence* unto the *Inclinations* of the *New Creature* in them, which are their own. For in all things, *the Spirit lusteth against the Flesh*, Gal. 5. 17. and the Disposition of the *New Creature* is *Habitually* against *Sin*, and for *Holiness*. And this gives a mighty constraining Power unto the *Command*, when it is Evident in our own *Minds and Consciences*, that it requires nothing of us but what we do or may find an *Inclination or Disposition* in our own *Hearts* unto. And by this Consideration we may take in the *Power* of it upon our Souls, which is too frequently disregarded. Let us but upon the *proposal* of it unto us, consider what our *Minds and Hearts* say to it, what Answer they return, and we shall quickly discern how *equal and just* the *Command* is. For I cannot persuade my self, that any *Believer* can be so *captivated* at any time under the Power of Temptations, Corruptions, or Prejudices, but that (if he will but take Counsel with his own Soul, upon the Consideration of the *Command* for Obedience and *Holiness*, and ask himself what he would have,) he will have a plain and sincere Answer, That indeed *I would doe and have the Good proposed*, this *Holiness*, this Duty of Obedience. Not only will *Conscience* answer, that he must not do the *Evil* whereunto Temptation leadeth, for if he doth, *Evil* will ensue thereon; but the *new Nature*, and his *Mind and Spirit* will say, *This Good I would doe*, I delight in it, it is *Best* for me, most suited unto me. And so it joyns all the *Strength and Interest* it hath in the Soul, with the *Command*. See to this Purpose the Arguing of our Apostle, Rom. 7. 20, 21, 22. It is true, there is a *Natural Light* in *Conscience*, complying with the *Command* in its Proposal, and urging Obedience thereunto,

Sect. 29.

unto, which doth not make it *easy* to us, but where it is alone, increaseth its *Burden* and our *Bondage*; For it doth only give in its Suffrage unto the *Sanction* of the Command, and addes to the *severity* wherewith it is attended. But that *Compliance* with the Command which is from a *Principle of Grace*, is quite of another *Nature*, and greatly facilitates Obedience. And we may distinguish between that *Compliance* with the Command which is from the *Natural Light* of Conscience, which *genders* unto *Bondage*, and that which being from a *Renewed Principle of Grace*, gives *Liberty* and *Ease* in Obedience. For, the first respects principally the *Consequent* of Obedience or *Disobedience*, the Good or Evil that will ensue upon them; *Rom.* 2. 14, 15. Set aside this Consideration, and it hath no more to say: But the latter respects the *Command* it self, which it embraceth, delighteth in, and judgeth good and holy, with the Duties themselves required, which are *Natural*, and suited thereunto.

Sect. 30.

2. *Grace* of the latter sort also, *Actual Grace* for every holy Act and Duty, is administred unto us according to the *Promise* of the *Gospel*. So God told *Paul*, that his *Grace* was sufficient for him. And he *worketh in us both to will and to doe*, of his own good *Pleasure*, *Phil.* 2. 13. so as that we may doe all things through him that enables us, the *Nature* of which *Grace* also hath been before discoursed of. Now although this *Actual* working *Grace* be not in the *Power* of the *Wills* of Men, to make use of or refuse as they see Good, but its Administration depends meerly on the *Grace* and *Faithfulness* of God, yet this I must say, that where it is sought in a due Manner by *Faith* and *Prayer*, it is never so restrained from any *Believer*, but that it shall be *Effectual* in him, unto the whole of that Obedience which is required of him, and as it will be accepted from him.

Sect. 31.

If then this be the *Condition* of the *Command* of *Holiness*, how *Just* and *Equal* must it needs be confessed to be, and therefore how highly *Reasonable* is it that we should comply with it, and how great is their *Sin* and *Folly* by whom it is neglected! It is true, we are *absolutely* obliged unto Obedience by the meer *Authority* of God who commands; but he not only allows us to take in, but directs us to seek after these other Considerations of it, which may give it *Force* and *Efficacy* upon our Souls and Consciences. And among these, none is more *Efficacious* towards *Gracious* Ingenuous Souls, than this of the *Contemperation* of the Duties commanded, unto spiritual Aids of *Strength* promised unto us. For, what Cloke or Pretence of *Dislike* or *Neglect* is here left unto any? Wherefore, not onely the *Authority* of God in giving a Command, but the *Infinite Wisdom* and *Goodness* of God in giving such a Command, so *Just*, *Equal* and *Gentle*, fall upon us therein, to Oblige us to Holy Obedience. To Neglect or Despise this *Command*, is to Neglect or Despise *God*, in that Way which he hath chosen to manifest all the holy Properties of his Nature.

Sect. 32.

Secondly, The *Command* is *Equal*, and so to be esteemed from the *Matter* of it, or the *Things* that it doth require. Things they are that are neither great nor grievous, much less perverse, useless, or evil, *Micah* 6. 6, 7, 8.

6. 6, 7, 8. There is nothing in the *Holiness* which the *Command* requires, but what is *Good* to him in whom it is, and *Usefull* to all others concerned in him, or what he doth. What they are, the Apostle mentions in his Exhortation unto them, *Phil.* 4. 8. They are *things true*, and *honest*, and *just*, and *pure*, and *lovely*, and of *good report*, and what *Evil* is there in any of these things, that we should decline the *Command* that requires them? The more we abound in them, the better it will be for our Relations, our Families, our Neighbours, the whole Nation, and the World, but best of all for our selves. *Godliness is profitable unto all things*, *1 Tim.* 4. 8. These things are good and profitable unto men, *Tit.* 3. 8. Good to them that do them, and good to those towards whom they are done. But both these things, namely, the *Usefulness* of *Holiness* unto our selves and others, must be spoken unto distinctly afterwards, and are therefore transmitted unto their proper place.

As therefore it was before observed, it is incumbent on us in the first place, to *Endeavour after Holiness* and the Improvement of it, with respect unto the *Command* of God that we should be *Holy*, and because of it, and that especially under the *Consideration* of it which we have insisted on. I know not what vain Imaginations have seemed to possess the Minds of some, that they have no need of Respect unto the *Command*, nor to the *Promises* and *Threatnings* of it, but to Obey meerly from the Power and Guidance of an *inward Principle*. Nay, some have supposed, that a Respect unto the *Command* would vitiate our Obedience, rendring it *Legal* and *Servile*. But I hope, That *Darkness* which hindred men from discerning the *Harmony* and *Compliance* which is between the *Principle* of Grace in us, and the *Authority* of the *Command* upon us, is much taken away from all sincere Professors. It is a Respect unto the *Command* which gives the *formal Nature* of Obedience unto what we do. And without a due Regard unto it, there is nothing of *Holiness* in us. Some would make the *Light of Nature* to be their Rule, some in what they do, look no further for their Measure than what carries the Reputation of *common Honesty* among men. He that would be *holy* indeed, must alwayes mind the *Command* of God, with that Reverence and those Affections which become him to whom God speaks immediately. And that it may be Effectual towards us, we may consider:

Sect. 33.

(1) How God hath *multiplied his Commands* unto this Purpose, to testify not only his own infinite Care of us, and Love unto us, but also our *Eternal Concernment* in what he requires. He doth not give out unto us a *single Command* that we should be *Holy*, (which yet were sufficient to Oblige us for ever) but he gives his Commands unto that Purpose, *Line upon line, line upon line, precept upon precept, precept upon precept*. He that shall but look over the Bible, and see almost every Page of it filled with *Commands*, or *Directions*, or *Instructions* for *Holiness*; cannot but conclude, that the Mind and Will of God is very much in this matter, and that our Concernment therein is inexpressible. Nor doth God content himself to *multiply Commands* in General, that we should be *Holy*, so as that if we have Regard unto him they may never be out of our Remembrance, but there is not

Sect. 34.

not any *particular Duty* or Instance of *Holiness*, but he hath given us *especial Commands* for that also. No man can instance in the least *Duty* that belongs directly unto it, but it falls under some *especial Command* of God. We are not only then under the *Command* of God in *general*, and that often reiterated unto us, in an awfull *Reverence* whereof we ought to walk, but upon all *Occasions*, whatever we have to do or avoid in following after *Holiness*, is represented unto us in *especial Commands* to that purpose. And they are all of them a *Fruit* of the *Love* and *Care* of God towards us. Is it not then our *Duty* alwayes to consider these *Commands*, to bind them unto our *Hearts*, and our *Hearts* to them, that nothing may separte them? Oh that they might alwayes dwell in our *Minds*, to influence them unto an inward constant *Watch* against the first *Disorders* of our *Souls*, that are unsuited to the *inward Holiness* God requires, abide with us in our *Closets*, and all our *Occasions* for our *Good*.

Sect. 35.

(2) We may do well to consider what *various Enforcements* God is pleased to give unto those *multiplied Commands*. He doth not remit us meerly to their *Authority*, but he applyeth all other *Wayes* and *Means* whereby they may be made *Effectual*. Hence are they accompanied with *Exhortations*, *Entreaties*, *Reasonings*, *Expostulations*, *Promises*, *Threatnings*, all made use of to fasten the *Command* upon our *Minds* and *Consciences*. God knowes how slow and backward we are to receive due *Impressions* from his *Authority*; and he knowes by what *Wayes* and *Means* the *Principles* of our internal *Faculties* are apt to be wrought upon, and therefore applyes these *Engines* to fix the *Power* of the *Command* upon us. Were these things to be treated of severally, it is manifest how great a part of the *Scripture* were to be transcribed. I shall therefore only take a little *Notice* of the *Reinforcement* of the *Command* for *Holiness*, by those *especial Promises* which are given unto it. I do not intend now the *Promises* of the *Gospel* in *general*, wherein in its own *Way* and *Place* we are interested by *Holiness*, but of such *peculiar Promises* as God enforceth the *Command* by. It is not for nothing that it is said, that *Godliness hath the Promise of the Life that now is, and of that which is to come*; 1 Tim. 4. 8. There is in all the *Promises* an *especial Respect* unto it, and it gives them in whom it is an *especial Interest* in all the *Promises*.

Sect. 36.

This is as it were the *Text* which our *Saviour* preached his first *Sermon* upon. For all the *Blessings* which he pronounceth consist in giving *particular Instances* of some parts of *Holiness*, annexing an *especial Promise* unto each of them. *Blessed*, saith he, *are the Pure in Heart*; *Heart Purity* is the *Spring* and *Life* of all *Holiness*; and why are such *Persons* *Blessed*; why saith he, *they shall see God*; He appropriates the *Promise* of the *Eternal Enjoyment* of God, unto this *Qualification* of *Purity* of *Heart*. So also it hath the *Promises* of *this Life*, and that in things *temporal* and *spiritual*. In things *temporal* we may take out from amongst many that *especial Instance* given us by the *Psalmist*; *Blessed is he that considereth the Poor*. Wisely to consider the *poor* in their *Distress*, so as to *Relieve* them according to our *Ability*, is a great *Act* and *Duty* of *Holiness*. He that doth this, saith the *Psalmist*, *he is a Blessed*

Blessed man. Whence doth that *Blessedness* arise, and wherein doth it consist? It doth so in a Participation of those especial *Promises* which God hath annexed unto this Duty, even in this Life; *the Lord will deliver him in the time of trouble. The Lord will preserve him and keep him alive, and he shall be Blessed on the Earth, and thou wilt not deliver him into the hand of his Enemies; the Lord will strengthen him upon the Bed of languishing, and thou wilt make all his Bed in his sickness, Psal. 41. 1, 2, 3.* Many especial *Promises* in the most important *Concerns* of this Life, are given unto the Right discharge of this one Duty. For *Godliness* hath the *Promise* of this Life. And other Instances might be multiplyed unto the same Purpose. It is so also with respect unto things *spiritual*. So the Apostle *Peter* having repeated a long Chain of *Graces*, whose Exercise he presenteth unto us, addes for an Encouragement, *If ye do these things ye shall never fall, 2 Pet. 1. 10.* The *Promise* of *Permanency* in Obedience, with an absolute *Preservation* from all such Fallings into *Sin* as are inconsistent with the *Covenant of Grace*, is affixed unto our *Diligence* in *Holiness*. And who knowes not how the *Scripture* abounds in Instances of this Nature? That which we conclude from hence is, that together with the *Command* of God requiring us to be *Holy*, we should consider the *Promises* wherewith it is accompanied, (among other things) as an *Encouragement* unto the chearfull Performance of that Obedience, which the *Command* it self makes *Necessary*.

Wherefore, the *Force* of this Argument is evident, and exposed unto all. God hath in this Matter positively declared his *Will*, interposing his *Sovereign Authority* commanding us to be *Holy*; and that on the Penalty of his *utmost displeasure*; and he hath therewithall given us redoubled Assurance, (as in a case wherein we are very apt to deceive our selves) that be we else what we will, or can be, without *sincere Holiness* he will neither own us, nor have any thing to doe with us. Be our Gifts, Parts, Abilities, Places, Dignities, Usefulness in the World, Profession, outward Duties what they will, unless we are *sincerely Holy*, which we may not be, and yet be eminent in all these things, we are not, we cannot, we shall not be accepted with God.

Sect. 37.

And the Holy Ghost is carefull to obviate a *Deceit* in this Matter, which he foresaw would be apt to put it self on the Minds of men. For whereas the *Foundation* of our *Salvation* in our selves, and the Hinge whereon the whole weight of it doth turn, is our *Faith*; men might be apt to think, that if they have *Faith*, it will be well enough with them although they are not *Holy*. Therefore, because this Plea and Pretence of *Faith* is great, and apt to impose on the Minds of men, who would willingly retain their Lusts with an Hope and Expectation of *Heaven*, we are plainly told in the *Scripture*, that that *Faith* which is without *Holiness*, without *Works*, without *Fruits*, which can be so, or is possible that it should be so; is *vain*; not that *Faith* which will save our Souls, but *Equivocally* so called, that may perish for ever with those in whom it is.

Sect. 38.

CHAP. IV.

Necessity of Holiness from God's sending Jesus Christ.

The Necessity of Holiness proved from the Design of God in sending Jesus Christ, with the Ends of his Mediation.

Sect. 1.

WEE have yet other Considerations and Arguments to plead unto the same Purpose with them foregoing: For one principal End of the Design of God in sending his Son into the World, was to Recover us into a State of Holiness, which we had lost. For this purpose was the Son of God manifested, that he might destroy the Works of the Devil, 1 John 3. 8. The Manifestation of the Son of God was his Incarnation, 1 Tim. 1. 16. in order to the Work which he had to accomplish in our Nature. And this was in General the Destruction of the Works of the Devil. Among these the principal was, the infecting of our Natures and Persons with a Principle of Sin and Enmity against God, which was the Effect of his Temptation. And this is not done but by the Introduction of a Principle of Holiness and Obedience. The Image of God in us was defaced by Sin. The Renovation or Restauration hereof, was one principal Design of Christ in his Coming. Unless this be done, there is no New World, no New Creatures, no Restauration of all things, no one End of the Mediation of Christ fully accomplished. And whereas his great and ultimate Design was to bring us unto the Enjoyment of God, unto his Eternal Glory, this cannot be, before by Grace and Holiness we are made meet for that Inheritance of the Saints in Light. But we shall consider this Matter a little more distinctly.

Sect. 2.

The Exercise of the Mediation of Christ, is confined unto the Limits of his Three-fold Office. Whatever he doth for the Church, he doth it as a Priest, or as a King, or as a Prophet. Now as these Offices agree in all the general Ends of his Mediation, so they differ in their Acts, and immediate Objects. For their Acts it is plain, Sacerdotal, Regal, and Prophetical Acts and Duties, are of different Natures, as the Offices themselves are unto which they appertain. And for their Objects; the proper immediate Object of the Priestly Office is God himself, as is evident both from the Nature of the Office, and its proper Acts. For as to the Nature of the Office, Every Priest is taken from among men, and ordained for men in things pertaining unto God, that he may Offer both Gifts and Sacrifices for sins, Heb. 5. 1. A Priest is one who is appointed to deal with God, in the behalf of them for whom he executes his Office. And the Acts of the Priestly Office of Christ are two; Oblation and

and *Intercession*, of both which God is the immediate Object. He offered himself unto God, and with him he makes *Intercession*. But the immediate Object of Christs *Kingly* and *Prophetical* Offices are *Men*, or the *Church*. As a *Priest* he Acts with God in our Name and on our behalf; as a *King* and *Prophet* he Acts towards us in the Name and Authority of God.

This being premised, we may consider how each of these Offices of Christ hath an Influence into *Holiness*, and makes it necessary unto us. Sect. 3.

First; For the *Priestly* Office of Christ, all the proper Acts of it do immediately respect God himself, as hath been declared. And therefore, he doth not by any *Sacerdotal* Act immediately and efficiently work *Holiness* in us. But the Effects of these *Priestly* Acts, that is, his *Oblation* and *Intercession*, are of two sorts: (1) *Immediate*, such as respect God himself; as *Attonement*, *Reconciliation*, *Satisfaction*. In these consist the first and Fundamental End of the *Mediation* of Christ. Without a Supposition of these, all other things are rendred Useless. We can neither be *sanctified* nor *saved* by him, unless Sin be first expiated, and God attoned. But they are not of our present Consideration. (2) The *Mediate* Effects of Christs *Sacerdotal* Acting respect us, and are also of two sorts. 1. *Moral*, as our *Justification* and *pardon* of *Sin*. 2. *Real*, in our *sanctification* and *Holiness*. And hereunto as God doth Design them, so he Effecteth *Holiness* in all Believers, by vertue of the *Oblation* and *Intercession* of Jesus Christ; Wherefore, although the *immediate* Actings of that Office respect God alone as their proper Object, yet the Vertue and Efficacy of them extend themselves unto our *Sanctification* and *Holiness*.

Tit. 2. 14. He gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all Iniquity, and purifie unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good Works. His giving himself for us, is the common Expression of his Offering himself a Sacrifice to God as a Priest, Ephes. 5. 2. And this he did not only that he might redeem us from Iniquity, from the Guilt of our Sins, and Punishment due unto them, which are regarded in *Redemption*, but also that he might purifie us to himself, sanctifie us, or make us Holy and Fruitfull, or Zealous of good Works. His Blood as through the *Eternal Spirit* he Offered himself unto God, purgeth our Consciences from dead Works, to serve the living God, Heb. 9. 14. There is a purging of Sin, which consists in the Legal Expiation of it, in making *Attonement*, Heb. 1. 3. But the purging of a Sinner, or of the Conscience, is by Real Efficiency, in *Sanctification*, which is here declared to be one End of the *Oblation* of Christ. So where he is said to wash us from our Sins in his own Blood, namely, as shed and offered for us, Rev. 1. 5. it is not only the Expiation of Guilt, but the Purification of Filth that is intended.

The Way and Manner how *Holiness* is Communicated unto us by vertue of the Death and *Oblation* of Christ, I have shewed before at large, and shall not therefore here again insist upon it. I shall only observe, that *Holiness* being one especial End for which Christ gave himself for us, or Offered himself unto God for us, without a Participa- Sect. 4.

tion thereof, it is impossible that we should have the least Evidence of an Interest in his *Oblation* as to any other End of it. And as for those who are never made *Holy*, Christ never *died* or *Offered* himself for them. I cannot understand what Advantage it is unto *Religion*, to affirm that the most of them for whom Christ *died* as a *Priest*, or offered himself an *Oblation* to God, shall have no Benefit thereby as to *Grace* or *Glory*; and incomparably the most of them without any especial Fault of their own, as never *hearing* of him. Neither can I find in the Scripture a double Design of Christ, in giving himself for Mankind; towards *some*, that they may be *redeemed from all Iniquity* and *purified* to be his *peculiar* Ones; towards *others*, that they may yet be left under the *Guilt* and *Power* of their Sins. And it evacuates the force of the *Motive* unto the *Necessity* of *Holiness* from the Consideration of the *Oblation* of Christ, where men are taught that *Christ offered himself a Sacrifice* for them who are never made *Holy*. Wherefore I say, no *unholy* person can have any certain Evidence that he hath an Interest in the *Oblation* of Christ, seeing he gave himself to *purifie* them for whom he was *Offered*.

Sect. 5. The *Intercession* of Christ, which is his second *Sacerdotal Act*, hath also the same *End*, and is *Effectual* to the same Purpose: It is true, he doth *Intercede* with God for the *Pardon of Sin* by vertue of his *Oblation*; whence he is said to be our *Advocate* with God, to *comfort* us in case of *Surprizals* by sin, 1 *John* 1. 1, 2. But this is not all he designeth therein; He *Intercedes* also for *Grace* and *supplies* of the *Spirit*, that we may be made and kept *Holy*. See *John* 17. 15, 17.

Sect. 6. Secondly, As to the *Prophetical Office* of Christ, the *Church* or *Men* alone are its immediate *Object*, and of all the *Acts* and *Duties* of it. He is therein Gods *Legate* and *Ambassador*, his *Apostle* and *Messenger* unto us. Whatever he doth as a *Prophet*, he doth it with us and towards us in the *Name* of God. And there are two *Parts* or *Works* of Christ in this Office, relating onely to the *Doctrine* he taught: (1) The *Revelation* of God in his *Name*, and *Love*, in the *Mystery* of his *Grace* and *Goodness* and *Truth* by his *Promises*, that we may *believe* in him. (2) The *Revelation* of God in his *Will* and *Commands*, that we may *obey* him. For the *first*, wherein indeed his *Prophetical Office* was principally exercised, see *John* 1. 18. *Chap.* 1. 2. *John* 17. 6. The *Revelation* of the *Preceptive Will* of God made by *Jesus Christ*, may be considered two wayes. 1. As he was *peculiarly* sent to the *House of Israel*, the *Minister of the Circumcision* for the *Truth of the Promises of God unto the Fathers*, *Rom.* 15. 8. (2) With respect unto the *whole Church of all Ages*.

(1) The *first*, which took up much of his *personal Ministry* in the *Flesh*, consisted in the *Declarations*, *Exposition*, and *Vindication* that he gave unto the *Church* of all *Divine Precepts* for *Obedience*, which had been given before. God had from the *Beginning*, and in especial Manner at the *Promulgation* of the *Law on Sinai*, and the ensuing *Expositions* of it by the *Prophets*, given *Excellent Precepts* for *Holiness* and *Obedience*; But the *People* unto whom they were given, being *carnal*, they were not able to bear the *spiritual Light* and *Sence* of

of them, which was therefore greatly Veyled under the *Old Testament*. Not only the *Promises*, but the *Precepts* also of the *Law*, were then but obscurely apprehended. Besides, the Church being grown corrupted, there were solemn Expositions of Gods Commands received amongst them, whose sole Design was to *accommodate* them unto the Lusts and Sins of men, or to *exempt* men if not totally, yet in many Instances from an Obligation unto Obedience to them. Our Blessed Saviour applies himself in the Discharge of his *Prophetical Office* with respect unto the *End* of the Command, which is our *Holy Obedience*, unto both these, in the Declaration of its Excellency and Efficacy,

And (*first*) he declares the *inward spiritual Nature* of the *Law*, with its respect unto the most secret Frames of our Hearts and Minds, with the least Disorder or Irregularity of our Passions and Affections. And then (*secondly*) he declares the *true Sence* of its Commands, their Nature, Signification and Extent, vindicating them from all the corrupt and false Glosses which then passed current in the *Church*, whereby there was an Abatement made of their *Efficacy*, and an *Indulgence* granted unto the Lusts of Men. Thus they had by their *Traditional Interpretation* restrained the Sixth Commandement, *Thou shalt not Kill*, unto *actual Murder*; and the Seventh, *Thou shalt not commit Adultery*, unto *actual Uncleaness*; as some now would restrain the Second Commandement unto the *Making of Images* and *Worshipping* them, excluding the *primary* Intent of the Precept restraining all *Means* and *Manners* of *Worship* unto *Divine Institution*. How in his *Doctrine* he took off these Corruptions, we may see *Matth. 5. 21, 22, 27, 28*.

Sect. 7.

Thus he restored the *Law* to its *pristine Crown*, as the *Jews* have a Tradition that it shall be done in the Dayes of the *Messiah*. Herein did the Lord Christ place the *Beginning* of his *Prophetical Office* and Ministry, *Matth. 5. 6, 7*. He opened, unveyled, explained and vindicated the *Preceptive part* of the *Will of God* before Revealed, to the End that by a Compliance therewith we should be *Holy*. The full Revelation of the Mind and Will of God in the *Perfection and Spirituality* of the *Command*, was reserved for Christ in the Discharge of his Office. And he gave it unto us, that we might have a perfect and compleat Rule of *Holiness*. This therefore was the *immediate End* of this Work or Duty of the *Office* of Christ. And where we Answer it not, we reject that great *Prophet* which God hath sent, to which *Excision* is so severely threatned.

Sect. 8.

(2) The *second* part of this Office or of the Discharge of it, with respect unto the *Church of all Ages*, which takes in the *Ministry* of the Apostles as Divinely inspired by him, consisted in the *Revelation* of those Duties of *Holiness*, which although they had a general *Foundation* in the *Law*, and the *Equity* of them was therein established; yet could they never have been known to be Duties in their *especial Nature*, Incumbent on us and Necessary unto us, but by his Teachings and Instructions. Hence are they called *Old* and *New* Commandements in distinct sences; such are *Faith* in God through himself, *Brotherly love*, *Denyal* of our selves in taking up the Cross, doing *Good* for *Evil*, with some

Sect. 9.

some others of the same Kind: And how a great part of *Evangelical Holiness* consists in these things, is known. Besides, he also teacheth us all those *Ordinances of Worship* wherein our Obedience unto him belongs unto our *Holiness* also; whereby it is enlarged and promoted. This I say is the *Nature and End* of the *Prophetical Office* of Christ, wherein he Acts towards us from God, and in his Name, as to the Declaration of the *Will of God* in his *Commands*. And it is our *Holiness* which is his only End and Design therein. So it is summarily represented, *Tit. 2. 10, 11, 12.*

Sect. 10.

There are three Things considerable in the *Doctrine* of Obedience that Christ teacheth. (1) That it reacheth the *Heart* it self, with all its *inmost* and *secret* *Things*, and that in the *first* place. The Practice of *most* goes no further but unto *Outward* *Acts*; the Teachings of many goe no further, or at *best* unto the *Moderation* of *Affections*. But he in the *first* place requires the *Renovation* of our *whole Souls*, in all their Faculties, Motions and *Actings*, into the *Image* of God, 1 *Joh. 3. 1. Ephes. 4. 23, 24, 25.* (2) It is *Extensive*. There is nothing in any kind pleasing to God, conformable to his *Mind*, or compliant with his *Will*, but he requires it; nothing *crooked*, or *perverse*, or *displeasing* to God, but it is *forbidden* by him. It is therefore a *perfect* *Rule* of Holiness and Obedience. (3) *Clearness*, *Perspicuity* and *Evidence* of *Divine Truth* and *Authority* in all.

Sect. 11.

(First.) Hereby I say, the *Doctrine* of Christ for *universal* Obedience, in all the Duties of it, becomes to be *absolute*, every way *complete* and *perfect*. And it is a notable Effect of the *Atheistical* Pride of Men, that pretending to design Obedience (at least in *Moral* Duties) unto God, they betake themselves unto other Rules and Directions, as either more *plain* or *full*, or *efficacious*, than those of the *Gospel*, which are the Teachings of Christ himself, as the great *Prophet* and *Apostle* sent of God to instruct us in our Duty. Some goe to the *Light* of *Nature* and the Use of *Right Reason*, that is, their *own*, as their *Guide*; and some adde the *Additional Documents* of the *Philosophers*: They think a Saying of *Epictetus*, or *Seneca*, or *Arrianus*, being wittily suited to their Fancies and *Affections*, to have more *Life* and *Power* in it than any *Precepts* of the *Gospel*. The Reason why these things are more pleasing unto them than the *Commands* and *Instructions* of Christ, is because proceeding from the Spring of *Natural Light*, they are suited to the Workings of natural Fancy and Understanding; but those of Christ proceeding from the *Fountain* of *Eternal spiritual Light*, are not comprehended in their Beauty and Excellency, without a Principle of the same *Light* in us, guiding our *Understandings* and influencing our *Affections*. Hence take any Precept general or particular about *Moral Duties*, that is *materially* the same, in the Writing of *Philosophers*, and in the *Doctrine* of the *Gospel*, not a few preferre it as delivered in the first way, before the latter. Such a Contempt have men risen unto of *Jesus Christ* the *Wisdom* of God, and the great *Prophet* of the Church. When he entred upon his Office, the *Voyce* came from the *Excellent Glory*, *This is my Beloved Son, hear him*: This succeeded into the Room of all those terrible Appearances and dreadful Preparations

rations which God made use of in the giving of the Law. For he gave the Law by the Ministry of Angels, who being meer Creatures, he manifested the Dread of his own Presence among them, to give Authority unto their Ministrations. But when he came to Reveal his Will under the Gospel, it being to be done by him in whom dwelt the Fulness of the Godhead Bodily, and who was intrusted himself with all Divine Power, he did no more but indigitate or declare which was the Person, and give us a Command in General to hear him. And this he did with respect unto what he had fixed before as a Fundamental Ordinance of Heaven, namely, that when he should raise up and send the great Prophet of the Church, whosoever would not hear him should be cut off from the people. A Compliance therefore with this Command, in hearing the Voice of Christ, is the Foundation of all Holiness and Gospel Obedience. And if men will be moved neither with the Wisdom, nor Authority, nor Goodness of God, in giving us this Command and Direction for our Good, nor with the Consideration of the Endowments and Faithfulness of Jesus Christ the Son of God in the Discharge of his Prophetical Office, nor from the Remembrance that it is He, and not Epictetus, or Seneca, or Plato, to whom at the Last Day they must give their Account, so as to take him alone for their Guide in all Obedience unto God, and Duty among themselves; they will find, when it is too late, that they have been mistaken in their Choyce.

Let us suppose, if you please at present, for the sake of them who would have it so, that all our Obedience consists in Morality or the Duties of it, which is the Opinion of (as one well calls them) our Modern Heathens; from whence or whom shall we learn it, or to whom shall we goe for Teaching and Instruction about it? Certainly where the Instruction or Systeme of Precepts is most plain, full, perfect, and free from Mistakes; where the manner of Teaching is most Powerfull and Efficacious, and where the Authority of the Teacher is greatest and most unquestionable, there we ought to apply our selves to Learn and be guided. In all these Respects we may say of Christ as Job said of God, Who teacheth Like him? Job 36. 22. Then probably shall we be Taught of God, when we are Taught by him. The Commands and Precepts of Duties themselves which are given us by the Light of Nature, however improved by the Wits and Reasons of contemplative men, are many wayes Defective.

Sect. 12.

For, (1) The utmost Imaginations of Men, never reached unto that wherein the Life and Soul of Holiness doth consist, Namely, the Renovation of our lapsed Natures into the Image and Likeness of God. Without this, whatever Precepts are given about the Moderation of Affections and Duties of Moral Holiness, they are lifeless, and will prove useles. And hence it is, that by all those Documents which were given by Philosophers of Old, the Nature of no one individual Person was ever renewed, what Change soever was wrought on their Conversation. But that this is plainly and directly required in the Doctrine of Obedience taught by Jesus Christ as the great Prophet of the Church, I have sufficiently proved in this whole Discourse.

Sect. 13.

(2) Very few of the Precepts of it are certain, so as that we may take

take

take them for an undoubted and infallible *Rule*. There are some general Commands I acknowledge, so clear in the *Light of Nature*, as that no question can be made, but that what is required in them is our Duty to perform: Such are they, that God is to be *loved*, that others are not to be *injured*, that every ones *Right* is to be rendred unto him, whereunto all Reasonable Creatures do assent at their first Proposal. And where any are found to live in an open Neglect or seem to be Ignorant of them, their Degeneracy into *Feastiality* is open, and their Sentiments not at all to be regarded. But goe a little further, and you will find all the great *Moralists* at endless uncertain Disputes about the *Nature* of Vertue in general, about the *Offices* and *Duties* of it, about the *Rule* and *Measures* of their Practice. In these Disputes did most of them consume their Lives, without any great Endeavours to expresse their own *Notions* in their *Conversations*.

Sect. 14.

And from the same Reason I suppose in part it is, that our present *Moralists* seem to care for nothing but the *Name*; *Vertue* it self is grown to be a *strange* and *unconth* thing. But what is commanded us by *Jesus Christ*, there is no room for the least *hesitation* whether it be an infallible *Rule* for us to attend unto or no. Every Precept of his about the meanest Duty, is equally certain and infallibly declarative of the *Nature* and *Necessity* of that Duty, as those of the greatest, and that have most Evidence from the *Light of Nature*. If once it appears that Christ requires any thing of us by his *Word*, that he hath taught us any thing as the *Prophet* of the Church, there is no Doubt remains with us, whether it be our Duty or no.

(3) The whole *Rule* of Duties given by the most *improved Light* of Nature, setting aside those that are purely *Evangelical*, which some despise, is *obscure* and *partial*. There are sundry *Moral Duties* which I instanced in before, which the *Light of Nature* as it remains in the lapsed depraved Condition of it, never extended it self to the Discovery of. And this *Obscurity* is evident from the Differences that are about its *Precepts* and *Directions*. But now as the *Revelation* made by Christ, and his Commands therein, is Commensurate unto Universal Obedience, and gives Bounds unto it, so that there is no Duty of it but what he hath commanded, and it is sufficient to discharge the most specious Pleas and Pretences of any thing to be a Duty towards God or Man, by shewing that it is not required by him; so his Commands and Directions are *plain* and evidently *perspicuous*. I dare challenge the greatest and most Learned *Moralists* in the World, to give an Instance of any one Duty of *Morality*, confirmed by the Rules and Directions of the highest and most Contemplative *Moralist*, that I will not shew and evince, that it is more plainly and clearly required by the *Lord Christ* in the Gospel, and pressed on us by far more *effectual* Motives than any they are acquainted withall. It is therefore the highest *Folly* as well as *Wickedness*, for Men to design, plead, or pretend the Learning Duties of Obedience from others rather than from Christ the *Prophet* of the Church.

Sect. 15.

(Secondly,) The *Manner* of Teaching as to *Power* and *Efficacy*, is also considerable unto this End. And concerning this also we may say,

say, *Who teacheth like him?* There was that Eminency in his *personal Ministry* whilst he was on the Earth, as filled all men with Admiration. Hence it is said, that *he taught with Authority, and not as the Scribes*, Matth. 7. 29. and another while *they wondered at the Gracious words which he uttered*, Luke 4. 22. And the very *Officers* that were sent to apprehend him for Preaching, came away astonished, saying, *Never man spake like this Man*, John 7. 46. It is true, it was not the Design of God, that Multitudes of that hardened Generation should be Converted by his *personal Ministry*, John 12. 38, 39, 40. as having another to fulfill in them, by them, and upon them; yet it is evident from the Gospel, that there was *Dei vi*, a Divine Power and Glory, accompanying his Ministerial Instructions. Yet this is not that which I intend, but his continued and present Teaching of the Church by his Word and Spirit. He gives that Power and Efficacy unto it, as that by its Effects every day it demonstrates it self to be from God, being accompanied with the Evidence and Demonstration of a *spiritual Power* put forth in it. This the Experiences, Consciences, and Lives of Multitudes bear witness unto continually. They do and will to Eternity attest what Power his Word hath had to enlighten their Minds, to subdue their Lusts, to change and renew their Hearts, to relieve and comfort them in their Temptations and Distresses, with the like Effects of Grace and Power.

What is in the Manner of Teaching by the greatest Moralist; and what are the Effects of it? Enticing Words, Smoothness and Elegancy of Speech, composed into Snares for the Affections, and Delight unto the Fancy, are the Grace, Ornament, and Life of the Way or Manner of their Teaching. And hereof, evanid Satisfaction, temporary Resolutions for a kind of compliance with the things spoken, with (it may be) some few perishing Endeavours after some Change of Life, are the best Effects of all such Discourses. And so easie and gentle is their Operation on the Minds of men, that commonly they are delighted in by the most profligate and obstinate Sinners, as is the Preaching of them who Act in the same spirit and from the same principles. Sect. 16.

(Thirdly,) Whereas the last thing Considerable in those whose Instructions we should choose to give up our selves unto, is their Authority, that must be left without further Plea to the Consciences of all men, whether they have the highest Esteem of the Authority of Christ the Son of God, or of those others whom they do admire; and let them freely take their Choyce, so they will ingenuously acknowledge what they doe.

Whereas therefore the great End of the Prophetical Office of Christ, in the Revelation he made of the Will of God in the Scriptures, in his personal Ministry, in the Dispensation of his Word and Spirit continued in the Church, is our Holiness and Obedience unto God, I could not but Remark upon the Atheisme, Pride and Folly of those Modern Heathens, who really or in pretence, betake themselves to the Light of Nature and Philosophical Maxims, for their Guidance and Direction, rather than to him who is Designed of God to be the great Teacher of the Church. I deny not, but that in the Ancient Moralists there are Sect. 17.

found many excellent Documents concerning *Vertue* and *Vice*; but yet having been it may be more conversant in their Writings than most of those who pretend so highly unto their *Veneration*, I fear not to affirm, that as their Sayings may be of use for *Illustration* of the Truth which is infallibly learned another way, so take them alone, they will sooner delight the Minds and Fancies of men, than benefit or profit them as to the true Ends of *Morality* or *Vertue*.

Sect. 18.

Thirdly; This also is one great *End* of the *Kingly Power* of *Christ*. For as such doth he *subdue* our Enemies, and preserve our Souls from Ruine. And those are our Adversaries, which fight against our *spiritual Condition* and Safety; such principally are our *Lusts*; our *Sins*, and our *Temptations* wherewith they are accompanied. These doth our Lord *Christ* subdue by his *Kingly Power*, quickening and strengthening in us by his Aids and Supplyes of Grace, all Principles of *Holy Obedience*. In brief; the Work of *Christ* as a *King* may be reduced unto these Heads. (1) To make his Subjects free. (2) To preserve them in *safety*, delivering their Souls from Deceit and Violence. (3) In giving them *Prosperity*, and encreasing their Wealth. (4) In establishing assured *Peace* for them. (5) In giving them *Love* among themselves. (6) In placing the *Interest* and *Welfare* of his Kingdom in all their *Affections*. (7) In Eternally Rewarding their *Obedience*. And all these he doth principally by working *Grace* and *Holiness* in them, as might be easily demonstrated. I suppose none question but that the principal Work of *Christ* towards us as our *Head* and *King*, is in *making* and *preserving* of us *Holy*. I shall not therefore further insist thereon.

It remains that we improve these *Considerations*, unto the Confirmation of our present Argument concerning the *Necessity* of *Holiness*.

Sect. 19.

And (*First*,) It is hence evident how *vain* and *fond* a thing it is, for any Persons continuing in an *unholy Condition* to imagine, that they have any *Interest* in *Christ*, or shall have any *Benefit* by him. This is the great *Deceit* whereby *Sathan*, that Enemy of the *common Salvation*, hath Ruined the Generality of Mankind who profess the *Christian Religion*. The Gospel openly declares a Way of *Life* and *Salvation* by *Jesus Christ*. This is thus farre admitted by all who are called *Christians*, that they will allow of no other Way for the same *End*, unto competition with it. For I speak not of them who being *profligate* and hardened in *Sins*, are *Regardless* of all future Concernments; but I intend only such as in general have a desire to *escape the Damnation of Hell*, and to attain *Immortality* and *Glory*. And this they do at least *profess* to doe by *Jesus Christ*, as supposing that the Things to this purpose mentioned in the Gospel, do belong unto them as well as unto others, because they also are *Christians*. But they consider not that there are certain *Wayes and Means*, whereby the *Vertue* and *Benefit* of all that the Lord *Christ* hath done for us, are conveyed to the Souls of men, whereby they are made partakers of them. Without these we have no Concernment in what *Christ* hath done or declared in the Gospel. If we expect to be *saved* by *Christ*, it must be by what he doth and hath done for us, as a *Priest*, a *Prophet* and a *King*:
But

But one of the principal Ends of what he doth in all these, is to make us *Holy*; and if these be not effected in us, we can have no Eternal Benefit by any thing that Christ hath done or continueth to doe as the *Mediator* of the Church.

Hence the *miserable* Condition of the Generality of those who are called *Christians*, who live in *sin* and yet hope to be *saved* by the *Gospel*, is greatly to be bewailed. They contract to themselves the *Guilt* of the two greatest Evils that any Reasonable Creatures are liable unto in this World. For (1) they *wofully deceive and ruine* their own *Souls*. Their whole Profession of the Gospel is but a *Crying peace, peace*, when *sudden destruction* lyes at the Door. They deny the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves *swift destruction*. They are bought and vindicated into the Knowledge and Profession of the *Truth*, but in their *Works* they deny him whom in *Words* they own, whose *Damnation* sleepeth not. For men to live in *Covetousness, Sensuality, Pride, Ambition, Pleasures, Hatred of the power of Godliness*, and yet to hope for *Salvation by the Gospel*, is the most infallible Way to hasten and secure their own *Eternal Ruine*. And (2^{ly}.) they cast the greatest *Dishonour* on *Christ* and the *Gospel*, that any Persons are capable of casting on them. Those by whom the Lord Christ is rejected as a *Seducer*, and the Gospel as a *Fable*, do not more (I may say not so much) dishonour the one and the other, as those doe, who professing to own them both, yet continue to *live and walk* in an *unholy Condition*. For as to the *open Enemies* of Christ, they are judged and condemned already, and none have Occasion to think the worse of him or the Gospel for their Opposition unto them: But for those *others* who profess to own them, they endeavour to represent the Lord Christ as a *Minister of Sin*, as one who hath procured Indulgence unto men to live in their Lusts and Rebellion against God; and the Gospel as a Doctrine of *Licentiousness* and *Wickedness*. What else can any one learn from them concerning the one or the other? The whole Language of their Profession is, that Christ is such a *Saviour*, and the Gospel such a *Law and Rule*, as that men loving Sin, and living in Sin, may be *saved* by them. This is that which hath *Reflected* all kind of *Dishonour* on *Christian Religion*, and put a stop unto its Progress in the World. These are they of whom our Apostle makes his bitter Complaint, *Phil. 3. 18, 19. Many walk of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the Enemies of the Cross of Christ, whose End is Destruction, whose God is their Belly, and whose Glory is in their Shame, who mind Earthly things*. How many that are called *Christians* doth this Character suit in these dayes? Whatever they think of themselves, they are *Enemies of the Cross of Christ*, and do trample under their feet the *Blood of the Covenant*.

(Secondly,) Let more serious Professors be most serious in this Matter. Sect. 21. The Apostle having given Assurance of the certain *Salvation* of all true Believers, from the immutable Purpose of God, presently addes, *Let every one that nameth the Name of Christ depart from Iniquity, 2 Tim. 2. 19.* plainly intimating, that without *Holiness*, without an *universal departure from Iniquity*, we cannot have the least Evidence that we

are interested in that assured Condition. You *name the Name of Christ*, profess an *Interest* in him, and expect *salvation* by him; which Way will you *apply* your selves unto him? from which of his *Offices* do you expect Advantage? Is it from his *Sacerdotal*? Hath his *Blood* purged your Consciences from *dead works*, that you should *serve the living God*? Are you *cleansed*, and *sanctified*, and made *Holy* thereby? Are you *redeemed* out of the World by it, and from your *vain Conversation* therein, after the *Customs* and *Traditions* of men? Are you by it *dedicated* unto God, and made his *peculiar Ones*? If you find not these Effects of the *Blood-shedding* of Christ in and upon your Souls and Consciences, in vain will you expect those other of *Attainment*, *Peace* and *Reconciliation* with God; of *Mercy*, *Pardon*, *Justification* and *Salvation*, which you look for. The *Priestly Office* of Christ hath its *whole Effect* towards all on whom it hath any *Effects*. Despisers of its Fruits in *Holiness*, shall never have the least Interest in its Fruits in *Righteousness*?

Sect. 22. Is it from his *Attings* as the great *Prophet* of the Church, that you expect Help and Relief? Have you effectually learned of him to *deny all Ungodliness and worldly Lusts*, to live *Righteously*, and *Soberly*, and *Godly in this present World*? Hath he taught you to be *humble*, to be *meek*, to be *patient*, to hate the *Garment spotted with the flesh*? Hath he instructed you unto *sincerity* in all your Wayes, Dealings, and whole Conversations among men? Above all hath he taught you, have you learned of him, to *purifie* and cleanse your Hearts by *Faith*, to *subdue* your inward spiritual and fleshly Lusts, to endeavour after an *universal Conformity* unto his *Image* and *Likeness*? Do you find his *Doctrine* Effectual unto these Ends, and are your Hearts and Minds cast into the *Mould of it*? If it be so, your Interest in him by his *Prophetical Office*, is secured unto you. But if you say, you *hear his Voyce* in his *Word*, Read and Preached, that you have Learned many *Mysteries*, and have attained much *Light* or *Knowledge* thereby, at least you know the *substance* of the *Doctrine* he hath taught, so as that you can *discourse* of it, yea and that you doe many Things or perform many Duties according unto it; but cannot say, that the *Effects* before enquired after, are wrought in you by his *Word* and *Spirit*, you lose the *second Expectation* of an *Interest* in Christ as *Mediator*, or any Advantage thereby.

Sect. 23. Will you betake your selves to the *Kingly Office* of Christ, and have you Expectations on him by vertue thereof? You may do well to Examine, how he Ruleth in you and over you. Hath he *subdued* your Lusts, those Enemies of his Kingdom, which fight against your Souls? Hath he *strengthened*, aided, supported, assisted you by his *Grace*, unto all Holy Obedience? And have you given up your selves to be Ruled by his *Word* and *Spirit*, to obey him in all things, and to *entrust* all your Temporal and Eternal Concernments unto his *Care*, *Faithfulness* and *Power*? If it be so, you have Cause to *Rejoyce*, as those who have an Assured Concern in the blessed Things of his Kingdom. But if your *proud rebellious Lusts* do yet bear sway in you, if *Sin* have *dominion* over you, if you continue to *fulfill* the Lusts of the
the

the *Mind* and of the *Flesh*; if you walk after the *Fashions* of *this World*, and not as Obedient Subjects of that Kingdom of his which *is not of this World*: Deceive not your selves any longer, *Christ* will be of no Advantage unto you. In these things lye the *summe* of our present Argument. If the Lord *Christ* act no otherwise for our Good, but in and by his Blessed Offices of *Priest*, *Prophet*, and *King*; and if the immediate *Effect* of the *Grace* of *Christ* acting in all these Offices towards us, be our *Holiness* and *Sanctification*, those in whom that *Effect* is not wrought and produced, have neither *Ground* nor *Reason* to Promise themselves an *Interest* in *Christ*, or any Advantage by his *Mediation*. For men to name the *Name* of *Christ*, to profess themselves *Christians*, or his Disciples, to avow an Expectation of *Mercy*, *Pardon*, *Life* and *Salvation* by him, and in the mean time to be in themselves *Worldly*, *Proud*, *Ambitious*, *Envious*, *Revengefull*, *Haters* of *Good Men*, *Covetous*, living in divers *Lusts* and *Pleasures*, is a *Scandal* and *Shame* unto *Christian Religion*, and unavoidably *Destructive* to their own *Souls*.

CHAP. V.

Necessity of Holiness from our Condition in this World.

Necessity of Holiness further Argued, from our own State and Condition in this World, with what is required of us with respect unto our giving Glory to Jesus Christ.

Sect. 1.

ANother Argument for the Necessity of Holiness may be taken from the Consideration of *our selves*, and our present State and Condition. For it is hereby alone that the *Vicious Distemper* of our Natures is or can be cured. That our Nature is fearfully and universally depraved by the Entrance of *Sin*, I have before declared and sufficiently confirmed. And I do not now consider it as to the Disability of *Living unto God*, or *Enmity* unto him which is come upon us thereby, nor yet as to the future Punishment which it renders us obnoxious unto: But it is the *present misery* that is upon us by it, (unless it be cured) which I intend. For the *Mind* of man being possessed with Darknes, Vanity, Folly, and Instability; the *Will* under the Power of spiritual Death, Stubborn and Obstinate, and all the *Affections* Carnal, Sensual and Selfish, the *whole Soul* being hurried off from God, and so out of its Way, is perpetually filled with Confusion and perplexing Disorder. It is not unlike that Description which *Job* gives of the Grave, *A Land of Darknes and of the shadow of Death, without any Order, and where the Light is as Darknes*; Chap. 10. 21, 22. When *Solomon* set himself to search out the Causes of all the Vanity and Vexation that is in the World, of all the Troubles that the Life of Man is filled withall; he affirms that this was the summe of his Discovery, *God made men upright, but they have found out many Inventions*, Eccles. 7. 29. that is, cast themselves into endless Entanglements and Confusions. What is *Sin* in its Guilt, is *Punishment* in its Power, yea the greatest that men are liable unto in this World. Hence God for the Guilt of some Sins, *penally* gives many up to the Power of others, Rom. 1. 24, 26, 28. 2 Thess. 2. 11. And this he doth, not only to secure and aggravate their *Condemnation* at the last Day, but to give them in this World a *Recompence* of their Folly in themselves. For there is no greater *Misery* nor *Slavery*, than to be under the Power of *Sin*.

Sect. 2.

This proves the Original *Depravation* of our Nature, the whole *Soul* filled with Darknes, Disorder and Confusion, being brought under the Power of various Lusts and Passions, captivating the *Mind* and *Will* unto their Interests, in the vilest Drudgeries of Servitude and Bondage.

Bondage. No sooner doth the *Mind* begin to Act any thing suitably unto the small Remainders of *Light* in it, but it is immediately controlled by impetuous Lusts and Affections, which *darken* its Directions, and *silence* its Commands. Hence is the common Saying, not so common as what is signified by it;

—————*Video Meliora probóque,*
Deteriora sequor—————

Hence the *whole Soul* is filled with fierce Contradictions and Conflicts. Vanity, Instability, Folly, sensual irrational Appetites, inordinate Desires, self-disquieting and torturing Passions, act continually in our *depraved Natures*. See the Account hereof, *Rom.* 3. 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18. How full is the World of Disorder, Confusion, Oppression, Rapine, Uncleanneſs, Violence, and the like dreadful Miseries? Alas! they are but a weak and imperfect Representation of the *Evils* that are in the *Minds* of Men by Nature. For as they all proceed from thence, as our Saviour declares, *Matth.* 15. 18, 19. so the Thousandth part of what is conceived therein, is never brought forth and Acted. *From whence come Warrs and Fightings among you, come they not hence, even of your Lusts that war in your Members? ye lust and have not, ye kill and desire to have, and cannot obtain; ye fight and warre, yet you have not,* *James* 4. 1, 2. All Evils proceed from the impetuous Lusts of the *Minds* of men, which when they are acted unto the utmost, are as unsatisfied as they were at their first setting out. Hence the *Prophet* tells us, that *Wicked men*, under the Power and Disorder of *depraved Nature*, are like a troubled Sea that cannot rest, whose Waves cast up mire and dirt; and have no Peace; *Isa.* 57. 20, 21. The Heart is in continual Motion; is Restless in its Figments and Imaginations, as the Waters of the Sea when it is stormy and troubled; and they are all evil, only evil continually, *Gen.* 6. 5. Herein doth it cast up Mire and Dirt. And those who seem to have the greatest Advantages above others in Power and Opportunity to give satisfaction unto their Lusts, doe but encrease their own Disquietness and Miseries, *Psal.* 59. 14. For as these things are evil in themselves, and unto others; so they are *penal* unto those in whom they are, especially in whom they abound and Reign. And if their Breasts were opened, it would appear, by the Confusion and Horror they live in, that they are on the very Confines of Hell.

Hence is the *Life* of Man full of Vanity, Trouble, Disappointments, Vexations, and endless self-dissatisfactions, which those who were wise among the *Heathens*, saw, complained of, and attempted in vain Reliefs against. All these things proceed from the *Depravation* of our *Natures*, and the Disorder that is come upon us by *Sin*. And as (if they are not cured and healed) they will assuredly issue in Everlasting *Misery*, so they are Wofull and Calamitous at present. True Peace, Rest, and Tranquillity of Mind are *strangers* unto such Souls. Alas! what are the perishing Profits, Pleasures, and Satisfaction by them, which this World can afford? How unable is the Mind of man to find out Rest and Peace in them or from them. They quickly

satiare

Sect. 3.

satiate and *suffocate* in their Enjoyment, and become to have no Relish in their Varieties, which onely heightens *present* Vanity, and treasures up Provision for *future* Vexation. We have therefore no greater *Interest* in the World, than to enquire how this Disorder may be *cured*, and a stop put to this *Fountain* of all Abominations. What we intend, will be cleared in the ensuing Observations.

- Sect. 4. (1) It is true, that some are *Naturally* of a more *sedate* and *quiet* Temper and *Disposition* than others are. They fall not into such Outrages and Excesses of outward Sins as others doe; nay, their *Minds* are not capable of such turbulent Passions and Affections as the most are possessed withall. These Comparatively are *peaceable*, and *usefull* to their Relations and others. But yet their *Minds* and *Hearts* are full of *Darkness* and *Disorder*. For so is it with all by Nature, (as we have proved) who have not an Almighty *effectual* Cure wrought upon them. And the less troublesome *Waves* they have on the Surface, the more *Mire* and *Dirt* oft-times they have at the Bottom.
- Sect. 5. (2) *Education*, *Convictions*, *Afflictions*, *Illuminations*, Hope of a *Righteousness* of their own, Love of *Reputation*, Inagements into the *Society* of *Good men*, *Resolutions* for Secular Ends, with other Means of the like kind, do often put great Restraints upon the *Actings* and *Ebullitions* of the evil Imaginations and turbulent Affections of the Minds of men; yea the *frame* of the *Mind* and the *Course* of the *Life* may be much changed by them; *how*, *wherein*, and *how far*, is not our present Business to declare.
- Sect. 6. (3) Notwithstanding all that may be Effected by these *Means*, or any other of like Nature, the *Disease* is *uncured*, the Soul continues still in its *Disorder*, and in all inward Confusions. For our Original Order, Harmony and Rectitude, consisted in the *Powers* and *Inclinations* of our Minds, Wills and Affections, unto *regular Actings* towards God as our *End* and *Reward*. Hence proceeded all that *Order* and *Peace* which was in all their Faculties, and their *Actings*. Whilest we continued in due Order towards God, it was impossible that we should be otherwise in our selves: But being by *Sin* fallen off from God, having lost our *Conformity* and *Likeness* unto him, we fell into all the Confusion and Disorder before described. Wherefore,
- Sect. 7. (4) The onely *Cure* and *Remedy* of this Evil Condition, is by *Holiness*. For it must be and can be no otherwise but by the *Renovation* of the *Image of God* in us; for from the Loss hereof doth all the Evil mentioned spring and arise. By this are our Souls in some measure Restored unto their *primitive Order* and *Rectitude*. And without *this*, Attempts for *inward Peace*, real *Tranquility* of Mind, with due Order in our Affections, will be in vain attempted. It is the *Holy soul*, the *sanctified Mind* alone, that is composed into an orderly Tendency towards the *Enjoyment* of God That which we ayme at is, what we are directed unto by our Apostle, *Ephes. 4. 22, 23, 24*. Our Deliverance from the *Power* of corrupt and deceitfull Lusts, which are the *Spring* and *Cause* of all the Confusion mentioned, is by the
Renovation

Renovation of the Image of God in us, and no otherwise. And hence, unto all Persons not in Love with their Lusts and Ruine, ariseth a Cogent *Argument* and *Motive* unto *Holiness*. But sundry things may be Objected hereunto; as,

First, That we doe admit and maintain, that in all *sanctified Persons* there are yet certain *Remainders* of our *Original Depravation* and Disorder; that *Sin* still abideth in *Believers*; yea that it works powerfully and effectually in them, leading them *Captive* unto the *Law of Sin*. Hence ensue great and mighty *Warrs* and *Conflicts* in the Souls of *Regenerate Persons*, that are truly *sanctified*. Herein they suffer so far, as to groan, complain, and cry out for Deliverance. *The Flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the Flesh, and these are contrary*. Wherefore it doth not appear, that this *Holiness* doth so heal and cure the sinfull Distempers of our Minds. On the other side, men supposed as yet under the *Power of Sin*, who have not that *Grace* and *Holiness* in the *Renovation of the Image of God* which is pleaded for, seem to have more peace and Quietness in their Minds. They have not that *inward Conflict* which others complain of, nor those *Groans* for Deliverance. Yea they find satisfaction in their Lusts and Pleasures, relieving themselves by them against any thing that occasioneth their Trouble.

Sect. 8.

Ans. (1) For that *Peace* and *Order* which is pretended to be in the Minds of Men under the *Power of Sin*, and not *sanctified*, it is like that which is in *Hell* and the Kingdom of Darknes. *Sathan* is not divided against himself, nor is there such a Confusion and Disorder in his Kingdom as to destroy it; but it hath a Consistency from the common End of all that is in it, which is an Opposition unto *God* and all that is good. Such a Peace and Order there may be in an *unsanctified Mind*. There being no *Active Principle* in it for *God* and that which is *spiritually Good*, all works one way, and all its troubled streams have the same Course. But yet they continually cast up mire and dirt. There is onely that *Peace* in such Minds which the *strong man armed*, that is *Sathan*, keeps his Goods in, untill a stronger than he comes to bind him. And if any one think that Peace and Order to be sufficient for him, wherein his Mind in all its Faculties acts uniformly against *God*, or for *Self*, *Sin* and the *World*, without any Opposition or Contradiction, he may find as much in *Hell* when he comes there.

Sect. 9.

* (2) There is a Difference between a *Confusion* and a *Rebellion*. Where a *Confusion* is in a State, all Rule or Government is dissolved, and every thing is let loose unto the utmost Disorder and Evil. But where the Rule is firm and stable, there may be *Rebellions* that may give some parts and places Disturbances and Damage, but yet the whole State is not disordered thereby. So is it in the Condition of a *sanctified Soul* on the Account of the *Remainders of Sin*; there may be *Rebellion* in it, but there is no *Confusion*. *Grace* keeps the Rule in the Mind and Heart firm and stable, so that there is *Peace* and *Assurance* unto the whole state of the Person, though Lusts and Corruptions will be rebelling and warring against it. The *Divine Order* there-

Sect. 10.

fore of the *Soul* consisting in the *Rule of Grace*, subordinating all to God in Christ, is never overthrown by the *Rebellion of Sin* at any time, be it never so *vigorous or prevalent*. But in the state of *unsanctified* Persons though there be no *Rebellion*, yet is there nothing but *Confusion*. Sin hath the *Rule and Dominion* in them; And however men may be pleased with it for a season, yet is it nothing but *perfect Disorder*, because it is a continual *Opposition to God*. It is a *Tyranny* that overthrowes all *Law and Rule and Order* with respect unto our *last and chiefest End*.

Sect. 11.

(3) The *Soul of a Believer* hath that *Satisfaction* in this *Conflict*, as that its *Peace* is not ordinarily *disturbed*, and is never quite *overthrown* by it. Such a Person knowes *Sin* to be his *Enemy*, knowes its *Design*, with the *Aids and Assistances* which are prepared for him against its *Deceit and Violence*; and considering the *Nature and End* of this *Contest*, is satisfied with it. Yea the greatest *hardships* that *Sin* can reduce a *Believer* unto, do but put him to the *Exercise* of those *Graces and Duties* wherein he receiveth great *spiritual Satisfaction*. Such are *Repentance, Humiliation, godly Sorrow, self-Abasement and Abhorrency*, with *servent Outcries for Deliverance*. Now although these things seem to have that which is *grievous and dolorous* prevailing in them, yet the *Graces of the Spirit of God* being acted in them, they are so suited unto the *Nature of the New Creature*, and so belong unto the *spiritual Order* of the *Soul*, that it finds secret *Satisfaction* in them all. But the *Trouble* others meet withall in their own *Hearts and Minds* on the Account of *Sin*, is from the severe *Reflexions* of their *Consciences* only, and they receive them no otherwise but as certain *Prefages and Predictions* of *future and eternal Misery*.

Sect. 12.

(4) A *sanctified Person* is secured of *success* in this *Conflict*, which keeps blessed *Peace and Order* in his *Soul* during its Continuance. There is a two-fold *success* against the *Rebellious Actings* of the *Remainders of Indwelling Sin*. (1) In *particular Instances*; (2) In the *whole Cause*. And in both these have we sufficient Assurance of *Success*, if we be not wanting unto our selves.

1. For suppose the *Contest* be considered with respect unto any *particular Lust and Corruption*, and that in *Conjunction* with some *powerfull Temptation*, we have sufficient and blessed Assurance that *abiding* in the diligent Use of the *Wayes and Means* assigned unto us, and the Improvement of the *Assistance* provided in the *Covenant of Grace*, we shall not so fail of actual *Success*, as that *Lust should conceive, bring forth and finish Sin*, 2 Cor. 2. 12. But if we be wanting unto our selves, negligent in our known *Duties* and *principal Concerns*, it is no wonder if we are sometimes cast into *Disorder*, and foyled by the *Powers of Sin*. But,

2. As to the *general Success* in the *whole Cause*, namely, that *Sin* shall not utterly deface the *Image of God* in us, nor *absolutely or finally* ruine our *Souls*, which is its *End and Tendency*, we have the *Covenant Faithfulness* of God (which will not fail us) for our security, Rom. 6. 12. Wherefore, notwithstanding this *Opposition* and all that is ascribed unto it, there is *Peace and Order* preserved by the *Power of Holiness* in a *sanctified Mind and Soul*.

Secondly,

Secondly, But it will be further Objected, That many Professors Sect. 13. who pretend highly unto *Sanctification* and *Holiness*, and whom you judge to be partakers of them, are yet *peevish, froward, morose, unquiet* in their *Minds*, among their *Relations*, and in the *World*; yea, much outward *Vanity* and *Disorder* (which you make *Tokens* of the *internal Confusion* of the *Minds* of Men, and the *Power* of *Sin*) do either proceed from them, or are carryed on by them. And where then is the Advantage pretended, that should render *Holiness* so indispensibly necessary unto us?

Ans. If there are any such, the more shame for them, and they must bear their own Judgement. These things are *diametrically* opposite to the Work of *Holiness*, and the *Fruits of the Spirit*, Gal. 5. 22. And therefore I say, (1) That many (it may be) are esteemed *Holy* and *Sanctified*, who indeed are not so. Though I will judge no man in particular, yet I had rather pass this Judgement on any man, that he hath no Grace, than that on the other hand, Grace doth not change our *Natures*, and renew the *Image* of God in us. (2) Many who are really *holy*, may have the double Disadvantage; first to be under such *Circumstances* as will frequently draw out their *natural Infirmities*, and then to have them *greatned* and *heightned* in the *Apprehension* of them with whom they have to doe, which was Actually the Case of *David* all his *Dayes*, and of *Hannah*, 1 Sam. 1. 6, 7. I would be far from giving Countenance unto the *sinfull Distempers* of any; but yet I doubt not, but that the *Infirmities* of many are represented by *Envy* and *Hatred of Profession* unto an undeserved Disadvantage. (3) Wherever there is the seed of *Grace* and *Holiness*, there an Entrance is made on the *Cure* of all these *sinfull Distempers*, yea not only of the *corrupt Lusts* of the *Flesh*, that are absolutely *evil* and *Vitious* in their whole *Nature*; but even of those *natural Infirmities* and *Distempers* of *peevishness*, *moroseness*, inclination to *Anger* and *Passion*, *Unsteadiness* in *Resolution*, which *Lust* is apt to possess, and use unto *evil* and *disorderly Ends*. And I am pressing the *Necessity* of *Holiness*, that is, of the *Encrease* and *Growth* of it, that this Work may be carried on to *perfection*, and that so through the *Power* of the *Grace* of the *Gospel*, that great Promise may be accomplished which is recorded Isa. 11. 6, 7, 8, 9. And as when a wandering jugling Impostor, who pretended to judge of mens *Lives* and *Manners* by their *Physiognomy*, beholding *Socrates*, pronounced him from his Countenance a Person of a *flagitious sensual Life*, the People derided his Folly, who knew his *sober vertuous Conversation*; but *Socrates* excused him, affirming that such he had been, had he not bridled his *Nature* by *Philosophy*; how much more truly may it be said of Multitudes, that they had been eminent in nothing but *untoward Distempers* of *Mind*, had not their *Souls* been rectified and cured by the *Power* of *Grace* and *Holiness*.

I find there is no End of *Arguments* that offer their service to the Purpose in hand; I shall therefore wave many, and those of great importance, attended with an unavoidable *Cogency*, and shut up this Discourse with one which must not be omitted. In our *Holiness* consists the principal part of that *Revenue of Glory and Honour* which the Sect. 14.

Lord Christ requireth and expecteth from his *Disciples* in this World. That he doth require this indispensibly of us, is I suppose out of Question amongst us; although the most who are called *Christians*, live as if they had no other Design but to cast all *Obloquies*, *Reproach* and *Shame*, on him and his Doctrine. But if we are indeed his *Disciples*, he hath bought us with a Price, and we are not our own, but his, and that to glorifie him in Soul and Body, because they are his, 1 Cor. 6. 19, 20. He dyed for us, that we should not live unto our selves, but unto him that so dyed for us, and by vertue of whose Death we live, Rom. 14. 7, 8, 9. He gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all Iniquity, and purifie unto himself a peculiar People, zealous of good Works, Tit. 2. 14. But we need not to insist hereon. To deny that we ought to glorifie and honour Christ in the World, is to renounce him and the Gospel. The sole Enquiry is, *How we may do so, and what he requireth of us to that purpose?*

Sect. 15.

Now the *summe* of all that the *Lord Christ* expects from us in this World, may be reduced unto these two Heads: (1) That we should live holily to him. (2) That we should suffer patiently for him. And in these things alone is he glorified by us. The first he expecteth at all times, and in all things; the latter on particular Occasions, as we are called by him thereunto. Where these things are, where this *Revenue of Glory* is payd in and returned unto him, he repents not of his Purchase, nor of the unvaluable Price he hath payd for us; yea sayes, *The Lines are fallen to me in pleasant places, I have a goodly Heritage*; which are the words of Christ concerning the Church, which is his Lot, and the Portion of his Inheritance, Psal. 16. 6. Now amongst many others we shall consider but one way whereby we glorifie the *Lord Christ* by our Holy Obedience, and whence also it will appear how much we dishonour and reproach him when we come short thereof.

Sect. 16.

The *Lord Christ* coming into the World as the *Mediator* between God and Man, wrought and accomplished a mighty Work amongst us. And what he did may be referred to three Heads. (1) The Life which he lead; (2) The Doctrine which he taught; and (3) The Death which he underwent. Concerning all these there ever was a great Contest in the World, and it is yet continued. And on the part of the World, it is managed under a double Appearance; For some openly have traduced his Life as unholy, his Doctrine as foolish, and his Death as justly deserved; which was the sence of the Pagan World, and the Apostate Judaical Church of Old, as it is of many at this Day. Others allow them to pass with some Approbation, pretending to own what is taught in the Gospel concerning them, but in fact and practice deny any such Power and Efficacy in them as is pretended, and without which they are of no Vertue, which is the way of Carnal Gospellers, and all Idolatrous Superstitious Worshippers among Christians. And of late there is risen up amongst us a Generation, who esteem all that is spoken concerning him to be a meer Fable. In opposition hereunto, the *Lord Christ* calls all his true *Disciples*, to bear Witness and Testimony unto the Holiness of his Life, the Wisdom and Purity of his Doctrine, the Efficacy of his Death to Expiate Sin, to make At-

tonement

tonement and Peace with God, with the Power of his whole Mediation to Renew the Image of God in us, to restore us into his Favour, and to bring us unto the Enjoyment of him. This he calls all his Disciples to avow unto and express in the World, and by their so doing is he glorified (and no otherwise) in a peculiar manner. A Testimony is to be given unto and against the World, that his Life was most Holy, his Doctrine most heavenly and pure, his Death most precious and Efficacious, and consequently that he was sent of God unto his great Work, and was accepted of him therein; Now all this is no otherwise done but by Obedience unto him in Holiness as it is visible and fruitfull. For,

(1) We are Obligated to profess, that the Life of Christ is our Example. This in the first place are we called unto, and every Christian doth virtually make that profession. No man takes that holy Name upon him, but the first thing he signifies thereby, is that he makes the Life of Christ his Pattern, which it is his Duty to express in his own. And he who takes up Christianity on any other Terms, doth wofully deceive his own Soul. How is it then that we may yield a Revenue of Glory herein? How may we bear Testimony unto the Holiness of his Life, against the Blasphemies of the World, and the Unbelief of the most, who have no Regard thereunto? Can this be any otherwise done but by Holiness of Heart and Life, by Conformity to God in our Souls, and living unto God in fruitfull Obedience? Can men devise a more effectual Expedient to cast Reproach upon him, than to live in Sin, to follow diverse Lusts and pleasures, to preferre the World and present things before Eternity, and in the mean time to Profess, That the Life of Christ is their Example, as all unholy Professors and Christians doe? Is not this to bear witness with the World against him, that indeed his Life was unholy? Surely it is high time for such Persons to leave the Name of Christians, or the Life of Sin. It is therefore alone in Conformity to him in the Holiness we are pressing after, that we can give him any Glory on the Account of his Life being our Example. Sect. 17.

(2) We can give him no Glory, unless we bear Testimony unto his Doctrine, that it is Holy, Heavenly, filled with Divine Wisdom and Grace, as we make it our Rule. And there is no other way whereby this may be done, but by holy Obedience, expressing the Nature, End and Usefulness of it, Titus 2. 11, 12. And indeed, the Holy Obedience of Believers, as hath been declared at large before, is a thing quite of another Kind than any thing in the World which by the Rules, Principles, and Light of Nature, we are directed unto, or instructed in. It is Spiritual, Heavenly, Mysterious, filled with Principles and Actings of the same Kind with those whereby our Communion with God in Glory unto Eternity shall be maintained. Now although the Life of Evangelical Holiness, be in its Principle, Form, and chief Actings secret and hidden, hid with Christ in God from the Eyes of the World, so that the Men thereof neither see nor know nor discern the spiritual Life of a Believer, in its Being, Form and Power; yet there are alwayes such evident appearing fruits of it, as are sufficient for their Conviction, that the Rule of it which is the Doctrine of Christ alone, Sect. 18.

alone, is *Holy, Wise and Heavenly*. And Multitudes in all Ages have been won over unto the *Obedience of the Gospel and Faith in Christ Jesus*, by the *Holy, Fruitfull, Usefull Conversation* of such as have expressed the *Power and Purity of his Doctrine* in this Kind.

Sect. 19.

(3) The *Power and Efficacy of the Death of Christ*, as for other Ends, so to *purifie us from all Iniquity*, and to *purge our Consciences from dead Works*, that we may serve the living God, is herein also required. The World indeed sometimes riseth unto that height of *Pride and contemptuous Atheisme*, as to despise all Appearance and Profession of *Purity*. But the Truth is, if we are not *cleansed from our Sins in the Blood of Christ*, if we are not thereby *purified from Iniquity*, we are an *Abomination* unto God, and shall be *Objects of his Wrath* for ever. However the *Lord Christ* requireth no more of his Disciples in this matter unto his *Glory*, but that they Profess that *his Blood cleanseth them from their Sins*, and evidence the Truth of it by such *Wayes and Means* as the Gospel hath appointed unto that End. If their *Testimony* herein unto the *Efficacy of his Death* be not received, be despised by the World, and so at present no apparent *Glory* redound unto him thereby, he is satisfied with it, as knowing that the Day is coming wherein he will call over these things again, when the *Rejecting of this Testimony* shall be an *Aggravation of Condemnation* unto the *unbelieving World*.

Sect. 20.

I suppose the *Evidence of this last Argument* is plain, and exposed unto all; it is briefly this: Without the *Holiness* prescribed in the Gospel, we give nothing of that *Glory* unto *Jesus Christ* which he indispensibly requireth. And if men will be so sottishly foolish as to expect the greatest Benefits and Advantages by the *Mediation of Christ*, namely, *Pardon of Sin, Salvation, Life and Immortality*, whilst they neglect and refuse to give him any Revenue of *Glory* for all he hath done for them; we may bewail their *Folly*, but cannot prevent their *Ruine*. He *saves us freely* by his *Grace*, but he requires that we should express a *sense* of it in ascribing unto him the *Glory* that is his due. And let no man think this is done in *Wordy Expressions*; it is no otherwise effected, but by the *Power of an Holy Conversation*, shewing forth the *Prayses of him who hath called us out of Darkness into his marvellous Light*. Nay, there is more in it also; if any one profess himself to be a *Christian*, that is, a *Disciple of Jesus Christ*, to follow the *Example of his Life*, to Obey his *Doctrine*, to express the *Efficacy of his Death*, and continue in an *unholy Life*; he is a *false Traitor* to him, and gives in his *Testimony* on the side of the World, against Him and all that he hath done for us. And it is indeed the *flagitious Lives of professed Christians* that have brought the *Life, Doctrine and Person of our Lord Jesus Christ* into Contempt in the World. And I advise all that read or hear of these things, diligently and carefully to study the Gospel, that they may receive thence an *Evidence of the Power, Truth, Glory and Beauty of Christ and his Wayes*; for he that should consider the *Conversation of men for his Guide*, will be hardly able to determine which he should choose, whether to be a *Pagan, a Mahumetan, or a Christian*. And shall such Persons, by
reason

reason of whom the *Name* of Christ is dishonoured and blasphemed continually, expect *Advantage* by him or *Mercy* from him? Will men yet think to live in Sensuality, Pride, Ambition, Covetousness, Malice, Revenge, Hatred of all Good men, and Contempt of *Purity*, and to enjoy *Life, Immortality* and *Glory* by Christ? Who can sufficiently bewayl the dreadful Effects of such an horrid *Infatuation*! God teach us all duely to consider, that all the *Glory* and *Honour* of Jesus Christ in the World, with respect unto us, depends on our *Holiness*, and not on any other thing either that we are, have, or may doe. If therefore we have any *Love* unto him, any spark of *Gratitude* for his unspeakable *Love, Grace, Condescension, Sufferings*, with the *Eternal Fruits* of them, any Care about or Desire of his *Glory* and *Honour* in the World, if we would not be found the most *hateful* Traitors at the last Day unto his *Crown, Honour* and *Dignity*, if we have any Expectation of *Grace* from him, or *Advantage* by him, here or hereafter, let us labour to be *Holy* in all manner of *Conversation*, that we may thereby adorn his *Doctrine*, express his *Vertues* and *Prayses*, and grow up into *Conformity* and *Likeness* unto him, who is the *First-born* and *Image* of the *Invisible God*.

Μόνον σπουδὴ Θεῷ σωτῆρι δόξα.

FINIS.

AN Alphabetical TABLE

of some Especial Matters contained in this Book.

A.		Page. Section.	
		Page. Section.	
A	Basement in the Remembrance of the Defilement of Sin, a necessary Duty.	401, 14	
	No Ability in Sinners to purge themselves from their Natural Pollution.	379	
	Mistakes about Ability to comply with Gods Commands.	544, 20	
	Abuse of the best Duties possible.	398, 13	
	Abuse of spiritual Gifts.	1, 1	
	Abuse of Eternal Love devilish.	525, 14	
	Acquaintance with the Pollution of Sin necessary.	394, 11	
	Every Gracious Act of the Will wrought by the Holy Spirit.	470, 10	
	Difference between the Act of the Spirit in forming the Humane Nature of Christ, and the Act of the Son in assuming it.	133, 12	
	To be acted by the Spirit, what it is.	468, 11	
	How the Holy Prophets were Acted by the Spirit.	104, 10	
	All Actings of the Person of the Son of God towards the Humane Nature voluntary.	129, 6	
	Actings of the Holy Spirit not ascribed unto him exclusively.	130, 9	
	Internal Actings of the blessed Trinity, where one Person is the Object of the Love of another, natural and necessary to the Being of God.	45, 5	
	External Actings of one Divine Person towards another, of what sort.	46, 5	
	All Actions internal and external to be tryed by the Word.	412, 3	
	Internal Acts of the Holy Trinity how undivided.	131, 9	
	All Acts of Natural Life from God.	465, 6	
	No Vital Acts under the Power of Death spiritual.	246, 21	
	Act of the Holy Ghost in forming the Body of Christ, a Creating Act.	132	
	Two-fold Event of Mens falls into Actual Sins.	291, 292: 7, 8	
	Actual Sins how they spring from Original Sins.	289: 5	
	Actual supplies of Grace necessary to the Mortification of Sin.	486, 23	
	Actual assistance of Grace necessary unto Obedience.	548, 27	
	Adam how he had the Spirit of God in the state of Innocency.	76, 14	
	Adam had many things revealed unto him.	100, 6	
	Adherence and Assimilation Effects of Love.	496	
	Adjuncts of Divine Inspiration.	103, 9	
	Admiration an effect of love.	514, 26	
	Administration of Grace not equal at all times.	547, 24	
	Advantage and Priviledge in the Participation of the Gifts of the Spirit.	83, 7	
	Advantage of the New Testament in our Access to God.	155, 2	
	Advantage of Duties vitiated in their Performance.	249, 28	
	Eccc	Great	

An Alphabetical Table.

	Page. Sect.		Page. Sect.
<i>Great Advantage of Spiritual Experience.</i>	342	<i>to be tryed by the Rule of the Word.</i>	187
<i>Affections wrought upon and excited by Convictions.</i>	200, 18	<i>Apprehension of Eternal danger from the Law, before Conversion.</i>	308: 31
<i>Affections fixed by Grace on spiritual things.</i>	201, 18	<i>Application of the Blood of Christ for the Cleansing of sin.</i>	371, 1
<i>Affections when renewed work sensibly.</i>	353	<i>Application to the Blood of Christ for the Cleansing of Sin and the Nature of it.</i>	387, 388, 389, 1.5. & 400, 405:
<i>Affections how depraved, how sanctified.</i>	285, 57	<i>Application of the Death of Christ unto the subduing of Sin wherein it consists.</i>	494, 495: 36
<i>Afflictions the Means of Convictions.</i>	294, 13	<i>Arguments in Prayer for the further Communications of the Spirit.</i>	359, 4
<i>Afflictions how they purge away sin.</i>	391, 9	<i>Weak Arguments for Holiness prejudicial to it.</i>	498, 2
<i>Afflictions how sanctified and made useful.</i>	ibid.	<i>Arguments to prove the Divine Personality of the Holy Ghost.</i>	47, 48, &c. 8
<i>Various Aggravations of the Defilement of Sin.</i>	379	<i>Articulate Voyces in Divine Revelations how formed.</i>	106: 12
<i>Aggravations of sin in them who have received a Principle of Grace.</i>	549, 29	<i>Internal Assistance of the Spirit of God necessary to every Act of Obedience:</i>	465: 5
<i>All personal Properties assigned unto the Holy Spirit in the Scripture.</i>	48, 8	<i>Assumption the only immediate Act of the Person of the Son towards the Humane Nature.</i>	129, 4
<i>Alienation from the Life of God what it is.</i>	216, 22	<i>Assurance accompanying Divine Revelations:</i>	104: 10
<i>Alienation of the Minds of men from the Gospel, on what Ground.</i>	233, 54	<i>Assurance of Success and final preservation an Encouragement to Duties of Holiness:</i>	529: 21
<i>Allusion unto Local Motion in sending of the Spirit, whence taken.</i>	84, 8	<i>Assurance of the End an Encouragement unto the use of the Means:</i>	530: 23
<i>Angels Gods Host.</i>	70, 6	<i>Attonement or Satisfaction not required of Sinners:</i>	331: 13
<i>Ministry of Angels about the Body of Christ when dead.</i>	147, 10	<i>False Ways of making Attonement the Ground of all Superstition:</i>	ibid.
<i>Anointing at the Inauguration of Governors, what it signified.</i>	117	<i>Vain Attempts for the Mortification of Sin:</i>	478: 8
<i>The Spirit of Antichrist what it is.</i>	41, 17	<i>Auricular Confession an Invention to accommodate the Inclinations of all Flesh:</i>	380
<i>An Anti-Spirit set up in Opposition to the Spirit of God.</i>	19, 23	<i>Authority in giving the Spirit respects his Gifts and Grace:</i>	81: 4
<i>Apostasie of the Church in several Ages with respect unto the Persons of the Holy Trinity.</i>	24, 27	<i>Authority of God gives Efficacy to the Word:</i>	259: 13
<i>Apostasie of Christian Churches in the Rejection of the Holy Spirit and his Work.</i>	25, 27	<i>Authority of God to be always considered in his Commands:</i>	537: 10
<i>Apostasie from beginnings of Conversion how brought on.</i>	300: 24	<i>Sense of the Authority of God to be carried into all our Occasions:</i>	542: 17
<i>Appellations or Titles of the Holy Spirit in the Scripture.</i>	34, 9		
<i>Appearances of the Holy Spirit under visible Signs.</i>	52, 15		
<i>Appearances of Persons in Divine Visions.</i>	108, 14		
<i>All Apprehensions of Divine Operations</i>			

B. Bapti-

An Alphabetical Table.

	Page. Sect.
B.	
Baalam how a Prophet, and how a Sorcerer :	110:17
Baptized into the Name of the Holy Spirit, as into the Father and Son :	51:14
Baptisme of Christ the time of his being anointed unto his Prophetical Office,	139, 140:5
Baptism is not Regeneration :	179:15
All that are duely Baptized are not Regenerate :	180:16
Baptism how it expresseth our Sanctification :	371:2
Baptism washeth not away Sin virtute Operis operati :	380
Beauty of the Soul in its Conformity unto God :	376:5
Beginning and Ending of the Gift of Prophesie :	100:6
Beginnings of Holiness small like seed :	340:4
Beginning of Good from our selves, a Pe-lagian Fiction :	467:9
Believers alone receive the Spirit, in what sense :	82:5
Believers much unacquainted with the Nature of Holiness, and their own interest therein :	327:10
Believers the only Subject of Sanctification :	356:6
Benefit and use of the Word Preached :	341:5
Benignity and Charity the great Resemblances of God :	515:28
Blasphemy of the Jewes against the Name of Jesus :	3:3
Blasphemy against the Holy Ghost :	64:29
Blindness of many about the Nature of Sin :	479:11
The Blood of Christ how it cleanseth from sin :	384:3
The Blood of Christ that purgeth sin is the Blood of his Sacrifice :	385:4
Blood in Sacrifice both Offered and sprinkled :	385:4
The Blood of Christs Sacrifice alwayes in	
the same condition as to Efficacy :	386
Boasting and Despondency prevented by the same Means :	345:6
Bodily strength given by the Spirit of God :	118:24
Bodily Absence of Christ how supplied by the Holy Spirit :	161:6
Body of Christ formed of the substance of the Blessed Virgin, Reasons thereof :	132
The Body how depraved by Sin :	366
The Body how sanctified :	368
Bounty expressed in pouring forth the Spirit :	87:13
The Spirit how called the Breath of Gods Mouth :	39:13
How God Breathed into man the Breath of Life :	75:12
Burden of the Lord whence that Name was given to Prophesies :	107:14
Burden and danger of Government :	117
C.	
What it is to Call Jesus Lord :	34:2
Calumny against the Doctrine of Justification refuted :	365:6
Two-fold Capacity in the Mind with respect unto spiritual things :	220:29
Carnal Mind in all Mankind by Nature :	243:14
Causes of the Purification of Sin :	382:1
Certainty of Outward Voyces from Internal Light :	106:12
Secret Chambers where Christ is not, what is intended by them :	152:15
Characters of Divine Truth on all Divine Inspirations :	105:10
Cherishing and Acting the Principle of Holiness, the great Means of Mortification of Sin :	485:22
Childhood the Vanity thereof :	289:4
To say Christ is the Lord what it includes, and how we are enabled thereunto :	5:3
Christ in no sence the Son of the Holy Spirit :	133:11
Christ raised from the dead by the Holy Ghost :	148
Christ how he is our Life :	247:23
Christ	

An Alphabetical Table.

	Page. Sect.		Page. Sect.
Christ not defiled with our defilements :	406 : 16	principal Promise of the Old Testament :	8 : 9
Christ how he is made unto us Sanctification :	445, &c.	Communication of spiritual things from Christ by the Spirit :	161 : 6
Christ the exemplary Cause of our Holiness :	447 : 54	Communication of the Vertue of the Blood of Christ unto our Souls by the Holy Spirit :	390 : 6
Christ an Head of Influence unto the Church :	451 : 64	Communication from God to his Creatures Two-fold :	541 : 64
Christ only to be heard, if we would learn Obedience :	559 : 11	All Communications in a way of Grace through Christ :	452 : 65
Circumcision of the Heart wherein it consists :	275 : 41. & 418 : 11	Communion with God by the Gospel, the nature, manner and way of it :	163 : 6
Church of the Jewes first fell by Idolatry :	25 : 27	Communion between God and Believers by real Operation of the Holy Ghost :	164 : 6
Head of the Church first respected in the New Creation :	128 : 1	Complaints of Sin in Prayer derided :	491 : 30
Churches how at first founded and built by the Holy Ghost :	6 : 6	Compleating Acts ascribed in all Divine Operations to the Holy Spirit :	69 : 3
Cleansing our selves from Sin our Duty :	371 : 1	What comprehension Prophets had of Divine Revelations :	103 : 10
Cleansing from Sin how to be prayed for :	372 : 3	Conception of Christ in the Womb Instantaneous :	133 : 13
Cleansing in Profession and Reality, in Signification and Efficacy :	380	Conception of Christ how assigned to the Holy Spirit, how to the Blessed Virgin :	134 : 14
No Cleansing of Sin meerly by our own Endeavours :	398 : 13	Conclusions to be made from the Doctrine of Election :	531 : 25
Collation of the Spirit on Christ, how a present and how a Continued Act :	141 : 5	Concupiscence gets strength by Age : 290 : 6	
The commands of God how possible unto us :	220 : 30	Condition of all unregenerate Persons absolutely the same :	178 : 12
Commands of the Covenant respect the power administred in the Covenant :	432 : 30	Confluence of Trouble on the Lord Christ in the Course of his Ministry :	142
Commands of Duty when not grievous :	446 : 53	Conformity unto God the Honour of the Soul :	376 : 5
Commands of Obedience belonging unto the Old Covenant, and their Ends :	534 : 3	Conformity unto God wherein it consists :	419 : 13
Commands for Obedience how proportioned unto our Abilities :	543 : 19	Conformity unto the Death of Christ, wherein it consists :	493 : 33
Commands for Holiness whence just and equal :	550 : 31	Conformity to God our onely Glory :	503 : 10
Commands for Holiness multiplied, and why :	551 : 34	Conscience how affected with Convictions :	200 : 17
Respect unto the Command the formal Reason of Obedience :	533 : 2	Consistency of Commands and Promises proved :	336 : 14
How the Holy Spirit comes on men :	89, 90 : 16	Glorious Consequences of the Miraculous Conception of the Body of Christ :	135
Coming of Christ in the flesh the first and		Consequences falsely charged on the Doctrine of the Gospel :	507 : 16
		Confide-	

An Alphabetical Table.

	Page. Sect.		Page. Sect.
Considerations of Grace, and the true Spring of all spiritual Diligence:	346:7	Corruption of the Mind expressed by Darkneſs:	209:11
Considerations of the Nature and End of Sin ſubſervient unto Mortification:	496:39	Corruption of Nature working early in Infancy:	288:3
Spiritual Conſolations unto whom they do belong:	359	Common Notions of Good and Evil remaining in Corrupted Nature, and their uſe:	293:11
Conſolation of Believers from the Eternal Continuance of Grace:	329:11	Corrupted Reason depraves the whole Myſtery of the Goſpel:	325:8
Conſtancy in Holy Duties a neceſſary conſequent of a Principle of Holineſs:	426:20	Creating of the Body of Chriſt out of the ſubſtance of the Virgin compared with the Creation of the firſt man out of the duſt of the Earth:	132
Conſtitution no excuſe for ſin:	369	Creation aſſigned diſtinctly to each Perſon in the Trinity:	69:1
Contemplation an effect of Love:	514:26	Creation of Man, the Parts and Degrees of it:	74, 75:10
Contempt of the Goſpel whence:	224:37	New Creation how effected by the Holy Spirit:	98:1
Contempt of Regeneration in many:	205:1	New Creation the work whereby God deſigned to glorifie himſelf principally in this World:	126:8
Contempt of the World from the Conſideration of Electing Love:	528:19	New Creation how aſſigned unto the Father, Son and Spirit diſtinctly:	126:9
Conteſt in the World about the Lord Chriſt, how managed on each ſide:	149:13	Old and New Creation compared:	172:1
Continuation of the Work of the Holy Ghoſt in the Church:	123:4	Creatures above and below, why called Gods Hoſt:	71:6
Contrary Diſpoſitions and Inclinations in Believers, the Nature of them, and whence they are:	428:24	New Creature what it is, and wherein it conſiſts:	183:20
Difficulty of Conversion not onely from a Cuſtom of ſinning:	253:1	New Creature ſupported and acted by the Holy Spirit:	466:7
Conversion to God not meerly an Act of our own Wills:	262:20	Cure of Idolatry by the Captivity:	25:27
Way and Means of Conversion according to the Old and New Pelagians:	267	Cyrus how Anoynted of God.	77:15. & 118:22
Work of the Spirit in Conversion how declared by ſome and derided by others:	341:39		
Conviction of Sin antecedaneous to Conversion:	195:8		
Convictions of Sin how they are loſt:	196:9	D.	
Wayes whereby Convictions are loſt, exemplified in Auſtin:	296:15, 16	Danger of Miſtakes about Regeneration.	190
The Nature of the Conviction of Sin:	297:18	State of Darkneſs and Blindneſs by Nature.	206:4
Convictions variously uſed and abuſed:	364	Spiritual Darkneſs the Nature of it.	207:7
Conviction of the Deſilement of Sin neceſſary antecedently unto its Purification:	387:5	Darkneſs Objective and Subjective.	208:8
Evidence of Duties proceeding onely from the Power of Convictions:	426:20	Spiritual Darkneſs working by Enmity, and its Effects.	230:49
		Dead Works what they are, and whence ſo called.	246:22
		Men ſaid to be Dead in Sin with reſpect to the Life we had in Adam.	242:11
		F fff	Work

An Alphabetical Table.

	Page. Sect.		Page. Sect.
<i>Work of the Spirit towards the Humane Nature of Christ in the State of the Dead.</i>	146: 10	<i>ciple by Grace proved.</i>	284: 55
<i>Death Natural what it is.</i>	240: 5	<i>Diabolical Pride in Scoffing at the Humiliation of Sinners.</i>	405
<i>Death Natural and Spiritual wherein they differ, and wherein they agree.</i>	243: 13	<i>Difference between receiving Doctrines Notionally, and Things really.</i>	219: 28
<i>Death of Christ applyed by the Spirit, for the Mortification of Sin.</i>	492: 33	<i>Difference about Free-will stated and debated.</i>	434: 34
<i>Spiritual Death Two-fold.</i>	239: 2	<i>Difference between a Spiritual Life, and a Life of Moral Vertue.</i>	408: 17. & 414: 6
<i>Decayes in Grace to be found in many.</i>	353	<i>Difference in Religion before the Entrance of Sin, and afterwards.</i>	461: 81
<i>Deceits practical about Holiness.</i>	420	<i>Differences between the life of Adam in Innocency, and the life of Grace in Christ.</i>	241: 9
<i>Dedication unto God, in what sense it is Sanctification.</i>	324: 7	<i>Differences about Regeneration, none in it.</i>	178: 12
<i>Deep Things of God what, and how searched by the Spirit.</i>	56: 19	<i>Different Operations and Effects of one and the same Spirit.</i>	38: 12
<i>Defilement of Sin wherein it doth consist.</i>	373: 4	<i>Different degrees of Graces.</i>	340: 4
<i>Degrees of Prophecy fancied by the Jewes, rejected.</i>	105: 11	<i>Difficulties of Faith.</i>	401: 13
<i>Degrees in Holiness, and growth in Grace, whereon they do depend.</i>	167: 10	<i>Difficulties in Duties from sundry Causes.</i>	438: 39
<i>Deliverances means of Conviction.</i>	294: 13	<i>Difficulty and Necessity of the Work of Mortification.</i>	480: 13
<i>Delight an Effect of Love.</i>	514: 27	<i>Dignity of Professors wherein it consists.</i>	511: 20
<i>Delight in Sinners as sinning, the highest degree of Shamefulness.</i>	397, 398	<i>Diligence required in the Exercise of Grace.</i>	354
<i>How the Spirit of God departed from Saul.</i>	37: 11	<i>Discerning of Spirits an extraordinary Gift at the first.</i>	18: 22
<i>How the Holy Spirit departeth from Men.</i>	91: 19	<i>Discovery of Graces of Holiness springing from Election.</i>	443: 46
<i>Natural Depravation discovers the Nature of the Grace of Conversion.</i>	279: 48	<i>Discovery of a false Foundation of Duties.</i>	364
<i>Depravation of the Mind how removed.</i>	282: 52	<i>Dispensation of the Spirit not confined unto the first times of the Church.</i>	25: 28
<i>Depravation of the Mind by Sin, what it is, and wherein it doth consist.</i>	209: 13	<i>Dispensation of the Spirit in general declared.</i>	79, 80: 1, 2, 3.
<i>Description of Sanctification.</i>	338: 2	<i>Take away the Dispensation of the Spirit, and the whole Church is ruined.</i>	157
<i>Spiritual Desertions and the Nature of them; by some Derided.</i>	92: 19	<i>Disposition of the Soul unto Acts and Duties of Holiness, from an inward Principle.</i>	423: 16
<i>Design of the Gospel what it is.</i>	330: 13	<i>No Disposition unto spiritual Life in a State of spiritual Death.</i>	250: 29
<i>Design to be like unto God, the Life of Holiness.</i>	503: 11	<i>A Gracious Disposition expressed by Fear, Love and Delight.</i>	427: 17
<i>Desires of Heaven of what sort they ought to be.</i>	512: 21	<i>Depraved Disposition in the Mind by Nature.</i>	215: 20
<i>Despisers of God, who are so.</i>	538: 11		Disposi-
<i>Destruction of Sin in the Root and Principle our great Duty.</i>	405		
<i>Determination of the Will as a free Prin-</i>			

An Alphabetical Table.

	Page. Sect.		Page. Sect.
Dispositions unto Regeneration of what sort.	191: 1	Ghost appeared, of what sort it was.	52, 53: 15, 16
Natural Dispositions of some more sedate than of others.	568: 4	Dreams a Means of Divine Revelation.	107: 13
Disquisitions after God by the Light of Nature, and their success.	230: 48	Christ how Driven by the Spirit.	142
Distinct Operations ascribed unto the distinct Persons in the Trinity.	45: 4	Duty not the Measure of Power.	379
Manifestation of the Distinction of Persons in the Divine Nature a great End in the Work of the New Creation.	155: 2	Things wrought in a way of Grace, prescribed in a way of Duty.	379
Distresses upon Conviction of Sin.	302: 27	No Duty of Obedience but an Holy Heart is enclined unto it.	425: 19
Distribution of spiritual Gifts.	6: 5	Duty and End to be considered in every Act of Obedience.	441: 43
Distributions of Grace used by the Ancients.	255: 6	Duties of Persons intrusted with spiritual Priviledges.	7: 1
Disturbance on Divine Revelations, whence it proceeds.	103: 9	Duties required in order to Conversion.	192: 3
Diversity of Gifts an Occasion of Differences in the Churches.	7: 7	Duties of Morality in the Gospel superstitious, not the Foundation.	235: 58
Knowledge of Divine things in their Operations and Effects.	20: 24	Duties of Unbelievers how Sins.	248: 25
Divine voluntary Actions constantly ascribed unto the Holy Spirit in the Scripture.	49: 10	Good Duties how vitiated, yet accepted.	248: 26
Divine Persons succeeded not to each other in their Operations.	70: 3	The same Duties how accepted and rejected with respect unto divers Persons.	ibid.
Divine Nature in Christ acted not as his Soul.	137: 2	Duties not accepted on the Account of Persons.	249: 26
No true Apprehension of Divine Goodness but in Christ.	229: 36	Duties of Faith, Repentance and Obedience, on what Grounds to be pressed on men.	249: 28
Division of the Holy Spirit in what sence spoken of.	93: 20	Good Duties of Unregenerate men how to be esteemed.	250, 251: 30
Doctrine of the Spirit of God the second great Principle of the Spirit.	8: 9	Duties of themselves will denominate no man Holy.	362
Doctrine of the Spirit the Life of all saving Truth.	33: 8	Duties of Morality and Piety to be encouraged.	420
Doctrine of the Trinity despised by many.	45: 4	Special Duties of those who have received a Principle of Holiness.	422
Doctrine of Regeneration variously described.	196: 10	Duties Internal and External distinguished.	463: 2
Doctrine of some men about Regeneration.	261: 19	Duties of Believers and Unbelievers differ in their Substance.	471: 16
Doctrine of Obedience taught by Christ, and what is considerable therein.	558: 10	Duties required in order unto the Mortification of Sin.	487: 23
Doctrines concerning the Operations of the Spirit of God preached with Efficacy.	26: 31	Duties how to be performed, that Sin may be mortified:	489: 27
Things or Doctrines of the Gospel reduced to two Heads.	223: 36	Duties of Holiness more clearly revealed by Christ than any other way.	557: 9
The Dove, under which shape the Holy		How the Spirit dwelleth in Believers notwithstanding the Remainders of Sin.	484: 20
		E. Earth	

An Alphabetical Table.

E.		Page. Sect.
Earth in the first Creation what it contained.	72: 8	End of Propheſie in the Church. 99: 5
Education and Conviſions in ſome meaſure compoſe Natures Diſorders.	568: 6	End of Miraculous Operations. 115: 21
Effects of Conviſion where to be placed in the Soul.	199: 15	End of God in the Work of the Old and New Creature. 155: 2
Effects of natural Vanity, and how they are to be oppoſed.	214: 19	End of Afflictions and Tryals. 343: 6
Effects of Conviſion.	301: 26	End of Duties Two-fold. 441: 44
Effects of the Prieſtly Acts of Chriſt of two ſorts.	555: 3	End of Legal Commands. 535: 5
Eſpecial Effects of Divine Love.	514: 25	Ends of Holineſs, for which it is required. 414: 4
Every work of the Spirit Effectual.	198: 14	Principal Ends for which the Holy Spirit is promiſed. 357: 3
Effectual Work of Grace, and our own earneſt Endeavours conſiſtent.	345: 7	Enforcements unto Obedience from the Authority of God in his Commands. 538: 10, 11
Efficacy given to all Ordinances by the Holy Spirit.	23: 26	No Enjoyment of God without Purification from Sin. 378
No Efficacy in ſecond Cauſes independently on the firſt.	77: 15	Enmity of the Carnal Mind againſt God and his Ways. 231: 49, 50
Efficacy of Faith whence it ariſeth.	401: 13	Natural Impotency and Enmity how taken away. 278: 46
Efficacy of the Death of Chriſt for the deſtruction of Sin, wherein it conſiſts.	493: 34	Enquiry into the Reaſons and Difficulties in Holy Duties. 438: 8
Real internal Efficiency aſcribed unto Grace.	269: 29	Enthuſiaſtical Raptures no Means of Conversion. 186: 25
Eminent Effuſions of the Holy Spirit, accompanied with effectual Deluſions of Satan at the ſame time.	18: 22	No Enthuſiaſtical Impreſſions in Conversion. 270: 32
Plentiſull Effuſion of the Spirit the great Promiſe of the Old Teſtament.	122: 2	No Entrance with God without Holineſs. 504: 11
The Elect the ſubject of the Promiſe of the Spirit as to Regeneration.	357: 3	Equity of the Law how it reſpects the Ability of them that are Obliged by it. 249: 27
Election the Spring of all true Holineſs.	442: 45	Eſpouſals of the Bleſſed Virgin with Joſeph, the Neceſſity thereof. 134: 14
Eternal Election a Cauſe of and Motive unto Holineſs.	520, &c.	Effence and Form of Holineſs wherein it conſiſts. 415: 7, 8
No Evidence of Election without Holineſs.	521: 5	Eternal Love—a powerfull Motive unto Holineſs. 525: 14
Election abſolutely conſidered no part of Gods Revealed Will.	523: 10	Evangelical Holineſs diſtinguiſhed from all Pretences thereunto. 439: 40
No man Obliged to believe his Election before Conversion.	524: 13	No Evangelical Truth inſiſtent with Holineſſe, or repugnant thereunto. 507: 16
Who are bound to believe that they are Elected.	525: 13	Evidences of Regeneration various: 177: 11
Divine Emanation of the Holy Spirit from the Father and Son.	35: 9	No Evidence of an Intereſt in the Oblation of Chriſt unleſs we are Holy. 556: 4
		Infallible Evidences of Divine Inſpiration. 104: 10
		Evil Spirits and their Operations. 37: 11
		Evil Frame of Nature how Cured. 383
		Evil

An Alphabetical Table.

	Page. Sect.		Page. Sect.
Evil Spirit how it wrought in Saul.	112:18	Faithfulness of God in his Promises to be pleaded in Prayer.	360
All Excellencies ascribed unto the Holy Spirit in the Scripture.	98:3	How the Holy Spirit doth Fall on men.	90:17
How Christ is our Example.	447, 448, 449	Reasons of Mens Falling from a Course of Duties.	548:26
Exhortations respect Duty not Ability.	244:17	False pretences unto the Name and Work of the Holy Spirit:	13:15
Experience of the work of the Spirit of God in the Souls of Men.	27:31	False Prophets how they were Acted. ib.	16
Experiences of the Truth and Reality of things believed, supplied by the Holy Spirit.	341:5	False Prophets of two sorts, some meerly Acted by the Devil, some pretenders only:	14:17
Experience of the Desilement of Sin.	372:3	False pretences to Divine Revelation, Satthans Design therein.	15:18
External Duties of two sorts.	464:4	False Prophets why called Spirits.	16:21
Extraordinary Works of the Holy Spirit, the several kinds of them.	99:4	False Notions of Jews and Mahumetans about the Spirit of God.	33:8
Extraordinary Acts of Christ during the Course of his private Life.	140	The Father how he is said to raise Christ from the Dead.	148
<hr/>		All Grace Originally from the Father.	163
F.		Dread and Fear attending Convictions of Sin.	304:30
		Fear inseperable from Guilt.	375
Face of the Earth by what means Annually renewed.	74:9	Fear of Sin a Fruit of Faith.	404
Facility in Dutyes of Obedience from a Principle of Holiness.	436:37	Fear of Man how to be removed.	539:13
Faith and Obedience with respect unto the Gift of the Holy Ghost how to be regulated.	90:16	Fiery Tongues what they signified.	54:17
Faith Actually wrought by Grace.	272:36	Figurative Expressions multiplied in the Scripture.	48:9
Faith and Love the Spring of Holiness, how they are encreased.	340:5	Figurative Expressions setting out the Vileness of Sin.	402
Faith encreased by the due Proposal of its proper Objects.	341:5	The Nature of the Guilt and Filth of Sin how made known.	375
What Faith is required that a man may please God.	362	The Finger of God what it is.	72:7
Faith alone interests us in the purifying Vertue of the Blood of Christ.	388	Filiation a personal Adjunct.	133:11
Faith worketh by Prayer unto the Cleansing of Sin.	390:6	Fire on the Altar what it signified.	53:16
How it purgeth the Soul.	390:8	Fire and Water the Means of all Typical Cleansing.	371:1
Faith whether it be a Fixing of the Imagination.	400	Folly of men in seeking after Instruction in Moral Duties from others rather than from Christ.	558:11
The Power of Faith in Conforming the Soul unto God.	513:24	The Things of God Foolishness unto the Mind of the Natural man, how and in what sence.	221:31
Faith of Election tends not to Carelessness.	530:22	No Force put upon the Faculties of our Souls by the Operations of the Spirit.	187
Faith without Holiness vain.	553:38	Forming of the Host of Heaven and Earth the Work of the Holy Spirit.	71:7
		Forming of the Body of Christ in the Womb the Work of the Holy Spirit.	131:10
		G g g g	Foun-

An Alphabetical Table.

	Pag. Sect.		Pag. Sect.
Foundation of all Church-Order in the Confession of the Lordship of Christ.	4: 2	Glorying in Sin its Abomination.	397: 12
Foundation of the Ministry of the Church in the Promise of the Spirit.	156: 3	God Author of our Sanctification.	322: 3
Foundation of Moral Differences among Mankind.	364	God how he is the God of Peace.	323: 3
Freedome and Bounty in the Gift of the Spirit.	82: 4	All good in the Scripture ascribed to the Holy Spirit.	470: 15
Free-will wherein it ends, consists.	433: 33	A good man who he is.	515, 516: 29
Freedom of Corrupted Nature and of Grace.	434: 33	No good in us but what is wrought by the Holy Spirit.	11: 13
Frequency in Duties produceth Facili- ty.	437	The good Spirit and the Holy Spirit the same.	38: 12
Fruits of Sin Internal and External.	476: 6	Good Spirit of God over-ruling the De- vil.	112: 18
Fruits of Election its onely Manifestation.	524: 13	Gospel how abused and despised.	223: 36
Evil Frame of Nature how Cured.	383	Apprehension of Gods Goodness in the Light of Nature, not sufficient to re- concile men to him.	229: 47
Fulness of Christ what it is, and how Com- municated.	457: 71	No true Apprehension of the Divine Good- ness but in Christ.	229: 48
Fundamental Principles to be attended unto in the tryal of Spirits.	17: 12	Nature of the Gospel with respect unto the Objects of mens Lusts and Desires.	233: 54
G.		Things peculiarly belonging to the Gospel, or its own Things.	234: 56
Gift of Prophecie honourable in the Church of Old, and why.	13: 16	Things known in the Light of Nature fur- ther manifested in the Gospel.	234
Gift of Prophecie falsely pretended unto and abused.	13: 16	What the Gospel superaddes unto Moral Duties.	235: 57
The Gift of Prophecie whether ever given to Wicked men.	110: 17	Gospel sent for the Accomplishment of the Decree of Election.	524: 11
Gift of Prophecie not a sanctifying Grace.	111: 18	Nature of Gospel Precepts.	535: 6
Gifts for Civil Government from the Holy Ghost.	116: 22	Grace taken two wayes in the Scripture.	164: 7
Gifts for the Discharge of the Office of Me- diator Collated on the Humane Nature of Christ by the Holy Ghost.	139: 4	Grace how really efficient in Conversion.	264: 23
Gifts how to be prayed for.	360	Grace of the Gospel overthrown by assert- ing it to be a Moral Suasion only.	265: 23
The Holy Spirit Given of God, and how.	80: 3	Nature of Converting Grace explained.	268: 27
Giving and Receiving related.	ibid.	Grace victorious and irresistible.	270: 30
Giving of the Spirit includes Authority, Freedom and Bounty.	81: 4	Grace internal not resisted.	271: 34
The Spirit how Given by the Father in the way of Authority.	81: 4	Grace produced by a Creating Act.	275: 40
To Glorifie God as God what it is.	44: 2	Grace and Nature opposed.	322: 3
Glorified Body of Christ the Example of ours.	149: 12	All Grace depends on continual Influen- ces from God.	344: 6
		All Grace Originally in Christ.	362
		Things wrought in a way of Grace, pre- scribed in a way of Duty.	379
		Grace excited by Afflictions.	392
		Sin and Grace cannot bear rule in the same Person at the same time.	429: 25
		Grace	

An Alphabetical Table.

	Pag. Sect.		Pag. Sect.
Grace and Nature opposed.	322: 3	Habitual Uncleanness equal in all.	378
Grace how it frees the Soul from spiritual Incumbrances.	436: 36	Habitual Pollution inconsistent with any Holiness.	ibid.
Grace how communicated from Christ unto Believers.	457: 70	Habitual Grace necessary unto all Acts of Obedience.	548: 26
Administration of Grace not equal at all times.	547: 24	Tongues and Hands of the Prophets guided by the Holy Ghost.	105: 10
Graces acted and exercised in the Oblation of Christ.	144	Harmony between Grace and the Command.	551: 33
Graces which are our Duties not absolutely in our own power.	322: 2	Head of the Church first respected in the New Creation.	128: 1
Graces of Holiness improved into Glory.	328: 10	The Heart what it signifies, and how it is depraved.	212: 17
All Graces excited unto Exercise by the Holy Ghost.	341: 5	Stony Heart how taken away.	277: 43
Graces whose Exercise is Occasional onely, how they are increased.	343: 6	New Heart promised, what it is.	277: 44 & 418: 11
Graces eminently making us like unto God.	513: 23	Heart the meaning of it in the Scripture.	367
Graces declaring our Conformity to God.	515: 28	Historical Books of the Scripture written by Divine Inspiration.	113: 19
Growth in Grace and Wisdom how ascribed unto Christ.	138: 2	The Holy Spirit how both Lord and God.	6: 4
Growth in Holiness compared unto that of Trees and Plants.	346: 8	Holy Spirit the onely Author unto us of all spiritual Good.	11: 12
Growth of Holiness secret and indiscernible.	347: 8	The Holy Spirit known by his Operations.	21: 24
Growth in Holiness an Object of Faith.	351: 10	Holy Spirit so called from his immaterial substance.	34: 9
Growth in Holiness enjoyed unto us, and required of us.	339: 4	The Holy Spirit so called first because he is essentially holy.	35, 36: 9, 10
Growth in Holiness an Access towards Glory.	511: 21	Holy Spirit called holy from his Work.	36: 10
H.		Holy Spirit in what sense called the Spirit of God.	38: 13
Habit of Holiness antecedently necessary to every Act of Holiness.	416: 8	Holy Spirit how called the Spirit of the Son.	39: 14
Habit of Grace preserved by the constant Influences of the Holy Spirit.	417: 10	The Holy Spirit an Eternal, Infinite, Intelligent Person.	46, 47, 48, 49, &c. 7, 8, 9, 10, &c.
Habit of Holiness not acquired but preserved in a way of Duty.	ibid.	The Holy Spirit hath a spiritual substance and subsistence of his own.	54: 18
Habit of Holiness permanent in its Inclination.	427: 23	Why the Holy Spirit never Appeared in the Person of a Man.	55: 18
Habits encline unto Acts of their own kind for a certain End.	423: 15	The Holy Spirit the Author of the Ministry of the Church.	61: 26
Infused Habits of Grace proved.	280: 50	The Holy Spirit the Object of mens Actings in Religion.	62: 28
Intellectual Habits the Nature of them.	415: 8	The Holy Spirit not a Quality or Vertue of the Divine Nature.	64: 30
		The Holy Spirit expressly called God.	64: 31
		The	

An Alphabetical Table.

	Pag. Sect.		Pag. Sect.
<i>The Holy Spirit given of God, and how.</i>	80: 3	<i>Holiness of God how an Argument of the Necessity of Holiness in us.</i>	500: 5
<i>The Holy Spirit compared unto Fire and Water, and why.</i>	88: 13	<i>Holiness not absolutely of the same use under the New Covenant and the Old.</i>	503: 9
<i>The Holy Spirit One, dividing as he pleaseth to others.</i>	94: 21	<i>Holiness necessary unto the future Enjoyment of God.</i>	504: 13
<i>The Holy Spirit the Promise and Legacy of Christ.</i>	124: 6	<i>Holiness the highest Excellency whereof our Nature is capable.</i>	509: 18
<i>The Holy Spirit the Spirit of the Son as well as of the Father, and what followeth thereon.</i>	130: 8	<i>Holiness the Design of God in Election.</i>	521: 3
<i>Attings of the Holy Spirit not ascribed unto him Exclusively.</i>	130: 9	<i>Universal Holiness how required in the Precepts of the Gospel.</i>	535: 6
<i>The Holy Spirit supplies the bodily Absence of Christ.</i>	158: 5	<i>Necessity of Holiness.</i>	537: 9
<i>Holy Spirit worketh by Means ordinarily.</i>	187: 25	<i>Moral Honesty not Holiness.</i>	363: 6
<i>The Holy Spirit the immediate Sanctifier of all Believers.</i>	337: 15	<i>The Host of Heaven, what it is.</i>	70: 6
<i>The Holy Spirit promised with respect unto his Effects.</i>	357: 2	<i>Host of the Earth.</i>	71: 6
<i>Holy spirit the principal efficient Cause of the Mortification of Sin.</i>	481: 15, &c.	<i>Humane Nature of Christ derived no evil from the Fall of Adam, Reasons thereof.</i>	136: 1
<i>Holy Ghost how the Power of the most High.</i>	132	<i>Sanctification of the Humane Nature of Christ in the Wombe.</i>	137: 1
<i>No Holiness but by the Gospel and the Grace of it.</i>	325: 8	<i>Humane Nature of Christ guided and supported by the Spirit in his Ministry.</i>	141: 7
<i>Holiness passeth over into Eternity and Glory, and how.</i>	328: 11	<i>Humble walking with God, Motives unto it.</i>	404
<i>Holiness glorious in this Life.</i>	329: 12	<i>Humility promoted by thoughts of Sovereign Grace.</i>	526: 16
<i>Holiness all that God requireth of Believers.</i>	330: 13	I.	
<i>Holiness commanded in a way of Duty, promised in a way of Grace.</i>	336: 14	<i>Idolatry in Opposition to the Oneness of the Divine Nature and Monarchy, the first Apostasie.</i>	24: 27
<i>Holiness in its true Nature.</i>	338: 2	<i>Cure of Idolatry by the Captivity.</i>	25: 27
<i>Holiness how it is encreased in Believers.</i>	340: 4	<i>Jesus Anathema how uttered by the Institution of the Devil.</i>	3: 2
<i>Holiness may thrive where its growth is not discerned.</i>	350: 10	<i>Jesus confessed to be the Lord by unclean Spirits and how.</i>	4: 2
<i>Holiness pleaseth God wherever it is.</i>	361: 5	<i>Ignorance taken for simple Nescience, how it may be ascribed to the Humane Nature of Christ.</i>	138: 3
<i>No Holiness beyond the bounds of Relation to Christ.</i>	363: 6	<i>Ignorance of the true Nature of Holiness and its Effects.</i>	421
<i>Holiness of God wherein it consists.</i>	374: 4	<i>Illumination previous to Conversion, the Nature of it.</i>	193: 6
<i>Where the Principle of Holiness is, there will be the Fruits of it.</i>	421	<i>Illumination how distinguished from meer Natural Knowledge.</i>	194: 7
<i>All Holiness derived from Christ.</i>	450, 451, &c.		Image
<i>Evangelical Holiness an effect of the Covenant of Grace.</i>	459: 75		

An Alphabetical Table.

	Pag. Sect.		Pag. Sect.
Image of God wherein it consisted.	76: 14	Inspiration what it is, and wherein it consists.	102: 8
Image of God defaced by Sin.	366	Adjuncts of Divine Inspiration.	103: 9
Image of God in us, wherein it consisted.	376: 5	Institutions of the Law could not purge the Defilements of sin.	379
Imitation of Christ highly Necessary.	449: 59	Instruction of the Mind the first End of preaching the Word.	258: 11
Imperfect Obedience not taken into the Room of perfect Obedience by the New Covenant.	413: 4	Intellectual Faculties of the Mind strengthened by the Holy Spirit.	119: 26
Importance of the Doctrine concerning the Holy Spirit.	10: 10	Intellectual Faculties impaired by Sin.	206: 5
Importance of the Doctrine of Sanctification.	324: 6	Intellectual and Moral Habits short of Holiness.	336: 14
Imposition of Names by a Prophetical Spirit.	100: 6	Intellectual Habits the Nature of them.	415: 8
Impotency of the Mind to receive spiritual things.	210: 13	Intension of Mind in attendance to the Outward Means of Conversion, how Necessary, and in our own power.	192: 3
Impotency of the Mind by Nature.	218: 27	Intercession of Christ how a Cause of our Holiness.	444: 5
Impotency of the Mind of Man by Nature Two-fold.	224: 39	Intercession of Christ its Influence unto Holiness.	556: 5
Impotency from Spiritual Death, the Nature of it.	243: 14	Interest of Faith and Obedience in Principles of Truth.	43: 1
Natural Impotency and Enmity how taken away.	278: 46	Internal Actings of the blessed Trinity, where one Person is the Object of the Love of another, natural and necessary to the Being of God.	45: 5
Inclinations unto holy Actings predominant in a Gracious Soul.	430: 27	Internal Acts of the Holy Trinity, how undivided.	131: 9
Inclinations of Sin alwayes to be watched against.	479: 11	Irregularity of our Natures the Cause of Shame.	383
Inconformity unto Gods Holiness, the Nature of it.	374	Judgement of Spirits the Duty of all Believers.	18: 22
Reasons of Inconformity unto God.	508: 17	Justification not for Obedience to Gospel Precepts.	536, 537: 7, 8, &c.
Incumbrances from Sloath in spiritual Duties.	435: 36		
Individed Operations of the Divine Nature.	69: 2		
Indulgence of any Sin hinders the progress of Holiness in general.	354		
Indwelling Sin three wayes to be considered.	476: 6		
Infusion of a Principle of Divine Life in Regeneration.	411: 2		
Inhabitation of the Spirit the Foundation of the Mortification of Sin.	483: 18		
Inherent Righteousness what it is, and wherein it consists.	182: 19		
Actual Inherent Righteousness required unto Holiness.	463: 1		
Ability of Adam in the State of Innocency.	280: 50		
Inspiration the Original of Prophecy.	101: 7		

K.

Killing of Sin what it is, and whence it is so called. 478: 9

Kindness required towards Believers in an especial Manner. 516: 30

Kingly Power of Christ, and its Influence unto our Holiness. 562: 18

Knowledge of Divine things in their Operations and Effects. 20: 24

H h h h

L. Law

An Alphabetical Table.

		Pag. Sect.
L.		<i>Saving Light how communicated to the Mind.</i> 283: 54
		<i>Light and Ability in the renewed Mind.</i> 432: 31
		<i>Some things clear in the Light of Nature.</i> 560: 13
	Pag. Sect.	
	<i>Law written in the Heart what it is.</i> 278: 47	
	<i>The Law to be considered as it expresseth first the Authority of God, and then his Holiness.</i> 374	
	<i>Law and Rule of the Acceptance of New Obedience what it is.</i> 413: 4	
	<i>Power of the Law with respect unto Duties.</i> 534: 4	
	<i>Reasons why mens Minds are little influenced by Humane Laws.</i> 540: 15	
	<i>The Law expounded and vindicated by Christ.</i> 556: 6	
	<i>Legacy left by our Lord Jesus Christ unto his sorrowfull Disciples.</i> 9: 10	
	<i>Legal Purifications Types of real Sanctification.</i> 371: 2	
	<i>Legal Institutions for Purification, their Use and End.</i> 399	
	<i>Arguments from Legal Commands no Motives to Holiness.</i> 534: 3	
	<i>Letter of the Scripture profiteth not the Jewes whilest they have not the Spirit.</i> 24: 26	
	<i>Spiritual Leprosie by Nature.</i> 393: 10	
	<i>Liberty and Ability in the renewed Will.</i> 433: 33	
	<i>The Life of God from which we are alienated by Nature, wherein it consists.</i> 215: 21	
	<i>Life natural what it is, and wherein it consists.</i> 239: 3, &c.	
	<i>Life spiritual what it is.</i> 240: 6	
	<i>Life unto God of Adam in Innocency.</i> ibid.	
	<i>Spiritual Life of Adam in Innocency.</i> 241: 7	
	<i>Christ how he is our Life.</i> 247: 23	
	<i>Spiritual Life wherein it consists.</i> 419: 13	
	<i>Life unto God consists principally in Duties internal.</i> 464: 3	
	<i>The Light within examined.</i> 19: 23	
	<i>Things against the Light of Nature not really enjoyned the Prophets.</i> 109: 15	
	<i>Saving Light attainable by the Gospel onely.</i> 208: 9	
		M.
		<i>Macedonian Heresie concerning the Holy Spirit.</i> 46: 7
		<i>Man a middle Creature between Angels above, and sensitive Animals below.</i> 75: 10
		<i>Man the perfection of the Inferiour Creation.</i> 75: 12
		The

An Alphabetical Table.

	Pag. Sect.		Pag. Sect.
<i>The New Man what it is.</i>	184:21. & 367	<i>Soul how Corrupted.</i>	211: 15
<i>Outward Manner and Wayes of Divine Revelations.</i>	106: 11	<i>The Mind affected with Darknes.</i>	236:60
<i>Manner of the secret growth of Grace.</i>	347: 8	<i>Carnal Mind in all Man-kind by Nature.</i>	243: 14
<i>The Manner and Way how the Blood of Christ doth cleanse us from Sin.</i>	387:5	<i>Mind as the Conducting faculty of the Soul how Depraved.</i>	181: 51
<i>Manner of the Operation of the Spirit in the Mortification of Sin.</i>	484: 21	<i>Mind to be renewed.</i>	367
<i>Manner of teaching by the greatest Moralist compared with that of Christ.</i>	561: 16	<i>Wofull Disorder of the Mind in a Natural Condition.</i>	567: 2
<i>Not the Matter only but the Words of Divine Revelations given by Inspiration.</i>	114: 20	<i>Impotency of the Mind to receive spiritual Things.</i>	210: 13
<i>Matter of Holiness wherein it consists.</i>	411: 3	<i>To be spiritually Minded what it is.</i>	424:18
<i>Means assigned in the Wisdom of God for the Recovery of fallen Man.</i>	8: 9	<i>Ministration of the Spirit renders the Gospel effectual.</i>	11: 11
<i>Due Means to be used in coming to the knowledge of Christ.</i>	151: 14	<i>Ministration of the Spirit, or how he is ministred.</i>	85: 9
<i>False Means rejected.</i>	ibid.	<i>Ministers how called by the Holy Ghost.</i>	62: 26
<i>Means of Regeneration various.</i>	177: 10	<i>Ministers Duty to inquire into and declare the Nature of Regeneration.</i>	188: 26
<i>Use of Means towards Persons unregenerate.</i>	244:16	<i>Ministry of the Gospel how the Ministry of the Spirit.</i>	122: 3
<i>Measures of the Gift of the Holy Spirit.</i>	95: 21	<i>Ministry of Angels about the Body of Christ when dead.</i>	147: 10
<i>The Spirit not given by Measure to Christ.</i>	140	<i>Ministry of the Word its use in Conversion.</i>	257: 9
<i>Mediation of Christ the only procuring Cause of Holiness.</i>	444: 49	<i>Foundation of the Ministry of the Church in the Promise of the Spirit.</i>	156: 3
<i>Christ a Mediator in what sence.</i>	451: 62	<i>Miracles Effects of the Power of the Holy Ghost.</i>	114: 21
<i>Mediation of Christ confined unto his Offices.</i>	554: 2	<i>No Mere Man the real Subject of a Power of working Miracles.</i>	115: 21
<i>Merit inconsistent with Grace.</i>	332: 13	<i>Miraculous Operations in Christ by the Power of the Holy Ghost.</i>	141: 6
<i>Merit destructive unto Holiness.</i>	505: 14	<i>Misery of Defiled Sinners.</i>	394: 10
<i>Metaphors not to be faigned in the Scripture.</i>	57: 21	<i>Misery of Man in this World not renewed by Grace.</i>	566: 1
<i>Metaphor in the Expression of sending the Spirit.</i>	84: 8	<i>Moral Condition of Man by Creation.</i>	75: 11
<i>Meteors when created.</i>	72: 8	<i>Moral Vertues and Endowments in Civil things wrought by the Holy Spirit.</i>	118: 23
<i>Method of the Work of the Spirit in Regeneration.</i>	189: 26	<i>Moral Impotency of the Mind wherein it consists.</i>	225: 41
<i>Method of the Gospel in declaring the Matters contained in it.</i>	235: 58	<i>Moral Vertue its worth and Excellency.</i>	325, 326: 8
<i>Method of Divine Revelations to be believed.</i>	523: 9	<i>Moral Vertue is not the Holiness of Truth.</i>	326: 8
<i>The Mind Depraved in things Natural and Moral.</i>	209: 12	<i>Moral Habits the Nature of them.</i>	416: 8
<i>The Mind as the leading Faculty of the</i>		<i>Moral what is intended thereby.</i>	460: 79
		Name	

An Alphabetical Table.

	Pag. Sect.		Pag. Sect.
<i>Name and Nature of Moral Vertue examined.</i>	459: 78	<i>Nature of Propheſie of Old.</i>	100: 5
<i>Moral Operation and Efficacy of Duties for the Mortifying of ſin.</i>	490: 29	<i>Humane Nature of Chriſt derived no Evil from the Fall of Adam, Reasons thereof.</i>	136: 1
<i>Moral Vertue what intended thereby.</i>	506: 15	<i>Sanctification of the Humane Nature of Chriſt in the Womb.</i>	137: 1
<i>Morality improved by Grace no way hindered.</i>	181: 17	<i>Divine Nature in Chriſt acted not as his Soul.</i>	137: 2
<i>Morality or a Courſe of Moral Duties not Gospel Holineſs.</i>	440, 441, &c.	<i>The Divine Nature what it is.</i>	184: 21
<i>To mortifie ſin what it ſignifies.</i>	474: 3	<i>Nature of the Common Work of the Spirit explained, what.</i>	198: 13
<i>Mortification of Sin the Nature of it explained.</i>	473: 1	<i>Our whole Nature the ſubject of Sanctification.</i>	323: 3
<i>Mortification an alwayes preſent Duty.</i>	475: 5	<i>Nature of Holineſs not to be comprehended by Natural Reaſon.</i>	326: 9
<i>Mortification progreſſive.</i>	479: 10	<i>Nature of Merit wherein it conſiſts.</i>	332: 13
<i>Moses the firſt who committed Divine Revelations to writing.</i>	113: 19	<i>Nature lapsed and depraved not able to repair it ſelf.</i>	335: 14
<i>No local Motion in the ſending of the Spirit.</i>	84: 8	<i>Nature of Decayes in Holineſs.</i>	353
<i>Motives unto Religious Worſhip taken from what God is unto us.</i>	44: 2	<i>Nature created in the Image of God.</i>	365
<i>Motives unto the Purification of Sin.</i>	391: 8	<i>The Nature of the Guilt and Filth of Sin how made known.</i>	375
<i>Example of Chriſt our great Motive unto Holineſs.</i>	449: 58	<i>True Nature of ſpiritual Liberty.</i>	434: 34
<i>Principal Motive unto the Mortification of Sin what it is.</i>	489: 19	<i>Nature of God the onely infinite Fountain of Holineſs.</i>	451: 63
<i>Moving on the Face of the Waters.</i>	72: 8	<i>Holy Nature of God the Original Reaſon of the Neceſſity of Holineſs in ns.</i>	499: 3
<i>Miſtake of ſundry ancient Tranſlations.</i>	30: 3	<i>The Nature of that Holineſs which God requireth of us, revealed in Chriſt.</i>	502: 7
<i>Mystery of Holineſs.</i>	326: 9	<i>Some things clear in the Light of Nature.</i>	560: 13
<i>Mystery of the Cleanſing of Sin by the Blood of Chriſt.</i>	399	<i>The Natural Man who he is.</i>	217: 24
<i>Myſtical Body prepared for Chriſt by the Holy Ghoſt.</i>	321: 1	<i>Natural Impotency of the Mind wherein it conſiſts.</i>	225: 40
<hr/> N. <hr/>		<i>Neceſſity of Changes in the Work of Grace.</i>	353: 3
<i>The Name Spirit with the ſeveral Significations of it in the Scripture conſidered.</i>	28: 2	<i>Neceſſity of Holineſs acknowledged by all.</i>	498: 1
<i>The Name Spirit, how peculiar to the third Perſon in the Trinity.</i>	34: 9	<i>Neceſſity of Holineſs notwithstanding Gods readineſs to pardon ſin.</i>	518: 33
<i>The Name of God denoting his Being and Authority, proper to each Perſon in the Trinity.</i>	50: 12	<i>Neceſſity of Holineſs ariſing from Gods Command.</i>	533: 2. & 553: 37
<i>The Nature of God the Foundation of all Religion.</i>	43: 2	<i>Neglect of known Duty ruinous to the Life of Holineſs.</i>	250: 10
		<i>New Act of eſpecial Grace required unto every particular Duty.</i>	430: 28
		<i>New Creation how effected by the Holy Spirit.</i>	95: 1
		<i>Work of the Holy Spirit in the New Creation greatly to be conſidered.</i>	121: 1
		New	

An Alphabetical Table.

	Pag. Sect.		Pag. Sect.
New Creation the Work whereby God designed to glorifie himself principally in this World.	126: 8	Occasions of spiritual decays in Grace.	354
New Creation how assigned unto the Father, Son and Spirit distinctly.	126: 9	How Christ Offered himself to God through the Eternal Spirit.	143: 8
New Creature what it is, and wherein it consists.	183: 20	Office of Witness-bearing unto the Lord Christ, discharged by the Holy Spirit.	149: 13
New Man what it is.	367	One singular Spirit of God declared in the Scripture.	33: 8
New Nature wherein it consisteth.	411: 2	The Holy Spirit One, dividing as he pleaseth to others.	94: 21
Nine sorts of spiritual Gifts.	6, 7: 7	Operations of the Spirit called the Spirit by a Metonymy.	33: 8
Nocturnal Visions and Dreams the same.	107: 13	Divine Operations of all sorts ascribed to the Holy Spirit.	59: 24
Nothing to be done in Obedience without Aids from Christ.	466: 8	All Divine Operations ascribed unto God absolutely.	68: 1
Nourishing of the Creation the Work of the Holy Spirit.	73: 9	Operations of the Holy Spirit on the Humane Nature of Christ of two sorts.	128: 2
O.		Operations of the Holy Spirit on the Humane Nature of Christ, notwithstanding its personal Union with the Son.	129: 3
Obedience of Christ gave Efficacy to his Oblation.	144	Operations of the Holy Spirit in Conversion suited unto the Powers of our Souls.	270: 31
Obedience without Merit Foolishness to Carnal Reason.	334: 13	Two-fold Operation of Christ as Three in One.	162
Obedience with respect unto Rewards and Punishments not servile.	541: 15	Opening of the Heavens what it signifies.	52: 15
Object of Christs Priestly Acts God himself.	555: 3	Opinions in the Primitive Church falsely fathered on spiritual Revelations.	15: 19
Objects of the Life of Innocency, and the Life of Grace in Christ different.	242: 10	Opposition to the Spirit of God and his Works, with the Grounds of it.	21: 25
Objects of Creating Acts not in potentia before their Existence.	273: 37	Pretences of Opposition unto the Spirit of God examined.	21: 25
Objections against the Progressive Nature of Holiness answered.	349, 350, &c. 10	Oppositions against the Church suppressed by the Spirit of God.	78: 16
Objections against the Necessity of Holiness from the Decree of Election, removed.	522, 523, &c.	No Opposition between Gods Commands and his Grace.	167
How the Lord Christ sanctified himself to be an Oblation or Sacrifice.	148: 9	Universal Opposition between Sin and Grace.	477: 7
Oblation of Christ whence voluntary and meritorious.	146: 9	Order of Divine Dispensations dependeth on the Order of the subsistence of the Divine Persons.	39: 14
Obligation unto Holiness no less under the Gospel than under the Law.	535: 6	Order of subsistence of the Holy Spirit in the Blessed Trinity.	66: 33
All Obstacles removed by effectual Grace.	270: 30	Order of Operation depending on the Order of Subsistence, not the Order of Promination.	ibid.
Obstinacy and stubbornness of the Heart by Nature.	277: 45		
Obstructions of the Growth of Holiness.	350: 10		

An Alphabetical Table.

	Pag. Sect.		Pag. Sect.
<i>Outward Order in the Church of no use without the Presence and Work of the Spirit.</i>	158: 4	<i>Pelagius his Prayer.</i>	266: 25
<i>Order in Subsistence gives Order in Operation.</i>	162	<i>Pelagian Grace rejected.</i>	458: 73
<i>Order of the Mind in its first Creation.</i>	212: 15	<i>Pen-men of the Scripture whether all holy.</i>	111: 18
<i>Order of the Gospel inverted by Prejudices.</i>	235: 58	<i>Pen-men of the Scripture not left unto the use of their own Natural Abilities.</i>	114: 20
<i>Order of Precedency in the Acts of Sanctification.</i>	410: 1	<i>Sinless Perfection not attainable in this Life.</i>	547: 25
<i>Skill in the Original Text necessary to the Exposition of the Scripture.</i>	30: 4	<i>Persecution of Erring Persons vain and fruitless.</i>	19, 20: 23
<i>Original of all things in their several kinds.</i>	73: 9	<i>Person of the Spirit and his Operations distinguished.</i>	33: 8
<i>Original of the Spirits Acting in all his Works towards the Church.</i>	89: 15	<i>Third Person in the Trinity whence called the Spirit.</i>	34: 9
<i>Where Original Sin is denied, Regeneration cannot be effected.</i>	186: 24	<i>Person of the Father the Fountain of the Trinity.</i>	38: 13
<i>Original Order of our Souls wherein it consisted.</i>	568: 6	<i>Some things not proper to a Person assigned to the Holy Ghost, in what sense.</i>	48: 9
<i>Outward Manner and wayes of Divine Revelations.</i>	106: 11	<i>The Person of the Holy Spirit not poured out but his Gifts and Graces.</i>	87: 13
		<i>Every Divine Person Author of the same Work.</i>	68: 1
		<i>The Person of Christ how the Fountain of all Grace.</i>	455
		<i>The whole Person of a Believer the subject of Sanctification.</i>	365
<i>Pains of Death how loosd towards Christ.</i>	147: 11	<i>Divine Persons succeeded not to each other in their Operations.</i>	70: 3
<i>Vanity of Papal Inventions for the Purification of Sin.</i>	379, 380	<i>Manifestation of the distinction of Persons in the Divine Nature, a great End in the Work of the New Creation.</i>	155: 2
<i>Partial departure of the Spirit from any.</i>	91: 19	<i>All Personal Properties assigned unto the Holy Spirit in the Scripture.</i>	48: 8
<i>Partial Works deceitfull.</i>	369	<i>Personal Union or the Subsistence of both the Natures of Christ in one Person, the necessary Consequent of Assumption.</i>	129: 5
<i>Two Parts of the Life of God.</i>	423: 16	<i>Personality of the Holy Spirit, from John 14, 15, 16.</i>	60, 61: 25
<i>Particular good End not sufficient to render a Duty Good or Holy.</i>	441: 44	<i>Perswasive Efficacy of the Word Preached.</i>	258: 12
<i>Peace with God preserved by Sanctification.</i>	323: 3	<i>Perswasion conferres no Strength.</i>	262: 21
<i>How God sanctifieth us as the God of Peace.</i>	ibid.	<i>Perswasions enable not men to convert themselves.</i>	266: 25
<i>Pelagius his Artifices.</i>	177: 9	<i>Perswasions of Perfection ruinous to Holiness.</i>	355
<i>Doctrine of Pelagius.</i>	183: 20	<i>Pharisaical Confidence.</i>	397: 12
<i>Pelagianism renewed.</i>	255: 5	<i>Wise Philosophers of Old the greatest Devisers of the Gospel.</i>	221, 222
<i>Pelagianisme reduced unto its Head.</i>	256: 7		Physical
<i>Difference between Pelagians and Semi-Pelagians.</i>	262: 19		
<i>Pelagian Grace inconsistent with Prayer.</i>	265: 24		

An Alphabetical Table.

	Pag. Sect.		Pag. Sect.
Physical Operations of Grace proved.	269: 29	fill the Commands of the other.	544: 20
Pleas for Balaam answered. III, 112:	19	All power unto Obedience from Grace.	546: 22
Pleas of Pelagians.	263: 21	Two-fold power necessary unto Obedi-	547: 26
Vain Pleas for the Power of Free-will, in		ence.	459: 77
Opposition to the Aids of the Spirit.	471: 15	Practice of Moral Vertue not Gospel Holi-	377: 6
Pleas for Holiness by unholy persons un-	498: 2	ness.	377: 6
comely and dangerous.	498: 2	Pravity of Sin with respect unto the Holi-	
Pleas for Moral Vertue examined.	506: 15	ness of God Two-fold.	
Pollution or spiritual Defilement in Sin.	372: 3	Praying for the Spirit prescribed as our	123, 124: 5
	372: 3	Duty.	
Pollution of Sin that property of it where-	374: 4	Difference between the Prayers of Wicked	164: 6
by it is opposed to the Holiness of God.	374: 4	men, and of Believers.	
Habitual Pollution inconsistent with any	378	Prayers of the Church prove Effectual	265: 24
Holiness.	378	Grace.	
Pouring forth of the Spirit.	86: 11	Prayers for Grace and Holiness of what	348, 349: 9
Pouring forth of the Spirit always re-		Nature.	
spects the times of the Gospel.	87: 12	Prayer for the Holy Spirit in what sense.	357: 2
Power ascribed unto the Holy Spirit.	58: 22	Prayers of Believers for the purification	
	58: 22	of Sin how influenced by the Spirit of	
Powers and Operations of Secondary		God.	384: 3
Causes to be owned.	77: 15	Prayer for Light to discern the Nature of	
Power of the Mind with respect unto spi-		Sin necessary.	395
ritual things examined.	216: 23	Prayer how a Means of purging Sin.	400: 13
Power in the Mind by Nature to discern			
spiritual things.	221: 30	Prayer weakeneth Sin and how.	492: 32
Power of spiritual Darknes.	227: 43	Preaching of the Word by the Holy Spirit.	119: 27
Power of Darknes in the Devil.	228: 45	Preaching of the Gospel provided for and	
Powers and Duties of the Mind.	236: 60	disposed by the Holy Ghost.	209: 10
Power unto Obedience in the State of In-		Precepts of the Law not clearly under-	
nocency.	241: 8	stood before the Coming of Christ.	557: 6
Power in Natural men beyond what they		Preeminence of our Nature wherein it	
do or will use.	245: 20	consists.	509: 18
Power in the Faculties of Nature as Cor-		Prejudices against spiritual things from	
rupted.	250: 29	Darknes.	232: 53
Power of the Word to prevail on the Souls		Prejudices against the Mystery of the	
of Men, whereon it depends.	258: 13	Gospel, what they are, and whence they	
Spiritual Power in the Habit of Holiness.		arise.	234: 55
	432: 31	Work preparatory unto Conversion.	192: 3
Commands of the Covenant respect the		Works of the Spirit preparatory for the	
Power administred in the Covenant.	432: 30	New Creation.	98: 2
Spiritual Power wherein it consists.	432: 31	Preparatory Works for Conversion on	
No Power in Believers unto Duties of		men, not preparatory Inclinations in	
Holy Obedience, without assistance of		them.	251: 30
the Spirit.	465, &c.	Preparatory Work unto Conversion where-	
Power administred by Christ enabling us		in it consists.	256: 6
to be Holy.	502: 8	Presence of Christ by his Spirit what it is,	
No power given by one Covenant to ful-		and wherein it consists.	159
			Pre-

An Alphabetical Table.

	Pag. Sect.		Pag. Sect.
<i>Preservation of the Creation by Divine Providence.</i>	77: 15	<i>Progress made by the Lord Christ in the Exercise of his Humane Faculties.</i>	137: 2
<i>Preservation of Grace a glorious Work.</i>	348: 9	<i>Mortification progressive.</i>	479: 10
<i>None can preserve their own Grace.</i>	345: 6	<i>Promise of the Holy Ghost unto whom it is made.</i>	10: 10
<i>Pretences of Opposition unto the Spirit of God examined.</i>	21: 25	<i>Promise of the Spirit of God unto the Church rendred useles by some.</i>	23: 26
<i>Pretences of Moral Vertue unto Holiness disproved.</i>	462	<i>Promise of the Spirit under the Gospel unto all Believers.</i>	123: 4
<i>False pretences unto Holiness.</i>	327: 10	<i>Promise of Christs presence with his Church how accomplished.</i>	158: 5
<i>Prevalency of the Word whereon it depends.</i>	260: 15	<i>Promise of God when respected in a due manner.</i>	337: 14
<i>Pride the poyson of the Age.</i>	527: 16	<i>Promises and Exhortations how effectual.</i>	245: 18
<i>Acts of Christs Priestly Office.</i>	555: 3	<i>Promises how to be mixed with Faith.</i>	400
<i>Principle of spiritual Life antecedent unto Moral Reformation of Life.</i>	185: 22	<i>Especial Promises annexed unto especial Duties.</i>	552: 35
<i>Principle of Obedience how wrought in us of God.</i>	276: 42	<i>Promises a great Encouragement unto Holiness.</i>	553: 36
<i>Principle of spiritual Obedience how renewed in us.</i>	280: 50	<i>Proper Ends of the Knowledge of Christ Love and Conformity.</i>	152: 16
<i>A Principle of Eternal Life in Holiness.</i>	329: 12	<i>All properties of the Divine Nature ascribed unto the Holy Spirit.</i>	66: 32
<i>Principle of Holiness in it self.</i>	346: 8	<i>The Properties of God most gloriously represented in Christ.</i>	501: 6
<i>Principle of Sanctification or Habit of Grace wrought in Believers by the Holy Spirit, the Nature of it.</i>	411: 2	<i>Prophets of Baal who they were, and why so called.</i>	14: 17
<i>Principle of Holiness in what sence called an Habit.</i>	416: 9	<i>A Prophet what the Name signifies.</i>	101: 8
<i>Principle of Holiness described.</i>	ibid.	<i>Prophets how they enquired into their own Prophecies.</i>	100: 5
<i>Principle of Holiness in Believers, the same in kind in all Believers, distinct in degrees.</i>	417: 10	<i>Tongues and Hands of the Prophets guided by the Holy Ghost.</i>	105: 10
<i>Where the Principle of Holiness is, there will be the Fruits of it.</i>	421	<i>Prophets established in the Church all Holy.</i>	111: 18
<i>Principle of Holiness enclineth the Heart unto Acts and Duties of Holiness universally.</i>	425: 19	<i>Prophecy the first eminent Gift of the Holy Ghost under the Old Testament.</i>	99: 5
<i>Principle, Dispositions and Effects of Sin.</i>	476: 6	<i>Beginning and Ending of the Gift of Prophecy under the Old Testament.</i>	100: 6
<i>All false Principles of Obedience will admit of Reserves for Sin.</i>	425: 19	<i>Prophecy in its Exercise Two-fold.</i>	101: 8
<i>Priviledge of one man above another on the Account of Holiness.</i>	510: 19	<i>General Nature of the Gift of Prophecy.</i>	102: 9
<i>Spirit proceedeth from the Son.</i>	39: 14	<i>Prophetical Office of Christ its Acts and Objects.</i>	556: 6
<i>Procession of the Holy Spirit of what sort.</i>	88, 89: 14, 15	<i>Propositions of the Gospel to be believed, of what Nature.</i>	524: 12
<i>Procession of the Holy Spirit from the Father and Son.</i>	89: 15	<i>Purgatory a great Engine for the Ruine of Souls.</i>	381
<i>Two-fold, Natural and Voluntary.</i>	ibid.	<i>Faith</i>	
<i>Dignity of Professors wherein it consists.</i>	511: 20		

An Alphabetical Table.

	Pag. Sect.		Pag. Sect.
<i>Faith how it purgeth the Soul.</i>	390: 8	<i>To Receive the Grace of God what it is.</i>	80: 3
<i>Purging of Sin commensurate unto the whole Work of Sanctification.</i>	378	<i>What is required to the Receiving spiritual things in a spiritual Manner.</i>	219: 29
<i>To purifie our selves from all Sin our Duty.</i>	398: 13	<i>Receiving of the Spirit how Antecedent unto Faith.</i>	358: 3
<i>Purification the first of Sanctification.</i>	370: 1	<i>Rectitude of Mans Nature wherein it consisted.</i>	76: 14
<i>Means of Purification if duely used, the Soul is kept from Defilement so as to be alwayes accepted with God.</i>	407	<i>Reformation of Life is not Regeneration.</i>	181: 17
<i>Purification the End of Christs Oblation.</i>	555	<i>Reformation of Life upon Convictions wherein it comes short of Holiness.</i>	201: 19
<i>Legal Purifications Types of real Sanctification.</i>	371: 2	<i>Regeneration wrought under the Old Testament, but not clearly as to its Nature.</i>	174: 6
<i>Putting of Spirit on men, and what is signified thereby.</i>	85: 10	<i>Regeneration not a Metaphorical Expression of Amendment of Life.</i>	175
<hr/>		<i>Regeneration in the Nature of it clearly revealed in the Gospel.</i>	176: 8
Q.		<i>Regeneration as to the Kind of the Work the same in all that are Regenerate.</i>	177: 10
<i>Quakers mistakes and failures about Mortification.</i>	488: 26	<i>Regeneration infallibly produceth Reformation of Life.</i>	182: 19
<i>Quakers strangers unto true Mortification.</i>	489: 26	<i>Regeneration the only Means of Delivery from the state of Sin.</i>	254: 3
<i>Qualifications for the Receiving of Gospel Gifts unto Edification.</i>	359	<i>Regeneration the Work of God, not our own.</i>	285: 57
<i>Spiritual Quickening an Act of Almighty Power.</i>	279: 49	<i>Regenerate Persons alone have the Promise of the Spirit for their Sanctification.</i>	358
<i>The Queen of Heaven.</i>	71: 6	<i>Rejection of Christ the last fatal Fall of the Church of the Jewes.</i>	25: 27
<hr/>		<i>Relation of the Person of the Holy Spirit unto the Father and the Son.</i>	89: 15
R.		<i>Relation the Ground of Communication.</i>	363: 5
<i>Rage against the Spirit of God.</i>	24: 26	<i>Reliance on the Blood of Christ for Cleansing, an Act of Faith.</i>	389
<i>Enthusiastical Raptures no Means of Conversion.</i>	186: 25	<i>No Relief by Christ for unholy Persons.</i>	564: 21
<i>Readiness unto Holy Obedience whence it proceedeth.</i>	435: 36	<i>Religious Worship is the due Application of our Souls unto God according to his own Manifestations of himself.</i>	44: 3
<i>Readiness in the Minds of Believers unto all Duties of Obedience.</i>	464: 5	<i>Religious Obedience due to the Holy Spirit, as unto the Father and Son.</i>	51: 14
<i>Real Work of Grace and Holiness in the Hearts of Believers.</i>	452: 66	<i>Religion in the Papacy wherein it consists.</i>	333: 13
<i>Reasons and Causes why the Mysteries of the Gospel are esteemed Folly.</i>	222: 34		
<i>Reasons why the Growth of Holiness is hardly discerned.</i>	351: 10		
<i>Corrupted Reason depraves the whole Mystery of the Gospel.</i>	325: 8		
<i>Weakness of Humane Reason to instruct us unto Obedience.</i>	559: 13		

K k k k

The

An Alphabetical Table.

	Pag. Sect.		Pag. Sect.
<i>The only Remedy against the Pollution of Sin.</i>	399	<i>Righteousness unto Justification not the End of Gospel Commands.</i>	537: 9
<i>Effects of the Remainder of Sin in Believers.</i>	429: 26	<i>Word and Doctrine of Christ the Rule and Measure of Holiness.</i>	445: 52
<i>Renovation of the Mind what it is, and wherein it consists.</i>	282: 53	<i>Every Rule of Duties besides the Gospel imperfect.</i>	560: 14
<i>Renovation of the Will wherein it consists.</i>	284: 55		
<i>Renovation of our Natures the Foundation of Spiritual Purification.</i>	383	S.	
<i>Renovation of our Nature how the Foundation of Right and Title to all other things.</i>	509: 18	<i>First Sacerdotal Act of Christ.</i>	143: 9
<i>Renovation of the Image of God the only Cure of the Vanity, Disorder and Misery of our Souls.</i>	568: 7	<i>Sacrifices were done really and spiritually by the Sacrifice of Christ.</i>	386
<i>Reparation of our Nature wherein it doth consist.</i>	366	<i>Several sorts of Sacrifices and their use. ib.</i>	
<i>Representation of New Objects unto the Rational Faculties of Christ.</i>	138: 3	<i>How the Lord Christ sanctified himself to be an Oblation or Sacrifice.</i>	143: 9
<i>False Representations of the Death of Christ to the Minds of men.</i>	495: 38	<i>Sanctified Persons mistaken in the World.</i>	188
<i>All Repugnancy to Conversion taken away by Grace.</i>	275: 41	<i>Affections how depraved, how sanctified.</i>	285: 56
<i>Residence of adverse Principles in the same Faculties of the Soul.</i>	477: 8	<i>Sanctification of the Humane Nature of Christ in the Womb.</i>	137: 1
<i>Resignation of all unto the Divine Will necessary.</i>	527: 17	<i>God the Author of our Sanctification.</i>	322: 3
<i>How the Spirit may be Resisted.</i>	165: 8	<i>Sanctification founded in Attonement.</i>	323: 3
<i>Respect unto Gods Commands wherein it consists.</i>	337: 14	<i>Sanctification described.</i>	323, 324: 5
<i>Restauration of the Image of God an End of Christs Incarnation.</i>	554: 1	<i>Sanctification Two-fold.</i>	324: 7
<i>Resting of the Spirit on any.</i>	90: 18	<i>Sanctification and Holiness inseparable from the Doctrine, Truth, and Grace of the Gospel.</i>	325: 8
<i>Resurrection of Christ assigned distinctly unto the Father, Son and Spirit.</i>	147: 11	<i>Sanctification of Believers a Mysterious Work.</i>	326: 9
<i>Nothing Revealed by Christ unto the Church, but what is from Christ.</i>	160	<i>Sanctification and Holiness promised.</i>	335: 14
<i>Divine Revelation the Rule and Measure of all Religion.</i>	44: 3	<i>Sanctification and Regeneration how they differ.</i>	339: 4
<i>Revelation both materially and formally the Rule of Holiness.</i>	412: 3	<i>Sanctification a Progressive Work.</i>	339, 340: 4, 5, &c.
<i>Revelation of God by Christ of what sort.</i>	556: 6	<i>Sanctification to be considered in its Principle and Progress.</i>	358
<i>Rewards and Punishments Enforcements of Obedience.</i>	539: 13	<i>Entire Work of the Holy Ghost in Sanctification explained.</i>	435: 35
<i>Inherent Righteousness what it is, and wherein it consists.</i>	182: 19	<i>Sanctification no less necessary than Justification.</i>	505: 14
<i>Righteousness of our own unto Justification not required.</i>	332: 13	<i>Satisfaction of Christ the great Encouragement unto Holiness.</i>	502: 8
		<i>Saul how he Propheesied.</i>	112: 18
		<i>Scripture to be attended unto against cavilling Objections.</i>	523: 8
		<i>Secret Chambers where Christ is not, what</i>	

An Alphabetical Table.

	Pag. Sect.		Pag. Sect.
<i>what is intended by them.</i>	152: 15	<i>ciple in Life Natural not in Life Spi-</i>	
<i>Seers whence Prophets were so called.</i>	102: 8	<i>ritual.</i>	243: 13
<i>Selfish men unlike to God.</i>	516: 29	<i>The Soul and Body how sanctified.</i>	368
<i>Seminal prolifick Vertue communicated by</i>		<i>Sending of the Holy Spirit the principal</i>	
<i>the Holy Spirit unto the Creation.</i>	73: 9	<i>Promise of the New Testament.</i>	8: 9
<i>sending of the Spirit, and how God is</i>		<i>Spirits how to be tryed.</i>	17: 25
<i>said to send him.</i>	84: 8	<i>Holy Spirit known by his Operations.</i>	
<i>servile Fear the Nature of it.</i>	404		21: 24
<i>shame inseparable from the Filth of Sin.</i>		<i>Letter of the Scripture profiteth not the</i>	
	375	<i>Jewes whilest they have not the Spirit.</i>	
<i>Castting off Shame the highest Aggrava-</i>			24: 26
<i>tion of Sin.</i>	377: 5	<i>Dispensation of the Spirit not confined</i>	
<i>sheweth the things of Christ to Believers,</i>		<i>unto the first times of the Church.</i>	25: 28
<i>the things of Christ of two sorts.</i>	165: 6	<i>The Name Spirit with the several Signi-</i>	
<i>Signs and Wonders no infallible Testi-</i>		<i>fications of it in the Scripture con-</i>	
<i>mony of true Prophets.</i>	18: 22	<i>firmed.</i>	28: 2
<i>Miraculous Works called Signs and why.</i>		<i>The good Spirit and the holy Spirit the</i>	
	115: 21	<i>same.</i>	38: 12
<i>No outward Sign can have in it self the</i>		<i>Holy Spirit in what sence called the spi-</i>	
<i>Nature of Regeneration.</i>	180: 16	<i>rit of God.</i>	38: 13
<i>Various Significations of the Name Spirit.</i>		<i>Holy Spirit how called the Spirit of the</i>	
	30, 31, 32, 33: 2, 3, 4, 5, 6.	<i>son.</i>	39: 14
<i>One singular Spirit of God declared in</i>		<i>The Spirit not called the Spirit of Christ</i>	
<i>the Scripture.</i>	33: 8	<i>because he was anoynted with him.</i>	
<i>Great Significations depending on a single</i>			40: 14
<i>Letter.</i>	114: 20	<i>The Spirit not called the Spirit of Christ</i>	
<i>Sin against the Holy Ghost why reme-</i>		<i>because he inspired the Prophets to fore-</i>	
<i>dilefs.</i>	12: 14	<i>tell his Coming.</i>	41: 16
<i>Where Original sin is denied, Regenera-</i>		<i>The Spirit of Anti-Christ what it is.</i>	
<i>tion cannot be effected.</i>	186: 24		41, 42: 17
<i>Sin compared unto all things that are de-</i>		<i>The Holy Spirit an Eternal Infinite In-</i>	
<i>filed and polluted.</i>	372: 3	<i>telligent Person.</i>	46, 47, 48, 49, &c.
<i>Sin fills all Sinners not obdurate with</i>			7, 8, 9, 10, &c.
<i>shame.</i>	377: 5	<i>The Holy Spirit hath a spiritual Substance</i>	
<i>Glorying in Sin its Abomination.</i>	397: 12	<i>and subsistence of his own.</i>	54: 18
<i>Sin and Grace cannot bear Rule in the</i>		<i>Why the Holy Spirit never appeared in</i>	
<i>same Person at the same time.</i>	429: 25	<i>the Person of a Man.</i>	55: 18
<i>Sin abides whilest we are in the flesh.</i>	475: 5	<i>The Holy Spirit the Author of the Mi-</i>	
<i>Sin weakened by the Improvement and</i>		<i>nistry of the Church.</i>	61: 26
<i>Exercise of Grace.</i>	478: 8	<i>The Holy Spirit the Object of mens At-</i>	
<i>single Acts of Obedience will denominate</i>		<i>tings in Religion.</i>	62: 28
<i>no man holy.</i>	415: 8	<i>The Holy Spirit not a Quality or Vertue</i>	
<i>skill in the Original Text necessary to</i>		<i>of the Divine Nature.</i>	64: 30
<i>the Exposition of the Scripture.</i>	30: 4	<i>The Holy Spirit expressly called God.</i>	
<i>Sloth in Holy Duties, the Evil and Dan-</i>			64: 31
<i>ger of it.</i>	508: 17	<i>The Spirit of the Lord is Jehova.</i>	65: 31
<i>Socinian Doctrine concerning the Holy</i>		<i>Spirit of God and the Breath of God the</i>	
<i>Spirit,</i>	47: 7	<i>same.</i>	75: 12
<i>New Soul of the Profelyte.</i>	180: 16	<i>The Holy Spirit given of God, and how.</i>	
<i>The Soul of Man the quickening Prin-</i>			80: 3
			The

An Alphabetical Table.

	Pag. Sect.		Pag. Sect.
<i>The Spirit how given by the Father in the way of Authority.</i>	81: 4	<i>Spiritual things Foolishness unto men of corrupt Affections.</i>	233: 53
<i>The Holy Spirit compared unto Fire and Water, and why.</i>	88: 13	<i>Spring of Spiritual Life in God.</i>	246: 22
<i>The Holy Spirit One, dividing as he pleaseth to others.</i>	94: 21	<i>Spiritual Life what it is, and wherein it doth consist.</i>	246: 23
<i>Good Spirit of God over-ruling the Devil.</i>	112: 18	<i>Spiritual things how spiritually to be discerned.</i>	282: 53
<i>Spirit of God the onely Author of all things good and excellent under the Old Testament.</i>	119: 28	<i>Spiritual Life wherein it consists.</i>	419: 13
<i>The Spirit and his Graces the great Subject of all the Prayers of Believers.</i>	124: 5	<i>Spiritual things how they are to be taught.</i>	460: 78
<i>The Holy Spirit the Promise and Legacy of Christ.</i>	124: 6	<i>Spiritual Life and Natural compared in their Powers and Acts.</i>	465: 7
<i>The Holy Spirit the Spirit of the Son, as well as of the Father, what followeth thereon.</i>	130: 8	<i>Work of the Spirit towards the Humane Nature of Christ in the State of the Dead.</i>	146: 10
<i>The Spirit how and when given by Christ.</i>	157: 3	<i>State of Regeneration the same in all.</i>	179: 14
<i>The Holy Spirit supplieth the Bodily absence of Christ.</i>	158: 5	<i>Strength by spiritual Aids from the Holy Spirit.</i>	383
<i>How the Spirit glorified Christ.</i>	161	<i>Strength administred in each Covenant to fulfill its tearms.</i>	545: 21
<i>The Spirit that is born of the Spirit, what it is.</i>	173: 3	<i>Stupidity in sinning.</i>	397: 12
<i>Holy Spirit worketh by Means ordinarily.</i>	187: 25	<i>Variety of Style in the Holy Scripture whence it proceedeth.</i>	114: 20
<i>Things of the Spirit of God what they are.</i>	218: 26	<i>Moral Suasion not the onely Means of Conversion.</i>	256, 257, &c. 7, 8
<i>Holy Spirit the immediate Author of Regeneration.</i>	254: 4	<i>Submission to the Will of God how acted in the Sufferings of Christ.</i>	145
<i>The Holy Spirit the immediate Sanctifier of all Believers.</i>	337: 15	<i>Submission to the Will of God promoted by thoughts of Eternal Love.</i>	527: 17
<i>The Holy Spirit promised with respect unto his Effects.</i>	357: 2	<i>All Sufficiency unto Obedience from God, none in our selves.</i>	467: 9
<i>The Spirit that is formed in Believers, what it is.</i>	418: 12	<i>Suitableness between the Mind and Duty from Grace onely.</i>	437
<i>Holy Spirit the principal efficient Cause of the Mortification of Sin.</i>	481: 15, &c.	<i>Sun Moon and Starres the Host of Heaven.</i>	71: 6
<i>Use of Spiritual Gifts.</i>	2: 1	<i>Supererogation the Vanity thereof.</i>	333: 13
<i>Abuse of Spiritual Gifts.</i>	ibid.	<i>Supernatural principle of holiness wrought by the Holy Ghost.</i>	414: 5
<i>Spiritual Gifts, their Author, Nature, Use and End.</i>	5, 6, 7: 4, 5, 6, 7.	<i>Suppositions of a State of Grace may be abused.</i>	355
<i>Spiritual Mercies all from the Holy Spirit.</i>	125: 7	<i>Surprizals with a Spirit of Prophecy.</i>	86: 11
<i>No spiritual Good in any one by Nature.</i>	166: 10	<i>Symbolical Actions how enjoyed the Prophets.</i>	109: 15
<i>Spiritual Troubles by some despised.</i>	197: 10		
<i>Spiritual and Natural how opposed.</i>	217: 25		

An Alphabetical Table.

T.	Pag. Sect.	Pag. Sect.
<p>Teaching by the Holy Ghost. 59: 25</p> <p>Advantages in the Teachings of Christ above all others. 559: 12</p> <p>How the Spirit teacheth us to pray. 349: 9</p> <p>Temptations how they hinder, and how they further the Growth of Holiness. 352</p>		<p>Truth a Grace expressing the Image of God. 517: 31</p> <p>Trial of Prophets and Prophecy under the Old Testament two-fold. 18: 22</p> <p>Two-fold State of all Mankind. 205: 2</p> <p>Two-fold Work of the Spirit in Sanctification, and Supplications answering each other. 348: 9</p>
<p>Tempting of the Spirit wherein it consists. 63: 28</p> <p>Testimony of the Spirit unto Christ with its Efficacy. 150</p> <p>skill in the Original Text necessary to the Exposition of the Scripture. 30: 4</p> <p>Thankfulness for Cleansing from sinne. 403</p> <p>Three things required to render man meet to live to God. 76: 14</p> <p>Things represented in Vision to the Prophets. 108: 14</p> <p>Things against the Light of Nature, not really enjoined the Prophets. 109: 15</p> <p>Three things required unto the Writing of the Scripture. 113: 20</p> <p>Things supposed unto the Work of the Holy Spirit towards the Church. 155: 2</p> <p>The same things ascribed unto the Holy Spirit and unto Men, in what sence. 168: 9</p> <p>Things in the Power of our own Wills required in order unto our Regeneration. 193: 4</p> <p>Things of the Spirit of God what they are. 218: 26</p> <p>Spiritual Things Foolishness unto men of corrupt Affections. 233: 53</p> <p>Tongues and Hands of the Prophets guided by the Holy Ghost. 105: 10</p> <p>Mistake of sundry ancient Translations. 30: 3</p> <p>Doctrine of the Trinity the great Foundation of all Religion. 45: 4</p> <p>The holy Trinity revealed in the New Creation. 126: 8</p> <p>Troubles wherein we stand in need of Consolation, of two sorts. 360</p>		<p style="text-align: center;">V.</p> <p>Vanity of all Pleas and Pretences against the Divine Personality of the Holy Ghost. 49: 10</p> <p>Vanity of the Mind what it is, and wherein it consists. 211: 15</p> <p>Vanity the Nature and Causes of it in the World. 213: 18</p> <p>Vanity of Papal Inventions for the Purification of sin. 379, 380</p> <p>Valuation of the Means of Cleansing from sin. 403: 14</p> <p>Various Significations of the Name Spirit. 30, 31, 32, 33: 2, 3, 4, 5, 6.</p> <p>Variety of Duties required unto the Mortification of Sin. 490: 28</p> <p>All Vertue of the especial Operation of the Spirit of God. 77: 15</p> <p>Moral Vertues and Endowments in Civil things wrought by the Holy Spirit. 118: 23</p> <p>Moral Vertue is not the Holiness of Truth. 326: 8</p> <p>Vertues to be imitated in Christ. 450: 59</p> <p>Name and Nature of Moral Vertue examined. 459: 78</p> <p>Moral Vertue what intended thereby. 506: 15</p> <p>View by Faith of the Blood of Christ as sacrificed, and the Efficacy thereof. 389: 6</p> <p>View of Sin under suffering usefull. 392</p> <p>View of the State of Nature necessary. 393: 10</p> <p>Vindication of the true sence of the Law by Christ. 557: 7, 8</p> <p>Vine and Branches their mutual Relation and In-being. 456: 70</p>
	L III	No

An Alphabetical Table.

	Pag. Sect.		Pag. Sect.
No Violence or Force offered unto the Will by Grace.	271: 33	Union with Christ wherein it consists.	419: 13
Prophetical Visions by the Representation of things to the outward senses.	107: 14	Union with Christ and the Nature thereof.	453: 66
Visions and Representations of things of two sorts.	108: 14	Whether Union goe before Sanctification, and in what sence.	453: 67
What is required to render Visions Divine Revelations.	109: 14	Universality the best Evidence of sincere Sanctification.	369
No Vital Acts under the Power of Death spiritual.	246: 21	Unregenerate Persons must all perish.	253: 2
Vivification what it is.	279: 49	Unregenerate Persons may pray for the Spirit.	361: 4
Divine Voluntary Actions constantly ascribed unto the Holy Spirit in the Scripture.	49: 10	Use of spiritual Gifts.	1: 1
Articulate Voyces in Divine Revelations how formed.	106: 12	Use of Promises, Exhortations and Threatnings.	166: 10
Unalterable Decree of God that no unholy Person shall be saved.	521: 4	Use of Ordinances and Means necessary to the Progress of Holiness.	354
Guilt of Unbelief notwithstanding Natural Impotency.	273: 37	Diligent Use of Means required unto every one that would be holy.	521: 4
Unclean the same with Unholy.	370	Usefulness in the World depends on our Conformity to God.	512: 22
Things unclean by the Law, why made so.	375	W.	
Uncleaned sinners can never come to the Enjoyment of God.	394: 10	Water poured on Grace to cause it to grow.	347: 8
Uncleaned Sinners can have no Communion with Christ.	406: 16	Fire and Water the Means of all Typical Cleansing.	371: 1
Unction of Christ unto his Prophetical Office.	139: 4	Watching against Sin on the Account of its Defilement.	403: 15
Understanding with all the proper Acts of it ascribed unto the Spirit.	55: 19	The Way whereby the Blood of Christ cleanseth from Sin, known to few.	384: 3
The Understanding, the use of it, and how it is depraved.	212: 16	The Way of Cleansing Sin made known by the Holy Spirit alone.	388
Understanding corrupted as to the Object of its Acting.	281: 52	Wayes whereby Grace is encreased.	343: 6
No unholy Person can ever enjoy God.	505: 13	Wayes and Means whereby we may come to a Discovery of the Defilement of Sin.	395
Vanity of Unholy Persons pretending an Interest in the Mediation of Christ.	562: 19	The weakest Grace shall be preserved.	344: 6
Unholy Persons how of all others they dishonour Jesus Christ.	563: 20	Weakness of Humane Reason to instruct us unto Obedience.	559: 13
Personal Union or the subsistence of both the Natures of Christ in one Person, the necessary Consequent of Assumption.	129: 5	A Rational Will the most eminent Property of a Person, ascribed to the Holy Ghost.	57: 20
Union with Christ notwithstanding the Defilement of Sin, how possible.	406: 16	The Will of the Spirit in all his Operations.	165: 8
Union with Christ by Vertue of the New Creature.	407	Christ not to be sought in the Wilderness, in what sence.	151: 15
		Will	

An Alphabetical Table.

	Pag. Sect.		Pag. Sect.
<i>Will and Affections how under the Power of the Mind.</i>	237: 61	<i>Every Work of the Spirit is not sanctifying or saving.</i>	166: 9
<i>The Will of God the only Rule of Obedience.</i>	249: 27	<i>Work of Illumination and Conviction wherein it comes short of Conversion.</i>	199: 16
<i>Wills and Affections of men how wrought upon by the Word.</i>	259: 13	<i>Work of the Spirit in Regeneration not confined to Arguments and Motives.</i>	261: 19
<i>The Will in Conversion acts not but as it is acted.</i>	271: 35	<i>Work of the Holy Ghost in Sanctification owned by all, the Nature of that Work questioned.</i>	339: 3
<i>Acts of the Will in Conversion how to be considered.</i>	274: 39	<i>Work of Holiness secret and Mysterious.</i>	351: 10
<i>The Will considered as a Vital Faculty, and as a free Principle.</i>	283: 55	<i>Work of Grace variously carried on in the Soul.</i>	353
<i>Will of God the Rule and Measure of our Obedience.</i>	412: 3	<i>Work of the Holy Spirit in us as to the Subject and Object of it.</i>	385: 3
<i>Every gracious Act of the Will wrought by the Holy Spirit.</i>	470: 14	<i>Entire Work of the Holy Ghost in Sanctification explained.</i>	435: 35
<i>Wisdom and Power of the Holy Spirit in the Preservation of Grace.</i>	348: 9	<i>What Works ascribed distinctly to the Father, what to the Son, and what to the Holy Spirit.</i>	69: 2
<i>Wisdom of God to be considered in all Commands of Obedience.</i>	543: 18, 19, &c.	<i>Works supposed satisfactory for Sin, overthrow the Gospel.</i>	331: 13
<i>Office of Witness-bearing unto the Lord Christ discharged by the Holy Spirit.</i>	149: 13	<i>Workings of the Spirit of God on and in men of the World.</i>	77: 15
<i>Witness of the Spirit.</i>	168: 9	<i>Writing of the Scripture an Effect of the Holy Ghost.</i>	113: 19
<i>Words the Means of any thing in us applied to God, intend signs onely of it.</i>	160	<i>Three things required unto the Writing of the Scripture.</i>	113: 20
<i>What the Word worketh instrumentally, the Spirit worketh effectually.</i>	197: 11		
<i>Word of God the onely Rule and Means of perswading the Soul to Conversion.</i>	257: 8		
<i>Word and Doctrine of Christ the Rule and Measure of Holiness.</i>	445: 52		
<i>Every divine Work distinctly assigned to each Person.</i>	68: 1		
<i>Work of the Spirit towards the Humane Nature of Christ in the state of the Dead.</i>	146: 10		

Z.

Zeal to the Glory of God how Acted by Christ in his Oblation. 144

A Table



A TABLE of some Places of Scripture Explained or Applied in this Treatise.

GENESIS.				JUDGES.			
Chapters.	Verses.	Pages.	Sections.	Chapters.	Verses.	Pages.	Sections.
1	2	38	13	3	10	17	15
1	2	72	8	5	20	71	6
1	22	32	7	I. SAMUEL.			
1	26, 27	75	11	10	9	117	
2	7	74.&465	10,&6	16	14	36	11
3	8	29	2		15	91	19
4	4	53	16	18	10	37	11
6	5	211, 366	15	19	24	110	17
6	6	63	28	II. SAMUEL.			
8	1	29	2	23	2	101	7
8	11	53	16	I. KINGS.			
9	1, 2	510	18	22	6	13	16
17	1	334, 413	13,&4	22	26	15	18
EXODUS.				22	21, 22.	33	7
4	8	115	21	22	18	108	14
7	1	102	8	II. KINGS.			
31	2, 3.	118	25	2	9	95	21
LEVITICUS.				I. CHRONICLES.			
1	11	385	4	12	18	90	16
9	24	53	16	28	12	105	10
NUMBERS.				28	19	113	19
11	16, 17	95, 116	21	EZRA.			
12	8	106	12	9	6	396	
19	4, 5, 6.	389		JOB.			
	20	387	4	9	29, 30, 31	379	
24	1	112	18	26	13	71	7
DEUTERONOMY.				32	4	58	22
5	29	424	17	33	4	75	12
13	1, 2	18	22	PSALMS.			
18	20	14	17	1	4	29	2
30	6	417	11	5	4, 5, 6.	500	3
32	12	65	31	8	3	72	7
JOSHUA.				Mmmmm Psalms.			
10	11	115	12				
12	22	112	18				

A Table of Scriptures.

<i>Psalms.</i>	<i>Verfes.</i>	<i>Pages.</i>	<i>Sections.</i>
16	11	146	10
18	21, 22, 23	490	28
19	12, 13	408	
33	6	35	9
38	5	377	5
40	6, 7, 8.	144	
45	13	329	12
51	11	35	9
	5	402	
	7	389	5
53	3	395	
63	8	425	18
68	18	157	3
104	29, 30.	73	9
139	13, 14.	327	10
143	10	37	12

PROVERBS.			
1	23	86	11
4	18	347	9
6	10	436	36
8	26	74	10
30	12	397	12

ECCLESIASTES.			
5	6	31	5
12	10	114	20

SOLOMONS SONG.			
3	2, 3	436	

ISAIAH.			
4	4	370	1
6	6, 7	54	17
11	1, 2, 3	131, 59.	23, 18,
		90, 94.	20.
20	1, 2, 3.	109	15
32	15	86	11
40	27, 28	342	5
40	31	431	30
44	3	88	13
45	1	77, 118	15, 22
57	9, 10	376, 232.	5, 53
59	20, 21	11	11
61	1	139	4
63	10, 11, 14	35, 65	9, 31
64	6	377	6

JEREMIAH.			
2	22	379	
4	22	216	22
20	9	103	8
23	28	104	10
23	33, 36	108	14
31	33	418	11
52	23	52	6

EZEKIEL.			
<i>Chapters.</i>	<i>Verfes.</i>	<i>Pages.</i>	<i>Sections.</i>
8	3	109	16
13	3	32	7
16	60, 61		
	62, 63	396	
36	25, 26,	185, 335,	23, 14,
	27.	370, 418,	1, 11.

DANIEL.			
10	9	107	13
12	3	83	7
12	9	104	10

HOSEA.			
1	2	109	15
5	13	388	
8	12	236	59
14	5, 6	346	8

AMOS.			
4	13	30	3

MICAH.			
2	7	59	23
3	8	101	7
6	6, 7	331	13

ZEPHANIAH.			
3	17	91	18

ZECHARIAH.			
4	7	78	16
12	8	342	5
13	1	387, 394.	4, 11.

MATTHEW.			
1	18	131	10
3	11	54	17
3	16, 17	52, 139	17
4	16	207	6
6	22, 23	237	61
9	38	142	6
12	24, 28,	63, 141	6, 29
	31, 32.		
24	26	151	15
27	46	130	6
28	19	45, 50, 51	

MARK.			
1	12	141	7
11	13	36	
13	32	130	6
17	5	360	

LUKE.

A Table of Scriptures.

LUKE.				Chapters.	Verses.	Pages.	Section.
Chapters.	Verses.	Pages.	Sections.	10	10	108	14
1	35	131	10	12	9	108	14
2	11	5	3	13	24	61	26
2	40	137	2	16	16, 17	112	18
3	16	88	13	19	3	51	15
4	1	141	7	20	28, 32	62, 58	27, 22
4	14	142					
6	43	185					
11	13	123	5				
12	50	145					

JOHN.				ROMANS.			
Chapters.	Verses.	Pages.	Sections.	Chapters.	Verses.	Pages.	Section.
1	13	173	3	3	12, 13, 14	366	
	15	457	71	4	4	332	13
3	3, 4, 5, 6.	172	2	4	19, 20	400	
	8	29	2	6	19, 21	366, 396	
	14	389	6	6	3, 4	492	33
	32, 33.	52	15	7	7, 8, 9	23	25
	34	140		8	9	39	14, 4
	35	45	5	8	16	168	9
4	14	91, 426	19, 20		27	348	9
	24	34	9		26	385	3
5	19, 20, 23	161	6		6	424	18
	26	162	6		4	408	11
	23	155	6		13	475	3
7	39	121	1		11, 12, 13	477	7
10	34, 35	116			13, 36	481, 521	15, 3
11	51	111	18	10	3, 4	332	13
14	17	82, 122	5, 2.		5	535	5
	26	84	8	12	2	212	15
15	1, 4, 5.	456	7	14	1, 3	528	18
	5	345	6				
	16, 19	81, 89	4, 16.				
	26	84	8				
	3	466	8				
16	5, 6	9	10				
	7, 8, 9, 10,	150					
	11.						
	13, 14, 15.	162					

I. CORINTHIANS.				II. CORINTHIANS.			
Chapters.	Verses.	Pages.	Section.	Chapters.	Verses.	Pages.	Section.
1	30	444	49, 50	3	8	11	11
2	10	55	19	3	17, 18	65	31
2	14	217, 226	24, 25	3	4, 5, 6	122, 467	3, 9
3	19	368	26, 42	4	4	14	17
4	7, 15	3, 188	1, 26	4	16	352	
6	17, 18	373, 4'9	4, 13	4	6	432, 449	31, 57
9	8	468	9			501	6
10	2	51	15	4	10	475	4
11	14	60	25	5	16	10	10
12	11	57	20	5	17	338, 183	2, 20
12	12	454, 455		6	1, 16	80, 158	3, 5
13	1	48	9	7	1	377	6
15	45	217	24	13	5	189	27
	10	470	14				

ACTS.				GALA.			
Chapters.	Verses.	Pages.	Sections.	Chapters.	Verses.	Pages.	Section.
1	2	157	4				
	4, 5, 6.	10	10				
	8	168	9				
2	3	54	17				
	12, 16.	115	21				
	17	107	13				
	22	141	6				
	23	40	15				
	24	117	11				
	33	156	3				
5	3, 4	64	31				
5	9	62	28				
7	51	162	8				
8	19	6	6				
	13, 21, 23	180	16				
10	44	90	17				

A Table of Scriptures.

GALATHIANS.				I. TIMOTHY.			
Chapters.	Verses.	Pages.	Sections.	Chapters.	Verses.	Pages.	Sections.
1	20	458	72.	6	11	102	8
2	20	144		II. TIMOTHY.			
2	17	536	8	2	19, 22	522	5, 8
3	5	85	9	TITUS.			
4	4	133	13	2	11, 12	421	
5	17	428	24	3	6	87, 173	13, 4
5	16	468	11	3	4, 5, 6	173	4
5	22, 23	468	12	3	5	383	
5	5	469	13	HEBREWS.			
5	17	477		2	4	93, 168	20, 9
6	15	180	16	2	13	145	
6	10	516	30	6	10	328	10
EPHESIANS.				9	14	143	8
1	10	76	14	9	19, 20,	385	4
1	4	520, 442	45, 3	10	21, 22.		
1	22, 23	454, 455		10	19, 20,	372	3
2	10	184, 466	21, 7	11	21, 22.		
2	3	231	57		6	361	5
2	1	238	1	JAMES.			
4	14	16	20	1	2, 3, 4,	343	6
4	30	63	28	2	10	554	3
4	7, 10	140, 159		3	4	57	20
4	22, 23, 24	184	21	I. PETER.			
4	17, 18, 19	210, 240	14, 15, 6	1	10, 11	40, 41	16
4	24	325, 367	8	1	9, 10, 11	99	5
4	15, 16	455		1	20, 21	101, 103	7, 10
5	2, 25	146, 371	9			110, 111	17, 18
5	26, 27	387, 407	4	1	15, 16	499	
5	9, 30.	419, 469	13, 12	3	21	180	16
PHILIPPIANS.				II. PETER.			
1	19	85, 486	9, 23	1	4, 16	26, 184	30, 21
2	13	469	14	1	3	339, 349	4, 7
3	12, 13, 14	455		1	5, 6, 7	343, 442	6, 45
3	10	493	34	1	4, 10	418, 522	12, 5
4	7	145		2	1	15	19
COLOSSIANS.				2	4, 22	228, 378	45
1	13, 21	227, 228	44, 46	3	5	73	9
1	15, 17, 18	452	65	I. JOHN.			
2	11	371, 474	2	1	7	384	3
2	19	456		4	1, 2, 3	16, 41	20, 21, 17
3	10	185	22	REVELATIONS.			
3	3	425, 458	18, 72	1	4, 5,	66, 94	33, 20.
3	5	473	2	1	6.	403	14
3	12	526	15	2	2	16	20
I. THESSALONIANS.				22	17	169	9
5	23	321, 367	2				
II. THESSALONIANS.							
2	2	18	22				
2	13	442, 521	45, 3.				

F I N I S.